

EB

2

S129

M657

RR

v. 1













---

BOOKS BY THE SAME AUTHOR

---

"OUR INLAND SEAS"

Their Shipping and Commerce for Three Centuries

A fascinating story of the development of transportation on the Great Lakes, with interesting side lights on history and bizarre tales of lost treasure and lost people, including the economic value of lake shipping.

*Crown, 8 vo., 380 pages, 70 ill.*

*\$1.75 Net*

A. C. McCLURG & Co., Chicago, Publishers.

---

"SEARCHLIGHTS ON SOME AMERICAN INDUSTRIES"

A book full of the romance of our leading industries, yet satisfying, too, the sober requirements of accuracy. It traces the growth and development of each industry from the earliest times to the highly specialized systems of today.

*Crown, 8 vo., 300 pages, 48 ill.*

*\$1.50 Net.*

A. C. McCLURG & Co., Chicago, Publishers.

---

"OLIVER HAZARD PERRY  
AND THE  
BATTLE OF LAKE ERIE"

A true and faithful biography of the hero of Erie, related in a highly interesting style, unbiased and free from undue praise. It is a history of the naval operations on Lake Erie in 1813, and of the subsequent military campaign in Canada, which resulted in the recovery of the Northwest Territory to the United States.

*Crown, 8 vo., 278 pages, 12 ill.*

*\$1.50 Net.*

JOHN PHELPS, Detroit, Publisher.







SAGINAW COUNTY COURT HOUSE, ERECTED 1884-5

# HISTORY *of* SAGINAW COUNTY MICHIGAN

*Historical      Commercial*  
*Biographical*

*Profusely Illustrated with Portraits of Early Pioneers,  
Rare Pictures and Scenes of Olden Times, and  
Portraits of Representative  
Citizens of Today*

By JAMES COOKE MILLS  
Author of "Our Inland Seas"  
"Searchlights on American Industries"  
"Oliver Hazard Perry and the Battle of Lake Erie"



Saginaw, Michigan  
Seemann & Peters, Publishers  
Printers, Binders, Stationers

1918

Copyright, 1918  
**Seemann & Peters, Saginaw**

All rights reserved



PRESS OF SEEMANN & PETERS  
SAGINAW, MICHIGAN  
U. S. A.

## PREFACE

SIXTY years ago, when the whole region of Saginaw Valley was little more than a wilderness, a printer by the name of Fox gave the scant population a "History of Saginaw County." It was a small pamphlet of about sixty pages, paper bound, set up and printed entirely by hand, but it contained valuable information for posterity. Unfortunately this book has become very scarce, and only a few copies are known to exist. In 1868 Mr. Fox published a new and revised edition of his history, containing eighty-six pages, also hand made, which now is also rare. The first directory of Saginaw, published in 1866, contained a comprehensive and interesting history of early Saginaw, by Thomas Galatin; and eight years later W. R. Bates presented his "History of the Saginaws."

From these early histories, valuable in their accounts of pioneer days, of persons and events; from the files of early newspapers; from scrap books and albums of settlers who preserved records of primitive times; and from interviews with many old residents whose recollections were still keen, the historian has gathered materials for this history. It is the first work of the kind, to be dignified by the title of "History," published in thirty-seven years; and in its broad scope and purpose represents many months of research and study.

The fund of information, containing stories of border life, narratives of personal adventures and public events, is almost inexhaustible. One might go on and on for years gathering true and faithful accounts, often musty and dim with age, but with plenty of color and atmosphere to lend interest, and filling volumes of interesting history. The human element never is wanting in Saginaw's history. Few sections of the country, at least in the Middle West, can produce such material, thrilling and often startling, and replete with heart interest. The difficulty experienced by the historian has been in the selection and elimination of his materials, for he has ever had in mind the use of that which casts a searchlight on human events, and lends the most absorbing interest. Romance is not lacking in the stories gathered, and possibly some of it may be reflected in the historical narratives.

The purpose and aim of this History of Saginaw County, published in nineteen hundred and eighteen, is to give the people of Michigan a reliable, comprehensive and interesting story of our past and present life; to show the development of this industrial and agricultural center of the State from the once primeval forest; and to hand down to generations to come the facts of early history from which may be formed a proper conception of what pioneer settlers and others suffered in laying the firm foundation upon which our

prosperity stands. This work will be a practical basis for the study of local history in the public schools, both in city and townships, and will be a reference book in public libraries here and elsewhere. This has been constantly in mind so that a proper balance between personal and material things might be maintained.

Each subject has been treated as a separate and distinct monograph, with events and things arranged in chronological order. For the most part all matter pertaining to one general subject will be found together in its proper place, although in some instances, such as the romance of lumbering, interesting accounts will be found in the chapters on early pioneer life. This is because logging and lumbering operations were inseparably linked with the daily experiences of the pioneers, two generations literally growing up in the atmosphere of the pine forests, in the hum of saw mills, and the wild and reckless life of the frontier.

The logical arrangement, therefore, necessitated a division of the whole work into four separate books, incorporated and bound into two volumes. The first book, Historical — comprises fifteen chapters (from I to XV, inclusive), and deals with our local history from the earliest times to the present, including many illustrations of town and river scenes, and portraits of early pioneers. The second book, Industrial History — (chapters XVI to XXV), is devoted to our manufacturers, mercantile and banking interests, in which pictures of factories (both outside and inside), wholesale houses, prominent buildings and street scenes, are interesting features. These two books are bound complete in Volume I, with convenient indexes of pioneer biographies and subject titles. The third book — Biographies of Representative Citizens — gives the life histories of the men whose collective efforts have made Saginaw the prosperous city it is today. The fourth book — Townships and Towns — comprises the local history of each township and biographies of leading pioneers, merchants, professional men, and progressive farmers who have developed agriculture in this county. Books three and four are bound complete in Volume II, with proper indexes.

History and Biography are terms identical in meaning and purpose. They are words expressing practically the same thing, although in somewhat different form. History is a record of human events, political, economic or industrial. Biography is a record of purely individual endeavor, as expressed in the form of a life history, and treats of the more intimate affairs of a man's life. Both History and Biography, therefore, are essential to a complete and perfect record of any community or commonwealth. As treated in this History of Saginaw County, one is as necessary and important as the other. The closer and more intimate relations of our leading manufacturers, jobbing houses and banking institutions, as found in their individual histories appearing at intervals in Volume I, pages 461 to 774, are essential to a proper understanding of our commercial advancement. No history would approach completeness without them. A perusal of these accounts will be found interest-

ing and instructive, and to many will prove a surprise in the revelation of growth and importance of the industrial and commercial prosperity of this city. A summary of industries, in which Saginaw leads the State and in some instances the Nation, appears in Volume I, page 679.

Likewise, the personal element interwoven in the biographies of our leading citizens, contains features of the highest interest. Their achievements in business and professional life are related in a modest and unostentatious style, befitting the character and lives of the subjects, yet are intimately and purely personal in treatment. Much of the most vital and important history of Saginaw County is told in these biographies. For instance, some of the most interesting history of lumbering in Michigan is incorporated in the sketches of Ammi W. Wright, Charles H. Davis and others of that enterprising group of men, whose names are indelibly stamped on the history of the Northwest. The same is true of the simple yet dignified biographies of other business and professional men, a reading of which will reveal interesting sidelights on history.

While this history has had the endorsement and encouragement of our leading and representative citizens and townsmen, a few have assumed a different attitude toward it. These men undoubtedly regard themselves as deserving a place among progressive men, but from extreme modesty or other reasons have refused to recognize the work by giving any information concerning their personal affairs. Generally such cases are forgotten. In some, however, because of pioneer antecedents or circumstances of importance, the historian has felt bound, in justice to those who have identified themselves with the work, to present an unbiased account of a man's life. But without information derived first-hand, it has been necessary to resort to such data as could be obtained from outside sources and which seemed true and reliable, but the veracity of which could not be substantiated. It is hoped that nothing has been published distasteful to the persons whose affairs are thus related. History in its highest form, it should be borne in mind, is selective and critical.

For personal interest and aid in his researches and study, in the loan of old histories, scrap books, newspaper clippings, pioneer portraits and views, the historian is greatly indebted to Fred Dustin, Mrs. Aaron T. Bliss, Mrs. S. C. J. Ostrom, Fred J. Buckhout, Mrs. Ferdinand Brucker, William B. Mershon, Fred L. Eaton, Jr., John A. Coombs, William P. Powell, John F. O'Keefe, Benton Hanchett, Ezra Rust, Mrs. James B. Peter, Langley S. Foote, George L. Burrows, Jr., Miss Nellie Brown, William S. Linton, John Moore, George W. Wallis, late chief of the fire department, Patrick Kain, chief of the police department, the commissioner of parks and cemeteries, W. W. Warner, superintendent of schools; and to Miss Harriet H. Ames, and her associate, Miss Blanche Topping, of Hoyt Library; Miss Dow of the Public Library; Miss Benjamin of the Butman-Fish Memorial Library; and the Detroit Public Library; and the Michigan Historical Commission. To all these, and many others who have rendered incidental aid, the historian extends his grateful acknowledgements.

J. C. M.

# CONTENTS

## ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE
CHAPTER I	
Pre-Historic Races .....	1
CHAPTER II	
The Indians of Saginaw Valley.....	21
CHAPTER III	
The Advent of White Men.....	34
CHAPTER IV	
The Treaty of Saginaw.....	51
CHAPTER V	
The Coming of De Tocqueville, or "A Fortnight in the Wilderness".....	66
CHAPTER VI	
Pioneer Days .....	79
CHAPTER VII	
Organization of the County.....	97
CHAPTER VIII	
The Rise and Progress of Saginaw City.....	117
CHAPTER IX	
Founding of East Saginaw.....	137
CHAPTER X	
Reminiscences of Pioneer Citizens.....	160
CHAPTER XI	
An Era of Prosperity.....	185
CHAPTER XII	
Some Municipal Organizations.....	207
CHAPTER XIII	
The Consolidated Saginaws.....	237
CHAPTER XIV	
Our Educational Development.....	274
CHAPTER XV	
Religious and Social Life.....	313



THE INDUSTRIAL HISTORY OF SAGINAW

CHAPTER XVI

PAGE

The Lumber Industry..... 393

CHAPTER XVII

The Salt Industry..... 426

CHAPTER XVIII

The Coal Industry..... 447

CHAPTER XIX

The Beet-Sugar Industry ..... 466

CHAPTER XX

Diversified Industries ..... 489

CHAPTER XXI

Varied Commercial Interests ..... 603

CHAPTER XXII

Development of Agriculture..... 681

CHAPTER XXIII

Transportation ..... 703

CHAPTER XXIV

Banks and Banking..... 739

CHAPTER XXV

The Bench and Bar..... 775

INDEX OF PIONEERS AND INDUSTRIAL AND COMMERCIAL  
HISTORY

INDEX OF SUBJECT TITLES  
(Sub Headings)

BIBLIOGRAPHY

**VOLUME II**

Biographies of Representative Citizens.....  
Townships and Towns .....  
Index of Biographies.....  
General Index .....

## ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE
Frontispiece	3
Heavy Aboriginal Implements.....	4
Fragments of Ancient Pottery.....	6
Flint Implements Used by Mound-Builders.....	9
Primitive Arrow-Points .....	11
Leaf-Shaped Blades .....	11
Arrow and Spear Points.....	14
Green Point Mounds.....	15
The Andross Urn .....	18
Pipe Made of Sandstone.....	19
Fragmentary Specimens of Pipes.....	20
Primitive Ornaments and Charms.....	26
Semi-Civilized Indians of Saginaw in the '60's.....	33
Shop-en-a-gons .....	37
"Le Griffon" .....	41
Pere Marquette at St. Ignace in 1671, about to start on his journey of discovery of the Mississippi.....	44
A Map of the Region of the Great Lakes, 1747.....	50
Lewis Cass .....	61
Old Fort Saginaw, in 1822.....	65
Morass in the Wilderness.....	73
The Trail to Saginaw.....	78
View on Saginaw River, 1880.....	83
Au-saw-wa-mic .....	85
Eleazer Jewett .....	90
Gardner D. Williams } Ephraim S. Williams }	96
On the Cass River, near its Mouth.....	99
Judge Elijah N. Davenport } Captain Joseph W. Malden }	101
Albert Miller .....	102
Mrs. James Fraser } James Fraser }	104-5
Map of the City of Saginaw, 1837.....	112
The First Court House of Saginaw County, built in 1838-9.....	119
James McCormick } William R. McCormick }	124
Phineas D. Braley } Hiram L. Miller }	129
Charles H. Richman } Mrs. Charles H. Richman }	133
Norman Little .....	136
A Camp in Winter.....	

	PAGE
Site of Present City Hall, 1849.....	141
Curtis Emerson } Moses B. Hess }	146
Jesse Hoyt .....	151
Colonel W. L. P. Little } Charles D. Little }	154
Saginaw River Front, North of Johnson Street, in the Early Days.....	157
Charles W. Grant.....	158
W. L. P. Little Family.....	159
Norman L. Miller } Charles T. Brenner }	162
Obadiah Crane .....	165
William A. Crane } Mrs. William A. Crane }	167
Adelaide Delisle Cushway } Mary Hubbard Ide } George Washington Davis } Thadeas De Lamorandiere }	170
George Streeb } John W. Richardson }	173
Saginaw City in 1850.....	175
John Moore } Joseph A. Whittier }	176
James F. Brown } Emil A. L. Moores }	180
Lumbering on the Saginaw in the Fifties.....	184
James S. Webber } John F. Driggs }	187
Union Hall .....	191
Laying Nicholson Pavement in Genesee Street, 1868.....	193
The Bancroft House in 1865 The Crouse Block on Site of Eddy Building } Water Street at Foot of Tuscola } East Side of Water Street at Tuscola, 1860 }	196
William J. Bartow } Solomon Bond Bliss }	199
William H. Sweet } Myron Butman } Newell Barnard } Daniel L. C. Eaton }	202
Hamilton Street, Looking South from Cleveland Street, about 1875 } View on Saginaw River, Looking North from Mackinaw Street, 1875 }	206
Genesee Street, Looking East from Water Street Genesee Street, Looking West from Washington, about 1868 Ruins of Jackson Hall, Burned May 26, 1873 Genesee Street, Looking East from Washington, about 1872 The Great Flood of 1873, Looking Across Genesee Street Bridge Water Street, Looking North from German Street, Flood of 1873 }	209
Genesee Avenue between Baum and Jefferson, about 1860.....	212
"Valley City" Boys, 1864.....	214

	PAGE
Valley City No. 3 Fire Station.....	217
Valley City Boys, 1915.....	219
Active Hose, Hook and Ladder Company No. 1.....	221
Hose House No. 13, Harrison and Van Buren Streets.....	222
Old Style Hose Reel and Fire Company, about 1881.....	224
The Cities of Saginaw at Height of the Lumber Industry.....	227
Loading at Holland's Dock, 1879	
Saginaw River, Looking North from Michigan Central Bridge } .....	228
T. Dailey Mower.....	231
Zack Baskins, James P. Walsh, Patrick Kain, Elmer E. Bishop, T. McCoy	232
Hamilton Street North from Court.....	235
Second Precinct Police Station, Adams Street.....	236
From the Roof of the Academy, Looking East, 1886	
From the Roof of the Academy, Looking Southwest, 1886 } .....	239
The City Hall.....	242
Court Street Bridge.....	244
Genesee Avenue Bridge .....	245
Genesee Avenue During Saengerfest, in 1872.....	247
Group of Old-Time Mayors of the Saginaws.....	250
Herbert H. Hoyt, John G. Owen, John Welch, A. F. R. Braley, Lyman W. Bliss, Frank Lawrence, John S. Estabrook, Henry M. Youmans	
Views in Hoyt Park.....	253
Scenes in Bliss Park.....	254
Map of Ezra Rust Park.....	257
Mershon-Whittier Natatorium .....	259
Views in Oakwood Cemetery.....	261
Views in Forest Lawn Cemetery.....	262
The Auditorium .....	265
Street Scenes During the Great Flood of March, 1904.....	267
Last Council of the City of Saginaw under Aldermanic System, 1913....	269
The First Council under the Commission Government, January 1, 1914..	271
Hilem F. Paddock, Mayor of Saginaw, 1915-19.....	273
Group of West Side Schools.....	276
The John Moore School.....	279
The Arthur Hill Trade School.....	280
Some Shops in the Hill Trade School.....	283
Arthur Hill	
Wellington R. Burt } .....	284
The Old "Academy".....	287
The Old Central School, Erected in 1866.....	290
Group of East Side Schools.....	292
The Burt Manual Training School.....	293
Interior of Burt Manual Training School.....	295
The New Germania School, Completed in 1914.....	296
Fac-Simile of Letter Written by Norman Little in 1837.....	298 and 299
The Butman-Fish Memorial Library .....	301
Interior of Public Library, East Side.....	303
The Hoyt Public Library.....	306

	PAGE
Members of the Tuesday Club at Mrs. Buckhout's Home, 1885.....	309
The Presbyterian Church at Saginaw City.....	314
First Presbyterian Church.....	317
Insert Reverend Harry Rogers Stark	
Old St. John's Church, Erected in 1853.....	318
St. John's Episcopal Church.....	319
Reverend Emil Montanus.....	320
Jefferson Avenue, North from Hayden Street, 1886 } Weadock Avenue, North from Thompson Street }	323
Father Vanderhayden .....	325
Old Methodist Church, German Street and Washington Avenue.....	328
Jeffers Fountain .....	329
Portrait Gallery of Residents of Saginaw City, 1860-1875.....	330 and 331
Old St. Paul's Church, Erected in 1864.....	334
Interior of St. Paul's Church.....	335
The First Congregational Church, Erected in 1860.....	337
Group of Saginaw Churches.....	340
Holy Rosary Church and School.....	343
Church of the Sacred Heart.....	344
Some of Saginaw's Benevolent Institutions.....	347
The New Y. W. C. A. Building, Erected in 1912.....	350
The Cafeteria of the Y. W. C. A.....	352
A Group of Prominent Citizens and Others in Front of the Saginaw Club, 1907 .....	353
The New Y. M. C. A. Building on the West Side.....	355
Swimming Pool, Y. M. C. A.....	356
Group of German Citizens, 1865.....	357
Some Pioneer Members of the Germania Society .....	359
The First Germania School.....	360
The Germania Institute .....	362
Members of the Germania Building Committee.....	363
The First Trustees of the Schmitz Endowment.....	364
Franz Dreier and Some of the Turners, 1906.....	365
The Germania Maennerchor, 1905 .....	368
The Germania Damenchor, 1905.....	369
The Teutonia Hall .....	371
Colonel Thomas Saylor.....	373
Enlisted Men of Company F, Thirty-Third Regiment, M. N. G., 1916....	374
The Armory, Erected in 1909.....	376
Saginaw Naval Reserves on Board the "Michigan," 1895.....	377
The East Saginaw Club.....	379
Saginaw's Grand Old Men in 1907.....	381
Henry C. Potter, Joseph A. Whittier, Thomas Merrill and Ammi W. Wright	
The Saginaw Country Club.....	382
Thirteenth Green .....	383
Saginaw Canoe Club on Osakina Island.....	384
The Elk's Temple .....	385

	PAGE
Pioneer Residents of Saginaw City.....	386
William Binder, Mrs. William A. Armstrong, Harvey Joslin, Mrs. Jennie Paine, Lorenzo Burrows, Jr., Teresa Jones, George L. Burrows, Mrs. George L. Burrows, Harry Miller	
Masonic Temple .....	388
Old-Time Portraits of Well Known Citizens.....	390
Charles R. Penney, John Weller, John Jeffers, Walter Gardner, Isaac Bearinger, Mrs. E. J. Ring, Isaac Parsons, Mrs. C. W. Wells, Frederick H. Herbert, Gurdon Corning and Ida C., Nicholas A. Randall, Doctor H. Williams, Judge L. C. Holden	
Genesee Avenue, Looking West from Jefferson, 1900	} ..... 392
Washington Avenue, Looking North from Bancroft House, 1900	

---

## THE INDUSTRIAL HISTORY OF SAGINAW

Choppers at Work in Forest.....	395
Loading on Sleighs } .....	} 398
Hauling to Skidway }	
A Log Dump }	} 399
Rafting Logs }	
Lumberjacks at Their Noon Meal in Depths of Forest.....	401
"Snaking" Logs by Ox Team, 1860.....	404
Interior of Bunk House.....	406
Tables Spread in "Chuck" Shanty.....	409
Business Cards of Leading Lumbermen, about 1874.....	412
Grinding Axes in Camp }	} 415
Drawing Water at Spring }	
Record Load Hauled by One Two-Horse Team.....	418
Loading Long Timber for Ship Spars.....	421
Saw Mill and Lumber Yard in the Car Trade.....	422
Scaling and Sorting Lumber on the Dock.....	424
The Tittabawassee at Riverside Park.....	425
Salt Block and Mill Boom—Log End of Saw Mill.....	428
To Whom Honor is Due for the Discovery of Salt.....	431
Stephen R. Kirby, Sanford Keeler and George W. Merrill	
Saginaw River in the Eighteen-Nineties, at F. & P. M. R. R. Bridge....	434
Salt Block, Saw Mill and Cooper Shop of Charles Merrill & Co.....	438
C. M. Ireton .....	439
Section of Settling Tanks, Salt Works of Saginaw Plate Glass Co.....	441
One of the Ten Concrete "Grainers," Salt Works of Sag. P. G. Co. }	} ..... 443
Automatic Rakes Dumping Salt, at Saginaw Plate Glass Company }	
Hills of Salt in Huge Warehouse, Saginaw Plate Glass Company.....	444
Washington Street North from Janes, 1888 }	} ..... 446
Cass Street South from Tuscola, 1888 }	
The First Coal Mine in Saginaw County, 1896.....	450
Loading Coal in Wagons at Caledonia Mine No. 1, 1905 }	} ..... 453
Socialist Miners Just Up from the Mine, 1905 }	
Miners Setting Electric Short Wall Cutter.....	456
Electric Continuous Cutter on Truck, Ready for Operation.....	457
Close-Up View of Short Wall Cutter,	} ..... 459
Showing Compactness of Construction }	
Electric Chain Cutter Operating in Entry }	} ..... 462
Tipple and Power House of Wolverine Mine No. 2 of Consolidated Coal Company }	

	PAGE
Tipple of Bliss Coal Mine, Swan Creek.....	464
John T. Phillips and Clarence H. Brand at Bliss Coal Mine.....	465
Six Hundred Acre Beet Field at Prairie Farm.....	469
Beet Wagons Waiting to Unload at Merrill Weigh Station.....	472
Carrollton Plant of Michigan Sugar Company.....	475
The "Scroll," or Worm Conveyor at Carrollton Sugar Factory.....	479
The Carbonators, in which the Impurities in the Juice are Absorbed....	482
Pressure Filters, which Remove all the Purifying Agents.....	483
Vacuum Evaporators, which Reduce the Purified Juice to a Rich Syrup } Syrup Boilers or "Strike Pans," in which the syrup is crystalized }	485
"Osmogenes," which purify the syrup for crystalization.....	487
A Portion of the Plant of the Saginaw Plate Glass Company.....	488
Wildman Brothers Boiler Works, 1885.....	492
Maple Flooring Plant of S. L. Eastman Flooring Company.....	495
Mammoth Plant of the Lufkin Rule Company.....	498
Fac-Simile of Signatures to Original Articles of Incorporation of the Board of Trade.....	501
Prominent Promotors of and Donors to the Saginaw Board of Trade....	502
What Might Have Been a Familiar Sight.....	505
Trustees of Merchants and Manufacturers Association, 1909 to 1913....	507
Plant of the Erd Motor Company.....	509
Extensive Works of the Saginaw Manufacturing Company.....	511
Former Shops of the Saginaw Sheet Metal Works.....	512
Efficient Plant of the Saginaw Sheet Metal Works.....	513
Plant of the Saginaw Ladder Company.....	514
John G. Wolfarth, Founder of the Wolfarth Bakery.....	517
The Wolfarth Bakery.....	518
Frank J. Wolfarth.....	519
Batches of Dough, Mixing Dough, Mixing and Moulding, Fresh Bread from Ovens, Wolfarth Bakery.....	520
In the Office, Retail Sales Department, Wolfarth Bakery.....	521
Salesmen of American Cash Register Company, September, 1916.....	522
Assembling "American" Cash Registers.....	523
Old Employees of Wickes Brothers in Front of Shop, about 1873.....	525
Erecting a "Wickes" Gang Saw.....	526
Punch Erection Floor.....	527
The Modern Plant of Wickes Brothers.....	528
Group of Workmen in Wickes Brothers Iron Works, 1914.....	529
Present Plant of Wickes Boiler Company } The Wickes Water Tube Boiler }	531
Type of Fire Tube Boiler.....	532
The Pioneer Iron Works of A. F. Bartlett & Company.....	533
Group of Mechanics and Moulders at the Bartlett Plant, 1879.....	534
Pit Lathe in Bartlett Plant Finishing off "Deck" for Saginaw Plate Glass Company.....	535
The New Modern Plant of the Jackson & Church Company.....	537
Machine Shop of Jackson & Church Company.....	538
Original Shops of the Jackson-Church-Wilcox Company, and New Modern Plant Completed in 1917.....	539
View in Jackson-Church-Wilcox Plant.....	540
The "Jacox" Steering Gear.....	541
Plant of Mitts & Merrill, a Business Established in 1854.....	543

Foundry and Group of Moulders at the Valley Grey Iron Foundry Company . . . . .	546
Machine Shops of the National Engineering Company . . . . .	548
Grinding Crank Shafts, National Engineering Company . . . . .	549
Hermann Werner . . . . .	551
Machine Shops of Werner & Pfeleiderer . . . . .	552
The New Foundry and Pattern Shop, Werner & Pfeleiderer Company . . . . .	553
Interior of New Foundry of Werner & Pfeleiderer Company . . . . .	554
Universal Kneading and Mixing Machines . . . . .	555
Machinery and Ovens Used in Baking and Macaroni Industries . . . . .	556
Emil Staehle . . . . .	557
New Foundry of S. Fair & Son, Inc. . . . .	559
Electric Furnace at S. Fair & Son, Inc. . . . .	560
The Mammoth Plant of the Saginaw Plate Glass Company . . . . .	562 and 563
Original Plant of the United States Graphite Company . . . . .	564
Mexican Miners and Huge Piles of Graphite Ore . . . . .	565
Present Plant of United States Graphite Company . . . . .	566
Plant of William Polson & Company . . . . .	567
John Herzog . . . . .	569
Mammoth Plant of the Herzog Art Furniture Company . . . . .	570
Making "Sonora" Phonograph Cabinets at Herzog Art Furniture Company . . . . .	573
Plant of William B. Mershon & Company . . . . .	574 and 575
Edward C. Mershon . . . . .	576
New Standard 60-inch Band Resaw . . . . .	577
Plant and Lumber Yards of Germain Manufacturing Company . . . . .	579
The East Side Business Center from the Top of Bean Elevator . . . . .	581
Plant of Saginaw Show Case Company . . . . .	582
The Saginaw Mirror Works . . . . .	583
Flouring Mill and Elevators of Brand & Hardin Milling Company . . . . .	585
Butter Making at Saginaw Creamery Company . . . . .	586
Clare H. Parker . . . . .	587
Koehler Brothers Iron Works . . . . .	589
Where Wolverine Gloves are Made . . . . .	590
Bean Elevator with Illuminated Waving Flag . . . . .	591
Modern Printing Plant of Valley Printing Company . . . . .	592
Printing, Binding, Engraving and Office Outfitting Establishment of Seemann & Peters . . . . .	595
Making Feather Dusters at Blind Institution . . . . .	598
Blind Cobblers Making Shoes for Inmates of Blind Institution . . . . .	599
Blind Girl at Tapestry Loom . . . . .	600
Washington Street, Looking North from Genesee Street, about 1860 . . . . .	602
Old-Time Advertisements of Saginaw Business Men . . . . .	605
West Side Business Section, Looking South from Court House, about 1886 . . . . .	608
Washington Street, South from Tuscola, 1887 . . . . .	611
Franklin Street, South from Tuscola, 1887 . . . . .	611
The Saginaw Naval Reserves, on Eve of Departure for the Atlantic Coast, April, 1917 . . . . .	613
The New Hotel Bancroft, Opened in July, 1916 . . . . .	614
Attractive Lobby of Hotel Bancroft . . . . .	615



Magnificent Ball Room of Hotel Bancroft	}	
Cafe of Hotel Bancroft, Elegantly Appointed	}	616
The South Side Business Center at Washington and Center Avenues....		620
"Little Jake" Seligman		623
The Bearer Building, Erected in 1892.....		626
Charles B. Mott	}	
Charles L. Ortman	}	629
Wholesale Grocery House of Symons Brothers & Company.....		632
The Wholesale Establishment of George A. Alderton & Company.....		635
The Modern Structure of Lee & Cady, Saginaw Branch.....		636
The Extensive Wholesale House of Melze, Alderton Shoe Company....		639
Lewis Cornwell		641
William C. Cornwell, Charles E. Cornwell, Elmer J. Cornwell and L. W. Cornwell		641
The New Plant of the Cornwell Company.....		642
Saginaw Hardware Company		643
The Mammoth Establishment of Morley Brothers.....		644
Silverware and Art Section, Morley Brothers.....		646
Hardware and China Section, Morley Brothers.....		647
George F. Lewis.....		649
Perry Joslin		650
Fac-Simile of Notice of Meeting to Support the Daily Courier, 1868....		651
E. D. Cowles, in 1874.....		652
The Home of the Saginaw Courier-Herald.....		653
Battery of Six Linotype Typesetting Machines.....		654
The Hoe High-Speed Press.....		655
The Certificate of Membership in the Associated Press.....		656
The New Home of the Saginaw Daily News.....		658
Composing Room—Battery of Linotypes—Four-Deck Goss High-Speed Press		659
Newsboys' Room — Managing Editor's Office — Business Office — Editorial Department — Library and Conference Room.....		661
Printing Plant of the Saginaw Press.....		663
Alfred M. Hoyt		665
Some Old-Time Postmasters of the Saginaws.....		666
James A. Hudson, William Moll, Levi B. Kinsey, George G. Hess, James N. Gotee, Charles P. Hess, George Lockley, Dr. J. S. Rouse, M. V. Meredith		
The Federal Building at Saginaw.....		669
Sam G. Clay.....		672
A Saginaw Made Automobile, 1918.....		675
Office Building at Genesee and Jefferson Avenues.....		676
Interior of Office Outfitting Store, The H. B. Arnold Company.....		677
Emil Schwahn — Charles A. Khuen — Curt Schwahn.....		678
Genesee Avenue, East from Washington, 1918.....		680
Corn is a Profitable Crop.....		683
Dairy Farming is Increasing in Saginaw County.....		684
A Typical Farm Scene		687
An Example of Successful Fruit Growing.....		689
Harvesting Grain on Low Lands.....		692
Dredge Building Dikes at Prairie Farm.....		694
Gang Plowing by Tractor on the Prairie Farm.....		695
Harvesting Grain on Large Scale at Prairie Farm	}	
Threshing Wheat on Farm in Frankenmuth Township	}	696

Home of the Royal Bred Belgian Draft Horses— the Best in America } .....	698
Sans Peur de Hamal, No. 3446, Owned by the Owosso Sugar Company } A Granddaughter of Indigene du Fosteau and a True Production }	699
Maconvale Canary, No. 153,622, Saginaw Valley Stock Farm, Owner....	701
Saginaw the Shipping Center of the Great Lakes Region.....	704
Barge Towing Schooner in the Old Lumbering Days.....	707
The "Skylark" loading at Saginaw.....	710
Captain William Blyben } Captain Martin Smith }	713
Steambarge "Maine" and Tow Barges.....	715
The Popular Steamer "Wellington R. Burt" enroute from Saginaw to Bay City, about 1887.....	717
The "Wenona" which piled between Saginaw and Alpena.....	718
A Once Common Type of Steambarge, called "Rabbits".....	719
Peter C. Andre.....	721
A Pioneer Engine, "William L. Webber," F. & P. M. R. R. ....	724
A Way Station in the Forest Wilderness.....	727
Union Station, and Depot Car Used in the Eighties.....	730
An All-Steel Electric Train on the Michigan Railway.....	733
Constructing Stone Road through Sand Ridge.....	735
Route Map of Saginaw, Michigan.....	736
The Saginaw Telephone Exchange of the Michigan State Telephone Co..	738
Old Currency of the Saginaw City Bank, Circulated in 1837.....	743
Specimen of the Uncirculated Currency of the Bank of Zilwaukee.....	746
Script of the City of Saginaw, Circulated in the Eighteen-sixties.....	750
Note Script of the Tittabawassee Boom Company, in Eighteen-seventies	753
East Side Office of the Bank of Saginaw.....	756
Spacious and Conveniently Arranged Banking Office at 310-12 Genesee Avenue .....	757
The West Side Office of the Bank of Saginaw.....	758
The Second National Bank Building.....	760
The Main Banking Office of The Second National Bank.....	763
The Perfectly Appointed Office of the People's Savings Bank.....	764
Modern Banking House, Erected in 1909.....	766
The Conveniently Arranged Office of The Commercial National Bank..	767
Interior of East Side Office of American State Bank.....	768
The West Side Office of the American State Bank.....	769
The Hill Building .....	770
Main Office of the Hill-Carman Companies.....	771
William W. Warner.....	772
The Well Appointed Office Building.....	773
Offices of the People's Building & Loan Association.....	774
Judge Jabez G. Sutherland.....	777
Prominent Judges of the Tenth Judicial District, DeWitt C. Gage, John A. Edget .....	780
Well Known Judges of the Circuit Court, Chauncey H. Gage, Robert B. McKnight, Eugene Wilber .....	785
Some Successful Lawyers of the Formative Period.....	788
<small>Timothy E. Tarsney, Chauncey Wisner, C. Stuart Draper, William M. Miller, Augustine S. Gaylord, Daniel P. Foote, John J. Wheeler, Frederic L. Eaton, Sr.</small>	

# HISTORY OF SAGINAW COUNTY, MICHIGAN

## CHAPTER I.

### PRE-HISTORIC RACES

The Work of the Mound-Builders—Earth-Works in the Ohio Valley—Finding Human Remains—Antiquities in Michigan—Copper Mining on Isle Royal—Ancient Fortifications Discovered—Unique "Garden Beds"—Village Sites in Saginaw County—Mounds and Ancient Relics—Pottery Exhumed—Caches and Workshops—Aboriginal Stone Weapons—Ancient Pipes—Ornaments and Charms.

**T**HROUGHOUT the region of the Great Lakes abundant evidence, often of the most interesting character, of the presence in by-gone ages of a peculiar race of men, has constantly been brought to light; and numerous and well-authenticated accounts of antiquities discovered in various parts, clearly demonstrate that a people civilized, and even highly cultivated, occupied this broad section long before its possession by the Indians. Our own State of Michigan, from the low monotonous shores of Lake Erie to the rocky cliffs of Lake Superior, has contributed, in numerous ways, some of the most remarkable relics and monuments of a people whose cranial affinities and evidently advanced civilization totally separate them from the North American Indian, and ally them to some race of men who inhabited another hemisphere in the remote past. But the date of their rule of this continent is so ancient that all traces of their history, their progress and decay, lie buried in the deepest obscurity.

Nature, at the time the first Europeans came, had asserted her original dominion of the earth; the forests were all in their full luxuriance—the growth of many centuries; and nothing existed to point out who and what manner of men they were who formerly lived, and labored, and died in this land. Only the imperishable implements of their trades, crude and unwieldy though they be, and articles of domestic utility, together with the bones of the dead, has Mother Earth preserved to us through the ages. The oblivion which has closed over them is so complete that only conjecture can be indulged in concerning their mode and habits of life. They seem to have finished their work on earth before the real life-work of men and nations began, and left their monuments behind them to puzzle us with curious investigations and strange questions never perhaps to be answered.

This race of men, belonging to a period antecedent to that covered by written history, is known as the Mound-Builders, from the numerous large mounds of earth-works left by them, which form the most interesting class of antiquities discovered in the United States. Their character can be but dimly perceived and only partially gleaned from the internal evidence and the peculiarities of their mounds, which consist of the remains of what were apparently villages, camps, fortifications, gardens and burial places. Their habitations must have been tents, structures of wood or other perishable

material, for had stone been used in their construction their remains would be numerous. They built their fortifications and erected their monuments on our principal rivers, particularly the Ohio and Mississippi, and their tributaries; but they left not a word, not a sign—nothing to betray their origin, nothing to reveal the secret of a great people long vanished from the earth. The scientific and educational value of these discoveries is far greater than our present knowledge of them; but in the past decade many of the antiquities have been destroyed by road building and less laudable enterprises.

At what period this race came to this country is likewise a matter of speculation. From the comparatively rude state of the arts among them, it must be inferred that the time was very remote. Their axes and hammers were of stone, their vessels for cooking were of clay baked in the rays of the sun; and their raiment, judging from fragments which have been discovered, consisted of the bark of trees, interwoven with feathers. Their military works were such as a people would erect who had just passed to the pastoral state of society from that dependent alone upon hunting and fishing. Their ancient earth-works, moreover, are far more numerous than generally supposed, from the fact that while some are quite large, the greater part of them are small and inconspicuous. Along nearly all our water courses, that are large enough to be navigated by a canoe, mounds are almost invariably found, covering the base points and headlands of the bluffs which border the narrower valleys. So numerous are the mounds that when one stands in such places that command the grandest views of river scenery, he may well believe that he is in close proximity to some trace, though it be invisible to his undiscerning eye, of the labors of an ancient people.

### Earth-Works in the Ohio Valley

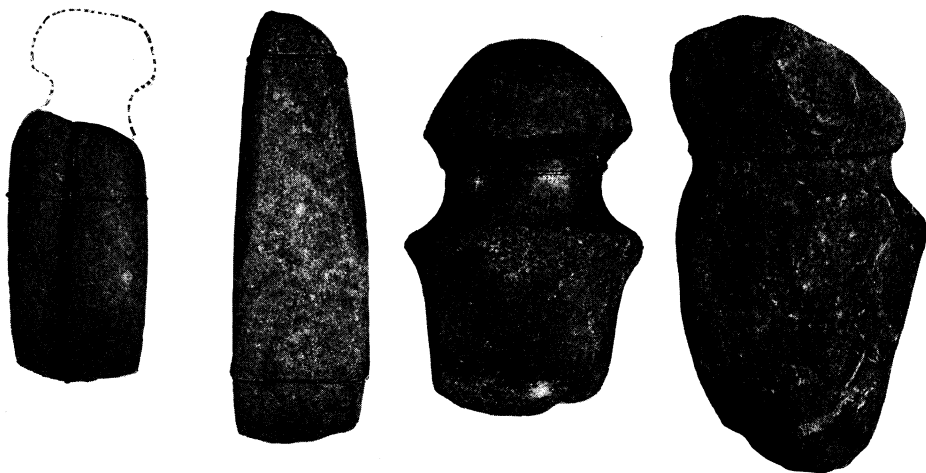
At Grave Creek, in West Virginia, there is a mound seventy-five feet high and a thousand feet around at the base; at Miamisburg, Ohio, there is one sixty-eight feet high and eight hundred at the base, while at Cahokia, Illinois, is the great truncated pyramid, seven hundred feet long and five hundred wide. Enclosures are often protected by heavy embankments, formed of earth and stone, with buttresses and gateways, and are a most interesting subject of study. Inside, they are laid out into squares, circles and parallelograms, into figures of serpents, birds, and beasts, and often exhibit some degree of art. An enclosure in Adams County, Ohio, contains a huge *relievo*, in the shape of a serpent, a thousand feet in length, in graceful curves, the mouth wide open in the act of swallowing an egg-like figure, the tail coiled. In Ohio alone, ten thousand mounds are found and fifteen hundred ramparts and enclosures. In Wisconsin, Iowa, Missouri and on the upper lakes, many remains are found in the form of animals, birds, serpents and men. These wonderful works of past generations extend along the rivers throughout the Southern States, marking the existence and departure of a great people; but they left no traces in New England.

It is curious to know, moreover, that this ancient race seems to have been actuated by the same motives and governed by the same passions, in locating their cities, that their successors were. They saw, as we have since seen, having trade and speculation in their eye, the commercial advantage of such physical locations as St. Louis, Cincinnati, and Detroit. They appropriated rich valleys, like the Scioto and the Grand, for life and business; and their works were not all a mere labor of defense, nor their occupation merely that of a soldier. They cultivated the soil and had work-shops (quarries) for the fabrication of useful articles and ornaments.

### Finding Human Remains

The Mound-Builders were early pioneers, for the banks and streams upon which they built declare the fact. The river channels have been cut deeper since they laid out their grounds by the banks and built their cities thereon. Terraces have evidently been formed below their work since they passed away, for it may still be seen where the streams have destroyed a portion of their enclosures higher up. Skulls are found at the bottom, showing that mounds were raised over them, and that the body was not afterward buried in them, although subsequent burial remains of Indians are found nearer the top. Almost always there is the evidence of an altar having been erected, upon which the body was laid and consumed, with the rites and ceremonies over some great chieftain, now forever forgotten.

It is through these skulls, more than by any other means, that physiologists have been able to determine that the Mound-Builders, whoever they were, were not Indians, the shape and outlines of the head being different and indicating an entirely distinct race of people. Although the cranial capacity of various specimens vary greatly, the average bulk of the brain is



HEAVY ABORIGINAL IMPLEMENTS

[from the Dustin collection]

From left to right (one-third natural size): Grooved stone hatchet of fine symmetric form, broken off in groove; Stone hatchet, not grooved; Grooved axe, weight  $1\frac{1}{4}$  pounds; Grooved maul, weight  $3\frac{1}{4}$  pounds.

close to the average Indian cranium, or eighty-four cubic inches. The average volume of brain in the Teutonic crania is ninety-two inches. Thus it will be seen that while the relatively large brain capacity of pre-historic man is indicative of power of some sort, it does not imply a high degree of civilization and refinement, since it is exceeded slightly by the degraded, brutal North American Indian. Still the crania of the Mound-Builders present some characteristics, which, in the language of Foster, "indicate a low intellectual organization." And the tibiae (the inner bone of the leg below the knee) present, in an extreme degree, the peculiar flattening or compression pertaining to the chimpanzee.

Occasional discoveries of the skeletons of a gigantic race puzzle ethnologists to determine to what race they belonged. About 1875, in the Township of Cayuga on the Grand River, in Ontario, five or six feet below the surface, were found two hundred skeletons in a nearly perfect state of preser-

vation. A string of beads was around the neck of each, stone pipes were in the jaws of several, and many stone axes and skinners were scattered around in the dirt. The skeletons were gigantic, some of them measuring nine feet, and few were less than seven feet, some of the thigh bones being six inches longer than any now known. The place had been cultivated for more than a century and was originally covered with a growth of pine. There was evidence from the crushed bones that a battle had been fought, and these were the remains of the slain. Decayed remains of houses had been found near this spot many generations before, indicating that the region had at some time been inhabited. Who and what filled this ghastly pit? Were they Indians or some other race?

On the other hand, ornaments and implements made of copper, silver, obsidian, porphyry and greenstone, finely wrought, are found in various mounds in the region of the Great Lakes. There are copper and stone axes, chisels and knives, bracelets, pendants and beads, toys of bone and mica, elegant patterns of pottery, all showing a people not deficient in art and mechanical ingenuity, and exhibiting a style and finish beyond anything furnished by the modern tribes of Indians on this continent. Porphyry is a hard material to work and required a hard tool to cut it. Did the Mound-Builder know how to temper his copper tool as the Egyptian did? Obsidian, or volcanic glass, was used by the Mexicans and Peruvians for arrows and instruments, and is a product of the mountains of Cerre Gordo, in Mexico, and of a mountain in Yellowstone National Park containing a vast weapon and implement quarry. Does this indicate a communication and reciprocity between people wide apart—between that mysterious nation, whoever they were, who erected those wonderful buildings in Central America ages ago, and the people we know as the Mound-Builders? Or does it lead to the conclusion that these artisans and mechanics belonged to still another race of men, of higher intelligence and civilization, who dwelt here before or after the other race? These questions, and works of art left by an ancient people, perplex and instruct antiquarians. They examine them, theorize over them, solve the mystery today, upset their theory tomorrow, believe and disbelieve, and finally retreat into darkness again and almost fancy they hear the chuckle of the old Mould-Builder at their discomfiture.



FRAGMENTS OF ANCIENT POTTERY

[from the Dustin collection]

Rims of vessels showing varying ornamentation, being sections of tops of large and small pieces. Two-fifths natural size.

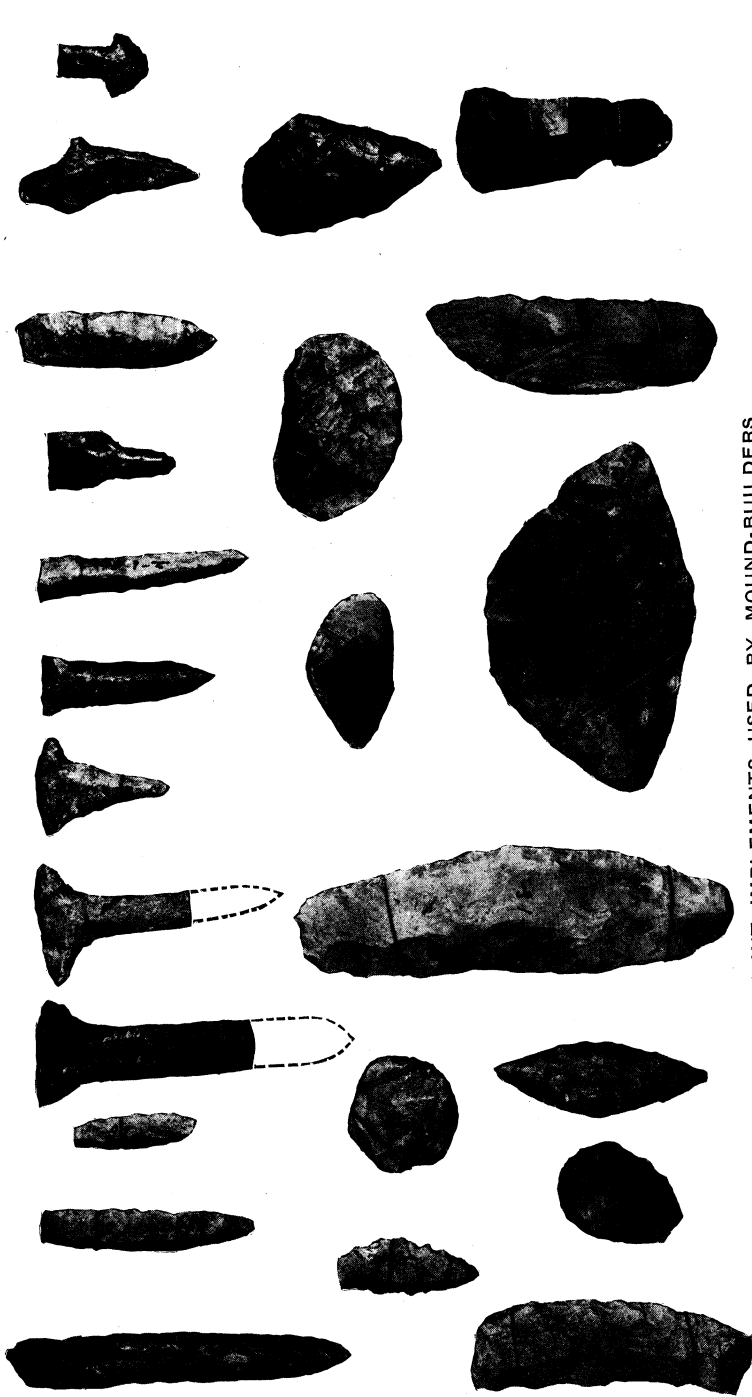
### Antiquities in Michigan

The Mound-Builders were also early pioneers in Michigan, and were the first miners in the Upper Peninsula. But how they worked, whether as members of a joint stock company on a percentage, or as individuals, every man for himself, no one can tell. We do know, however, that they went deep down into the copper ore, and dug, and raised, and probably transported large quantities of it, but by what means and where is shrouded in mystery. Some of the copper from these ancient workings found its way into the mounds of the Ohio and Mississippi Valleys, and the chain of evidence by which this is determined is the fact that the copper so found, or some of it, has little globules of silver attached to it, which, it is said, distinguishes no other copper in the world. The silver found in other copper ore is associated with the mass rather than with the copper itself, and is brought out only by fire.

The ancient mining at Isle Royal, in Lake Superior, has excited the wonder and amazement of the scientific world. The island is about fifty miles in length, from five to nine miles in breadth, has a ragged, rocky shore cut up into deep gorges, and is covered with a growth of timber. The pits are from ten to thirty feet in diameter, from twenty to sixty feet in depth, and are scattered throughout the island following the richest veins of ore with marvelous precision, showing that the pre-historic miners had great knowledge and skill in the art of mining. The pits were connected underground, and drains were cut to carry off the water. There is one deep cut in the rock, covered its entire length by timbers that have long since decayed, and is now a mass of rotten wood. At McCargoe's Cove there are nearly two miles of pits very closely connected; quantities of stone hammers and mauls, weighing from ten to thirty pounds have been found, some broken from use and some in good condition; and copper chisels, knives and arrow heads have been discovered. The copper tools seem to have been hardened by fire, but owing to corrosion it is difficult to determine their original workmanship, though there is evidence to show that they were originally of careful artisanship and polished.

The working out of the copper was no doubt done by heating a mass of the solid ore, and then pouring on water—a very slow and tedious process. The rock being sufficiently disintegrated they then attacked and separated it with their great stone mauls. Even with a large force constantly employed in this labor, it must have taken a long series of years to accomplish the work exhibited. Although two hundred men with their rude methods of mining, it has been estimated, could not accomplish any more work than two skilled miners can at the present day, with modern pneumatic drills and high explosives, at one point alone on Isle Royal, the amount of labor performed exceeds that done on one of the oldest mines on the south shore of the lake, which has been operated with a large force for more than twenty years.

When and by whom were these pits opened? Who can tell? Forests have grown up and fallen and mouldered over them, and great trees, three hundred and four hundred years old, stand around them today, counting so much, and only so much time in fixing the age of these mines. Some of these trees, four feet or more in diameter, are now growing in the pits, on the sides, and on the excavated *debris* which surround them. In one case, the partially decayed stump of a red oak was found at the edge of a pit. This tree had not been blown down, but had grown and decayed where the stump stood, only the red, interior portion of the stump remaining sound. A careful enumeration of the annual rings composing the undecayed centre of the tree, gave the number of three hundred and eighty-four, to



**FLINT IMPLEMENTS USED BY MOUND-BUILDERS**

[from the Dustin collection]

From left to right (one-half natural size): 1 to 3 inclusive, Perforators; 4 to 9, Drills; 10, Delicate lance-like blade; 11, Eccentric form, perhaps a perforator; 12, Fine spear-like point; 13, Point with serrated edges, use unknown; 14, Small implement used for cutting or scraping; 15 to 17, 19 and 22-24 inclusive, Various patterns of knives and cutting blades; 18, Implement, perhaps unfinished; 20, Curious shuttle-shaped object of unknown use — perhaps totemic; 21, Fish-shaped implement, too thick for knife, possibly totemic.



which was added two hundred rings, as representing the decayed outer portion of the stump, and five hundred and eighty-four years was arrived at as the period of its growth. Allowing for the time which may have elapsed before it commenced growing on this peculiar site, and for the number of years required for it to reach the stage of decay exhibited, it is probable that from seven hundred to eight hundred years would not be far from the truth. On removing this stump the *debris* beneath was found to consist of fragments of copper-bearing rock, thrown out from the adjoining pit, a large number of stone hammers, some perfect, others fractured from use, and, more interesting still, a knife made of copper. This only proves that the pits had not been worked within the time mentioned, and does not prevent the period of desertion of the works being placed back twice or even three times that distance.

From another pit, beneath a third deposit of vegetable matter, the remains of a skeleton of a deer were exhumed, the bones so decayed that they crumbled to pieces. Another interesting relic discovered was a sheet-like piece of copper, which had apparently been exposed to the action of fire and then hammered into a bowl-shaped utensil. This exhibits the character of the copper generally sought by the primitive miners. It is manifest from the working of the veins that they followed the deposits of sheet-like copper, which varied from a quarter of an inch to an inch in thickness, rejecting as unmanageable the fragments of rock which contained even large-sized nuggets of the metal. These fragments are found in large quantities in the rubbish at the mouths of the pits, as well as within, they seemingly having been pushed behind those miners as they advanced in the exploration of the vein.

With all these evidences of industrial activity, no hint or clue remains as to how and where the ore was removed, to what purpose so much of it was consumed, or where the laborers received their support in their work. No bones of pre-historic man have been found there—no evidence of commerce—no remains of vessels, or wharves, or houses, and yet vast amounts of copper have been taken out, not only there, but throughout portions of the Upper Peninsula, and the treasure no doubt exported to the central and southern sections of our continent. It must, in all probability, have been conveyed in vessels, great or small, across a stormy and treacherous sea, whose dangers are formidable to us now, often proving the destruction of our largest craft. This gives us a totally different conception of the character of the Mound-Builders, and dignifies them with something of the prowess and spirit of adventure which we associate with the higher races of men. Leaving their homes, these men dared to face the unknown—to brave the hardships and perils of the deep and the wilderness, actuated by an ambition which we today would not be ashamed to acknowledge.

### Ancient Fortifications Discovered

Other interesting earth-works in this State are the pre-historic forts in Macomb County, which were discovered by the early settlers along and near to the north branch of the Clinton River. Mounds of earth and stone were first noticed and evidences of once cultivated lands of considerable area, but when three structures enclosing from one to three acres of ground were found, there was much speculation as to what purpose they were designed to subserve. The Indians living in the vicinity had no traditions of their origin or by whom constructed; all was garbed in mystery. Except for the ravages of time these ancient remains were in the same condition as when left by a once industrious race. The native forests had covered these works, trees of large size were growing in the areas, in the ditch, and on the embankment. The earth had been thrown up into a ridge several feet wide

at the base, and about four feet in height from the bottom of the trench; and there were gateways or openings, ten, twelve and fifteen feet in width, in the embankments.

Surveys of these ancient structures were made as early as 1827 or 1828, before the axman had cleared the ground or the plow disturbed their outlines. The embankment of the north fort measured very nearly eight hundred feet in length, including the openings; and flat land to the southward showed signs of cultivation. A few rods to the east was a large circular mound of a height to overlook a considerable stretch of country; and a small brook flowed southeasterly near its south border.

In a direct line, some three miles to the southeast, was the large or central fort, situated on elevated ground on the right bank of the river. This enclosure was twelve hundred and sixty-eight feet in circumference, and had an area of more than three acres, aside from a wing wall two hundred feet in length. Within the area was a small pond evidently to supply water to the garrison. Three openings in the embankment led across a wide ditch to lower ground, and were protected by small mounds within to shut off from without all view of the interior. Between this fort and the stream were a number of graves in an irregular cluster, each of which contained a single skeleton; and below was a large mound surrounded by small ones in the form of a circle. The embankments may have been crowned with palisades, and the interior mounds served for observation, as well as for defense. A large quantity of broken pottery and other relics found seem to indicate a large population in the vicinity.

About a mile and a half to the southwest was found the third fort having a circumference of eight hundred and seventy feet. This structure had four openings, two of twelve, one of fifteen, and a large one of eighty feet, which may have been an uncompleted wall, near which were extensive mounds and areas of once cultivated ground. The erection of such extensive embankments, without the aid of any tools with which we are accustomed, must have required thousands of workers for a considerable period of time.

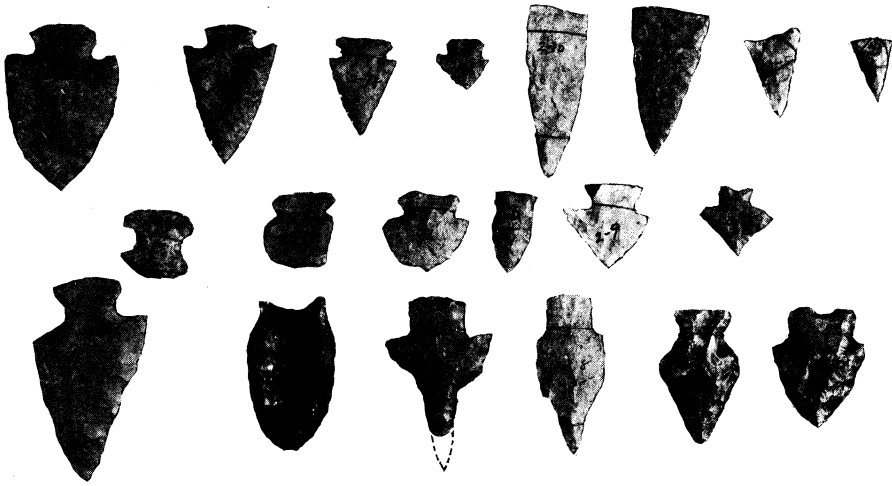
At Climax, in Kalamazoo County, are the remains of a pre-historic fortification which occupied the crest of a knoll — the highest ground for miles around. When the first settlements were made in this section in 1831, the knoll was covered with oak trees of good size, and the open country showed everywhere the evidences of former cultivation. Numerous mounds were found near by, some of which contained bones and other human relics. Around the summit of the knoll was a ditch two or three feet deep and ten or twelve feet wide, with earth banked up along its sides, making it very easily traced. Its form was that of a perfect ellipse, enclosing one and three-tenths of the summit of the hill; and its longest diameter was three hundred and thirty feet. On the Rifle River, in Ogemaw County, and in Gilead, Branch County, are other so called fortifications, with numerous earth-works in the vicinity of the former, some of which are still undisturbed by excavations.

### Unique "Garden Beds" Found

In the valleys of the St. Joseph and Grand Rivers, lying principally in the counties of Cass, Kalamazoo and St. Joseph, were found in the early days of settlement some very peculiar works of the Mound-Builders, of unknown age and origin, which have received the name of "Garden Beds." They were discovered by Verandrier, who, with several French associates, explored this region in 1748; and wrote that they were "large tracts free from wood, many of which are everywhere covered with furrows, as if they had formerly been plowed and sown." Schoolcraft, in writing of his observations made in 1827, recorded the fact that "garden beds, and not the

mounds, form the most prominent, and, by far, the most striking and characteristic antiquarian monuments of this district of country." These relics constitute a unique feature of our antiquities, and are of especial interest to us, since they are confined to our State.

The garden beds occupied the most fertile of the prairie land and burr-oak plains, and consisted of raised patches of ground, separated by sunken paths, and were generally arranged in plats or blocks of parallel rows. These varied in dimensions, being from five to sixteen feet in width, from twelve to more than a hundred feet in length, and from six to eighteen inches in height. There was much diversity of arrangement of the plats, some being in groups of two or more at right-angles to the adjacent plats; others in blocks and single beds of varying angles, having paths of the same width as the rows, and others with narrow paths, while some of the rows terminated with semi-circular heads. Wheel-shaped plats, consisting of a circular bed, with beds of uniform shape and size radiating therefrom, all separated by narrow paths, formed the most curious gardens of all.



PRIMITIVE ARROW-POINTS

[from the Dustin collection]

Flint, agate and chalcedony heads (one-third natural size). Top row, common forms; Middle and bottom rows, eccentric forms.

The tough sod of the prairie had preserved very sharply all the outlines of the beds; and it was the universal testimony of the pioneers that these gardens were laid out and fashioned with a skill, order and symmetry which distinguish them from the ordinary operations of agriculture pursued by the Indians. On this point Foster observes, that, "they certainly indicate a methodical cultivation which was not practiced by the red men." The principal crop of the Indians is maize, and this was never cultivated by them in rows, but in hills, often large, but always in a very irregular manner. Nor do these beds resemble the deserted fields of modern agriculture, but rather suggest the well-laid out garden of our own day, while the curvilinear forms point quite as strongly to the modern "pleasure garden."

These extensive indications of ancient culture necessarily imply a settled and populous community, although evidences of the numbers and character of the people are almost entirely wanting. Scarcely any of the usual aboriginal relics are found; no pottery; no spear and arrow heads; no implements of stone; not even the omnipresent pipe. Burial mounds are not uncommon in Western Michigan, but such as are found have no recognized

association with the race which cultivated these garden beds. It is probable that they were a people of peaceable disposition, of laborious habits; and that they lived in simple and patriarchal style, subsisting on the fruits of the earth, rather than by the chase. Their dwellings and their tools were of wood, and have perished; and the simple record of their labors is all, it may be, that will ever be known. It seems strange, indeed, that these garden beds, suggestive as they are, should be the only memorials of a race which left such an evidence of advanced agriculture, and was worthy of more enduring monuments.

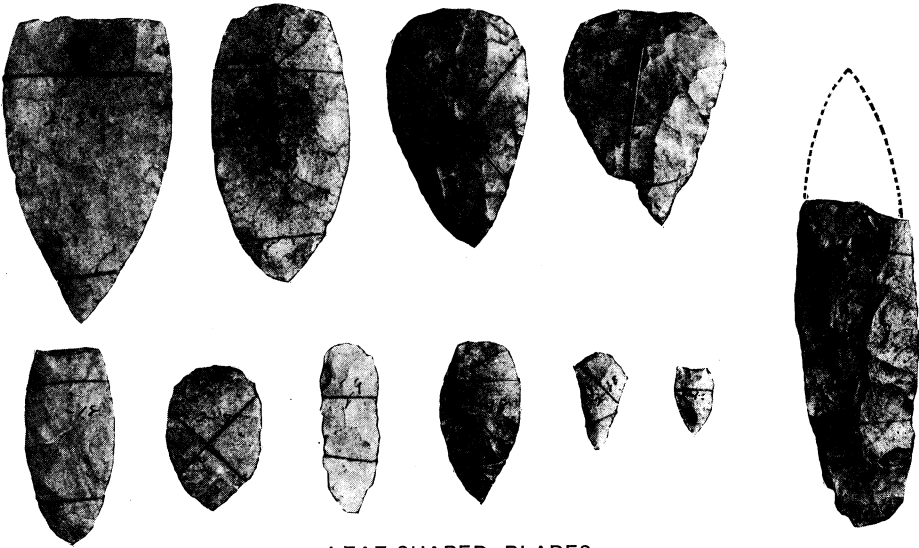
### Village Sites in Saginaw County

The entire territory draining into Saginaw River and along the shore of Saginaw Bay is rich in traces of a considerable habitation by pre-historic man. Village and camp sites, burial mounds, workshops where implements were made, pits for the storage of provisions, and caches or hoards of blades, have been discovered in this section, while the surface is strewn with various objects made or used by the aborigines long before the advent of white men. Village sites and mounds occur on both sides of the river, from its mouth to its source, and on its tributaries, and are located at frequent intervals, often less than a mile apart.

From close observation of these remains of a primitive people it is evident that their villages and camps were more numerous than the cities, villages and hamlets of today, though the actual population was small compared with the present. During the hunting season they roamed over a large territory, moving their camps from place to place; but in winter and spring they always resorted to their home villages, the permanence of which is attested by the great quantities of camp refuse, the numerous skeletal remains, and the large number of implements and weapons continually being brought to light. Every stream was dotted with permanent villages whose camp fires glistened on its surface, and which was traced by countless canoes.

On the lower river the first village to be noted was at Crow Island, which derived its name from the individual reserve of Kaw-kaw-is-kou, or the Crow. Directly across the river on the prairie was another settlement, where the remains of corn fields were to be seen years ago, and then known as the Melbourne Fields. Four miles up the river on the east bank, at a place called Te-waw-baw-king, or "hickory place," where a ridge extended south from a point where the Federal Building now stands, many unmistakable signs of primitive life were once plainly discernable. Another ridge, now designated as "The Grove," extending from the City Hall to the Belt Line tracks, was once the location of an ancient village, of which the remains are extremely numerous. South of the East Side Water Works to the forks of the river are evidences of a long-continued habitation of an extinct race. Many relics have been gathered at this place, which has been named the Mowbray Village.

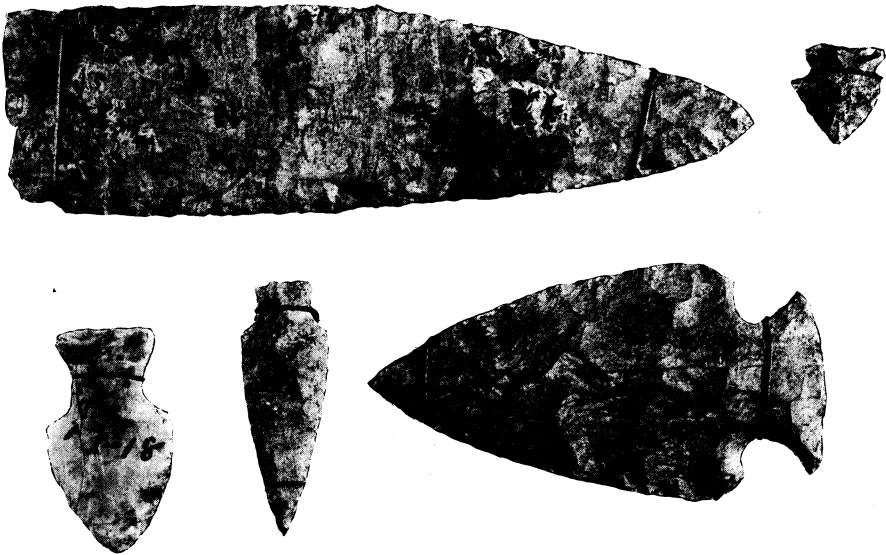
On the west bank, village remains have been noted from near where Bristol Street crosses the river, all the way to Shows-ko-kon, or Green Point, and many relics recovered in the past attest to the favor in which this location was held. At the confluence of the rivers the aborigines held their dances and corn feasts, and their camps stretched for more than a mile along the Tittabawassee, which for untold generations was a favorite dwelling place of the ancient race. Along its banks a number of fire-places have been discovered, buried under four feet of hard-packed sand which it is certain was not deposited in historic times. On the low land near Cass Cut and on a cleared field a mile above are to be found positive evidences of village life, while at the east approach of the Michigan Central Railroad bridge were the Andrews Workshops. Nearly opposite, near the home of the late A. B.



**LEAF-SHAPED BLADES**

[from the Dustin collection]

Symmetrical forms (about one-third natural size) of unfinished implements, mostly arrow points, found on village sites in Saginaw County.



**ARROW AND SPEAR POINTS**

[from the Dustin collection]

Fine specimens of ancient handiwork (about three-fourths actual size) in symmetrical forms. The large implement was probably used as a knife.

Paine, and half a mile west on the high sand bluff, at the Frazer homestead, were once the camps of a forgotten people. Further up the Tittabawassee, on the farm of E. R. McCarty, at Ure's Island, and near the homestead of the late William Hackett were aboriginal camps, while at Freeland was the reservation of Black Birds' Village, which contained six thousand acres.

On the Shiawassee River at Bear Creek is one of two settlements in the county still inhabited by red skins; and at Chesaning are extensive remains of a large village on the high bluffs on the west bank of the stream, while another great camp was on the east side. Near Oakley is one of the ancient lake beaches, and on a bluff the evidences of a large settlement may still be traced. At the intersection of the branches of the Bad River, in St. Charles, numerous remains indicating a large village have been found, and the high south bank of Beaver Creek has yielded some interesting relics. On Swan Creek, at a point a mile below the railroad bridge, the ground was once strewn with curious remains, and east of it were a number of smaller camps.

The Cass River is noted for its pre-historic remains at and above Bridgeport, the Andross Village yielding many valuable relics, while at Cook's Corners and at Frankenmuth large settlements were located. On the Flint, and on Misteguay Creek, a tributary, interesting evidences of primitive life have been uncovered by the plow; and near Fosters' are the remains of a village where a large copper knife was discovered. At Taymouth is the other village of the red skins, consisting of about sixty persons.

#### Mounds and Ancient Relics.

To Harlan I. Smith, a native of Saginaw and an archaeologist of note, must credit be given for having explored many of these village sites and earth-works, and having called attention to the remains discovered. In the East Side High School there is an interesting collection of ancient specimens which he brought together, with various notes, maps and photographs, and which it is hoped will some day, not far distant, form the foundation of a local museum which would be of great value to students generally and to posterity.

It was Mr. Smith who first discovered the group of mounds situated in the City of Saginaw, on what is now a part of Rust Park. The first mound seen by him, in 1889, was not large, but was a very typical example of the earth structures of the valley. It was about thirty-four feet in diameter and eighteen inches in height, although it was evident that it had once been much higher, having since been slowly reduced by natural forces. At the time its character was discovered it was covered with grass and flowers, and had much the appearance of a neglected flower bed. As the land in the vicinity was then occupied by a lumber yard and the location likely to be encroached upon by public improvements, he deemed it advisable to explore the mound; and the relics obtained, together with a photograph of the mound, were carefully preserved. The remains consisted of implements of defense, such as arrow and spear heads, knives and stone hatchets, utensils for domestic use, and culinary refuse in general.

Some time after, workmen, while digging for the foundation of a salt block on the premises, about three hundred feet west of the mound and about one hundred and eighty feet from the bank of the bayou, came upon a number of human skeletons. The mound within which they lay was the largest and highest of the group, being about sixty feet in diameter and three feet in height; but owing to its being covered with a rank growth of shrubs, which also surrounded it, its true character was not realized and all the remains were ruthlessly destroyed, none being saved for science in their entirety. They were at the unusual depth of four feet, which possibly was due to the accum-

ulation of soil above the old surface, by the piling up of the light sand in long dunes, as had been done in the vicinity, by the wind. In these graves bear teeth, deer bones, and remains of other wild animals were found in abundance. From the large quantity of fish bones unearthed, one might conclude that the ancient people took advantage of the resources of this locality, and that much of their subsistence was obtained from its waters. Soon after this discovery Court Street was extended through the northern end of the property partially obscuring the site.

Early in 1910 Mr. Fred Dustin, to whom science is indebted for exhaustive research of pre-historic remains in Saginaw County, made a rough survey of this locality from which he prepared blue prints accurately locating the several mounds. From his detailed description of these earth-works, to which he gave appropriate names, and which were officially adopted by the Park and Cemetery Board, there appear to be four mounds in the group. The first, which he has designated as Chippewa Mound, was recognized as being of ancient origin ten or twelve years ago, and the attention of the public was called to it. A sugar maple tree, about four feet in circumference, stands on the apex of this dome-shaped mound, which is about two hundred and fifty feet east from the shore of Lake Linton, and fifty feet south of the south curb of Court Street. In the fall of 1908, while grading the slopes to the street in Rust Park, its original form was inadvertently destroyed, a portion of it being leveled cutting a foot from its height, and revealing its secrets. The ridge at this point is alternate layers of sand, gravel and clay, the mound being of gravelly sand resting upon heavy clay, and is about fifty feet in diameter. Mr. Dustin carefully examined this mound and determined the bones unearthed to be human remains; and added many relics and implements to his collection.

About one hundred feet southwest from the center of Chippewa Mound stand three oak trees nearly in line with the center of the large mound which Harlan I. Smith mentioned in his description several years before. It is now partly covered with a dense growth of sumac bushes and other shrubs, but its western edge still shows where it was cut away for the foundation of the salt block erected on its site in the early nineties. It has been named Ash-a-tah-ne Mound, after the abbreviated name of a full-blooded Indian — a relative of the noted Chippewa chief, O-saw-wah-bon.

The third mound is near the intersection of Court Street and Washington Avenue, and was fully described by Mr. Smith as the one he first discovered, and has been named after him. Close by the Smith Mound is the fourth mound of the group, and is slightly larger than the other being about forty feet in diameter and two feet high. It was first observed by Mr. Dustin nearly twenty years ago, marked by a large bitternut hickory tree, and has been named Saug-e-nah Mound after the Chippewa word from which the name "Saginaw" is derived.

At the mouth of the Tittabawassee, on the favorite camping ground of the aborigines, called Shows-ko-kon or Green Point, are two very large mounds which were first observed by W. R. McCormick in 1836, and named Green Point Mounds. They are situated about three-fourths of a mile east of Riverside Park and five hundred and fifty feet north of the river, on very low ground subject every spring to overflow. When opened many years ago the whole interior appeared to be a whitish substance, evidently of decomposed human bones, which, owing to the lowness of the land and flooding by the river, had crumbled away much sooner than elsewhere. These mounds were examined and photographed by Mr. Smith, who also described them in his notes on archaeological remains of the valley. The larger or western mound is about one hundred feet in diameter and three and a half feet high.

while the smaller, the base of which is twenty feet east of the other, is about ninety feet in diameter and four feet high. It is probable that originally they were at least five feet in height, but being composed of loam mixed with the clay wash from the flood waters, the erosion in time of overflow must have been considerable.

In July, 1910, Mr. Dustin made a careful surface exploration of these mounds, and collected fourteen human teeth, three perfect and two mutilated arrow heads, two bear's teeth, numerous flakes of flint, all of ancient origin, and also a rudely moulded musket ball, a small flat silver ring and one blue glass bead, of European origin but of use by the savages. On August 30 of the same year he had a trench dug, commencing at the northern edge of the east mound and running to the center due south by compass, about eighteen inches wide down to the original surface of the ground. As each shovelful of earth was removed he examined it carefully, but no human remains in



#### GREEN POINT MOUNDS

[from Photograph by Harlan I. Smith]

These mounds are situated near Riverside Park, and were first described by W. R. McCormick in 1836. They are so old that all skeletal remains have long since crumbled into dust.

entirety, or even a perfect bone, were found, nor were any implements or relics brought to light. It is his belief that the bits of skull thrown out belonged to successive generations, the remains of which were disturbed by repeated burials and the implements removed or scattered. Having carefully refilled the trench, the exploration of the second or larger mound was begun by digging a trench west from its eastern edge; and a hole was also sunk in the center of the mound. The results were as meagre as from the first trench, the only interesting find being the crumbling remains of a baby's lower jaw with some of the tiny milk-teeth still clinging to it, and which was returned to its resting place and carefully covered. From the surface of this mound many fragments of pottery and a number of human teeth were picked up.

A few years before on the south edge of the east mound, the skeleton of a squaw was turned up by the plow. The remains had evidently been clothed in a rich robe of European manufacture, the front being covered with ornaments consisting of thin silver rings, bosses and scrolls, sewed on in regular patterns. Around the neck were masses of beads, of various colors, both large and small, the former being strung into necklaces, while the small ones had evidently been used in embroidery. At the side of the

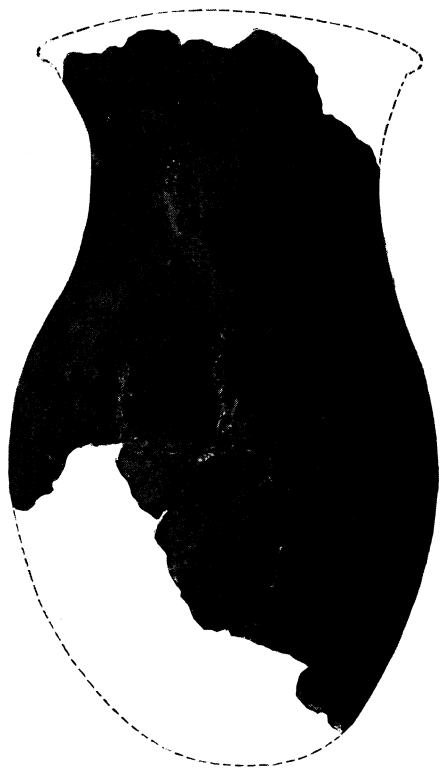


skeleton lay a rude iron tomahawk of the pattern furnished the savages two or three hundred years ago by the fur traders; and a small copper kettle, a glass bottle and other trinkets were unearthed.

At a point four miles up the Tittabawassee, on the land which James Fraser settled when he came to the valley, was once a large mound thought to have originally been more than a hundred feet in diameter and five or six feet in height. It was situated on a large knoll where the river washes a high bank which had gradually been cut way by the spring floods and ice, so that human bones were exposed and fell into the river. In former times a brick yard was in operation at the foot of the knoll, and the clear sand of the mound was removed by the cart load, the fragmentary bones being cast

aside in heaps, and the relics and implements of a by-gone race of men collected by the hundred. It is believed that this mound was the burial place of many generations of pre-historic man, long antedating interments of the savages, for the bones found were in all stages of decay. This mound has long since been entirely destroyed and its site obscured.

About six miles from Saginaw, at the bend of the Cass River in the Village of Bridgeport, several mounds have been discovered, one of which rested on a high sand knoll between the cemetery and the electric power house. This mound was not prominent, as it had many times been disturbed by the plow, but curious and interesting relics have been uncovered, among them several bird stones or gorgets beautifully finished, one of which represented an otter. A pottery urn, of peculiar interest, is three feet nine inches in circumference, and must originally have been over two feet in height; and was named the Andross Urn. It was found inverted over the head of a skeleton, and was well preserved for so large a pot, and one from a locality where nature does not favor archaeological specimens, but rather sends frosts and moisture among other elements to do them damage. As late as April, 1912, a fragment about



[Courtesy of American Museum of Natural History, New York]

#### THE ANDROSS URN

A rare specimen of ancient pottery unearthed in the Village of Bridgeport. Originally was about two feet in height.

fifteen inches wide and twenty-four inches high, of a piece of pottery, was recovered here by Mr. Dustin. Many skeletons were removed from this mound, mostly in an advanced state of decay.

It was said by the old fur traders that when they first penetrated this wilderness, there was also a regular earth-work fortification, comprising several acres in extent, below the hill about where the center of the village now is. The Indians then living in the neighborhood told them that these earth-works had been built by another race of men long before *they* came here, and that they were more like the "pale faces," and they made kettles and dishes of clay. However this may have been, civilization has now

obliterated all traces of the mounds and fortifications, the human remains have been scattered to the winds, and only the relics and implements of a remote age, perhaps of an ancient race, remain.

On the Flint River mounds are numerous, but only at Taymouth do they occur in this county. On the old Indian fields—the land given in an early day to the old pioneer, James McCormick, by the Chippewa chiefs, are four large mounds. They are situated on the bluffs at the bend on the left bank of the river, and there are several others on the flats below. The human bones unearthed here were very much decomposed, especially those on the flats; and a great variety of stone implements were plowed up at different times and carried off by relic hunters. On the Shiawassee River at Chesaning, and at the forks of the Bad River in St. Charles, are still to be seen the remains of several mounds, but no record of exploration of any of them has been made, although many relics have undoubtedly been taken from these sites.

### Caches and Corn Pits

In his writings on aboriginal remains, Harlan I. Smith states that "it is very probable that there exist ancient quarries, where chert nodules of the sub-carboniferous series were formerly obtained, as this rock, which is the material of which chipped implements are most frequently made, outcrops in many places, not only along the bay shore, but also near the head waters of the tributaries of the river." A number of caches have been discovered in various locations of which records are preserved, but how many more have been plowed out and scattered without even a mention, is impossible to estimate. The blades found in caches were perhaps made at the quarries and transported to the villages by canoe, since most caches as yet found have been near navigable water. They were there stored or buried in moist earth, which kept them in a workable condition, where they could easily be obtained and worked into the various specialized forms as such implements were required for use.

On the north bank of the Tittabawassee at its mouth a cache was found by Edward S. Golson, April 26, 1890. It was at a point where a sluggish brine spring—from time immemorial a deer lick, and since the advent of white men resorted to by their stock—had by persistent tramlings caused the bank to be broken further and further back from the river, so that the high water of spring formed a continually enlarging blind cut, extending back into the prairie for about twenty-five rods. The cache was found in the east bank of this cut, about four feet below the surface, and yielded eighty-three symmetrical chipped blades of chert, which were later presented to the Peabody Museum at Cambridge. Opposite this cache, on the east bank of the Saginaw, another deposit of the same nature was unearthed by Mr. Golson in 1892. The remains were about two feet below the surface, and consisted of fifty-nine blades of chert now preserved by the family.

Two miles above Green Point another collection of one hundred chipped blades, known as the Merrill Cache, and at the Frazer Mound site a cache consisting of over three hundred blades, mostly of four different patterns, have been brought to light. Among the latter is one pattern of large leaf-shaped blades about eight inches long with delicate notched stems; another, similar implements about three inches long; and a third, small blades not yet worked up, while the last consists of a few of the three-inch blades specialized to form arrow heads. Only a few feet away another cache yielded one large black leaf-shaped implement of chert, and thirteen rubbed stones, but there is no record of their shape or probable use.

Near the south bank of the Cass River two miles above its mouth, a cache was found very near the surface, consisting of twenty-two blades of various forms, and a dozen pieces of chert, the material of which the blades were formed. Nearly opposite this cache, in the marshy ground of the vicinity, another deposit was found, and named the Wille Cache. It comprised one hundred and seventy-five triangular-shaped blades and two celts, the blades averaging an inch and a half in length. Three miles above Bridgeport, on the north bank of the Cass River, seventy blades leaf-shaped of dark blue chert, and numerous chips and flakes, have been unearthed; and was named the Cass Cache No. 1.

The Armstrong Cache was discovered while plowing in a level field about half a mile north of the Frazer Cache, and not far from the little settlement of Shields. The implements were carefully removed, and an inventory showed sixty-six chipped leaf-shaped blades, nearly all five and a half inches in length and one and a half to one and three-fourths inches wide, remarkably uniform in shape; and many were of black flint or chert, while others were grey in color. About twenty years ago Duane Lincoln, while plowing in James Township at a point about twenty rods back from the St. Charles road, which here runs east and west, struck with his plow a store of chert blades, which he carefully gathered up filling a ten-quart pail. At present only one specimen, three inches long and one and a half inches wide, leaf-shaped of grey chert, remains. This is practically a type of the whole lot, although a few were somewhat specialized by slight notches at the base.

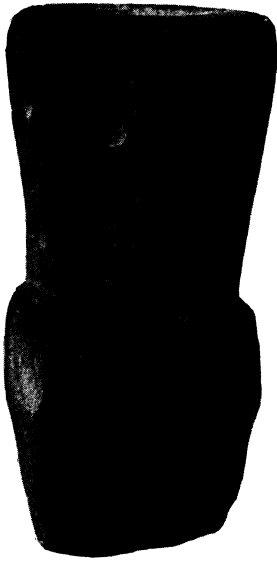
The rapid settlement of the county has destroyed nearly all evidence of cultural pits used by the aborigines for the storage of corn, smoked meats and provisions in general, but in Taymouth Township, on lands owned by S. Pettit, may be seen the depressions caused by the sinking of the old structures. They were simply excavations in the ground from five to ten feet in diameter, which were carefully lined with bark, and supported by a framework of poles or small logs, and roofed with the same materials. Their origin undoubtedly dates from a pre-historic period, although the remains which were discovered in various places by the early settlers may have been of a much later time, since the bark which lined the pits was often still intact, but crumbled to pieces upon being touched. It is evident from the structure of these pits that they were used by the aborigines as a winter storage of provisions and such game as they put away, to safeguard them from wild beasts and stragglers in the forest.

During the hunting seasons, when the natives left their camps for weeks at a time in quest of game, these cultural pits which they built with such care served as a safe place in which to conceal their rude yet useful stone implements, their perishable pottery ware, their cooking utensils, and such articles as they wished to preserve from theft. When absent from their wigwams or cabins, a pole or piece of wood placed against the door signified the fact to any visitors. Among their own people and friendly tribes, this simple notice was always held inviolate, but their enemies and strangers generally had no regard for the rights of private possession, and would often despoil their camps. Consequently, when they went away, it was their custom to conceal in the ground whatever of their belongings they needed to preserve.

In Section twenty-one, Albee Township, about eighty rods from a shallow pond near Misteguay Creek, other remains of this character may still be seen, consisting of a series of corn pits. West of the Village of Freeland, on land owned by the late John P. McGregor, formerly a part of the Red Bird Reservation, numerous pits discovered at different times have now become almost entirely obliterated by cultivation of the soil.

### Workshops

The workshops, or quarries, where primitive man casually made his flint implements, are referred to by Mr. Smith as the "Andrews Workshops" and the "Albee Workshops." From these places it is supposed most of the



[Courtesy of American Museum of Natural History, New York]

**PIPE MADE OF SAND-  
STONE**

From Mowbray Camp site,  
natural size.

material for their utensils originated, but there is not a village site that does not yield more or less of fragments from articles made there. At the east side entrance of Rust Park, and in Albee Township, near Misteguay Creek, fragmentary remains were quite numerous, while at Peon-i-go-wink and again at Me-no-quet's Village, but a few specimens have been observed. There is little evidence that the aborigines specialized in the simple arts practised by them, although it is probable that individuals skilled in stone cutting may occasionally have produced implements for trade or gift. Early records are lamentably deficient in description of the processes of their handiwork, and much has been lost by lack of interest in observing and recording simple facts. The remains of these workshops consist of finished implements, chipped blanks, broken pieces of utensils and refuse. Chert nodules have been collected from these sites in all forms, some weighing four or five pounds. In James Township, on a sandy morainal ridge over which formerly ran an Indian trail, is a "blow-hole" about eighty feet long, forty wide, and four feet deep, which has revealed bushels of flint chips, arrow and spear heads, and other relics. This place was examined by Mr. Dustin in the summer of 1914, and five leaf-shaped blades, five broken specialized blades, and one peculiar shaped blade, perhaps an unfinished arrow-

head, were the rewards of his search. The sands drift at the lightest winds, and a few days before his visit, four good arrow-points and a spear-head were picked up by boys.

### Aboriginal Stone Weapons

Ethnologists, in classifying the material remains of aboriginal races, separate all stone articles into three divisions; flints, celts, and miscellaneous. Under the term "flints" are classed all implements made of chert, chalcedony, agate, quartz and agatized wood, and covering such articles as arrow-points, spear heads, knives and small articles used for piercing and cutting. These have been treated of in the preceding pages.

Under "celts" are heavier articles such as stone mauls, hammers, axes, hatchets, pestles, chisels and skinning stones. These implements and weapons were usually fashioned from sienite, greenstone, basalt, granite, or volcanic rocks brought hither by the glacial ice sheet, and thickly strewn along the ancient beaches in the southern portion of the county, or cropping out in the banks of the Flint River. In private collections in city and county are various examples of weapons, such as hammer stones, some of which are pitted so as to be grasped more firmly; and others of convenient natural forms, easily handled, and which would be impossible to identify were it not for the battering and wear they show from long use. Then there are skinning stones, scrapers and chisels, worked to proper shapes and rubbed and polished to a fine finish; heavy grooved stone mauls, fine hatchets or tomahawks not grooved, and grooved axes, some of unusual forms. Stones

bearing deep grooves are sometimes found, which it is evident were used as rubbing or polishing implements in finishing arrow-shafts or ornamental articles. Other abrasive stones were used in polishing axes, chisels, and other celts, one of this character, nearly two inches square and ten inches long, being of peculiar form, but quite symmetrical, and appears to be of hard sandstone slightly tinged with iron.



FRAGMENTARY SPECIMENS OF PIPES

[from the Dustin collection]

From left to right (about one-third actual size). Very small pipe of argillaceous stone; Typical Micmac pipe, gray sandstone; Pipe of gray sandstone; Iroquois pipe of pottery ware; Mound pipe, pottery; Pipe of gray conglomerate sandstone; Monitor type (stem only); Modified Micmac type, argillaceous stone; Fragment of bowl of black shale; Unfinished pipe of yellowish stone; Stem of Atlantic Coast type, pottery ware.

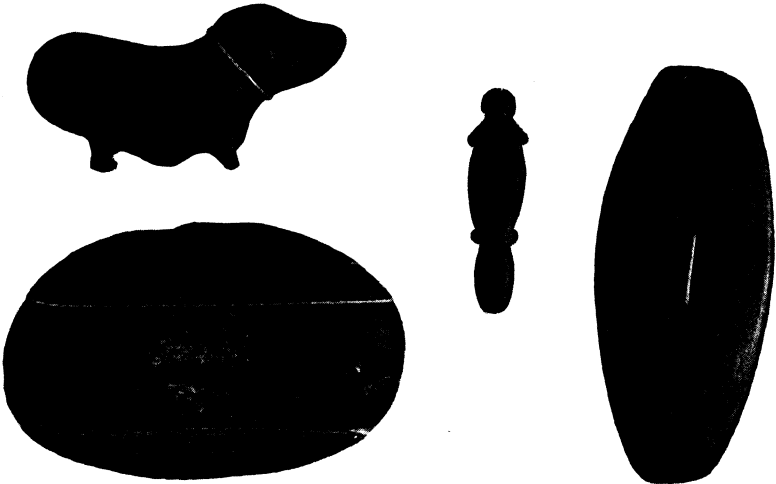
### Ancient Pipes

Of the "miscellaneous" group there are pipes fashioned from the same materials from which the pottery was made, one collection in Saginaw containing a dozen or more specimens. Occasionally a catlinite pipe is found, probably of Dakotan origin and left here in trade or captured in savage warfare. They are often of singular form and beauty, and were highly prized by their owners. The pottery pipes are usually short and rather clumsy in appearance, although exhibiting some degree of skill in the making. In the Dustin collection are a number of pipes, bowls and pieces of stem, representing no less than nine distinct types, including both Mound and Micmac examples. One is a perfect pottery pipe, without ornamentation of any kind, measuring on the outer curve from top of the bowl to end of the stem five and one-fourth inches, and in diameter of bowl one and a half inches. This interesting specimen was found in the summer of 1913 lying beside the skull of some old warrior, about two feet below the surface of the ground not far from Shields, near the western line of Saginaw Township.

Another excellent example of primitive handiwork is a bowl from which the stem has been broken, of the Iroquoian type. The bowl tapers to the stem, and there are three ornamental lines around the top of the bowl, which is an inch and a quarter in diameter, and an inch and a half to the curve of the stem. The pottery ware is rather fine in texture, and appears to contain a tempering material. A third specimen is only the lower part of the bowl, the base nearly perfect, but the keel is broken off through the thong hole. The material is grey sandstone of fine texture. The stem hole is perfect, and the conical base of the tobacco bowl shows the marks of the rude drill employed in fashioning it.

### Ornaments and Charms

Ancient generations of Indians wore stone ornaments or charms, and of these there are many examples in this section of the State. They were usually made of slate, a banded variety being a favorite, and took various forms such as a shuttle, a butterfly, or other curious designs. It would seem that these odd forms possessed an esoteric significance, and may have been used much as certain societies employ symbols to convey various moral and spiritual lessons. Among other curious forms are those known as bird stones, well finished and polished effigies of sitting birds, perfectly symmetrical in form. It is quite possible that these animal forms were the "totems" or symbols of the various clans, of which the Chippewas had many.



PRIMITIVE ORNAMENTS AND CHARMS

[from the Dustin collection]

From left to right (about two-thirds actual size) Figure of bear (totem) of banded slate; Tablet of same material, with three parallel grooves, of unknown use Figure of beaver (totem) of red pipe-stone; Tablet of banded slate.

## CHAPTER II

# THE INDIANS OF SAGINAW VALLEY

Aboriginal Tribes in Michigan—Advent of the Ottawas—Their Assimilation with the Chippewas—Habits and Customs—Mode of Life—Spirit of Revenge—The Sauks and Onottawas—Derivation of "Saginaw"—Battle of Skull Island—Extermination of the Sauks—Chippewas Fear Revenge—Legend of the Lone Tree—Retributive Justice of the Savage—Anecdotes of Chippewa Chiefs and Braves.

LIKE all the vast territory of the Northwest, the land now embraced in the State of Michigan was once in possession of native Indian tribes, which very properly belonged to the third race inhabiting North America, but distinct from the former races in every particular. The primitive language which was most widely diffused, and the most fertile in dialects, was known to the French by the name of Algonquin; and was the mother tongue of those who greeted the colonists of Raleigh at Roanoke, and of those who welcomed the Pilgrims to Plymouth. It was heard from the Bay of Gaspé to the valley of the Des Moines; from Cape Fear to the land of the Esquimaux, and was spoken, though not exclusively, in a territory that extended through sixty degrees of longitude, and more than twenty degrees of latitude.

Of the Algonquin nations, as fugitives from the basin of the magnificent river whose name commemorates them, were the Ottawas, who fled to Saginaw Bay and took possession of the whole north of the peninsula as of a derelict country. To the south of them were the Miamis, whose principal mission was founded by Allouez on the banks of the St. Joseph. They were more stable than the Shawnees in the valley of the Cumberland, who connected the southeastern Algonquins with the west; and their traditions preserve the memory of their ancient limits. "My forefather," said the Miami orator, Little Turtle, at Greenville, "kindled the first fire at Detroit; from there he extended his lines to the head waters of the Scioto; from thence to its mouth and down the Ohio to the mouth of the Wabash; and from thence to Lake Michigan. These are the boundaries within which the prints of my ancestors' houses are everywhere to be seen." And the narratives of the French explorers confirm his words.

The forests beyond Detroit were at first found unoccupied, or, it may be, roamed over by bands too feeble to attract a trader or win a missionary. Between the lakes the Ottawas found a dense forest wilderness extending to the straits, abounding with game and with lakes and rivers teeming with fish. Beyond to the west and south of Lake Superior was the great nation of the Chippewas, or, as some wrote, the Ojibwas, the Algonquin tribes of whose dialect, mythology, traditions, and customs we have the fullest accounts. They held the country from the mouth of Green Bay to the head waters of Lake Superior; and adopted into their tribes many Ottawas, and were themselves often included by the early French writers under that name. Thus the two nations, by association and alliance, gradually became assimilated, and occupied the same territory along the upper lakes. As generations passed and they multiplied in numbers and in power, the Chippewa tribes predominated and history attached their name to the united nation. Two hundred years after, indeed, in our State papers the parties to

various treaties are spoken of as the United States on one side, and the Chippewas on the other, although there appear among the signatures the names of chiefs and headsmen who were of Ottawa descent.

In their natural environment the savages were proud of idleness, and did little but cross their arms and sit listlessly; or engage in games of chance, hazarding all their possessions on the result; or meet in council; or sing; and eat, play, and sleep. Their greatest toils were to repair their cabins, fashion a boat out of a tree by means of fire and a stone hatchet, and make ready the instruments of war and of the chase. Woman was the laborer and bore the burdens of life. The food raised from the earth was the fruit of her industry. With no implement but a shell or the shoulder-blade of a buffalo, she planted the corn and beans, drove the blackbirds from the field, broke the weeds, and, in due time, gathered the harvest. She pounded the parched corn, dried the buffalo meat, and prepared for winter the store of wild fruits. She brought home the game which the warriors killed, she bore the wood, drew the water, and spread the feasts. When the chief laid the keel of a birchen canoe, it was the woman who stitched the bark with split ligaments of the pine root, and seared the seams with resinous gum. When the warrior prepared the poles of the wigwam, it was the woman who built it, and in journeyings bore it on her shoulders. The Indian squaw was his slave, and the number of his slaves was a criterion of his wealth.

The aborigines depended for food on the chase, the fisheries, and agriculture. They kept no herds; and never were shepherds. The moose, the bear, the deer, besides smaller game and fowl, were pursued with arrows tipped with harts-horn, or eagle's claws, or pointed stones. With nets and spears fish were taken, and for want of salt were cured by smoke. Wild fruits and berries in abundance were found in their season, and girls with baskets of bark gathered the fragrant fruit of the wild strawberry. Wheat and rye would have been a useless gift to the Indian, since he had neither plow or sickle; but the maize sprang luxuriously from a warm, rich soil with little aid from culture, oustripping the weeds and bearing, not thirty or fifty, but a thousand fold. Maize was gathered from the field by hand, without knife or reaping tools, and when dried could be preserved for years. It became nutritious food by a simple roasting before a fire, and a little of its parched meal, with water from the brook, was often a dinner and supper. With a small supply of it in his leathern girdle, the warrior, with his bow and arrows, was ready for travel at a moment's warning.

Famine often gave a terrible energy to the brutal part of their nature. What could have been more miserable than the tribes of the north in the depths of winter, suffering from want of food, driven by the intense cold to sit huddled in the smoke around the fire in the cabin, and to fast for days, until, compelled by faintness to reel into the woods and gather moss or bark for a thin concoction to relieve the extremity of hunger? Want stifled their affections, with the result that the aged and infirm met with scant tenderness; and the hunters, as they roamed the wilderness, often deserted the old warriors to their fate. If provisions failed, the feeble dropped down by the trail and were lost, or life was shortened by a blow. The fate of the desperately ill, and those wounded in battle and the chase, was equally sad; and those who lingered, especially the aged, were often neglected, and sometimes, with the compassion of the savage, were put to death.

The clothing of the natives was, in summer, only a piece of skin, like an apron, tied around the waist, but in winter they resorted to the protection of a bear-skin, or robes made of skins of the fox and the beaver. Their feet were protected by soft mocassins, to which were bound snow-shoes, on which they could leap like a roe. Of the women, a mat or a skin, neatly



prepared, tied over the shoulders, and fastened to the waist by a girdle, extended from the neck to the knees, leaving the head, arms, and legs uncovered. Their summer garments, of moose and deer skins, were painted of many colors; and the fairest feathers of the turkey, fastened by threads made of wild hemp and nettle, were curiously wrought into mantles. The claws of the grizzly bear formed a proud collar for the war chief; a piece of an enemy's scalp, with a tuft of long hair, glittered on the end of his war pipes. The skin of a rattlesnake worn round the arm, and the skin of a polecat bound round the leg, were emblems of noble daring. The warrior was also tattooed with figures of animals, of leaves and flowers, and painted with lively and shining colors. His dress was often a history of his deeds.

The wild man hated restraint, and loved to do what was right in his own eyes; and, since he was his own protector, and as there was no public justice, every man became his own avenger. In case of death by violence, the departed shade could not rest until appeased by a retaliation. His kindred would go a thousand miles for the purpose of revenge, over hills and mountains; through swamps full of vines and briars, over broad lakes, rapid rivers, and deep creeks, and all the way endangered by poisonous snakes, exposed to the extremities of heat and cold, to hunger and thirst. Blood once being shed, mortal strife often involved tribe against tribe, which continued for generations, unless peace was restored by atoning presents in sufficient measure to cover up the graves of the dead.

### The Sauks and Onottawas

Such were the nature and general characteristics of the Algonquins, and of those tribes which inhabited the basin of the Saginaw, three hundred years ago. Of the earliest tribes which tradition takes into account, the Sauks and Onottawas occupied the beautiful country from the bay to the upper tributaries of the river. Along the Saginaw the Sauks made their homes, built their camp fires, held their councils and smoked the calumet. They roamed the forests which abounded with game, they paddled their light bark canoes on its clear, smooth waters, and they fished the quiet pools. Their largest village was at the confluence of the rivers which formed the main stream, or Green Point as the place has been known for years; and there was a smaller village on the bluffs of the Tittabawasee, above the present settlement at Paines. On a gentle rise of ground along the Saginaw, six miles from its mouth, they had another large village in which were enacted some of the most stirring scenes in their traditional history.

The Sauks were, indeed, so imperishably identified with our early history, traditional though it is, that their name has become indissolubly linked with our own. From their dialect the name Saginaw is unquestionably derived. It is a perversion of "Sa-gin-a-we, Sa-gin-a-gi, or Saug-e-nah," which freely translated means, "land, or place, of the Sauks." According to tradition the total number of Sauks living in this valley, at the beginning of the seventeenth century, was about sixteen hundred, a considerable population for a small section.

Along the Cass and Flint rivers to their head waters roamed the Onottawas, whose warriors found the forest wilderness a delightful hunting ground. The woods were full of game, the streams teemed with fish, while wild fowl filled the marshy ground or flew high in the trees. Their principal village on the Cass was at the Great Bend, near the present town of Bridgeport, and their camp fires lined the stream to and beyond Tuscola. On the Flint their families, though more scattered, were especially numerous, and they spread over a long stretch of river country. Their largest village was

situated on the bluffs—about thirty miles above its mouth, and within the present City of Flint—a spot which was the scene of mortal strife in Indian history.

### The Chippewas Wage Savage Warfare

But these friendly tribes, upon whom the Great Spirit had bestowed a hunting ground so plentifully supplied with all the needs and desires of their savage life, were not destined to occupy unmolested this favored country. Far to the north the warlike Chippewas had heard of the Sauks and Ojibwas—of the beautiful country and rich hunting grounds they possessed, and they longed to gain them by conquest. The spies and scouts sent out by them returned with glowing accounts of the beautiful rivers and valleys, the abundance of fish and game found there, and told of the unprotected and unguarded state of the occupants. They therefore called a council of their tribes and allies, to be held on an island in the straits which connect the lake of the Hurons and the lake of the Illinois (Lake Michigan). At the appointed time the warriors from the Hurons on the east, the Potawatomies on the south, and the Menomonies on the west gathered at that place, and with solemn deliberation decided to wage relentless warfare on their weaker neighbors toward the south. Accordingly, a savage conflict was soon begun which resulted in the annihilation of the Sauks and their allies.

The traditional accounts of the predatory incursions of the Chippewas, as handed down from generation to generation of their chiefs, was preserved by an early settler who came to this valley in boyhood. In later years, as a furtrader, his associations were chiefly with the Chippewas, whose language became almost as familiar to him as his own. He relates that there were several very old Indians living near the bay, and in 1834 he sought out and questioned one of them, named Putt-a-guas-a-mine, who, though reputed to be more than a hundred years old, still retained his mental faculties. He declared that the unwritten narrative of his tribe had been told and often repeated by his grandfather, who lived to a very old age, and who had received it from his grandfather, in order that the principal events in their history might not be lost.

When asked for these traditions of his race, the old Indian said that the Sauks occupied the whole territory of the Saginaw and its tributaries, extending from the Au Sable River on the north to the head waters of the Shiawassee, on the south. Their main village stood on the west bank of the Saginaw not far from its mouth, from which they frequently sallied forth in warlike incursions on the Chippewas about Thunder Bay. They were also unfriendly to the Potawatomies, who occupied the country southwest of them along the southern shore of Lake Michigan.

When the council of the Chippewas and their allies ended they fitted out a large band of warriors, which soon started in birch bark canoes for the main land. They came down the west shore of Lake Huron, and, in order to mask their movements, they stole along the shore of Saginaw Bay at night, and lay concealed in the bushes on shore during the day. At length they arrived at a point about ten miles from the mouth of the river which they called "Pet-obe-gong," where a portion of their band landed, while the remainder crossed the bay under cover of darkness, and landed on the east shore. In the morning, before it was yet day, both bands crept stealthily along the banks of the river, one on each side, to attack and cut off the retreat of their enemy.

While these hostile movements were taking place, a great festival was being held by the Sauks in honor of the young chief "Raven Eye," who had that day been advanced for some daring feat of the chase. A large number

of warriors from the various villages and camps of the tribe were present, and also a few young Onottawa braves who had been invited to participate in the festivities. The day was a most delightful one in early autumn. The old chiefs threw aside their usual gravity, the young braves their fierceness, and all mingled together in gaiety, song and dance. The dark-eyed *Mimi* was there, the chieftain's daughter, to whom it was said Raven Eye was betrothed, one whom many a young warrior would have suffered torture, to have won from her even the tribute of a smile.

Evening came on, soft, still and delightful. The full, harvest moon arose in splendor, and cast its mellow light over the happy scene; and the dim, wild wood around resounded with notes of merriment. It was late when the festival ended, and all of the gay throng, wearied with pleasure, sunk into peaceful, quiet slumber. The night wind sighed through the dark pines in mournful cadence, the guardian spirit of the savage hovered over the sleepers, with its low death chant, yet its warning notes were unheard: the sleepers slept on. Suddenly a wild, unearthly yell broke fearfully upon the still night, and awakened a thousand echoes. Aroused by it, the Sauks sprang to their feet, bewildered and dismayed, and were met by the fierce Chippewas, who commenced an indiscriminate slaughter. Some were tomahawked—women and children, and aged warriors too feeble to raise an arm in defense, not being spared—while some leaped into the river and were drowned. Others, more agile and fleet of foot, escaped and took their families, or what remained of them, across the river. On some high ground (at Portsmouth) they attempted to fortify themselves, believing that the enemy would follow up their conquest.

#### Battle of Skull Island

The whole valley of the Saginaw was now in a state of wild commotion and fear, as it was known that the Chippewas had commenced a bloody war of extermination. Their band that had crept up the east side of the river, seeing the defenseless condition of the Sauks, soon came up, and a fearful and desperate battle took place. Human bones of those killed in the fight may still be found in this hill. The Sauks were again defeated at this place, but the remnants of their once happy and contented band recrossed the river at night, and retreated to an island near the mouth of a small stream, which was afterward named Cheboyganing Creek. Although the land was low and marshy they here felt secure from attack, as their enemies had no canoes in the river; and they proceeded to fortify themselves. But soon after the river froze over with ice thick enough for the allies to cross, which they did in overwhelming numbers, and another massacre ensued. In the end the Sauks on the lower river were practically exterminated, only twelve squaws being spared. On account of the great quantity of skulls and bones found there in later years, the place was called Skull Island.

The Chippewas and their allies then proceeded up the river to its head, where they divided their band, some warriors going up the Cass, some up the Flint, while others went up the Tittabawassee and Shiawassee and their tributaries. All the straggling bands of their enemies were located and every member of them put to death, leaving none to contend with them as to the possession of this hunting ground. The fiercest battle probably was fought on the bluffs of the Flint, at the village of the Sauks, in the present City of Flint, in which, tradition says, a reinforcement of their allies came from the vicinity of Detroit and met them. Mounds filled with bones scattered indiscriminately, indicating that the bodies had been buried hurriedly after a battle, can be located at this place even to this day. The waring Indians then came down the Flint and fought another battle on a



SEMI-CIVILIZED INDIANS OF SAGINAW IN THE '60's

bluff one mile above the present town of Flushing, where mounds filled with bones still exist; and soon after exterminated a small remnant of the Sauks at a point sixteen miles below, where fifty years ago the farm of James McCormick was located.

On the Cass River the allies came upon the principal village of the Sauks at the Great Bend, near Bridgeport, the inhabitants of which they captured and put to death. A small ridge, or earthwork, supposed to have been their rude fortification, was plainly to be seen here as late as 1830. The next important battle was fought on the Tittabawassee on ground just below the farm on which James Frazer settled when he came to the valley as one of its early pioneers.

Having completed their bloody work of conquest, with the extermination of the Sauks, excepting the twelve squaws spared from the massacre on the lower river, a council of the allies was held to determine the fate of the survivors. Some of the warrior chiefs were bent on torturing them to death, others wanted to spare their lives and set them free to go wherever they pleased, while still others advised sending them far away beyond the "Great River." At last it was decided to place them among the Sioux; and a compact was made with that warlike nation that the tribes should not molest them, but offer them protection, an agreement which, according to tradition, was faithfully kept.

Having assured themselves that they were indeed sole masters of the beautiful valley of the Saginaw, the Chippewas set about making preparations for a permanent stay there, at least as far as their disposition would admit. Their lodges soon rose from the ruins of the Sauk and Onottawa villages, and maize waved over the graves of the disinherited possessors of the soil. The Chippewa hunter pursued the wild wolf and deer through the hunting grounds of the Sauks without fear of interruption, and made his camp beneath the very trees where they had often reveled, or met in council. Many Indians who came to this valley, however, never returned to their tribes, nor were they ever after heard of, occurrences which filled their relations with deep dread and fear. At length it became a firmly fixed belief among them that the spirits of the dead Sauks still haunted their favorite hunting grounds, and took the lives of their enemies. It may have been that a few Sauks escaped the massacres, and still lingered around the camps, watching for straggling hunters and killing them whenever an opportunity offered.

Years rolled on and the invaders grew in strength and power, and in the pride of their hearts boasted of their conquests, and vainly defied the Great Spirit. For a long time the Great Spirit bore with them; but a day of reckoning was hastening on. The pale faces came, bringing with them the seeds of discontent and strife, which they scattered broadcast through the valley of the Saginaw. They taught the Indians to quaff the deadly fire-water, and to curse and yell in tolerable English. The rich hunting grounds, which their forefathers had wrenched so fiercely from the defenseless Sauks, passed from their hands; and villages sprang up where the Chippewas had often tracked the bear and the elk.

Many long years had elapsed since their ancestors had so wrongfully taken possession of the favored land, and sent the lonely and friendless squaws far away among strange tribes. The Great Spirit had, however, watched over them and directed their course in their new found home toward the setting sun.

### A Ghost of the Sauks

One day the Chippewas in camp at the head of the Saginaw were surprised to receive a visit from a strange Indian, whose dialect and dress differed from their own. By signs he made them understand that he came from a powerful tribe of Sauks, which lived many miles away in the west, where game was found in great abundance, and in whose rivers and lakes all kinds of fish abounded. He also told them that his tribe had not forgotten the great wrong that his ancestors had suffered from the hands of the Chippewas, and that they burned for an opportunity to avenge the murdered of his race. He had come, he said, to tell them that, although his tribe did not hope to reclaim their lost hunting ground, in an hour when their enemies least expected it, the avenging warriors would be upon them. After singing a wild, exciting song in his own tongue, and giving a fearful parting whoop, he bounded into the depth of the forest like a wild deer, and disappeared, leaving his hearers in a state of consternation and alarm.

At intervals, since this event, the Chippewas received mysterious visitations of the spirit of the departed Sauks. Sometimes during sugar making, they would be seized with a sudden panic, and leave everything — their kettles of boiling sap, the mokuks of sugar standing in their camp, their ponies tethered in the woods, and flee to their canoes as though pursued by their ancient enemy. Not unfrequently opportunity would be taken of the stampede, by some bad Indians or stragglers, to rob the poor savages of what little they possessed. This led to the firm belief among them, upon cautiously returning and finding their camp despoiled, that the Great Spirit was visiting the sins of their forefathers upon them.

An old Indian chief, named "Tong-do-gong," who died in 1840, told many times of having killed a Sauk while hunting when a boy. This happened probably about the year 1785, and as a result the Indians on the Saginaw to within fifty years ago still believed that there was a Sauk lurking in the vicinity of their camps. They had seen the place, they said, where he had made his fires and slept. For days at a time they would keep together in bands, and not leave their camp to hunt because they believed there was a Sauk in the neighboring woods, for some one of their band had seen where he had slept. Nothing could disillusion them of this fearsome belief.

### Shop-en-a-gons' Account

Other old Indians, who clearly remembered the traditions of their race, as handed down from their grandfathers, related at different times the same story of the extermination of the Sauks, varying only in unimportant details which could have no bearing on the fact. Later old chief Shop-en-a-gons, who was so well known to some of our citizens of today, and who passed to his happy hunting grounds in December, 1911, told substantially the same narrative. In his account, however, as related in his ninetieth year, his tribe, which occupied the country north of the Au Sable River, had suffered grievous wrongs from straggling bands of the Sauks. Their camps had been pillaged during their absence on the hunt, and their women and children had been abused. These crimes they had borne patiently for several years, when, at the outbreak of the whole Chippewa nation, they gladly joined in the savage warfare. The band to which his tribe belonged, he said, crossed the Au Sable to the head waters of the Tittabawassee, which they followed to the various camps of the enemy, slaying them at every hand. On the bluffs of the river (at Paines) near its mouth, they fought a fierce battle in which the Sauks were all killed and their camp laid waste. They then

joined another band in their incursions up the Flint River, and participated in further battles on that stream. The memory of this old and friendly chief was generally very clear regarding the unwritten history of his race, but, like other merely traditional history, should be taken as probable rather than as actual facts.

### Legend of the Lone Tree

Among the interesting legends told by Indian chiefs of the Saginaws, is one concerning a lone tree which once stood on the east side of the river, above Portsmouth. Alone and isolated on the broad prairie, it stood majestic in its loneliness; and a spirit of romance lingered about it—a whisper of past mysteries breathed through its spreading branches. A peculiar interest was imparted to it from its having been for years the abode of a white owl, whose dismal screeches fell mournfully on the night.

The Indians had a great reverence for this tree, and believed that its occupant was a spirit-bird, or guardian spirit, of a dead warrior. The spirit-bird, they said, sometimes personifies a dove, sometimes an eagle, or other species according to the disposition of the deceased. A fearless, ambitious, and untamed warrior's spirit-bird is an eagle; a blood-thirsty chieftain's spirit-bird is a hawk, while the friends of a gentle maiden who has passed to the spirit land, know that she is hovering near them when they hear the cooing notes of a turtle dove at morn or at eve.

Many years ago, before the coming of the white man to this hunting ground, so the legend runs, Ke-wah-ke-won, a noble chieftain of the Chippewas, ruled his people with love and kindness. He was a patriarch among them, and greatly beloved for his gentleness, forbearance, and the mildness of his rule. He had been a great warrior in his day, but his youth had departed, and the languid pulse and feeble footstep told, only too plainly, that he would soon pass to the hunting grounds of the Great Spirit. The good old chieftain felt that he was about to die, and was desirous of once more seeing his tribes in council, and of bestowing upon them his last blessing. Around him quickly gathered, in mournful silence, all of his beloved people, eager to catch the last words of admonition from the lips of their dying chief—forming a melancholy death scene in the wilderness. At length the old man spoke, while the fire of his youth seemed rekindled in his dim eye, and his voice, though weak, was calm and clear.

“My children,” said he, “the Great Spirit has called me, and I must obey the summons. Already is the tomahawk raised to sever the last cord that binds me to my children; already my guide stands at the door to convey me to the hunting grounds of my fathers in the spirit land. You weep, my children, but dry your tears, for though I leave you now, yet will my spirit-bird ever watch over you. I will whisper to you in the evening breeze, and when the morning comes you will know that I have been with you through the night. But the Great Spirit beckons me, and I must hasten. Let my body be laid in a quiet spot in the prairie, with my tomahawk and pipe by my side. You need not fear that the wolf will disturb my rest, for the Great Spirit, I feel, will place a watch over me. Meet me in the spirit land, my children—Farewell.”

They buried him in a lonely spot in the wide plain, near the beautiful river, with his face toward the rising sun; and was never disturbed by bird or beast, for so the Great Spirit had ordered it. Time passed on and a tree arose from his grave and spread its branches over it, as if for protection, while the great white owl—the spirit-bird sent to watch over it—came and

took possession. Though the tree has long since fallen before the woodman's axe, yet the spot upon which it stood has often been pointed out, and where sleeps Ke-wah-ke-won, the beloved chieftain of his race.

#### **Nay-o-kee-man and Pau-pem-is-kobe**

Long years ago on the banks of the Flint, fifty miles from Saginaw, there could be seen a small mound under the branches of a large oak. A Chippewa hunter, named Pet-e-bon-a-qua, in passing there one day stopped to rest, and upon being questioned about it said that, before the pale faces invaded his country, two braves had engaged in mortal combat upon that spot, and that one brave warrior slept beneath the mound. One of these, named Pau-pem-is-kobe, was the favored suitor of the beautiful daughter of a mighty brave, and this had enraged the fierce Nay-o-kee-man, who was also enamored of the dusky-eyed maiden.

One day the two young warriors came together in the forest, and words of anger passed between them. Nay-o-kee-man nursed his wrath and some time later while hunting he saw his hated rival in the woods. Secreting himself he laid in wait. As Pau-pem-is-kobe passed in the narrow trail, the whizzing of a tomahawk warned him of an unseen foe. With characteristic agility he sprang for cover, but so true was the aim of the skillful Nay-o-kee-man that he received a slight scalp wound. For some time there was the usual dodging and feinting, each trying to get the advantage of the other.

At length the assailant exposed his person unguardedly for an instant, when an arrow from the stout bow of Pau-pem-is-kobe struck him in the neck. Seeing that his foe was partially disabled, Pau-pem-is-kobe then rushed out to finish him; but the latter was still in fighting trim. As the two braves closed both drew their long hunting knives, and a death to death struggle ensued. Nay-o-kee-man was the more powerful of the two, and, though badly wounded, he finally succeeded in thrusting his knife into the vitals of his antagonist, thus sending him to the happy hunting grounds. The victor, fearing the wrath of his tribe, fled to another part of the territory, while the spirit of the dead Pau-pem-is-kobe haunted the spot where his life went out.

#### **Retributive Justice of the Savage**

In one of the revels at the camp of the Chippewas on the Saginaw, an Indian who had quaffed too freely of the white man's "fire-water," killed his squaw, and in order to conceal the crime threw her body into the fire. Afterward recovering from his drunken stupor, he realized that the signs of his guilt were still present, so he fled and took refuge in the camp of the Ottawas near by. The charred remains of the poor squaw were discovered soon after, the absence of the Indian noticed, and the cry for revenge was raised. The avengers pursued the culprit to the campfire of their neighbors, and in solemn council doomed him to the death which in the stern old Indian code was reserved for those who shed the blood of their kin. It was a slow torturing, cruel death. Placing a hatchet in the victim's hand, they led him to a large log that was partially hollow and forced him to dig it out still more so as to admit his body. This done he was taken back and tied to a tree.

While the executioners smoked, and drank fire-water, evening came on, and they kindled fires about him. Then commenced the orgies peculiar to the savage on such occasions. They danced and sang in their wild, exciting manner, chanting the dirge of the recreant brave. The arrow was fitted to the ready bow-string, and often, with its shrill twang, it was sent into his quivering flesh; and to heighten his misery his nose and ears were cut off. The night passed in this fiendish manner, the victim still bound to the tree,



bearing his punishment with a stoicism which nothing mortal could shake. Seven long and weary hours after did he stand there, enduring the most cruel torture, before his proud head dropped upon his breast, and his spirit passed to the hunting grounds of the Great Spirit.

Then they took the mutilated body, wrapped it in a clean blanket, and placed it in the log coffin the victim had helped to hollow. His hunting knife was placed by his side that he might have some means of defense, his bottle of "fire-water" and his pipe and tobacco that he might find cheer on his long journey. The cover was then put on, stakes were driven on each side of the log, and the space filled with earth and brush. The murdered squaw was avenged by this stern act of retributive justice, and quiet reigned over the forest once more.

### O-ke-mos

"Old" O-ke-mos, a nephew of Pontiac and once the chief of the Chippewas, was born on the upper waters of the Shiawassee, at a date unknown. The earliest account of him is that he took the warpath in 1796; and he was active in the battle of Sandusky, in 1803, which gave him his chieftainship and caused him to be revered by his tribe. Afterward he settled with his people on the banks of the Shiawassee, near the place of his birth, where for many years he engaged in hunting, fishing, and trading with the white men. In 1837, when small-pox broke out in his tribe, their families became scattered, and the sound of the tom-tom at council fires and village feasts, were heard no more along the pleasant river.

O-ke-mos then became a mendicant, and many a hearty meal did he receive from his friends among the whites. He was only five feet four inches in height, but was lithe, wiry, and active, with the usual amount of Indian intelligence, and possessed bravery; but in conversation he hesitated and mumbled his words. Before the breaking up of his tribe his dress consisted of a blanket coat, with belt, steel pipe, hatchet, tomahawk, and a heavy, long, English hunting knife, with a large bone handle, stuck in the front of his belt. He painted his cheeks and forehead with vermilion, wore a shawl around his head in turban fashion, and covered his legs with leggings.

He died in his wigwam near Lansing, and was buried December 5, 1858, at Shinnicon, an Indian village in Ionia County. Though his coffin was roughly fashioned, in it were placed his pipe and tobacco, hunting knife, and bird's wings, in accordance with the Indian traditions.

### Nau-qua-chic-a-ming

Nau-qua-chic-a-ming, who was well and favorably known to all the early white settlers of the Saginaw Valley, was made one of the chiefs of his tribe upon the death of his father, and was then constituted head chief of the Chippewas. His honesty and friendship to his white neighbors was proven in numerous instances; yet he often declared that the vices of the Indian were all acquired by contact with the white race. The native Indian, he said, did not lie or steal and would not do a dishonorable act. In war he might be cruel and vindictive, but in peace he was kind and just. Before the pale faces came and robbed the red men of their wits with "strong water," and their lands, and taught them the vices of civilization, the Indian was brave and honest. No Indian ever locked his cabin lest some other Indian might break in and steal. When the owner of the wigwam or cabin went forth to war or on the hunt, he simply placed a stick against the door or entrance, as a sign that he was absent, and no one ever disturbed his belongings. The untutored savage believed in the Great Spirit, and was superstitious to a degree, but his native honesty was a firmly fixed trait of character, and in marked contrast to the Christian pale face.

In company with other chiefs and prominent white men of Saginaw, Nau-qua-chic-a-ming went to Washington in 1830, for the purpose of carrying out the provisions of the treaty negotiated in that year. He passed to the happy hunting grounds, October 26, 1874, at the advanced age, it was believed, of more than ninety years. His son, "Jim," who was also a good and respected Indian, died about 1892.

#### O-saw-wah-bon

O-saw-wah-bon, the famous chief of the Chippewas, was born in an Indian camp on the site of Saginaw City, in 1798. His mother's name was Ke-no-wah-nah-ah-no-quay, and the name she bestowed upon the infant savage was Kay-pay-yon-quod. While bearing this peculiar title he was generally ill, and as he grew older he came to believe that its change would lead to improvement of his health. He therefore cast it aside in regular Indian form and adopted that of his father, O-saw-wah-pon. He was always very friendly to his white neighbors — the honest traders, and was particularly attached to General Cass, and on this account used his oratorical powers in behalf of the government's plans for the settlement of his country. It was even said that he urged Tecumseh to desist from his purpose of opposing the Americans. He died in Isabella County early in 1859, and was buried with all the ceremony attending the funeral of an Indian chieftain.

#### Shaw-we-nos-se-ga

Shaw-we-nos-se-ga, a noted Chippewa, was also well known to the early settlers of Saginaw. At a very early age he took rank among the warriors of his tribe as a mighty hunter, and in after years, when the new settlers offered a bounty for wolf scalps, he was among the principal holders of bounty certificates. As late as 1857 he produced twelve wolf scalps before the board of supervisors, and in addition to the bounty paid him, his prowess was handed down to historic fame in a poetic tribute.

#### Ma-say-nos

One of the Chippewa braves, by the name of Ma-say-nos, by reason of an affair at heart, in which he became enamored of a beautiful maiden of his tribe, but who bestowed her affections upon another hunter, became a veritable Indian hermit. He lived alone and avoided the association of the tribe, being seldom seen by any of them, or by the trappers, and rarely spoke to anyone. He died in his desolate cabin, alone and unattended, a circumstance which shows that in some respects the red man was not unlike his white brother.

#### Oge-maw-ke-ke-to

Oge-maw-ke-ke-to was not a chief by hereditary title; but because of the high order of his accomplishments, his brother Indians conferred on him the title and privileges which belonged to Miz-co-be-na-sa, who was content to lead as chieftain of a band. It was said that both the hereditary and *de-facto* rulers were Indians of the most noble traits, requiting justice with lasting friendship for its dispenser, and punishing treachery with instant death.

#### Miz-co-be-na-sa

Miz-co-be-na-sa, signifying the Red Bird, was a quiet, unassuming chief of the Chippewas, and possessed no desire whatever for fame — no aspirations after greatness. It was said of him that having his pipe and tobacco pouch well filled, and his bottle of whiskey at his side, he was perfectly contented and cared little about the affairs of the Indian state. He had, however, been

a mighty hunter in his day, but the fire of youth had passed away, and with it all the energies of a youthful spirit.

It is a melancholy and lamentable fact, that as the country became settled by the whites, the native energy and spirit of the red man grew less and drooped, for he beheld the broad domains possessed by his fathers in the hands of the pale faces, and the cherished hunting grounds which he called his own melting away before the march of progress. As society advanced the red man receded and degenerated, despite the efforts made to civilize and enlighten him. While a feeble remnant of the bold and warlike Chippewas remain, their fate is not unlike that of the Sauks, in that they have been swept from the face of the earth before the advancing tide of civilization. The zealous cupidity of the encroaching white man has driven out the once proud possessors of the soil, has hewn away their forests, destroyed their lodges, and with ruthless sacrilege has desecrated the resting places of their dead.



Chief of the Chippewas, a native of Saginaw, at the age of eighty-four was strong, active and keen-sighted. His father fought under Tecumseh, against the Americans, and received from the British the medals which "Shop" wears. The silver hat band was inherited from his wife's father, Chief Nau-qua-chic-a-ming, who had it from his forefathers.

## CHAPTER III

# THE ADVENT OF WHITE MEN

---

Early French Explorations—Discovery of the Great Lakes—Coming of the Jesuits—First Christian Mission Established in Michigan—Pere Marquette Finds First Settlement—Did the Jesuits Visit the Saginaw River?—Primitive Maps—Earliest References to Saginaw—Advent of the Fur Traders—Jacob Smith (Wah-be-Sins) Pioneer Trapper—Louis Campau, the First White Settler—Other Early Pioneers.

**A**LITTLE less than three hundred years ago, preceding any permanent English settlement north of the Potomac, the footsteps of the white man penetrated the forests of our commonwealth. Years before the Pilgrims anchored within Cape Cod, Joseph le Caron, an unambitious Franciscan, the companion of Champlain, had entered into the land of the Mohawks, had passed to the north into the hunting-grounds of the Wyandots in Ontario, and, bound by his vows to the life of a beggar, had, on foot, or paddling a bark canoe, gone onward and still onward, taking alms of the savages, until he reached the rivers of Lake Huron. Wintering with the friendly Indians in their wandering hunter life, enduring all its hardships, and learning their language and ideas, he came at length to their palisaded towns near the shores of Georgian Bay. Thus was Le Caron the first of a civilized race to behold the waters of the Great Lakes, and to plant the cross on their shores.

In the summer of 1615 he set up his altar in a new bark lodge he had built in the Huron town of Caragouha, which was situated within the present boundaries of Medonte Township in the extreme northern part of Simcoe County. There he began to learn a new and strange tongue, to study the nature of the savages, so as to teach the flock around him. Soon after he was joined by Champlain, on his return from the expedition against the Iroquois near the outlet of Lake Ontario. During the following winter they extended their observations to Lake Huron and visited the neighboring tribes, of whose habits and character Champlain made diligent study and wrote out the results with great minuteness and detail. In the spring of 1616 he returned to Quebec by the way of French River, Lake Nipissing and the Ottawa River, relinquishing further exploration to his subordinates. Le Caron continued his labors among the Hurons until the fall when he, too, proceeded to Quebec.

Among the pioneers of the wanderers in the American forests, a class of men hardy, agile, fearless, and in habits approximating to the savage, was Etienne Brulé, of Champigny, who had accompanied Champlain to the Huron villages near Georgian Bay. He spent three years in roaming through the vast forests of the North; and Sagard, in his *Historie du Canada*, published in 1634, mentions this bold voyageur, with a Frenchman named Grenolle, as having made a long journey and returned with a "lingat" of red copper, and with a description of a great inland ocean which was so large as to require nine days to reach its upper extremity. This body of fresh water was named Lac Superior, and defined as discharging its waters into Lake Huron by a fall, first called Saut de Gaston, and afterward Sault Ste. Marie. To him belongs the undisputed honor of being the first white man to give the world a knowledge of the region beyond Lake Huron.

In 1618 Jean Nicollet came from France and entered the service of the "Hundred Associates," a French fur company, under the direction of Champlain. For several years he traded with the friendly Hurons, and on July 4, 1634, was at Three Rivers, a trading post but recently established. Threading his way in a frail canoe among the thousands of isles which extend from Georgian Bay to the extremity of Lake Huron, he skirted the northern shore and through a narrow strait discovered a large body of water, which afterward received the name of Lac Illinois (Lake Michigan). Turning southward he continued his explorations and soon came to the Grand Bay, an inlet of the western shore, which he described as impressive by its length and vastness, and the dense forests that lined its shores.

More than fifty years after the discovery of Lake Huron, or in 1669, the existence of a fifth large lake was made known, probably by Joliet, and named Lac des Erie, but the existence of the straits connecting these bodies of water was then a mere conjecture. That this most southerly lake of the group, extending to the east beyond the western end of Lake Ontario, should have been the last to be discovered by a civilized race was due to its lying in the recesses of a country guarded by the hostile Iroquois. On account of the treacherous and unyielding character of these savages, which were veritable tigers of the American Indian, the route of the French missionaries and the pioneer fur traders from Montreal to the western country was by the way of the Ottawa River to Georgian Bay, and was followed by the Hurons, with whom the French were on the most friendly terms.

On the tenth of August, 1679, La Salle and his intrepid followers sailing on Lake Erie in the *Griffin*, the first vessel to unfurl sails to the winds of the inland seas, came to the mouth of a broad river. The following day the explorers entered the strait, which they named Detroit; and Hennepin was so much impressed with the beautiful scenery that he wrote:

"The straits are thirty leagues long bordered by low and level banks, and navigable for their entire length; that on either hand are vast prairies extending back to hills covered with vines, fruit trees, thickets, and tall forest trees, so distributed as to seem rather the work of art than of nature. . . . The inhabitants who will have the good fortune to some day settle on this pleasant and fertile strait will bless the memory of those who pioneered the way, and crossed Lake Erie by more than a hundred leagues of an unknown navigation."

But their progress was slow, due to unfavorable winds, and four or five days elapsed before they cleared the river and entered a small lake. The calendar day was the festival of Saint Claire, and as they sailed serenely over the clear blue waters, La Salle named the lake after the patron saint, as also the broad river which flows into it.

### The Coming of the Jesuits

About 1625, finding that the mission field in New France required an order bound to less scrupulous poverty than the Recollects, the office of converting the Indians to christianity, and thus enlarging the borders of French dominion, was entrusted solely to the Jesuits. In that year Father Enemond Masse, with Charles Lallemand and John de Brebeuf, and others filled with apostolic zeal, came to America. The old opposition to their order was soon renewed, and the Jesuits found themselves homeless, but the Recollects opened the doors of their convent to them. A prouder sympathy was awakened among the devotees of the court of France, and under the patronage of the Duke de Ventadour, a nobleman of great piety, they soon began to build, and brought over men to swell the settlement and cultivate the ground, while they revived the missions which had been founded by the earlier order.

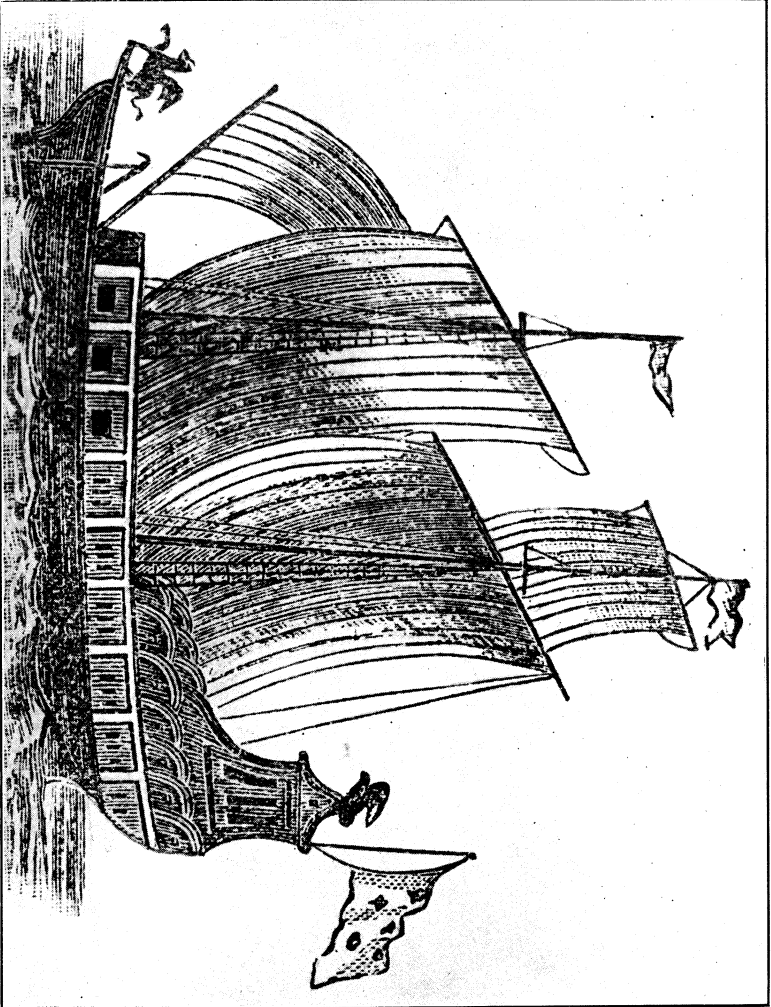
The Hurons were the first nation that cordially opened their hearts to the reception of the christian faith; and to their villages near Georgian Bay went the Jesuits Brebeuf and Daniel, soon followed by the gentler Lallemand and others of their order, bowing meekly in obedience to their vows. Joining a party of barefoot Hurons, who were returning from Quebec to their country, they journeyed by way of the Ottawa and the rivers that interlock with it, for three hundred leagues through dense forests. All day long they handled the paddle or oar, or carried the canoe on their shoulders for leagues through the thickest woods, three score times dragging it by hand through shallows and rapids, over sharpest stones. At night there was no food but a scanty measure of Indian corn mixed with water, while their couch was the earth or rocks. Thus swimming, wading, paddling, or bearing the canoe across portages, with garments torn, with feet mangled, and weak and weary, yet with the breviary safely hung around the neck, the consecrated envoys made their way to the heart of the Huron wilderness, and settled in the rough bark cabin which had been erected by Le Caron eleven years before. Here, in the Indian village of Toanché, they founded the first Jesuit mission in Upper Canada.

But the conversion of the Indians was a very slow process, and little progress was made before the restoration of Canada to France, by the treaty of St. Germain, in 1632, when the history of the great Jesuit missions begins. For sixteen years thereafter they continued their labors in the Huron villages, with calm impassive courage and unwearied patience, in the midst of privations, perils, sufferings and contumely, the details of which would fill a volume of thrilling interest.

### The First Christian Mission in Michigan

It was from the Huron mission that the first missionary explorers were sent forth to instruct the Indians of our own territory. Early in the summer of 1641, at a feast held in the Huron villages there was present a company of Chippewas from the North, who, being deeply impressed with the sacred character of the black-robed missionaries, cordially invited them to visit their homes on the confines of a great lake, the charms of which they depicted in glowing colors. The missionaries, ever anxious to extend the dominion of the cross, joyfully accepted the invitation. For the leader of this first invasion of our soil, Charles Raymbault, who was thoroughly versed in the Algonquin language and customs, was chosen; and, as Hurons were his attendants, Isaac Jogues was given him as a companion.

On the seventeenth of September, 1641, a birch-bark canoe, freighted with the holy envoys to the Chippewas, left the Bay of Penetanguishene for the straits that form the outlet of Lake Superior. Passing to the north over a wonted track to the French River, they floated onward between thickly clustering islands, beyond the Manitoulines, and, after a navigation of seventeen days, came to the Rapids of St. Mary. Here, in the forest wilderness, they found an assembly of about two thousand souls, who had never known Europeans, and had never heard of the one God. The missionaries made inquiries respecting other nations to the West, as yet unnamed — warlike tribes, with fixed abodes, cultivators of maize and tobacco, of an unknown race and language. The chieftains of the Chippewas cordially invited the Jesuits to dwell with them, which inspired hopes of a permanent mission. A council was held. "We will embrace you," they said, "as brothers; we will derive profit from your words." Thus did the religious zeal of the French bear the cross to the banks of the St. Mary and to the confines of Lake Superior, and clear the way for the first permanent European settlement within the borders of our State, five years before Eliot had addressed the tribe of Indians that dwelt within six miles of Boston harbor.



**LE GRIFFON**

Copyright 1910. A. C. McClurg & Co.

First Sailing Vessel on Great Lakes, Built by La Salle, 1679.  
[from an old cut in Detroit Public Library]

Having fulfilled their chief object, Raymbault, late in the season, returned to the Huron mission, wasting away with consumption. In midsummer of the following year he proceeded to Quebec, and in October the self-denying man, who was the first apostle of Christianity to the tribes of Michigan, ceased to live; and was buried in the "particular sepulchre which the justice of that age had erected to honor the memory of the illustrious Champlain." Father Jogues, the companion of Raymbault, after suffering many tortures from the hostile Iroquois, while bearing a proposal to establish a permanent mission among the Five Nations, received his death blow at the hands of the Mohawks, on the eighteenth of October, 1646, his head being hung upon the palisades of the village, and his body thrown into the Mohawk River. Fathers Daniel, Brebeuf, Lallemand and other faithful apostles, who had braved the enmity of the terrible Iroquois, also suffered a martyr's death amid scenes of the most frightful and revolting atrocity. The Huron nation was vanquished, the tribes scattered, their villages destroyed, the Christian converts massacred, and by 1650 little remained in evidence of the labors and sacrifices of the Jesuits in Upper Canada.

The Iroquois then reigned in proud and haughty triumph the whole region from Lake Erie to Lake Superior. Upper Canada was a desolate wilderness, and even the route by the Ottawa River was not safe from the war parties of these bold marauders. Nevertheless, in the summer of 1660, a large company of Ottawas, in sixty canoes laden with peltry, appeared at Quebec to trade with the French. They asked for a missionary, and the lot fell to René Mesnard. He was charged to visit Lake Superior and Green Bay, and on a convenient inlet to establish a resident mission—a place of assembly for the surrounding nations. Powerful instincts impelled him to the enterprise, and his departure was immediate with few preparations, for he trusted—such are his words—"in the Providence which feeds the little birds of the desert, and clothes the wild flowers of the forests."

Behold, then, this aged priest, obedient to his vows, entering on the path that was red with the blood of his predecessors, making haste to scatter the seeds of truth through the wilderness. At every step subjected to the coarse brutality of his savage companions, he is compelled, in a cramped position, to ply the wearisome paddle, to drag the canoe up the foaming rapids, and at portages to carry heavy burdens. Want, absolute and terrible, comes in to enhance his sufferings. When berries and edible moss are exhausted, the moose skin of his garments are made to yield its scanty nutriment. Finally, with his breviary lost in deep waters, bare-foot, wounded with sharp stones, exhausted with toil, hunger and brutal treatment, supporting life on pounded bones, he reaches, on October 15, Ste. Theresa's Bay, probably what is now Keweenaw Bay. Here, amidst every discouragement and privation, and with no white brethren nearer than Montreal, he begins a mission and says Mass, which, he notes, "repaid me with usury for all my past hardships."

Thus, was the first Christian mission established in the Northwest, on the soil of our commonwealth. During the long, bitterly cold winter on that inhospitable shore did this saintly man minister to the native Chippewas, baptizing the young and those who embraced the faith. A little cabin of fir branches piled one upon another, through which the wind whistled freely, was his only protection from the storms and cold, but it served the purpose, "not so much," he wrote, "to shield me from the rigor of the season as to correct my imagination, and persuade me that I was sheltered." Want, famine, came with its horrors to make more memorable this first effort to plant the cross within the borders of our State, but with the spring came relief from suffering, and hopefully did he labor on.



The band of partially christianized Hurons who, on the destruction of their nation, had sought refuge in these northern fastnesses, were at the Bay of Chegoimegon and sent to Father Mesnard to come and administer to them the rites of religion. It was a call he could not resist, although warned of the dangers that beset his path; and replied: "God calls me thither. I must go if it cost me my life." So he departed from his neophytes, and with one companion proceeded westward by the way of Portage Lake. On the twentieth of August, 1661, at a portage, while his attendant was employed in transporting the canoe, he wandered into the forest, became lost, and was never again seen. Whether he took a wrong path, or was struck down by some straggling Indian, was never known.

Undismayed by the sad fate of Mesnard, and indifferent to hunger and cold, to the wreck of frail canoes, and to fatigues and weariness, in August, 1665, Father Claude Allouez embarked on a fresh mission, by the way of the Ottawa, to the Far West. Early in September he passed the rapids of the St. Mary's River and entered the lake which the savages revered as a divinity. Pressing onward beyond the Bay of Ste. Theresa, seeking in vain for a mass of pure copper, of which he had heard, on the first day of October he arrived at the great Indian village, in the Bay of Chegoimegon. On the shore of the bay, to which the abundant fisheries attracted crowds, a chapel soon rose, and the mission of the Holy Spirit was founded. Admiring throngs, who had never seen a European, came to gaze on the white man; and during his sojourn of nearly two years, he lighted the torch of faith for more than twenty different nations. The Chippewas from the Sault pitched their tents near his cabin for a month; the scattered Hurons and Ottawas from the North appealed to his compassion; from the unexplored recesses of Lake Michigan came the Potawatomes, and the Sacs and Foxes travelled on foot from the country which abounded in deer, beaver, and buffalo. The Illinois, too, unaccustomed to canoes, having no weapon but the bow and arrow, came to rehearse their sorrows. Then, at the very extremity of the lake, the missionary met the wild, impassive warriors of the Sioux, who dwelt in the land of prairies to the west of Lake Superior.

With his name imperishably connected with the progress of discovery in the west, Allouez returned to Quebec to urge the establishment of permanent missions, to be accompanied by little colonies of French emigrants. So glowing were his accounts and so fervent his plea, that in two days, with another priest, Louis Nicholas, for his companion, he was on his way back to the mission at Chegoimegon. Peace favored the progress of French dominion; the fur trade gave an impulse to Canadian enterprise; a recruit of missionaries arrived from France,—all of which aided fresh exploration and the extension of christian missions.

### **Pere Marquette Finds First Settlement**

At this point in our narrative of human events a heroic figure, the illustrious Marquette, comes upon the scene. At an early age, imbued with an earnest desire to devote himself to a religious life, he renounced the allurements of the world, and entered the Society of Jesus. For twelve years he remained under the remarkable training and instruction of the order, and acquired that wonderful control, that quiet repose, that power of calm endurance, that unquestioning obedience to his superiors, that thirst for trial, suffering and death, that marked the Jesuits in this golden age of their power. Taking for his model in life the great Xavier, he longed, like him, to devote his days to the conversion of the heathen, and to die in the midst of his labors, alone, in a foreign land. Accordingly, at the age of twenty-nine, he sailed for New France, and arrived at Quebec September 20, 1666.

The first year and a half he spent under the instruction of Father Dreuillettes in acquiring the native language; and early in 1668, in company with Claude Dablon, he repaired to the land of the Chippewas. At the rapids of the St. Mary's River, through which the waters of the upper lakes rush to the Huron, and which had been so admired by Raymbault, Jogues and Allouez, on account of its woody isles and inviting bays, they stopped and established the mission of St. Mary. The Chippewas received the religious teachings of Marquette with eagerness, and would gladly have been baptized, but the wise and cautious missionary withheld the rite until he could clearly instruct them in christian duty. In the following year the first christian church in the western wilderness was erected, which was the foundation for the oldest settlement begun by Europeans within the present limits of our State.

But he was not long to remain on this first field of his labors, for, in obedience to the orders of his superiors, in the fall of 1669, he left for the Bay of Chegoimegon. For a whole month, defying the severity of the climate and constant perils of life, he coasted along the shores of the lake, contending with fierce winds, ice and snow. At length he arrived at the village of the Hurons, many of whom had been baptized, and, he says, "still preserve some christianity." It was here, in the depth of a northern winter, surrounded by his Indians, talking in a broken manner with an Illinois captive, that he conceived the idea of a voyage of discovery. He hears of a great river whose course is southward, and rejoices in the prospect, if the Indians will build him a canoe, of seeking its outlet. "This discovery," he wrote, "will give us a complete knowledge of the southern or western sea."

While thus employed with his mission and plans of discovery, the fierce Dakotas, those Iroquois of the West, threatened to desolate the whole region of the lake. First the Ottawas left, then the Hurons, and without a spot they could call their own, turned their faces to the east. The devoted missionary longed to labor in that field made sacred by the blood of Daniel, Brebeuf, Lallemand and others, but the dreaded Iroquois were too near and too dangerous for such an experiment. So, with the faithful Marquette at their head, the fugitive tribes selected for their home the point known as St. Ignace, on the Straits of Mackinaw. Bleak, barren and inhospitable as this spot was, it abounded in fish, and was on the great highway of a growing Indian commerce. Here, in the summer of 1671, a rude church, made of logs and covered with bark, was built, and around it clustered the still ruder cabins of the Hurons, inclosed by a palisade, to protect the little colony against the attacks of predatory Indians. Thus did Pere Marquette become the founder of St. Ignace, as he had before been of Sault Ste. Marie, thirty years before Cadillac laid the foundation of Detroit.

Further narration of the labors of this illustrious pioneer, of whom we have so high a veneration, his discovery of the Mississippi, his trials and sufferings, his fatal illness and heroic death, and his burial at the mouth of the stream in our State, that bears his name, fill the most glowing pages of our early history. But in this place it is suffice to note that his cultivated mind, his refined taste, his warm and genial nature, his tender concern for the souls in his charge, as well as his calm and immovable courage in every hour of danger, and his cheerful submission to the bitter privations and keen sufferings of the missionary life, his devotion to his faith and to the truth, all entitle him to that high place in the regard of posterity, which he has been slowly but surely acquiring.



Pere Marquette at St. Ignace in 1671, about to start on his journey of discovery of the Mississippi.

### Did the Jesuits Visit the Saginaw River?

The early writers of our local history, almost without exception, assert that the Jesuit fathers were the first Europeans to visit the Saginaw Valley. Some even contend that they established a christian mission near the mouth of the river, and that they lived and labored here many years, planting apple trees and cultivating the soil. For the most part these writers content themselves with merely making the statement, as of fact, as if the plausibleness were sufficiently convincing, and let it pass at that. One writer, however, has undertaken to advance some proof that our earliest pioneers were these black-robed missionaries, who actually planted the christian faith among the Chippewas of this valley. The short paper he prepared on the subject was honored by publication in the Michigan Pioneer Collections, Volume XXII., page 245.

In this article he states that Captain Whitmore Knaggs, in a talk with John and Peter Riley, half-breed natives of this valley, who were then fifty-eight and sixty years of age, was told by them that certain apple trees then growing on the banks of the river, and mentioned in the treaty of 1819, bore fruit when they were boys, and that their chief, Kaw-kaw-is-kaw, or the "Crow", said they were brought by white men wearing long black robes, who were known as Onetia. He also states that Faillon, in his History of Canada, refers to the Sag-ih-naw country, and the salt springs at the junction of two rivers, where Indians came from all parts; and also that in 1684 a large company of colonists and artisans came from France, a portion of whom were sent to the Sag-ih-naw river, and that there were five Jesuit fathers who were instructed to found missions in all this region. The information is vouchsafed that in 1686 the Jesuits Engelrau and Perrott established missions between Cheboygan and Lake Erie; and furthermore that Champlain in his map of 1611 had defined the safe harbor afforded by this river from the storms on the bay *connecting two great seas*, and showed the river with some degree of accuracy.

However credible these statements may seem to the casual reader, and however satisfying to his sense of historical truth, they are easily and quickly disproved by certain undeniable facts directly connected with them. Anyone who studies this subject, and attempts to verify the theory of the early ministrations of the Jesuits in this valley, is at once confronted with a very singular refutation. He will quite naturally turn to the Jesuit Relations, those wonderfully complete, concise, and interesting narratives of the devout missionaries, for accounts of their labors in this field. But, however diligent and careful his research may be, however thorough his study of every manuscript, every page and line, of the original writings of the Jesuit fathers, he will find nothing — not a word, or even a hint that they ever labored here or that they even visited this river. Neither does the word Saginaw, or any of its derivatives, appear in any of the ancient documents, as if it had not in those times been coined. The word *Saguenay*, however, appears in connection with the founding and work of a mission on the river of that name, above Quebec, which may have confused our narrator in the supposition that it referred to the Saginaw River.

Careful translators, historians, librarians and students of the early history of Michigan, have never discovered any record or even a trace of missionary explorers in Saginaw Valley, or at any point on the western shore of Lake Huron. They quite generally agree that the Jesuits could not have had a direct knowledge of this valley or its inhabitants. It is a fact, however, that the Jesuit Perrott, about 1686, was sent from the northern missions to Lake

Erie, to establish missions on its shores. Having a definite purpose and zealous to fulfill it, it is hardly probable that he deviated a hundred miles from his course to enter a storm-tossed bay to visit this valley, of which he could have had but meager knowledge, and that derived from the disconnected accounts of the savages. The same year the mission and fort of St. Joseph was established at the head of the St. Clair River, on the site of Fort Gratiot.

As we have shown in the preceding pages, the pathway of the early French missionaries to the Northwest lay up the Ottawa and connecting streams to Georgian Bay, and while missions and settlements were slowly being established on the shores of Lake Superior, Green Bay and connecting waters, the whole lower portion of Michigan remained unknown and unexplored. Only along the eastern shore of Lake Michigan did the early explorers plant their primitive settlements, and only in one instance, the St. Joseph's River, did they penetrate the interior. Furthermore, from the middle to the end of the seventeenth century, the whole region of lower Michigan was a desolate and abandoned wilderness, rendered inhabitable to the Ottawas and roaming bands of Chippewas by the hostile incursions of the Iroquois. Although Detroit was founded as early as 1701, the first Jesuit mission was not established there until 1732. Cadillac, though a zealous Catholic, was bitterly opposed to the Jesuits, and it is improbable that any of them cut their way through the unbroken forest to the wilderness on the Saginaw.

Knowing with what care and minuteness of detail the Jesuits wrote their narratives, it seems strange, if they did establish a mission on this river, or merely visited the shores of the bay, that they should have neglected to make an authentic record of their explorations, or at least a brief mention of the fact. In the Relations, their every thought and action, the labors and difficulties of their ministrations, as well as the results accomplished, are set down with striking fidelity. With all this before us, is it not incredible that they ever entered the Saginaw, much less founded a mission on its shores? Is it not far more credible that the story told Whitmore Knaggs was a mere myth — the thin and distorted remnant of an Indian legend?

Although it is true that apple trees grew along the river, as mentioned in the treaty of 1819, before the coming of the first fur traders, or perhaps as early as the founding of Detroit, there is nothing to associate their origin here with a civilized race. It is known that fruit trees were cultivated by certain Indian tribes east of the lakes, and apple trees were found in the Ohio Valley by the earliest pioneers, hence, it seems more likely that the trees on the banks of the Saginaw, since they were set out in a very irregular manner, much as the Indians plant their maize, originated with them from seeds carried here.

Moreover, no relics or remains of any kind to indicate a residence of the Jesuits, or even a brief sojourn here, have been found in the valley, although two silver crosses, of exquisite workmanship and evidently of European manufacture, have been unearthed, one at Bay City, and the other on the banks of the Shiawassee. It is supposed that, could they be traced to Jesuit ownership, they were lost by some Indian or early fur trader to whom given. The remains of pre-historic races and of Indian tribes are everywhere found in Saginaw Valley; why, may we ask, if the Jesuits came here at an early date, should they have vanished, leaving no written record, no relics, no trace, not even a clue, of their labors and ministrations.



### Primitive Maps

Although Parkman, Bancroft, Winsor and other historians deal very thoroughly with the explorations of the Jesuit missionaries in Michigan, they all are silent as to any early white settlement on the Saginaw. Nowhere in their works is this region even mentioned in connection with missionary labors, for the reason, we believe, that the Jesuit fathers never came to this valley, or, indeed, had any definite knowledge of the country or its inhabitants. The primitive maps drawn by the Jesuits and other explorers cast some light on this point, and in a measure confirm this belief. One of these very old maps is that of Jean Boisseau, which accompanied the Relations published in 1643. Though it shows the St. Lawrence country and Lac St. Louis (Lake Ontario) quite correctly, other sections are very inaccurate, indicating a superficial knowledge of the lake region. Lake Huron and Lake Ontario are connected, not by a large lake (Lake Erie), but by a series of rivers and broad straits extending from west to east. Lake Huron is too distorted to be of any value as determining a bay or river which could have represented the Saginaw, though one stream with tributaries somewhat resembling those of this river, is made to flow directly into the lake. Grand Lac des Nadoussian (Lake Superior) is defined, but Lake Michigan is not shown.

Another old map which appeared in 1657 corrects some of the errors and omissions of the Boisseau map. In this more elaborate drawing Lake Erie is defined with some degree of fidelity, and the straits and Lake St. Clair are put down, but not named. But Lake Huron and a body of water probably intended to represent Lake Michigan are made to run together at a point in the former where Saginaw Bay should appear, entirely cutting off the upper portion of the State. It is perfectly evident that these coasts could not have been explored by the Jesuits at that early date, and what knowledge they possessed of their contours was probably obtained from straggling bands of Indians that came to the northern missions.

The map of the Jesuit Franciscus Creaxius, bearing date of 1660, and published in his *Historia du Canadensis*, Paris, 1664, is fairly accurate respecting the lower lakes and the St. Lawrence. It shows a large indentation in the west coast of Lake Huron, which was probably intended to represent Saginaw Bay, but no river is indicated, and it is certain he did not know of its existence. Marquette's map of 1673-74, the original of which is preserved in the archives of St. Mary's College, Montreal, shows only lakes Superior and Illinois, and western rivers which he had known by actual explorations. Joliet's map, which was drawn at the same time while on the expedition with Marquette, though greatly distorted, shows all the Great Lakes, yet with little regard to proportion or true location. The only suggestion of a bay on the west coast of Lake Huron is a small cove or indentation, but no river is shown, indicating that he had no information as to the existence of such a river as the Saginaw. On the other hand, he puts down Sault Ste. Marie, Mackinac, Manitoulin Islands, Green Bay and connecting waters with fair correctness and minuteness of outline, proving that he had full knowledge of all parts that he had actually explored.

In 1684 a map by Jean Baptiste Franquelin appeared, a reduced facsimile of which was made for Francis Parkman, and is now in the Library of Harvard University, which defines the Great Lakes in fair proportions, Lake Huron having an indentation, quite distorted, on the west coast, named Bay du Saginam, into which two rivers flow. With slight imagination, one may be made to represent the Saginaw, while the other may be the Au Sable,

though no names are given. Minet's map, of date 1685, shows both bay and river, but far from their true form; Coronelli et Tillemon's map of 1688 defines bay and river flowing into it, without names, while Raffery's, of the same year, gives neither bay nor river, and the coast lines are much distorted.

Hennepin's efforts to outline the Huron coast, in 1683, failed to show either bay or river, though later, in 1697, he put down a river flowing directly into the lake, very likely intended for the Saginaw. La Hontan's maps of 1703 and 1709 define both bay and river, though far from their true outlines, and named Bay du Sakinan. Later, in 1747, a map accompanying Colden's "History of the Five Nations," outlines a bay very inaccurately, but no stream flows into it, or on the whole coast of Lake Huron. In 1755 a map by John Mitchell describes a bay named "Saginnam" with fair accuracy, but it is difficult to identify the one small stream emptying into it from the south-east, as being the navigable Saginaw.

From this evident lack of knowledge displayed by the Jesuit explorers respecting our coast line, and bay and river, is it not a logical conclusion that they never visited these shores?

### Earliest References to Saginaw

The materials from which a history of the early explorations of Saginaw River and its tributaries, prior to 1819, can be compiled, or, in fact, references to this valley, are very few and very meager. From what little data and information can be gathered, it is evident that until the close of the eighteenth century, the whole territory west and north of Detroit was an impenetrable and unbroken wilderness. What settlements existed in 1800 were confined almost exclusively to the shores of the lakes and connecting straits; and only the native Indians knew or cared anything about the country to the interior. It was the general impression of settlers at Detroit that the land was full of swamps, impassable lakes and rivers, wild beasts, poisonous reptiles, and worthless for agriculture, fit only as an abode for savages in their wild, hunter state. Even the official reports and papers of the period touch but lightly the unknown territory; and in only one instance do the Haldimand Papers, on file in the Dominion archives at Ottawa, refer to the Saginaw Valley.

But with all its natural wildness it was the paradise of the animals from which the choicest of fur was obtained, such as the beaver, otter, fisher, marten, mink and muskrat, also deer, bears and elk, while moose were found at the headwaters of the streams which unite to form the Saginaw. Large flocks of wild geese and ducks resorted to the streams to feed on the wild rice that grew in great abundance on their borders; and the waters were stored with bountiful supplies of the choicest varieties of fish. The fertility of the soil was such that, with slight cultivation bestowed by the Indians, it produced abundant crops of corn, that indispensable article of food for the red man. As an indication of the extent of the cultivation of corn in this valley nearly one hundred and fifty years ago, we find a letter from Major De Peyster, commandant of the post at Mackinac, dated May 13, 1779, written to General Haldimand, commander-in-chief of the British forces, the concluding paragraph of which is herewith transcribed, verbatim:

"The Sakis & Reinards seems to be easy about the matter as appears by Gautier's Letter but they will soon open their eyes if it is possible effectually to restrain that trade. On that head as well as how I am to act in case Detroit is taken is what I hope I shall receive your full instructions about by a light canoe. If Detroit shall be taken it is evident we have but a dismal prospect however what can be expected from two



Subdivisions shall be done. I think I may with propriety call my hand full by that name when a part was employed at this Cannon having nine Pieces of Ordnance & only two Artillery men.

*I have sent to Saguina to endeavor to secure six hundred Bushels of Corn for the Indians without which our flour will run short by the fall of the year.*

"I have the honor, &c.

(signed) A. S. De Peyster."

Years afterward, at the conclusion of our last war with England, the reports from the Indian Department cast some light on the number and temper of the Indians residing on the Saginaw. In the Michigan Pioneer Collections, Vol. XV., page 553, we find:

"Thirteen Indians of Naywash's band arrived at Burlington on the 9th of May from Flint River, and say that they are informed that two vessels and six gun boats, with about 300 men, had passed the River St. Clair, about the 22d or 23d of April (1814), for Michilimackinac, and that not more than about 250 men remained at Detroit. *These Indians report that there are about 500 men at Saguina Bay, who were ready to show their attachment to their Great Father, whenever his troops shall return.*"

During this war the Chippewas were allied with the British, and made a great deal of trouble for the white settlers. Before the siege of Detroit a large band under Kish-kau-kou and his son, Che-mick, tramped from the Saginaw Valley and joined the British forces, raiding the white settlements, killing men, women and children, and burning their homes. Their savage warfare was chiefly directed against the weak and unprotected, and it was not until after the treaty of 1819 had been ratified that the whites in the sparsely settled portions of the territory felt secure from their depredations.

This cowardly old chief of the Chippewas, who lived with his band along the lower stretches of the river, was conspicuous for his ugly disposition, particularly when drunk with "fire-water." He figured in many tragedies of the early days, and was proud and boastful of the number of scalps he had taken. In 1805 he was indicted for the murder of a white man, but evidently the capture of the fierce Chippewa was a duty which the marshal neglected, for a second warrant was issued September 24, 1807. It was drawn by Augustus B. Woodward, chief judge of the Territory of Michigan, and directed to William Scott, marshal of the territory, and was the first case against an Indian in the territorial supreme court. This interesting document reads as follows:

"You are hereby commanded, as you have before been commanded, to take the body of Kisk-kau-kou, a Chippewa Indian, late of Saguina, in the Indian country, in the territory of Michigan, if he may be found within such territory, and him safely keep so that you may have his body before the judges of our supreme court at Detroit in and for said territory of Michigan, on or before the next ensuing term, to answer the United States on a bill of indictment for murder, found against him by the grand inquest of the body of the said territory of Michigan. And of his writ make due return."

The return, which was scrawled on the back of the paper, reads:

"I have taken the body of the above named Kish-kau-kou, an Indian, in obedience to this capias, on Sunday, the 31st day of July, and in bringing him to prison he was rescued from me by an Indian named Little Cedar, and his son, and other Indians unknown."

Omitting some of the verbiage which is repeated, the true bill which the grand jury found against Kish-kau-kou sets forth his crime in the following curious manner:

"The jury upon their oath present, that Kish-kau-kou, a Chippewa Indian, not having the fear of God before his eyes, but being moved and induced by the instigation of the devil, on the ninth day of March in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and two, with force and arms in and upon one Antoine Loson, in the presence of God and of the United States then and there being, did make an assault, and with a certain steel knife of the value of fifty cents, which he in his right hand then and there had and held, felonously, wilfully and by his malice aforethought did hit, strike and stab, and did then and there give unto him, one mortal wound of the length of one inch and depth of three inches in and upon the back part of the neck of said Antoine, of which said mortal wound he, the said Antoine, did languish, and so languishing, thereof, died."

The wily old chief, however, escaped punishment for the foregoing crime, and lived until after the first settlements were well started in Saginaw Valley. Of other offenses and "deviltries" that he committed more will be told in the following chapter.

#### Advent of the Fur Traders

The first white men to penetrate the wilderness of the Saginaw were probably *coureurs de bois* — the renegades of Canada, or possibly voyageurs, a class of men described in English accounts of Detroit as, "generally poor wretches, a lazy, idle people, depending chiefly on the savages for subsistence, whose manners and customs they have entirely adopted." While this description was undoubtedly applicable to many of the rough characters seen about the settlements in early days, it is most unjust of the inhabitants generally. There were two distinct classes of these *habitants*. One was composed of the active, intelligent, honest tradesmen and farmers, some of whom were of noble birth and connections; the other comprised the voyageurs and *coureurs de bois* shiftless half-breeds. Side by side, these two classes built their abodes and lived in harmony; yet each in his own sphere — each contented with his lot.

The voyageur and farmer indulged in no dreams of the equality of man, and ambition never embittered his heart, while the land owner and merchant, jealous of no encroachment, was the indulgent and kind-hearted employer and patron. They were a gay, happy people, full of vivacity and graceful hilarity, honest among themselves, generous and hospitable. Surrounded by danger, they were of undoubted courage, but when the present peril had passed, their habitual gayety returned. Sorrow and suffering were soon forgotten, and privations laughed at, or cheerfully endured. Simple and frugal in their habits, contented with their place in life, they renewed in their forest recesses of the new world, the life of the old.

Among the first of the hardy, adventurous traders to visit this valley was Jacob Smith, known to the natives as "Wah-be-sins," who for some years had followed the occupation of trapper. He came here, it is supposed, about 1810, to open trade with the Indians, leaving his family, composed of a white wife and several children, in Detroit. With the gain of a dollar ever before his eye, he traversed the tributaries of the Saginaw and entered recesses of the forest never before trod by civilized man, in quest of game and the Indian with furs to trade. That he found this broad valley a rich field for his labors is manifest by his having dwelt here the remainder of his life. By fair dealing and kind treatment of the Indians he soon won their lasting friendship, and for a long period was regarded by them, and especially their chiefs, as a brother. His influence over them was very marked, and, as we shall soon see, he exerted his powers to the utmost to his own gain. But he was brave and valorous, as he was kind and generous, and never failed to protect the weak and helpless, as the following incident shows.

Soon after the first settlement was started on the Saginaw, the United States government appointed David Henderson to fill the office of Indian Agent for this portion of the territory, and in due time he arrived with his family. Scarcely had they become settled in their forest home when he found it necessary to go to Detroit on business. During his absence the vicious old chief, Kish-kau-kou, appeared at his cabin, terrified the inmates, took them captive, and announced his intention to kill them. Jacob Smith, who was then at the settlement on the Flint, where he made his headquarters, hearing of the capture came with all possible speed to Saginaw, hunted up the old besotted chief, and demanded what his designs were regarding the wife and children of Henderson.

"I am going to kill them," answered the blood-thirsty chief.

"What," said Smith, "will you kill these little children who have never done you or anyone harm?"

Nervously the chief replied, "Take them away, quick."

"But," protested the trader, "it is no use for me to take the woman and her children through the woods. I shall meet some other Indians and they will take them away from me and kill them. You must give me some men to go with me to Detroit."

Without further parley the chief gave Smith six of his braves to act as an escort of the party through the wilderness to civilization, and they arrived safely at Detroit. Here the Indians were made prisoners and confined in the fort, and only through the influence of Smith, their steadfast friend, were they at length released, supplied with rations, and sent in charge of a file of soldiers beyond the reach of danger from the settlers, who were then infuriated by the recent Indian outrages.

### Louis Campau, the First Settler

Another of the early fur traders on the Saginaw was Louis Campau, who came to its shores in 1816. He was an intelligent, shrewd, far-seeing operator, a man who will be remembered by posterity as the *first pioneer to break ground for the embryo settlement*. On the west bank of the river on ground which is near the foot of Throop Street, he erected a massive two-story structure, of great strength and solidity. It was built of squared logs, and was evidently intended to subserve a double purpose—a pleasant residence overlooking the placid river, and a stronghold to afford protection to an armed and plucky family from an assault by the savages, and also as a warehouse for the storage of furs and of goods for trade. For many years this building was a somewhat cherished landmark, an ancient souvenir of the pioneer age. Long after it had been abandoned as a trading post, the residence portion was occupied by an old Frenchman, J. Baptiste Desnoyers, a relative of the Campau's and who was intelligent, voluble, communicative, and polite. Many of the early pioneers will readily recall the easy grace and refinement of manner with which he greeted them, proffering a pinch of Maccaboy from his well filled silver snuff box, and relating some tale of pioneer life, of Indian warfare, or of his experiences as trapper and trader. Shortly after the death of this antique French gentleman, which occurred early in the sixties, the old house fell a victim to the flames.

Of other early trappers and fur traders along the Saginaw and its tributaries, Henry Conner, Whitmore Knaggs, G. Godfroy, Archie Lyons, and John Harson were the most prominent. All of these hardy, intrepid borderers, by adopting the wild life and habits of the savages, had ingratiated themselves into their favor, won their confidence, and by kindness and friendly good will opened the way for the first treaty for the grant of Indian lands, which was soon to follow.



L. W. G. P.

## CHAPTER IV.

# THE TREATY OF SAGINAW

---

The Territory of Michigan—Treaty of Detroit—Building the Council House at Saginaw—Opening the Council—Oge-maw-ke-ke-to Speaks—The Influence of Wah-be-sins—Transcript of the Treaty—Military occupation—Hardships of Frontier Life—The Devilry of Kish-kau-kou—The Second Treaty of Saginaw—The Treaty of 1838 and 1855.

**B**Y the ordinance of 1787 the civil authority of the United States was extended over the Northwest Territory; and in January, 1805, a part was set off by Congress as the Territory of Michigan. This was the first designation of a political division by the name of Michigan, and it embraced the southern peninsula, the eastern end of the northern peninsula, and a strip of land now contained in Ohio and Indiana. The old Northwest Territory was then known as Indiana Territory. In 1809 the Territory of Illinois was formed, which included a portion of the upper peninsula west of the meridian which ran near the present city of Menominee. This left the part situated between this meridian and the meridian of Mackinac as Indiana Territory, and the northern peninsula belonging to three territories.

The State of Indiana was admitted in 1816, and the State of Illinois, with its present northern boundary, two years later. By an enabling act of Congress the remainder of the old Northwest Territory was made a part of Michigan Territory, which then included the present States of Michigan, Wisconsin, the part of Minnesota lying east of the Mississippi, and a narrow strip of Northern Ohio. In 1834 Michigan Territory reached its greatest extent, embracing all the territory of the United States west of the Mississippi as far as the Missouri and White Earth River, and from the State of Missouri to the British Possessions. This extension included the present States of Minnesota, Iowa, and the eastern portion of the Dakotas.

### The Treaty of Detroit

The first treaty of importance which was made for the extinguishment of Indian title to the soil of this territory was entered into by William Hull, then Governor of the territory and Superintendent of Indian affairs, in 1807. This treaty gave the United States a possessory title to the southeastern portion of the State of Michigan, as at present constituted. The northern line of this grant was a trifle north of the southern boundaries of what are now Lapeer and Genesee Counties, thus leaving the valley of the Saginaw and its affluents in possession of the Indians, with the rights of the natives intact and unaffected. Although a few fur traders had come among them as the scouts or advanced guard of civilization, their favorite hunting grounds were left to them undespoiled until the Treaty of Saginaw, which was made in 1819.

General Cass, who had won renown in the War of 1812, in the vigor of manhood and with a laudable ambition to achieve a national reputation, was commissioned to negotiate a treaty which would secure to the United States a most important addition to its territory. In this treaty we are

particularly interested, since the cession of lands then made by the natives, with the reservations therein provided for, include the rich and prosperous valley of the Saginaw and its tributaries.

With his staff of interpreters and aids, the General set out from Detroit early in September, 1819, journeyed the whole way to Flint River through the unbroken wilderness on horseback, and thence down the stream to the little settlement on the Saginaw. The land along the Flint was an Indian reservation of Pe-won-ny-go-wingh—the tribal home of Chief Ne-ome and his successor Tone-dok-ane.

### **Building the Council House at Saginaw**

One of the earliest white settlers to establish trade with the Indians on the Saginaw was Louis Campau, who came to the wilderness in 1816. He was a fine representative of the better class of French pioneers, a liberal, public spirited, and worthy citizen. To him General Cass entrusted the building of a suitable Council House, and the making of all arrangements for the reception of the Commissioner and his numerous company. At the same time the General despatched two government vessels, laden with stores for the subsistence of the party, around the lakes St. Clair and Huron and up the Saginaw to the frontier post in the wilderness. On one of these vessels was a company of United States soldiery, under the command of Captain Cass, a brother of the General, which had been ordered to the place of meeting for the protection of those in attendance.

Campau and his workmen thereupon set about to construct the Council House, which was to be a spacious though rough edifice with open sides and ends, extending for several hundred feet along the bank of the river. It was situated on a slight knoll—a very commanding and pleasant place, a little east of what is now Michigan Avenue and north of Clinton Street. Trees conveniently situated furnished the columns of the house, while their boughs thickly interlaced above with other branches, and bark and moss, formed the simple roof covering. A platform made of hewed logs, and elevated a foot above the ground, to hold rustic benches for the accommodation of the Commissioner and his aids, occupied the center of the room. Huge logs in their natural roughness were then rolled in upon the remaining space to serve as seats for the native lords of the wild domain, when in solemn council. The bordering woods were dotted with wigwams and cabins hastily set up by the Indians for the comfort of themselves and families during the pending negotiations.

Temporary yet convenient additions to his trading post were made by Campau, to afford space for a good-sized dining room for the officials, and also comfortable quarters for the distinguished Commissioner, who arrived with his company on the tenth of September. It was said the number of Indians present at that time was not large, although messengers had been sent among the different tribes, some quite remote from the place of meeting, to notify them of the council. When it was apparent that some tribes were not represented, runners were sent out in all directions to urge their coming.

### **Opening the Council**

The negotiations were pending for ten or twelve days, and three councils were held. The number of Indians in attendance at the third council, which was the fullest held, was variously estimated from fifteen hundred to two thousand. At each formal council the chiefs, warriors, head-men and braves were called and admitted into the Council House. The sides and ends of the house being open the squaws and young warriors gathered in timid groups

close by as interested spectators of the solemn proceedings within. The negotiations involved no less than a full and final surrender of the ancient hunting grounds of their people, the fair and beautiful heritage of forest and corn fields, lake and river, and the burial places of their fathers; and also provided for their removal beyond the Mississippi.

The eloquent appeal of General Cass, made known to the natives through experienced interpreters, failed to make a favorable impression on the native chiefs. He urged them to keep in mind the paternal regard which their Great Father at Washington held for them and their welfare, and expressed the hope that the peaceful relations which had existed between them since the war should be rendered perpetual. He reminded them of their condition as a people, the swelling of the wave of civilization toward their hunting grounds, the growing scarcity of game, the importance and necessity of turning their attention more to agriculture, and relinquishing the more uncertain mode of living by the chase, and the better condition they would ultimately be in by confining themselves to reservations, ample for the purposes of agriculture, to be provided for them in the proposed treaty; and the cession of the residue of the territory then occupied by those who were there represented, upon such terms and guarantees as their condition required, including therein stipulated annuities.

He was answered by their chief speakers with a gravity and eloquence peculiar to Indian councils. Three chiefs of wide influence, Mis-hene-nanone-quet, Oge-maw-ke-ke-to, and Kish-kau-kou were particularly vehement in the treaty negotiations. The latter, however, was an Indian of violent temper, and in the excitement of drink was reckless in the commission of outrage. At the close of the first day of the council he had put himself out of condition for parley, and it was found that he was less dangerous in his wigwam quietly drunk than in the Council House tolerably sober. So he remained in a state quite unrepresentable as a speaker for his tribe until the last day of the negotiations, when he was present merely to affix his totem to the treaty, after it had been engrossed for execution.

### Oge-maw-ke-ke-to Speaks

The chief speaker, Oge-maw-ke-ke-to, opposed the treaty provisions with indignation, and it was said his speech was a model of Indian eloquence. He was then quite young, being scarcely twenty-five years of age, but was above the average height, and in his bearing was graceful and handsome. His band lived at the forks of the Tittabawassee; and like the famous Seneca chief, Sago-gewa-tha, he wore upon his breast a superb medal, which had been given him by the United States government.

He addressed the Commissioner as follows:

"You do not know our wishes. Our people wonder what has brought you so far from your homes. Your young men have invited us to come and light the council fire. We are here to smoke the pipe of peace, but not to sell our lands. Our American Father wants them, our English Father treats us better. He has never asked for them. Your people trespass upon our hunting grounds. You flock to our shores. Our waters grow warm. Our land melts away like a cake of ice. Our possessions grow smaller and smaller. The warm wave of the white man rolls in upon us and melts us away. Our women reproach us. Our children want homes. Shall we sell from under them the spot where they spread their blankets? We have not called you here. We smoke with you the pipe of peace."

To this clear recital of their opposition the Commissioner replied with earnestness, reproving the speaker for arrogant assumption; that their Great Father at Washington had just closed a war in which he had whipped their Father, the English King, and the Indians too; that their lands were forfeited in fact by the rules of war, but that he did not propose to take their possessions without rendering back an equivalent, notwithstanding their late act of hostility; that their women and children should have secured to them ample tribal reservations, on which they might live unmolested by their white neighbors, where they could spread their blankets and be aided by agriculture.

The council for the day closed, and the Commissioner and his staff of earnest and devoted aids, distinguished in Indian councils, retired to their lodgings disappointed and anxious. There were Henry Conner, known to the Indians as "Wah-be-sken-dip," Whitmore Knaggs, known as "Oke-day-ben-don," and beloved by them, Colonel Beaufait, G. Godfroy and John Harson, all with influence with the Chippewas. The chiefs and head-men of the natives retired to their wigwams in sullen dignity, unapproachable and unappeased. It was certainly an unpropitious opening of the great and important undertaking and trust which General Cass had in hand. The juncture was a critical one, and, for a full appreciation of it, a brief allusion to the relative status of the contracting parties to the treaty, but whose minds had not yet met, is necessary.

The proposition for a cession of the Indian title came from the Americans, not from the Indians. Their possessory control by American recognition and action was as yet perfect. For any lawless or vindictive act upon the treaty grounds there would have been immunity from immediate punishment, and probably ultimate escape. The whites, comparatively, were few in number. The military company on board the schooner, anchored in the stream, was quite inadequate to successful resistance against an organized and general outbreak. Sufficient time had not yet elapsed to wash out the bitter memories of border feuds, of fancied or real wrong. Foot-prints were yet fresh upon the war-path; indeed, only the fifth summer had passed since that war had closed which had laid low many Chippewa warriors. The Commissioner and his staff of aids had placed themselves voluntarily within their stronghold upon the Saginaw, into which no pale-face had penetrated throughout the war, unless as a pinioned captive, with the exception of a single memorable instance wherein a daring trader had rescued from captivity the children of the Boyer family.

Here, within a half-dozen summers, the Indians had trained themselves to war-like feats and prepared for those deadly incursions into the frontier settlements, and for those more formidable engagements when disciplined valor met their wild charge. After each bloody raid they looked to this valley as to a fastness, and to it returned with their captives and streaming trophies. And here, too, had been for generations their simple altar in the forests; their festivals where thanks went up to the Great Spirit for the yearly return of the successive blessings of a fruitful season, following to its source with direct purpose and thankful hearts the warm ray which perfected their slender harvest.

Ne-ome, the chief of one of the largest bands of the Chippewas, occupied and assumed to control the most southerly portion of their then national domain. This portion lay along the Flint River and its northerly affluents which, by the treaty line of 1807, were left in full Indian possession. The river was called by the natives "Pe-won-o-go-wink, meaning literally the river of Flint, and by the early French traders, La Pierre. Trails upon the Flint and its tributaries, reaching to their head waters, all converging to the main



stream as a center, formed a net-work of communication which gave the Chippewas access by land, as well as by canoes upon the rivers, to the Commissioner in council. The advancing wave of white settlement had already approached, and in some instances had, without authority, encroached upon the southerly border of their net-work of trails upon the Flint. In point of location geographically Ne-ome and his powerful band stood at the door, the very threshold, of the large body of land which our Government, through its faithful and earnest Commissioner, wanted. Unless well disposed toward the treaty, Ne-ome, holding the beautiful belt of land lying westerly of the River St. Clair and Lake Huron, stood a lion in the path.

But this chief was honest and simple minded, evincing but little of the craft and cunning of his race. He was sincere in his nature, by no means astute, was firm in his friendships, easy to be persuaded by any benefactor who should appeal to his Indian sense of gratitude; and was harmless, generous, and kind. In stature he was short and heavily moulded. He was a chief of patriarchal goodness, and his name was never mentioned by any of the members of his band, even at a remote day, except with a certain traditional sorrow, more impressive in its mournful simplicity than a labored epitaph.

### The Influence of Wah-be-sins

But there was a power behind the throne of native chieftains, which was greater than the throne itself. That power rested in the hands of a white trader with the Indians, who was known to them by the name of Wah-be-sins (meaning a young swan), and to the border settlers as Jacob Smith. So far as known he was one of the first white traders to penetrate the wilderness of the Saginaw. It was supposed that he came to the valley about 1810, for he had traded with the natives there before the War of 1812, and for a long time after. His principal trading post, which he afterward made his permanent one, was at the Grand Traverse, or fording place, of the Flint, in the first ward of the present city of that name.

By long residence among the native tribe he had assimilated by degrees their habits and customs, and even adopted their mode of dress. He spoke their language fluently and with powerful impressiveness, and was generous, warm hearted, and kind. Though small of stature and light in weight, he was powerful as well as agile; and was intrepid of spirit. Skilled in woodcraft, sagacious and adroit, it was said he equalled, if not exceeded, the natives in many of those qualities which, as forest heroes, they most admired. Like most white men living upon the Indian frontier, he had become the father of a half-breed family, of which one was a daughter, named Mok-itchen-o-qua.

Brought into almost daily contact and intercourse with the band of Chippewas upon the Saginaw and its tributaries, he ingratiated himself into the confidence of their chief, Ne-ome; and it is probable that of the one hundred and fourteen chiefs and head-men of the Chippewa nation, who were present at the council, there was not one with whom he had not at some time dealt, and to whom he had extended some act of friendship, either in dispensing the simple hospitality of the wilderness, or in substantial advances to them of bread or of blankets, as their necessities may have required. By kindness and fair dealing he had intrenched himself into their lasting friendship, and, at the time of the treaty negotiations, so closely had he identified himself with the good old chief, Ne-ome, that each hailed the other as "brother." Even at a much later day, Sa-gas-e-wa-qua, daughter of Ne-ome, and others of his descendants, when speaking of Smith and the old chieftain, invariably brought their hands together pressing the two index

fingers closely to each other, as the Indian symbol of brotherhood and warm attachment. Upon the treaty ground the two friends, the white trader and the swarthy son of the forest, acted unitedly and in perfect unison.

Although Smith was personally known to General Cass, he evidently looked with distrust upon the hardy borderer, as no position as aid to the negotiations, either as interpreter or agent, was accorded him. For days the most active and influential interpreters for the Government were ineffectual in conciliating Ne-ome, Oge-maw-ke-ke-to, and the other chiefs. Not a step of progress was made until Knaggs and other agents assumed, but with what authority is doubtful, to speak for the Government outside the Council House, had promised the faithful Ne-ome that, in addition to various and ample reservations for the different bands, of several thousand acres each, there should be reserved as requested by Wah-be-sins (Smith), eleven sections of land of six hundred and forty acres each, to be located at or near the Grand Traverse of the Flint. Eleven names as such reservees, all Indian, were passed to Knaggs on a slip of paper in his tent.

Such progress having been made in the parley, due to surrender to craftiness of the white trader with the Indians, another council was called and was more fully attended by the chiefs and warriors. Many points of difficulty had been smoothed over, and the storm which at first threatened to overwhelm the best efforts of the Commissioner and his aids had passed. In its place a calm and open discussion ensued on terms and basis which a just and honorable treaty should be concluded.

There was one more general council held, which was purely formal, for the purpose of having affixed to the engrossed copy of the treaty, the signatures of General Cass, the witnesses, and the totems of the chiefs and headmen of the Chippewas and Ottawas.

One great obstacle to the consummation of the treaty was the desire of the Government to remove the Chippewas west of the Mississippi, in addition to the cession of the valuable tract of land lying upon the Saginaw and its tributaries. But it was discovered by the Commissioner soon after his arrival in council that this provision endangered the treaty, and it was thereupon abandoned. This country had been so long occupied by the Indians, and was so well adapted to their hunter state in the remarkable abundance of fish in the rivers, lakes and bays, and in the game yet left to them in the forest, that they were not inclined to listen to any proposition of removal.

### Transcript of the Treaty

Art. 1. The Chippewa nation of Indians, in consideration of the stipulations herein made on the part of the United States, do hereby forever cede to the United States the land comprehended within the following lines and boundaries: Beginning at a point in the present Indian boundary line, which runs due north from the mouth of the great Anglaize River, six miles south of the place where the base line, so called, intersects the same; thence, west, sixty miles; thence, in a direct line to the head of Thunder Bay River; thence, down the same, following the course thereof, to the mouth; thence, northeast, to the boundary line between the United States and British Province of Upper Canada; thence, with the same, to the line established by the treaty of Detroit, in the year one thousand eight hundred and seven; thence with the said line to the place of beginning.

Art. 2. From the cession aforesaid the following tracts of land shall be reserved, for use of the Chippewa nation of Indians.

One tract, of eight thousand acres, on the east side of the river Au Sable near where the Indians now live.

One tract, of two thousand acres, on the river Mesagwisk.

One tract, of six thousand acres, on the north side of the river Kawkawling, at the Indian village.

One tract, of five thousand seven hundred and sixty acres, upon the Flint River, to include Reaum's village, and a place called Kishkawbawee.

One tract, of eight thousand acres, on the head of the river Huron, which empties into the Saginaw River, at the village of Otusson.

One tract, of two thousand acres, where Nabolask formerly lived.

One island in the Saginaw Bay.

One tract, of one thousand acres, near the island in the Saginaw River.

One tract, of two thousand acres, at the mouth of the Au Gres River.

One tract, of one thousand acres, on the river Huron, at Menoquet's village.

One tract, of ten thousand acres, on the Shawassee River, at a place called the Big Rock.

One tract, of three thousand acres, on the Shawassee River, at Ketchewaundaugenick.

One tract, of six thousand acres, at the Little Forks, on the Tetabawasink River.

One tract, of six thousand acres, at the Black Bird's Town, on the Tetabawasink River.

One tract, of forty thousand acres, on the Saginaw River, to be hereafter located.

Art. 3. There shall be reserved for the use of each of the persons hereinafter named and their heirs, which persons are all Indians by descent, the following tracts of land:

For the use of John Riley, the son of Menawcumegoqua, a Chippewa woman, six hundred and forty acres of land, beginning at the head of the first marsh above the mouth of the Saginaw River, on the east side thereof.

For the use of Peter Riley, the son of Menawcumegoqua, a Chippewa woman, six hundred and forty acres of land beginning above and adjoining the apple trees on the west side of the Saginaw River, and running up the same for quantity.

For the use of James Riley, the son of Menawcumegoqua, a Chippewa woman, six hundred and forty acres, beginning on the east side of the Saginaw River, nearly opposite to Campau's trading house, and running up the river for quantity.

For the use of Kawkawiskou, or the Crow, a Chippewa chief, six hundred and forty acres of land, on the east side of the Saginaw River, at a place called Menitsgow, and to include, in the six hundred and forty acres, the island opposite to the said place.

For the use of Nowokeshik, Metawanene, Mokitchenoqua, Nondeshemau, Petabonaqua, Messawwakut, Checwalk, Kitchegeequa, Sagosequa, Annoketoqua, and Tawcumegoqua, each, six hundred and forty acres of land, to be located at and near the grand traverse of the Flint River, in such manner as the President of the United States may direct.

For the use of the children of Bokowtonden, six hundred and forty acres, on the Kawkawling River.

Art. 4. In consideration of the cession aforesaid, the United States agree to pay to the Chippewa nation of Indians, annually, forever, the sum of one thousand dollars in silver; and do hereby agree that all annuities due by any former treaty to the said tribe, shall be hereafter paid in silver.

Art. 5. The stipulation contained in the treaty of Greenville, relative to the right of the Indians to hunt upon the land ceded, while it continues the property of the United States, shall apply to this treaty; and the Indians shall, for the same term, enjoy the privilege of making sugar upon the same land, committing no unnecessary waste upon the trees.

Art. 6. The United States agree to pay to the Indians the value of any improvements which they may be obliged to abandon in consequence of the lines established by this treaty, and which improvements add real value to the land.

Art. 7. The United States reserve the right to make roads through any part of the land reserved by this treaty.

Art. 8. The United States engage to provide and support a blacksmith for the Indians, at Saginaw, so long as the President of the United States may think proper, and to furnish the Chippewa Indians with such farming utensils, and cattle, and to employ such persons to aid them in their agriculture, as the President may deem expedient.

Art. 9. This treaty shall take effect, and be obligatory on the contracting parties, so soon as the same shall be ratified by the President of the United States, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate thereof.

In testimony whereof, the said Lewis Cass, Commissioner as aforesaid, and the Chiefs and Warriors of the Chippewa Nation of Indians, have hereunto set their hands, at Saginaw, in the Territory of Michigan, this twenty-fourth day of September, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and nineteen.

(Signed)

Lewis Cass

and one hundred and fourteen Indians.

Twenty-three witnesses

The execution of the treaty was consummated about the middle of the afternoon, and the silver that was to be paid to the Indians was counted out upon the table in front of the Commissioner. The Saginaw chiefs and headmen being largely indebted to Campau for goods furnished by him, had put themselves under a promise to him that he should receive at least fifteen hundred dollars of the amount in satisfaction of his just claims. The Commissioner informed the Indians that all the money was theirs, and if it was their will that Campau's debt should be first paid to him, to so signify and it should be done. Three other traders were present with goods for sale, and they were by no means pleased to see so large a proportion of the money thus appropriated. Wah-be-sins (Smith) was one of the three traders. He urged the turbulent and besotted Kish-kau-kou and his brother to object, and they addressed the Commissioner: "We are your children; we want our money in our hands." In accordance with this wish the Commissioner directed the money to be paid to them, and Campau received none of his pay from that fund.

At that instant Campau jumped from the platform and struck Smith two heavy blows in the face. He was smart as steel and Campau was not slow; but Louis Beaufait and others got between them and stopped the fight. Campau lost his money and was thus cheated out of a good fight besides. But he had his satisfaction that night. Five barrels of whiskey were opened by the United States Quartermaster, for the Indians. Campau ordered ten barrels of his whiskey opened and two men stationed with dippers at the open barrels. The Indians drank to fearful excess; and at ten o'clock the General sent Major Robert Forsyth to him to say: "The Indians are getting dangerous, the General says stop the liquor." Campau sent back word to him, "General, you commenced it."

A guard was thereupon detailed to surround his door. Soon after some Indians from the Bay came to the post, and the guard tried to keep them out with the bayonet. In the scuffle that ensued one of the Indians was stabbed in the thigh. The war-whoop was given, and in fifteen minutes the building containing the store room and the General's headquarters was surrounded by excited Indians with tomahawks in their hands. General Cass came to the door of his lodgings looking very grotesque, with a red bandanna handkerchief tied about his head, and exclaimed, "Louis! Louis! stop the liquor, Louis!" Campau answered him: "General, you commenced it; you let Smith plunder me and rob me, but I will stand between you and all harm." The General called out again, "Louis! Louis! Send those Indians to their wigwams." "Yes, General," came the reply, "but you commenced it." In recalling this incident, which is so illustrative of the state of things on the treaty ground, Campau said: "I lost my money; I lost my fight; I lost my liquor; but I got good satisfaction."

The trading post conducted by Campau before and after the negotiation of the treaty stood on the east side of Water Street, on part of the site of Wright's mill. Many years after this event it served as a residence, its occupant being a genial old Frenchman, named J. Baptiste Desnoyers, who made the old house, with its rickety stairs and loose flooring, seem cheerful with his cordial welcome. For one year, 1820, Campau also had a trading

post on the east side of the river near where the Methodist Mission House was afterward erected. But the Indians were discontented and would not trade with him there, saying, "We gave you the other side for trading, go there." So he was obliged to abandon this post soon after. In June, 1826, he turned his business over to his brother, Antoine, and travelled westward to the Grand River where, at the rapids or Grand Traverse, he established a trading post.

In the autumn of 1819, Jacob Smith, better known as Wah-be-sins, whose influence over the Indians was ever on the increase, built a rough log trading post on the Flint River. He had profited much by his friendship with the native chiefs, through craftiness being granted eleven sections of land on the Flint, where the City of Flint is situated. For several years he traded there, but in 1825, after a lingering and pitiable sickness, due more, it was said, to neglect than disease, he died. A good hearted Frenchman, by the name of Baptiste Cochios, who was with him upon the trading ground in 1819, and was himself a fur trader, performed for the brave but unfortunate man the last sad rites of humanity. An Indian lad who had lived with Smith for several years, and who attended him faithfully in his sickness, was the only household mourner. A few Indians gathered in mournful groups about the grave as the remains of the unfortunate trader were committed to the earth. Ne-ome, his trusty and faithful friend, was there mute with grief. With that feeling of gratitude which is characteristic and which is a cardinal virtue in their untutored minds, the Indians proved true and faithful through his sickness to the last.

A few days after the death of the old trader, a relative came from Detroit and gathered up most carefully the few remnants of the stores left by the hardy frontiersman, and took them away. Sa-gas-ewa-qua, the daughter of Ne-ome, expressed herself of this proceeding with sententious brevity, peculiar to the Indian:

"When Wah-be-sins sick nobody come. Him sicker and sicker, nobody come. Wah-be-sins die, little tinker come and take all him blankets, all him cattle, all him things."

Two years after, Ne-ome followed his friend Wah-be-sins to the spirit land. He died at his tribal home a few miles above the settlement of Saginaw, faithfully attended through a long and severe sickness by his children and relatives. He was enthroned in patriarchal simplicity in the hearts of his people, beloved and mourned.

### Military Occupation

In the years 1821 and 1822 the Chippewa Indians on the Saginaw became restless and ill-tempered to such a degree that the war department, in the early part of 1822, ordered a detachment of the Third United States Infantry, then stationed at Fort Howard, Green Bay, to proceed to the Saginaw River, under the command of Major Daniel Baker. Shortly after, Doctor Zina Pitcher, having been appointed an assistant surgeon in the army, was ordered to report to Major Baker who, with two companies of infantry, would arrive at Saginaw about the twentieth of July. He therefore left Detroit with Captain Knaggs as guide, followed the Indian trail through the unbroken forest to the clearing of Oliver Williams, (which is now the pleasant little town of Waterford, in Oakland County), and thence by way of Flint River to the wigwam of the old chief Kish-kau-kou, which stood on the east side of the Saginaw River. They arrived just in time to see the troops disembarking on the opposite bank of the river near the spot now occupied by the Michigan Central station.

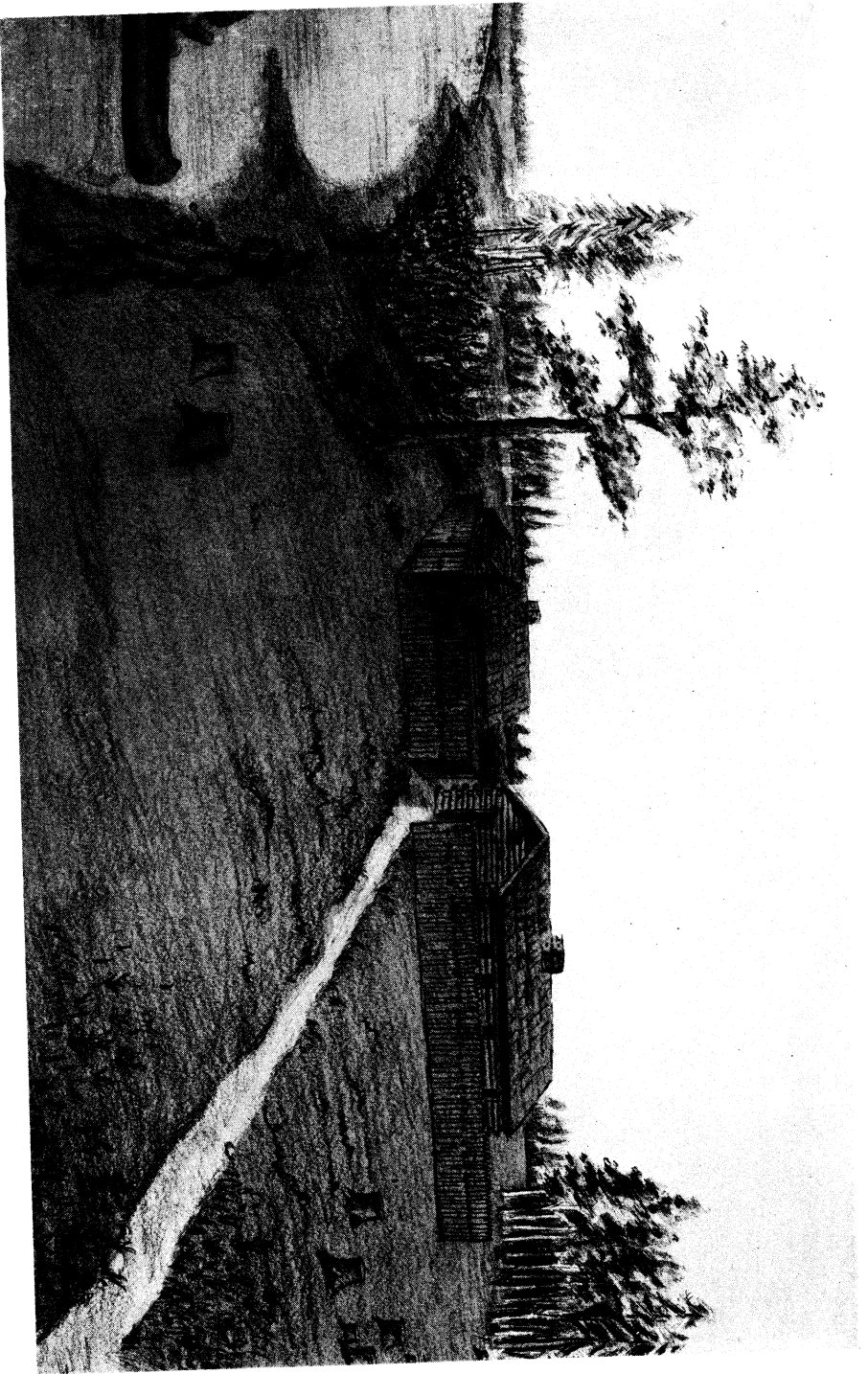
The vessels by which the troops were transported from Green Bay did not come up the river beyond the present location of Bay City, where the men and stores were transferred to canoes and flat-boats and conveyed to the landing at their destination. They at once pitched their tents along the slope of the hill and prepared for permanent residence. On the site of the present Hotel Fordney they erected a block house, surrounded it with a strong stockade, thus raising a fortress in the heart of the wilderness. Within the stockade were the company's quarters, the officers' quarters being on the north side of the quadrangle, while on three sides were the barracks for the soldiers and their families. There were about one hundred and twenty enlisted men, besides women and children — all told perhaps one hundred and fifty persons, including the surgeon, the sutler and his clerks. The companies were commanded by Captain John Garland, company K, Lieutenants Allen and Bainbridge; and Captain Stephen H. Webb, of company I, Lieutenants Brooks and Walker; and Adjutant Nelson H. Baker, a brother of the major commanding. Thomas C. Sheldon, Chauncey Bush, and Elliot Gray, all had business connections with the command. Louis Campau and family, Antoine Campau, Archibald Lyons, Indian interpreter, Mr. Provensal, Indian blacksmith, Mr. Corben, and Patrice Reaume, comprised the civil community. The trail from Smith's trading post on the Flint River to Saginaw was blazed in the winter of 1822-23, by a detail of soldiers commanded by Lieutenants Brooks and Bainbridge.

#### Hardships of Frontier Life

The winter of 1822-23 was very cold and much snow fell. When spring came the rapid solution of the ice and snow caused a great flood in the Tittabawassee and other tributaries of the Saginaw, so that most of the prairie between the post and Green Point was under water. The succeeding summer was very warm, with the natural result that it proved very sickly to the inhabitants. As early as July a very aggravated form of intermittent fever became the universal malady, and only one of the officers escaped an attack of more or less severity. Among the sufferers by the disease was the surgeon, Dr. Pitcher, who for several days was carried from his quarters to the bedside of his patients, and for whom he was the only person to prescribe. During this state of things Lieutenant Allen, Mrs. Baker, wife of the commanding officer, his daughter and a young son about fifteen years of age, and Lieutenant Nelson Baker, died, and one enlisted man only. Major Baker himself being on the sick bed, Captain Garland, next in command, made a requisition on Quartermaster Samuel Stanton for a surgeon to relieve Dr. Pitcher.

On the twenty-ninth of August, Dr. J. L. Whiting, at a great personal sacrifice, mounted his horse in Detroit, and under the guidance of a soldier set his face towards the pestilential swamps on the Saginaw. On the morning of the second day after, he sat down to a bountiful breakfast at the quarters of Captain Garland, with whom he stayed for about three weeks. He was then taken sick with the same disease and removed to the officers' mess-house, where he spent, as he afterward declared, three of the most harassing weeks of his whole life, but through a kind Providence recovered sufficiently to leave the valley with the other members of the command.

Thoroughly disheartened and discouraged with their innumerable hardships and sufferings, Major Baker reported to the Department that the climate was so unhealthy that "nothing but Indians, muskrats and bull-frogs, could possibly subsist here," and requested removal of his ill-conditioned troops to another post. In the midst of a howling wilderness, surrounded by untamed savages, whose nightly whooping and infernal pow-wow orgies



**OLD FORT SAGINAW, IN 1822**

[From a drawing prepared under the direction of Fred Dushin from descriptions given by the late Norman L. Miller, J. W. Richardson and other pioneers, who well remembered the outlines and general features of the old fort] This old stockade fort stood in a clearing on the present site of the Hotel Forney and adjoining buildings, including the old bank building on the east side of Hamilton Street which is about where the Sally port and pathway are shown.

were far more appalling than even the cries of wild beasts, and exposed to the rigidity of a northern climate, together with its vicissitudes, they hailed with delight the order for the abandonment of the fort on the Saginaw, and their removal to Detroit. About the twenty-fifth of October the weakened command embarked on the schooner *Red Jacket*, Captain Walker, and another vessel commanded by Captain Keith, and sailed for Detroit where they arrived safely on the thirtieth of the same month.

### The Deviltry of Kish-kau-kou

While the troops were stationed at the fort on the Saginaw, besides suffering many privations and inconveniences, they were subject to petty annoyances and insults from some of the Indians, who looked upon them as trespassers. The savages did not dare, however, to make any advances towards hostility, for they knew full well that the troops were prepared to meet anything of that nature with prompt retaliation. Still the "red-skins" lost no opportunity of reminding them that they were not at home upon ground claimed by themselves. Old Chief Kish-kau-kou in particular, whose wigwam was close under cover of the fort, was exceedingly annoying, at least to the soldiers, but more so to the sentry. Every night as he, on his accustomed round, would give the hour, with the usual "all's well," this rascally chief would mockingly reiterate the watchword, together with a taunting shout and whoop, making the very welkin ring again, and startling the inmates of the fort, who not unfrequently imagined, upon being so unceremoniously awakened, that an attack was at hand.

The old chief had repeated this trick a number of times, when the soldiers determined to punish him a little, and at the same time enjoy some sport at his expense. Accordingly they loaded an old swivel to the muzzle, with grape and canister, and mounted it upon the pickets, pointing it in the direction of the savage's wigwam, but in such a position that the shot would merely rattle over his head, with no other effect than that of frightening him into silence, if nothing else. Night came and all was still, the heavy tramp of the sentinel, and the distant howl of hungry wolves alone being heard. The men were lying quietly behind the gun, while a match was ready to apply at the signal, which the old chief himself was unwittingly to give. At length twelve o'clock came, the hour usually selected by the Indian for his *echo*. "Twelve o'clock — all's well," sang out the sentry. "All well," echoed the savage, "ke-whoop-ke-kee-who-whoop," making at the same time a grand flourish after the war style of his forefathers — "ye-ye-ye-yeep-ke-who."

At this instant a bright gleam of fire shot from the walls of the fort accompanied by a report so loud, so deafening, that the buildings shook with the concussion, while the grape and canister rattled fearfully over the wigwam and tore through the branches of the trees overhanging it. The old chief thought his end had indeed come, and called lustily upon all the gods in his unlettered vocabulary, and the medicine men of his nation, to save him. After this salutary rebuke no papoose in the tribe was more humble or deferential to the troops than this same Indian. He probably thought it advisable to keep on good terms with the men who repaid insult with thunder, lightning and iron hail.

During the epidemic of fever in the garrison, a great Indian council was held at Green Point, according to Indian law, at which the old tyrant, Kish-kau-kou, was present. A Delaware Indian, intermarried with a Chippewa woman, was on trial for the killing of a Chippewa Indian in a drunken brawl.



The offender had compromised the matter, and bought his life by paying the relatives a certain amount of furs, skins and money. But according to the custom of the Chippewa tribe, it was necessary that the pardon should be confirmed by a council. In this proceeding the delinquent was required to walk around in a circle on the ground, formed by the assembled red-skins, and if unmolested by any of the relatives of the murdered man, the matter was to be considered as finally settled, and not to be reopened forever after. He had quietly passed all the relatives, near and remote, and was therefore restored to his former standing in the tribe; but in passing the old tyrant, Kish-kau-kou, he rose and struck the offender dead at his feet. The whole circle was amazed at this audacious act, and the usual "Waugh" was uttered by the council. The hereditary chief, Min-non-e-quot, said: "What does this mean? It is contrary to Indian law." Old Kish-kau-kou deigned only the reply: "The law is altered." The council then broke up, and the old rascal took the body of the slain Indian into his canoe, covered it with skins and furs, and paddled away to his village at the mouth of the river, where it was buried.

When on the way to Malden, to receive their annual presents from the British government, Kish-kau-kou, who was in the habit of travelling with thirty or forty blood-thirsty warriors, took advantage of the sparseness of the settlements, and levied contributions upon the poor settlers. If his demands were not readily complied with he would take what he wanted by force, such as cattle, hogs, and corn, thus subjecting the poor settlers to great suffering and continual fear. On one occasion, after his arrival at Detroit which happened a few days before payment, his men being very hungry, he applied to some of the authorities for food, saying, "Unless my young men get something to eat, it will be impossible for me to restrain them from robbing the settlers along the route." To this threat General Cass replied: "If your young men commit any depredations upon the settlers, I will send my young men to punish them." Notwithstanding this admonition, depredations were occasionally committed with impunity upon the helpless pioneers.

Kish-kau-kou at length came to his end in a manner strikingly in keeping with his cowardly career. In April, 1825, while encamped at a place a little above Detroit, known as the Chene farm, he got into a drunken brawl on Water Street, on the site of the Grand Trunk Railway Station, and killed an Indian. The dead savage was taken to "Uncle" Harvey William's blacksmith shop, directly across the street, and an inquest was held, while Kish-kau-kou and his son were conveyed to the fort. Feeling assured from contemplation of his past conduct that he need expect no mercy or lenity, from the hands of those whom he had so often outraged, he anticipated the action of the law by drinking the hemlock in his prison, and died before the trial was concluded. It was supposed that the poison was provided him by one or more of his numerous squaws. His son, who was no party to the crime, escaped.

The successive chieftain of the Saginaw tribe was Oge-maw-ke-ke-to, whose name signified the "Chief Speaker." He was in every respect antipodal to Kish-kau-kou, being a high-minded and honorable Indian, and was an eloquent orator. Although he was not the head chief by birth, he was a great favorite with the white settlers, on account of the loftiness of his style, the beauty of his expression, and his powerful and commanding eloquence which always carried conviction with it. The place upon which the settlement of Saginaw was built was called by the Indians Ke-pay-sho-wink, meaning "the great camping ground."

### The Second Treaty of Saginaw

In 1836 Henry R. Schoolcraft, Commissioner of Indian Affairs, drafted for the government a second treaty which was presented before an Indian council the same year. The friendliness and spirit of gratitude of the Indians, to those white settlers who were kind and generous to them, is well illustrated by an incident in connection with the making of this treaty. James McCormick, who was then settled among the bands on the Indian fields, received from his aboriginal neighbors a tract of six hundred and forty acres of land in recognition of his kindness to them during the prevalence of the small-pox epidemic. This valuable grant had gone into the possession of McCormick; but in the treaty presented by Schoolcraft there was no mention made of it. One of the Indian counselors demanded why this important item was omitted, merely gaining the laconic answer: "It can't be done." "Very well," said the Indian orator, "we will not sell our lands unless our white brother is provided for. We will not sign the treaty." The assembled Indians thereupon dispersed and the Commissioner was left to ponder over a new phase of the nature of the savage, in the deserted wigwam.

In January of the following year the Commissioner invited the Indian counselors to meet him at Detroit, and on the fourteenth of that month they assembled in council. Schoolcraft then assured them that the treaty papers as presented contained full provision that McCormick would be continued as lessee of the lands in question. With this assurance on the honor of an officer of the United States Government, the children of the forest deeded away their hunting grounds, and also, as a few years proved, their munificent gift to their "white brother." The Commissioner never inserted an article guaranteeing the title of the land to McCormick, and as a result he was evicted from a home and farm which he had improved, which he well merited, and which was endeared to him by many associations. By this treaty the Indians ceded to the United States all the reservations mentioned in the first treaty of 1819.

This treaty provided for the sale of these lands, and the sum so derived after deducting the expenses of survey and treaty, was to be invested under direction of the President, in some public stock and the interest thereof to be paid annually to the Indians. Certain sums were also set apart for the payment of their valid debts, and for depredations committed after the surrender of Detroit, in 1812. The Indians agreed to remove from Michigan to some point west of Lake Superior, or locate west of the Mississippi and southwest of the Missouri, to be decided by Congress. A supplementary article provided for the erection of a lighthouse on the Na-bo-bish tract of land, lying at the mouth of the Saginaw River; and a subsequent article to this treaty, concluded at Saginaw, changed the location of the lighthouse to the forty thousand-acre tract of land, on the west side of the river.

### The Treaty of 1838

A treaty was concluded at Saginaw, January 23, 1838, with the several bands of the Chippewa nation, comprehended within the districts of Saginaw, in which the chiefs represented, that at the sale of lands for their use a combination was formed and the prices per acre greatly reduced. The treaty then provided that all lands brought into market under the authority of the previous treaty, of January 14, 1837, should be sold to the register and receiver for two years from date of commencement of sale, at \$5 per acre, which sum was declared the minimum price; provided, that should any portion of said lands remain unsold at the expiration of the two years, the

minimum price was to be reduced to \$2.50 per acre, at which price the remaining lands were to be disposed of; and after five years from date of ratification of the treaty, if any lands then remained, they were to be sold for the sum they would command, but none less than seventy-five cents per acre.

#### The Treaty of 1855

On August 2, 1855, a treaty was concluded at Detroit, between George W. Manypenny and Henry C. Gilbert, Commissioners on the part of the United States, and the Chippewa Indians of Saginaw, Swan Creek and Black River, in which the United States agreed to withdraw from sale six adjoining townships of land in Isabella County, and townships 17 and 18 north, ranges 3, 4 and 5 east; agreed to pay the Chippewas the sum of \$220,000, to be used for education, agriculture, building material; to build a saw mill at some suitable water-power in Isabella County, at a cost of not exceeding \$8,000; to test the claims and pay the just indebtedness of said tribe of Chippewas; to provide an interpreter for said Indians for five years and longer if necessary; and said Chippewas ceded to the United States all lands in Michigan heretofore owned by them as reservations; and that the grants and payments provided in this treaty were in lieu and satisfaction of all claims legal and equitable on the part of said Indians, jointly and severally against the United States, for land, money, or other thing guaranteed to said tribes or either of them, by the stipulation of any former treaty or treaties; the entries of land made by the Indians and by the Missionary Society of the M. E. Church for the benefit of the Indians, in townships 14 north and 4 east, and 10 north and 5 east, were confirmed and patents issued.



**MORASS IN THE WILDERNESS**

Typical of the Saginaw Valley in the Early Days of its Settlement

CHAPTER V  
THE COMING OF DE TOCQUEVILLE  
OR  
"A Fortnight in the Wilderness"

---

Voyage across Lake Erie to Detroit—Follow Trail to Pontiac—Pioneer Life in the Wilderness—Taking Trail toward the North—Encounter with Indian—Lost at Night in Forest—They Reach Flint River—Penetrate the Virgin Forest—Hardships of the Journey—Arrival at Saginaw River—Picture of Early Saginaw—They Shoot Wild Ducks—Return to Civilization.

ALEXIS DE TOCQUEVILLE, a distinguished French statesman and traveller, who explored much of this western country in 1831, was probably the first European to penetrate the wilderness of the Saginaw. In his memoirs, which were translated and published in London thirty years after, he states that he was most curious to visit the extreme limits of civilization, and even some of the Indian tribes which had preferred flying to the wildest depths of the forest, to accommodating themselves to what the white man calls the enjoyments of social life. With this object he traversed places celebrated in Indian history, he reached valleys named by them, he crossed streams still called by the names of their tribes; but everywhere the wigwam had given way to the log hut, and the log hut to the house—the forest had fallen. Where there had been solitude there was now life; still he seemed to be treading in the steps of the aborigines.

With a trusty companion, named Beaumont, he set forth from Buffalo on the steamboat *Ohio* at 10 A. M. on July 19, enroute to Detroit, a strong northeast breeze giving to the waters of Lake Erie the appearance of ocean waves. After skirting the southern shore of the lake and touching at Erie, they bore straight across the expanse of fresh waters to the mouth of the Detroit; and in the afternoon of the following day arrived, without unusual incident, at the town of that name.

Detroit at that time was a town of from two to three thousand inhabitants, occupying a site cut out of the forest, and contained many French families. Although the settlement was on the frontier of civilization, it had already assumed the life and customs of the east. Almost everything could be found, even French fashions and caricatures from Paris; and the shops seemed as well supplied with goods as those of New York. The looms of Lyons worked for both alike.

"Where you see that church, yonder," some one said, "I cut down the first tree in the forest hereabout." "Here," said another, "was a scene of the conspiracy of Pontiac and of Hull's surrender. But the Indians have gone beyond the Great Lakes, the race is becoming extinct; they are not made for civilization—it kills them." Other settlers, sitting quietly by their fire-sides, said: "Every day the number of Indians is diminishing; it is not that we often make war upon them, but the brandy we sell to them at a low price carries off every year more than our arms could destroy. God, by refusing to these first inhabitants the power of civilization, has predestined them to destruction. The true owners of the continent are those who know how to turn its resources to account."

This only whetted the curiosity of the adventurous De Tocqueville, to satisfy which he must cross almost impenetrable forests, swim deep rivers, encounter pestilential marshes, sleep exposed to damp air in the woods, and perhaps encounter wild beasts. To subject oneself to such hardships if a dollar is to be gained, the early pioneers conceived worth while; but that a man should take such a journey for the mere satisfaction of curiosity, they could not understand. That the travellers should admire huge trees, or wild scenery, was to them incomprehensible.

Upon inquiry of Major Biddle, the United States agent for the sale of wild lands, they were informed that the country beyond was covered by an almost impenetrable forest, which extended uninterrupted toward the Northwest, full of Indians and wild beasts. The government was opening a way through, he said, but the road stopped at Pontiac; and they must not think of fixing themselves further off. On the contrary, the travellers were overjoyed at the prospect of finding a place which the torrent of civilization had not yet invaded.

### Follow Trail to Pontiac

On the twenty-third of July, therefore, they hired two horses, bought a compass and some provisions, and set forth with guns over their shoulders to make their way to the settlement on the far distant Saginaw. A mile from the town the road entered the forest and never left it. They observed that the ground was perfectly flat and often marshy. Now and then they came upon newly-cleared lands, the approach to which was usually announced by the sound of a little bell hung around the neck of cattle, and a few minutes later by the strokes of an axe. As they proceeded, traces of destruction proved the presence of man; lopped branches covered the path, and trunks half calcined by fire, or slashed by steel, still stood in the way. A little further on the woods seemed struck with sudden death, and in midsummer the branches looked wintry. This was a settler's first measure to prevent the thick foliage overshadowing the Indian corn, which he had planted under the branches.

Next they came upon the settler's hut standing in a plat more carefully cleared than the rest, but in which he sustained an unequal struggle with nature. Like the littered field around it, thus rustic dwelling bore evidences of new and hasty work. Its dimensions were about twenty by thirty feet, and fifteen feet high, with its walls and roof composed of half-hewn logs, the interstices being filled with moss and mud. At the sound of their footsteps a group of children, who had been playing in the dirt, jumped up hastily and fled beneath the paternal roof; whilst two half-wild dogs came out of the hut, and growling, covered the retreat of their young masters. The pioneer himself then appeared, called off his savage dogs, and stepped forward to meet his visitors, holding out his hand in compliance with custom; but his countenance expressed neither kindness nor joy. He spoke only to question them, to gratify his curiosity. Hospitality to him was one of the painful necessities of the wilderness, a duty of his position.

### Pioneer Life in the Wilderness

Within the log hut they noticed a single window, before which hung a muslin curtain, while on the hearth, made of hardened earth, a fire of resinous wood lighted up the interior better than the sun. Over the rustic chimney hung trophies of war or of the chase, a long rifle, a doeskin, and eagles' feathers. On a rough shelf were a few old books, including a bible and Milton's poems. Beneath this in a darkened corner were rude bunks, chests for use instead of wardrobes, and some rustic seats, all the product of

the owner's industry. In the middle of the room was an unsteady table, with its legs still covered with leaves, upon which were an English china tea pot, spoons of pewter and wood, a few cracked cups, and some newspapers.

"The pioneer," wrote De Tocqueville, "despises all that most violently agitates the hearts of man; his fortune or his life will never hang on the turn of a die, or the smiles of a woman; but to obtain competence he has braved exile, solitude, and the numberless ills of savage life, he has slept on the bare ground, he has exposed himself to the fever of the woods and the Indians' tomahawk. Many years ago he took the first step. He has never gone back; perhaps twenty years hence he will be still going on without desponding or complaining. Can a man capable of such sacrifices be cold and insensible? Is he not influenced by a passion, not of the heart but of the brain, ardent, perserving, and indomitable?"

"His whole energies are concentrated in the desire to make a fortune, and he at length succeeds in making for himself an entirely independent existence, into which even the domestic affections are absorbed. He may be said to look upon his wife and children only as detached parts of himself. Deprived of human intercourse with his equals, he has learned to take pleasure in solitude.

"Look at the young woman who is sitting on the other side of the fire, preparing the supper. This woman is in the prime of life; she also recollects an early youth of comfort. The remains of taste are still to be observed in her dress. But time has pressed heavily upon her; in her faded features and attenuated limbs it is easy to see that life to her has been a heavy burden. And, indeed, this fragile creature has already been exposed to incredible suffering. To devote herself to austere duties, to submit to unknown privations, to enter upon an existence for which she was not fitted—such has been the employment of her best years, such have been the delights of her married life. Destitution, suffering, and fatigue have weakened her delicate frame, but have not dismayed her courage.

"Round this woman crowd the half-clothed children, glowing with health, careless of the morrow, true children of the wilderness. The log hut shelters this family at night; it is a little world, an ark of civilization in the midst of a green ocean. A few steps off the everlasting forest extends its shades, and solitude again reigns."

Continuing their journey the travellers reached Pontiac at sunset, and found there about twenty "very neat and pretty houses, forming so many well provided shops, a transparent brook, a clearing about a square half-mile in extent surrounded by the boundless forest." They were taken to the inn and introduced into the bar room, where all assembled to smoke, think, and talk politics on a footing of the most perfect equality. The owner was a very stout gentleman, "whose face had about as much frankness and simplicity as that of a Norman horse dealer." For fear of intimidating them he never looked them in the face when he spoke, but waited until they were engaged in talking with someone else, to consider them at his leisure. They were looked upon with surprise and interest, as their travelling dress and guns proved that they were not traders; and travelling for curiosity was a thing never heard of.

De Tocqueville told the landlord that they came to the region to buy land; thereupon they were at once taken into another room, a large candle lighted, and a map of Michigan spread before them.

"This country is not like France," said the host, "with you labor is cheap and land is dear. Here the price of land is nothing, but hands cannot be bought. One must have capital to settle here, only it must be differently

employed. An acre in Michigan never costs more than four or five shillings, when the land is waste. This is about the price of a day's work. In one day, therefore, a laborer may earn enough to purchase an acre of land, but once the purchase is made the difficulty begins. The settler betakes himself to his newly acquired property, with some cattle, a salted pig, two barrels of meal, and some tea. He pitches his tent in the middle of the wood which is to be his field. His first care is to cut down the nearest trees; with them he quickly builds a rude log hut. The keep of the cattle costs nothing, as they brouse in the forest, not often straying far from the dwelling.

"The greatest expense," he continued, is in the clearing which costs four or five dollars an acre; but the ground once prepared the settler lays out an acre in potatoes and the rest in wheat and maize. The latter is a providential gift of the wilderness; it grows in our marshes, and flourishes under the shade of the forest better than when exposed to the rays of the sun. Maize saves the settlers' family from perishing, when poverty, sickness, or neglect has hindered his reclaiming sufficient land in the first year. The great difficulty is to get over the first years which immediately succeed the first clearing. Afterward comes competence, and later wealth.

"Cultivation, at first, of the soil of the forest is always a dangerous undertaking, and there is scarcely an instance of a pioneer and his family escaping the forest fever during the first year. Sometimes all the occupants of a hut will be attacked by it, who resign themselves and hope for better times. There is little prospect of help from neighbors many miles away, and the nearest doctor may be fifty or sixty miles off. They do as the Indians do, they die or get well, as it pleases God.

"In the wilderness men are seized with a hunger for religion. Almost every summer some Methodist preacher comes to visit the new settlements. News of his arrival spreads, and on the day of meeting the settlers and families flock from fifty miles around towards the place. They meet in the open air under the arches of the forest trees, rough logs serving as seats in the rustic temple. The pioneers camp close by for three or four days, and scarcely intermit their devotional exercises."

After receiving some other valuable information, the travellers thanked the landlord for his counsels, and assured him that someday they would profit by them, adding, "Before leaving your country we intend to visit Saginaw, and we wish to consult you on that point."

At the name of Saginaw a remarkable change came over the features of their host. It seemed as if he had been suddenly snatched from real life and transported to a land of wonders. His eyes dilated, his mouth fell, and the most complete astonishment pervaded his countenance.

"You want to go to Saginaw," he exclaimed; "to Saginaw Bay! Two foreign gentlemen, two rational men want to go to Saginaw Bay! It is scarcely credible."

"But why not?" they asked.

"Are you aware," continued their host, "what you undertake? Do you know that Saginaw is the last inhabited spot towards the Pacific, that between this place and Saginaw lies an uncleared wilderness? Do you know that the forest is full of Indians and mosquitoes, that you must sleep at least one night under the damp trees? Have you thought about the fever? Will you be able to get on in the wilderness and to find your way in the labyrinth of our forests?"

"All that may be true," replied the travellers, "but we start tomorrow for Saginaw." By the way," they resumed, "have you never been there?"

"Yes," he replied, "I have been so unlucky as to go there five or six times, but I had a motive in going, and you do not appear to have any."

They vouchsafed no explanation to this observation, whereupon the landlord took a candle, showed them a bed room, and left them after giving each a truly democratic shake of the hand.

### Taking the Trail Toward the North

At dawn the next day they arose and made ready for the start, their host lending his aid and often reflecting in an undertone: "I do not well make out what can take two strangers to Saginaw." Until at last De Tocqueville said to him, "we have many reasons for going thither, my dear landlord," and with a wave of the hand they trotted off as fast as they could.

Among the directions given them they had been advised to apply to a settler, named Oliver Williams, as he had long dealt with the Chippewa Indians, and had a son established in Saginaw. (This early pioneer was a great-grandfather of A. B. Williams, a resident of the West Side.) After riding some miles in the forest, they saw an old man working in a little garden. They spoke to him and found that he was the person they sought. He received them with much kindness, and gave them a letter to his son. They asked him if they had anything to fear from the Indians. "No, no," he replied, "you may proceed without fear. For my part, I sleep more fearlessly among Indians than among white persons."

After leaving Mr. Williams they pursued their way through the woods; from time to time a little lake shone like a white table cloth under green branches. "The charm of these lonely spots," wrote De Tocqueville, "as yet untenanted by man, and where peace and silence reign undisturbed, can hardly be imagined. The solitude is deep, but the feelings produced are tranquil admiration. A soft melancholy, a vague aversion to civilized life, and a sort of savage instinct which causes one to regret that soon this enchanting solitude will be no more. Already, indeed, the white man is approaching through the surrounding woods, and in a few years he will have felled the trees now reflected in the limpid waters of the lake, and will have driven to other wilds the animals that feed on its banks."

### Encounter With Indian

Still travelling on they at length reached a country of a different aspect. The ground was no longer flat, but thrown into hills and valleys. They noted with delight the rough grandeur of some of these hills, and in one of the picturesque passes they saw close to them, and apparently following step by step, an Indian warrior. He was about thirty years of age, tall and admirably proportioned. His black and shining hair fell down upon his shoulders, and his face was smeared with black and red paint. He wore a sort of very short blue blouse, and his legs were covered with a loose pantaloon reaching only to the top of the thigh; and his feet were encased with mocassins. At his side hung a knife, and in his right hand he held a long rifle, while in his left were two birds that he had just killed.

To seize their guns, turn around and face the Indian in the path, was the movement of an instant. He halted in the same manner, and for half a minute all were silent. They could see that in the deep black eyes of the savage gleamed the fierce nature of his tribes. His nose was aquiline slightly depressed at the end, his cheek bones were very high, and his wide mouth showed two rows of dazzling white teeth, proving that the savage, more cleanly than the American, did not pass his day chewing tobacco leaves. He stood their scrutiny with perfect calmness and with steady and unflinching eye. When he saw that the travellers had no hostile intentions, he smiled, probably because he perceived that they had been alarmed. They then addressed him in English and offered him brandy, which he readily



accepted without thanking them. Making signs they asked him for the birds which he carried; and he gave them for a little piece of money. They soon bid him adieu and trotted off.

"At the end of half an hour," continued the narrative, "of rapid riding, on turning round, once more I was astounded by seeing the Indian still at my horse's heels. He ran with the agility of a wild animal, without speaking a single word or seeming to hurry himself. We stopped; he stopped: we went on; he went on. We darted at full speed; the Indian doubled his pace; I saw him sometimes on the right, sometimes on the left, jumping over underwood and alighting on the ground without the slightest noise. The sight of the strange figure, now lost in the darkness of the forest, and then again appearing in the daylight, and seeming to fly by our side, caused us to fear that he was leading us into an ambush."

They were full of forebodings when they discovered, right in front of them in the wood, the end of another rifle. They soon came alongside the bearer, and at first took him for an Indian. He was an upright and well-made figure, his neck was bare, and his feet were covered with mocassins. Coming close to him he raised his head, and they stopped short. He came to them, shook them cordially by the hand, and entered into conversation. The Indian rested nearby, and the settler observing him and being told of his having followed the white men, said: "He is a Chippewa, or as the French would call him a '*sautier*.' I would wager that he is returning from Canada, where he has received the annual presents from the English. His family cannot be far off."

As De Tocqueville and his companion resumed their journey, the pioneer called to them: "When you pass here again, knock at my door. It is a pleasure to meet white faces in this place."

Some miles further on one horse lost a shoe, but not far off, happily, they met another settler who put it on again. He advised them to make haste, as the daylight in the forest was beginning to fade, and they were at least five miles from Flint River. Soon, indeed, they were enveloped in darkness, but were forced to push on. The night was fine, but cold; the silence of the forest was so deep, the calm so complete, that the forces of nature seemed paralyzed. Now and then they saw the distant gleam of a fire, against which they could trace, through the smoke, the stern and motionless profile of an Indian.

### Lost at Night in the Forest

At the end of an hour they came upon a place where the path separated, two trails opening in different directions. One led to a stream they could not tell how deep, the other to a clearing. Which to take was a difficult thing to decide. The moon just rising, however, showed them a valley of fallen trees, and farther on the dim outline of two huts. In order not to lose their way at such an hour they decided that Beaumont should remain to take care of the horses, while De Tocqueville with gun over his shoulder, should descend into the valley.

He soon perceived that he was entering a little settlement. Immense trunks of trees and branches yet unlopped covered the ground, which necessitated his jumping from one to another to reach the stream. Happily, its course was impeded at this place by some huge oaks that the pioneers had doubtless thrown down to form a sort of rustic bridge. By crawling along these fallen trees he at last reached the other side. He warily approached the huts, which he could see but indistinctly, fearing they might prove Indian wigwams. They proved to be unfinished dwellings with doors open; and no voice answered his calls.

Returning to the edge of the stream, he admired for a few minutes the awful grandeur of the scene. The valley seemed a vast amphitheater surrounded on all sides by dark woods as if by a black curtain. In its center the moonlight played among the shattered remnants of the forest, creating a thousand fantastic shapes. No sound of any kind, no murmur of life, was audible.

"At last I remembered my companion," writes De Tocqueville, "and called loudly to him to cross the rivulet and join me. The echo repeated my voice over and over again in the solitary woods, but I got no answer. The same death-like stillness reigned. I became uneasy and ran by the side of the stream till I reached the place where it was fordable.

"When I got there I heard in the distance the sound of horses' feet, and soon after Beaumont appeared. Surprised by my long absence, he had proceeded toward the rivulet, and was already in the shallow when I called him. He told me that he, too, had tried by every means to make himself heard, and as well as I, had been alarmed at getting no answer. If it had not been for this ford, which had served as a meeting place, we should probably have been looking for each other half the night."

### They Reach Flint River

They resumed their journey and in three-quarters of an hour came upon a settlement, consisting of two or three huts, and, what was still more agreeable, a light. A line of water in the valley proved that they had arrived at Flint River. Soon, a loud barking echoed in the woods, and they soon found themselves close to a log hut, with a fence between them and shelter. As they prepared to climb over it, they saw in the dim moonlight a great black figure rise before them, almost within reach of their arms, having wild, fiery eyes, its hot breath fanning their faces, showing as clearly as anything could its intention to give them a fraternal embrace.

"What an infernal country is this," exclaimed De Tocqueville, "where they keep bears for watch dogs. If we attempt to get over the fence it will be difficult to make the porter listen to reason."

They halloed at the top of their voices, and at length a man appeared at the window, who, after scrutinizing them by the light of the moon, opened the door and welcomed them.

"Enter, gentlemen," he said, "Trink, go to bed. To the kennel, I say. They are not robbers."

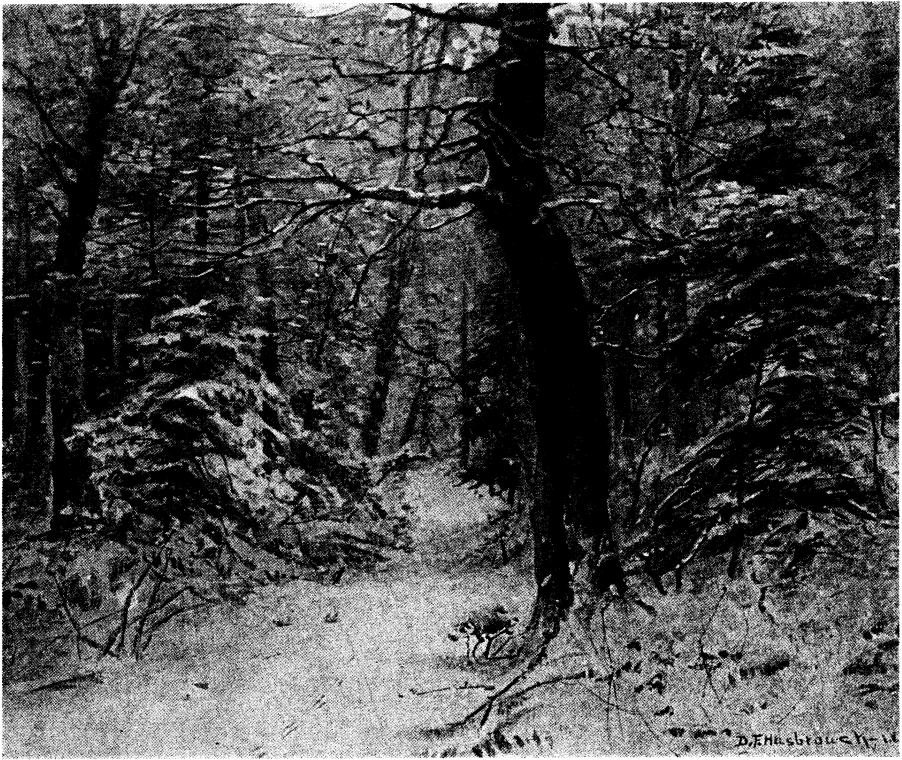
The bear waddled off, and the travellers got in almost dead with fatigue. They asked the settler if they could have some oats for their horses.

"Certainly," he replied, and at once went out and began to mow the nearest field as if it were noon day. Meanwhile, they settled themselves as comfortably as they could and slept soundly.

A wilderness of forty miles separated Flint River from the settlement on the Saginaw, and the trail was a narrow and hardly perceptible pathway. It was therefore necessary to procure guides, and two Indian boys who could be trusted were employed to show them the way. One was only twelve or fourteen years of age, and the other about eighteen. The latter, though he had attained the vigor of manhood, gave the idea of agility united with strength. He was of middle height and slendor, his limbs were flexible and well proportioned, and long tresses fell upon his shoulders. He had daubed his face with black and red paint in symmetrical lines; a ring was passed through his nose; and a necklace and ear rings completed his attire. His weapons consisted of a tomahawk, which hung at his side, and a long, sharp knife used by the savages to scalp their victims. Round his neck hung a

cow horn containing powder, and in his right hand he carried a rifle. His eye was wild, but his smile was friendly and benevolent. At his side trotted a dog, more like a fox than any other animal, with a look so savage as to be in perfect harmony with his master.

They asked him his price for the service that he was about to render, and the Indian replied in his native tongue, the trader informing them that what he asked was about equivalent to two dollars. They thereupon gave him the money and the Indian picked out from the stores a pair of mocassins and a pocket handkerchief, worth perhaps half the amount, but he appeared perfectly satisfied with the bargain. The trader, however, was ready to do justice to the savages, who were only beginning to understand the value of



THE TRAIL TO SAGINAW

things. "Trade with them becomes every day less profitable," he said. The Indian in his ignorant simplicity would have said that he (the trader) found it every day more difficult to cheat his neighbor; but the white man finds in the refinement of language, a shade which expresses the fact, and yet saves his conscience.

#### They Penetrate the Virgin Forest

All being ready, they mounted their horses, waded the river which formed the boundary of civilization, and entered the real forest wilderness. The guides ran, or leaped like wild cats, over the impediments of the path, a fallen tree, creek or bog, while the travellers groped blindly on, incapable not only of treading the labyrinth unaided, but even of finding in it the means of sustenance. At the top of the loftiest tree under the densest foliage, the children of the forest detected the game, close to which an European would have passed one hundred times in vain.

As they proceeded they gradually lost sight of the traces of man, and soon even proofs of savage life disappeared. Before them was a scene that they had long sought — a virgin forest. "Growing in the middle of the thin underbrush, through which objects are perceived at a considerable distance, was a single clump of full grown trees, almost all pines and oaks. Confined to so narrow a space, and deprived of sunshine, each of these trees had run up rapidly in search of light and air. As straight as the mast of a ship, the most rapid grower had overtopped every surrounding object; only when it had attained a higher region did it venture to spread out its branches, and clothe itself with leaves. Others followed quickly in this elevated sphere, and the whole group, interlacing their boughs, formed a sort of immense canopy.

"Underneath this damp, motionless vault, the scene is different. Majesty and order are overhead — near the ground, all is chaos and confusion. Aged trunks, incapable of supporting any longer their branches, are shattered in the middle, and present nothing but a sharp, jagged point. Others, loosened by the wind, have been thrown unbroken to the ground. Torn up from the earth, their roots form a natural barricade, behind which several men might find shelter. High trees sustained by the surrounding branches hang in mid air, and fall into dust without reaching the ground. In this solitude of America, all powerful nature is the only instrument of ruin, as well as of production. Here, as well as in the forests over which man rules, death strikes continually, but there is none to clear away the remains."

#### Hardships of the Journey

They had been riding for six hours, and the sun was already high, when the Indians stopped short, and the elder, named Sag-an-cu-isco, traced a line in the sand. Showing them one end he exclaimed, "Michi-conte-minque," meaning Flint River, and pointed to the other as the end of their journey; then, marking a point in the middle, he signed to them that they had travelled half the distance, and that they must rest awhile. They asked by signs if water was near, whereupon their guides showed them a spot, thirty paces off in the forest, where in the hollow formed by an uprooted tree, there was a little reservoir of rain water.

At this place they ate a scanty lunch and drank of the brackish water; but they minded more other discomforts of the dense woods. "Add to this a cloud of mosquitoes," wrote De Tocqueville, "attracted by the vicinity of water, which we were forced to fight with one hand while we carried our bread to our mouths with the other, and an idea may be formed of a rustic dinner in the virgin forest."

When they began to think of continuing their journey, they were dismayed to find that their horses had strayed from the path, and it was with some difficulty that they traced them, blessing the mosquitoes that had forced them to quickly resume the trail. The path soon became more difficult to follow, and frequently their horses had to force their way through thick brushwood, or to leap over large fallen trees that barred the way.

At the end of two hours of extremely toilsome riding they at length came to a stream which, though shallow, was deeply embanked. At this spot (which was probably on the Cass River about a mile south of the present village of Bridgeport), they waded across and saw a field of maize and what looked like two log huts. As they approached, the huts proved to be Indian wigwams; but the silence in the deserted camp was no less perfect than in the surrounding forest.

Sag-an-cu-isco stopped and examined attentively the ground and everything around him. He laid down his rifle and indicated in the sand that

they had travelled about three-fourths of their journey. Then he arose and pointed to the sun which was quickly sinking into the woods; next he looked at the wigwams and shut his eyes. This sign language was easy to understand, but the proposal astonished and annoyed De Tocqueville and his companion. The solemn grandeur of the scenes, their utter loneliness, the wild faces of their guides, and the difficulty of communicating with them, all conspired to take away their confidence.

"There was a strangeness, too," relates De Tocqueville, "in the conduct of the Indians. The trail for the last two hours had been even more untrodden than at the beginning, and everyone had assured us that we could go in one day from the Flint River to Saginaw. We could not, therefore, imagine why our guides wanted to keep us all night in the desert.

"We insisted on going on, but the Indian signed that we should be surprised by darkness in the forest. To force our guides to go on would have been dangerous, so I had recourse to their cupidity. The Indians have few wants and consequently few desires."

Sag-an-cu-isco had paid particular attention to a little wicker-covered bottle that hung from De Tocqueville's belt, a thing he had a sense to appreciate and admire. They at once signed to their guide that they would give him the bottle if they would take them on to the Saginaw. At this he seemed to undergo a violent struggle, looking at the sun and then on the ground; but at length he came to a decision, seized his rifle, exclaimed twice with his hand to his mouth, "Ouh! ouh!" and darted off through the bushes. They followed at a quick pace for two hours even faster than before.

Still night was coming on and the last rays of the sun had disappeared behind the trees, and the travellers began to fear lest their guides would quit from fatigue and want of food, and insist on sleeping under a tree. At last darkness overtook them. The air under the trees became damp and icy cold, and the dense forest assumed a new and terrible aspect. The only sign of life in the sleeping world was the humming of mosquitoes, and now and then a fire fly traced a luminous line upon the darkness. The gloom became still deeper, but they pushed resolutely on and in the course of an hour came to the edge of a prairie.

#### Arrival at Saginaw River

Their guides then uttered a savage cry that vibrated like the discordant notes of a tam-tam. It was answered in the distance, and five minutes later they reached a river; but it was too dark to see the opposite bank. They dismounted and waited patiently for what was to follow. In a few minutes a faint noise was heard and a dark object approached the bank. It was an Indian canoe, about ten feet long, formed of a single tree. A man crouched in the bottom who wore the dress and had the appearance of an Indian. He spoke to the guides who took the saddles off the horses, and placed them in the canoe.

As De Tocqueville was about to step in, the supposed Indian touched him on the arm, and said with a Norman accent, which made him start: "Ah, you come from Old France. Stop, don't be in a hurry."

"If my horse had addressed me," wrote De Tocqueville, "I should not have been more astonished."

Looking intently at the speaker, whose face shone in the dim moonlight like a copper ball, he said: "Who are you then? You speak French, but you look like an Indian."

He replied that he was a "bois-brule," which means a son of a Canadian and an Indian woman.

De Tocqueville seated himself in the bottom of the canoe and kept as steady as possible. His horse, whose bridle he held, plunged into the water, and swam by his side. By this means they at length reached the west side of the stream, and the canoe returned for Beaumont. They then proceeded to a log hut, about a hundred yards from the river, that had just become visible in the moonlight, and which the Canadian assured them would afford shelter. They contrived, indeed, to make themselves fairly comfortable with the meager and rough furnishings of the place. The myriads of mosquitoes, however, that filled the house, annoyed them greatly, but fatigue at last procured for them an uneasy and broken sleep.

"These insects called mosquitoes," wrote De Tocqueville, "are the curse of the American wilderness. They render a long stay unendurable. I never felt torments such as those which I suffered during the whole of the expedition, and especially at Saginaw. In the day they prevented us from sitting still an instant; in the night thousands of them buzzed around us, settling on every spot on our bodies that was uncovered."

### Picture of Early Saginaw

The travellers went out at sunrise for their first daylight view of the village of Saginaw, which they had come so far to see. A small cultivated plain, bounded on the south by a beautiful and gently flowing river, on the east, west, and north by the forest, constituted at the time the territory of the embryo city. The house in which they had passed the night was at one end of the little clearing, and a similar dwelling was visible at the other end. Between them on the outskirts of the woods, were two or three log huts, half hidden in the foliage. On the opposite side of the river stretched the prairie, from which curled a column of smoke. Looking whence it came they discovered the pointed forms of several wigwams, which scarcely stood out from the tall grass of the plain. A plow that had upset, its oxen galloping off by themselves, and a few half-wild horses, completed the picture.

"The village of Saginaw," continued De Tocqueville, "is the farthest point inhabited by Europeans to the Northwest of a vast peninsula of Michigan. It may be considered as an advanced post, a sort of watch-tower, placed by the whites in the midst of the Indian nations.

"Sometimes an Indian stops on his journey to relate some sad realities of social life; sometimes a newspaper dropped from a hunter's knapsack, or only the sort of indistinct rumor, which spreads one knows not how, and which seldom fails to tell that something strange is passing in the world.

"Once a year a vessel sails up the Saginaw to join this stray link in the great European chain which now binds the world. She carries to the new settlement the products of human industry, and in return takes away the fruits of the soil.

"Thirty persons, men, women, old people and children, comprised this little society, as yet scarcely formed—an opening seed thrown upon the desert, there to germinate. Chance, interest, or inclination had called them to this narrow space, no common link existed between them and they differed widely. Among them were Canadians, Americans, Indians and half-castes."

After breakfast they went to see the principal fur trader in the village, named Garder D. Williams, to whom they had a letter of introduction. They found him in his trading post selling to the Indians small articles, such as knives, glass necklaces, ear-rings and the like. His cordial welcome and open countenance showed immediately a taste for social pleasures, and careless indifference to life. In many respects he had the appearance of an Indian. Forced to submit to savage life, he had willingly adopted its dress

and its customs. He wore mocassins, an otter-skin cap, and carried a blanket. To fly to the wilderness he had broken every social tie, though he loved his own fireside; but his imagination was fired by novel scenes and he was seized with an insatiable desire for violent emotions, vicissitudes and perils. He had become almost a worshipper of savage life, preferring the savannah to the street, the fur trade to the plow.

Encamped on the other side of the river, the Indians from time to time cast stoical glances on the habitations of their brothers from Europe. They admire neither their industry nor envy their lot. Though for nearly three hundred years civilization has invaded and surrounded the American savages, they have not yet learned to know or to appreciate their enemy. In vain, in both races, is one generation followed by another. Like two parallel rivers they have flowed for three centuries side by side towards the same ocean, only a narrow space divides them, but their waters do not mingle.

"From the interior of his smoky hut, wrapped in his blanket, the Indian contemplates with scorn the convenient dwelling of the European. He has a proud satisfaction in his poverty; his heart swells and triumphs in his barbarous independence. He smiles bitterly when he sees us wear out our lives in heaping up useless riches. What we term industry he calls shameful subjection. He compares the workman to the ox toiling on in the furrow. What we call necessities of life, he terms childish play things or womanish baubles. He envies us only our arms. If a man has a leafy hut to shelter his head by night, a good fire to warm him in winter, and to banish the mosquitoes in summer, if he has good dogs and plenty of game, what more can he ask of the Great Spirit?"

### They Shoot Wild Ducks

After their visit to the trading post the travellers went a short distance up the Saginaw to shoot wild ducks. A canoe left the reeds and its Indian occupants came to them to examine their double-barreled gun. A fire arm that could kill two men in a second, could be fired in the wet and damp, was to them a marvel, a masterpiece beyond price. They asked whence it came, and the guide replied that it was made on the other side of the great water, an answer that did not make it less precious in their eyes.

When evening approached they returned to their canoe and, trusting to the experience acquired in the morning, they rowed alone upon an arm of the Saginaw, of which they had had a glimpse.

"The sky was without a cloud," relates De Tocqueville, "the atmosphere was pure and still. The river watered an immense forest, and flowed so gently that we could scarcely tell the direction of its current. The wilderness was before us just as six thousand years ago, it showed itself to the father of mankind. It was a delicious, blooming, perfumed, gorgeous dwelling, a living palace made for man, though, as yet, the owner had not taken possession. The canoe glided noiselessly and without effort: all was quiet and serene. Under the softening influence of the scene our words became fewer, our voices sank to a whisper, until at length we lapsed into a peaceful and delicious reverie.

"The report of a gun in the woods aroused us from our dream. At first it sounded like an explosion on both sides of the river, the roar then grew fainter till it was lost in the depth of the surrounding forest. It sounded like the prolonged and peaceful war cry of advancing civilization."

The next day De Tocqueville and his companion shot over the prairie which extended below the clearing. The prairie was not marshy, as they had expected, and the grass was dry, rising to a height of three or four

feet. They found but little game and, as the heat was stifling and the mosquitoes annoying, they soon started on their return. On the way they noticed that their guide followed a narrow path, and looked very carefully where he placed his feet.

"Why are you so cautious," asked Beaumont, "are you afraid of the damp?"

"No," he replied, "but when I walk in the prairie I always look down lest I tread on a rattlesnake."

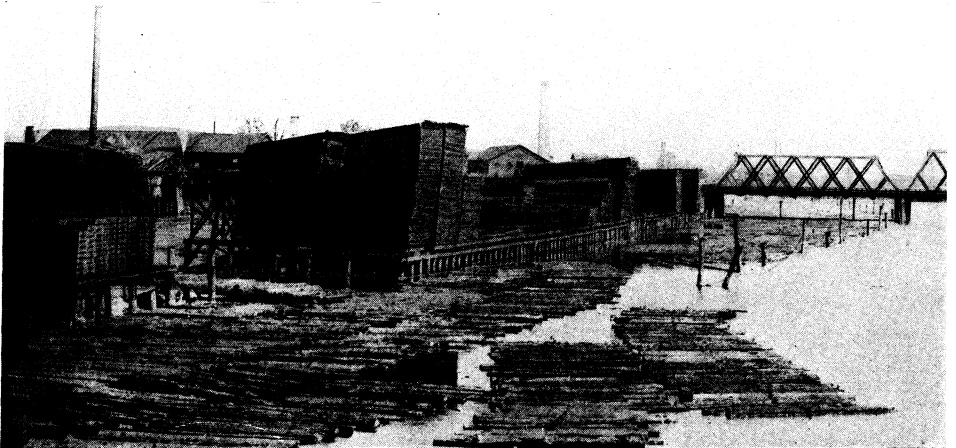
"Diable," exclaimed De Tocqueville with a start, "are there rattlesnakes here?"

"Oh yes, indeed," answered their guide, "the place is full of them."

At five o'clock the next morning the travellers resolved to start on the return to civilization. Every Indian had disappeared and, as the settlers were busily engaged in the harvest, they were obliged to retread the wilderness without a guide. So they bid their friends good bye, recrossed the Saginaw, received the farewell and last advice from their boatman, and, turning their horses' heads toward the southeast, were soon in the depth of the forest. It was not without a solemn sensation that they began to penetrate its damp recesses. The unbroken forest stretched behind them to the Pole and to the Pacific.

"We asked ourselves," observed De Tocqueville, in a prophetic mood, "by what singular fate it happened that we, to whom it had been granted to look on the ruins of extinct empires of the East, and tread the deserts made by human hands, we children of an ancient people, should be called upon to witness this scene of the primitive world, and to contemplate the as yet unoccupied cradle of a great nation.

"These are not the more or less probable speculations of Philosophy. The facts are as certain as if they had already taken place. In a few years these impenetrable forests will have fallen; the sons of civilization and industry will break the silence on the Saginaw; its echoes will cease; the banks will be imprisoned with quays; its current which now flows on unnoticed and tranquil through a nameless waste, will be stemmed by the prows of vessels. More than a hundred miles sever this solitude from the great European settlements, and we were, perhaps, the last travellers allowed to see its primitive grandeur. So strong is the impulse that urges the white man to the entire conquest of the New World."



VIEW ON SAGINAW RIVER



## CHAPTER VI

### PIONEER DAYS

---

Retarded Settlement and Its Causes—The Fur Trade—Treaty Reservations to the Rileys—Indian Payment Days—Customs and Habits of the Indians—Character of Au-saw-wa-mic—William McDonald, the “factor”—Doctor Charles Little—Eleazer Jewett—“Uncle Harvey Williams”—The Williams Brothers—Encounter with Wah-be-man-ito—Story of the fearless Neh-way-go—Other early Pioneers.

**A**LTHOUGH the treaty of Saginaw, which was negotiated with the Chippewas in September, 1819, granted to the United States a large portion of the territory lying between Lake Michigan and Lake Huron, and the land was opened for settlement on very favorable terms, immigration to the Saginaw Valley was slow in starting. The people of the East had still in mind the horrors of warfare and the barbarities and outrages suffered by the early settlers in Ohio and on the Detroit, and were reluctant to leave their homes and seek fortune in the western wilderness. Only the most daring and adventurous spirits thought it worth while to risk life on the distant frontier, and nearly all settled along the Detroit and St. Clair rivers.

The withdrawal of the United States troops from Fort Saginaw in the fall of 1823, by reason of the extreme unhealthy climate, as had been widely circulated, also deterred many emigrants from penetrating the interior; and De Tocqueville, in his memoirs, makes note of the fact that the land agents and others interested in the sale of lands directly west of Detroit, exerted every influence to discourage a permanent settlement on the Saginaw, and to direct immigration westward. Then, too, the fur traders, who were the only white inhabitants of the valley, with the future of their trade ever in mind, also opposed any settlement of the country which would inevitably exterminate or drive away the wild animals, upon which their trade was based. As a result of these conditions, for more than ten years after the treaty was ratified, the number of white settlers in this valley could not have exceeded thirty; and there were only three or four hamlets between Saginaw and Pontiac.

Nearly all the early settlers were engaged directly in the fur trade, the profits of which were large and was simply an exchange of commodities. An Indian would bring in rich furs, to him scarcely of any value, but worth perhaps ten dollars in London or Paris. He would receive in exchange a strong, keen-edged knife, worth in European cities about a half dollar, but to him worth ten times the furs. His joy was great as he showed the keen cutting tool which shaved down his bows and arrows so smoothly, in contrast to the laborious use of his hard stone implements. Imagine the delight with which an Indian woman, for the first time in her life, hung a stout iron kettle over her cabin fire. Would she not induce her “brave” to give up his scanty supply of furs in exchange for it?

From the "Voyage of Captain Richard Lode" a clear insight into the terms upon which exchanges were made with the Indians, is derived. Beaver skins were then the standard currency employed in trade, and values were based on them. The Indian gave in exchange for —

1 gun	-	-	-	10 beaver skins
$\frac{1}{2}$ pound of powder	-	-	-	1 beaver skin
4 pounds of shot	-	-	-	1 beaver skin
1 axe	-	-	-	1 beaver skin
6 knives	-	-	-	1 beaver skin
1 pound of glass beads	-	-	-	1 beaver skin
1 laced coat	-	-	-	6 beaver skins
1 laced female dress	-	-	-	5 beaver skins
1 pound tobacco	-	-	-	1 beaver skin
1 comb and looking glass	-	-	-	2 beaver skins

### Treaty Reservations to the Rileys

Among the reserves in the treaty of 1819 were John, James and Peter Riley, who were the sons of James V. S. Riley and Me-naw-cum-ego-qua, a Chippewa woman. According to early accounts of pioneer life the father by heritage came from excellent stock, and was a most fearless man of great strength and resolution. It is related of him that upon coming to Detroit in his youth, he refused to work on the King's highway, as ordered, and a file of soldiers was drawn up to flog him, but he dared them to do it. This defiant challenge was borne to Major Antrim, in charge of the British forces, who was so dazed by the Herculean mould and courage of the young frontiersman that he released him.

The sons inherited much of their father's physical strength and intrepid spirit, and were of great aid to the Americans in the war of 1812. On one occasion one of them, probably John, guided General Cass, Judge Moran and others in repelling hostile Indians in the suburbs of Detroit, and shot a fierce warrior in the advance. The aid the Rileys gave the government was no doubt the cause of the generous reservations of land for their individual use in the treaty of Saginaw. The location of John Riley's land was within the corporate limits of Bay City; James Riley's grant formed a part of the site of East Saginaw, while that of Peter Riley was on the west side of the river. None of the Rileys ever took up a permanent residence here, their tribal homes being near the head of the St. Clair River. In 1836 James and Peter sold their lands here to Andrew F. McReynolds and F. H. Stevens, when their connection with local history ceased.

### Indian Payment Days

One of the provisions of the treaty provided that in consideration of the cession of the territory named in the treaty, the United States should pay to the Chippewa nation of Indians, annually, forever, the sum of one thousand dollars in silver, and to pay all annuities due on former treaties to the said tribe in the same coin. Indian payment days of that olden time, long before the settlement on the Saginaw had attained any importance, was an interesting and picturesque event. About twelve hundred Indians of all sorts and conditions, from the papoose strapped to a piece of birch bark to the swarthy savage, were assembled early in the morning upon the lawn which sloped gently toward the river in front of the council house. Groups of Indian boys, some exercising with the bow and arrow, others wrestling, racing and making the woods ring with their gladsome merriment, were collected in the vicinity of the tents. The river was covered with canoes in which many a dusky maiden demonstrated her dexterity in the use of the paddle.

The money to be paid the Indians was placed on a table in the council room, in piles of ten and twenty dollars, each in American half-dollar pieces. Around the table sat the Indian superintendent, interpreter and clerks. A list of all the names of the heads of Indian families also lay upon the table. Commencing at the top of the list, the names were called off, the Indians presented themselves, were paid off, and stepped aside to make room for others. Each Indian invariably had a large number of friends on these occasions, and too often, the money soon disappeared. There was generally plenty of "fire water" to be obtained, despite the vigilance of the authorities, and drinking, rioting and carousing were characteristic features of this annual event.

### Customs and Habits of the Indians

The Indians of the Chippewa tribe, as they appeared ninety or one hundred years ago, were well built, exceedingly swarthy, with prominent cheek bones, coarse black hair, but with no whiskers; and were not at all attractive in their personal appearance. They were usually attired in a calico shirt, woolen or buckskin leggings, and wore heavy mocassins. In the early days they wore no head covering whatever, but in later years they adopted the cap of the white man. The warriors at first wore feathers in their hair, and the chiefs were elaborately decorated in their councils and festivals. On the war path they painted their faces with red, black and yellow colors, in hideous and often diabolical manner, a custom which was also practiced on occasions of councils, feasts or other ceremonies.

The squaws were almost without exception ugly in appearance and careless in their personal habits, although there were exceptions, and some of the half-breeds were quite pretty. The women usually wore calico dresses and mocassins, a very plain and simple costume, but one which answered the requirements. The paposes were strapped to narrow shingle boards or stout bark, and when travelling were carried on the backs of their mothers. In camp the boards were placed against a tree or post, a practice which caused the infants to grow straight.

It was a universal habit among the Chippewas to loiter around the trading posts, staring at everything, and asking for anything that pleased them such as bread, pork, tobacco and whiskey. They did not steal, and were not quarrelsome unless crazed by drink, and altogether were as inoffensive as they were worthless. It was the contamination of the white men that blighted the character of the savages. They lived chiefly by hunting and fishing, in season picking berries for sale to the whites, and making baskets and mocassins. The painting of their baskets with gay colors, and the embroidery of their mocassins and leggings, were their only attempts at a crude though interesting art. They lived in wigwams, log cabins and bark shacks; and their only cultivation of the soil consisted of planting and weeding a little corn, a work which was done entirely by the squaws.

### The Character of Au-saw-wa-mic

A mighty hunter of the Chippewas was the chief Au-saw-wa-mic, who bitterly opposed the treaty, and refused to attach his totem to the inscribed document. He lived in the vicinity of Sibi-way-ink, the Sebewaing of the present day, but afterward moved to a point about six miles from Saginaw; and was noted for his prowess as a hunter, having killed many a bear single-handed, and had run down a deer. His figure was the personification of physical strength and manhood—the ideal aborigine, such as J. Fennimore Cooper immortalized in his *Leather-Stocking Tales*, or as the poet drew with his magic pen in *Hiawatha*. He was always attired with great care, and in

the strictly native garb, consisting of deerskin wampus, leggings and moccasins, all ornamented in the most elaborate fashion. A broad belt, artistically colored, encircling his waist, tall eagle feathers adorned his head, while his face was painted with as much care as that of a fashionable belle. His long rifle rested across his arm with unstudied grace.

After the treaty had been consummated Au-saw wa-mic isolated himself from his tribe to a great extent, and never failed to taunt them for having bartered away their birthright. For years after he would present himself to the paymaster to receive his share of the annuity, and to show his contempt of his people and the general government, he would take his allotted stipend, walk majestically to the bank of the river, and contemptuously hurl the shining coins into the stream. The old chief never became contaminated with the vices of the whites, and infinitely more than any living member of the various tribes did he manifest a spirit of dignity, independence, and pride which never forsook him.

### William McDonald, the "factor."

In August, 1824, the American Fur Company established a post at Saginaw City, with William McDonald as "factor", or agent. This post was located within the stockade and log houses of Fort Saginaw, which stood on the present site of the Hotel Fordney and adjoining buildings on Court Street and the old First National Bank building. McDonald was known among the dusky hunters as "White Cloud", and was probably more trusted and beloved by the red men than any of the early traders in Saginaw Valley. His life from early manhood had been spent in the service of the American and Hudson Bay companies; and he spoke with fluency many dialects of the various tribes with whom he came in contact, and his mind was well stored with the legendary lore of the tribes which roamed the vast region to the north. For years after his retirement from trade, late in the 40's, he was well known to all the pioneer settlers, whom he often entertained with recitals of the many stirring scenes which he had passed through during his life in the forests and among the untutored children of nature. Interspersed with his tales of border days were occasional incidents illustrative of the inquisitive nature of the savages.

One bright afternoon in May, while enjoying a quiet smoke in front of the store of William H. Sweet, one of the early settlers of this valley, the giant figure of an Indian chief, with the customary salutation, "bon-jour", uttered in the deep guttural ejaculation of the native, entered, bestowing upon the proprietor a keen glance as if mentally interviewing him. Without further notice he proceeded to ransack the drawers, shelves and cases, taking from them in the course of a half-hour a variety of articles which seemed to invite his fancy. Having examined them very carefully his curiosity was apparently satisfied, for he replaced everything and departed, exchanging a few words in his own tongue with McDonald as he passed out.

Naturally, this peculiar proceeding of the Indian, as well as his physical proportions and racial characteristics, which were unlike any of his race, aroused the curiosity of the storekeeper, and he enquired of McDonald the name which he bore. It was old chief Au-saw wa mic the renowned hunter of the Chippewas. To further satisfy his inquisitiveness he had inquired of McDonald the name of the storekeeper, how long he had been in the valley, and other things he desired to be informed of. The old fur trader further stated that it was a habit of the Indian chief to enter the cabin of any settler, particularly a new comer, and make a thorough inspection of the chattels and personal belongings therein, and that he might be expected to make a call

at Sweet's house. It would be well, he said, for the storekeeper to inform his wife, so that she might not be alarmed, as the Indian was perfectly harmless, merely seeking to gratify his curiosity.

The surmise of McDonald was soon verified, for one pleasant afternoon the shadow of the chief appeared at Sweet's threshold. His wife was sewing as the strange visitor glided noiselessly into the cabin, hideous in feathers and paint, and all the tawdry trappings of the native. For a moment she was startled at the sudden apparition, who without a word of greeting gave her a scrutinizing glance, and took a look at the sleeping babies with apparent pleasure. This brief interview was followed by a personal examination by Au-saw wa-mic of all the settler's property, including a number of colored lithographs of Indian chiefs, drawn by an artist named Catlin, who had visited many of the western tribes. The inspection of these pictures afforded him great pleasure, which he evinced by various guttural exclamations which could not be misinterpreted. One in particular, the likeness of a chief of the Menominee tribe across Lake Michigan, an old friend of Au-saw-wa-mic, excited his wonderment, the recognition being so unexpected as to be a mystery the like of which he had never experienced. It was a revelation and delight to him to gaze upon the face of his savage friend, whom he never again expected to see. As he was about to leave he plucked from his crest an eagle feather and handed it to Mrs. Sweet, gave the sleeping babies and the pictures a parting glance, and quietly departed.



**AU-SAW-WA-MIE**

Soon after this incident McDonald informed the storekeeper that the old chief had told him of his discoveries in the settler's cabin, and that he wanted the picture of his old friend — the chief who lived far away to the west. It is needless to state that Au-saw-wa-mic was duly presented with the portrait of his red brother, and for years it hung as a precious gift in his wigwam. To the settler the bestowal of the picture was a real pleasure; to its new possessor a delight, which manifested itself in the steadfast friendship of the native lord of the forest. For years after he remembered his white friend with many offerings of venison, duck, bear meat and other trophies of his skill as a huntsman. Long after Au-saw-wa-mic had passed to the happy hunting grounds, his rude though noble virtues were recalled by those who recorded the chronicles of the race.

In those early days the Chippewas were quite numerous in the vicinity of the little settlement on the Saginaw; and there was a large village at Swan Creek, another at Taymouth, one at St. Charles, and one on Cheboygan Creek in Buena Vista Township. It was then a common occurrence to see numbers of Indians in town trading their peltry, sugar, baskets, fish and other game with the whites for such articles as their rude tastes fancied. Despite their characteristic stoicism some were "wags" in their way. One

Chippewa brave, having given a trader some annoyance, was told that if he was ever again seen with a bottle, it would be taken from him and thrown into the fire. A few days later the Indian appeared at the trader's cabin, with his pint flask in his blanket as usual. The trader thereupon demanded the bottle, which the savage rather reluctantly yielded up and started for the door. The trader threw the flask into the stove, when there was a sudden eruption, the stove and windows being blown out, and the trader making a hasty exit through the largest opening. From this experience he learned that it was advisable before burning an Indian's whiskey flask to ascertain that it did not contain gun powder.

#### Doctor Charles Little

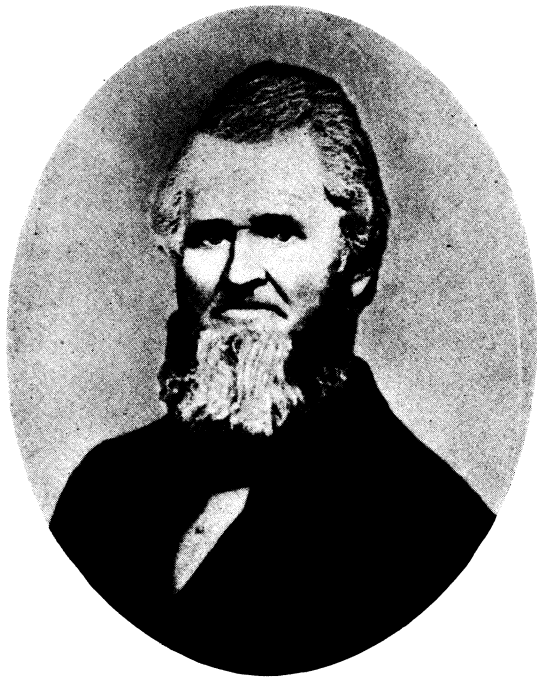
A sturdy pioneer who laid the foundation for early settlement on the Saginaw was Doctor Charles Little, who for forty-two years practiced his profession in Avon, Livingston County, New York. As early as 1822, having formed a favorable impression of the resources of this section of Michigan, he deposited the necessary funds to secure lands by government entry. He had passed over the site of Rochester, New York, at a much earlier day, when it was a sylvan waste, and had seen that and other localities, which could have been purchased at nominal prices, converted, as if by magic, into busy marts of trade. In the summer of 1822 and 1823 he visited the Saginaw Valley and traced all the principal tributaries of the main stream, and, acting upon a practical theory which had been impressed upon him, and with a foresight eminently wise, he made his entries which embraced the site of almost the entire East Side of the City of Saginaw, and other desirable lands.

These entries extended for several miles along the east bank of the river, from a point near Crow Island all the way, with occasional exceptions, to Green Point, including the site of the Village of Salina. On the west bank of the stream the entries extended from the embryo settlement to the Tittabawassee and along that stream for some distance; and years after his descendants realized and appreciated his far-seeing sagacity. After a life of great usefulness Doctor Little died at his homestead in 1842.

#### Eleazer Jewett

Eleazer Jewett, the first surveyor to trace lines in Saginaw Valley, was a native of New Hampshire and came to the little settlement in the western wilderness in the summer of 1826. Attracted by the beautiful surroundings at the head of the Saginaw, he and Asa L. Whitney, who had preceded him to the valley, built a comfortable log hut on the bank of the Tittabawassee at the place known as Green Point. Here they passed the winter of 1826-27, in the employ of the American Fur Company. Whitney was accidentally drowned in the river near their camp in April of the following spring. That year Jewett succeeded McDonald as factor for the company, and at once established a post at the forks of the Tittabawassee, near the present site of the town of Midland. This proceeding somewhat displeased the Indians, and he was threatened by them with death if he continued business there. This threat, however, he treated lightly, not believing that the chiefs, with whom he had sustained the most cordial relations, would permit their young men to molest him.

One day he saw more than a hundred blood-thirsty warriors approaching the post along the narrow trail, the only thoroughfare through the woods in those days. They were all attired in full war dress, and the affair had a serious aspect. Jewett, however, was made of stern stuff and did not pro-



E. JEWETT

pose to be bluffed into abandoning the business at this place. He appeared at the door with presents of tobacco to the chief, the stoical and savage Oge-maw-ke-ke-to, who refused to accept the gift. Being well conversant with the Indian character, he at once realized the gravity of the situation, and hastily retired within his stout cabin, bolted the door, and made ready for defense. He had a half-breed assistant with him and a large number of guns and plenty of ammunition. While the Indians were holding a confab outside, the occupants of the post loaded the guns and made ready to give the redskins a hot fight. Before a shot was fired, however, more than a score of tomahawks were launched against the heavy door of hewed planks in which they were half-buried.

The moment for action having arrived, Jewett fired several shots over the heads of the savages, as he did not want to kill any of them if it were possible to avoid it; and then sent a few charges of fine shot into the legs of the red men, taking care not to inflict much harm, his object being to intimidate them. He knew that if one of the savages was killed they would become infuriated, and with the odds so overpowering in their favor they would speedily find a way to enter the post and slaughter the inmates. Seeing that the trader meant business and did not intend to give up the post without a fierce fight, the chief finally called off his braves, and made no further attempt to take possession of it.

The old savage was always known to place high esteem upon personal bravery, and he was convinced that Jewett was no coward. The next day Oge-maw-ke-ke-to visited the post alone, was admitted and given a hearty meal which was always appreciated by the Indian. His visit was soon after repeated and a similar reception given him. On the third day he came again, and was given a bowl of his favorite soup. After his appetite had been appeased and he had enjoyed a smoke with tobacco which the trader had furnished him, the old chief for the first time spoke, addressing Jewett: "My pale face friend," he said, "I did wrong in seeking your life, but now it is all over and you and I are friends forever." And the red man was true to his word, and proved his sincerity by acts of kindness to his white friend.

On October 22, 1831, Mr. Jewett was married to Miss Azubah L. Miller, a sister of Albert Miller who, in after years, was one of the prominent citizens of Saginaw and Bay City. She was born at Hartland, Vermont, of parents who belonged to an old Puritan family of that State. In the spring of 1831, having resigned her position as school teacher in her native town, she came with her mother to Michigan, and settled at Grand Blanc. Her wedding trip from that place to Saginaw took one week, the first part of the journey to the grand traverse of the Flint being by wagon, and the remainder by canoe fashioned from the trunk of a huge tree. In those days the Flint River was choked in several places with driftwood, and at times it was necessary to call in the aid of Indians to get them over the portages. Mr. and Mrs. Jewett settled at Green Point, but a few years after they built a hotel in the town, which they kept until 1859. In an interesting account of her experiences, Mrs. Jewett gives a vivid description of pioneer life from which the following paragraph is taken:

"When I contemplate my social privileges, in the midst of a population of fifty thousand, containing hundreds of friends and acquaintances, that I can visit any day I choose — for, if they are too distant for a walk, street cars will carry me to their residences or near them, — I wonder at my contentment then with my nearest neighbor two miles and a half away, and with no means of travelling except by river, either on the ice or in a canoe; often many weeks would pass without seeing a female friend. We lived in a log



house, and nearly every stranger that visited Saginaw would come to our cabin for entertainment. There were very few conveniences for cooking; no cookstove, coal range, gasoline stove, only an open fireplace with but few cooking utensils. Men always came in groups; one or two would seldom come through the woods from Flint to Saginaw by themselves. Our life began to grow wearisome from entertaining people under disadvantages, and concluding that we could as well keep a hotel, in 1837 Mr. Jewett built one sufficiently large to accommodate the travelling public, for a number of years. When the plank road was built from Flint to Saginaw, in 1850, and steamboats came up the river, and a bridge was put across, only a small portion of the travelling community could be accommodated in the first public house that was built in the place."

For a number of years Mr. Jewett kept a ferry and owned the only boat that would carry a horse across the river. He was the first surveyor in this county, and filled other positions of honor including the office of probate judge, of which he was the second incumbent. About 1860 the family removed to a farm in Kochville Township, where he died in February, 1875. Mrs. Jewett was an energetic woman of keen intellect whose generous and kind impulses were proverbial. In the early days she extended innumerable kindnesses to those who, as young men in the wilderness, were laying foundations for the business which made many fortunes. She was the mother of four children, Mrs. N. D. Lee, Alonzo, Oscar and Wallace Jewett. The daughter was born in the log house at Green Point, in February, 1834, and excepting one born when the United States troops occupied the fort at Saginaw, was the first white girl born in Saginaw Valley. Mrs. Jewett died at Saginaw, June 8, 1889, in her eighty-fourth year.

### "Uncle Harvey Williams"

Another of the early pioneers to Saginaw Valley was "Uncle Harvey Williams", the eldest son of Alpheus Williams who emigrated from Concord, Massachusetts, to Detroit in 1815. As far as Buffalo the journey was made by wagon, but from there to the mouth of Detroit River on a schooner of forty tons burden, called the *Salem Packet*, commanded by Captain Eber Ward, Senior, the voyage requiring thirteen days. Detained by contrary winds the little vessel could not stem the current of the river, and Mr. Williams was compelled to cart his goods to Windsor and ferry over in a "dug out." In those days the rate for passage across Lake Erie was fifteen dollars, and five dollars a barrel for merchandise.

In the same year, 1815, Harvey commenced blacksmithing on the ground where the Russel House stood for many years, making steel traps, axes, and doing regular custom work for the inhabitants. His business increased rapidly, and he soon added a small furnace, using charcoal for melting the iron, and a single horse to do the blowing. He commenced casting plows and was very successful, his product soon increased to three plows a day, when the fact was published broadcast as an "evidence of the great progress Detroit is making in her manufactories." The business grew from year to year until it exceeded \$100,000 annually. He purchased, set up, and used the first stationary steam engine in the territory of Michigan; he built the first steam engine used in a saw mill in the territory, and his last work in Detroit, in his shop located on the triangular lot at Cass Street, Jefferson Avenue and Woodbridge, was the building of the twin steam engines for the steamboat *Michigan*.

Late in the fall of 1822, the military authorities at Detroit found it necessary to transport supplies overland to the troops stationed at Saginaw, and, knowing the determination and indefatigable perseverance of Uncle Harvey,

they exerted every influence to persuade him to undertake the expedition. With reluctance he consented to make the attempt, and calling to his assistance John Hamilton, of Genesee County, the arduous journey was begun. After eight days of exceeding hard labor, in which they suffered every privation of the wilderness through which no road existed, they succeeded in carrying four tons of supplies from Detroit to the little fort on the Saginaw. In making this journey they were obliged to ford the Clinton River five times, and the Thread, Flint and Cass Rivers, as well as the Pine and the Elm, once each. It was indeed fortunate for the soldiers that the trip was successful, for when the supplies arrived the garrison was nearly famished, having been on greatly reduced rations for two days.

From his own observations and from conversations with the officers of the post, he formed the opinion that at some future time the Saginaw Valley would become one of the important points in Michigan. For twelve years thereafter he thought much of this place, and in 1834 the inducements were sufficient to tempt him, with all his courage, to try living in a wilderness forty miles from the nearest habitation of white men. On arriving here his first labor was the erection of a steam saw mill at the foot of Mackinaw Street, the first steam mill operated in the Saginaw Valley. Afterward a run of stone was added to the mill for grinding corn. In 1836-37, he built for Mackie & Company, of New York, of which he had a one-fifth interest, the first steam saw mill on the east side of the river south of what is now Bristol Street, and afterward known as the Emerson mill. This was *the* mill of *its day*, and was operated by Uncle Harvey until the disastrous crash of 1837. This was a time when Saginaw became almost depopulated, but his faith in the ultimate prosperity of the valley was not shaken, though he went down in the general crash. In the following year his well known integrity of character resulted in his being employed by the State in the opening of new roads. He constructed the road from Flint to Saginaw, through Bridgeport Center, and in various enterprises for the improvement of communication to the valley, he was among the foremost advocates. Through his influence the light house at the mouth of the Saginaw was established, and for the first year was under his charge.

About 1844 Uncle Harvey and his genial wife, who was Miss Julia Tourniaid before their marriage in 1819, removed to a new home at the mouth of the Kaw-kaw-ling, which he called the "Ogah-kah-ning", on Saginaw Bay, where he resided for twenty years. He was extensively engaged in the fisheries along the shores of the bay in the months of the spring, and in the summer and fall his operations were extended down the shore of Lake Huron. During the winter his trading with the Indians was extensive, amounting to the aggregate to hundreds of thousands of dollars. So fair and upright was he in all dealings with the natives that he secured to himself the unchanging regard of all, no man ever possessing a firmer confidence of the Chippewas than he.

Those of the white settlers who sometimes shared the hospitality of his house upon the bleak shore of the bay, particularly in midwinter, when the winds from the north blow in wrath, learned to know and appreciate the warmth of his welcome at the threshold; the savory board, the profusion of which was only equalled by its neatness; the luxurious bed for tired, chilled limbs; and last, always grateful, that barrel of pure, crystal water from the bay, with its remarkably fine flavor, soft and palatable.

### The William Brothers

Among the names which will go down to posterity, of pioneers who developed the early resources of this valley, that of Williams Brothers occupies a prominent place. The father, Major Oliver Williams, a descendant of Roger Williams, was born at Roxbury, Massachusetts, May 6, 1774. He came to Detroit in 1808 and soon after established a mercantile business, purchasing his goods in Boston, carting them overland in covered wagons to Buffalo and shipping thence by water to Detroit. During the winter of 1810-11 he built, at the River Rouge, a large sloop which he named *Friends' Good Will*, and in the summer of 1812 made a voyage to Mackinaw. There his vessel was chartered by the government to take military supplies to the garrison at Chicago, then a small military and trading post, and to bring back a cargo of furs and peltry. Upon his return to Mackinaw he was decoyed into the harbor by the British, who had captured the fort during his absence, by their flying the American flag, and he and the crew made prisoners of war. The vessel and cargo were taken possession of for the benefit of the British government, the name of the vessel changed to *Little Belt*, and it formed a part of the squadron captured the following year by Commodore Perry at the battle of Lake Erie. Mr. Williams was paroled, sent to Detroit under charge of British officers; was there at the surrender of the fortress and town by General William Hull, and, with other citizens, he was marched through the province to Kingston, as a prisoner of war. In due time he was exchanged, and made his way to rejoin his family at Concord, Massachusetts.

In the fall of 1815 Mr. Williams removed with his family to Detroit, and found his business and personal property scattered to the winds. The town then contained from five to six hundred white inhabitants, and was overrun with eastern people, so he opened a hotel in his homestead at the corner of Jefferson Avenue and Bates Street, and gave it the name of Yankee Hotel, with the sign of a golden pumpkin. Three years later he disposed of all his property and purchased a half section of land about thirty miles northwest from Detroit, in the heart of the wilderness of Oakland County, at a place now known as Waterford. The land was beautifully situated in the vicinity of a large body of crystal water, which he afterward named Silver Lake. In a little clearing he built a comfortable house of hewed logs carefully laid up, fifty feet long and twenty feet wide, one and a half stories high, with a shake roof. Here the family commenced to make a farm among the Indians, mosquitoes, snakes, wild game, and fever and ague. He used to say, when asked if they had the ague, "Yes, we have a little about thirteen months in the year."

The first years of pioneer life in the wilderness were full of dangers and hardships, and they suffered much from sickness, privations, and lack of comforts to which they had been accustomed in their eastern home. The Indians, however, were very friendly and kind during their sickness, bringing them wild game and berries of the choicest kind. So remote were they from civilization that six months would sometimes pass without the mother and daughters seeing the face of a white woman. In this wild life of the Michigan forests the sons, Gardner D. and Ephraim S. Williams, were reared, and where they attained to man's estate. Oliver Williams died on the farm at Silver Lake, October 11, 1834, in his sixty-first year. Mrs. Mary Williams, the mother, was a native of Concord, Massachusetts, born January 11, 1777, and died in Pontiac, April 1, 1860, at the advanced age of eighty-three. She was survived by seven children (of a family of fourteen), forty-two grandchildren, and sixteen great grandchildren.



**GARDNER D. WILLIAMS**

Born at Concord, Mass., Sept. 7, 1804. He arrived with others of his father's family, (Oliver Williams) at Detroit, Nov. 5, 1815. In the spring of 1828, Gardner D. came to Saginaw City, and with his brother Ephraim S. established a fur trade under American Fur Co. In 1829 he married Eliza Beach. Mr. Williams died Dec. 10, 1858. He was first Mayor of Saginaw City, 1857-1858.



**EPHRAIM S. WILLIAMS**

Son of Oliver Williams, and brother of Gardner D. Williams came to Saginaw early in 1828, to take charge of a trading post of the American Fur Co. In a few years the Williams Brothers purchased the rights of the American Fur Co. and the interests of the Campau Brothers, and became the great fur traders of Northern Michigan. He was the first Postmaster of Saginaw City, in 1834 to 1840.

In 1828 a Frenchman, named Reaume, an old Indian trader, was "factor" of the American Fur Company at the post in Saginaw. Between him and the Campaus there had existed personal difficulties of long standing, which had become an inveterate feud, creating unprofitable divisions among the Indians amounting with them to fierce partisan hatred. The current of savage animosity finally turned against Reaume, and, his personal safety becoming endangered, the trading post was kept closed too much of the time to be profitable to the company. To add to their difficulties, Dequindre, an active young Frenchman, who was sub-agent at the branch post at the forks of the Tittabawassee, had been driven away by a vicious Indian, named Wah-be-man-ito, or the "White Devil", and barely escaped with his life. Taking to the woods he became lost in the labyrinth of forest, roaming about for several days with scanty supply of food, but at length reached the settlement with frozen feet. Judge Abbott, the company superintendent at Detroit, thereupon displaced the Frenchman, and appointed the Williams Brothers their successors on the Saginaw and its tributary.

Gardner D. Williams, in assuming the duties of factor for the fur company, arrived in Saginaw in the spring of 1828, and thereafter made this place his home. With consummate tact and skill he proceeded to place the business on a firm basis, in order to recover the valuable trade which, since the abandonment of the post on the Tittabawassee, had been left wholly to the Campaus, who also had a small post there. He was born September 9, 1804, at Concord, Massachusetts, where his boyhood was spent and his early instruction received in the district school. Coming to the western wilderness with his parents, at the age of eleven years, he was reared among the friendly Indians, and trained to endure without flinching the hardships and privations of rough, frontier life. As he grew to manhood he learned to speak with ease and fluency the dialects of the various tribes in this section; and understood perfectly the Indian character. Owing to his dignity, his strength of will, and his taciturn, self-collected manner, his power over them was absolute; and in all his dealings he was honorable, just and liberal, traits of character which even the untutored savages quickly recognized and understood. Among all classes of inhabitants he exercised a wide influence through his kindly nature and the extent of his business in the valley.

In the fall of 1828 he was joined by his elder brother, Ephraim S. Williams, who was born in the homestead at Concord, Massachusetts, February 7, 1802, and came to Michigan with the family in 1815. In early manhood he acquired an intimate knowledge of the Chippewa dialects, which he spoke with ready fluency, and had much influence with the Indians. He was a frontiersman of splendid physical proportions, being tall and erect, and with a commanding presence; and his mind was well stored with practical and useful information as a result of his observations and experience.

Upon arriving at the trading post within the stockade of the old fort, one of his first duties was to reopen and restock the branch post on the Tittabawassee, and he chose for his assistants Jacob Graveradt and the two younger Roys. Although prudent friends endeavored to dissuade him from embarking in an enterprise so fraught with danger, even though the company's interests required the venture, he soon after set out with his assistants and re-established the post without serious interference of the savages. Only a short time elapsed, however, before the old warrior, Wah-be-man-ito, resumed his attitude of hostility, and only by the exercise of his native intrepidity and resolute spirit did the trader subdue the fiery temper of the Indian, and win his friendship.

One day, while on his way with his outfit to the trapping ground, somewhat loaded with "fire water", Wah-be-man-ito stopped at the door of the little trading post in the depth of the forest, and in an insolent and defiant manner, which only a half-drunken Indian can assume, he demanded, "Mish-sha-way," (William's name, meaning Big Elk), "give me whiskey." It was refused. He placed his hand upon the handle of his tomahawk, and repeated the demand more fiercely than at first, and was met by another refusal as defiant as the demand. The infuriated savage then sprang at Williams with his tomahawk uplifted and aimed a blow at his head, which had it not been dexterously avoided would doubtless have been fatal. With a well-seasoned hickory club the trader defended himself, knocking his savage assailant to the ground. He was about to continue the punishment when the discomfited red skin begged for mercy. Upon getting to his feet and recovering somewhat from the effects of the stunning blow, he walked out of the trading house and sat down in front of it, apparently in deep thought. He soon called to the determined and resolute trader and very humbly expressed great sorrow and mortification over the outrage he had attempted; and to attest his sincerity, he promised that he would bring his next furs to his new friend Williams. This promise he kept faithfully, and became the fast friend of the man at whom he had aimed a deadly blow.

The Williams Brothers soon after took over the business of the American Fur Company, which was growing to large proportions, and the following year purchased the trading post of the Campaus, the elder, Louis Campau, having gone to the Grand River in 1826. These moves quieted the dangerous spirit of rivalry that had already culminated in some serious affrays between the Indians and those who had become parties to the feud, and peace once more prevailed in the valley. Thus the brothers controlled the fur business of a large portion of Michigan; and about 1830 and for several years thereafter occupied the red warehouse at the foot of Mackinaw Street.

Personally, Gardner D. Williams, like others of the family, was generous and hospitable, as many of the old residents, who have sat at his table and refreshed themselves after a long journey through the woods or by the river, have testified. As a husband and father he was kind and considerate, a thoughtfulness which he extended to relations and kindred who sought his aid. His influence in the community was considerable, and was exercised with judgment as consistent with his views of justice and right.

During his useful life he held many public offices, both under the federal and State governments, in all of which, as well as those of a local character, he acquitted himself with honor. At different times he held the office of Indian farmer and interpreter, for the duties of which he was well fitted. He was a commissioner of the first board of internal improvements, appointed March 21, 1837; was county judge of Saginaw County for several years, was elected senator from the Sixth district, in November, 1844; and received the office of circuit court commissioner of this county during the same year. In 1840 he was appointed to the office of postmaster which he held for many years. Mr. Williams died at his residence in Saginaw City, December 11, 1858, in his fifty-fifth year. Mrs. Elizabeth Beach Williams, widow of G. D. Williams, died September 27, 1862.

Ephraim S. Williams, who also occupied a conspicuous place in the business and social history of the Saginaw Valley for a number of years, was closely associated with his brother in all trading operations, and lent his aid in developing the resources of the country. In addition to the extensive fur trade conducted by the brothers for about twelve years, lumbering in the virgin forests contiguous to the Saginaw occupied much of their atten-

tion, and they were the pioneers of that industry in this valley. In 1834 they caused to be erected the first saw mill on the river, their cousin, "Uncle Harvey Williams", installing the machinery and putting it in running order. For several years this mill was of more than sufficient capacity to supply all local needs in building material, and some of the lumber cut here was shipped in sailing vessels to the market in Chicago.

Mr. Williams, like his brothers, was a life-long Democrat of the Jacksonian school; and in 1834 was appointed the first postmaster of Saginaw City. This office he held until 1840 when, upon removing with his family to Flint, in Genesee County, he resigned the office to which the brother, Gardner D., was then appointed. He was also prominent in Masonic affairs, being a Knight Templar. Socially, he was peculiarly affable, with fine conversational powers; and his knowledge of Michigan history was often said to be encyclopedic in volume and accuracy. For many years he was an active member of the Michigan Pioneer Society, to whose archives he contributed some of the most valuable historical papers.

On March 13, 1825, he was married at Auburn, Oakland County, to Miss Hannah M. Gotee, who was born at Aurelius, New York, June 5, 1809. She came to Michigan from Buffalo on the first trip of the steamer *Superior* in May, 1822. After rearing a family of six children, three sons and three daughters, she died in Flint, on February 12, 1874. Mr. E. S. Williams, after leading a life of high integrity and usefulness in his home town, died in Flint, on July 20, 1890, in his eighty-ninth year.

Among the agents employed by the Williams Brothers, who at different times lived at Saginaw or the immediate vicinity, was Sherman Stevens. To a recognized ability he united a rare vein of romance and sentiment which made him a genial companion and a real acquisition to the social set. He was a master of the Chippewa dialects and spoke the language fluently.

Another trusted agent, who was identified with the history of the valley before the treaty of 1819, was Archie Lyons. He was a fine penman, well educated, and was a musician of skill, playing the violin very effectively. He lived at the Little Forks of the Tittabawassee, now known as Midland, and in skating down on the ice one winter's day, for the purpose of playing for a dancing party, he was drowned. His tracks were found upon the ice next day, to the edge of a hole into which he had plunged. His widow, a bright and agreeable woman of French and Indian extraction, who formerly had an almost unpronounceable name of Ka-ze-zhe-ah-be-no-qua, afterward married Antoine Peltier, of Pine-ne-con-ning, again freeing herself from a remarkable Indian name.

Me-je-au, an Indian of quarter blood, was one of the successful traders employed by the Williams Brothers, and, although he could neither read nor write, he was an accurate clerk in keeping the simple accounts of the time. Thousands of dollars passed through his hands yearly without loss. His system was very simple. A straight mark symbolized one dollar; one O a muskrat skin or a quarter of a dollar; two O's a half dollar. Instead of the name of the Indian with whom he traded being put down, his totem was drawn, sometimes in fantastic fashion, at the top of the page which recorded the transactions. The totem of Oge-maw-ke-ke-to was a long fish, like a spotted pickerel, which he made with some skill; another's was a beaver, other's were a bear, deer, elk, moose, and various kinds of birds.

### The Fearless Neh-way-go

In the history of the Chippewas it would be difficult to find a character so magnificently stoic, or so rashly courageous, as that of Neh-way-go, the young brave whose name was immortalized by Ephraim S. Williams. He

was described as a model of native strength and grace; and in early life made his camp at Green Point. About 1829, while engaged in an altercation, he killed the son of Red Bird who lived on the Tittabawassee reservation, and the relatives demanding a forfeit of his life, he went to the mourner's wigwam, where the warriors of the family had assembled, for them to strike at his heart. He bared his bosom, and took a position for the selected number to pass by him and inflict the knife thrusts. Having imposed, as they hoped, the mortal wounds, Indian custom, according to their laws, was satisfied, and he was allowed to depart. While making his way as fast as he could, with his streaming wounds, to his own wigwam, he was struck in the back by a cowardly Indian, receiving a severe stab, but, like the others, not fatal. He was yet able to reach his wigwam, some distance off, where his young squaw was waiting scarcely expecting to see him alive. She dressed and bound up his wounds and, after frightful suffering, he was partially restored to strength. Soon after this incident he moved his camp to the mouth of Kaw-kaw-ling.

On one occasion, when he had come up the river with his squaw to trade with the Williams Brothers, some unfriendly Indians sent word to O-saw-wah-bon's band, then camping at Green Point, that he was at the trading post. The Williams were well aware that if they and Neh-way-go met there would be a dreadful tragedy. They therefore placed a watch for any Indians coming from that direction. It was not long before O-saw-wah-bon and two braves were seen approaching. While Neh-way-go was still standing by his canoe, leaning on his paddle for support, he was told to get into his canoe and make away. This he indignantly refused to do, saying he was no coward, but would await the expected attack. O-saw-wah-bon had meanwhile been met by E. S. Williams, and told that he must go inside the post, as he wanted to see him. When he was inside, the door was closed and barred, and he was told that they knew his business, and that he must now give up his knives.

After some parley the wily old chief reluctantly drew a long knife from its sheath and handed it to Williams, who immediately demanded his other knives. He then pulled out another which he had concealed in his back. When they asked him if he had any more, he said "No." E. S. Williams then said they would have to search him, which he refused to submit to. Although O-saw-wah-bon was a very powerful savage, Williams clinched him, and with the assistance of his brother, Benjamin, and some others, they threw him on the floor. Holding him fast, Williams commenced the search, and inside one of his leggings found a still larger knife, a very formidable weapon, and almost as keen as a razor. As it was being drawn out very carefully the Indian caught it by the blade and refused to give it up; and before they could wrench it from his grasp it had nearly severed his hand. They then let him up and dressed his wound.

While this was transpiring others slipped out the back door, found Neh-way-go still standing on the shore leaning on his paddle, while his squaw was sitting in the canoe crying. Taking him up by main force they put him into the canoe, shoved it off from the shore, and ordered the woman to paddle him home, and not to come back. Returning to his home on the Kaw-kaw-ling he soon after fully recovered from his old wounds.

Some time afterward finding upon his hunting grounds the cowardly Indian who had inflicted upon him the wound in the back, he visited him summarily with savage vengeance, death. On Indian payment day, when the braves were assembled in large numbers at Saginaw, an altercation ensued between Black Beaver, an Indian of considerable note with the



various tribes, and the fiery Neh-way-go. The former reproached him with the outrage upon the Indian who had struck him in the back, whereupon Neh-way-go defended his act as brave and just; the reproof was repeated, and upon the instant he slew Black Beaver.

This tragedy took place in the camp of Black Beaver and his band, which was near where the old "middle bridge" crossed the river (now Bristol Street), and near the old Emerson mill, in the vicinity of the present City Building. On the west side of the river, in the open plains, near where the residence of Clark Ring now stands, Neh-way-go and his band were encamped.

After his bloody deed Neh-way-go crossed to the west side of the river among his own tribe. A warrant was at once issued by Colonel Stanard for his arrest, acting as justice. Upon hearing of this action Neh-way-go fled to the east side, and, accompanied by a trusted friend, secreted himself in the dense woods which stood upon a part of the business section of the East Side. He preferred to trust himself to the fury of the tribe whose leading warrior had been struck down by his hand, rather than to endure the mortification of arrest and punishment by the white man's laws. At nightfall he sent to his white friends, Antoine Campau and Ephraim S. Williams, asking them to come to the woods in which he was hiding, when by giving a signal he would come to them. This they did and he soon appeared. He said he had sent for them for advice; that the white man's punishment was only fit for cowards; death by the hands of his own race was glorious in comparison, if any relative of his last victim should choose to make it cause for vengeance.

They advised him to cross back to his own camp, present himself to his people, and let the affair take the course warranted by Indian usage. The arrest by the officer was waived, and the undaunted brave appeared at his own camp openly.

The hour for the burial of Black Beaver arrived; and a great number of Indians, from two to three thousand, the old narrative relates, assembled as mourners and spectators. The place of burial was just below the old Campau trading post on the brow of the hill, very near the present residence of Benton Hanchett, and almost within the encampment of Neh-way-go and his band. The body of the slain Indian had been placed in a rude coffin; and the relatives with their faces streaked with black paint had gathered around it. The few white settlers then in the valley were there as spectators, as the fearful outrage so near their own doors had absorbed and engrossed the attention of all.

While the solemn Indian rite was in progress over the remains of their favorite warrior, Neh-way-go was seen approaching from his camping ground. He was dressed in full and careful costume, tomahawk and knife in his girdle, and a small canteen of whiskey at his side, his whole appearance imposing and gallant. He made his way with a lofty and majestic step to the center of the mourning group, even to the side of the rude casket. With perfect composure he placed upon it his tomahawk and knife, filled his calumet with kin-a-kan-ick, lighted it, and after taking a few whiffs himself, he passed it to the chief mourner. It was disdainfully refused. He passed it to the next, and the next, with the same result. He then passed his canteen of whiskey with the same formality, and received a like refusal. Each and all declined to partake.

He then unloosed the collar of his hunting shirt, and bared his bosom, seating himself with calm dignity upon the foot of the coffin. Turning his face full upon the chief mourners, he addressed them:

"You refuse my pipe of peace. You refuse to drink with me. Strike not in the back. Strike not and miss. The man that does, dies when I meet him on our hunting ground."

Not a hand was raised. Upon the dark and stoical faces of that throng of enemies by whom he was surrounded, no feeling found expression except that of awe; no muscle moved.

He rose from his seat on the foot of the rude coffin, and, towering to his full height, exclaimed in thundering tones: "Cowards! Cowards! Cowards!"

As composedly as he had taken them out, he restored, unmolested, the tomahawk and knife to his girdle, and, with his canteen at his side, he walked away from the strange scene as lordly as he came. He had awed his enemies, and evidently was master of the situation. Away from the scene of his feuds and fearful exploits, he soon after fell upon the hunting ground, in a personal encounter with a relative of one of his victims. They sat down and drank together, talked over old times, and then, to see which was the better man, drew their knives and struck each other to the death; both fell.

Thus ended the brave Neh-way-go, a forest hero, as fearless as Rob Roy, as chivalrous as Rhoderick Dhu, and worthy the pen of a Sir Walter, a J. Fenimore, or the epic verse of Whittier or Longfellow.



ON THE CASS RIVER, NEAR ITS MOUTH

## CHAPTER VII

# ORGANIZATION OF THE COUNTY

---

Some Features of the Olden Time—To Whom Honor is Due—Elijah N. Davenport—Albert Miller—James Fraser—Organization of the Township—Organization of Saginaw County—Proclamation and Legislative Act—Locating the Seat of Justice—Building the First Court House—The First County Bond—The First Criminal Trial—The First Probate Case—Official Proceedings.

FROM the earliest period of colonization pioneering has been the chief occupation of the American people; and the experiences and actualities of pioneer life proved a liberal education without parallel to anything the present affords. The pioneer was a man with a purpose. It may have been the love of adventure, to better his condition, to make a new home, or to achieve an ideal; or an aversion to social shams may have impelled him to seek the more agreeable environment of a new country. For two centuries settlements moved slowly westward. Land was the attraction, as from it all sustenance and wealth is derived. The soil must produce before a people can contrive to live.

Glance at some of the features of the olden times, eighty or ninety years ago, when men had time to live and die in their own homes. The epoch of haste had not come; the saddle was the emblem of speed; the canvas-covered wagon was the ark of progress, and the turnpike was the leading artery of trade. The stage coach was a swift inland means of travel, and a day's journey was a short distance. From east to west was the pilgrimage of a lifetime; from north to south was a voyage of discovery. Before the steam saw mill had begun to devour the forests, no one ever dreamed that the screech of the locomotive would disturb the solitude of the wilderness. When the land was lighted with tallow candles after nightfall, domestic or household industries were the rule, and the spinning wheel hummed the tune of prosperity in every thrifty farmer's home. No house had a sewing machine, but nearly all were full of children. Brain and brawn were united in the same person, the toiler was the thinker; and the man who owned a half-section of land was the foremost citizen.

Young persons of the present day can form no adequate idea of the self-sacrificing life of the pioneers, nor realize the hardships and privations which their grandparents suffered in laying the foundation of our prosperity. Everything is changed. Ox yokes and ox "gads", axes, axe-helves, beetles and wedges for rail splitting, hand spikes for log rolling, harrows made from crotches of trees, sap-troughs and neck-yokes have long since disappeared as implements of husbandry in Saginaw County. Log houses with shake roofing and split flooring, a vast improvement on the bark wigwams of the native Indians, are of the past. There is more civilization, and with it, bolts and bars, locks and keys, vices and crimes, than when the buckskin string, tied to the wooden latch on the inside and passing through a hole in the door to the outside, was pulled to gain admission to houses and their hospitality. There was less schooling, but no lack of education in the practical object lessons of nature and life, during the pioneer period. For those who do right, life is better worth living now than then; while for those whose bent is evil the opportunities for wrong are greater now.

Of the agonies of the past are born the blessings of the present, and from the difficulties of the present spring the hopes of the future.

### To Whom Honor Is Due

It was great to have been a pioneer. The name itself is the synonym of western progress; and we have reason to be proud of our inheritance. The early settlers, who laid the foundations of civilization in this wilderness, except a very few whose silver hairs and feeble footsteps remind us of passing years, have passed from the scenes of their activities. Among those who were here in the early 30's, aside from those previously mentioned, were David Stanard and Charles McClean, who came in the winter of 1828. The former settled on the old Court farm, and owned a run of stone for grinding corn, which was operated by horse power. McClean settled on a tract of forty acres adjoining the Bacon farm, and was the first man to sow wheat in the county.

In 1829 Lauren Riggs and John Brown, natives of Avon, Livingston County, New York, came to the valley and settled on land one mile above Green Point, on the banks of the Tittabawassee. A son of the former, named John Riggs, was born in November, 1829, and was said to have been the first white boy born in Saginaw County. The father owned the first two horse lumber wagon ever brought here, and conducted a trading post at Green Point. Stephen Benson came at about this time and located on the banks of the Saginaw, opposite from the Bacon farm. Edward McCarty and son Thomas arrived in August, 1830, and settled on the Tittabawassee, several miles from its mouth.

Another of the prominent settlers was Grosvenor Vinton, who came from Avon, New York, early in 1830, and settled on land in recent years owned by Benjamin McCausland. The first summer he worked for Riggs & Stanard, going on to his own land in the fall, where he continued to live until December, 1834. At different times during these years he made trips to Pontiac to mill, that being the nearest point, by ox team, the journey taking nine days. In the winter of 1831 the territorial legislature organized the Township of Saginaw, and at the first meeting in April there were fifteen voters, of which Vinton was one. He was married August 25, 1831, to Miss Harriet Whitney, sister of Abram and Asa L. Whitney; and were the first white couple married in this county. Their first child, Sarah Vinton, afterward Mrs. Samuel Dickinson, was born May 9, 1833.

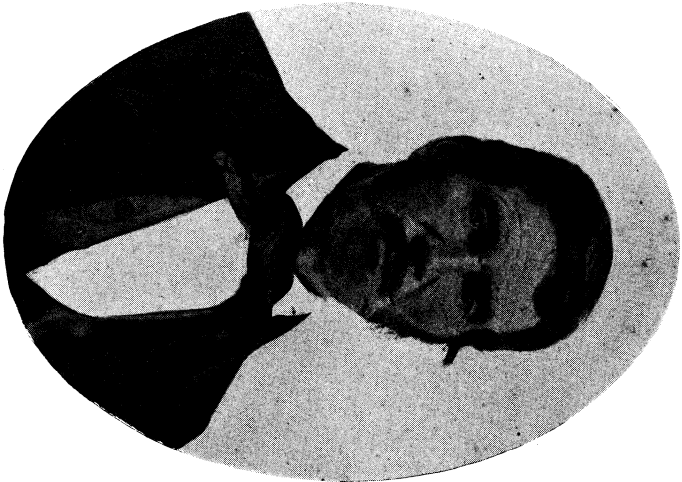
Thomas Simpson, better known as "Elixir Boga", who was a witness to the totems of the Indian chiefs in the treaty of Saginaw, was a conspicuous figure among the early settlers. He came to this territory at an early day and settled at Pontiac, where in 1830 he commenced the publication of the Oakland Chronicle, the first newspaper in Michigan, north of Detroit. After a precarious existence in the struggling settlement it was discontinued, probably from want of sufficient patronage. About 1832 he came to Saginaw and took up his quarters in a small log house within the old fort. He was a man of talent, though addicted to the excessive use of whiskey, and when under its influence his belligerent propensities were greatly increased. The peculiar soubriquet was given him on account of a phrase used by him when threatening an assault: "I will give him the Elixir Boga."

He was intensely Democratic in his politics, and during an election at Lower Saginaw, in 1836, while acting as clerk, his morning's libations having taken effect, he struck George W. Bullock, one of the Whig delegation, a stunning blow in the face. Bullock was a quiet man, and considering where the blow came from, passed quickly out of reach. He had apparently given no offence, but his assailant probably thought he was preparing to



**"JUDGE" ELIJAH N. DAVENPORT**

Who floated down the Flint River with his family in two flat boats in 1834. He was Sheriff from 1836 to 1840.



**CAPTAIN JOSEPH W. MALDEN**

Who kept a log tavern in Saginaw from 1835 to 1838. Afterwards was lighthouse keeper at Island of Mackinac.

say something of a partisan nature. A severe wind and snow storm prevailed that day, and, although the polls were kept open the time required by law, only five votes, two Whig and three Democratic, were cast. After supper at the Globe Hotel, which had recently been opened as a public house by S. S. Campbell, the parties started on the return trip. The only house on the way was one built of logs at Carrollton, then occupied by Joseph Holtslander and family, where the whole party stopped to warm before a rousing fire in a clay fire-place with a mud and stick chimney. Everyone was in good spirits and jokes freely passed. Another pull brought them to their homes about midnight. The next day finished the election, between one and two hundred votes being cast in Saginaw, of townsmen and farmers, the Democrats being fairly beaten, no one on that ticket being elected except Elijah N. Davenport for sheriff. In 1847 Simpson kept the lighthouse at the mouth of the river. He died in Saginaw a few years later, leaving one son, John Simpson, who lived here a long time after.

### Elijah N. Davenport

E. N. Davenport, who for many years bore the title of "Judge", in this county, came to Michigan in 1831 and settled on an eighth-section at Grand Blanc, in Genesee County. Later he went to the crossing of the Flint, on the site of the present City of Flint, purchased two hundred acres of land on the east side of the river, and built a small log house near Hamilton's saw mill. Soon after he left this place and returned to his farm at Grand Blanc. In 1834 he removed his family to Saginaw. Packing his household effects and stock into two flat boats, he and his family floated down the river, every few miles finding their progress impeded by floodwood, which, owing to the narrowness of the stream, completely filled it. To pass the obstruction he was compelled to hitch his oxen, with which he was fortunately provided, to the boats and draw them over the land to where the river was clear again, and relaunch them in the river. For seven long, weary days did they pursue their way before reaching the settlement on the Saginaw, each day being fraught with difficulties that required no ordinary degree of perseverance and hardihood to surmount.

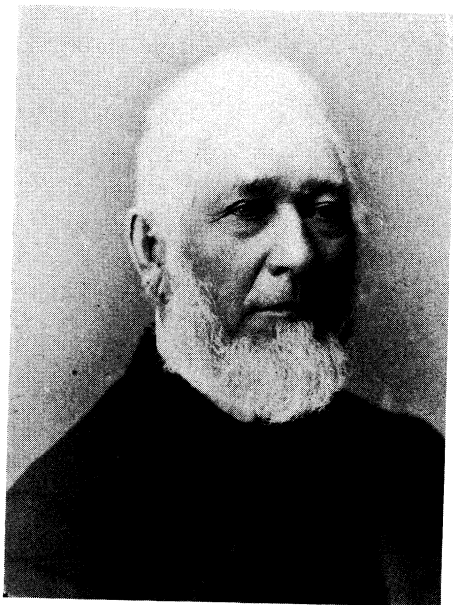
Soon after landing here he commenced keeping tavern in an old block house, which stood on what is now the northeast corner of Court and Hamilton Streets, at present occupied by the Bauer Block. It was a long, roughly built structure, formerly used by the soldiers in 1822, while they were building the fort, and afterward for the officer's mess. The only sleeping apartment was in the low attic, which was reached from below by a steep ladder. Through the entire length of the center was a passageway between rows of beds, barely wide enough for persons to pass in going to the beds they were to occupy. If there were any women guests they had to go to bed first. Opposite this rough log house was the old stockade fort, which occupied the ground on which the Hotel Fordney now stands and a part of the block east, including a section of Hamilton Street. At that time it was quite an elevation, but with the laying out of streets to take the place of the roads and trails, it was graded down and brick blocks now cover the spot.

For four years following 1836 Mr. Davenport filled the office of sheriff, and afterward was elected county judge. He died October 10, 1863. Mrs. Davenport, who was Miss Martha Cronk, before her marriage in Niagara County, New York, in 1828, continued a resident of this city for a period of fifty-six years, or until her death on February 24, 1890. She was the mother of George Davenport, an ex-State senator, Porter Davenport, Julia Davenport, and Mrs. H. R. Hardick, Mrs. J. E. Wells, Mrs. P. S. Heisrodt, Mrs. Henry Moiles and Mrs. D. W. Gooding.

### Albert Miller

Albert Miller, an early settler of Saginaw Valley, was born at Hartland, Windsor County, Vermont, May 10, 1810, and was descended from the old Puritan stock of New England. His childhood and youth were spent in his native town, where he had the meagre advantages of a pioneer school education. Being but seven years of age when his father died, he had to make his way in the world; and in his twenty-first year he came west, arriving in Detroit, September 22, 1830. Saginaw was his destination, but at Grand Blanc he met acquaintances from his native town who persuaded him to purchase a farm in the vicinity and remain there. In May, 1831, his mother and his two sisters joined him in the new home in the wilderness. In October of the same year his younger sister was married to Eleazer Jewett, and removed to Saginaw.

On Mr. Miller's first visit to Saginaw in 1832, he formed a very favorable impression of the place. In his broad view of the wilderness lay the tranquil river, skirted by dense forests and beautiful prairies with rich, fertile soil, with the waters teeming with fish, the banks swarming with wild fowl, and the forests abounding with game. This entrancing reality exactly corresponded with the imaginary picture he had previously formed of the locality, and he decided to have a home on the banks of the Saginaw. In the fall of that year he accordingly sold his farm at Grand Blanc, and, in preparing for a new home, bought a plot of ground from the government on the east side of the river at the junction of the Shiawassee and Tittabawassee Rivers. In February, 1833, he removed the family to the new locality; and for many years he lived at different points within a short distance of the beautiful stream.



ALBERT MILLER

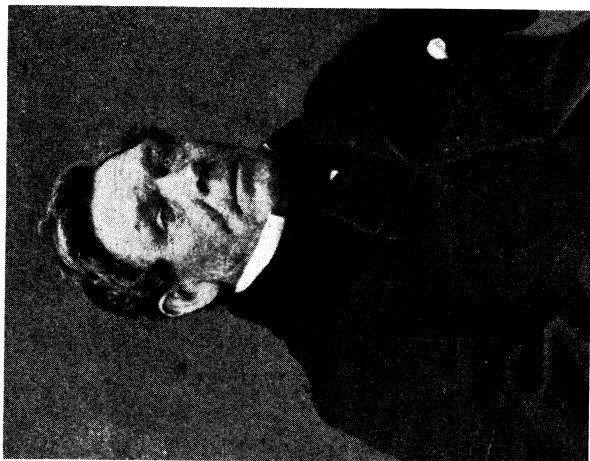
County. It was quite in contrast with the present elaborate system, if one can imagine the little dingy room, made of hewed logs with mud and moss filling the crevices, and with oiled paper covering the windows, where were gathered all the children within two or three miles around, instructed by one teacher, for a few weeks in winter.

Upon the organization of Saginaw County, in 1835, Mr. Miller was appointed Judge of Probate and a justice of the peace, which offices he held for many years. He was a member of the Legislature in 1847, and held other offices of honor and trust in township, county, and State. He was the first president of the Michigan Pioneer Society, elected February 3, 1875; and in the following years contributed a number of interesting and valuable papers to its archives.



**MRS. JAMES FRASER**

One of the noble women who bore all the hardships and privations of pioneer life in the wilderness.



**JAMES FRASER**

A pioneer of Saginaw County who settled on the Tittabawassee in 1833, and was one of its prominent residents.



Early in life he was married to Miss Mary Ann Daghish, a native of England, who, on coming with him to the wilderness, shared the hardships and compensations incident to pioneer life. She was a devoted, careful mother, a true, sincere friend, an excellent worker with the needle, and was ever courteous and kind. Upon removing to Bay City, in later life, she and her husband were among the founders of the First Presbyterian Church, and for many years were staunch supporters of its good work. Mrs. Miller died at the residence of her daughter, Mrs. C. L. Collins, at Bay City, April 23, 1904, at the age of ninety-one.

After rounding out a life of great usefulness and helpfulness to others, Mr. Miller died at his home in Bay City, September 19, 1893, in the eighty-fourth year of his life.

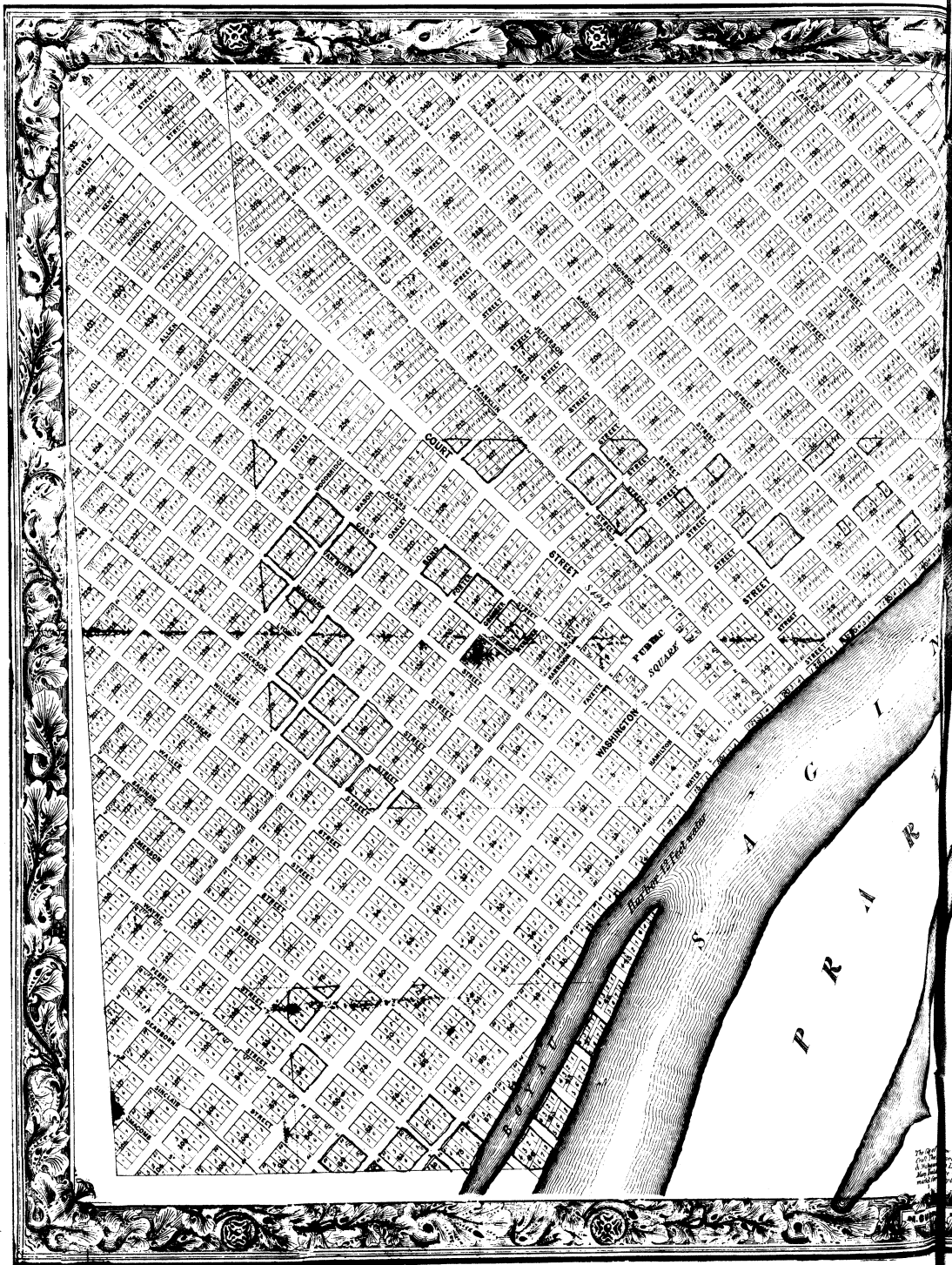
### James Fraser

In the early part of 1833 James Fraser, having purchased some land on the banks of the Tittabawassee not far from the settlement on the Saginaw, concluded to remove his family there. He had recently married Miss Busby, a native of London, England, who had come with her father's family to Detroit in 1830. Her father kept the Eagle Tavern, on Woodward Avenue just below what is now Grand Circus Park, but was then only a mud hole filled with water after a heavy shower. As the location was unhealthy and cholera raging fearfully in the town, the elder Busby was prevailed on to move to the newer country. He therefore sold out his business, and accompanied the Frasers to their forest home. In the party was Joseph Busby, one of the sturdy settlers of this county.

They drove a small herd of cattle and a few horses, and so rough was the trail through the woods that they were three days in covering the distance of seventy miles to the Flint River, camping out at night on the damp ground. At the crossing of the Flint they stopped with John Todd, who had the only house in the place, and proceeded the next day to the Cass River, where they arrived after dark. An old Frenchman, who lived on the opposite bank of the stream, took them across in his canoe and provided a hot supper, when they were glad to lie down on the rough floor in front of a good fire and sleep until morning. After breakfast they recrossed the river, found the horses and cattle browsing near by, as they had been too tired to stray far, and, swimming them across, resumed their journey.

Toward noon of the fifth day they came to the broad Saginaw, at a point opposite Green Point; and here they met Albert Miller and his brother-in-law, Eleazer Jewett, who helped them in getting their stock across the stream. Miller was then quite a young man and lived with his mother, whose kindness of heart and hospitable welcome to new comers was well remembered and highly appreciated. Having secured their cattle they proceeded on their way, and arrived at their destination before nightfall. The Busby family soon after settled on the place opposite the Fraser's, so that the families could be near each other.

The following year James Fraser went back to Detroit to purchase some stock for his farm on the Tittabawassee. While driving in from Flint to Saginaw, on his way home, the cattle became confused and would not keep to the narrow trail. He chased them about in the thick underbrush which lined the path on either side, until he was tired out, when he took off his coat and after carrying it awhile, and getting near the trail, as he supposed, he hung it on the lower branch of a tree. He then started to head off some of the cattle, and in doing so lost the location where he had left his coat, and could never find it. He used to say, in after years, that this was the greatest loss he ever had, as all the money he possessed, about



THE "CURRIER" PLAN OF  
 COURTESY OF S. B. BOYD



**M A P**  
 OF THE  
**CITY OF SAGINAW,**  
**MICHIGAN.**

Feb 1<sup>st</sup> 1837.

*Carvers Lith cor of Nassau & Spruce Sts New York.*

*Site in the heart of Michigan, at the head of Steamboat navigation on the Saginaw River, which is formed by the confluence of the Flint, Cass, Shiawassee and Tittabawassee Rivers all discharging into a rich farming Country and navigable by small boats may easily and readily be converted by a short Canal with the Grand River by which the trade of all that Country and north from the western Shore of Lake Michigan will center at Saginaw. It will open a water communication from Chicago to the sea more direct than the dangerous navigation through the northern part of Lake Michigan is there. Building materials every description Wood Brick & Stone may be procured on the spot a great advantage over most other places of the surrounding Country. All short Saginaw projectors who desire to improve their own place in the State and promote to become one of the most important Cities of the West.*

five hundred dollars, was in a pocket of that coat. There was a great hunting for the coat, but it never was found. It was supposed the wolves, which infested the country, pulled it down and tore it to pieces.

Murdock Fraser, who was born at Iverness, Scotland, in 1812, and came to Detroit with his parents, John and Elizabeth Fraser, in April, 1834, soon after set forth on horseback to explore the Saginaw Valley with the view of locating some lands. He passed the Flint River in safety and crossed Pine Run Creek, when he became lost in the wilderness. For seventy hours he traversed the forest, hungry, fatigued and anxious. He lost his horse, which made his situation more desperate, and packs of gaunt wolves threatened him, yet he pushed onward toward the north, and finally reached the primitive dwelling of a settler named Kent, located on the Cass River. After resting and repairing his torn clothes, he resumed his journey to Saginaw. Later he returned to Detroit, and in June, 1835, married Miss Isabella Goulding, a native of Edinburgh, Scotland, who was born August 17, 1817. They then made their way to Saginaw on Indian ponies, and for a time lived at James Fraser's house, on land which in after years was known as the A. B. Paine farm. Soon after they settled on a piece of land on the banks of the Tittabawassee, which had been located by Duncan McLellan, and where they lived for many years in the enjoyment of the highest reputation for cordial hospitality, which was a feature, and a pleasant one, among many trying scenes of pioneer life. Mr. Fraser died in 1876. His widow, after a residence in this county of fifty-three years, died April 30, 1889, survived by nine children.

#### Organization of the Township

These were the sturdy pioneers, together with those mentioned in a foregoing chapter, who created the township of Saginaw, and afterward were instrumental in organizing the county. Oakland County, lying to the south, was organized in 1819, and in 1824 the territorial government empowered that county to levy a sufficient tax to defray the expenses of that county. As yet the settlement on the Saginaw had not known a tax collector. In the same year, the unorganized counties of Saginaw, Lapeer, Sanilac and Shiawassee, were attached to Oakland for judicial purposes.

In 1830 an act was established organizing the township of Saginaw, embracing within its limits the entire county. This act took effect April 4, 1831, when, at a meeting of the settlers held in the block house of the old fort, Gardner D. Williams was elected to represent the township on the County Board of Oakland; Ephraim S. Williams was elected township clerk; A. W. Bacon treasurer; and David Stanard, Eleazer Jewett and Charles McClean, overseers of the three districts of Saginaw, Green Point and Tittabawasaig. Eleazer Jewett was appointed deputy surveyor of Oakland County. In the same year an act establishing a seat of justice at Saginaw City was passed, and Gardner D. Williams and David Stanard were appointed justices.

An act defining the boundaries of the county was also adopted, within which were thirty-two townships, embracing portions of Gladwin, Midland and Tuscola Counties. The modest township board administered the civic affairs of a territory larger than some of the eastern states, and accomplished its duties so efficiently that within four years the Territorial Legislative Council organized the district into a county.

#### Organization of Saginaw County

On January 28, 1835, an act was passed organizing this county, provided that the township board sit and act as a county board until such time as there should be three organized townships in the county to elect a board of

supervisors, and conferred upon said board authority to transact all business, as by law was conferred upon boards of supervisors. Embraced within the limits of Saginaw County was a territory now known as Bay County. For the first time in the history of the county did the local authorities impose a tax upon its inhabitants. No record exists of the levying of any prior tax.

The proclamation of Lewis Cass, Governor over the Territory of Michigan, and the legislative acts, organizing the county, are herewith transcribed:

"And I have thought it expedient to lay out the following county, that is to say:

"All the country included within the following boundaries: beginning on the principal meridian, where the line between the fourteenth and fifteenth townships north of the base line intersects the same, and running thence south to the line between the eight and ninth townships, north of the base line; thence east to the line between the sixth and seventh ranges east of the principal meridian; thence north to the continuation of the line between the fourteenth and fifteenth townships north of the base line; thence west to the place of beginning, shall form a county, to be called the county of *Saginaw*.

"And I hereby declare that the county herein 'laid out', to-wit: the county of *Saginaw*, shall be organized whenever, hereafter, the competent authority for the time being shall so determine, and that until then the said county shall be attached to, and compose part of the county now organized, in the following manner:

"The county of *Saginaw* shall be attached to and compose a part of the county of Oakland.

"In testimony whereof, I have caused these letters to be made patent, and the great seal of the said territory to be hereunto affixed.

"Given under my hand, at Detroit, this tenth day of September, in the year of our Lord, one thousand eight hundred and twenty-two, and of the Independence of the United States the forty-seventh.

"LEW. CASS."

By the Governor:

Secretary of Michigan Territory.

*"Be it enacted by the Legislative Council of the Territory of Michigan:*

"Section 1. That the county of Saginaw shall be organized from and after the taking effect of this act, and the inhabitants thereof entitled to all the rights and privileges to which by law the inhabitants of the other counties in this Territory are entitled.

"Section 2. That all suits, prosecutions, and other matters now pending before the courts of record of Oakland County, or before any justice of the peace of said county, shall be prosecuted to final judgment and execution; and all taxes heretofore levied and now due shall be collected in the same manner as though the said county of Saginaw had not been organized.

"Section 3. That the circuit court for the county of Saginaw shall be holden on such days as shall be provided by law.

"Section 4. That it shall be the duty of the sheriff of the county of Saginaw (until public buildings are erected in said county), to provide a convenient place, at or near the county site, for the holding of said court.

"Section 5. That the township board for the township of Saginaw shall, until there be three townships organized in said county, sit as a county board for said county, and are hereby authorized to transact all business now incumbent on the board of supervisors in the respective counties in this territory.

"Section 6. That this act shall take effect and be in force from and after the second day of February next.

"Approved January 28, 1835."

### Platting the Town

As early as September, 1822, James McCloskey, son-in-law of Gabriel Godfroy who aided in negotiating the treaty of 1819, and his associate, Captain John Farley, entered a portion of the land on which Saginaw City was builded. Other entries were made the same month by Doctor Charles Little, Jonathan Kearsley and Louis Campau; and Justin Smith entered land in 1823. The lands entered by McCloskey and Farley, comprising one hundred and thirty-six acres, were surveyed by John Mullet, the State surveyor, who platted a portion under the name of "Town of Sagana."

This town on paper comprised twenty blocks with the river lots on Water Street, extending four blocks from the river, with its southeast corner near the foot of what is now known as Clinton Street. It embraced the ground upon which Louis Campau in 1816 erected the first trading post on the river, and also the council house where the first treaty with the Indians was negotiated. James McCloskey soon after sold his undivided half-interest to A. G. Whitney, of Detroit, who later sold it to Doctor Charles Little. Only six lots of the original town plat were sold by Farley & Company, of which lot No. 77 was sold May 8, 1823, for twenty-five dollars. Near the northern limits of the town was a street named Farley Street, which years after became known as Bristol Street. When the town prospered and became well settled, some of the lots of this original plat were purchased by prominent citizens, who erected pretentious residences thereon.

The second platting of the town was made by Samuel W. Dexter, on December 3, 1830, and comprised all the land which he had entered in 1825, extending west from the river at Cass Street to Harrison, and north on that street to Jefferson (now Cleveland Street), and thence east to the river. Of the lots represented by this plat only eight were sold that year. On July 18, 1835, he disposed of all his interests to Doctor Abel Millington, of Washenaw County, excepting twenty-four lots previously sold by him, and the public square which had been located as the seat of justice. The following year, having lost faith in the prospects of the valley, the doctor transferred his property, on April 26, to a company composed of Norman Little, John T. Mackie, Samuel Oakley and William Jennison, Junior, for the sum of fifty-five thousand dollars.

Under the direction of the new proprietors, who were enterprising men with ample capital, an entirely new platting of the town was made, and named the Currier Plat. This plat was a very extensive one, and embraced lands on the east as well as the west side of the river, showing four hundred and seven blocks, and bore the date of February 1, 1837. Streets on the west side of the river were laid off and named, a comprehensive map was drawn and printed for circulation throughout the eastern States, and an elaborate plan of improvements was prepared. As a result about nine hundred persons were attracted to this place before the close of 1837. Then the crisis came, and by 1841 only three entire blocks and fifty-eight single lots had been sold; and on April 9 of that year all their property was sold to James Hunt, for a consideration of two hundred and twenty thousand dollars.

### Locating the Seat of Justice

In the selection of the village of Saginaw as the seat of justice for the county, there hangs a tale which illustrates the fact that the acts of public officials in pioneer days were not always free from the curse of personal gain. The story was told many years ago by Thomas A. Drake, a member of the Legislative Council of Oakland County, who, with an associate commissioner, named Frost, came to the Saginaw to locate a site for the county seat. Here they found Judge Dexter, and an engineer and surveyor by the name of Risdon, engaged in platting Saginaw City. Dexter approached the commissioners with his skeleton map in hand, designated one of the lots as the "court house lot", and very abruptly informed them that if they located the site for the seat of justice on that lot, he would donate it to the county, and would give to each of the commissioners one lot, perhaps two. The third commissioner was entirely satisfied with this proposition, and from that moment looked at nothing but the lots Dexter proposed to give him. Drake, however, was inclined to treat Dexter's proposition with contempt, and for a time Frost took the same view, and together they looked at other places.

Where East Saginaw was afterward located there was an uninhabitable forest, and it was said that the whole country back from the river was a morass and utterly impassable. They resolved, nevertheless, to inspect it for themselves, and, with Eleazer Jewett for a guide, they traversed the country up and down the river, and back from the stream, until they were satisfied they had found the best place for a court house. Drake and Frost fixed upon a site, drove a stake to indicate the spot selected, and took measurements from different points on the river, with such bearings as would enable anyone to find it. They agreed to meet the next morning and make their report. Drake then went to Jewett's house at Green Point to spend the night, while Frost went to the block house inside the fort, where he would find their associate commissioner.

The next morning it was learned, to the great surprise of Drake, that during the night Frost had been overcome by drink, demoralized, and influenced by the third commissioner to sign a report locating the site on the lot selected by Dexter. Through the love of whiskey by Frost, and the love of gain by the other commissioner, the county seat was located at Saginaw City, and the first court house was built on the site of the present county building.

### Building the First Court House

The first sessions of the circuit court in Saginaw County were held in the old school house, which then served as town hall, church, lecture room, and as a place for social gatherings. But after the increase in population in 1836, and public improvements had been begun, it was thought by the leading men that it was incumbent on the county officials to erect a court house that would be an ornament to the city, that it was expected would soon rise. In January, 1838, the county board consisted of Ephraim S. Williams, township clerk; Jeremiah Riggs, supervisor; and Albert Miller and Andrew Ure, justices of the peace, four public-spirited men who laid the plans for the building that served the county for nearly fifty years. In determining the plan the board was largely influenced by Judge Riggs, in adopting the plan of the court house in Livingston County, New York, in which he had sat as an associate judge. He obtained a plan of that structure, specifications were made and proposals for its construction advertised for.

At a meeting of the board held March 2, 1838, a resolution that a building for the use of county officials be constructed, was introduced; and the bids for the construction of the building were then opened. There were four in all, and the amounts ranged from eleven to twelve thousand dollars. As the lowest bid exceeded the amount appropriated, and all the bidders were present, it was decided to let the contract then and there to the lowest *viva voce* bidder. After some spirited bidding it was struck off to Asa Hill, a brother-in-law of Ephraim S. Williams, for \$9,925, reducing the amount of his written proposal nearly sixteen hundred dollars. On March 3, the contract was signed for the erection of the building, which was deemed suitable for the needs and requirements of the public and its officials for a long time to come, and a structure of which all could feel proud. Accustomed to meeting in private houses, or in small, inconvenient halls, it was natural that they should regard the plans and specifications, and not long after the building which grew out of them, with a considerable degree of satisfaction.

### The First County Bond

From the dim and dusty records of the township board it appears that the Saginaw City Bank, which had recently been organized under the general banking law, proposed to loan the county on its bond the sum of ten thousand dollars with which to build the court house. In the preceding January

the county board had convened in the township clerk's office (which was also the postoffice), on the upper floor of a two-story building on Water Street (now Niagara), north of Mackinaw, and signed a county bond in that amount, payable in ten years, with interest payable annually. It was given to the bank and the bank officials negotiated it with the Superintendent of Public Instruction, and obtained the sum of ten thousand dollars.

The contract for the building of the court house stipulated that all the money advanced should be expended in the purchase of material and in the payment for labor, and that all material purchased should become the property of the county. A building committee was appointed to see that the terms of the contract were complied with, and the collecting of the material proceeded with energy until midsummer, when Hill, the contractor, was prostrated with a malarial disease and died in the following October. As a result of this unfortunate occurrence, and the failure of the bank soon after, together with the general financial depression, all operations on the building were suspended for some time.

Meanwhile, the material collected for the building lay on the ground and likely to go to waste, so something had to be done to save it. Many discussions were held by the settlers in reference to reducing the cost of construction, and it was proposed to dispense with the columns on the east end of the building. At that time there was but one house east of the site of the court house, and it was contended by others, who opposed any change of plans, that it would be unfair to the owner of this house to deprive him of a view of the ornamental columns. At length, Eliel Barber, a reliable mechanic, was hired by the county board at two dollars a day to take charge of the material and prosecute the work, so far, at least, as to save the material from waste. He hired carpenters at one dollar and twenty-five cents a day, and laborers at a dollar a day, and went on with the building operations until the outside was finished and all the rooms on the lower floor were made ready for occupancy. A large room intended for the grand jury was used for a long time as a court room; and it was not until fifteen years after the contract had been let that the court room on the upper floor was finished. It was said that when first occupied the members of the Saginaw County bar were justly proud of the fine appearance of their court room.

Before the county bond for ten thousand dollars became due, the managers of the state finances claimed from the county the full amount with interest, but the county, having received only a portion of the money, while willing to pay that sum, refused to acknowledge any further liability on account of the bond. It was contended that the bond was only a guaranty on the part of the members of the board individually that the county would pay the bank the sum of ten thousand dollars. However it may have been, in 1842, the cashier of the bank which was still defunct, proposed to turn over a certain tract of land at five dollars an acre, to pay its indebtedness to the county, provided the amount was agreed upon and a settlement soon made. Evidently this proposal was not accepted, for on January 19, 1844, the county board adopted a preamble reciting in substance that the bank was indebted to the county in the sum of \$4,667.25; that it repudiated the claim; that by a recent decision of the Supreme Court it appeared that collection could not be enforced; and that the bond for ten thousand dollars was held by the commissioner of the State land office; and the board appointed a committee to negotiate with the commissioner on the subject of the bond. On March 4th following, this committee reported that they had agreed upon a settlement, by which the county should give a bond payable in four annual installments for \$5,257.75, and also interest to July 1, 1844, amounting to \$1,208.25, which was ratified by the county board.



It was claimed by some persons that exorbitant charges were made against the county by some of the parties who were authorized to make a settlement, for their services in effecting it. No records, however, exist to substantiate any accusation of this nature, and, judging from the usual compensation granted to public officials of that time, they were not paid more than the service warranted. It would be impossible at the present day to ascertain what the sums paid on account of the bond, and for finishing the court house, amounted to, but it was the belief of Albert Miller, who made record of the above facts, that it was not so largely in excess of the contract price, as was generally supposed.

### The First Criminal Trial

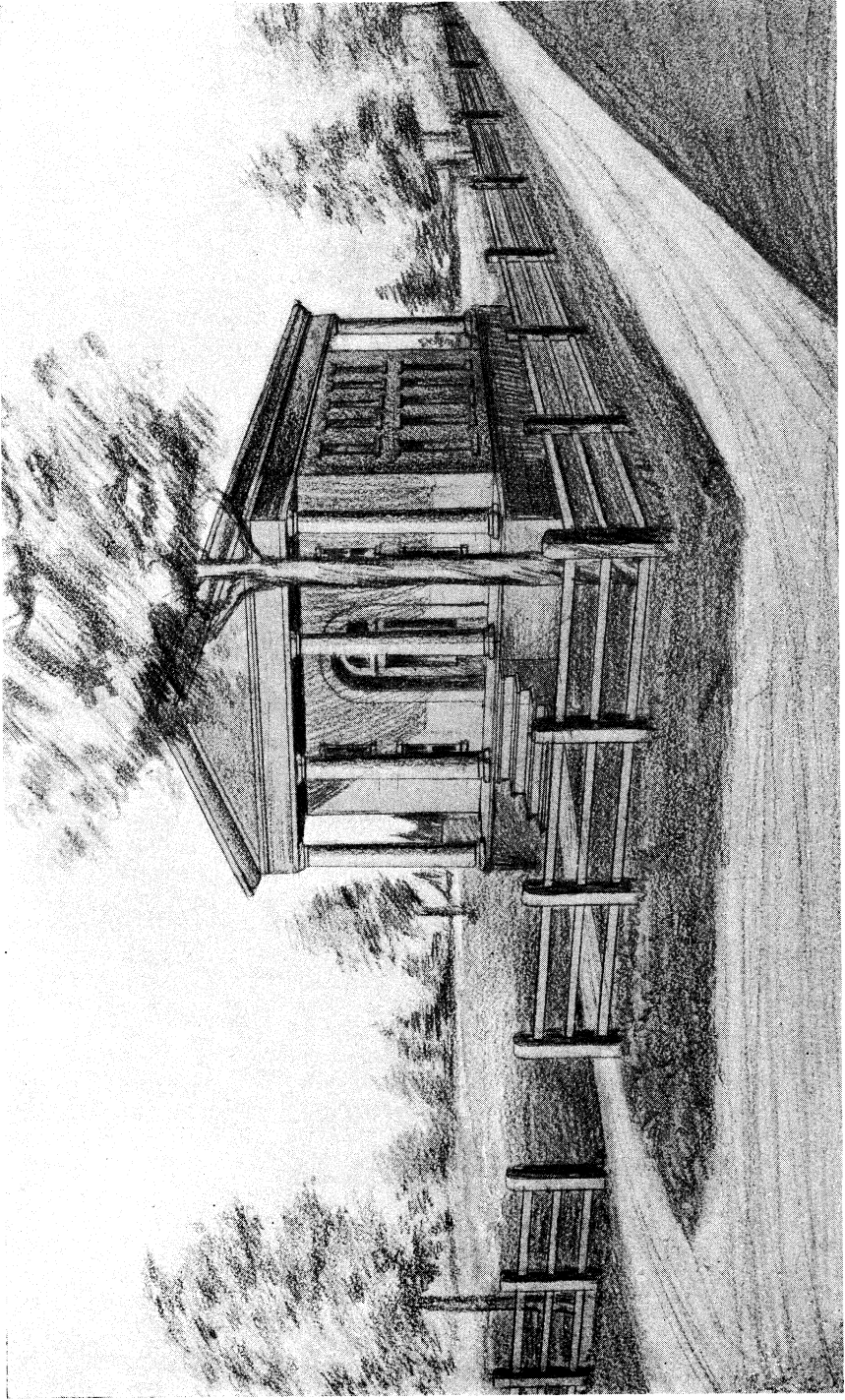
The first intimation in the records of the commission of crime in this county was in November, 1838, when the sheriff informed the board that he had a prisoner in custody and did not know how to keep him, no place having been provided for that purpose. After some discussion he was authorized to lease of A. Butts the blockhouse for one year, with the privilege of erecting two cells therein. The prisoner was probably held on some minor charge, as he was never brought to trial, so far as the records show. The first criminal trial in the circuit court was not called until nearly three years later.

In 1841 William McDonald, who traded in furs in the old red warehouse, received a cargo of goods in a vessel commanded by Captain West. The mate who had charge while in port was a young man very well connected in the State, while the sailors were Willard Bunnell, a young married man who had lived here for several years, a Frenchman named Dezalia, and a young Englishman whose name is forgotten. While unloading the cargo the sailors had free access to the cellar of the warehouse where the goods were stored, and particularly Bunnell, who was well known and trusted by the trader.

On the last day the vessel was at dock, Bunnell made a discovery in an old barrel partly filled with rubbish, of a box of silver coins that McDonald had hidden away for safe keeping. Taking his companions into his confidence, Bunnell made an errand into the cellar late in the evening, and placed the box of money on the ledge of the window, which was protected on the outside by a grating of oak stripes an inch square. Late at night when all was quiet they cut the grating, took the money on board the vessel, and proceeded to divide it by having the Englishman pass a certain number of coins to each in succession. But Bunnell and Dezalia, during the time of division, frequently put their hands into the box, to ascertain, as they said, how the money was holding out, with the result that in the final count the Englishman and the mate had but \$130 each of the \$800, the amount stolen.

The robbery was soon discovered and suspicion rested upon the parties responsible for it, but no arrests were made until the following winter, when the Englishman, having brooded over the trickery of two of his companions in crime, went before Justice Williams, at Detroit, and made oath to the facts concerning the theft. The mate of the vessel and Dezalia were soon apprehended and held for trial, but Bunnell, who was one of the first in Saginaw to hear the news of the confession, at once disappeared. He was suspected of lurking in the vicinity, and a sharp watch was kept for him.

Late one winter's night the culprit was seen in the neighborhood, the sheriff was informed, and a posse of resolute men determined on capturing him, quickly gathered at McDonald's store, and started out before daybreak. At a place on the east bank of the river near what is now the foot of Emerson Street, there was a deserted wood cutter's shanty, in which Bunnell had taken refuge for the night. Just at break of day he had kindled a fire and



THE FIRST COURT HOUSE OF SAGINAW COUNTY BUILT IN 1838-39  
[from an early print drawn by an old pioneer]

was thawing out his mocassins preparatory to putting them on, when he heard his pursuers close upon him. He eluded them for a time by quickly passing out of the door with his mocassins in his hand, and an exciting chase ensued. Being fleet of foot he would probably have escaped had not a sharp crust, which had formed on the snow, lacerated his feet so as to cripple him, and he was forced to surrender.

As there was yet no jail in the county the prisoner was taken to Jewett's tavern, where his feet were dressed and cared for by his father, Dr. Bradley Bunnell, who pronounced them in very bad condition, and kept them bandaged for some time. Henry Pratt was sheriff and acted as guard at the hotel, while waiting for his prisoner to improve so that he could be taken to the Genesee County jail at Flint. At length he was pronounced convalescent, though apparently in great pain and unable to stand. The day for his departure was set, and the evening before, after all his friends had taken leave of him, his brother and sister (Mrs. Lester) and wife were admitted to his room for a final interview. The sheriff occupied a room the door of which opened directly opposite that of Bunnell's, so that he could watch all the movements of the prisoner.

About nine o'clock Mrs. Lester passed out of the room leaning heavily on the arm of her brother, bowed and stricken with grief at parting with a brother under such painful circumstances. A short time after, Pratt called at the door to terminate the interview between the husband and wife. The door was opened and he saw the sufferer tossing his sore feet, and heard him groan. The wife begged for a longer interview which was rather reluctantly granted. At midnight Pratt, being tired of his vigils, knocked at the door which was quickly opened. Instead of groans from his footsore prisoner, he was greeted with a merry laugh by Mrs. Lester, who told him that her brother had been gone three hours, mounted on the fleetest horse in the town.

As the sequel showed, Bunnell went first to Lower Saginaw, where he secreted himself for a time, and then sought refuge in the depths of the forest, living at the Indian camps until summer, when he made his way around the lakes and across Wisconsin to La Crosse. Later he was joined by his wife, and they lived there respectably for many years.

Sheriff Pratt was greatly chagrined at the ruse which had spirited away his prisoner, and in order that the law might be vindicated, he caused the arrest and examination of Mrs. Lester on a charge of assisting a prisoner to escape. The examination, which was before three justices of the peace, as the law then provided, excited considerable interest in the community and the court room was crowded. When it was adjudged that Mrs. Lester must give bonds for her appearance for trial before the circuit court, every gentleman in the room offered to be her bondsman. The bond was made acceptable and she was discharged; but was never called upon to appear for trial, and so the matter ended.

The real culprits who had been apprehended did not, however, escape so easily. The young Englishman turned State's evidence, and after he had testified in the case there was no doubt as to the guilt of the prisoners. In giving sentence Judge Whipple spoke feelingly to the mate, but as he had had charge of the vessel, and could have prevented the theft, he said he considered him the most culpable of all, and gave him three years at hard labor. After a few month's imprisonment, however, the convicted prisoner was pardoned. Dezalia stood up and received his sentence with perfect composure, but soon after was seen weeping bitterly. Being asked if he considered the sentence too hard, he replied, "Oh, no! but the disgrace of being tried by such a hard-looking jury, is what grieves me."

### The First Probate Case

The old territorial law under which Saginaw County was organized, required that some learned person should be appointed in each county to the office of Judge of Probate. At the time, Albert Miller was teaching the first and only school in the county, and in order that the requirements of the law might be fulfilled, he was appointed to that office; for, as his friends said, "Who could be a learned person if the school teacher was not?" Ephraim S. Williams was recommended for county clerk and register of deeds; and Andrew Ure, Gardner D. Williams and Albert Miller for justices of the peace.

While balloting for justices, an old Frenchman very pertinently exclaimed: "I throw all the *pape* for justices of the peace in the fire; I don't want any in this county. I once lived on Connor's Creek, where all was peace and harmony till they got a justice of the peace in the settlement, and then they began to sue each other and quarrel, and then there was no more peace." But notwithstanding his protest justices were appointed, and he had a great deal of litigation before them.

The first business transacted in the Probate Court for this county is of more than passing interest, as it involved some very peculiar circumstances. In the summer of 1833 a young sailor, named Charles Cater, came to this valley and purchased land at the forks of the Tittabawassee; but instead of remaining to cultivate it, he returned to his occupation on the high seas. The following year Abram Cater, a brother of Charles, came and settled in the vicinity of Saginaw, and married here in 1835. Not long after he received news that his brother had been cast away and had died at sea. In due time he was appointed administrator of the estate of his brother Charles, but before the estate was fully settled Abram Cater died. Charles had lived in Ohio before proceeding on his last voyage and had left personal property there. His estate was administered in Ohio and converted into cash, which was remitted to the Judge of Probate for Saginaw County, to be paid to Abram Cater's widow, who, in the absence of any other heirs, was considered the person best entitled to it.

The manner of remitting funds in pioneer days was very cumbersome compared with the methods of today, when exchanges are so easily effected. The bills were cut in halves, one half remitted by mail, and the other half retained until notice of the safe arrival of the first half was received, when the other halves of the bills were sent. In the Cater case the letter containing the first half of the bills was mis-sent and went to Mackinaw by the winter mail, causing considerable delay, but it finally reached its destination, and in due time the other halves of the bills were received; and all was paid over to Mrs. Abram Cater, who in the meantime had taken another husband.

Soon after the payment of the money to Abram Cater's widow, a letter from the administrator of Charles Cater's estate in Ohio was received by the court, expressing some anxiety about the matter, as Charles Cater had appeared there and demanded his property. The Judge of Probate for Saginaw County could do nothing in the matter, except to forward the receipt for the money which he had paid over according to directions. Upon investigation it proved that Charles Cater's land and the estate of Abram Cater were in the part of the Township of Saginaw that remained in Oakland County, after the boundaries had been changed upon organization of the county. Charles Cater thereupon took out letters of administration in Oakland County on Abram's estate, and the tables were turned in respect to heirship, Charles Cater becoming the heir of Abram.

Official Proceedings

The history of human events in the early days of the county would not be complete without some mention of its official proceedings, the dusty records of which disclose the way in which the foundation of civil government was founded, and upon which its future super-structure — civilly and morally — was reared. A portion of the record of township and county is therefore presented:

First meeting of the board October 2, 1835, at the house of Elijah N. Davenport, in the village of Saginaw. Present, G. D. Williams, supervisor; Albert Miller, A. F. Mosely, justices of the peace; and E. S. Williams, town clerk.

Board allowed in payment of officer's fees \$71.60, included in which was the sum of fifteen dollars for attorney's services for the year 1835.

For township expenses	-	-	-	\$93.94
For building bridges	-	-	-	100.00
For collector fees	-	-	-	9.69
Total	-	-	-	————— \$203.63

1836. Amount voted to be raised for the year was \$2,400.62, which included an item for building jail, \$1,570.59.

1837. Amount voted to be raised for all purposes, \$2,279.04. At an election held the people voted to issue bonds in the sum of \$10,000 for the purpose of building a court house.

1838. Jeremiah Riggs succeeded G. D. Williams as supervisor, otherwise the board remained as at its first meeting. Board met February 20th and adopted a plan for the court house, and advertised for bids for its construction. The board allowed the sum of \$9.20 for making the census of the county, "being at the rate of one dollar for every one hundred persons." (This shows that the population of the county at this time, assuming the statement to be correct, was 920.)

At the October session of the board the following sums were voted to be raised, viz.:

For wolf bounties	-	-	-	\$28.80
For interest on court house bonds	-	-	-	700.00
For State tax	-	-	-	1,709.00
For support of poor	-	-	-	100.00
Town expenses	-	-	-	646.81
Total	-	-	-	————— \$3,184.61

November 19, 1838, Duncan McLellan, Cromwell Barney and James Fraser were elected board of county commissioners to hold office for three years.

1839. At a meeting held October 9, the board appointed three superintendents of the county poor. On October 12, the board made appropriations as follows:

To pay expenses of the February term of the Circuit Court	-	-	-	\$77.06
To pay expenses of July term	-	-	-	241.07
To pay for school expenses	-	-	-	80.64
To pay township expenses	-	-	-	512.73
Total	-	-	-	————— \$911.50

For the first time the records disclose the fact of an assessment of property, the valuation of real and personal property being then given at \$621,652.75. At this session of the board bids were solicited for making a copy of the assessment roll of the county; several bids were submitted and the job was let for \$24.50 to Timothy Howe, the lowest bidder. The bids ranged from that amount to \$35.

1840. Commissioner's meeting July 15. Board appropriated \$40 to pay year's salary of prosecuting attorney.

October 9, board made appropriations as follows :

For expenses of Town of Saginaw	-	-	-	-	\$673.64
For State tax	-	-	-	-	604.50
For county expenses	-	-	-	-	544.63
For making assessment roll	-	-	-	-	30.00
Total	-	-	-	-	<u>\$1,852.77</u>

The board rejected the assessment roll of the township of Tuscola for irregularities, doubtless to the great relief of the citizens of that township.

At this session of the board license was granted to Gardner D. Williams to operate a ferry at any point within one mile north or south of Mackinaw road, at the following rates :

Each foot passenger	-	-	-	-	12½ cents
One man and horse	-	-	-	-	25 cents
One man, wagon and horse	-	-	-	-	37½ cents
One man, wagon and two horses	-	-	-	-	50 cents
Cattle and horses, each	-	-	-	-	10 cents
Sheep and swine, each	-	-	-	-	6¼ cents

1841. July 12, the board held its first meeting for the purpose of equalizing the assessment rolls, three townships having been organized, namely, Saginaw, Tuscola and Tittabawassee.

1842. Taymouth appears as a township. On July 6, the board equalized the township assessments, as follows :

Value of real and personal property in Saginaw,	\$125,190.50
Value of real and personal property in Taymouth,	27,791.25
Value of real and personal property in Tuscola,	13,090.04
Value of real and personal property in Tittabawassee,	57,259.86
Total	<u>\$223,241.65</u>

## CHAPTER VIII

# THE RISE AND PROGRESS OF SAGINAW CITY

---

The McCormick Family — Joseph Busby — Difficulties and Privations of Pioneer Life — Benjamin Cushway — Phineas D. Braley — Hiram L. Miller — The First Steamboat on the Saginaw — Extract from Mrs. Richman's Diary — Charles H. Richman — Saginaw City in 1837 — The Northern Canal Project — The Enterprise of Norman Little — The Old Webster House — The Bubble Bursts — Anthony R. Swarthout — Horace S. Beach.

A sturdy pioneer of Saginaw Valley, who aided very materially in the development of its resources, was William R. McCormick. He was born at Bethlehem, New York, August 16, 1822, and spent his early boyhood on the homestead farm. As early as 1832 his father, James McCormick, emigrated with his family to this territory, landing in Detroit on the first of August, after a voyage across Lake Erie in the steamboat *Superior*. By the advice of John R. Williams, a former resident of Albany, New York, then living in Detroit, he decided to go to Saginaw, and soon after set out with his two elder sons to traverse the northern wilderness. At the crossing of the Flint they stopped to rest, and were so impressed with the rustic scenery of the place that the father purchased one hundred and twenty-five acres of land, a half-breed title, on the north side of the river and east of what is now Saginaw Street, comprising at present a portion of the first ward of the City of Flint, for one hundred and twenty-five dollars. They soon built a log house near where the north end of the bridge now is, and moved the family from Detroit to their new home in the forest wilderness. At that time there were but two other houses at this place, one being on the south bank of the river and west of the trail, and occupied by John Todd, while the other was the old trading post of Jacob Smith, known to the native Indians as Wah-be-sins, and located about forty rods below on the north bank of the river, then the home of Judge Stowe.

After getting his family settled, the father started out to secure provisions for the winter. There was plenty of venison to be had from the Indians, but there was no pork in that vicinity, so he and George Oliver paddled down the Flint in a canoe for the settlement on the Saginaw. After several days spent in reaching their destination, he purchased what meat was needed; and on the return trip up the river they camped on the old "Indian field," about seven miles south of the bend in the Cass, now known as Bridgeport, and about fourteen miles from Saginaw by the present road. He took a great fancy to this field, which contained about one hundred and fifty acres without a stump or a stone, and ready for the plow, where, he believed, he could raise enough crops to support his family. The Indians had abandoned the land years before, because grub-worms had destroyed their maize; and it was their belief that the Great Spirit had sent them as a curse on the land.

In the fall of 1832 Rufus W. Stevens moved with his family from Grand Blanc to Flint; and James Cronk built a log house about half way between the Flint and Thread Rivers. In the log house which had been built by Elijah N. Davenport, and later abandoned by him on his return to Grand Blanc, the first school in Genesee County was started, and was attended by William R. McCormick, his three sisters, and the children of the other settlers.

James McCormick soon sold his place at Flint to a son of Jacob Smith, the Indian trader, for six hundred dollars, thinking he had made a great speculation. Yet, so great have been the strides in the development of the country that at the present time this property collectively is probably worth a million dollars, or more, an increase in eighty-odd years from one dollar an acre to eight thousand or possibly ten thousand dollars. He then moved his family down the river to the Indian field, where they arrived at sundown of the second day, and camped for the night with only a tent made of blankets, to shelter the mother and little children. In two or three days they had put up a comfortable shanty to live in while building a log house, which they soon commenced and had finished by the time winter set in, and where they lived for many years.

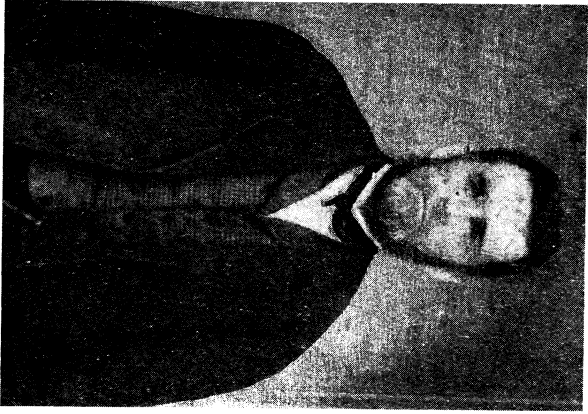
The first year's crop was excellent, and the second year they sold one thousand bushels of corn to the American Fur Company, for the Indians beyond Lake Superior. The greatest difficulty of their rough pioneer life was in getting to the grist mill on the Thread River, to have their grain converted into flour. They had to take the grain in a canoe up the river about thirty-five miles, get it drawn one and a half miles to the mill, and back to the river and thence by the river home. This trip, requiring the hardest kind of labor, usually took four days, camping out every night, and the work always fell to James J. and William R., whose feet became very sore from walking in the winter over sticks and sharp stones, in getting their heavily laden canoe over the rapids of the stream. When winter set in they could not go to the mill, as there was no road through the unbroken wilderness, so in the long evenings the boys took turns pounding corn in a home-made mortar, fashioned by hollowing out the end of a three-foot section of a log, similar to that used by the Indians for the same purpose.

There was nothing but a trail, or bush road, between Flint and Saginaw in those days, and part of the year it was impassible, and nearly always so for women, consequently most of the travel went up and down the river in canoes or skiffs, though it was a very laborious and tedious journey.

In the fall of 1837 William R. was sent by his father to Saginaw to attend school, boarding with Major Mosley who kept a sort of tavern in one of the old blockhouses inside the stockade. The school house stood near the location of the old jail, and the teacher was Horace S. Beach. He was a kind-hearted man, but very firm and determined, qualities which were necessary in the conduct of that school, as he had a hard lot of boys to manage. He was equal to every emergency, on one occasion requiring Walter Cronk and William R. McCormick to saw and split seven cords of wood, instead of administering the usual flogging as punishment for fighting. That winter Mr. Beach kindly offered to teach his pupils to sing, if they would form an evening class. This they gladly did, and six boys and six girls met regularly for singing lessons.

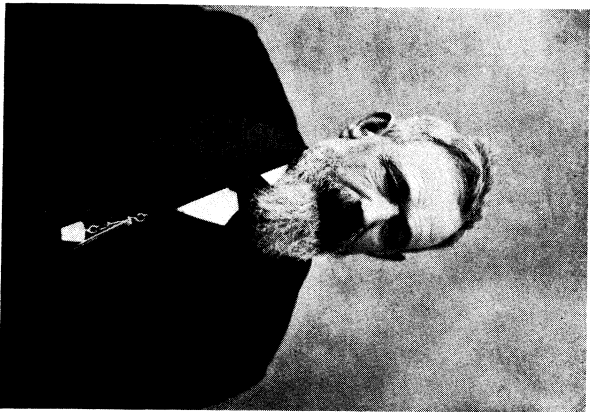
The McCormick family continued to live on the old Indian field, which they called the "Garden of Eden," until 1841, when the father and son James J. bought an interest in the old Portsmouth steam mill and removed to that place. They soon commenced the manufacture of lumber in this mill, the second built on the river, and shipped the first cargo of lumber, consisting of forty thousand feet, that ever went out of the Saginaw River. It ran sixty per cent. uppers, and was sold in Detroit to James Busby, a brother-in-law of James Fraser, for eight dollars a thousand feet, one-third down and the balance on time. Lumbering did not produce fortunes in those days, but it opened the way for those who came later to accumulate riches. James McCormick, the father of James J. and William R. McCormick, died in 1847.





**JAMES MCCORMICK**

Who settled on the old "Indian Field" on the banks of the Flint River, with the idea of planting a silk worm industry in this valley. It did not prove successful.



**WILLIAM R. MCCORMICK**

Younger son of James McCormick, who came here in 1837 and attended the first school in the county, boarding with Major Mosley in the old fort.

As years passed, William R. McCormick, who had grown to manhood, assumed the management of the ever increasing lumber business established by his father and brother, and became one of the leading progressive citizens of Bay City. He erected a commodious and pretentious home on a slight knoll near the river at Portsmouth, which for many years was a landmark of the olden times.

### Joseph Busby

In the early part of 1833 there arrived at the trading post on the Saginaw, a young man named Joseph Busby, who was born in London, England, April 26, 1812. His father was a dairyman and kept a store in London for the sale of butter, cheese, eggs and milk; but in 1830 he sold out his business, bid farewell to the friends of a lifetime, and sailed for America in a packet ship of five hundred tons burden — a large vessel in those days. From New York they travelled westward to the Michigan wilderness, by the way of the Erie Canal and lake steamboat, a journey of two weeks duration. After engaging in the hotel business in Detroit for two years, they removed to Saginaw and settled on land bordering on the Tittabawassee, opposite the present Paines farm.

At that time the only habitation nearer than Green Point, was a log house on land adjoining theirs, which was occupied by a family named Tuft, with whom they lived while putting up a house of their own. James Busby, a brother of Joseph, who was a mechanic by trade, came from Detroit, and assisted in cutting logs for the house, which was to be twenty by thirty feet in size, and hewed them on two sides. They then invited the neighbors for miles around (and it took all there were) to the raising, and they got the walls up that day. The shingles were brought from Detroit by water, and were laid on split oak ribs, and nailed fast, so they had a good tight roof. The floors were made of heavy planks cut from green pine with a saw brought from England, Albert Miller being the lower portion of the human machinery, or the "pitman," while Joseph Busby was the other half, or the "topsawyer"; and was said to have been the only saw running in the valley at that time. When the house was completed the family had a regular old-time house-warming, with music and dancing; and they felt some security, and pride, too, in the possession of a home, though a rustic one, in the depths of the wilderness.

While living at Tuft's (who was a very superstitious man), they were awakened one night by him in great alarm, and called to get up as the world was coming to an end. They at once got up and went out doors and witnessed a very beautiful sight, the meteoric shower of 1833. They watched the grand display until daylight, afterward declaring that it was a spectacle never to be forgotten.

Soon after they were settled in the new house there was a happy event in the family, the marriage of James Busby and Miss Susan Malden, eldest daughter of Joseph W. Malden. He was formerly a sea captain, but from 1835 to 1838 he kept a log tavern in Saginaw, afterward receiving the appointment of lighthouse keeper at the Island of Mackinac. The young couple were married by Judge Albert Miller, an associate at all their social gatherings, and was the third marriage ceremony performed in the county. As the judge was not very familiar with the proper ceremony for such occasions, the family produced a prayer book of the Episcopal Church, and the service was read by Mr. Miller, much to his relief. Mr. Busby and his young wife then went to Detroit where they lived for several years, but in later life returned to Saginaw City where they died, survived by Thomas W. Busby.

In 1835, when the father moved into town, Joseph Busby took the farm to run on his own account. The following spring he had some very promising crops on the low bottom lands, but the water rose and overflowed the banks thus destroying them. Waiting until the ground became dry enough to work, he replanted everything, but soon after the water rose a second time so that he could paddle with his canoe all over the ground. This discouraged him and he gave up farming, and came into the village to engage in other business.

### Difficulties and Privations of Pioneer Life

At times they were much annoyed by wolves and often kept awake at night by their howlings. Sometimes it seemed that there must be fifty or more of them, generally after they had been chasing deer. The bears also were troublesome at times, their chief depredations being the killing of hogs. One of their neighbors one night heard a great commotion among his hogs, and upon going out to ascertain the cause, saw in the moonlight a huge bear making off with a fat hog weighing about two hundred pounds. Upon being pursued, the bear dropped the hog which he had killed, and made off in the woods.

Among their other troubles was the great pest of blackbirds, which destroyed the crops, especially the corn just when it was soft and milky. They would flock in the fields by the thousands, requiring all the farmers' time and attention, until the corn got hard, to keep them off. Day after day, for several hours after sunrise and again for two hours before sunset, they had to run up and down the field firing at and hallooing at them to keep them from alighting, and by so doing would drive them over; but they would come, one flock after another. The farmers finally built stages some distance apart, and beat with a stout stick on a barrel, a tin pan, or anything to make a great noise, thus keeping the birds on the wing so they would pass over to the wild rice fields until towards evening. Another great pest was the mosquitoes, which were so thick and troublesome that the farmers had to keep fires burning around the house to keep them off by the smoke, but often it seemed that the insects could stand as much smoke as they could. They had to cover the door and windows, screen their beds, and even cover the fireplace with a sort of netting, to live in any degree of comfort.

They also suffered many privations in those days, when all supplies had to be brought from Detroit by water, and there was only one small sailing vessel available. Late in the season it would get frozen in the ice on the bay or river, and then they would have to wait until the ice would bear a team, to haul the goods to town. Meanwhile, they would be without flour, meal, and other necessities of life, but those who had food cheerfully divided with those who had none. At such times the small grist mill, which was attached to the Williams Brothers saw mill, would be run to grind the wheat, corn and buckwheat that was raised by the farmers in the vicinity. But this means of obtaining food supplies sometimes failed by breakdowns of the crude machinery, and the settlers would be without bread for days.

Although the Indian camps were very numerous along the Tittabawassee for several miles above Green Point, the pioneer settlers were seldom molested by the red men, with whom they were on friendly terms; and they often traded with them for venison, fish, cranberries, and the skins of animals they had killed. Sometimes the Indians would pitch their wigwams near the log houses of the settlers, and then they would get little sleep. The braves would hold a pow-wow and keep it up all night, with a monotonous drumming and singing, after their fashion; but beyond this annoyance they were not troublesome. At one time two big braves came

to the Busby house late at night, and asked for some whiskey, saying one of them had a little papoose at his wigwam. Although they seldom let the Indians have liquor, this seemed a special occasion so they gave them some, whereupon they seemed in no hurry to go home, but stretched themselves on the floor and slept until daylight. They then left very quietly.

On Sunday Joseph Busby usually went from the farm to town to get the mail, which came on horseback from Flint once a week. The mail carrier used to cross the river at Green Point, the only crossing at that time. On one occasion, when Mr. Busby met him at the Point, he had some errand to a settler up the river, and not wanting to carry the mail bag back and forth, he tossed it into the bushes until he should return and proceed to town. At that time, 1834, the mail was seldom heavy, as the population of the county did not exceed one hundred persons.

### Benjamin Cushway

Many of the older residents of the valley still remember one of the pioneer mechanics, Benjamin Cushway, who was appointed by General Cass, then Territorial Governor of Michigan, as United States blacksmith for the Chippewa Indians. He was born at Grosse Point, Detroit, February 7, 1810, and was a son of John B. Cushway, a native of Canada and of French parentage. During his boyhood Benjamin worked on his father's farm, his early education being obtained by attending night schools in Detroit. At the age of seventeen he began the blacksmith's trade with "Uncle Harvey Williams," who was afterward prominently identified with the lumber industry in Saginaw Valley, and continued this work for seven years.

In 1834 he received the official appointment as Indian blacksmith, and came to Saginaw, making his headquarters in a block house within the old fort. He was removed by the treaty of 1837 to Bay City, where he held the same position until 1844. While there he purchased large tracts of land and other property, and acquired a competence.

About 1848 he returned to Saginaw City and built a house on the lot where the Miller block was afterward erected, on the southeast corner of Court and Hamilton Streets. He lived there until 1866, when he purchased the Wendall farm near the city on the Mackinaw road, where he resided for several years. At one time he owned the Brockway farm and other parcels of land in different parts of the State.

On July 15, 1833, Mr. Cushway was married to Miss Adelaide Delisle, who was born at Detroit in 1812, and was a cousin of the Campaus, the first white settlers in Saginaw Valley. Her first visit to this place was in 1827, when the settlement consisted of only two block houses. Fourteen children, nine boys and five girls, were born to them. Mrs. Cushway died in 1878 at the age of sixty-six years. After an active and useful life Mr. Cushway died at his home in Saginaw City on May 25, 1881, in his seventy-second year. He was well known and respected for his sterling qualities and hospitable nature.

### Phineas D. Braley

In an account of pioneer life in the thirties, Mrs. Eleazer Jewett relates that at a late hour one night, when alone in her cabin at Green Point, there was a call from the opposite side of the river, some man wanting to come across. She informed him that there was no one to set him over. He then said he had ridden all day, was utterly exhausted and sick, and unless aid reached him he would lie down and die. This appeal touched the heart of Mrs. Jewett, and although she had never paddled a canoe across the river and the night was very dark, she resolved to make an attempt to get him over. Putting a candle in the window for a beacon in coming back, she took

a canoe, and after stemming the current and often calling to know where to land, she at length succeeded in reaching the opposite shore. There she found a traveller who had been taken with fever and ague, and was so ill that he could scarcely get into the canoe. By leading his horse by the side of the little boat, they finally reached the west bank of the stream at the hour of midnight.

This early pioneer who arrived here in such an unfortunate plight was Phineas D. Braley, who afterward was one of the best known lumber jobbers in the valley. He was born in Berkshire County, Massachusetts, April 17, 1811, and came with his parents to the Michigan wilderness in 1835. They settled on a tract of land on the Tittabawassee where T. C. Ripley afterward lived, the family, including that of an uncle, Ephraim Braley, numbering seventeen persons. The wagon by which they had travelled the greater part of the long journey from New England, was one of the first wheeled conveyances brought to this place.

The first winter Phineas lived there he cut two hundred cords of wood and put it on the bank of the river for "Uncle Harvey Williams," at thirty cents a cord. He often told an amusing incident in connection with his wagon. "Harvey Williams came and hitched his ox team to it one day, and refused to return it, saying he wanted to buy it; but I refused to sell. He paid no attention to what I said, but put his hand into his pocket and drew out a handful of bank notes, and gave it to me without counting it, remarking as he left that if it was not enough he would give me some more. I counted the money and found there was just one hundred and seventy dollars in currency."

In August, 1833, Mr. Braley was married to Miss Rebecca Hubbard; and to them three children were born. Mrs. Braley died, and some times after he married Miss Jane Blewer. After her death he married on December 18, 1842, Mrs. Olive Hubbard Grout, who was born at Oxford, Ontario, December 28, 1819. Her parents came to Saginaw in 1831, being among the early settlers here. About 1867 Mr. Braley built a comfortable home on Washington Street, Saginaw City, and at that time was one of the most pretentious houses in the town.

Mr. and Mrs. Braley lived to rear a family of nine children, and were survived by Phineas J., Fred J., Mrs. Henry Snider, Mrs. G. W. Bennett, Mrs. Charles A. Lee, and Mrs. F. A. Farmer. Having spent a useful and well regulated life, Mr. Braley died December 9, 1887, Mrs. Braley surviving him until April 17, 1890, when she died at the home of her daughter, Mrs. G. W. Bennett.

Ephraim Braley, who came to this valley with his brother Phineas, in 1835, was born in Berkshire County, Massachusetts, March 29, 1813, and died at his home in Saginaw Township October 11, 1886.

### Hiram L. Miller

Another of the early pioneers who left the stamp of their individuality upon the dim memories of the past was Hiram L. Miller, one of the first ordained preachers to impart Christianity among the settlers. He was born in January, 1804, obtained his early education at Morristown and Basking Ridge academies, and took a three years' theological course at Auburn, New York. His first pastorate was at Buffalo, New York, whence he went to Lockport and later to Avon, in the same State. In 1830, while pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Avon, he was married to Miss Adaline Little, the fourth child of Doctor Charles Little, one of the early explorers of Saginaw Valley. She was born November 30, 1810; and was educated at the Ontario Female Seminary, founded in 1825 at Canandaigua, New York.



**PHINEAS D. BRALEY**

One of the hardy pioneers of Saginaw, who brought the first wagon to the forest wilderness, and afterward was one of the prominent lumber jobbers.



**HIRAM L. MILLER**

Who organized the first church society, the Presbyterian faith, in Saginaw Valley in 1836.

Mr. Miller removed with his family to Saginaw City in 1836, at a time when there was a great accession to the population of the place. In the fall of that year a Presbyterian congregation was organized, which was presided over by him as pastor for about two years, and a marked improvement was made in the religious and social status of the inhabitants. A Christian mission was also established among the Indians, many of whom were converted to the white man's religion. Albert Miller relates that in looking pine lands in 1846, far up on the Tittabawassee, he started from camp one morning at daybreak, and while paddling his canoe down the river his ears were greeted with familiar music wafted from the recesses of the forest. He was never more charmed than while listening to the sweet notes of a hymn tune sung in the wilderness by a family of Indians at their morning devotions.

Besides the ministrations of Christianity to his fellow-men, Mr. Miller evinced a deep interest in the material side of life and in civic affairs in general, and exerted a powerful influence for the upliftment of the community. At different times he served the county in official positions, was one of the first justices of the peace, and was connected with the first newspaper printed here. He was chairman of the first board of supervisors, organized in 1842, and was twice a member of the legislature, in 1841 and in 1844, and served on the State Board of Education. Familiarly known as "Priest" Miller, he was long looked upon as one of the foremost men of the county. The offices of register of deeds, county treasurer, and county clerk were held by him at different times. In later years he expressed regret that his life, though a long and useful one, had been so diversified, his preference being a life devoted to a single object.

Mr. Miller lived to the venerable age of ninety-two years, going to his reward on May 16, 1896, after a residence here of sixty years. He was preceded by Mrs. Miller who, after a long life marked by decision of character and fidelity to principle, and unostentatious generosity, died July 27, 1889, in the seventy-ninth year of her life. They left one son, Norman L. Miller, and three grandchildren, Mrs. John J. Spencer, Frank Miller and Mrs. H. L. Brintnall.

With E. S. Williams and Albert Miller he completed the trio of illustrious men who bore the heat and burden of the early pioneer days, and whose influence for good extended far beyond their lives.

### **The First Steamboat on the Saginaw.**

Not all the early pioneers in coming to the wilderness on the Saginaw broke through the dense forest, a journey always attended with innumerable dangers and hardships. Some preferred to brave the perils of lake navigation and took passage in the frail and incommodious vessels of the period, for a voyage across Lake Huron and Saginaw Bay. In 1836 a small party of prospectors arrived here in the first steamboat that ever plied the waters of the Saginaw, an event of surpassing interest to the settlers and natives of the forest.

It was in the month of July that Albert Miller and James Fraser, accompanied by Eleazer Jewett, then county surveyor, and an assistant, were making a preliminary survey of a tract of land, upon which the town of Portsmouth was afterward built, for the purpose of making a plat of it. While at dinner one day at Leon Tromble's place, a small log house on John Riley's Reserve, near the corner of Fourth and Water Streets, Louis Tromble, then a boy about ten years of age, came running in greatly excited crying, "A steamboat! A steamboat!" They all went out to see what the boy had mistaken for a steamboat, and were greatly surprised and delighted

to behold the vessel slowly making headway against a south wind and the current of the river. They hailed the steamboat, which proved to be the *Governor Marcy*, commanded by Captain Gorham and piloted by Captain Rhodes, and chartered by Norman Little in behalf of himself and Mackie, Oakley and Jennison, who proposed to invest in and built up the town of Saginaw. The surveying party went out to the steamboat in their canoe, and with some difficulty got on board, Mr. Jewett losing his compass staff in the effort. They then steamed up the river, when, for the first time, the white owls on the Lone Tree, the wild ducks on the river, and the fishes in the stream were disturbed by the noise of steam propelled machinery.

The settlers at Saginaw were greatly elated at the arrival of the first steamboat at their town, and the next day an excursion was run up the Tittabawassee to test those waters for steamboat navigation. Nearly every person in the place turned out and the boat, which was a logy old tub of only sixteen tons burden, steamed up the river about two miles beyond Green Point, when its progress was impeded by overhanging branches. Among those on the boat were Doctor Charles Little, who was then visiting his daughter, Mrs. Hiram L. Miller, and George W. Bullock, who for many years occupied a prominent place in business circles of Saginaw.

A few days after, the *Governor Marcy* left for Detroit, and continued to make regular trips between Buffalo and Saginaw during the remainder of the season, and during the season of 1837 and a part of 1838. Her first commander, Captain Gorham, was a perfect dandy who dressed in fantastic style, and was known to have changed his clothes three or four times after entering the river, before reaching the landing at Saginaw. He would perch himself on the wheelhouse and motion with his arms in a most grotesque manner, as if piloting the vessel, Captain Rhodes, the pilot, who was an old navigator of the river, paying not the least attention to him, or to his commands.

In passing the rapids at the head of the St. Clair River, the utmost power of the little steamboat was steadily employed for a time. There was a big stump on the Canadian shore opposite the strongest current, which passengers were accustomed to watch in gauging the progress made. The boat would push boldly forward for a few rods and get ahead of the stump, then, through some slight deviation from a direct line, the current would cause her to fall back, and the stump would be ahead. But by repeated trials and perseverance the steamboat always won out, and left the rapids and the stump on shore far behind.

There were no tugs in those waters at that time, and sailing vessels often had to lay to and wait for a favorable wind to help them over into the lake. On one occasion, when the steamboat was about to stem the rapids, the captain of a vessel hailed her, came on board, and gave her captain one hundred dollars for a tow into Lake Huron. Some passengers on the vessel stepped on board the steamboat for a short ride, and the towline had just been made fast, when a fresh breeze sprang up, the vessel hoisted sail, the line was cast off, and she sailed proudly through the rapids into the lake, leaving the steamboat to struggle with the swift current. After getting into the lake, the vessel hove to and waited for the steamboat to come up, for her passengers to get on board.

#### Extract From Mrs. A. M. Richman's Diary

Among other hardy spirits, who arrived on the *Governor Marcy*, in 1836, were Charles L. Richman and family, consisting of his wife and one son, Charles H. Mrs. Richman, a daughter of James Sibley, one of the earliest settlers of Ontario County, New York, was born at Canandaigua, January



9, 1807. She was one of the noble pioneer women of the west, and one of the best known and most highly esteemed residents of Saginaw City. A graphic account of what this place was when she came here is imparted by an extract from her diary of early date:

"We arrived at old Fort Saginaw on Saturday morning October 1, 1836, in a drizzling rain, amid the cheers of the settlers and the waving of a table cloth, which to us, who on the last day of the voyage were on an allowance of pork and hard tack, was at least suggestive. We were very kindly and hospitably received by Mr. and Mrs. H. L. Miller, who had been here a short time, having come down the Flint River in a canoe. Things in general seemed the newest of the new, and the prospect was dreary in the extreme, but then we reflected on poor 'Robinson,' and took heart. I went into *the* store to write back my 'first experience,' and met my old friend Peyton R. Morgan, of Avon, New York, who suggested that I wait until morning; but I didn't. That letter was preserved in the family as a gem of the west.

"The question now arose, where were we to find shelter? Very fortunately a kind and over-ruling Providence sent us to the 'old block house,' and to the unwearied attention of Major Mosely and his dear wife. The morning after our arrival, which was Sunday, a good portion of our colony met at the house of H. L. Miller, who was a Presbyterian minister, to return thanks to our loving Father for our safe passage after our many perils of the lake.

"The old block house stood inside the fort stockade, partially surrounded by the original pickets. But few buildings were left of the old fort, and this was the best. They were all occupied, as was every nook and corner, even to standing boards from the pickets, as we, when children, made play houses. One of the buildings was used as a hotel, kept by Mr. Tibbetts, with the modest name of Saginaw City Exchange. That same old block house has welcomed many a pleasant gathering, for they were the very souls of hospitality, and how we feasted on wild game, on trout, sturgeon and white fish, which was brought from the bay corded as they do wood. Cranberries were so plentiful that vessels on their return trips were ballasted with them. Neither did we sweeten them with Indian sugar—ah! no. During the ever remembered and pleasant winter we passed in the old block house, there were many arrivals in town, so that our society was good and intelligent; and, as in our isolated condition, we were dependent upon each other for our mutual comfort and happiness, the memory of that winter is a green spot.'

"On the first of January, 1837, we introduced the eastern style of calls, with 'hot coffee and cake.' The calls were so numerous as to be oppressive; the constant repetition gave a sameness. The gentlemen had a sleigh, and as they laughingly expressed it, they 'called and returned it.' Some thought they were called for, but the finale was at a place of pleasant memories, the old block house of 1836."

Long after Mrs. Richman had beheld and endured the sufferings and privations of early settlement, and had witnessed the subsequent growth and prosperity of the place, she died at her home on March 16, 1877, at the age of seventy years.

#### Charles H. Richman

Captain Charles H. Richman, for forty-seven years a resident of Saginaw City, who came here with his father, Charles L. Richman, in 1836, was born at Canandaigua, New York, September 28, 1828; but his boyhood, and, in fact, the greater part of his life, was spent in this valley.

At the outbreak of the civil war he raised a company of soldiers, called the "Saginaw Rangers," which were attached to the Tenth Regiment of Volunteer Infantry, designated as Company B, of which, upon being mustered into service on October 1, 1861, he was made captain. He served with his regiment in the field until February 6, 1865, when, having contracted acute neuralgia while in line of duty, he was mustered out. During this long service he saw much hard fighting, his regiment being engaged in several severe battles. For some months during the winter of 1863-64 he was attached to the staff of General J. D. Morgan, commanding the First Brigade, Second Division of the Fourteenth Army Corps, as Inspector General, and participated in that capacity in the action at Tunnel Hill, near Dalton, Georgia, on February 25, 1864. His conduct on that occasion was such that he was complimented in the official report by his commanding officer. After Sherman's march to the sea, in which he participated, he proceeded to Sister's Ferry, Georgia, fifty miles from Savannah, where overcome by illness, he was sent back to that city, mustered out, and sent home.

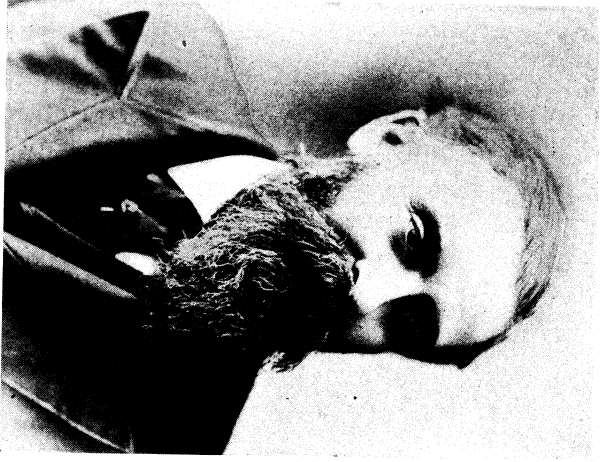
In 1871 he removed to Chicago and engaged in the hotel business, but eight weeks after was burned out in the memorable fire of that year, and thereupon returned to Saginaw. Afterward he leased the Rust House at Farwell, which he conducted for two years. Returning to Saginaw he joined the staff of the old Courier, as Saginaw City reporter, a service which he performed faithfully and acceptably for several years. About 1880 he leased the Jewell House at Vassar, where he remained for a year, but his health failing he removed to a farm on the Bridgeport road, near East Saginaw. Surrounded by every comfort, and with all the care and medical skill of the time, he gradually failed, and it was soon seen that restoration was hopeless. He was a man of genial, happy temperament which made him friends in all circles, and there were many sincere and saddened regrets at his death, which occurred June 17, 1883, in his fifty-fifth year.

Mrs. Charles H. Richman, who was of the highest type of womanhood, of fine motherly qualities, and purity of every thought and action, was born in Oswego County, New York, January 28, 1838, and came to Michigan with her parents when quite young. They first settled at Northville, but in 1847 removed to Saginaw, where she was married to Mr. Richman. She died March 7, 1891, at the age of fifty-three; and was survived by two daughters, Mrs. James H. Norris, and Miss Kate Richman, who afterward married William C. Phipps, of this city.

### Saginaw City in 1837

On the nineteenth of June, 1837, E. L. Wentz, in company with Alfred Hovey, left Binghamton, New York, with a view of finding employment in the west. After a journey of twelve days filled with varying experiences they arrived at Detroit on July 1st. There they saw some flaming-red posters advertising low fares to Saginaw City by the steamboat *Governor Marcy*, which was a temptation to further adventure, so they took passage to this port arriving on July 3, 1837. Their first view of the struggling settlement was a disappointment, as they had expected to find a city of at least ten thousand inhabitants, whereas they had landed in a little hamlet of scarcely fifteen buildings, and not over one hundred persons residing therein.

"At the extreme south end of the town," writes Mr. Wentz, "on the bank of the river was a steam saw mill, with one upright saw that if closely watched might have cut one thousand feet of lumber in twenty-four hours. A short distance from the mill and a hundred yards from the river, was a red building where the Millers kept store. Gardner D. Williams had a residence about a thousand feet back from the river at the extreme south end of town.



**CHARLES H. RICHMAN**

Who came to Saginaw on the first steamboat, the "Governor Marcey", to navigate the Saginaw River. This was in 1837.



**MRS. CHARLES H. RICHMAN**

Who is remembered by our older residents as a woman of the highest character and motherly qualities.

Near the red store were two or three small buildings, in one of which was the postoffice. At that time the mail came to Saginaw but once a week on horseback by way of Flint and the old Indian trail. About a thousand feet from the postoffice down the river and immediately on the bank was a warehouse, directly back of which at the foot of the bluff was a small building, in which someone kept a stock of Indian goods, and still further back on the top of the bluff was the old government stockade. Two hundred feet north of the stockade was the old log tavern, kept by an Englishman by the name of Malden. Six or eight hundred feet further north, and a hundred feet further back from the river, was a small building where Henry Pratt kept a shoe shop, and still further north was Richman and Lyon's store, a little north of which and immediately on the bluff was a dwelling. At the extreme north end of town Mr. Jewett had a nice residence in which he kept a hotel. There was also a very nice residence in the southwest part of the town occupied by Mr. Little.

"The prospect of finding employment in this place was not very cheerful, but we went to an old log tavern and engaged board at two dollars and fifty cents a day each. The sleeping room was overhead, entrance to which was up a ladder through a hole in the floor; and it contained about thirty single beds with the numbers chalked on the logs at the head. After getting our baggage stowed away we went back to the river, and followed the bank to the saw mill and sat down on a log to talk over the situation. Mr. Hovey counted his money and found he had just two dollars and fifty cents. I had no money to count. We were perplexed to know what to do. I suggested that we could cut wood, as there was plenty of it in the country. Hovey said, 'yes, but there are no people here to burn it,' which was indeed a fact.

"While we were further debating the matter, we saw a large canoe-like craft coming down the river, propelled by twelve oars, and when it got opposite to us it turned in and landed directly in front of where we were sitting. The first man to step out of it was Charles F. Smith, the chief engineer of the Northern or 'Bad River' Canal, then being projected. He had come down from the woods at Bad River, bringing his whole corps of engineers and camp equipage to celebrate the Fourth of July. I had worked with Smith for some time on the New York and Erie Railroad, and knew him intimately. He soon told me that he had work for both of us, and we took hold with a will and helped to pitch the tents on the bank of the river near the northeast corner of the old government stockade; and my first night in Saginaw I spent in a tent with the engineer corps. The party was held in Saginaw several days to allow some of the men to sober up from their celebration; and we were then sent to the woods at Bad River. In traveling to and from the canal work we were compelled to use canoes, there being no roads or trails, and the country was low, flat and wet, with numerous streams and bayous to cross that made it almost impossible to get there except by the rivers."

### **The Northern Canal Project**

The first constitution of Michigan, adopted in 1835, made it the duty of the government of the State to encourage internal improvements, and of the legislature to make provision by law for determining the proper objects of improvements in relation to roads, canals and navigable waters, and also to provide for an equal, systematic and economical expenditure of all funds appropriated for these objects. Among the various improvements projected during the formative period of our State, was the Northern or "Bad River" Canal, intended to connect the waters of the Bad River with those of the Maple, and by improving the rivers to open a waterway from Lake Huron by way of the Saginaw and Grand Rivers to Lake Michigan at Grand Haven.

The settlers of Saginaw Valley anticipated great results from this improvement, by its opening up a waterway west into a portion of the interior of the State that was known to contain some of its richest lands for agricultural purposes, and would also furnish a shorter route across the peninsula than by the course of the lakes. Early in 1837 surveys of the canal were made and specifications prepared for the first section extending west from the forks of the Bad River. The report of the survey was regarded as exceedingly favorable, showing the existence of a remarkable depression extending westward from the waters of the Saginaw to those of the Maple, and that these waters, flowing in opposite directions, were only three miles distant from each other at one point, and that between them the highest elevation necessary to be crossed was only seventy-two feet above Lake Michigan. It was along this valley and across this low summit that the engineers located the route for the canal, with certain slack-water improvements to be made east and west of it.

Contracts for grubbing and clearing of the route were let in 1838, and work was commenced in that year. The contract for excavating the site was let soon after to Norman Little, of Saginaw, and another part of the work was undertaken by Alpheus Williams. Great expense and hardship attended the prosecution of the work, as it was located in a wilderness fifteen miles from any white settlement, thereby adding to the difficulties of transporting materials and supplies. But under the management of the energetic contractor, it was continued with vigor, about one hundred Irishmen being employed in excavating; and a large quantity of timber was cut and lumber brought in for the construction of coffer-dams. The canal as projected was to be twenty miles long, ninety feet wide, with nine feet depth of water.

The work on the canal continued until July, 1839, when it was suspended and the project abandoned. The immediate cause of the failure was the inability of the State to meet the monthly estimates of the contractor, according to the terms of the contract, for the reason that the Morris Canal and Banking Company, which had taken the \$5,000,000 State loan, had failed before the whole amount had been paid over. The timber intended for the construction of the locks and dams remained to rot on the ground, and remnants of some of them were plainly visible within the last twenty-five years in Chapin Township.

When the payment of wages and materials stopped, and the Irishmen were dismissed from the job without their last wages being paid, they came to town and for two or three days paraded the streets threatening all those who had had anything to do with the canal. Timid persons feared mob violence, but when the matter was fully explained so that the laborers understood the cause of the non-payment of their wages, they left without doing any damage to anyone.

The sums expended on the canal project, and which were a total loss to the State, were, in 1838, \$6,271.12; in 1839, \$15,985.69; a total of \$22,256.81.

Ten years after the abandonment of the canal project by the State, the legislature of Michigan, by act approved March 30, 1849, incorporated a company composed of Gardner D. Williams, James Fraser, D. J. Johnson, of Saginaw, and other parties in the State, "to enter upon the canal commenced by the State, as their property, at the forks of the Bad River, and upon lands on either side, and through which the said canal may pass, to the bend of the Maple River, a tributary of Grand River, and so far on that river as may be thought proper; to construct a tow path and concentrate the water for canal use, and to dig, construct or excavate the earth; to erect or set up any dams, locks, waste-weirs, sluices, feeders or any other device whatsoever,

to render the same navigable with boats, barges or other craft." The company was duly organized under the name of Saginaw and Grand River Canal Company, with a capital of \$200,000, and its stock was offered for sale.

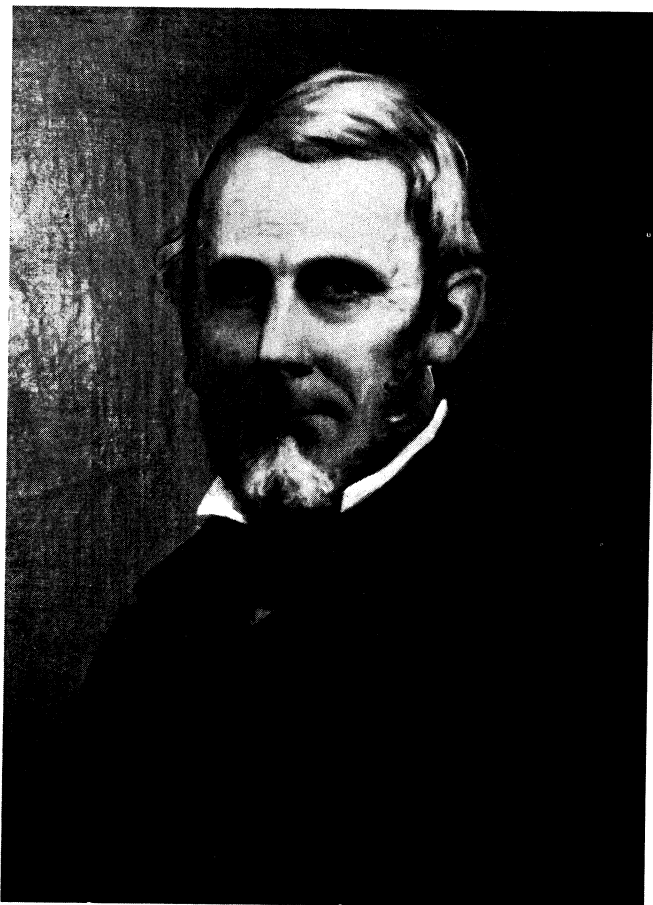
The revival of the project reawakened hopes that the Maple River was at last to become part of a navigable waterway between the two great lakes, and the people indulged in the most visionary and impracticable notions in regard to the water courses of the State. Having no railroads or even wagon roads leading to the interior, the Indian trails being the only means of communication between the scattered hamlets, it was perhaps natural that they should have held greatly exaggerated ideas of the value of their rivers as highways of commerce. No work on the old canal was ever done by the company organized here, and finally the enterprise was definitely abandoned, never to be again revived. With a better understanding of the economics of transportation, the impractical schemes of visionaries today meet with little encouragement or support, particularly in an age when the facilities for communication to the remotest parts of the State are entirely adequate to the needs of commerce.

### The Enterprise of Norman Little

Of all the energetic and progressive men who came to this valley at an early day, Norman Little must be regarded as having been the most enterprising. Partaking of the public spirit of his father, Doctor Charles Little, he came here with him in 1822-23, but with others of the party returned to New York State after their explorations were completed. In 1836, having enlisted the financial support of Mackie, Oakley and Jennison, of New York City, in a project for the building up of the village of Saginaw, he took up his permanent residence here. He thereupon chartered the steamboat *Governor Marcy* and, with a party of prominent citizens of Detroit and a number of emigrants, made the first voyage by steam power to the Saginaw, and proudly steamed up the river to this place. Soon after this important event he established a regular steamboat line between Buffalo and Saginaw, and, by extensive advertising in eastern cities, started the tide of emigration to the then remotest point on the western frontier.

His broad scheme of exploitation embraced the erection of a number of costly buildings, and the making of certain public improvements; and the expenditures of Mackie & Company, of which he was a member, in carrying out their designs, amounted to a large sum. They first purchased the military reservation, comprising the old fort and adjacent land, which is now the center of the business section of the West Side, and proceeded to improve it. After the United States troops had been withdrawn from the fort in the fall of 1823, this property was sold to Samuel Dexter, of Washtenaw County, the consideration being seven thousand dollars. In 1832 Eleazer Jewett surveyed and platted the land for Mr. Dexter, who then gave the place the name of Saginaw City. That portion south of Cass Street was then owned by Gardner D. Williams and Ephraim S. Williams, and they had it platted at about the same time.

Mr. Dexter designed to exploit the advantages of this village as a business center of a large territory rich in natural resources, and to build it up for a desirable place of residence. But his efforts in this line were not very successful, and in 1835 he sold his interests here to Doctor Millington, of Ypsilanti, for eleven thousand dollars. The following year, when the more progressive men from the east, with abundant capital at their command, arrived to exploit its wonderful resources, the value of this property had apparently risen over night to an unheard-of figure in the history of settlement of the wilderness, for they paid fifty-five thousand dollars for it.



**NORMAN LITTLE**

The projector of Saginaw City and founder of  
East Saginaw.

Upon the inauguration of Mr. Little's extensive plan of improvements, and the expenditure of large sums of money, there was a great change in the appearance of Saginaw City. A large influx of population soon commenced, and a speculative mania seized all the ardent, enterprising men (as it did adventurous spirits throughout the United States between 1835 and 1838), and an era of speculation set in which was unequalled in the history of the State. Property here changed hands from day to day at fabulous prices, and the pioneers began to think that the consummation of their hopes of seeing the Saginaw Valley a rich and populous country, was near at hand. Some lots, so the records show, sold as high as two thousand dollars, while an eighty acre plot of ground, within a mile of the river, brought eighty thousand dollars. Nearly the entire section of the county, bordering on the east side of the Saginaw and Shiawassee Rivers to the south side of the Cass River, and extending a mile or more along the north bank of that stream, was platted and offered for sale. Some of these plats covered acre upon acre of land submerged at all seasons of the year, the only occupants being the muskrat, bull frog, and wild fowl.

In 1837 a new plat of Saginaw City was made by Mr. Little, which embraced all the smaller plats previously drawn, including the "Town of Sagina" and the Dexter plat, and spread itself into magnificent distances taking in a great deal of territory. However extravagant such a plat may now seem, the entire land then platted, after a lapse of fifty years, was covered with stately edifices and beautiful homes. Afterward Yates and Woodruff acquired a considerable portion of the platted territory, and, being men of wealth, they commenced improvements which could only have been inaugurated under the influence of a mania of speculation. Attracted by the beauty of the location and of the surrounding country, with its bountiful forests and water communication to the east, these men sought to build up a beautiful city.

### The Old Webster House

Among the improvements made by this syndicate was the building of the Webster House, a large hotel located on the northwest corner of Washington and Jefferson Streets, the site of the present residence of Mrs. George Grant, Jr., the streets now being known as Michigan Avenue and Cleveland Street. Like other structures projected by these speculators, this hotel was of spacious proportions, three stories in height, having a Grecian portico, with fluted columns sustaining the entablature, and broad verandas, a fine basement, and was of sufficient size to accommodate the ordinary hotel necessities of a town of ten thousand inhabitants. For a long time it was the most pretentious and best conducted public house of any in Michigan, and, as the center of the social life of the town, it helped to spread its fame in other sections of the State. The projectors also constructed a capacious warehouse, about one hundred feet in length by sixty feet in width, having three floors, on the margin of the river at what is now the foot of Cleveland Street.

Soon after the Webster House was opened to the public, in 1838, E. L. Wentz, who during the previous year had lived at Malden's log tavern, moved over to the new hotel, and at times assisted Mr. Harring, the proprietor, in the office. In this capacity he became well acquainted with the people who stayed there; and many years after told an amusing incident illustrating a peculiar custom of the time.

"I have a vivid recollection," said he, "of a high lark that Henry Pratt and I had at the Webster House a short time after it was opened. There was some doings that brought all the people of the country into town, and



they all stopped at the Webster House. The country guests all took off their boots, shoes and stockings in the office and left them there, going up stairs bare-footed to bed. After all were in bed and the house quiet, Pratt and I went to his shop, got some shoe brushes and blacking, returned to the hotel and blacked one of every pair of boots and shoes we could find in the house. We worked at it until daylight, then blacked one of our own in the same way, and went to bed for about an hour. I came into the office early to see the effect of our night's work.

"When the people began to come down the fun commenced. Everyone tried to get a pair of polished boots or shoes, some didn't know their shoes and looked half an hour for them, some accepted the joke and laughed, while others cursed a blue streak, threatening to kill the person who blacked their boots, if they could find out who did it. During the day nearly every man to be met on the streets had on one polished boot or shoe, and that was evidence that he was a guest of the Webster House. Pratt and I kept very still and had our laugh all to ourselves. Saginaw at that time was very dull, and anything that created a little excitement was enjoyable."

### The Bubble Bursts

The general inflation of values caused by speculative mania finally produced an abnormal condition of affairs throughout the country. In 1838 the huge bubble of speculation collapsed. But few banks in the United States survived the disaster, and those that did, suspended specie payments. Then followed several years of broad-spread commercial and mercantile depression. For a long time the business of the country was paralyzed, finding but little relief until the passage of the bankrupt law by Congress, in 1842.

For several years after the collapse very little progress was made in the valley of the Saginaw. Evidently the projectors of the realty boom, and of the improvements referred to, had anticipated a large influx of population and a corresponding increase in trade, for they were strong in the faith of ultimate success, a quality indispensable to the pioneer, and men of ideas and energy. But with the suspension of the Saginaw City Bank, a "wild-cat" concern organized by Norman Little and others, and of all construction work, many mechanics and laborers were thrown out of employment, and a large number returned to the East. Instead of speculating as to the quickest way of making a fortune, the people had to turn their attention to the best means of obtaining bread. Had it not been for the abundant resources of the country, many who remained might have come to want; but with plenty of game in the forests and the choicest of fish in the waters, and a productive soil on the alluvial bottom lands, all that stayed here managed to obtain a livelihood. Many who had been in other business resorted to farming, which hastened the clearing of the land, and aided in the development of the country.

### Anthony R. Swarthout

Captain A. R. Swarthout, who gained his title in the Pottawatomie and Black Hawk wars, was born in Seneca County, New York, in September, 1796. He was of Dutch descent, some members of the family being noted for longevity, his great grandmother having attained to the remarkable age of one hundred and seventeen years. His boyhood was passed in his native place; and in 1816 he was married to Miss Hannah Rose, and removed to Steuben County, New York. In 1826, having heard much of the opportunities of settlement in the territory of Michigan, he made a tedious journey to the then "Far West"; and in the following year moved his family to lands he had located near Ypsilanti.

After the Indian wars, in which he was enrolled in a company of riflemen known as "minute men," were ended, Captain Swarthout ventured the journey through the almost unbroken wilderness to the trading post on the Saginaw, arriving here on September 26, 1835. At the first township meeting held in the spring of 1836, there were seventeen votes polled, and he was elected one of the township officers — that of highway commissioner, which he held for sixteen years. In this capacity, with the aid of Abram Butts, another early settler, he laid out and established most of the public highways of this and adjoining counties then embraced within the limits of Saginaw County. He also served a term as supervisor, and was township clerk for fourteen years without intermission.

A man of unquestioned integrity and generous hospitality, Captain Swarthout always commanded the respect of his fellow townsmen. He died in 1881 at the age of eighty-five, survived by four sons and three daughters.

### Horace S. Beach

One of the oldest and most respected of the pioneers of this county was Horace S. Beach, who was born in New York City, January 16, 1806. Most of his young manhood was passed in his native State, but in 1837 he came to Saginaw. During that and the following year he taught the first school opened in the county, being preceded as master only by Albert Miller. As a surveyor, a profession which he soon after adopted, he made many of the early surveys, and was engaged in this work until 1855. In 1849 he moved to a farm in Tittabawassee Township, on which he lived and died.

His first vote was cast for John Quincy Adams, but in late years he became a firm and consistent advocate of the principles of the Republican party. He served the county in several official positions, in 1842-43-44 as register of deeds. In 1840 he was married to Miss Catherine Malden, sister of Mrs. James Busby, of Saginaw City; and to them four sons were born. Firm in his convictions he had the iron will of a strong man, yet preserved the tender sympathy of a woman. He died in 1881.



A CAMP IN WINTER

## CHAPTER IX

# FOUNDING OF EAST SAGINAW

---

Convivial Habits of the Pioneers—"Uncle Jimmy", the Fiddler—Anecdote of Major Mosely—Plague of Blackbirds—Primitive Settlement on the East Side—Original Plat—Curtis Emerson Comes upon the Scene—His Eccentricities—Lays out Village of Buena Vista—Norman Little Finds East Saginaw—Builds Plank Road to Flint—His other Enterprises—William L. P. Little—Charles David Little.

CHRISTMAS among the pioneers of the West, especially those of French extraction, was always observed as a holiday, to be celebrated in a manner congenial to their ideas and tastes. This generally took the form of carousals among the rougher element, and milder champagne parties among the "select", and in our frontier settlement this was no exception. Liquor flowed freely on all occasions of jollity and merry-making, drinking being one of the chief recreations of the male portion of the inhabitants. So abundant was the supply that in unloading a cargo of supplies at the dock, it was observed that there were about four barrels of whiskey to two barrels of flour and one of pork; and some persons used to wonder where so much flour and pork went to. In those early days they were wont to say that strong drink was a necessity to life, and considering the wet and marshy condition of the ground and the malarial tendencies of the climate, they were probably right about it.

In New England, whence a number of our prominent residents hailed, but little attention was paid to the Christmas festival, Thanksgiving day being the great holiday of the year; therefore many who had emigrated from those States kept steadily at their work or business, as on any other day. And they resented any interference in their established custom.

On one Christmas day in the olden time Albert Miller, in company with his brothers-in-law, Eleazer Jewett and Harvey Rumrill, who were natives of Vermont and New Hampshire, after working until near the close of the day, took a large canoe and paddled down the river from their homes at Green Point to the "Fort", where they had business at the trading post of G. D. & E. S. Williams. On entering the store they were confronted with the rough and boisterous element of the little settlement, the door was quickly locked and guarded to prevent their leaving, and they saw that they were in for a hot celebration. Jewett, at once taking in the situation, gave his companions the wink to be ready to escape the moment an opportunity offered. On looking through the crowd they found that nearly all the male population, after carousing all day, had gathered at the store to have a night of it. The New Englanders thereupon entered into their sport with such pretended zeal, that their captors soon relaxed their vigilance over them, when, upon edging toward the door, it was suddenly opened and they darted out and ran for their canoe.

In an instant a dozen or more stalwart men were after them, making in all haste toward the river, and the foremost one was about to grasp the prow of their canoe as they shoved off from shore. Being determined to prevent their escape, he waded into the water until it reached his waist, which at that season of the year was not very enjoyable holiday sport. Failing in their first attempt, they quickly manned a large batteau and started

in pursuit, and it was stated that no water-craft ever before passed over the two miles to the Point in a shorter time than those two canoes on that Christmas night. It was an even race all the way; and when they landed, instead of going to their cabins, Miller and his companions ran to the woods where they concealed themselves in the thicket. The racket soon raised by their pursuers around their houses, and a boisterous threat to tear down one of them, frightened their families, so they came out of the woods and faced them. The roisterers then attempted to force them into the canoe to carry them back to finish the night in revelry, but they began a good-natured scuffle with them, which, with their exertions of paddling their canoe, partly sobered them, so that they were soon willing to take to their canoe and return home alone.

Besides these carousals there were more select parties whenever there seemed occasion for them, the arrival of some friend of a resident, or some person contemplating settling here, an advantageous sale of property or any family event, being considered an opportune time for convening a champagne party. These parties were entered into for the desire for social enjoyment, and for keeping up the reputation of the village for hospitality and good cheer, which was proverbial. The flow of champagne soon loosened the tongues for song, anecdote and smart speeches, the conviviality continuing until morning when the company dispersed, some with "sair heads." The last one of these participated in by Albert Miller was in February, 1838, soon after his marriage, and was gotten up for the purpose of "laying him out", as he expresses it. The incident is told in his own words:

"On the morning after a night spent in social enjoyment with a large party at the opening of the Webster House, I was awakened by a number of voices calling to me from outside of my house. Suspecting what was intended, I was too well acquainted with the company to think of shirking the ordeal. I quickly rose and met the company of about a dozen men at the door, when they took me into Jewett's Hotel, which was next door, and presented me with a bottle of champagne; not waiting to uncork the bottle I broke the neck of it on the stove and put it to my mouth and allowed the contents to run down into my boots. I told them that if they would allow me to finish dressing I would go with them wherever they desired.

"We started in sleighs and drove to every place in town where liquor could be obtained. I generally took the lead, called for the bottle, and prepared myself with a bumper of cold water to drink with them when they had their glasses filled. I feigned drunkenness, which I could easily do for I had plenty of patterns before me, and in the afternoon, when I went with the company to my own house to partake of some choice wines that I had, my wife and mother were greatly shocked at my apparent condition of inebriety, but were not more surprised a short time after when I returned without a show of liquor about me. I had scarcely swallowed a drop of liquor during the day, and was not in the least under its influence, but my companions were all ready to retire from the field before night. I became convinced of the folly of such actions, and as the hard times came on, after the general financial crash of 1838, the people generally, if they had the disposition to do it, had not the money to spend foolishly."

#### "Uncle Jimmy", the Fiddler

But it must not be supposed that drinking bouts, or Saginaw "trains" as they were usually termed, were the only form of conviviality indulged in by the early settlers. During the long months of winter they often had dances, and when one was all arranged to be held at the house of Mrs. G. D. Williams, Mrs. E. N. Davenport, Mrs. James Fraser, Mrs. Eleazer Jewett,

or others, a messenger was dispatched through the woods some thirty miles to the cabin of James W. Cronk, to notify him that his services as "fiddler", were required at such a time. There were other persons nearer by who could supply the music for such occasions very acceptably, but the old citizens of Saginaw were too aristocratic to have any one play for them but their old friend and pioneer, "Uncle Jimmy", who always at the appointed time put in an appearance with a fiddle-box under his arm and his rifle over his shoulder. These were the only parties the old fellow would condescend to play for, but he never failed his old friends, and no one contributed so much to the enjoyment of the evening as he.

James W. Cronk afterwards volunteered in the Mexican war and received a captain's commission. He died some time after, together with his son, Norton, of yellow fever, at Vera Cruz, Mexico, deeply regretted by all the early pioneers. He was a man of more than ordinary ability, and one of the most genial of companions, as well as a great favorite among his associates.

### Anecdote of Major Mosely

In the days of the fur trade the American Fur Company had a small sloop named the *Savage*, which brought in goods for trade with the Indians, and provisions, clothing and sundry articles for the settlers, and carried away the quantities of furs which had been collected. This little sloop of only twenty-eight tons burden would leave Detroit and touch at several points on the St. Clair River, taking on such goods as were needed in trade, including some demijohns of very fine whiskey, brandy and rum.

There was at this time an old lawyer named Major Mosely, who lived in one of the block houses inside the stockade and kept a sort of tavern, who had been appointed custom house officer. When the little sloop arrived at her dock, the old major would go aboard with all the pomposity imaginable, and in going down into the diminutive cabin, he would say in an authoritative manner: "Nothing must be touched until I examine the cargo." Then the captain would give him a glass of brandy, and he would go on deck and tell the owners "It is all right; no smuggled goods aboard."

One night just after the vessel came in, the old major said to William R. McCormick, then a boy who lived at the tavern while going to school, "I don't want you to go to bed very early tonight. Something will be left for me at the back door, and when you hear a knock, you and Amanda (the servant girl) go and get it and carry it up stairs."

Sure enough, about eleven o'clock they heard a knock at the back door, and on going there found three sailors with as many demijohns of different kinds of liquors, which they carried up into the garret. This was repeated every time the little sloop arrived, until at the close of navigation the major had twenty-one demijohns of "good things", the very choicest liquors. What became of all this was told by Mr. McCormick many years after.

"About four o'clock in the afternoon a sleigh would drive up to the back door of the old block house occupied by the major, and the driver would knock and go in, saying: 'I want a demijohn of whiskey, one of rum, and one of gin, for the party at so and so's place tonight.' One day when he came the major was out, and I told him I had no authority to give any, and that he must see the major. 'That is all right,' he said, 'the major furnishes all the liquor for the parties, and what is left is always brought back in the morning.' So I went out and found the major, and he said: 'Yes; only tell them to bring back what is left in the morning.'

"The next week there would be another party at the house of some other pioneer, when the sleigh would come around again for the supply of liquid refreshment. All the major's friends knew how he got his liquor, and as they were all one social circle it was no more than right that it should be equally distributed. Such enjoyment at parties I have never seen since; whether it was owing to the kindly feelings that existed among those few families, isolated from the world, or the good effects of the excellent liquor of the major's, or everything combined, I am unable to say. I am inclined to think it was owing to the kindly feelings that existed among the early pioneers, and will continue to exist as long as memory lasts."

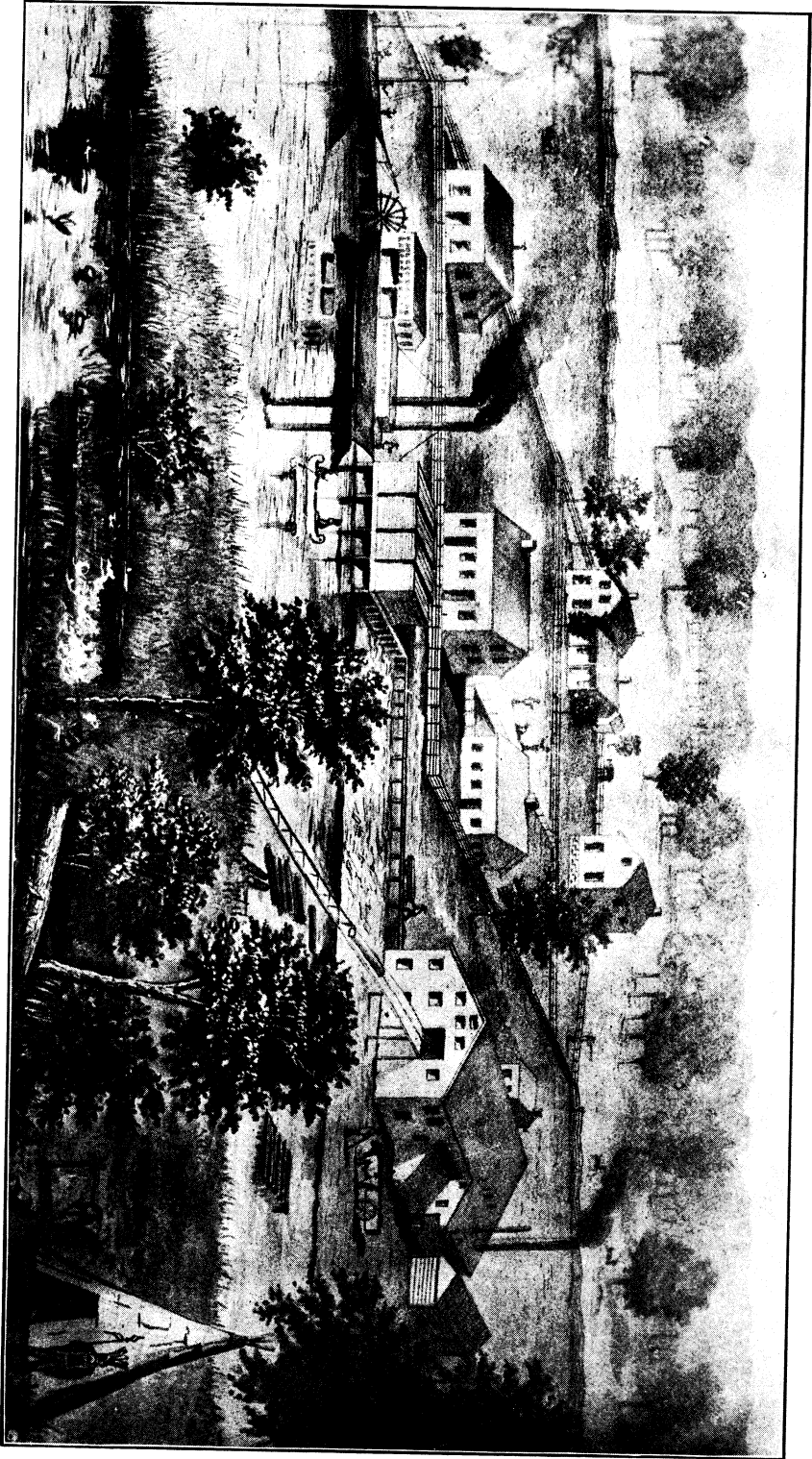
### **The Plague of Blackbirds**

As previously mentioned, blackbirds were a great pest in the primitive days of agriculture in this valley, and they came in flocks of thousands. The Williams Brothers had a small field of oats back of the fur company's store, which they had cradled and were about to get it in to save it from the birds, when another brother and some friends came to visit them. The oats were forgotten for the time being, but the birds came heavily reinforced that day to finish them. As they kept coming by the store, one of the party proposed that they see how many birds they could kill with one shot. Ephraim S. Williams had a fine, large single-barreled duck gun which he loaded with mustard seed shot, and commenced firing from the door, as the others drove them from the oats. After firing ten shots and his brother one shot, the boys picked up the dead and wounded birds and put them in a pile in front of the store. As the result of eleven shots they gathered five hundred and forty-five birds, and for days after, in the road and at the edge of the river, there were hundreds that had crawled to the river for drink and died there. This story is given as a strictly true one.

About 1836 the board of supervisors passed a law giving a bounty of two cents per head for blackbirds. The heads were taken to any justice of the peace, whose duty it was to destroy them and give a certificate which could be exchanged for a county order. These orders were worth in those days about fifty cents on the dollar, and redeemable only in store pay. There was one old justice who lived in one of the block houses inside the fort, and to him the boys used to take their bird heads, for a very good reason. He was in the habit of throwing the heads into his back yard, after counting them, for the hogs to eat, instead of destroying them according to law. After the boys would get their certificate, they would ask the old fellow to go down to Captain Malden's and take a drink, which he was never known to refuse, when another of the boys who had kept out of sight would slip into the justice's back yard, pick up the heads and put them into a bag. By the time he got back again to his office, the boy would have the same heads at his door to get another certificate from him. The boys exonerated themselves by saying that, since county orders were worth only fifty cents on the dollar, they had to sell the birds twice to get what the law contemplated they should have. The consequence was that this old justice got all the business in blackbird heads, and numerous drinks thrown in.

### **Primitive Settlement on the East Side**

The first habitation of white men on the east side of the Saginaw River was the branch trading post established by Louis Campau in 1820. It was a rough log cabin situated on the bank of the river, where the Methodist Mission House was afterward erected. This was near the northeast corner of Water and Fitzhugh Streets, so long occupied by the residence of Norman Little. But the Indians would not trade with the enterprising Frenchman



SITE OF PRESENT CITY HALL, 1849

at this place, and he was obliged to abandon the post the following year. No further efforts at settlement were made for several years, and the solitude of the wilderness was unbroken save by the howling of wolves and the occasional whoop of the red men.

In 1832 Albert Miller, while on a visit to his sister, Mrs. Eleazer Jewett, located land at the junction of the Shiawassee and Tittabawassee Rivers, opposite Green Point. On a beautiful spot along the gently-sloping bank of the stream, he erected a comfortable log house; and in the following spring was joined by his mother and sister, who moved from Grand Blanc. For several years they lived in this primitive fashion, but amidst the most attractive surroundings, being the first white settlers on the east side of the Saginaw River.

The first attempt to form a permanent settlement was made in 1836, when "Uncle Harvey Williams," in association with Mackie, Oakley and Jennison, of New York City, purchased a tract of land south of what is now Bristol Street, and erected thereon a saw mill, a stable, and two or three dwellings. At the time this enterprise was regarded by the settlers on the west side as one of doubtful utility, since the capacity of the mill far exceeded the consumption of lumber in the village, and shipping it to other markets at a distance was not dreamed of. The promoters, however, had broader plans than the mere creation of a single industry in the unbroken wilderness. They had visions of a large and prosperous city springing up along the east side of the river; and they proceeded to survey and lay out an elaborate plat, embracing no less than one hundred and five blocks.

### The Original Plat

The original plat was published in the "Map of the City of Saginaw", dated February 1, 1837, a reproduction of which appears on pages 106 and 107; and covered all the land along the river for a space of nearly a mile, and extended back about three-quarters of a mile. Beginning at the southern limits, which was about at the northern entrance to Hoyt Park, there was a street named "First Street" running east and west and intended to cross the low, marshy ground (now a part of Hoyt Park) to the high ground beyond. The next street to the north was "Second Street", the lines of which are probably followed quite closely by Holland Avenue; and then came "Third Street", now called Bristol Street. Continuing toward the north were ten other streets, bearing numerical names in consecutive order until "Thirteenth Street" was reached at the northern limits of the town. The lines of this street were probably staked very near the present location of Hayden Street. Each block was three hundred feet long north and south, and the streets were sixty-six feet wide; and the total length of the plat was forty-four hundred and fifty-eight feet.

The first street along the river, beginning at "Third Street" (Bristol), was named "Water Street", and the next, which was two hundred and forty feet to the east, was named "Pearl Street", each of which was sixty-six feet in width. Then came "Broad Street" ninety-nine feet wide, which corresponds to our Washington Avenue, and followed by "Marshal", "Clay", "Calhoun", "Branch", "Barry", "Eaton", and "Ingham" to mark the eastern limits. About where "Branch Street" was laid out, or twelve hundred and forty feet east of the center line of "Broad Street", now runs Jefferson Avenue, but the present lines would not coincide with those of the old plat, which was never adopted or its streets opened up.

It is interesting to note that the projectors had in mind the laying out of a Public Square, which was to be on either side of "Broad Street" at "Sixth Street." Had their plans materialized this square would have been



located on our Washington Avenue very near to McCoskry Street. All of the blocks now occupied by the City Hall and the gas works, were reserved by the proprietors for their saw mill and allied industries. But in 1838, following the collapse of the speculative bubble, with the consequent shrinkage of capital and credit, the whole enterprise fell flat, the saw mill was shut down, and the well formulated plans of founding a city on this site were temporarily abandoned.

The inscription at the foot of the map of 1837 reads as follows:

"The City of Saginaw lies in the heart of Michigan, at the head of steamboat navigation on the Saginaw River, which is formed by the confluence of the Flint, Cass, Shiawassee and Tittabawassee Rivers, all diverging into a rich farming country, and navigable for small craft. The Shiawassee may easily and doubtless soon will be connected by a short canal with the Grand River, by which the trade of all that country and much from the western shore of Lake Michigan will center at Saginaw. It will open a water communication from Chicago and Michigan City to Lake Erie, 500 miles shorter than the dangerous navigation through the northern parts of Lakes Michigan and Huron. Building materials of every description, wood, brick and stone, may be procured on the spot, a great advantage over most other places. Many buildings are now being erected, a Court House, Gov't Land Office, and it is expected a Bank also will be located here this season. The large number of mechanics and others employed in the improvements of the place, will create a brisk business and afford a ready market for the surplus produce of the surrounding country. In short, Saginaw possesses advantages superior to any other new place in the State, and promises to become one of the most important cities of the West."

As we look at the location of this prospective city, after a lapse of seventy-five years, and compare the high, dry ground to the east and south of the City Hall, with the low, unsightly and malarial-breeding ground upon which very much of East Saginaw was originally built, we cannot but feel that the section from Holland Avenue north to Holden and east as far as Warren Avenue should have been the site of the business section of the East Side. It is true that the narrow strip of ground east of Washington Avenue would have presented some objection, but of scarcely more consequence than those of the bayou which once crossed Genesee Avenue at Baum Street, and which are still in evidence. In the former site the ground on all sides is much higher than the level of the present site of the business section, and is above the reach of the highest floods. The selection of the site of East Saginaw in a bayou and marsh ground shows that the location of village sites in a new country is often largely a matter of circumstance and enterprise, rather than of consideration of the natural advantages and convenience.

### **Curtis Emerson Comes Upon the Scene**

For ten years following the financial panic of 1837-38, the village of Saginaw City suffered all the after effects of a speculative boom, and little was done in building or improvements. Many mechanics and laborers, who had found employment in the various enterprises inaugurated by the projectors and land owners, left the valley and the village settled down to a quiet, dormant existence. About the only residents that remained were those who had invested interests in the place, in the way of land holdings which could not be sold, or in stocks of goods the demand for which was largely curtailed. All, however, shared the earnest conviction that eventually the place would again prosper and become one of the important cities of the State.

About the time that conditions began to improve there came to Saginaw City a young man by the name of Curtis Emerson, who, of all the queer characters who ever resided here, was the queerest. Old citizens still grow loquacious when relating his sayings, and smile and laugh with reminiscental glee over his grotesque eccentricities, witty expressions, violent prejudices, monumental profanity, and crackling humor. In person he was diminutive and slight, being not more than five feet two inches in height, and weighing about one hundred pounds, with a complexion midway between swarthy and sallow, keen, fierce, gray eyes, which glared with resentment or twinkled with fun, according to his ever changing moods. He was a plucky little fellow, full of energy and vitality, and when engaged in an altercation would tackle a man twice his size, but was not vindictive, and when worsted in wordy debates or fisticuffs would promptly extend his hand to his antagonist, and invite him and all the bystanders to liquid refreshments. He was always well dressed in the pink of fashion, and looked as if he had just stepped from a band box.

"Curt", as he was generally called, was born at Norwich, Vermont, February 4, 1810. His boyhood was spent in his native town and in Windsor, the same State; and he was educated in the best schools of New England. His father, Thomas Emerson, who was a leading merchant and banker of Windsor, was a man of eccentric character, of violent temper, of kindest heart and bitterest prejudices, of unbending integrity and purpose, while his mother was a meek, quiet, pious and uncomplaining woman, who bore the crosses and burdens of life but a few years. But she blended in the son's nature many of her virtues and fine feelings, which offset, through his life, the peculiar and unpleasant traits of the father. Entering into business under his father's patronage, dislikes and personal quarrels soon rose between them, and "Curt" came west, arriving at Detroit on May 11, 1836.

As agent of a large eastern land company, he travelled extensively for a time through Michigan, Wisconsin, and even west of the Mississippi, but made his home at the Michigan Exchange Hotel. Afterward he went into the manufacture of malt liquors, investing his father's capital in the first brewery in Detroit, situated at the southeast corner of Congress and First Streets, the firm name being Emerson, Davis & Moore. He continued in this business until 1845, when he went into copper mining enterprises, which were a speculative furore in those days.

### His Eccentricities

While living in Detroit he was always surrounded by a group of friends, who laughed at his eccentricities and profited by his liberality. Utterly unconventional, he joined in any conversation he might overhear, and vented his ideas with freedom and emphasis. If he did not like the appearance of either acquaintance or stranger, he would without ceremony abuse him to his face. In the early '40s, during the Washingtonian temperance movement, when the evils of strong drink was a leading topic in all circles of society, a lecturer named Hyde delivered an open-air lecture on the subject, from a dry-goods box, when "Curt", who was among the auditors, exclaimed in a loud voice:

"You're a——liar," adding an extremely insulting epithet.

Hyde was not a meek and lowly character, and descending from the box, knocked him down. Emerson was a little dazed, but rising up, came to Hyde with his hand extended, saying:

"You're a good man, sir. Shake hands. You'll get along in this wide world of sorrow and tears. Let's take a drink."

He fraternized with the Irish element partly because they appreciated his witty sayings, and also because they were mostly strong Democrats like himself. On a St. Patrick's day he turned out in the procession with an abundance of green ribbons in his coat and hat, and ordered a supper in the evening at the Michigan Exchange. When Curt went into the dining room he thought it was not worthy of the occasion, and mounting the table he went from one end to the other knocking off all the dishes in his progress, and then held the supper in a restaurant. It was certainly a big affront to Dibble the landlord, but he didn't complain, for Curt always settled for the damages.

One day his father, who was generally called the "Deacon", came to Detroit to see how his sons, Curt and John, were getting along. He learned that they had gone on a jamboree, and started out in search of them. At Dan Whipple's saloon on the west side of Bates Street, between Jefferson Avenue and Larned Street, he heard a tremendous racket, and looking in saw his two sons endeavoring to outdo each other in destroying the bar room. There was no fight or quarrel, but pictures were being broken, mirrors smashed, glasses and decanters dashed to pieces, while Curt was making a frantic effort to over-turn the bar. The old gentleman smiled at this evidence of recklessness, and poking his head in the door, said:

"Go to it, Curt! Go to it, John! I'm proud of you. Landlord, that will be all right."

Curt was a great friend of Alfred Williams, always dubbed "Salt" Williams, because he was interested in the salt works at Syracuse, New York, and agent of its business in the West. At one time he engineered a successful corner in salt in this State and Wisconsin, gathering in nearly \$100,000 in profits. He also was an eccentric character, of medium size and elegant in carriage, witty, fond of fun, and an inveterate joker. On one occasion when the two friends left for Buffalo on a steamboat, another steamboat forged up to them and an exciting race ensued. "Salt" knew the other boat and offered to bet one hundred dollars that it would arrive at Buffalo first.

"Done," cried Curt. "No boat afloat can beat the boat I'm sailing on."

In a little while the other boat drew ahead. Curt consulted with the captain and learned that there was a consignment of hams and bacon on board.

"Put them down below," he said, "I'll pay for them."

The captain objected to this, but Curt finally had his way, and several thousand pounds of perfectly good meat went under the boiler, Curt helping as stoker. The safety escape valve was fastened down, and the boat trembled under the increased speed, but when Curt emerged from below the rival steam boat was a mile behind.

"Salt" didn't like to be beaten, so he offered to bet another hundred dollars that he could pick out the homeliest man on the boat. Curt, whose sporting spirit was thoroughly aroused, promptly took it, and each produced his man. Both were fellow passengers who entered into the fun. A jury was empanelled, and while they were examining the men it soon became apparent that Curt had won again. "Salt's" choice thereup began making diabolical grimaces to influence the jury, when his backer, who had an impediment in his speech and stuttered, exclaimed:

"You, you n-n-needn't sc-sc-screw your ugly face. God has s-s-s-saved you the tr-tr-trouble."

When the boat reached Buffalo all on board, captain, crew and passengers were in an advanced state of alcoholic sprightliness.



**CURTIS EMERSON**

Born in Norwich, Vermont, February 4, 1810. Came to Michigan in 1836 and to Saginaw City in 1846. Engaged in the lumber business and the river at Buena Vista, in a building at foot of what is now called Bristol Street.



**MOSES B. HESS**

Born at Verona, Oneida County, N. Y., in 1825. Came to Michigan in 1837; settled in East Saginaw, 1850. Previous to this he was Postmaster and State Librarian at Lansing; succeeded Morgan L. Gage as Postmaster at East Saginaw in 1853.

### Lays Out Village of Buena Vista

As early as 1839 Curtis Emerson visited the Saginaw River, and in December, 1846, he became a permanent resident of Saginaw, being identified with its rise and progress for a period of thirty-four years.

He at once engaged in the lumber business, but not prospering in that to his expectations, he removed in 1847 to the east side of the river, and erected a building near the foot of Bristol Street. On the property which he purchased at that time there was a saw mill, one dwelling, one boarding house, a barn and a small blacksmith shop, which had been built eleven years before by "Uncle Harvey Williams."

In the spring of 1848, Charles W. Grant, another of the early pioneers of the East Side, brought some workmen from Flint, and, with Emerson, commenced the manufacture of lumber in the old saw mill which ever after was known as the "Emerson mill." That year Curt consigned to C. P. Williams & Company, of Albany, New York, the first full cargo of clear lumber ever shipped from Michigan. A store was soon opened and a permanent settlement begun, to which he gave the romantic name of Buena Vista, in honor of General Taylor's then recent victory over Santa Anna, in the Mexican war. A town was organized in April, 1849, and at the first election held in Emerson's house, nineteen votes were cast, Curtis Emerson being chosen supervisor, Charles W. Grant township clerk, Stephen Lytle treasurer; and Andrew Evart, George Oliver and Stephen Lytle were elected justices of the peace. The commissioners or highways were Aaron K. Penney, C. W. Grant and Sylvester Webber; the school inspectors were A. M. Hoyt and A. K. Penney; while the constables named were Archibald Campbell, David Joslin, George Miner and Erastus Vaughn.

In 1850 Mr. Emerson built a two-story house, which he facetiously called the "Halls of the Montezumas", in which he made his bachelor home and was the scene of many rollicking assemblies during which his conviviality and profanity attained a local celebrity. He was the leader of the hardy pioneers, and many are the traditions of "good old times" that were witnessed in his house. It was burned in 1866, and Emerson mourned the loss perhaps more sincerely than any other, except the death of his favorite dog "Caesar."

The old saw mill was dismantled in 1854, and two years after he closed up his lumbering operations and engaged in the real estate business, in which he prospered and in 1863 was rated a wealthy man. On July 4, 1864, he made a demonstration in honor of the day by setting fire to the ruins of his old mill which, it was said, made a very imposing bonfire.

During the Civil War he was what was termed a "copperhead", and a very emphatic denouncer of the "nigger war." One day Zachariah Chandler came to Saginaw to address a political meeting, and when he stepped from his carriage at the Bancroft House there was a crowd, in which was Curt and his dog Caesar. The canine was short in stature and long in body, and, like his master, *had an explosive temperament*. Emerson and Chandler knew each other, but the former did not speak, merely addressing his dog: "Caesar, if you wag your tail at that man, I'll disinherit you."

Although Curtis Emerson was of peculiarly slight physique, he was a man of wonderful energy, vital power, and physical and mental activity. His fondness for the social glass was his most serious fault, and that was not acquired, but was inherited. His command of language was remarkable, and under the influence of liquor he became a volcano of mingled wit, sarcasm, vituperation and blasphemy. In politics he was a strong Democrat, despising the "d——— black Republicans" as he called those of the oppos-

ing party; and many of the early conventions in this State were witnesses of his fitful outbursts. When he was in easy circumstances he was a prince in his lavish expenditure of money; but in his later years he was involved in litigation and law suits about his property, and met with severe losses which in the end left him a poor man. His last years were eked out in poverty, yet under all adversity there arose the strong individuality, the masterly spirit of independence and defiance, the untamed demon of inherited habit and desire. Full of quick, hateful, uncontrolled desires, eccentricities and faults, he fairly overflowed with charity, kindness, and warm hearted affection for his friends. No one who ever knew him could find in their inmost being a single trace of unforgiving hate; yet he was shunned, dreaded, despised, and in turn petted, honored, and loved by all. A demon now, and in an hour a man of sense, humor and business, his character was penciled in finer lines of light and shade than any other of our early pioneers.

His final illness came gradually, with the least pain, and his quiet and easy death February 11, 1880, was the complete calm that follows life's fiercest tempests. Not a relative was present to smooth his pillow, but true friends stood by his bedside, and the last breath brought no struggle. Thirty-five years have passed, but his memory is still green with those who knew him and yet remain.

#### **Norman Little Founds East Saginaw**

Norman Little, whose enterprise in the palmy days of speculation effected such development and improvement in Saginaw City, may well be called the projector and "father" of East Saginaw. Disappointed, but not discouraged, at the set-back to his fortunes on the west side of the river, he turned his attention to promoting and building up an entirely new town on the east side. In promoting his landed interests here, he started the early settlement upon the site selected more than twenty years before, and as if by magic a flourishing town soon rose in a bayou and marsh, which was a glowing tribute to his undaunted nerve and progressive spirit.

In 1850 he induced James M. Hoyt, of Eli Hoyt & Company, of New York City, and his son Jesse Hoyt, to become interested with himself, each one-third, in the site and business of promoting settlement of the lands originally entered by his father. The Hoyts had been business acquaintances and old friends of his family for many years, and came to know his worth and integrity of character. To consummate the enterprise two hundred and twenty acres of land upon the original site, and other property amounting to twenty-four hundred acres, all on the east side of the river, were purchased by the partners. Part of this land had previously been purchased by a man named Carroll and others, from Doctor's Little's estate, and some had passed to the Farmer's and Mechanic's Bank, of Detroit.

From this enterprise inaugurated by Norman Little, backed by the capital of the Hoyts, East Saginaw entered upon its era of remarkable growth and development. The valley of the Saginaw was the natural outlet for the vast timber resources of a wide territory extending in all directions; and when this fact became generally known and recognized by ambitious people in the East, immigration flowed to this western frontier in increasing volume. Capital in turn was also attracted by the lure of riches easily gathered, and freely opened its treasure house to the expenditure of millions to reap the harvest that was ready, but the seeds of which it had not sown. The great pineries to the West and North were soon teeming with logging camps, the streams became choked with logs, long rafts filled the river and bayous, and the whirring saws completed the transformation of the standing timber to merchantable lumber. The saline resources of the earth were soon

tapped and the refuse and wastes of the saw mills were utilized through the medium of steam to convert the brine into salt. At every hand there was industrial activity; and in due course agriculture gradually assumed an important part in the general prosperity.

In 1849 the only sign of habitation on the site of the primitive settlement was a shake-roofed log cabin built by the American Fur Company, for the use of one of its agents, Captain Leon Snay. It stood on part of the ground now occupied by the Bancroft House, and in 1851 was used as a private school. A small clearing was made in the vicinity of this log house, the work being done by Seth and Thomas Wiley and their associates, including Otto H. G. Moores and Adoniram Dann; and the lands were surveyed and platted immediately after the choppers passed over the ground. The first rude buildings of the little village sprang up on the bank of the river along what is now Water Street, between Tuscola and Germania. There was a steam saw mill, a boarding house, an office, a rough building called "the store", and a barn, together with a few board shanties, one story and an attic, used for dwellings, to form the nucleus of the settlement.

An unbroken forest extended on three sides of the clearing, which was bounded by Washington, Tuscola and German Streets, and the river, but here and there were to be seen evidences of settlement in the smoke of a lonely hut in the woods, or burning brush heaps. A short distance below was another small clearing made by Gardner D. Williams, called the "farm", which was purchased about that time by Norman Little for agricultural purposes. It was not long before the ground was cleared as far as the bayou which crossed the Plank Road (Genesee Avenue) near the present location of Baum Street, and wooden buildings began to appear for the use of stores in the block between Washington Street and the river.

The original plat of East Saginaw, known as the "Hoyt Plat", was surveyed by A. Alberts for Alfred M. Hoyt, and published December 12, 1850. The streets running east and west, beginning south of the twelve river front lots, at the north limits, were named Astor, Miller, Carroll, Fitzhugh, Johnson, Tuscola, Plank Road (Genesee Street), and continuing south German, Williams, Hayden, Millard, Thompson, Hoyt and Emerson. The streets running north and south, parallel with the river, were named Water, Washington, Franklin, Cass, Jefferson, Warren, Webster, Clay and Rockwell. It will be noted that only a few changes of names have been made in sixty-five years, and were rendered necessary in order to avoid duplication of names by the consolidation of the twin-cities of Saginaw, which took effect in 1890. Miller Street was changed to Carlisle; Williams to Janes; Cass to Baum; Webster to Weadock; Clay to Park; and Rockwell to Second Street. At the same time a few changes were made in the names of streets on the West Side, to avoid conflict with streets bearing the same names on the East Side. Franklin Street (the first north of Court) was changed to Hancock; Jefferson to Cleveland; Water to Niagara; and Farley to Bristol Street. The additions to East Saginaw since the date of the original plat have been made by well known citizens, some of which, though comparatively insignificant in area, are valuable on account of their central location and the large and important buildings erected thereon.

Norman Little was a man of great foresight. He was also a good advertiser. The latent wealth of the valley, its productive soil and its great forests of timber, which had attracted him in former years, he now exploited throughout the East, and drew to its confines many a hardy, ambitious man with the true stuff of the pioneer. It is related by William H. Sweet, a well known lawyer, now deceased, that in February, 1850, he crossed the river from the west side with Mr. Little, at the site of the present Bristol Street

bridge, and walked down on the middle ground from that point to the little village of East Saginaw, the trail being through an almost unbroken forest. In his journey from Detroit to Saginaw, in January of the same year, he was not pleased with the appearance of the country hereabout, as it seemed to be a vast swamp. It was a wet, open winter, and the passage from Flint was made in a big uncomfortable wagon, sometimes through water and deep mud, but a part of the way between Pine Run and Saginaw was over corduroy roads. In his walk with Mr. Little he spoke of the unfavorable impression he had formed of the country, and expressed doubts respecting the future of Saginaw.

Mr. Little thereupon drew from his pocket a map of Michigan, spread it out upon a fallen tree, and pointed to the various rivers rising on all sides in the interior. "Those rivers," he said, "are all tributary to Saginaw. When the great wealth of valuable timber growing adjacent to said streams shall be brought to Saginaw, when the salt and coal underlying the valley, and agriculture shall be developed and become important factors in the business of the valley, then you will know that my confidence in the ultimate growth of the valley is not misplaced. These rivers, like the ancient roads, 'all lead to Rome,' and if you live the ordinary life of man, you will see this valley occupied by a hundred thousand people." To Mr. Sweet this seemed like a prophetic vision of a speculative enthusiast. Time, however, has demonstrated the wisdom of Mr. Little's prediction.

### He Builds a Plank Road to Flint

One of the earliest and most important improvements inaugurated by Mr. Little was the construction of a plank road to Flint, a distance of thirty-two miles. In 1848 he applied to the legislature for a charter, but the scheme was considered a visionary one, and only after much opposition did he finally secure it. "There certainly can be no harm, one way or the other, in voting for a charter," the members at length agreed, "for it will never amount to anything. The idea of building a plank road through that swampy country is ridiculously absurd — might as well talk of building a plank road to the moon." But through the untiring efforts of Mr. Little the road was put through and completed at considerable outlay. It opened up a direct highway of communication with the outside world, the value of which was at once apparent in the rapid increase in immigration and settlement.

As a result of this enterprise a post office was soon established, and a coach-and-four brought in and carried out a daily mail, while every day the cry everywhere heard was "still they come." At the lower clearing a large steam flouring mill, called the Mayflower Mills, with four run of stone, was built, which many conservative persons thought a very rash expenditure. Soon a large warehouse made its appearance on a substantial dock, and steamboats and sailing vessels began to visit the town. The only tavern then in the place was the Valley City Hotel, built in 1851 by William F. Glasby on Water Street about midway between Plank Road and Tuscola Street.

As the village began to assume the appearance of a thriving and prosperous town, a pretentious hotel was deemed a public necessity, and soon a three-story frame building arose on the southeast corner of Plank Road and Water Street, covering nearly half of the square along the road, and was given the name of Irving House. Another grist mill was erected at about this time on the west side of the bayou on the site of the store now occupied by Woolworth; new docks were built along the water front, and a ferry was put in operation at the foot of Plank Road. The demand for village property





JESSE HOYT

then became clamorous, and lot after lot was taken up, fenced off, and a home or business house erected thereon. Business continued to increase, people to flock in, and houses sprang up almost mysteriously; yet no reaction set in.

The man to whose enterprise and unceasing efforts this promising state of affairs was primarily due was Norman Little. He was born at Avon, Livingston County, New York, March 21, 1806; and was the eldest son of Doctor Charles Little, who made the first entry of government land on the Saginaw. His early boyhood and school days were spent in his native town, where he received a good education in the practical affairs of life. At the age of sixteen he came west with his father to prospect for lands suitable for town sites, and was with him in his memorable visit to the Saginaw River in 1822-23. But the time had not arrived for the unfolding of their plans of settlement, and they returned to New York State. In 1836, when the spirit of speculation swept the country, Doctor Little came to Saginaw on a visit to his daughter, Mrs. Hiram L. Miller, and was followed in July by Norman and a party of emigrants, among whom were Charles L. Richman and wife. They arrived on the first steamboat, the *Governor Marcy*, to traverse the Saginaw River. Doctor Little, who was born September 12, 1776, passed his declining years in Saginaw, where he died September 19, 1841, at the age of sixty-five.

Having enlisted the financial support of Mackie, Oakley & Jennison, of New York City, in the project of building up a prosperous city on the Saginaw, Norman Little proceeded to carry out an elaborate plan of improvements on a new plat embracing all the previous plats on the west side of the river, and including an original plat on the east side in the vicinity of what is now Bristol Street. Something of his remarkable enterprise and achievement in promoting the upbuilding of Saginaw City, before the collapse of the speculative bubble in 1838, is narrated in the preceding chapter. In 1852, when his efforts in building up a new town on the east side gave promise of success, he removed his residence to East Saginaw, and settled in a new house on the northeast corner of Water and Fitzhugh Streets, where he lived the remainder of his life.

To all the multiple business affairs of Jesse Hoyt, Mr. Little applied his genius as an organizer and promoter, and very much of the wealth that afterward accrued to the former was directly due to the enterprise and progressive spirit of the latter. While it was the capital of Mr. Hoyt that made possible the early improvements, including the laying of the plank road to Flint and the building of substantial structures, thereby declaring his confidence in the future of the place, it was the indomitable courage and energy of Mr. Little in directing the enterprises inaugurated, and the handling of the infinite details, that insured the success of their ventures. It should be remembered that Mr. Hoyt never took up a permanent residence in Saginaw, nor did he ever linger long in his periodical visits to the town; therefore, it seems eminently proper that, having left an enduring monument to himself in the splendid library which bears his name, the greater measure of credit and praise should be bestowed on his able lieutenant, who lived here and bore all the hardships, and privations of pioneer life. All honor to him who builded so well, even better than he knew.

The people who now enjoy the fruits of his far-seeing wisdom, especially when they call to mind the struggles and sacrifices through which he labored, should cherish the memory of Norman Little with tender care. The courage with which he carried out his plans and the perseverance by which he brought them to a glorious fruition, should always be held in grateful remembrance. To great energy of character and physical endurance he united a mild and benevolent disposition, and was blessed with a truly social nature

which rendered him, to the last moment of his life, an object of affectionate regard to those who were his juniors, and of uninterrupted attachment to his friends and associates of past years. To these he ever remained constant, for true friendship and a spirit of universal hospitality belonged to his nature and became substantial characteristics.

After spending the best years of his life in founding our prosperous city, Mr. Little suffered a tragic death by drowning in the Saginaw River, this unhappy event occurring on the morning of November 8, 1859. Though scarcely fifty-four years of age, he left a name intimately associated with every pioneer movement in Saginaw Valley.

#### William L. P. Little

W. L. P. Little, better known to the early settlers of Saginaw as "Colonel Little", was born at Avon, New York, November 26, 1814. He was the second son of Doctor Charles Little, and spent his childhood and youth under the paternal roof, receiving such education as was afforded by the schools of his native town. In early life he developed to a remarkable extent the indomitable energy, rare financial capacity, and mathematical exactness in matters of trade and negotiation, which were distinguishing characteristics throughout a long and active business life. He came to Saginaw City in 1836 and for four years was actively associated with his brother, Norman Little, in the upbuilding of the town. After the financial collapse we find him engaged in the mercantile business with his brother-in-law, Hiram L. Miller, in which he continued for ten years.

In 1851 Colonel Little removed to the east side and entered into partnership with Jesse Hoyt in general merchandising, occupying the premises at the foot of Genesee Street later covered by the Commercial Block. Their store was destroyed by fire on July 5, 1854, when they closed up the business. At this time the needs of the growing town for banking facilities became urgent, and on January 1, 1855, Mr. Little opened the banking office of W. L. P. Little & Company on the second floor of Hoyt's Block (now known as the Exchange Block), on the northeast corner of Genesee and Water Streets. For the first year he attended without great inconvenience to all the duties of the bank, but in 1856 James F. Brown came from New York and assumed the position of cashier. Three years after, Douglas Hoyt became an employee in the office; and in the fall of 1859 the bank was removed to the Bancroft House Block, in the room on Genesee Street so long occupied by the billiard room. The original vault for the safe-keeping of the specie and valuable papers of the old bank may still be seen in this room. On December 31, 1864, this bank went out of existence, its business being taken over by the Merchant's National Bank, which was then founded with Mr. Little as its president.

During these years Mr. Little devoted a part of his time to real estate and general commercial transactions, to the development of the salt industry, and to the manufacture of lumber in which he became one of the heaviest dealers. To the many local improvements, both of a public and private character, then being promoted, he also lent his aid and encouragement. His principal business, however, and the prime object of his ambition was the bank which bore his name, and which, from his ability as a financier and unswerving integrity in every business relation, he was peculiarly fitted to be the head.

At the first charter election under the act incorporating East Saginaw as a city, held in March, 1859, Colonel Little was elected to the Mayoralty by a large majority, notwithstanding the fact that the Democratic party, with which he was always allied, was then in the minority. The duties of his position he discharged with zeal and fidelity, and to the entire satisfaction



**COLONEL W. L. P. LITTLE**

Who came here in 1836, and in the early fifties with Jesse Hoyt, established the largest mercantile house in the northwest. In 1865 he opened the first banking office in this section of Michigan.



**CHARLES D. LITTLE**

The youngest brother of Norman and W. L. P. Little, who, about 1850, began the practice of law in Saginaw City. During the Civil War he was appointed Assistant Adjutant General on the staff of General R. S. Granger.

of all the people. In 1857 he was appointed Receiver of the United States Land Office, Moses B. Hess being the Register; and it was mainly through their efforts that the transfer of that office from Flint to East Saginaw was effected.

About 1854 he built a commodious residence, pleasantly arranged with luxurious appointments, on the northeast corner of Water and Johnson Streets. The house was of frame construction of a prevailing style of the period, with a large wing on the south side, and was painted a glistening white. It altogether was one of the pretentious residences of the town. Water Street north from Tuscola in those days was the most exclusive residence section, and the west side of the street between Johnson and the Mayflower Mills was an attractive little park sloping gradually to the water's edge. The fortunate residents thus had an unobstructed view of the river and its activities; and their back yards and stables faced on Washington Street, where are now some of our attractive residences. North of Colonel Little's house were the homes of Solomon B. Bliss, Charles B. Mott and Norman Little, all of which have disappeared excepting the old Mott House, on the southeast corner of Water and Fitzhugh Streets, so long occupied by Emil Moores, and now the home of William Glover Gage.

When past the meridian of life, in full possession of every comfort and luxury wealth could provide, which came of years of unwearying toil, surrounded by associates ever ready to yield an unquestioning assent to the suggestions of his ripe judgment and well-tried experience, happy in the possession of an affectionate family and a devoted circle of friends, a dreadful malady seized his overworked brain, and in an instant of temporary hallucination his great energy of mind was turned to self destruction. On the morning of December 9, 1867, he died in his bed from a bullet wound, self inflicted. In this tragic event which closed his earthly career the ruling instincts that had swayed his life were all apparent, and he died as he had lived, fearless and with that unconquerable spirit of a man of intense action.

### Charles David Little

Another well known member of the Little family, who came here at the beginning of the remarkable expansion of our industries and who lived here the remainder of his life, was Charles D. Little, the third son of Doctor Charles Little. He was born at Avon, New York, March 5, 1822, and passed his boyhood in acquiring a schooling, and later received a classical education with the intention of following his father's chosen profession. But his elder sisters had fretted over the strenuous life of their father in his efforts to relieve the physical ailments of the little community in which they lived, and persuaded their brother not to follow in their father's footsteps. Abandoning his original plan of life work, when yet a boy he visited Saginaw with his brothers in 1836, but soon after returned to his native State and later began the study of law in the office of Walter I. Hubbell, at Canandaigua.

In 1842 he came to Michigan and settled at Flint, where he completed his legal preparation and was admitted to the bar. He then entered into partnership with E. H. Thompson of that town, and in 1846 was elected Judge of Probate of Genesee County. At the close of his term he came to Saginaw City, and followed the practice of law for twelve years. In 1862 he enlisted in the Twenty-third Michigan Infantry, of which he was appointed quartermaster, but upon going to the front he was made assistant-adjutant general on the staff of General R. S. Granger. On account of impaired health he was compelled to resign in 1863, and, upon being honorably discharged, returned to Saginaw and engaged in farming and in dealing in real estate.

Aside from his personal affairs Mr. Little always evinced a deep interest in public matters, from 1864 to 1870, being chairman of the board of supervisors. In 1868 he was elected to the State legislature, and was again honored in 1870 and later in 1878, and was one of the prominent Democrats among the law makers of the period. He was a fine parliamentarian, and his suavity of manner, his ready command of language, his dignity and uniform courtesy made him a distinguished member of any body of men with which he was associated. For years he was one of the leaders in the business and social circles of Saginaw City, to which his circumstances of comparative leisure eminently fitted him.

Fraternally, Mr. Little was prominently identified with the Knights of Pythias, and was instrumental in founding Achilles Lodge in this city in 1874. Upon the surrender of its charter in 1889 he associated himself with Wolverine Lodge, No. 94, of which he was a member at the time of his death. In 1901 he attended the meeting of the grand lodge at Battle Creek, when he had the distinction of being the oldest past grand chancellor present. He was also a member of J. N. Penoyer post, No. 90, G. A. R., of which he was past commander.

On November 29, 1853, he was united in marriage with Miss Pamela W. Webster, of Hartford, Connecticut. Four children were born to them, Charles H., recently deceased, Mrs. S. C. J. Ostrom, Mrs. Gilbert M. Stark, and William K. Little also deceased. For many years the family home, in the stately residence at 1019 Gratiot Avenue, built by Mr. Little in 1866, was a haven of hospitality, which a courteous, considerate gentleman and his highly intelligent and charming wife presided over to the enjoyment of their numerous friends.

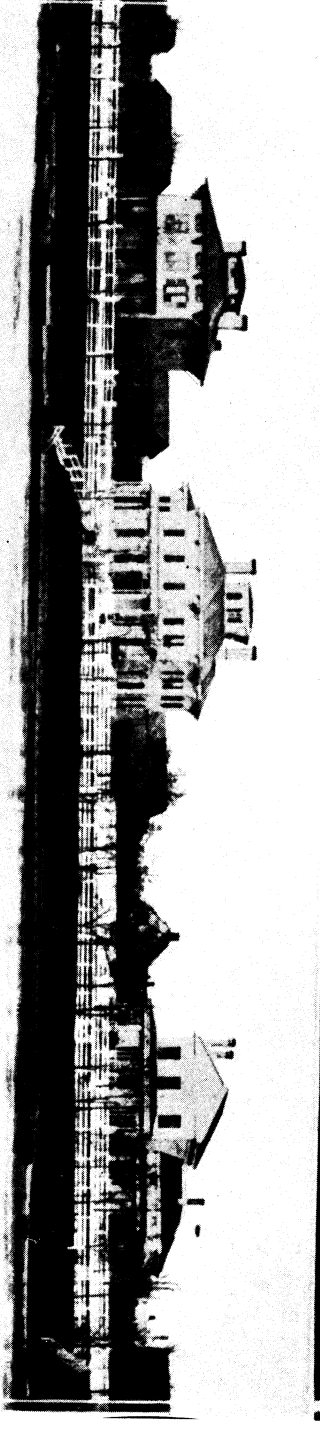
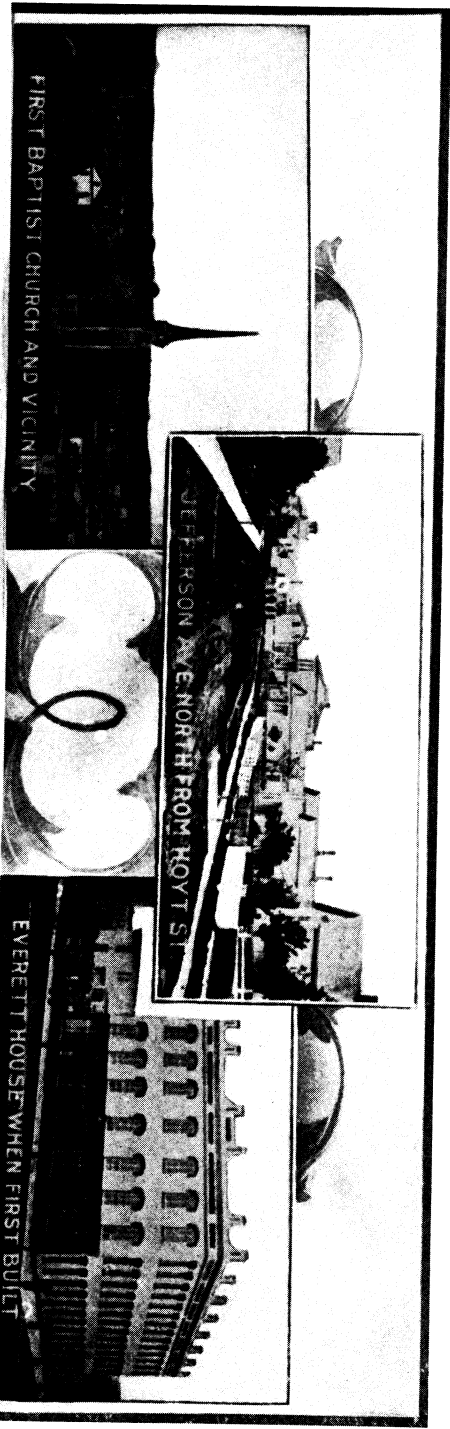
During his long life of nearly eighty-one years, Mr. Little was a close observer of the progress of the nation in the century which was the most remarkable in the world's history. Even when failing energies made close study and reading irksome, no subject of passing interest escaped his notice, and he was well informed on the current events of the time. On January 27, 1903, he laid down life's burdens, the last of a prominent family of hardy pioneers, who will be remembered as long as records of human events exist.

### Charles Wesley Grant

Charles W. Grant, who came here in a canoe as early as 1849 and built the first frame house on the East Side, was born at Smithfield, Chenango County, New York, March 15, 1818. His father, a native of Massachusetts, was born in 1774 and served in the War of 1812, holding the rank of captain. He died at the age of ninety-two in Clinton County, this State, where he had lived for fifty years. The mother died when Charles was only seven years old.

Mr. Grant came to Michigan in 1839 and settled at Ionia, where he owned and operated a saw and grist mill, one of the first in that county. In the spring of 1840 he removed to Flushing, where he started in operation the first circular saw in that section, and was also employed in a shingle mill for some time. The same year he went to Flint, where he lived until 1849, when he came down the river to this primitive settlement in a canoe. His first work here was placing a circular saw in the Emerson mill, which stood a little south of Bristol Street and west of the present City Hall.

In the spring of 1850 he formed a partnership with Alfred M. Hoyt, and they erected the "Blue Mill" at the foot of German Street, and also a wooden building which was the first frame residence built in East Saginaw. It stood at the corner of William (now Janes) and Water Streets. This mill cut



SAGINAW RIVER FRONT, NORTH OF JOHNSON STREET, IN THE EARLY DAYS

plank for the northern division of the Saginaw and Flint Plank Road. Later Mr. Grant sold his interest in the mill business to his partner, Mr. Hoyt, and then purchased a saw mill at Lower Saginaw (Bay City), which was destroyed by fire in 1860. In 1865 he purchased an interest in the Chicago mill, and operated it in association with Thomas Saylor, under the firm name of Grant & Saylor. The panic of 1873 brought reverses and nearly all the property of Mr. Grant was swept away.

By the power of an indomitable will and perseverance he gradually recovered his fortunes, and in January, 1880, in association with a nephew, purchased the Callam mill below Carrollton, which was operated many years under the firm name of C. L. Grant & Company. A salt works was also operated in connection with the mill. In 1897 Mr. Grant retired from active business.

In his prime Charles W. Grant was a wonderfully vigorous and active man, and during his eventful life witnessed the transformation of a dense wilderness into a prosperous and populated metropolis of all this section of Michigan. When he came here the log hut of Leon Snay, a pioneer trapper, was still standing on the site of the Bancroft, with native forest trees all round, and a swale or marsh extending to the very door. The little settlement centred on what is now one of the busiest thoroughfares of a prosperous city, was then tranquil in its primeval simplicity.

At the first township meeting held May 1, 1850, the township of Buena Vista was organized, and he was elected township clerk and commissioner of highways, and afterward he served as supervisor. From 1856 to 1860 he was deputy United States Marshal, and was also deputy collector of customs for one term. In 1885 he was elected sheriff of Saginaw

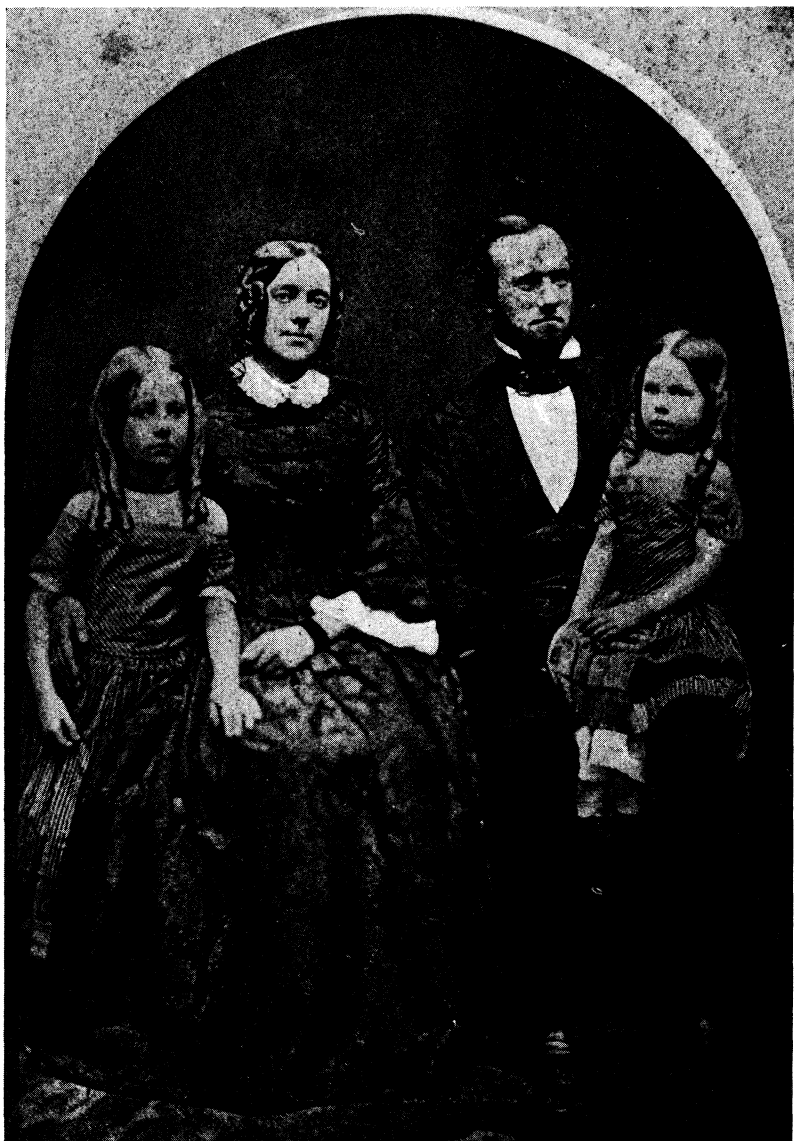
County, an office he held four years. Covering a long period he was secretary of the Board of Trade, and was actively identified with every movement for the upbuilding of the city. For many years he was corresponding secretary for Saginaw County of the Michigan Pioneer Society, and contributed many biographical sketches of our representative citizens to its historical archives.

Mr. Grant was a generous man, and an excellent citizen, who did his share in promoting the advancement of Saginaw Valley, and in laying the foundation of a flourishing city. Personally, he was genial and companionable, and held the cordial respect of all. In the autumn of 1861, he was married in Genesee County to Electa Curtis, a native of Onondaga County, New York, and through all the changing years "they lived and loved together." Having finished his life's work, he died July 11, 1903, at his home at 1663 South Washington Avenue. The passing of this kindly old gentleman of the "old school", caused profound regret and sorrow in the hearts of those who knew him well and long.



CHARLES W. GRANT





**W. L. P. LITTLE FAMILY**

The child at the left was Minnie Little, who died at the age of sixteen years. The younger girl was Alice, afterward Mrs. W. H. Coats, well known in Saginaw.

## CHAPTER X

### REMINISCENCES OF PIONEER CITIZENS

---

Recollections of Norman L. Miller — Oscar Jewett Located Old Business Houses — William A. Crane Experienced Hardy Pioneer Life — Mary Hubbard Ide Came in 1835 — William A. Williams Told of Lumber Days — John W. Richardson Once Lived in the Old Fort — George Streeb Was One of the First Merchants — What John Moore Found Here in 1851 — Joseph A. Whittier Paid Tribute to Jesse Hoyt — James F. Brown Was the First Bank Cashier — Emil A. L. Moores Was Here in Pioneer Days — East Saginaw in 1854.

**T**O have come to the place that is now a prosperous city of sixty thousand people, when that place was a forest wilderness, abounding with swamps, reptiles and wild beasts, to have seen deer chased by wolves along trails that are now, and have been for many years, modern city streets, to have shot deer where fine residences and well-kept lawns now line the way, and to have lived to a good old age possessing memories that charm and please those who may listen, has been the experience of a number of entertaining "tellers of old tales." The first recollections of a few of these pioneer citizens, of the primitive settlement on the Saginaw, began in the thirties, and like other young boys, the novelty of their early life made an indelible impression upon their minds.

The great woods, the winding rivers, and the denizens of the wilderness — a bear sniffing the air with curiosity as he detected the newcomers, and the howl of wolves at night, close to their doors, producing sensations of dread — were vividly recalled, as also the dense flocks of wild pigeons that darkened the skies, and the myriads of wild ducks, the sound of whose wings as they arose being like distant thunder, and the great schools of fish which were so numerous that they literally crowded each other in their watery retreats. In those times every man was a hunter and fisher, and every boy, as soon as he could shoulder a musket, emulated his elders in feats of the chase.

Besides the great abundance of game and fish, there were other inhabitants of the dead waters, some with voices of amazing depth and power. An amusing incident of the olden time is related in regard to them. An eastern young lady was visiting here and was struck with the number of cattle that were owned by so few persons, for on arising in the morning, the first after her arrival, she told how in the night she had heard them bellowing, first far up the river, again directly across the stream, then far down the river. As there were very few cattle then owned by the settlers, the family enjoyed a good laugh at her expense before explaining that the supposed cattle were the huge bull-frogs that populated the bayous. They would commence their concert in Green Bayou, roar for awhile and subside. The chorus would then be taken up in the Emerson Bayou (Lake Linton) and brought to a proper pause; and it would be completed in the Davenport Bayou north of the town.

#### Recollections of Norman L. Miller

One of the most versatile and entertaining conversationists of our pioneer citizens, especially when in a reminiscent mood, was the late Norman L. Miller, who came to the primitive settlement in 1836.

"My father and family arrived here," said Mr. Miller, "when I was only four years of age. It was a delightful day of early spring, and the river seemed like a mirror, so unruffled was its surface, while all nature was garbed in her brightest green. That day is one of the pleasantest memories of my boyhood. Our first night in Saginaw was spent at a log house located within the old fort stockade, which had been abandoned by the military force only twelve years before. Later we lived in a house on Hamilton Street, about four blocks north of the fort.

"On the north side of Madison Street, about forty feet from the curb line of Hamilton Street, stands a bitternut hickory tree over two feet in diameter, which in my youth was a sapling three or four inches through at the base. At the foot of this tree was a spring from which the few settlers in the neighborhood secured their water for cooking and drinking. A short distance south and west, on ground now occupied by the residence of Mrs. W. P. Morgan, was quite a sand hill, where during the day the children played. At night it had other visitors, and the howling of the wolves is another distinct recollection of my boyhood. In the morning their tracks could be plainly seen in the soft sand.

"The Indians were so numerous that they were scarcely noticed, and therefore created little comment or observation. Some of them, however, impressed themselves on my memory, and especially Tawas, a chief from whom the 'Tawasies' took their name. He was a red man of mild character and demeanor, and was a common caller at my father's house, always being ready to partake of the hospitality of the settlers. He seemed to be possessed of an insatiable appetite, for he was always 'buck-a-tay', meaning hungry.

"Another well-known Indian was Yellow Beaver, who was sometimes observed to be in mourning, with his face blackened in token of sorrow or dejection. Paints were much used by the redskins, yellow and red being the popular colors, and were laid on the face in blotches and stripes. They were picturesque figures in their mocassins and blankets, bare-headed, occasionally with a hawk's or eagle's feather twisted into their black hair. Their names were a variegated assortment of Bears, Beavers, Birds, Fishes and Frogs, to say nothing of the beautifully poetic and descriptive names, such as 'Almost-Touches-The Clouds', 'The-River-of-Stones', or 'The-Great-Rock.'

"Deer and bears were frequently seen in what is now Michigan Avenue, while the wild pigeons were so plentiful as to be nuisances to those who might sow a little wheat. Saginaw was a great fur-trading point then, and had been one of the stations of the American Fur Company. In fact, every merchant was a fur trader. While in the employ of W. L. P. Little, who ran the store known as 'The Red Warehouse', I have seen twenty thousand dollars' worth of valuable pelts hanging in that place awaiting shipment. About 1848 muskrats brought eight to ten cents; coons, twenty-five to fifty cents; mink, sixty to seventy-five; marten, one dollar to a dollar and a quarter; fisher, one dollar and a half; beaver, one dollar per pound, and Indian tanned deer hides, the same price.

"There were also red and gray fox, bear, lynx and other fur which went to provide the Chippewas with blankets, beads, firewater, powder and other necessities, real and imaginary.

"At this time I was about sixteen years of age, and I well remember the Indians used to gather in hundreds for the payment of their treaty annuities. I have seen not less than twenty-five hundred here at one time, occupying the river front of what is now Rust Park in hundreds of their temporary wigwams, their canoes lining the shore, and the night rendered indescribably weird and picturesque by the reflected light of their camp fires.



**NORMAN L. MILLER**

A pioneer who was actively identified with Saginaw's interests for seventy-nine years. He contributed much interesting lore to the history of the valley; and lived to the age of eighty-three.



**CHARLES T. BRENNER**

An old resident of Saginaw City who came in 1850 and engaged in the manufacture of shingles and salt. He lived to the advanced age of ninety-eight years, or until 1909.

"Houses were very few at that day and the most prominent buildings were the old fort, the 'Red Store' at the foot of Mackinaw Street, which was the American Fur Company's establishment, the 'Red Warehouse' at the foot of what is now Cleveland Street, and Campau's trading post near the site of Wright's mill. The residence of E. S. Williams was on the high ground now occupied by my own house, while Gardner D. Williams had a residence further south in the block now covered by the Hill Trade School. The old cellar of this house was plainly visible a few years ago, and marked the site of the home of a man who in the early days contributed much to the life and prosperity of Saginaw.

"During primitive times a creek crossed Michigan Avenue at Cass Street, and was spanned by a bridge from which boys, including myself, were wont to fish. This little stream entered the river at about the foot of Adams Street, and it formed quite a gully at that point, which flanked the fort on the south, and gave a measure of protection to that frontier post.

### How He Shot His First Bear

"It was a part of my duties to bring down the cows from a pasture in a small clearing near where the pail and tub factory now stands, and on these daily trips I always carried my gun and was accompanied by my dog which was very active in the pursuit of game, both large and small. One afternoon in the fall, while attending to this duty, the dog began a great barking, which was always indicative of game being near. At that time the road was approximately where Michigan Avenue is at present, and when I came out upon it I was met by my father, who said the dog had treed a bear. We made haste to follow the direction of the furious barking, and soon came up with the dog where indeed he had a bear 'up a tree.' The exact spot was near where Stewart B. William's house stood on South Michigan Avenue.

"My gun was a small bore weapon, having been a rifle which had been re-bored for shot, and was so loaded. As quick as my father said 'bear', I began searching in my pockets for something heavier than shot, and found a slug made for a different gun, but by chewing it into shape I made it fit my own weapon, so that by the time the game was sighted the gun was 'loaded for bear.' My father, fearing the result, wished to do the shooting, but I could not see it in that light, and took a very deliberate aim at the bear's head, fired, and down came Mr. Bruin, dead as a hammer. He was not very large, weighing perhaps a hundred pounds, but it was a pretty good exploit after all for a boy.

"As I grew older I often hunted deer, and even after the Civil War these animals were killed within the limits of the present city. The land from the River Road, now the extension of Michigan Avenue, to the Brockway Road was nearly all covered with a dense forest; and on our farm, now the Morgan fruit farm, a deer runway crossed from north to south. One day while hunting on this tract I struck a deer trail and began to follow it. Soon noticing the print of mocassins following it, I concluded that the Indian was first in the field and thus entitled to the game, so I struck out for the Brockway Road with the intention of going home. I had not gone far when, near the Steltzriede clearing, I came upon another deer trail and followed it for a short distance, when a fine buck sprang up in front of me and was promptly shot. I had tied the head and legs together and made ready to drag the carcass out, when an Indian appeared, following the trail. He glanced at the dead buck, then at me, gave an expressive 'ugh!' and turning quickly away, disappeared in the forest. It was the same deer that he had followed for hours and had tired down to the point of causing it to lie down to rest, when it fell a victim to me who had so easily earned it.

"In those days the favorite method of deer-hunting was still-hunting. As soon as the snow fell in the fall, the hunter would search for tracks, and finding one would quietly follow it. If he was unable to come up with the game unawares, he still patiently followed the trail. When the deer became tired it would lie down, and if the wind was not unfavorable, the hunter stood a good chance of getting a shot when the animal started to its feet. On one occasion I tracked a deer for two days, taking up the trail in the morning where I left it at night, and at last got a single ineffectual shot, when I gave up the chase in disgust. Another time, when crossing a small clearing or 'slash', a young deer came bounding through at a range of only four rods. Although the gun I carried was an English, double-barrel shot-gun, 16-gauge, cap lock, I fired and brought him down, the pellets completely penetrating the small body, and hanging in the skin on the opposite side.

"Here hangs a fine buck head," continued Mr. Miller, "a trophy of a hunt near Wahjamega in Tuscola County. On that occasion I was armed with two guns, the double-barrel shot-gun and a repeating Spencer carbine, the latter being of a kind used by some of the cavalry in the Civil War. A deer was started and I opened a rapid-fire with the Spencer, which proved ineffectual. I then seized my old standby—the shot-gun—aimed and fired, and the buck dropped in his tracks, death-stricken.

"One of the party named Powell coming up, called out: 'Did ye git him?' He was told yes. 'Well, I thought so, fer I heard ye emptyin' yer arsenal!' I felt greatly chagrined to have wasted seven shots from the Spencer, but as the operation of working the mechanism was new to me, I was excused for shooting wild.

"In the early days, wolves and bears were very plentiful, but appeared much shyer than the deer, and I never more than once or twice saw a wolf running wild, one of these occasions being when a wolf was seen pursuing a deer through what is now the heart of the business section of the West Side."

#### Oscar Jewett Located Old Business Houses

Another of those men closely associated with the settlement of the county, was the late Oscar Jewett, son of Eleazer Jewett the first permanent white settler in this valley. For many years Mr. Jewett lived on a farm not far from the northwestern limits of the city, and a few months before his death gave a glimpse of early affairs on the West Side.

"I was born November 3, 1837, in Jewett's Hotel, located at what is now the corner of Throop and Niagara Streets. This was the first hotel ever built in Saginaw, and was put up by my father in 1833. He moved into it from the former home at Green Point, where Riverside Park is now. Father came here in 1826, and my sister, Mary Jewett, who became the wife of Doctor N. D. Lee, was the first white girl born in Saginaw County, which then ran clear up toward Mackinaw.

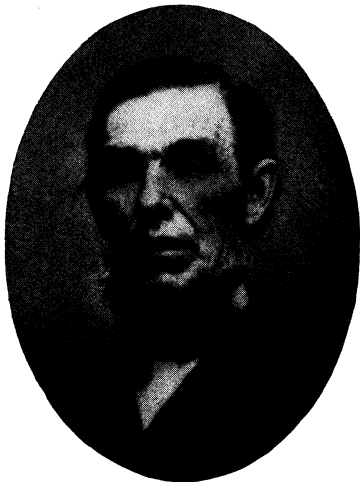
"The hotel was a popular place at that time, and in 1839 every man, woman and child in the vicinity of the little settlement, gathered there for the Fourth of July celebration. A cannon had been packed up from Detroit on horseback for the occasion, and was fired off between speeches; and a great dinner was served. The other hotels as I remember them were, the Webster House, situated on Washington Street, with Lester Cross as proprietor; the Saginaw City Exchange, on Ames and Water Streets, conducted by Horace Douglass; the Shakespeare Hotel, kept by C. T. Brenner, at the corner of Adams and Hamilton; the Aetna House, by George Beeman, at the corner of Van Buren and Water; and C. F. Esche's Sylvan Retreat on Court Street.

"Michael Dougherty's shipyard was located on Water Street; A. C. Paine's livery stable at the corner of Cass and Water; C. Wider's tannery at Stevens and Water, and John W. Richardson's harness shop, the steam spoke factory, and A. Fisher's cabinet and chair factory on Water Street. The dry goods houses were those of D. H. Jerome & Company, in the Jerome Block; George W. Bullock, G. T. Zschoerner, in the Woodruff Block; Ferin and Flathau and P. C. Andre, on the dock. The grocery trade was represented by J. Dowling, A. Andre, Myron Butman, George Streeb, William Binder, Jacob Vogt, on Water Street; and Michael Redman kept a restaurant at the corner of Hamilton and Jefferson (Cleveland) Streets. Mrs. Rice and Mrs. Hamilton supplied the needs of the women with millinery; and the tailors were John Mullcahy, M. Rathke and F. A. Leasia. Such was Saginaw City's business circle sixty years ago."

In his declining years Mr. Jewett retained to a remarkable degree the vigor and strength of his early youth. He was a man of powerful frame, broad shouldered, deep chested, and in his prime stood six feet four inches, weighing more than two hundred pounds.

### William A. Crane Experienced Hardy Pioneer Life

The name of Crane is a well known and honored one in Saginaw County, for there is an ex-Probate Judge, a prominent lawyer and real estate man, two physicians and a prominent farmer, all the descendants of a pioneer boy whose father, Obadiah Crane, settled on the Tittabawassee River in 1831.



OBADIAH CRANE

The log cabin that first sheltered this early pioneer stood a little east of the Hackett Ravine, and it soon gave way to a substantial house of square-hewed logs, in which the first "town meeting" in Tittabawassee was held. This pioneer boy was William A. Crane, who was born in the "block-house" in 1835, and whose earliest recollections were of Indians, wild beasts, and all the wild surroundings of pioneer life. Directly across the river was the large Red Bird Reservation, so called after the chief, Red Bird; and here the family lived until 1843. In those times there were many feasts and dances in the Chippewa villages, and thrilling experiences and occasional tragedies which made a lasting impression on the mind of the little boy. Deaths by violence were by no means rare, falling trees, gunshot wounds, drownings or other casualties making a long list of deaths in the aggregate.

"One of my earliest recollections," said Mr. Crane, "was the tragic death of a particular friend of my boyhood, Eli Benson, who was about my age. I was playing with him one afternoon, and on his return home to the west side of the river, was called by his father to drive a cow away from the vicinity of the place where he was felling a tree. By some mischance, the little fellow got directly in the path of the falling tree, and was killed. This happening made a deep impression upon my mind, and one which will never be effaced.

"Among the Indians who frequently visited my father's house was Green Bird, who evinced a particular fondness for me, and made for me bows and arrows, and brought eagle's feathers to stick in my hair and paint to daub my face. One day Green Bird engaged in a friendly scuffle with another Indian back of our house, and close to the water's edge. He got his antagonist down and held him in such a manner that he drowned. From that time my Indian friend was an object of terror to me who had been his favorite. On another occasion, when an Indian pow-wow was being held, a savage who had secured some of the white man's rum became drunk, and in some manner discharged a gun in the crowd, killing a squaw. The shooting was purely accidental, the gun being loaded for the purpose of firing a salute, and the woman was killed by the wad, which was heavy enough to do the mischief.

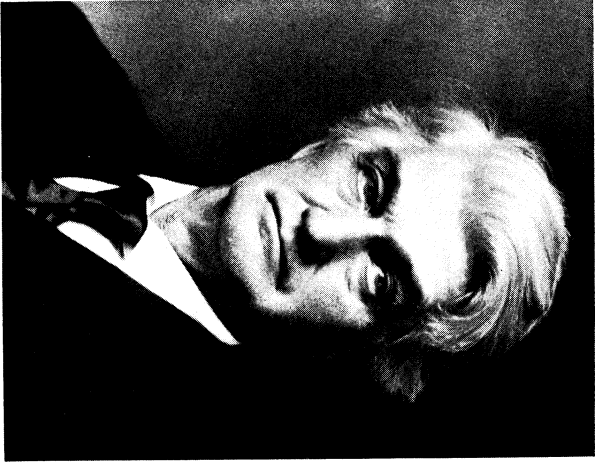
"It often became necessary for my father to be away from home for a day or two, and on such occasions, my mother would pile the firewood against the door at night to keep the Indians from entering, for like most of the settler's wives, she stood in fear of them. Still they were very friendly, and many were the choice pieces of game that came from their hands. Their clothing in winter was more or less of deer skins, and they wore mocassins and used paint freely on their faces. Their canoes were familiar sights as they passed up and down the river, bareheaded, save for an occasional feather. They managed their cockle-shell craft with the utmost grace and skill. At times their rich voices were heard in the wild songs of the forest, and perhaps the boom of the drum rolled out across the stream, and at night their camp fires twinkled through the gloom.

"One of the things the pioneer craved after providing a comfortable shelter for his family, was some means of educating his children. My father had built a log house for his sister across the ravine, and immediately on its banks, where for a time she and her husband lived. Later it was abandoned, and as there were now several families with children, scattered up and down the river, some rude benches were constructed and placed in the log cabin, a teacher named Elmore secured, and school begun. Mr. Elmore did not teach very long and was succeeded by Miss Agnes Ure, who is held in loving memory by the few living who went to her school. The log cabin was soon after superseded by a more pretentious structure in a different locality.

"I recall an incident," added Mr. Crane, "which occurred while my aunt was living in the school-house cabin across the ravine. One evening the family dog, a fine large animal, began making an outcry in the hollow, when my uncle, hearing the noise, shouted, 'Shake him, Keep! Shake him!' From the sounds he knew it was a wolf that the dog was grappling, and believing that his dog was a master of any wolf, shouted to encourage him. But it was the wolf that was doing all the shaking, and when they came to the rescue poor Keep was dead. This ravine was a favorite runway for wild animals of all kinds, as it afforded them a covered passage to the water's edge and led far back into the timber."

Mr. Crane, who has passed his eightieth year, was married in 1857 to Miss Purchase, a native of New York State, who came to this valley with her father's family at an early day. In April, 1915, they celebrated the fifty-eighth anniversary of their marriage, rejoicing that their five sons and two daughters are living. William E. Crane and Riley L. Crane are prominent members of the Saginaw County Bar, Doctor B. F. A. Crane is widely known as a surgeon, Doctor Milo A. Crane is practicing in Chicago, while Ambrose Crane is a farmer and business man of Midland. There are sixteen grandchildren and one great grandchild.





**WILLIAM A. CRANE**

Who was born on the banks of the Tittabawassee in 1835, and spent the greater portion of his life on a farm opposite the Red Bird Reservation.



**MRS. WILLIAM A. CRANE**

One of the noble pioneer women of Tittabawassee, who bore all the privations of border life, and raised a family of honored men and women.

### William A. Williams Told of the Lumber Days

The last member of that sturdy family of pioneers, which was such an important factor in the upbuilding of this county, was William A. Williams. He was born here March 12, 1834, and had the distinction of being the first white male child born in the county. His father was Gardner D. Williams, a prominent fur trader and lumberman of the early days, and was afterward the first mayor of Saginaw City. For years William was a member of the lumber firm of George S. Williams & Brothers, and later owned and conducted a large farm. His eventide of life was spent in a cozy home with ample garden spot in the outskirts of the West Side.

"In 1834, the year I was born," he said, "my father and Uncle Ephraim built the first saw mill on the river, and it was located at the foot of Mackinaw Street. There was not much demand for lumber then, and they sold better lumber for two dollars and a half a thousand feet than you can buy now for twenty dollars. Mill culls, they called them, but a man could get as good lumber as he wanted to put into a house out of mill culls. If an end of a board was a little shaky, it was graded as cull, even though the other end might be clear stuff. With all the wealth of standing timber in those days, I never thought I should see the time that we would use lumber in Saginaw shipped here from California.

"About 1850, when Norman Little began to build up the east side of the river, my brother George and I took lumber on a lighter from our mill for the first frame building put up there. Jesse Hoyt had some sort of an office building then, but I don't think it was of frame construction.

"You must remember our old house which stood on the corner of Michigan Avenue and Mackinaw Street. All the lumber in that house was whip sawed, except the siding which was brought from Port Huron. That seemed a long distance to bring boards, farther away than California is now. You will be surprised when I tell you that in the main chimney of that house there were nine thousand brick. It had five fire places and a bake oven connected with it. We didn't have any stoves in those days. My mother did all the cooking in an open fire place. We boys would haul in the wood on a sled, and put on more than a quarter of a cord to build a fire.

"When a boy I have seen my father load eighteen thousand bushels of cranberries into the hold of a vessel. He bought them from the Indians who gathered them in the marshes, and they were worth about a dollar a bushel. They were good berries, too, and found a ready market in the larger ports along the lakes. There were great times here seventy years ago, and the fur business was immense.

"When I notice Saginaw's prosperous citizens riding by here in their automobiles, I think of the style that prevailed in the early days. I remember how I used to put straw and blankets into a dump cart, put the old pacing mare into the shafts, and then my mother, Mrs. Norman Little, Mrs. A. M. Richman, and perhaps some other member of their social circle, would get into the cart and drive out to the home of my uncle, Alpheus Williams. He lived on what is now known as the Vogt farm. They would get dinner there and then go across the river to the house of Albert Miller, where they generally stayed for supper. They enjoyed life just as much as people who ride in their motor cars today; but the old cart would look rather queer alongside some of the cars that pass here.

"In 1850 I accompanied Uncle Alpheus and his family, including the son Gardner, to Pontiac when they started for California. They went through with horses and wagon. When we got to Pontiac they urged me to sell my

conveyance and go along with them. Maybe I would have been better off if I had, but I am well satisfied to be right here in the place where I was born and reared."

### George Washington Davis

One of the early postmasters of Saginaw City, who followed Ephraim S. and Gardner D. Williams, in the early fifties, was George W. Davis, a sturdy pioneer who is still remembered by our older residents. He was born April 20, 1819, and was one of eleven children, his father, Josiah Davis, being an owner and operator of canal boats on the Erie Canal. They removed from Schnectady, New York, to Michigan as early as 1837 and settled at Oxford, where the father entered government land as a pioneer settler and engaged in clearing the ground and cultivating the soil.

In 1849 George W. Davis came to Saginaw City and opened a general store in the "old red store," which stood at the corner of Mackinaw and Water Streets. This business he conducted until 1855, when, upon the death of Mrs. Davis, he sold out and later operated a small packet on the river between here and St. Charles. The rivers at that period formed the only means of communication between the two places. About 1865 he went into the grocery business, under the firm name of Davis & Harrington, at the southwest corner of Water and Franklin (Hancock) Streets, directly opposite the water pumping station. Two years later he put up a wooden building on Water Street opposite the freight house, but it soon burned down and he built a brick block in which he kept a grocery store for some years. In 1870 he established a dray and freight cartage business, in which he continued to the time of his death which occurred February 11, 1890.

### Thadeas de Lamorandiere

An old French gentleman, familiarly known in the old days as "Teddy," who it was believed came of an old and distinguished family in their native land, was Thadeas de Lamorandiere. He was born about 1823, and came from Canada to this valley in 1845, engaging in the fur business. When the fur trade declined he entered the employ of Daniel L. C. Eaton, in the insurance business, the office being in the Bernhard Block at the corner of Court and Water (Niagara) Streets. He died in 1900 at the age of seventy-seven, survived by two daughters who reside at 820 Cass Street.

### Mary Hubbard Ide Came to the Wilderness in 1835

Mary Hubbard, who in later life was Mrs. Mason Ide, mother of Frank Ide, was a little girl seven years old when in 1835 her family removed from Lockport, New York. The trip from Buffalo to Detroit was made by boat, and thence to Saginaw by wagon. The leader of the party was the late Phineas D. Braley, and consisted of seventeen persons of whom the Hubbards counted seven. All of the party could not ride at one time, and even the children who were old enough to walk took their turns in picking their way among the stumps which covered the path through the forest. It was so obstructed in places with fallen trees and brush that the men of the party had often to use their axes to clear the way. The party was more than a week on the road from Detroit. At the Cass River they had the good fortune to meet the road crew that was cutting a way through to Saginaw, and were ferried across the stream in a large scow.

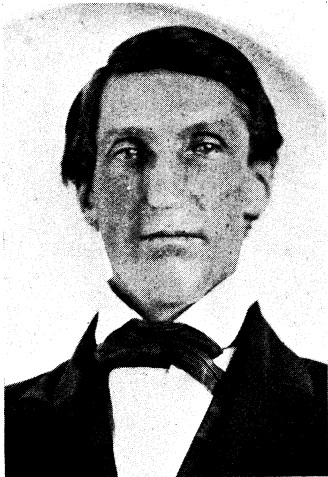
"Just before reaching the scow," relates Mrs. Ide, "my mother, who had been walking, fell utterly exhausted, and was picked up by a man of the party and carried like a child on board the scow. She was very slight and the extreme fatigue of the unusual trip had worn her out. I well remember



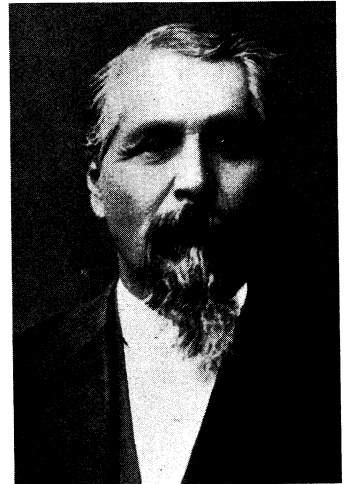
ADELAIDE DELISLE CUSHWAY  
(Mrs. Benjamin Cushway)



MARY HUBBARD IDE



GEORGE WASHINGTON DAVIS



THADEAS DE LAMORANDIERE

that the hickory nuts were falling, and think it must have been late September or early October. After leaving the Cass at Bridgeport Center, the road followed the Indian trail (now the extension of South Washington Avenue) to the present Mackinaw Street bridge, where there was a scow ferry by which we were taken across the river. At that time there was a building known as the 'Little Red House', near the corner of Niagara and Mackinaw Streets, in which we spent our first night in Saginaw, the children sleeping on the floor upstairs, while the men of the party sought shelter elsewhere.

"Afterward my father and Mr. Braley located on the Tittabawassee River, the latter building a house which I think is still standing on the East River Road, on a knoll a little west of the Shattuck Creek and on the south side of the road. My father located on the river flats south of the Braley place, where he built a frame house on the bank of the river. Here we had numerous neighbors, some of whom were occasionally troublesome. The Indians were frequent callers, while bears, deer and wolves were so common that they soon ceased to be novelties. At night the howling of the latter was quite terrifying to the young children.

"One day a big bear, that had gained the idea that fresh pork would be an agreeable change of diet, was observed making preparations to enter the pig sty where were several young pigs. My brother and another boy with their guns sallied forth and interrupted the feast, Bruin making off in haste, unhurt, however, except in his feelings. Incidents of this kind were of common occurrence, and many were the adventures told in front of the great fireplaces or around the old 'revolving stove.' This curious utensil of daily use was a treasured possession of the family, and was so arranged that the pots and kettles and pans could be severally brought over the fire by turning the top of the stove, which revolved on a pivot. The stove had no oven, the want of which was supplied by an arrangement consisting of an iron ring with suitable covers which was placed on top of the stove, thus making a portable oven in which we baked our bread or roasted meat.

"The first year of my childhood pioneer life I well remember was one of privation, as there was but little to be obtained in the way of shoes, hats and clothing; and the mother was obliged to make shift as best she could in clothing her family. Some leather was finally obtained and the children were shod with a sort of mocassin of her own manufacture.

"It was not long before my father found that he had made a mistake in locating on the flats, for after the country began to be settled up the streams were cleared of floodwood which held back the freshest waters, and the obstructions to boat and canoe navigation in the smaller branches were removed. This allowed the floods to come out with a greater rush, with attendant high water on the lower courses. Our place was flooded out, and we lost pigs, chickens, and a horse, and my father moved away from this original location."

In young womanhood, Mrs. Ide taught school for several terms, her first school being located on the present site of the Thomastown cemetery, above the State Street Bridge on the West River Road. She was united in marriage with John Mason Ide in 1849 at Flint, where they lived until 1858 when they removed to Flushing. Mr. Ide died April 5, 1871, and two years later Mrs. Ide came to Saginaw, where she resided until her death in 1915.

### John W. Richardson Once Lived in the Old Fort

It is not given to many to round out four-score years, and when we find a person still older who has passed almost his entire life here, we realize that he is a true pioneer and feel a quickening interest in him. This was particularly true of John W. Richardson, who came here in early boyhood and

lived a useful and eventful life covering a period of seventy-eight years in this community. He was born on the island of Cape Breton, June 23, 1833, and two years after came with his parents to America, locating first at Boston. Later they spent a year in Detroit, and came to Saginaw in the fall of 1837. He obtained an education such as the common schools of that day afforded; and in 1851 was apprenticed to the late Cole Garrett, then the only harness maker in Saginaw. Throughout his active business career, he always evinced a broad public spirit; and he possessed a keen memory which enabled him to relate many incidents of the early days in this valley.

"On New Year's day, 1838," said Mr. Richardson, "we were living in the old barracks of the fort stockade, which stood on or near the corner now occupied by the Miller Block, at Court and Hamilton Streets. It wasn't exactly that corner for the streets were not laid out when the log barracks were built, and the building probably stood partly on what is now the intersection of the streets.

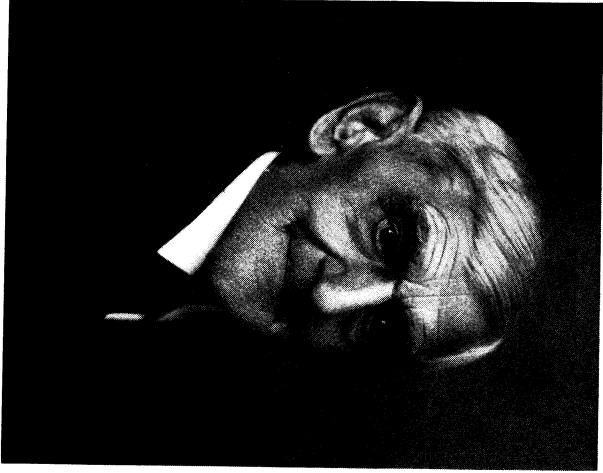
"No, there are not many people here who were residents as long as I can remember. William A. Williams, Oscar Jewett, Norman L. Miller and William A. Crane were schoolmates of mine. Miss Beach, afterwards Mrs. Samuel Shattuck, was my first teacher. She was an aunt, I think, of Emmett L. Beach, an ex-Circuit Judge. As long as I can remember there were only three German families here, so you see the pioneers of that nationality are generally junior to myself.

"After learning the harness business very thoroughly," he continued, "I opened a shop of my own in 1854. It was located on Water Street where nearly all the business houses were then situated, and when they lined both sides of the street from Jefferson (Cleveland) Street to Mackinaw. I was a maker and dealer in harnesses, which was largely that demanded by the lumbering industry, and also in saddles, martingales and trunks, a business I conducted for fifty years. When the lumber business fell off, my trade was affected somewhat and I felt out of touch with the newer conditions, so I gave it up several years ago.

"At different times during my active life I kept the books for certain lumber jobbers and attended to their business here, and some of them, on going to the woods for several months at a time, made a practice of leaving their money with me for safe keeping, rather than entrust it to a bank. This sounds rather queer in these days, when the solidity of our banks is unquestioned, but the conditions were very different then. The people had not gotten over their distrust of moneyed institutions, and the disasters attending the period of wild speculation and of the 'wild cat' bank days, were still fresh in their memory."

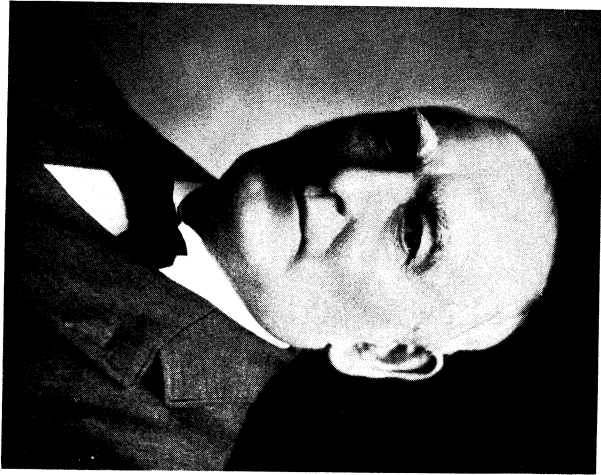
In the late sixties Mr. Richardson built the business block at 115-117 South Hamilton Street, and his faith in the ultimate prosperity of Saginaw was shown in his investing at times in other parcels of real estate. In politics he was a staunch Democrat, and served the city and county as alderman and supervisor. He was the last city treasurer of Saginaw City, concluding his second term when the consolidation of the Saginaws was effected. On municipal and State affairs he was very well informed, and he acquired a general knowledge of world's events by extensive reading and study.

On October 9, 1872, he was united in marriage with Miss Mary Kelley, of Belleville, Ontario; and was the father of William J. Richardson and Miss Alice Richardson. There is also one grandchild. He was a devout Roman Catholic and at the time of his death, February 13, 1915, was the oldest living member of St. Andrew's parish, of which he was one of its most liberal



**GEORGE STREEB**

One of the first merchants of Saffman City, who has been engaged in the grocery business for sixty-two years, and is in his ninety-fourth year (1915).



**JOHN W. RICHARDSON**

A pioneer whose recollections of Saffman go back to 1838, when his father's family lived in the old stockade fort. He was one of the earliest to engage in the harness and leather business.

supporters. He was also the projector of "St. Andrew's Cemetery, and was its treasurer for many years. In his views he was very tolerant and was highly regarded by all who knew him.

### **George Streeb Was One of the First Merchants**

Very few of our pioneer merchants now living have attained to such a venerable age and rounded out so many years of active business as George Streeb, the veteran grocer of North Webster Street. Though his eyesight and hearing have been somewhat impaired of late years, his heart is still merry with the spirit of youth. The keynote of his life has been activity, and even in his advanced years he is always busy. He has been engaged in the grocery business on the West Side for sixty-two years, and speaks entertainingly of his life and work.

"I was born in Nurnberg, province of Bavaria, Germany, February 28, 1822, where my boyhood and youth was spent, but in 1850 I came to America. Soon after, I was married in New York to my childhood sweetheart, Margaret Beck, who had preceded me to this country about three years. We came direct to Saginaw, where my wife found employment in the Webster House, while I went to the woods and chopped wood at forty cents a cord. After three years we had saved a little money and decided to establish a grocery business, which we located first on Water Street, as that was the only business section of the town. The first permanent sidewalk in Saginaw was laid in front of my store.

"After working up a good business we moved to our present location where for forty-four years I have continued the trade. At first it was the only store west of Washington (Michigan) Street, but since then the whole neighborhood has been built up with residences. I can well remember when the Emerson mill and office and boarding house were the only buildings on the east side of the river, and when the Indians and dog trains carried the mail to and from the northern settlements, long before the river became choked with logs, and the hum of the lumber industry was heard at every hand.

"No, I can't see to read any more, but my daughters, Margaret, Johanna and Catherine read the newspapers, both German and English, and I am still interested in world's events, even though I am in my ninety-fourth year."

### **What John Moore Found Here in 1851**

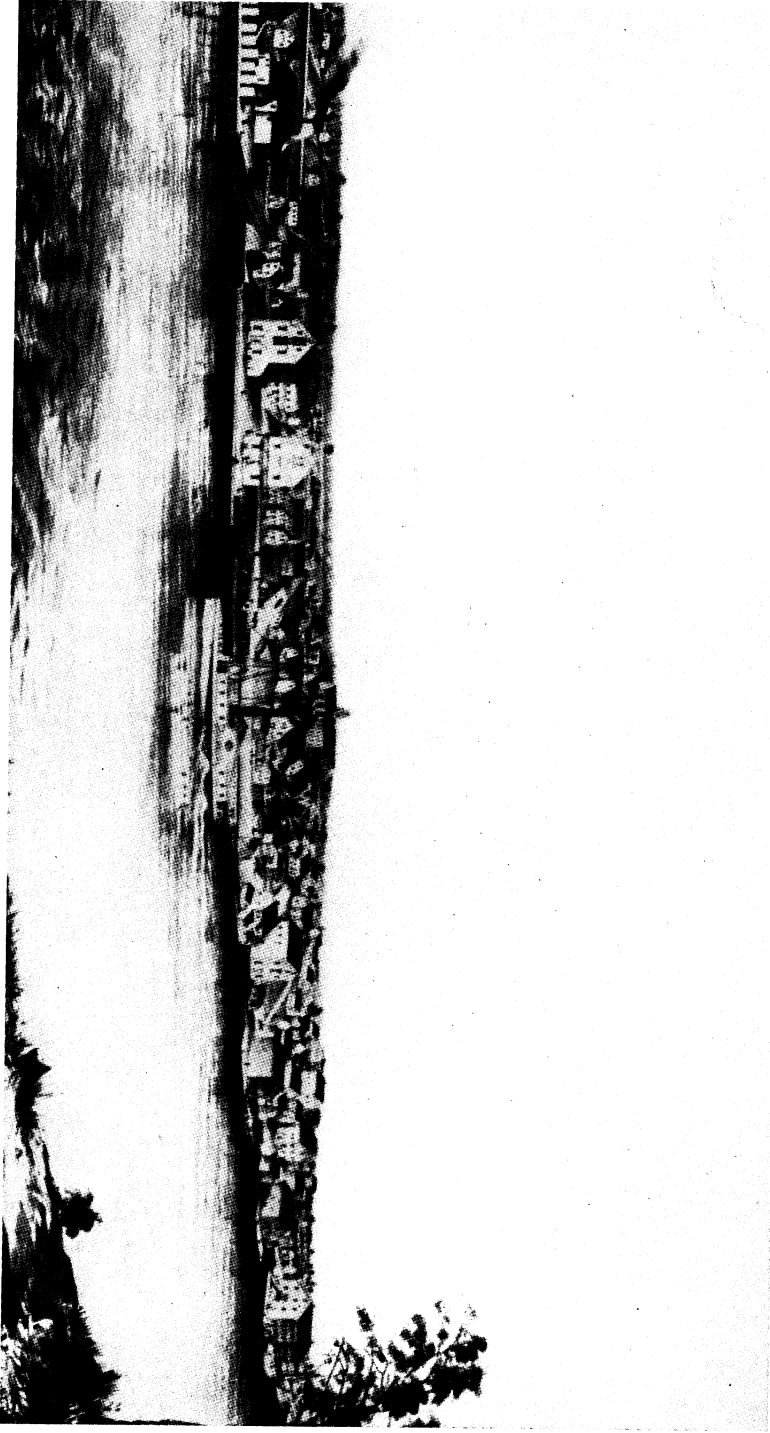
Among the enterprising men who came to this valley at the beginning of its prosperity is John Moore, the father of the Union School System. In the sixty-fifth year of his residence here he is one of the few remaining links connecting the past with the present, and occupies the somewhat unique position of one whose counsel, for the last thirty-five years, has been esteemed because of the high place he attained in legal and municipal matters during his active life. His reminiscences of early days are always entertaining, and his clear, keen memory in the ninetieth year of his life brings out interesting incidents of long ago, and clothes the leading figures of our history with life and action, often picturesque and humorous.

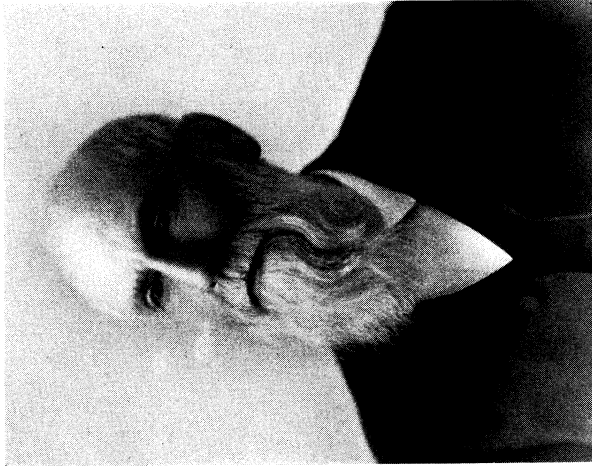
"I first came to Saginaw in May, 1851," relates Mr. Moore, "to look over the ground and to meet J. G. Sutherland, afterward circuit judge, who had been admitted to the bar in the same class with me three years before, and with whom I was considering a partnership. There was then no railroad to these parts, but there were stages running from Detroit to Pontiac, Pontiac to Flint, and Flint to Saginaw. The Mackinaw Road which the State had been constructing, with Mackinaw as its objective point, then stopped at Pine Run.



At the left is shown Mackinaw Street and the Williams Mill, the first built in the valley. On the hill in the center is the old Court House and the First Presbyterian Church. Further north is the Webster House and the store of George W. Bullock, opposite, while at the extreme right is shown the "red warehouse," afterward converted into a saw and planing mill.

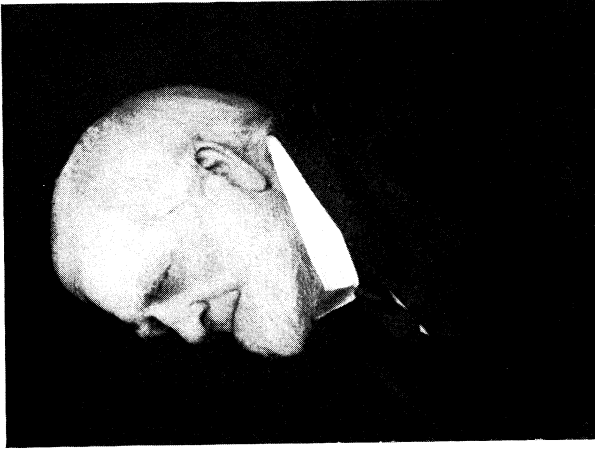
SAGINAW CITY IN 1850





**JOHN MOORE**

One of the first lawyers to locate at Saginaw City, his residence here dating from 1851. He was the father of the Union School District and has been prominent in public affairs.



**JOSEPH A. WHITTIER**

One of the prominent figures in our early history, of rugged honesty and Quaker simplicity, who spent a long life of usefulness and broad purpose, the memory of whom remains alive.

"The trip to Saginaw was a tedious and tiresome one as I came by my own conveyance, but I arrived safely and put up at the Webster House, then the leading hotel of the place. It was located on the northwest corner of what are now Michigan Avenue and Cleveland Street, and was the gathering place for the crowd. The following day was Sunday, but there was little religion here then, and the office and bar room of the hotel was a lively place. Drink was distributed freely and pleasantly.

"It was Sutherland who suggested that we visit the Halls of the Montezumas. I didn't know to what he referred, but he said Curt Emerson lived there, and we started. We took a canoe and paddled across the river to the Emerson property, which was where the City Hall now stands. It was a frame building, much like the other frame houses of the place and well kept. Mr. Emerson I found to be of medium height, slim and sharp featured. I afterward came to know him very well. He was an educated man and very gentlemanly when sober. Unfortunately he could not resist temptation and a little liquor seemed to upset him. It was unfortunate for him and for the city that he was so intemperate.

"I was introduced to him on this occasion and as was his custom he quickly offered us liquor. The sideboard was covered with bottles. I declined, however, and asked to be excused, as I did not use liquor. He had been drinking a little, although he was not intoxicated, and he made a demonstration as though about to force me to take it, when Mr. Sutherland interfered and told him that he knew I did not drink. Mr. Emerson straightened up.

"'Do you think of coming here to practice law and not drink whiskey?' he asked.

"'I think so,' I said.

"'Huh!' he snorted. 'You come here and we'll have you drunk as a fool in sixty days.'

"Nevertheless I transacted his business for him from the time I came here, and when a friend chided him for employing me, when I took no part in his convivial gatherings, he said:

"'One d——— fool's enough in business. I can do that part.'

"I came to know him very well. When he was sober he was quiet, refined, gentlemanly, big-hearted and courteous. He was a man of fine ability, of energy and courage. But a little liquor affected him. When he had been drinking he liked to make speeches and to quote Latin.

"Conditions here were different in those days. This was the frontier and the men were of the 'hail fellow well met' kind. I found in Saginaw when I came men of great ability, young, eager, energetic, capable — men who did things. It is always those of the greatest energy and hardihood who lead in the frontier work. And they were all a convivial set. Everybody drank. There was a great deal more liquor consumed in those days than now. I sometimes think it curious as I look back at some of the leading figures of those days, able, dignified, honored, and yet they drank freely and enjoyed the conviviality of the times. They were not necessarily intoxicated; but they became mellow.

"Alfred M. Hoyt was here developing the East Side when I came, and for a year after my arrival he made his home at the Webster House. There was little enough of the East Side then. It is hard for the eastsider today to realize what it looked like then, when it was solid forest from the river back to the bayou. The only road to Saginaw was the Mackinaw Road,

coming into what is now the South Side, but already they were working on the plank road from Bridgeport, which came into East Saginaw by what is now known as Genesee Avenue.

"Norman Little was the man at the head of the East Side development. Back in 1836 he had been associated with three or four other men in a company that platted a part of Saginaw City, and altogether carried on an important work expending over two hundred thousand dollars by 1840, when they failed. There was nothing more done until 1849, when Mr. Little interested the Hoyts in building up a city on the Saginaw. Jesse Hoyt had some difficulty with the promoters on the West Side and announced his intention to develop an entirely new town on the east side of the river, then only a forest and swamp. Alfred M. Hoyt came on and was engaged in clearing off the land there when I came. I don't know what arrangements Norman Little had with the Hoyts, but he was the man of push and energy in the work. The Hoyts were behind him and furnished the capital. With the completion of the plank road, the East Side began to grow rapidly, and it soon developed into a thriving city.

"Saginaw was only a small town in 1851. The census of 1850 showed that there were between two and three thousand persons in Saginaw County, which included what are now Bay, Tuscola, the east half of Gratiot, Midland, Isabella and Gladwin Counties, and extended north on the bay shore. On the west side of the river I suppose there were four hundred or five hundred persons.

"Curt Emerson had one hundred and sixty acres of land extending from where the City Hall now stands to Emerson Street, and it was cleared back to the bayou. Alfred M. Hoyt owned the property north of that. It is a somewhat curious fact, illustrating conditions in those days, that the winter mail used to be brought down from Lake Superior by dog train."

#### Joseph A. Whittier Paid Tribute to Jesse Hoyt

Coming to this State when it was still undeveloped, and helping materially in its making, and prospering thereby, Joseph A. Whittier, an honored citizen, was one of the prominent figures in our early history. The rugged honesty and Quaker-like simplicity, which marked his long life of usefulness and broad purpose, are among the pleasantest memories of those who knew him best, and found expression in a letter he wrote several years before his death. It tells of the early days of Saginaw and other interesting facts, and should be preserved in enduring form.

"I came to Saginaw in October, 1856," wrote Mr. Whittier. The railroad terminus was at Holly, thence by plank road to Saginaw. The road between Holly and Flint was not completed. The first sight of Saginaw was after one emerged from the woods but a short distance east of Jefferson Street. Across the bayou from Jefferson to Franklin was an embankment of earth not much wider than was necessary for two teams to pass. There were two taverns at the corner of Genesee and Washington Streets, and one church — Methodist — which stood on German Street, just back of where the Vincent Hotel now stands. The residence part of the town was on Washington and Water Streets. The stores were mostly on Water Street; a few on Genesee and a few shops on the bayou, with long plank approaches to them. Jefferson Street, north, did not exist. South of Genesee it was an unmade road winding through the trees, with two or three small cottages on it. It terminated at the Hoyt Street school house, where a long elevated plank walk across the bayou connected with Washington Street.

"The largest stores as I recollect them, were kept by Beach and Moores, John F. Driggs, Curtiss and Bliss, Copelands, and W. H. Beach. The mills

were the Mayflower flour mill, Williams, Miller, Paine & Wright, the Chicago mill, owned, I think, by Whitney, a mill opposite the center of the town, afterwards bought by James Hill; Charles Merrill & Company, and the Westervelt mill at Carrollton. A mill just below the F. & P. M. was bought by D. G. Holland, who ran it for many years; and a mill built by Jesse Hoyt, was afterwards owned by C. H. Garrison. The Gallagher mill, which was bought and run for many years by Sears and Holland; the old yellow mill worn out and condemned, was built, I think, by Curt Emerson. Curtis & King had a mill at Salina, now South Saginaw. There may have been one or two more mills, but they do not occur to me.

"The product of lumber was small; most of the logs were cut on the lower waters of the Flint and Cass Rivers. The quality of the lumber was very good, but the manufacture was poor, mostly done with upright saws. Miller, Paine & Wright had a round log gang, and the winter of 1856-57 C. Merrill & Company put in a flat gang, which sawed boards from cants.

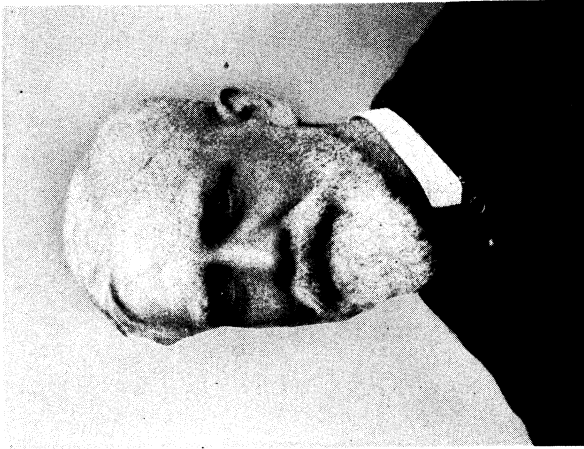
"But few logs had been cut on the Tittabawassee and its branches. If I recollect clearly, Thomas Merrill cleared the Pine River in the winter of 1856-57 from the Horse Race, a short distance above Midland, to St. Louis, so that logs could be driven, and that he cut some timber near St. Louis that winter. Two or three years after he cleared the Chippewa River. The Tittabawassee had logs driven out of it from where the Gerrish dam now stands. The quality of the timber on Pine River was equal to that of the Cass and Flint; that on the Chippewa not quite so good. The Tittabawassee afforded a large quantity of sound desirable timber. One has but to look over the statements of the annual production to ascertain the immense quantity of timber that was cut on Saginaw waters. As the business increased, the manufacture improved, until Saginaw lumber was acknowledged the best for quality of timber and nicety of manufacture.

"As the years passed and the business increased Saginaw grew and became a place of note. No town ever had a better set of men to guide and to help its destiny, and first of all I wish to speak of Jesse Hoyt, who projected the town, bought the land when it was a forest, and with just discernment saw the opportunity to build a city. His large means were liberally used in building mills and vessels. He had one of the finest fleets on the lakes. He built the plank road to Flint, the Bancroft House, the Mayflower Mill, a planing and saw mill, and many other enterprises to help the city. His bequest to us of park and library will ever be a reminder how much we owe to his strong, forcible character."

### **James F. Brown Was the First Bank Cashier**

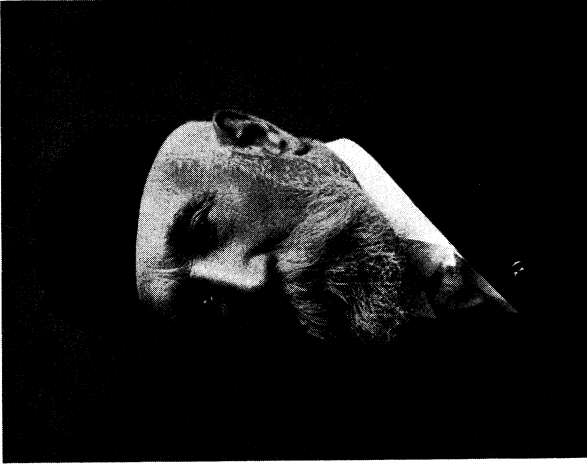
An almost unbroken residence of fifty-seven years in Saginaw was the record of James F. Brown, who first arrived in August, 1853, and with the exception of one year, when he went west for Mrs. Brown's health and was glad to get back, he had resided here continuously. In 1856 he entered the employ of W. L. P. Little & Company, Bankers, in the capacity of cashier, a position he held for many years. When this private bank of which Jesse Hoyt was a partner, was succeeded by the Merchants National Bank, Mr. Brown was elected cashier and, upon the death of Mr. Little, in 1867, he was made president. A short time before his death Mr. Brown talked entertainingly of the old days and pioneers.

"The first year when it was all woods where my office is now, I tell you we had to rough it and I became very lonesome for the more enlivening times of New York, whence we had come. But in time that wore off. Then there were only about three hundred persons in East Saginaw. The Irving House, at the corner of Water and Genesee Streets, was the first hotel. It was built



**JAMES F. BROWN**

Who was the first bank cashier in Saginaw Valley having come from New York City in 1853. He succeeded Mr. Little as president of the Merchants National Bank, in 1867.



**EMIL A. L. MOORES**

One of the earliest residents of East Saginaw, coming here in 1849 and identifying himself with the Hoyt interests. For many years he was manager of the Mayflower Mills.

by Jesse Hoyt and run by Menzo C. Stevens. In the spring of 1854 we were a hamlet in the township of Buena Vista, and we got sixty-four votes towards organizing a village. There wasn't a brick building here then. The town extended only to Cass (Baum) Street; and there were a few buildings on Water Street, and nothing on the bank of the river.

"In July, 1854, a fire burned our store and other buildings, and the first brick block on the east side was put up on the site of the Irving House. It was called the Buena Vista Block, and still stands, the property of the Hoyt Estate. The Bancroft House was built in 1858-59 and opened to the public September 7, 1859.

"It was anything but a fashionable life in those days. We had to get our provisions from boats that came in from Cleveland and Detroit. Besides the dense woods which surrounded the town, there were bayous and it was very unhealthy. Every second man was continually shaking with the ague. We used to cross the bayou at Baum and Genesee on a bridge that was made by felling three big oak trees for stringers, then nailing plank to them with wooden pegs, and piling up small branches for railings.

"But in the winter we had a jolly good time, the few of us that were here. The young fellows would hire the hotel dining room for the evening, then go around and get their girls and until 12 o'clock there would be a good time. Tom Willey was the fiddler and Joe Hatzel the harpist. Those who came from the other side crossed the river by means of a scow, pulled by a rope with an old German, named Fritz, as the man power. A pioneer of those days can recall any number of interesting events of early Saginaw."

#### **Emil A. L. Moores Was Here in Pioneer Days**

One of our oldest residents, who was associated with the Hoyts at an early day, was Emil A. L. Moores. He came here in 1849, at the very beginning of the settlement on the east side, did some hard work for a time, and then secured employment in the store of W. L. P. Little & Company. For many years he lived in the Mott homestead at the southeast corner of Water and Fitzhugh Streets; and was manager of the Mayflower Mills. He was thoroughly conversant with the history of the Little Company, which was backed by the Hoyts, and years after was wont to eulogize Jesse Hoyt when speaking of the early days.

"The site of East Saginaw was picked out by Norman Little, who was acquainted with James M. Hoyt and Son, of New York. The old gentleman wanted to invest for his son, Alfred M. Hoyt, and purchased a large tract of land here from parties in Detroit. Seth Willey took the contract for clearing about two hundred acres of land along the river. Alfred didn't like the country very well, and when his brother Jesse came here, he returned to the East. Jesse then took control of affairs, and always kept it though he never lived here permanently. He was a fine man. East Saginaw began to grow and then to boom after he built a saw mill, a flouring mill, a plank road to Flint, and made other improvements in the place. He delighted in bringing in people to the new town in the wilderness; and he got W. L. P. Little interested in running a general store, and used to come out here frequently to visit us. He was a handsome man and a kind one.

"When I arrived here the settlement was very small, but the west side of the river, or Saginaw City as it was then called, was well built up, was high and dry, and had several hundred permanent residents. There was practically no business district on the east side, and the country was largely water and swamps. Five years later, or 1854, in the block where the Tower Block now stands, between Plank Road (Genesee) and what is now Lapeer Street, at Jefferson, there was only one house, owned by a man named

Godard, and a lime-kiln operated by a Scotchman. The entire block and property could have been purchased for five hundred dollars. There was no Lapeer Street, and the land to the north was nearly all bayou. Where the Anchor House now stands was the toll gate, which was the end of civilization.

"The only streets regularly laid out at that time were Water, Washington, Franklin, Tuscola and German, besides the Plank Road to Flint, with which Saginaw was connected by a stage line. There were no railroads then north of Holly, but the steamer *Huron*, a freight and passenger boat, made occasional trips between here and Detroit. There were only a few stores then, and some roughly built houses; but there was plenty of timber, and game and wilderness.

"One day I was dealing with a customer," continued Mr. Moores, "and not having enough change I told him 'I will have to owe you a sixpence.' A gentleman standing near by heard me and said, 'I'll loan you a sixpence.' That was my first sight and introduction to Jesse Hoyt. Some time passed and I had forgotten the incident, but he had not, for one day he said to me, 'Young man, you owe me a sixpence,' and I had to pay it.

"Jesse Hoyt was something of a musician, and was much interested in a singing society we had in the early days. Among his many enterprises, he had sailing vessels built here, and were named, *Sunshine*, *Quickstep*, *H. C. Potter*, *Sunlight* and others I have forgotten. His main object was to keep men employed. In the store we kept everything from a needle to a crowbar, and shipped goods to remote points in the State.

"Yes, there were many Indians here then, and they comprised two tribes which roamed this section; but we did not have any trouble with them. They generally behaved themselves unless drunk with the white man's 'fire-water'; and the troubles were due to the loafers, sailors, raftsmen and woodsmen."

#### East Saginaw in 1854

A most interesting document relating to the early days is a letter written by Anson Rudd, when East Saginaw was only four years old. He was a farmer in Pennsylvania, and came here in 1854, the letter being written soon after his arrival. The property for which he paid six hundred dollars is at the corner of Washington Avenue and Tuscola Street. The letter follows:

"East Saginaw, Vienna, Mich., 1854.

"Worthy and Honorable Sir — After my best respects to you and family I would inform you I have bought a house and lot in the village of Saginaw, on the second street from the water, near the center of the town. The town is about four year's growth and covers an area of not far from three miles; is the most flourishing and enterprising place I ever saw for the time. I paid six hundred dollars for the house and lot; the house is not quite finished. We started the next Wednesday after Edwin and Marthy did. We came as far as Detroit by water; from thence we sent some of the heavy boxes to this place and came from there by land with the family wagon and horses, and drove the two cows on the way. We went a day's drive up Cass River to look for land; found a very fine country. Thought we were getting too far from market. From thence we turned about and came to Bridgeport, where we hired two rooms about a week. Did not like that part of the country as well as many other parts. The mosquitoes were confounded bad, now mind, I tell you.

"While there we came down here to the wharf to get our boxes, calculating to go to some place to buy a farm, but on arriving here I was so well pleased with the place, and while here I inquired for a house and lot for sale



and found this, which I have since bought; exactly suits my notion, as it is one street north of the plank road running to Flint, a distance of not far from thirty miles, and one street east of the street that runs along the river. I went to Bridgeport and informed Lurey of the circumstances and situation of the place; wanted her to come down and examine the place for herself, but she declined. Told me to suit myself; therefore Albert and I came down and bargained for the place. We calculate when we will get our addition finished, which is now in a state of progression, as I finished putting on the roof yesterday, and the joiners are making the doors and window frames (the addition is 20 x 28), to keep a boarding house.

"I think the village is as handsome a place as ever I saw for the age of it. It is allowed to be the second best place of market in the State. There are forty-one steam mills in the distance of seventeen miles, mostly run night and day. Such immense sights of pine lumber on the wharfs. The pine logs are rafted down the tributaries that come in to Saginaw, a distance of from seventy to one hundred miles. There is but one log house in the town. As handsome looking land as ever I saw in any country.

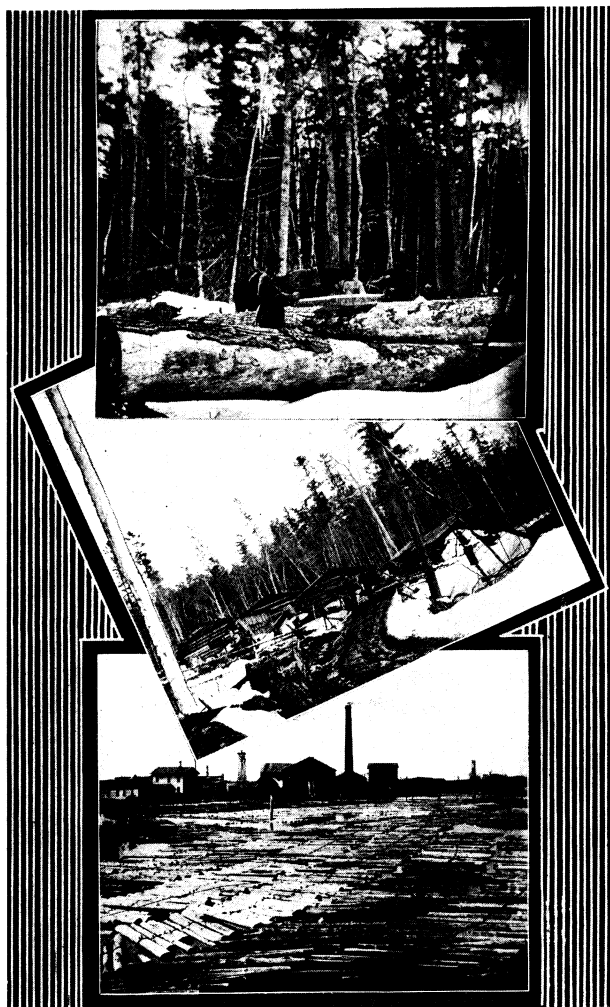
"There are two steamboats coming in here daily, and vessels and rafts of almost every description running to and from up and down the river, also hundreds of rafts of pine logs. There are two daily stages running from this to Pontiac—a distance of sixty miles. Albert drives team from this to Flint, a distance of thirty-two miles; he generally has a load both ways. Loduski is at work at a tavern in this place for two dollars a week, and is liked first-rate.

"Provisions of all kinds are very high. Flour is ten dollars per barrel; corn one dollar per bushel; oats six shillings; pork one shilling a pound; beef eight cents; hams about the same; butter eighteen pence; and potatoes six shillings per bushels. Crops of hay and grain to all appearances are coming in first-rate; for that matter crops of every description look well. Read this and send to Sarah; tell her I want her to write directly; also I want you to answer this as soon as possible after you get this. Don't forget it. Lurey sends her love and respects to you all. Tell me where Edwin and Marthy are. I want you to understand this is a lively place.

"To Jobish Sawdy."

"Anson Rudd."

It is important that the reminiscences of our pioneers, who have seen a panorama of scenes and events covering three-fourths of a century and more, should be preserved in enduring form for the enlightenment of future generations, as well as our own. Beginning with savages and wild beasts, a frontier fort, fur traders, hunters and explorers, followed by permanent settlers with their farms chopped out of the primeval forest; then the saw mill with its yellow cubes of pine lumber on the docks, and the salt block with cargoes of snow-white crystals, this panorama spread itself before them in a kaleidoscope of human endeavor. From the day of the tallow dip, or pine splinter lighted with flint and steel, to the day of the electric light produced at the touch of a finger—all this has been accomplished in the span of one life. It is not possible that each individual may develop and be rounded out in a fullness of life and accomplishment equal to the material change that these old pioneers have witnessed. Only a few still living have seen this magic transformation. May they live out their century in honor and peace, for they and their fathers built well, and we of another generation and those to follow have profited and will profit by their works.



#### LUMBERING ON THE SAGINAW IN THE FIFTIES

Familiar scenes that remind the pioneer of by-gone days in the woods, at camp and of the activities along the river.

## CHAPTER XI

# AN ERA OF PROSPERITY

---

Advent of Enterprising Men—Some Items of Interest—Early Conflagrations—Extracts From the Diary of James S. Webber—Incorporation of the Village and City—Incorporation of the Village of Salina—The Commercial Interests of East Saginaw in 1858—Incorporation of Saginaw City—William Binder—Myron Butman—William H. Sweet—The Commercial Interests of Saginaw City—The Fish Trade—Summary of Trade in 1853—The Extensions of Trade to Hamilton Street.

**I**N the eighteen-fifties a new life was infused into the business of the valley by the advent of enterprising, courageous men of public spirit, generous and forceful, possessing capital for the development of its industries. Among them were Ammi W. Wright, Ubel A. Brockway, Timothy and David H. Jerome, Thomas Merrill, John Moore, Frank Sears, Myron Butman, Joseph T. Burnham, David, John, Amasa and Ezra Rust, and Newell Barnard, who settled at Saginaw City; and Moses B. and George Hess, W. L. P. Little, Michael Jeffers, Jefferson Bundy, James Hill, Byron B. Buckhout, James S. Webber, James L. T. Fox, Chester B. Jones, Alexander Ferguson and others, at East Saginaw.

The political, social, moral and business structure which the early pioneers of the valley had before reared, though of somewhat infantile proportions, was the deep-laid foundation upon which the newcomers reared a substantial superstructure, and the foundation thus laid stands an imperishable monument to the foresight, prudence and wisdom of the early pioneers.

It would seem that these daring and hardy spirits, in spite of every difficulty that arose to dishearten and discourage them, were gifted with a sort of divination in their determination to make the valley a prosperous place of abode. They must have foreseen Saginaw a great, flourishing city, teeming with life and busy animation, and her bright river agitated with vessels and noisy steamboats. Some of these men, indeed, lived to realize their most extravagant anticipations, and doubtless felt amply repaid for their toil, trials and difficulties. Of the newcomers, however, who builded on the foundation already laid, many were better adapted to the effeminate and luxurious life of the city than to the hardships and stern realities of border life. But to their credit, be it said, they went to work with resolute and determined will of true pioneers, and deserve greater credit for their enterprise.

Early in the fifties all was bustle and activity in the valley of the Saginaw, and the sound of the axe, the hammer and the saw rang merrily over the waters of the river, or echoed in the green woods around. One or two steamboats plied regularly between Saginaw and Detroit, barks and schooners came up the river to the towns, and more docks were built to accommodate them. The demand for lumber began to increase, and in every direction saw mills appeared along the banks of the stream. As early as October, 1853, there were twenty-three saw mills, some of small capacity it is true, in operation on the river, and twenty-one others in course of construction.

Nor was agriculture neglected. The dense forest which surrounded the primitive settlements began to melt away, and lands previously chopped off were cleared, fenced in, and dwellings erected thereon. Farming lands in the immediate vicinity were quickly located and settled upon, and tilled fields, fruit trees, and cattle soon gave evidence of rural industry. The eastern states were awakening to a realizing sense of the growing importance of the new country. Everything gave promise of great things.

### Some Items of Interest

The ferry established by Elijah N. Davenport in 1851, at the foot of the Plank Road, now Genesee Avenue, became a paying enterprise the following year. The entire outfit consisted of a primitive-looking scow, propelled by poles, and attended by a curiously-fashioned "dug-out" to escape by in case the scow went under. Afterward a large rope was stretched across the river, as a better means of propulsion, and the operation of the scow then became more certain and safe, especially in times of heavy ice and flood. The course of this ferry was a line upon which the piers of the Genesee Avenue bridge now stand. Later a steam ferry was run at irregular intervals between the two towns. It was not until 1864 that the first bridge, operated by a company of citizens as a toll bridge, was completed and opened for traffic at Genesee Street.

School was first taught in 1850 by Dr. C. T. Disbrow, in the upper story of Morgan L. Gage's residence, which stood on the north side of Plank Road, between Water and Washington Streets. The following year Miss Carrie Ingersoll opened a school in the log house which stood on the site of the Bancroft House. In 1852 Truman B. Fox established a select school in a small building at the corner of Water and Hoyt Streets, and soon had eighty-three scholars in attendance. The same year the "Old Academy" was built on the site of the present Hoyt School.

Alfred M. Hoyt was the first postmaster at East Saginaw; and Moses B. Hess was the first mail carrier, having settled here in 1850. He succeeded Morgan L. Gage as postmaster in 1853.

The first church was organized in 1852, and the first edifice used for religious services was a shanty near Emerson and Water Streets.

The Saginaw Valley House, a pioneer hotel of East Saginaw, situated on Water Street, was completed and opened to the public in 1851.

The organization of the first Methodist Episcopal Church was effected in 1852, with Reverend A. C. Shaw as pastor; and soon after a church edifice was erected on the southeast corner of Washington and German Streets.

The first telegraph (the Snow Line) was in working order between Detroit and Saginaw on February 17, 1853, with Alexander Ferguson as local operator. The office was in Mr. Ferguson's jewelry, book and stationery store on Genesee Avenue between Washington and Water Streets.

On March 20, 1853, ice broke up in the river and passed out into the bay; and on the 28th the steamer *J. Snow* ran up the river, the first of the season.

A saw mill and half a million feet of lumber at Carrollton, owned by Volney Chapin, was burned on June 9, 1853, with a loss of thirteen thousand dollars.

On September 4, 1853, a camp meeting of Chippewa Indians was held at Swan Creek, about seven miles from Saginaw City, Rev. George B. Bradley presiding.



**JAMES S. WEBBER**

Father of W. L. Webber, who came here in January, 1853, was a prominent merchant and land owner. His first home was on the east side of Jefferson between Genesee and German Streets, the entire block having been purchased by him for six hundred dollars.



**JOHN F. DRIGGS**

One of the sturdy progressive pioneers of East Saginaw, was president of the Village council in 1858 and later a congressman from this district. He was an active member of the volunteer fire fighting brigade and one of the organizers of the Twenty-ninth Regiment, M. V. I.

A quarterly meeting of the M. E. Church was held October 29, 1853, in the "Old Academy," services commencing at "early candle-light."

The steamer *Huron* struck a rock in the lower river, on a late trip November 26, 1853, and was seriously damaged; but no lives were lost.

In December, 1853, the first newspaper in East Saginaw, "The Saginaw Enterprise," was established by F. A. Williamson and A. J. Mason, and edited with "tolerable ability."

St. Mary's Church (Roman Catholic) was organized here late in 1853 by Father Shultz.

### Early Conflagrations

Scarcely had the village of East Saginaw assumed any importance before it was visited by several disastrous fires, the first of which was on November 16, 1853. It was in the frame building of Burt and Hayden, on North Water Street, and entailed a heavy loss though it did not spread to adjoining property.

The first big fire, however, which still lingers in the memory of the oldest residents, occurred on March 26, 1854. It raged for hours in the block bounded by Washington, German, Williams (Janes) Streets and the river, and destroyed the steam saw mill erected by Jesse Hoyt, and about three million feet of lumber with considerable dock. This property was situated on ground now occupied in part by the warehouse of Morley Brothers, at the foot of Germania Avenue. A number of dwelling houses were also burned, including the hotel on the southeast corner of German and Water Streets, which was kept by the father of William Barie. He vividly recalls the excitement at this fire and the heroic efforts of the citizens to stay the flames, with no other means than the primitive bucket brigade taking water from the river. This was a severe blow to the infant village; yet its motto was "never despair," and soon business went on as before.

Rebuilding had scarcely commenced when another and far more destructive fire broke out in the very heart of the village, and swept everything in the direction of the previous fire. Before it had burned itself out, as the means of fighting fire were then entirely inadequate to check the flames, two entire blocks of buildings, including the Irving House, the extensive wholesale warehouse and dock of W. L. P. Little & Company, and several grocery stores and dwelling houses were burned. The principal buildings destroyed stood on the south side of Plank Road (Genesee) at the corner of Water Street, and for a time there was grave fear that the whole village was doomed. The scenes at this fire were very graphically drawn in the diary of James S. Webber, which has been preserved, an extract from which follows:

"1854, July 5th:

"This morning I was awakened by a person rapping at my door at about two o'clock, saying that the 'Irving House' was on fire. As my store was on the opposite side of the street, I was not long in dressing and getting there. I had a load of wood on my wheelbarrow standing at the door, and I turned it over as the quickest way to unload it and took it with me. A large company was already there. I unlocked my door and emptied the contents of the safe, as several persons had effects and books in it, into the wheelbarrow and started for home. Enjoining Mrs. Webber not to leave the house, I went back to the store, but, it being very still, it was not then thought the fire

would cross the street north; it was going south rapidly. A small building just west of my store was covered with carpets, blankets and so forth, and kept wet. My store being in a double building and a part of it occupied by Morgan L. Gage's family, we were in danger if the fire got into this small building, which was occupied by Seth Willey. Mr. C. B. Jones and my son had their offices over my store. They had emptied their offices at first, but by the lively use of pails and dishes in wetting these two buildings, the fire was kept out and the wind veering a little to the south about the time the frame of the 'Irving House' fell, the most of the danger was past. I returned the goods to the store again; and after sunrise the fire had stopped. Many boarders at the 'Irving House' were now at the mercy of the citizens, as well as Mr. Stevens and family, for breakfast. I sent word to Mrs. Webber to prepare extra and took a number with me for breakfast. By dinner time all had some place to go to. I have been thus particular in my statement, as this and the fire of March 26th were my first experience in fires, and the first that East Saginaw had suffered by."

This fire was indeed a public calamity, and for a time everybody stood aghast, but not in despair. Before the embers had ceased smoking, workmen began clearing away the debris, and rebuilding was quickly begun. Soon a fine brick building, called the Buena Vista Block, occupied the site of the Irving House, and was the first brick block built in East Saginaw. It still stands at the corner of Genesee Avenue and Water Street, the upper floors within recent years having been refitted for use of the Bancroft House, of which it forms a part. The warehouse of W. L. P. Little & Company was at the foot of the street, on ground where the brick building, now occupied by the Hubbell Company, stands.

Although the population of the village did not exceed three hundred, the sales of Little & Company the first year amounted to ninety thousand dollars, and the second year to a quarter of a million. This seems almost incredible, but when it is considered that Saginaw City, Lower Saginaw (Bay City), and the whole farming country adjacent to our rivers, were supplied with merchandise from this establishment, which was very complete in all its details, such a volume of business was possible. With characteristic energy and enterprise the burnt district was soon covered with substantial business blocks and dwellings, for the most part built of brick, and all traces of the fire were obliterated.

#### Extracts from the Diary of James S. Webber

1855. Ice left the Saginaw River Saturday and Sunday, April 7th and 8th. Steamboat *Huron* first arrival for the season from Detroit, April 21.

December 10: The ice on the river is very uncertain, the water being up to the top of the dock and frozen over so people cross on foot. One day a man crossed the ice with the mail by using two boards, occupying one while he shoved the other ahead of him; and he got over all safe. The ferry that was used for crossing Saginaw River was a large scow, Judge Davenport owning the right to ferry. The scow was propelled by means of a rope, each end of it being made fast to a post on each side of the river, the landing on the east side being at the foot of Plank Road (Genesee Street). Spring and Fall, when the ice was breaking up or forming, ferrying was very uncertain business.

1856. October 11: I commenced building September 13 a two-story house, being partly what is called a "balloon frame," but using posts and beams. The frame was raised Tuesday, September 30. Daniel L. Reding finished a cement cistern, holding over one hundred barrels, under my wood-house floor.

October 13: My son has built a new house on the corner of Washington and Johnson Streets, which he bought from Dr. Lee, and moved into it this date. The lot is ninety by two hundred and forty feet. Foggy Fall.

October 16: This morning smoke and fog so thick that objects could not be seen thirty feet distant.

October 18: Cleared so that we could see across the river. The cause of the smoke supposed to be the swamps and marshes that were on fire through these regions. The sun was hid from sight most of the time for several days.

October 23: This morning a wind from the north with a light rain drove off the smoke; after a few more rains the fires were extinguished.

October 25: My house was enclosed. In July I learned that a man was wishing to buy some lots on the west side of Jefferson Street directly opposite my house, to occupy them for burning lime. As I did not want a lime kiln there I bought four lots in Block 58 (all bayou lots) giving \$350, paying over \$80 down. I did not know what use they would be, but thought I would rather do this than have such a nuisance so near me.

November 20: Thanksgiving. The last of this month the sand dock in front of my store on Water Street was finished.

December 6: Snow in the woods eight inches deep.

1857. February 27: Ice mostly out of the river at night and water to the top of the sand dock. Ice said to be good below Zilwaukee and people crossing it with teams.

March 12: Water fallen about four feet and new ice formed. Charlie Rod crossed it with a team and seven barrels of flour in safety.

March 14: A channel cut for the ferry scow; it came across today.

March 24: Ice said to be gone as far as Bangor. At 6:30 P. M. the steamboat *Comet* came up from Bay City where she had wintered.

April 6: A snowy day and town meeting.

April 11: The steamboat *Sam Ward* arrived from Detroit yesterday, and today the *Forest Queen* arrived from the same port.

April 26: Sunday morning, commenced snowing, stopping at 8 P. M. Suppose if it had not melted it would have been over a foot deep.

July 1: Moved into my new house before breakfast. For dinner had green peas. Cool and rainy.

July 24: Curtis Emerson's new steam ferry scow came down the river to the foot of Plank Road (Genesee Avenue) and back to his place on her first trial trip. This is the first steam ferry on the river.

July 26: Sunday about 4 P. M. Beach & Moores store on the dock (where W. L. P. Little & Company's store stood before the big fire) took fire and burned down. The fire engine was called out for the first time and did good service.

October 8: Hard times in money matters, banks suspending daily and no exchange on New York to be had.

October 15: These days money won't pay debts, for no one dare take it. About all the banks in New York suspended specie payment. I owed a New York debt and went several times into W. L. P. Little & Company's banking office to buy a draft, but I could not; they had rather not take any money. I wrote to the parties to ask what I should do; their answer was, "send your money by express and we will take what is good and send the rest back." So I just laid my money by till times should be more quiet, not being disposed to trust anyone with sorting my money.



October 28: I was able to buy exchange today and make remittance.

December 1: Some banks still below par, yet I am able to close up with the New York creditors. I bought a draft of W. L. P. Little & Company, paying two and a half per cent. on Canadian banks, and ten and a half on western bank bills, and paid them all.

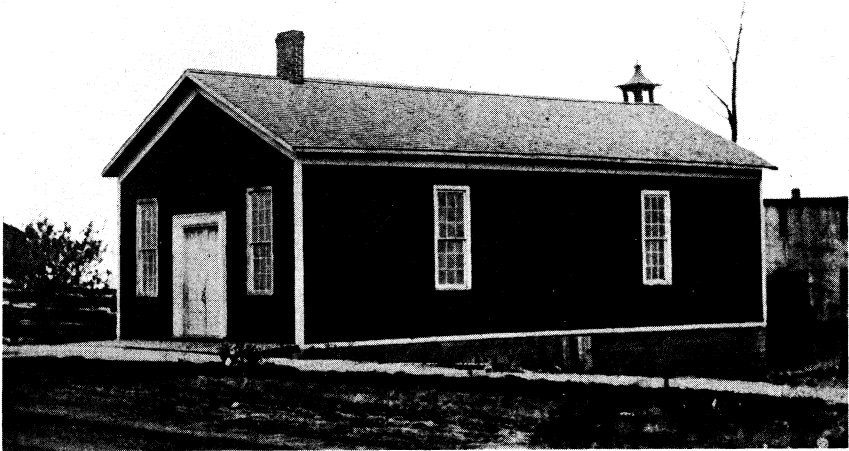
November 19: This morning several inches of snow fell; a high wind for several days. Captain William Blyben, whose family is living in one of my houses, was on his way from Chicago with his vessel, the *Quick Step*, and had a severe time of it, but got his vessel into Bay City. The steamboat *Forest Queen* of Detroit made her last trip here.

1858. March 15: Warm and thawing, and ice floating down stream.

April 16: Commenced my building for a hall on Lot 10, Block 58, Jefferson Street, opposite my dwelling.

May 11: A great rain with wind from the north.

May 25: Heavy rain today. Some boys having made a dam across the ditch so that water in the night wore a channel through, and this morning teams could not pass to the north into Genesee Street.



UNION HALL

Built by James S. Webber in 1858 on the site of the Schmelzer Apartments, and used by the First Baptist Church. Some years after, when the society built the present brick structure, the old hall was moved to the corner of Johnson and Second Streets, and has since been used by Zion Baptist Church (colored).

June 4: The water has been over the sand dock for several days; and this morning the wind is blowing fresh from the south. About 9 A. M. Mr. Lord's ball alley gave way and went to pieces. (It was located on Genesee between Franklin and Cass Streets, south side.)

June 8: Water is falling. Some of the mills started again as most of them had to stop in high water. It has been extremely warm for several days, and the mosquitoes very thick.

July 2: Finished my 'Union Hall,' costing six hundred dollars unfinished. It was occupied by the First Baptist Church, they holding meetings on the third and fourth instant.

July 7: A company left on the steamboat *Magnet* for Goderich, Canada, to railroad celebration to be held on the eighth.

August 17: The Queen's message has been received by the Atlantic cable, and at night bon-fires, military and fire companies aided in the celebration.

August 23: Light frost in spots. A big celebration will be held here on the 29th, on account of the Atlantic cable.

December 9: People crossed the river on the ice today.

December 24: The gas works at the brick hotel of Jesse Hoyt's (the Bancroft) so far completed that this evening a few lights were lighted as a trial, with satisfactory results.

1859. January 2: This evening attended worship at Buena Vista Hall. It was lighted with gas for the first time.

January 6: The ladies of the Baptist Church formed a sewing society at my house.

January 11: Teams crossing the river on ice. This evening I crossed it for the first time since living in Saginaw.

February 16: Ferry scow running today, after about ten days stopping on account of river being frozen for the crossing of teams.

March 8: A small sail boat came up the river from below. The first city election held. George Ball and myself were two on the board.

August 19: The first rail on the Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad laid at Saginaw River.

September 7: The new brick hotel "Bancroft House" has been opened, and the stage stops here. Mr. Hobbs keeps the hotel.

October 10: The steamboat *Forest Queen* brought up a six-pound brass cannon and carriage for the artillery company now forming in this place. The bark *Sunshine* is repaired and went from here about a week ago.

October 22: Snow about three inches deep, and sleighs out this morning. Captain D. Lyon moved my ice house and cellar from the rear to the front of my lot beside my store on Water Street.

November 10: Norman Little was buried, having been found drowned in the river, near Hoyt's mill, on the evening of the eighth. This was a very stormy day of rain and snow.

Reverend J. S. Goodman and family arrived at my house at about one o'clock. Will it is expected occupy one of my houses until spring, having been settled over the Baptist Church of this place.

1860. January 19: Made my first visit to where they were drilling for salt. The well is 625 feet deep.

January 21: At evening an old vacant house owned by C. Garrison, on the bank of the river above the mill, was nearly burned down.

March 5: City election. The entire Republican ticket elected with exception of one constable. A fine day. I was elected director of the poor.

March 7: An alarm of fire about six o'clock this morning at the gas works of Jesse Hoyt's, adjoining the Bancroft House; some damage done the works and building, will delay the operation of the gas works for a short time. The steamboat *Traffic* went to Bay City. Ice out of the river.

March 10: About seven P. M. Jesse Hoyt's steam flouring mill was seen to be on fire in the upper story; supposed to have caught by the chimney burning out the previous morning, the fire lying concealed and burning down. No other buildings were injured, but a large amount of grain was burned and flour damaged.

June 26: The East Saginaw Salt Company commenced boiling salt. I visited the works and got a sample of salt. Fifty kettles in a block.

July 4: A small propeller named *Star* came from Detroit and commenced running as a ferry-boat from here to Saginaw City.

1868. September 10: The large Brick Central Market, being built by Anton Schmitz, on the southeast corner of Genesee and Cass (Baum) Streets, was opened today with stalls for vegetables by Mr. Turner and Mr. Charles Pendell.

October 21: The Nicholson pavement is finished today; it was commenced at Franklin Street running west to the foot of Genesee Street across two blocks, then north on Water and Washington Streets to Tuscola, being one block north and south of Genesee Street. The cost of the pavement, including curb-stones, was \$30,000; sand taken from Cass Street and the bayou.

December 2: The gas lighted in street lamps for first time in East Saginaw.

1869. January 1: First Congregational Church, Washington and German Streets, was destroyed by fire.

July 10: The trustees of the First Baptist Church sold the old church (Union Hall) to the colored Baptist Church, for \$600, and moved it to the northwest corner of Johnson and Second Streets. This is the Zion Baptist Church.

September 15: John G. Owen rebuilding the old Egleston, Champlin and Penney City Mill on Genesee Street into stores.

October 10: Mr. A. Schmitz fell from his building, the Central Market, on Sunday; when picked up was dead.

### Incorporation of the Village and City

East Saginaw was incorporated as a village in 1855, and its first legislative body met May 11, with Norman Little as president of the council; Charles B. Mott, recorder; S. C. Beach, treasurer; and A. L. Rankin, mar-



LAYING NICHOLSON PAVEMENT IN GENESEE STREET, 1868

shal. Under the incorporation act there were elected as trustees: W. L. P. Little, David Lyon, Jacob C. Voorheis, Clark M. Curtis and Augustus H. Mershon; and as assessors, F. R. Copeland and W. F. Glasby.

In 1856 the council was composed of: Morgan L. Gage, president; C. B. Mott, recorder; trustees, William L. Webber, Augustus H. Mershon, Martin Smith, L. H. Eastman, W. F. Glasby; and attorney, William L. Webber; marshal, F. T. Hall; street commissioners, L. S. Keeler and A. Dann.

In 1857 the councilmen were: Morgan L. Gage, president; W. H. Beach, recorder; trustees, William L. Webber, W. F. Glasby, C. M. Curtis, J. A. Large, S. Beach and William Gallagher. William J. Loveland was elected attorney, and L. S. Keeler, marshal and street commissioner, while W. T. Hoyt was the village clerk.

In 1858 the councilmen were: John F. Driggs, president; C. B. Mott, recorder; trustees, S. C. Beach, W. F. Glasby, J. A. Large, G. A. Lathrop, S. R. Kirby and G. W. Merrill. William L. Webber was the attorney, M. L. Gage, marshal, G. F. Ball, street commissioner, and C. H. Gage, clerk.

This form of government was sufficient for the needs of the community only four years, as in 1859 the village received a city charter, and was duly incorporated under its provisions. The first city officers elected were: W. L. P. Little, mayor; D. W. C. Gage, recorder; W. J. Bartow, controller; James F. Brown, treasurer; F. A. Curtis, marshal; and the aldermen were, C. B. Mott, John S. Estabrook, Alexander Ferguson, W. F. Glasby, G. W. Wilcox; the city constable, A. L. Rankin; and the school inspectors, Asahel Disbrow, C. B. Jones, John J. Wheeler, G. J. Dorr, Volusin Bude and S. B. Knapp. On March 17, 1859, the first common council of the newly incorporated city met as a municipal legislative body.

### Incorporation of the Village of Salina

As early as 1848 Aaron K. Penney located land on the east side of the river, a little above the settlement of Saginaw City, which he commenced working as a farm. In this occupation he was quite successful, as he was a practical farmer, but ten years later he sold his land to William Gallagher, who at once removed there with his family. After the discovery of salt deposits underlying the valley, Gallagher conceived the idea of laying out a town upon his farm, and in less than a year a pleasantly situated village was under way. Mills and salt works were soon erected, docks built, and general business enterprises inaugurated. In 1864 the East Saginaw Street Railway completed its line to the new town, thus connecting, and almost identifying, it with the flourishing city about three miles below.

During the early years of its existence, this busy and progressive town had been known as Salina, but in 1866 it was incorporated as a village under the name of South Saginaw. Theron T. Hubbard was its first president; and the trustees were, Isaac Russell, Aaron Linton, William Nimmons, Hiram Dunn, John Ingledew and Nicholas A. Randall. These men met first as the village council, November 20, 1866. The village did not, however, retain its separate existence long, for in March, 1873, it became a part of the city of East Saginaw. This consolidation of interests increased the population of the city about three thousand, added three or four church organizations, one church edifice, and a fine graded school with five hundred scholars and seven teachers. The school building was a substantial structure costing more than ten thousand dollars.

### The Commercial Interests of East Saginaw in 1858

Eight years after the founding of this enterprising city, the first "History of the Saginaw Valley" appeared, published by Truman B. Fox. It is a small pamphlet, five by eight inches in size, but it contains much valuable information relative to the commercial, professional and industrial affairs of the valley during the formative period. Several hundred copies of the history were undoubtedly printed, but after a lapse of fifty years they have become very rare, and only a few copies are now known to exist. From its pages we glean some interesting facts relating to the commercial interests of long ago, and of the men prominent in business life.

Copeland & Bartow were "wholesale and retail dealers in staple and fancy dry goods, carpeting, clothing, boots and shoes, groceries and provisions, crockery and cutlery," and were located on Water Street, on the dock between Tuscola and Genesee Streets.

John P. Derby was a dealer in groceries and provisions, boots and shoes, and Rockingham ware on Water Street; Franklin Copeland dealt in dry goods, groceries and provisions on the corner of Hoyt and Water Streets, while William Weeks kept a stock of ready-made clothing and furnishing goods on Genesee Street.

Other dealers in groceries and provisions on Water Street, "near the ferry," were, Curtis & Bliss, W. P. Patrick, J. S. Webber and J. A. Whittier; Peter Hiller was located on Genesee Street, and J. Greener, who also dealt in crockery, was on Water Street near Durfee & Atwater's mill. Sanborn & Tucker were wholesale and retail dealers in the same commodities in the Corliss Block, on Genesee Street; M. Minick added ready-made clothing to his grocery line, while Brown & Mumford dealt in "groceries and provisions, country produce, flour, etc., on Washington Street near Genesee."

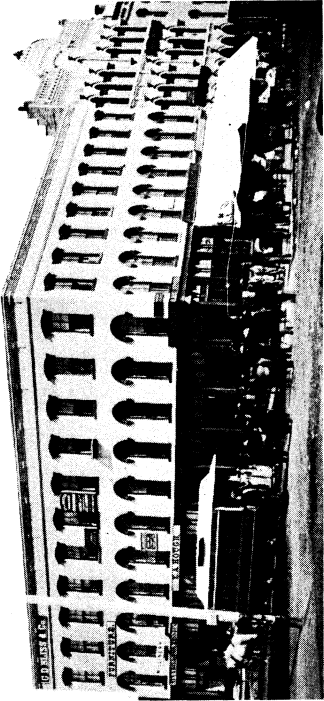
The hardware trade was represented by George Schram, whose shop was on Water Street, between Genesee and German Streets; C. M. Curtis, who was on Water Street near the ferry; and B. B. Buckhout, who announced that he was a "wholesale and retail dealer in iron, steel, nails, stoves and all kinds of hardware, farming utensils, cutlery, tin and sheet iron ware," and was located in the "brick block" on Water Street.

In drugs and medicines we find Hess Brothers and Dr. J. K. Penney, who, in addition to attending to physicians prescriptions "with care and despatch," carried a line of fancy articles, perfumery, paints and oils. The Hess Brothers were in their own block on Genesee Street, while Dr. Penney was located on Water Street between Tuscola and Genesee.

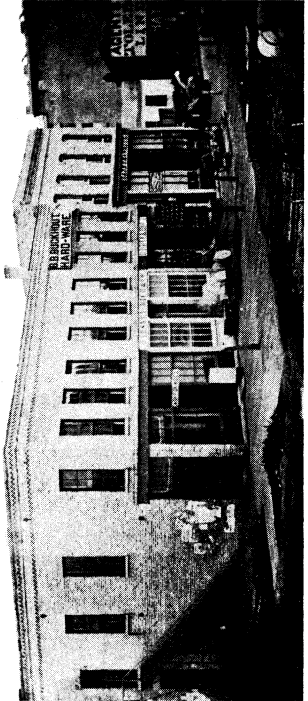
Books, stationery and jewelry stocks were those of Alexander Ferguson, who added fancy articles, on Genesee Street between Water and Washington; Sol Lathrop, on Genesee Street, and Fred N. Bridgman, who was located "at the Postoffice, Hess Block, corner of Genesee and Washington Streets."

The professions were represented, in the law by William J. Loveland, an "attorney and counsellor at law, and solicitor in chancery," whose office was in the Hess Block, up stairs; James L. T. Fox, who announced "collections attended to in any portion of the State or United States," with an office in the Jeffers Block, on Water Street; Webber & Wheeler, whose office was in the brick block on Genesee Street; and D. W. C. Gage, with an office in Gage's Block, up stairs, on Genesee Street. In the practice of medicine were Doctors G. A. Lathrop, J. K. Penney, A. Bryce, Curtis and C. T. Disbrow.

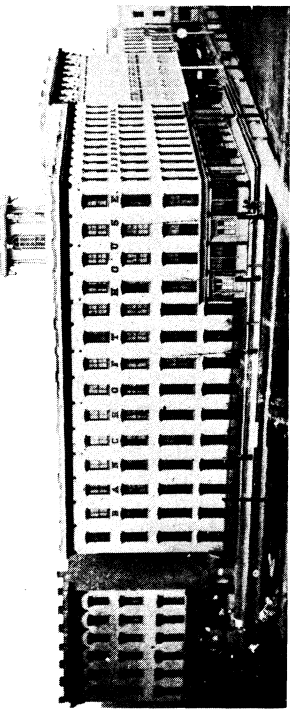
In the way of hotels the village was well provided, there being the Kirby House, kept by John Godley, at the corner of Washington and Genesee Streets; the Farmer's Exchange, W. Wisner, landlord, corner of Washing-



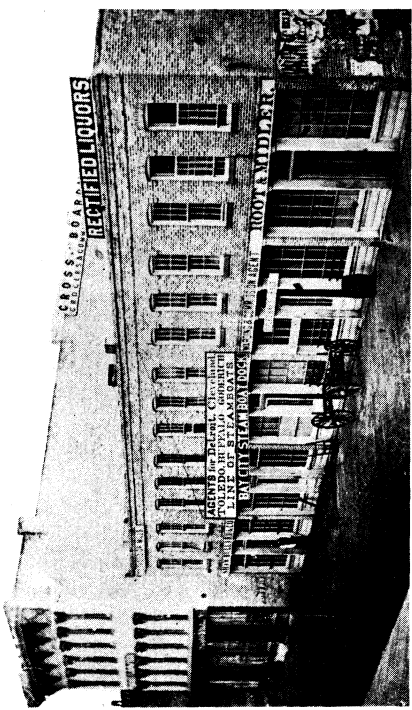
THE CROUSE BLOCK ON SITE OF EDDY BUILDING



EAST SIDE OF WATER STREET AT TUSCOLA, 1860



THE BANCROFT HOUSE IN 1865



WATER STREET AT FOOT OF TUSCOLA

ton and Genesee, "opposite the Kirby House;" the Forest City House, corner of Water and Genesee; the Franklin House, kept by John Leidlein, at the corner of Franklin and Genesee Streets; and the Buena Vista House, with John Jeffers as landlord, on Water Street near the steam ferry.

W. L. P. Little & Company were bankers and dealers in foreign exchange, the banking office being in Hoyt's Block, up stairs, corner of Genesee and Water Streets. The United States Land Office, of which Colonel W. L. P. Little was the receiver, and Moses B. Hess the register, was located in the same block.

The Saginaw Enterprise, the first newspaper established in East Saginaw, with Perry Joslin as editor and proprietor, was located on Water Street between Genesee and Tuscola.

The Tax agency and surveying office was conducted by G. G. Hess and D. A. Pettibone in the Hess Block, on Washington Street.

A millinery shop, "with all the latest styles in bonnets," was kept by Mrs. Morrison at the corner of Genesee and Water Streets, North.

In manufacturing the village made a good showing, with Hoyt's Steam Flouring Mill in the lead. According to its announcement, it "grinds annually over fifty thousand bushels of wheat, fourteen thousand bushels of corn, its products amounting, in flour to nearly seventy thousand dollars, and corn meal to eleven thousand. This mill has four run of stone, and a powerful and magnificent engine. Corner of Water and Carroll Streets, on the dock." Wilcox's Steam Flouring Mill was on Water Street, "near the steam ferry," and "a large portion of the business of this mill is custom work, the total amount is probably fifteen to twenty thousand bushels of grain ground annually." There was also the City Mill on Genesee Street, "in the bayou," on the site of the building long occupied by D. B. Freeman and M. C. Murray.

The foundry and machine shop business was represented by Warner, Eastman & Company, who were "repairers of steam engines, mill gearing, poney gangs, and other work in that line," with a shop on Water Street; George W. Merrill, who was a "manufacturer of steam engines, threshing machines, plows, steamboat and mill gearing, all orders pertaining to this business being promptly attended to. Water Street on the dock;" Fred Koehler, blacksmith and repairer of machinery for steamboats, vessels, etc., with a shop on Tuscola Street, between Washington and Water; Birdsall & Brother, blacksmithing and horseshoeing done to order, with shop on Genesee Street, over the bayou; and I. E. Godley, manufacturer of horse shoes, and blacksmithing done to order, on Washington Street.

The woodworking industry had Hosea Pratt, whose steam sash, door and blind factory was on Franklin Street, in the bayou; Ernest Feige, a manufacturer and dealer in all kinds of cabinet ware, upholstering, etc., on Water Street; and J. A. Large, with a furniture wareroom and manufactory of cabinet ware of all kinds, including "coffins made to order," on Genesee Street. James Lewis was also a manufacturer of sash, doors and blinds at his steam factory on Water Street, on the dock; and A. H. Mershan & Company operated a planing mill on Water Street, near the ship yard.

Chester B. Jones was a leading dealer in lumber, shingles and lath, with an office in Gage's Block, up stairs, Genesee Street. John S. Estabrook was also a dealer in and inspector of lumber and shingles, his office being on "Water Street opposite the printing office." E. J. Mershon followed the occupation of inspecting lumber and shingles, and his office was in Hoyt's Block, up stairs.

In the stave and heading business, D. Shaw was a dealer and exporter of hogshhead and butt staves, having an office on Water Street between Thompson and Hayden; Henry Woodruff was a dealer in staves for export, on Genesee Street; and Robert Pierson dealt in staves on Water Street.

The diversified industries of the village included the business of M. L. Gage, manufacturer of harnesses, saddles, trunks, etc., on Genesee Street; H. Marks, manufacturer of hats, caps, furs, and furnishing goods; A. Eaton, maker of boots and shoes, on Genesee Street; and H. Schwartz and Casper Braden, makers of chairs and cabinet ware. O. L. Glover and Hall & Loomis were the house, sign and ornamental painters, both having shops on Water Street, north.

An extended list of the lumber manufacturers and their production at this period will be found in the chapter on The Lumber Industry.

### **Solomon Bond Bliss**

Another of our old and esteemed citizens was S. Bond Bliss, who came to East Saginaw in the Spring of 1854. He was born at Brimfield, Massachusetts, April 17, 1828, and was the oldest of a family of five, four sons and one daughter. Without enjoying the full educational advantages of the time, he went to work at the age of twelve years, finding employment at Springfield and Boston. After his seventeenth birthday he went to Ohio, and located at Elyria where he was married in 1850 to a daughter of Dr. O. L. Mason. They resided in Cleveland four years, when he came to this valley to transact some lumber business, and thereafter made this city his home.

For a time he engaged in the grocery business with Curtis Brothers, but later purchased their interest and extended the business to that of a general mercantile character. He was also for some years interested in the lumber business; and he organized the Saginaw Valley Bank, in partnership with his brother, W. K. Bliss and B. M. Fay, under the firm name of Bliss, Fay & Company. This firm built the brick block at the southeast corner of Genesee and Washington Streets, which was long known as the Bliss Block, now the Mason Building.

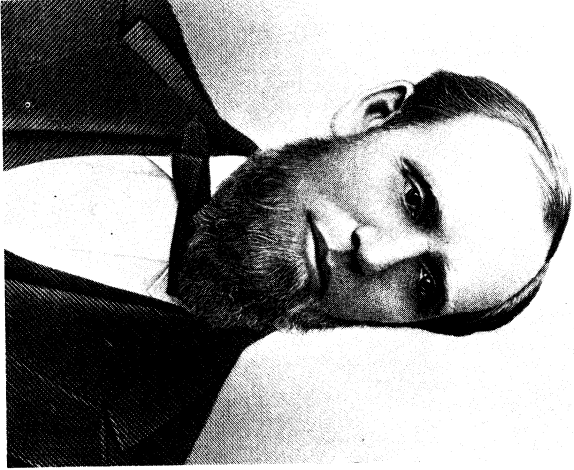
In 1862 he was elected to the State Legislature, and was postmaster of East Saginaw for a short term under President Johnson. For many years he was a leader of the temperance movement here, being president of the Reform Club. He was a member of the Saginaw Valley Pioneer Society, of St. Bernard Commandery No. 16, K. T., and was one of the charter members of the Unitarian Society. Kindness and generosity were prominent traits of his character, and he was wont to lend a helping hand to those in need, particularly worthy young men, those who were in his employ speaking in high terms of praise of his aid and personal interest in their welfare.

Mr. Bliss was a genial gentleman with a smile and kind word for all acquaintances, and was held in high esteem by all classes. His death on November 12, 1884, was deeply felt by all citizens, particularly his older friends with whom he had shared the struggles, trials and final triumphs of pioneer life. Surviving him were Mrs. Bliss and one son, Walter B. Bliss, who continued to reside at the family homestead, at 320 North Water Street. The former died July 23, 1892, and the son, Walter, died in Chicago, April 26, 1905, leaving a widow and a son and daughter.

### **Incorporation of Saginaw City**

From the official records of long ago it appears that Saginaw City was never incorporated as a village, and to the year 1857 it was a part of the township of Saginaw. A city charter was granted which went into operation





**WILLIAM J. BARTOW**

One of our pioneer citizens whose enterprise aided in moulding the destinies of the city. He was mayor of East Saginaw in 1860, and later succeeded Charles B. Mott as representative of the Hoyt Interests. For a number of years he was vice-president of the Savings Bank of East Saginaw.



**SOLOMON BOND BLISS**

Moved to Saginaw in 1854, and was a banker, merchant and lumberman. Was postmaster in 1866-67, city treasurer, and representative in State Legislature in 1863-64. Organized Saginaw Valley Bank, and built the Bliss Block at Genesee and Washington Avenues.

in the spring of 1857, the first meeting of the common council being held April 11. Gardner D. Williams was the first mayor; Coe Garrett, recorder; E. H. Shiminond, treasurer; and the first aldermen were, John Moore, George W. Bullock, Jay Smith and David Hughes; John E. Gibson was marshal, and E. C. Newell, city attorney. Mayor Williams was elected the following year for a second term, but his death occurred on December 11, 1858, and Hiram L. Miller, then recorder of the city, acted as mayor until the election of George W. Bullock to the mayoralty, in the spring of 1859.

In the early days of the incorporated city the most desirable residence section was on North Hamilton Street, and here were the homes of William Binder, Myron Butman, William H. Sweet, Newell Barnard, Doctor I. N. Smith and others whose names will be recalled by the older residents acquainted with our early history.

#### **William Binder**

For many years the home of William Binder was on the east side of the street, between Franklin (Hancock) and Ames Streets. It stood just north of the site of the three-story brick building, which was erected many years after by Barnard & Binder at the corner of Franklin. Mr. Binder was a resident of Saginaw for more than forty years, and during the era of prosperity was a prominent lumberman and salt manufacturer. For years he held the office of secretary of the Saginaw Barrel Factory; and was actively identified in the promotion of industrial enterprises for the upbuilding of the city. When he removed to a new and pretentious house, which he had built at the northwest corner of Washington (Michigan) and Bristol Streets, his old home was converted into a place of business, and occupied for a long time by A. Siebel.

During the panic of 1873 Mr. Binder met with severe reverses of fortune which was never regained. He was a public spirited citizen, and was the last controller of Saginaw City, relinquishing the office upon the consolidation of the Saginaws, which occurred in the spring of 1890. Shortly after, he returned with his family to the scenes of his boyhood at Hersau, Wurtemberg, Germany, where he passed his declining years, and died February 7, 1915.

#### **Myron Butman**

Among the oldest, best known, and highly esteemed lumbermen of Saginaw was Myron Butman, who was born at Milan, Erie County, Ohio, October 5, 1825. His father was John S. Butman, one of the early pioneers of Northern Ohio. He received his early education in the public schools of his native place, and afterward attended the Huron Institute, in a neighboring town, where he completed his schooling. Quite early in life he embarked in the retail lumber business in connection with a mercantile venture in Milan, and continued in this trade for about ten years.

In 1854 he sought wider fields for his enterprise and went first to Chicago and thence, a year later, to Saginaw when blanket Indians were as yet no uncommon sight in the streets. Lumbering in this section was then beginning to assume large proportions, and he engaged in the general lumber business, which he conducted on a broad scale throughout his active career. In 1860 he entered into partnership with Samuel H. Webster, and the firm built a saw mill and salt works at Zilwaukee. They were pioneers in the salt industry of the State, as this salt block was the third erected after the manufacture of salt became an assured commercial venture in the valley. From a small beginning, they witnessed the remarkable expansion of the industry, in 1900 reaching a total production in Michigan of more than five and a quarter million barrels; and the initial price of three dollars a barrel reduced to fifty cents a barrel on the dock.

This partnership continued for three years, when Mr. Webster withdrew; and Mr. Butman then formed a co-partnership with Amasa Rust, under the firm name of Butman & Rust, which continued until the death of Mr. Rust in 1893. Meanwhile he dealt extensively in timber lands, the beginning of this business having been made with about four thousand acres of fine timber in this valley, which he had located just previous to his coming here.

In 1871 the firm of Butman & Rust, in connection with Rust & Hay, purchased the old Watson mill at Bay City, which they remodded and operated under the name of Hay, Butman & Company until 1885, when Butman & Rust bought out the other interests. During the last few years of its operation this mill was one of the best on the river, its capacity running to ninety thousand feet per day, its timber supplies being drawn from the Tittabawassee River and tributaries. The firm acquired an enviable reputation as manufacturers of high-grade lumber, due in no small degree to the excellent judgment of Mr. Butman in the selection of timber; and special care was taken in manufacture, the element of character of the product being of greater consideration than that of quantity. Running largely to the better grades, it was eagerly sought by the trade, and commanded the highest prices in the market.

Mr. Butman was married in 1848 to Miss Mary P. Adams, who was born and reared in Milan, Ohio. Mrs. Butman was a woman of quiet, refined tastes, and closely attached to home ties. She was a devout member of St. John's Episcopal Church, and was deeply interested in the work of the parish and of charitable organizations, in all of which Mr. Butman was thoroughly in sympathy. They had one daughter, Mary P., who inherited many of her father's sterling qualities and her mother's refinement and tenderness of heart, to which was united a benevolent disposition. Possessed of fine feelings, generous impulses, and sensitive to the misfortunes of others, it was but natural that her acts of kindness and helpful interest, always unostentatiously bestowed, should have been widespread. Unfortunately wedded to a man whose character, temperament and trend of thought were entirely antipodal to her noble qualities, her married life was marred by unhappiness and sorrow. She died May 7, 1912, preceded to the beyond by her mother who died April 24, 1907.

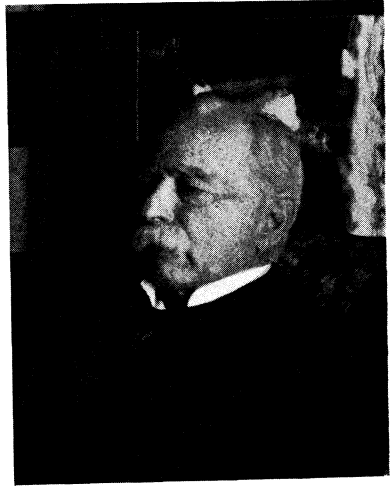
In his active business life Mr. Butman did not confine his interests to lumbering, but associated himself with other industrial enterprises. He was one of the organizers of the Bank of Saginaw, which he served as president for many years; and he was interested in the Allington & Curtis Manufacturing Company and other concerns designed to supplant the lumber industry, which about 1890 had reached a period of decline. He was a man of deep sympathies, was broad minded and generous, and lived a life of usefulness in the community, marked by the highest integrity. He died January 10, 1901, in the city which for almost fifty years had known him as an honored citizen.

#### William H. Sweet

William H. Sweet, for many years one of the leading attorneys of Saginaw County, was born in New York City, October 13, 1819. At the age of two years his parents moved on a farm, where his boyhood was spent. But at eighteen years of age, his health being precarious, he shipped on a whaling voyage which continued for three years, during which time he visited nearly every port in the world. Returning to New York, he entered into a mercantile life, but after three years closed out his business, purchased a stock of general merchandise and in 1850 brought his goods to the western frontier on the Saginaw.



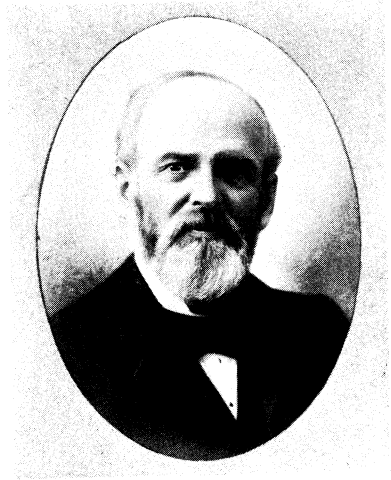
WILLIAM H. SWEET



MYRON BUTMAN



NEWELL BARNARD



DANIEL L. C. EATON

This business he conducted successfully for some time, but later sold out to engage in lumbering. While still a young man he studied law, in due time was admitted to the bar, and became associated with J. G. Sutherland, one of the pioneers of his profession in this valley. Mr. Sweet was mayor of Saginaw City for two terms, was prosecuting attorney of this county from 1861 to 1863, and was a member of the Board of the Union School District in 1891.

By his first wife, who died in 1872, Mr. Sweet was the father of six children—three daughters, who upon marrying were Mrs. Martin, Mrs. Penoyer and Mrs. Pendleton, and Fred B. Sweet, one time county clerk, and William and Sumner Sweet. After a long illness Mr. Sweet died at his home in Saginaw, February 16, 1898.

For many years the family home was on the northwest corner of Throop and Hamilton Streets, on or very near the site of the old council house used by General Cass in negotiating the treaty of 1819 with the Chippewa Indians.

### The Commercial Interests of Saginaw City

In 1858, according to Fox's "History of Saginaw," the city boasted of "many beautiful buildings, several extensive warehouses, docks, etc. Nothing can exceed the beauty of the locality, especially in Spring and Summer. The streets are regularly laid out, are, in many parts, well shaded with locust and maple trees, and residences of many citizens evince great taste and refinement." At that time the city had a population of about twenty-five hundred.

The business and professional interests were represented by citizens of sterling character, who left the stamp of their individuality upon the future city. In the dry goods line were D. H. Jerome & Company, who also dealt in clothing, groceries and provisions, in the Jerome Block on Water Street; George W. Bullock, with fancy dry goods, staple groceries and provisions, at the corner of Ames and Hamilton; G. T. Zschoerner, in the Woodruff Block, Water Street on the dock; and P. C. Andre in the same general line, on Water Street on the dock.

In groceries and provisions were J. Dowling, A. Andre, on Water Street; Myron Butman, George Streeb and William Binder, in the Woodruff Block, on Water Street; Jacob Vogt, on the dock; and M. Redman kept a restaurant at the corner of Hamilton and Jefferson Streets.

The hardware trade was supplied by D. H. Jerome & Company, who also carried a stock of "iron, steel, nails, stoves, and hollow ware," at the corner of Water and Van Buren; and N. Gibson, who dealt in mill saws, chains, cutlery, etc., in Gibson's Block on Water Street.

The merchant tailors were F. A. Leasia, "dealer in all kinds of garments, hats, caps, etc.," in the Mitchell Block, on Water Street; M. Rathkie, manufacturer and dealer in ready-made clothing, etc., on Water Street; and M. Mulcahay, in clothing on Water Street. The milliners were Mrs. Rice, who also carried fancy goods, on Water Street, and Miss Hamilton, mantua maker, at the corner of Ames and Hamilton Streets.

A. Fisher was the leading cabinet and chair manufacturer, with a shop on Water Street, then the principal business street.

The tannery was owned and operated by C. Wyder, "tanner and currier, Stevens and Water Street, towards Green Point." J. W. Richardson was a manufacturer and dealer in harnesses, saddles, martingals, trunks, etc., on Water Street; and the shoe shops were those of C. Kull, C. Shultz, C. T. Brenner, G. Sanders, P. M. Hale, C. Fuche and G. Winkler, all on Water Street.

In drugs and medicines were Jay Smith, M. D., at the corner of Van Buren and Water; A. O. T. Eaton & Brother, at the corner of Court and Water; and D. F. Mitchell, in the Mitchell Block on Water Street. The physicians were J. B. White, whose office was at the corner of Lyon and Water Streets; N. D. Lee, on Jefferson Street; D. F. Mitchell; M. C. T. Plessner, on Water Street; Dion Birney, at Court and Water; and S. Franke, at the corner of Franklin and Hamilton Streets.

The legal profession was well represented by Moore & Gaylord, "attorneys and counsellors of law, and solicitors in chancery," office in the court house; E. C. Newell, the city attorney, at Water and Jefferson Streets; C. D. Little, at the corner of Washington and Madison; Hiram S. Penoyer, with an office in the court house; Sutherland & Benedict, at Court and Water; and William H. Sweet, on Water Street.

A livery was conducted by A. H. Paine, who "always keeps on hand all sorts of good vehicles, with first-class horses;" and the ship yard of M. Dougherty on Water Street, completes the list of tradesmen of that period.

### The Fish Trade

For many years fisheries was a business of some importance in the valley; and in 1858 the value of this trade was about forty thousand dollars. Large quantities of fish were used in the town, and much was shipped to the East. The weight of fish then caught in the lakes, bays and rivers was: for Sturgeon, seventy to one hundred and twenty pounds; Trout, twenty to sixty pounds; Muskellunge, fifteen to forty pounds; Pickerel, six to fifteen pounds; Mullet, five to ten pounds; White Fish, two to five pounds; Perch, about one pound; Black Bass, one to three pounds; Bill Fish, one to three pounds; and Cat Fish, ten to twenty pounds. In those days the flesh of the sturgeon was called "Saginaw beef."

"There was a time every spring," relates E. S. Williams, "when the Indians from Saginaw and the interior would congregate in large parties, for the purpose of putting up dried sturgeon, which made a very delicate dish when properly cooked, and was much used in those days by the first families of Detroit. We used to purchase considerable of it for our use. The Indians would select the best, flay the pieces, hang them across poles in rows, about four feet from the ground and two feet apart, then a gentle smoke was kept under them until they were perfectly dry, then packed up in bales of perhaps fifty pounds each. Where they accomplished this was on the Point Au Gres.

"At a certain time every spring the sturgeon would come upon this point, which was very shallow a long distance out, and in the warm sun would work themselves to the shore until they would lie and roll like cord wood, perfectly helpless, and here the Indians would go among them and select the best. I have been on the point at these times and seen the sport. A little Indian will wade in to about a foot of water, find a big sturgeon (some are very large), strike a small tomahawk in his nose, and straddle him. The sturgeon will carry him through the water at quite a speed, the little fellow steering by the handle of his tomahawk, not letting him go to deep water, and when he tires of the sport he runs his fancy nag ashore."

"In the spring of the year," continued Mr. Williams, "in high water, the ice being gone, the wall-eyed pike would run up the Saginaw in great numbers, running on the Shiawassee meadows which were overflowed for miles, from three to six feet deep. One beautiful warm spring morning, Major William Mosely and myself proposed to go up the Shiawassee about four miles and have a little sport, spearing in the evening by torch light. I took a large canoe, one man, a lunch basket, blankets, etc., expecting to stay over night.

"Arriving at the Indian camps the water for miles was like a mirror in the hot sun. We went out a short distance and found the water alive with fish. We speared a good many, with much sport. The Indians proposed if I would buy the fish they would go out and spear enough to fill our canoes. I agreed to do so, and in an hour or two they came in alongside my canoe. I would count the fish, taking each Indian's name and number of his fish in my pass book. We loaded the fish in our canoe, and I engaged two others, loaded them, and got home before dark, when we set men to work cleaning and packing for market.

"Next morning the result of our day's sport was thirty barrels, then worth and sold for five dollars per barrel. These fish were in schools, and the water black with them. An Indian stood in the bow with a spear, while one in the stern would hold the canoe still on one of these schools, and the spearsman would fill the canoe, often bringing up three or four fish at a time, averaging from three to six and eight pounds each. We used to take a good many with seines in the Saginaw, opposite the city, but it was not a success, there being so much sunken floodwood."

#### Summary of Trade of Saginaw in 1858

Fur Trade.....	\$ 30,000	Shingle Trade.....	\$ 30,000
Fish Trade.....	40,000	Stave Trade.....	30,000
Lumber Trade.....	872,000	Ship Yard Trade.....	50,000
Lath Trade.....	20,000	General Trade.....	200,000
Total.....			\$1,272,000

#### The Extension of Business to Hamilton Street

In the seventies a two-story brick building was erected at the corner of North Hamilton and Ames Streets, and some time after the space between it and the larger block on the corner of Franklin (Hancock), was filled by a two-story brick structure. The entire property was then owned by the late Arthur Barnard, and became known as the Barnard Block, where he made his home for a number of years. Mr. Barnard also acquired the property at the corner of Niagara and Hancock Streets, originally the Ritter Block, which was the second brick block erected on the west side of the river. This block was occupied for many years by the "Saginawian," the paper established by the late George F. Lewis.

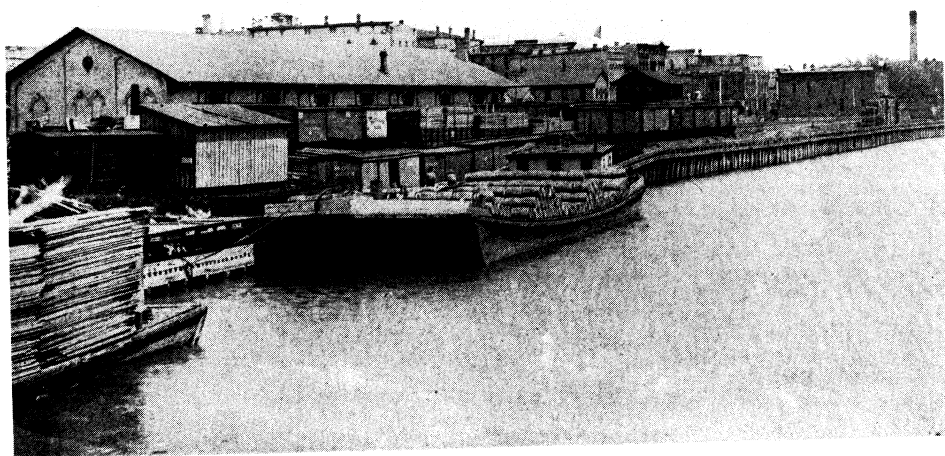
In those days the west side of Water Street, between Hancock and Ames Streets, was devoted entirely to business, and it was here that George Streeb, the veteran grocer, established the business which, about 1870, was removed to the present location on North Webster Street. Years after, the building at the corner of Niagara and Ames Streets was erected by Mr. Barnard, who owned the entire square.

It was in 1871 that the most pretentious business building in Saginaw City was erected at Hamilton and Hancock Streets, and was the appropriate home of the newly established dry goods house of Dawson & Moore, which occupied the double store next to the corner which was used by John C. Ziegler with a fine stock of jewelry. The second and third floors were filled with offices, including the law office of Gaylord & Hanchett, which was composed of Augustus S. Gaylord and Benton Hanchett. Leading physicians and other professional men had offices in this prominent building.

The depression following the panic of 1873 proved too great a handicap for the successful development of the dry goods business, and after a time Dawson & Moore retired. Ammi W. Wright was behind the business, and he would not allow it to go down to failure, and for some years after the leading dry goods house in Saginaw City was maintained at this location.



HAMILTON STREET, LOOKING SOUTH FROM JEFFERSON (CLEVELAND)  
ABOUT 1875



VIEW ON SAGINAW RIVER, LOOKING NORTH FROM MACKINAW STREET  
BRIDGE, ABOUT 1875



## CHAPTER XII

### SOME MUNICIPAL ORGANIZATIONS

---

The City Officials in 1868—The Fire Department—First Volunteer Fire-Fighters—Primitive Hand Engines—Rivalry of the Fire Companies—A Test of Their Mettle—Advent of Steam Engines—Reorganization of the Department—Stewart S. Ellsworth Becomes Chief—George W. Wallis, Veteran Fire-Fighter—Fire-Fighters of Saginaw City—Some Big Losses—The Great Fire of May, 1893—The Holly Water Works—The West Side Water System—A Consolidation of the Water Systems—The Police Department—Controlling the "Red Sash Brigade"—Enter a New Element, Patrick Kain—When Changes Were Rapid—Saginaw an Orderly City.

IN searching out and examining the dim records of the past, often musty and discolored with age, it is interesting to trace, step by step, the development of the municipal organizations which governed the two cities of the Saginaws. From the time of their incorporation as cities, in 1857 and 1859, to their consolidation in 1890, both enjoyed a period of uninterrupted prosperity. The timber and salt resources of the valley were producing wealth to many sturdy and energetic men of capital and brains; trade and commerce was creating competence to others; and the ablest men in the community were directing the business of the people. None, however engrossed in his private affairs, declined to serve the public, or refused to give of his time and means to promote enterprises and improvements calculated to advance the material interests of the city.

The men at the head of the various departments constituting the city governments were the biggest, brainiest and most progressive citizens of their time, and they conducted the municipal affairs with probity and policies of conservatism. In 1868 the city officials of East Saginaw were: James L. Ketcham, mayor; Charles H. Camp, recorder; Albert R. Wedthoff, treasurer; C. V. DeLand, controller; Gilbert R. Chandler, marshal; Martin Smith, F. W. Carlisle, B. B. Buckhout, aldermen of the first ward; Peter Geisler, George W. Morley, William Zimmerman, aldermen of the second ward; A. B. Wood, John G. Owen and L. H. Eastman, aldermen of the third ward. Hezekiah Miller, G. A. Flanders and E. A. Sturtevant were the justices of the peace; Noah C. Richardson, Egbert Ten Eyck and Volusin Bude were the sewer commissioners; Morgan L. Gage, Chester B. Jones and Charles V. Deland were the cemetery commissioners, and E. A. Moore was street commissioner.

About this time the city offices were located in the Derby Block, on the west side of Water Street between Genesee and Tuscola. Public improvements were being made in the business section, which extended to Jefferson Street, stumps and rubbish being cleared away, side streets opened up and sidewalks laid. A good system of sewerage had been put in a few years before, and the bayous that formerly were so obnoxious to the eye and so detrimental to health were both drained and filled up. The most stringent measures were adopted to insure the good health of the city; and an efficient police organization, under the metropolitan system, was formed for the public safety.

The same year (1868), the city officials of Saginaw City were: Alfred F. R. Braley, mayor; J. B. Scheick, recorder; Emil Schuermann, treasurer; Edwin Saunders, controller; and J. T. Burnham, C. T. Brenner, N. D. Lee, G. R. Stark, S. B. Williams, M. T. C. Plessner, A. A. Brockway and J. S. North were the aldermen of the four city wards, each of which was entitled to two.

At that date the city had a good school system, and besides several ward school houses had recently finished the new Union School, which, according to Fox, "is perhaps, in point of architectural beauty and convenience, the finest edifice in the west." A gas company had recently been organized, "which proposes to furnish the city with gas, soon;" the "Saginaw City Street Railway extends from the foot of Mackinaw Street bridge to the foot of Genesee Street, East Saginaw." A fire department, with a steamer and hook and ladder company, had been organized some time before.

### The Fire Department

In the olden times the Saginaws, as villages, suffered all the losses by fire which usually befell settlements in the western wilderness. With no means at hand to fight fire, except the primitive "bucket brigade" taking water from the river, or wells and cisterns, very little could be done to check a raging conflagration, which generally burned itself out. The log cabins and first frame houses in the villages were widely scattered, and when a fire started it seldom spread to neighboring buildings; but the populace turned out and there was great excitement and confusion.

The men and able-bodied boys quickly formed a line, and an endless chain of pails, pans and anything that would hold water, was kept in hurried motion between the nearest supply of water and the burning building. Meanwhile, the women hung blankets and quilts on the exposed sides of the nearest houses, and by the use of tin ware and dishes kept them wet. Other persons, no less active, removed the contents of nearby buildings, or made themselves useful in other ways. But there was no leader to direct the fire fighters, and their efforts were quite ineffectual.

As the villages grew up after extensive improvements had been made, and houses and business blocks filled the vacant places, the danger of a conflagration was greatly increased, but no adequate protection was afforded to save valuable property. The villages had not yet had their first experience with a big fire.

### The First Volunteer Fire-Fighters

The disastrous fires of 1854, however, awakened the leading men of both places to the necessity of some effective means of fighting fire. Discussions were held at various times and information was sought from eastern cities, but it was not until early in 1857 that any definite action was taken toward organizing an efficient fire fighting force. At East Saginaw this took the form of regularly organized volunteer fire companies, the first company taking the very appropriate name of Pioneer No. 1, with the motto "Always Ready." It had a membership of forty-one, and was provided with neat and attractive uniforms which, together with its engine, hose cart and other equipment, were kept in an engine house located on the southeast corner of Water and Williams (Janes) Streets.

The list of charter members and officers of Pioneer Fire Engine Company, No. 1, is transcribed from Fox's History of Saginaw County, 1858:

George J. Dorr, Foreman	George Schram
T. W. Hawley, 1st Ass't Foreman	John Swift
James F. Brown, 2nd Ass't Foreman	A. L. Rankin
Alexander Ferguson, Secretary	J. Hutton
F. N. Bridgman, Treasurer	E. A. Moore



GENESEEE STREET, LOOKING EAST  
FROM WATER STREET



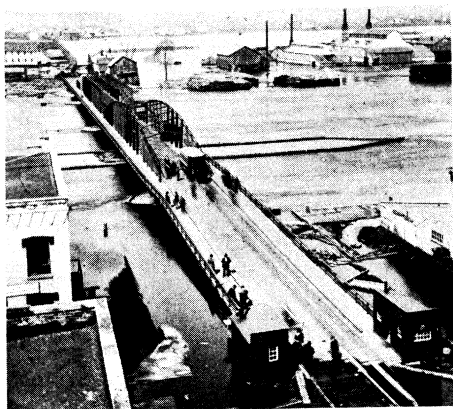
GENESEEE STREET, LOOKING WEST  
FROM WASHINGTON, ABOUT 1868



RUINS OF JACKSON HALL, BURNED  
MAY 25, 1873



GENESEEE STREET, LOOKING EAST  
FROM WASHINGTON, ABOUT 1872



THE GREAT FLOOD OF 1873 ACROSS  
GENESEEE STREET BRIDGE



WATER STREET, LOOKING NORTH  
FROM GERMAN, GREAT FLOOD 1873

## Charter members of Pioneer Fire Engine Company No. 1—continued:

Z. W. Wright	B. P. Derby
B. B. Buckhout	M. Jeffers
R. A. Eddy	H. C. Burt
D. G. Holland	James Hillier
O. J. Quinn	M. Wakeman
J. H. Springer	A. Dann
W. C. Yawkey	H. C. Sawyer
J. L. Hayden	G. C. Sanborn
J. S. Estabrook	W. H. Beatty
G. W. Phillips	F. H. Hall
F. P. Simpson	J. H. Humes
C. Merrill	G. F. Corliss
James Lewis	Jesse A. Burdick
G. C. Warner	Moses Garner
William Weeks	Martin Smith
	O. J. Phillips

As a component part of this company of fire fighters there was an organized hose brigade or "smoke eaters," named Pioneer Hose Company, No. 1, composed of the following members:

J. E. Mershon, Foreman	H. A. Pratt
Sanford Keeler, Ass't Foreman	S. A. Pratt
James Ruan, Secretary	C. H. Gage
William J. Driggs	H. Woodruff
F. A. Van Antwerp	John Weller
C. H. Hayden	

Although the population of the village at this time did not exceed sixteen hundred, the spirit of co-operation was strong among all classes, and soon a second company, named Jesse Hoyt Fire Engine Company, No. 2, was duly organized. It had a membership of thirty, its motto was "Rough and Ready," and, like the first company, was fully equipped with appropriate uniforms, hand fire engine, hose cart and fire-fighting tools, all of which was kept in readiness for instant use in a separate fire engine house on the west side of Water Street at the foot of Tuscola. The members of this company were:

T. A. McLeese, Foreman	Thomas Coats
J. E. Burtt, 1st Ass't Foreman	Thomas Safal
L. Newton, 2nd Ass't Foreman	Henry Marks
Charles T. Harris, Treasurer	Thomas Garry
Robert Haddon, Secretary	Patrick Connor
D. D. Keeler, Steward	George Perkins
Charles Allen	Willis Abel
Dennis McDonald	Charles Blodgett
Thomas Derry	John Haggerty
C. Tebo	Henry Horton
John Earow	Hosea Pratt
Albert Bates	Lewis Causley
Thomas Redson	George Rowell
Jasper Englehart	Aaron Ketrich
Samuel Allen	James Perry

Connected with this engine company was an efficient hose company, named Jesse Hoyt Hose Company, No. 2, with a membership of seven, as follows:

Samuel Hewitt, Foreman	John Connor
E. Bissell, 1st Ass't Foreman	Edward McGunn
Thomas Abbott	W. McGraff
William Bodeno	

Not to be outdone by these energetic townsmen, other men, prominent in the business and social life of the place, formed a very necessary adjunct to the volunteer fire-fighting forces. This was the Rescue Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1, organized August 14, 1858, and was composed of twenty-five members, who were:

William J. Bartow, Foreman	Clark M. Curtis
W. L. Webber, 1st Ass't Foreman	John Sharp
L. H. Eastman, 2nd Ass't Foreman	B. E. Brown
Charles B. Mott, Secretary	P. Mumford
Jay S. Curtis, Treasurer	Frank R. Copeland
S. Bond Bliss	William Gallagher
Thomas Willey	J. A. Whittier
William H. Beach	John F. Driggs
J. H. McFarlin	William Final
Moses B. Hess	Charles O. Garrison
J. C. Godley	R. H. Loomis
Seth C. Beach	Charles W. Grant
N. Whitney	

### The Primitive Hand Engines

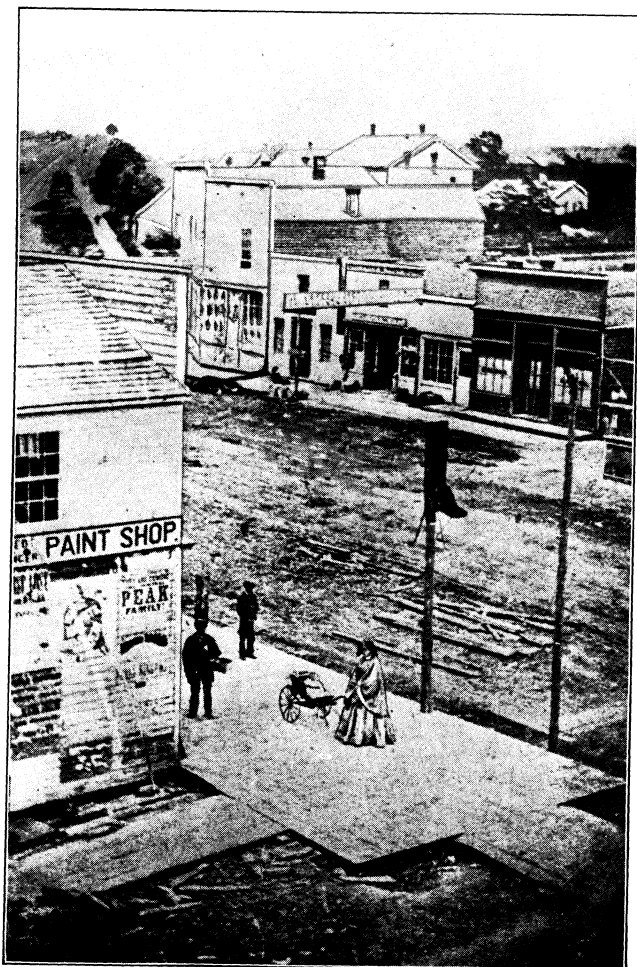
The hand fire engines which afforded the first real protection against fire, were a unique feature of the volunteer forces and a source of great pride to the members of the respective fire companies. They were of mechanism wonderful to behold and when in action, manned by twenty stalwart men clad in bright red and yellow uniforms, they were an endless joy and delight to the small boys. The dimensions of the engines, as determined by S. R. Kirby, then chief engineer of the department, were as follows:

	No. 1	No. 2
Length of Brakes.....	18½ feet	20 feet
Diameter of Cylinders.....	7½ inches	8¾ inches
Area of Plungers.....	44 inches	60 inches
Average Stroke of Piston.....	6½ inches	6 inches
Capacity of Cylinders.....	287 sq. inches	360¾ square inches
Diameter of Suction Pipe.....	4 inches	4½ inches
Diameter of Delivery Pipe.....	2½ inches	2½ inches
Diameter of Nozzle.....	⅞ — 15/16 in.	⅞ — 1 1/16 in.

When worked at their normal speed of sixty strokes per minute, the discharge of engine No. 1 was sixty-two gallons, and of No. 2 seventy-eight gallons, the ratio of capacity being one to one and a quarter. For sixteen years these engines were in active commission, and for half of that period, in conjunction with a third engine named Cataract Engine, No. 3, provided the only mechanical means of fighting fire.

### Rivalry of the Fire Companies

Almost at the beginning of organized fire-fighting a spirit of rivalry and daring seized the members of the two engine and hose companies; and there were keen contests of speed and endurance between them, the first company to reach a fire and throw a stream being declared the winners. The companies drilled and practiced with great zeal, and were often called out to make a short run to an imaginary fire, when they quickly manned their engine, laid their hose, and threw water on somebody's house or barn. Each man thus became thoroughly familiar with his duties, so that when an alarm was sounded all responded promptly and worked with precision.



GENESSEE AVENUE BETWEEN BAUM AND  
JEFFERSON, ABOUT 1860

After a while this practice grew irksome and they longed for a real fire to give zest and danger to the sport. As none occurred they proceeded to make their own — to order — huge bonfires in out of the way places. Some of the side streets, not far from Genesee Plank Road, were then being cleared of standing timber, and were littered with brush, bark and refuse, all dry and highly inflammable. This material the enthusiastic firemen gathered and piled in big heaps, and at appointed times applied the torch. One or other of the fire companies would then assemble at their engine house, the alarm would be given, the men fall in the traces and rush to the bonfire and quickly extinguish it, the hose company doing their part.

### A Test of Their Mettle

The first real test of the skill and endurance of the volunteer firemen occurred on July 26, 1857, on the occasion of the burning of Beach & Moores' store, which stood on the site of W. L. P. Little & Company's warehouse, which was burned in the memorable fire of July 5, 1854. It was about four o'clock on Sunday afternoon when the fire was discovered, and had gained such headway that the building burned to the ground, though by hard work the firemen saved the adjoining property. After this exciting event the self-made bonfires palled on the doughty firemen, and they resorted to the actual thing for their sport.

Some of our older residents still relate with reminiscent flavor, not devoid of humor, of the frequent fires, generally of a trifling nature, which occurred on the outskirts of the business section, after the Beach & Moores fire. Both sides of Genesee Street between Cass (Baum) Street and Jefferson, were then lined with one-story frame houses and shanties, of the most flimsy construction and of little, if any, value; and were occupied by a shoe shop, a paint shop, two or three saloons, a cheap clothing store, a small bake shop, and a few shacks used for dwellings. In one or the other of these rows of buildings there was a fire almost every Saturday night.

Late in the evening the various companies would meet in their respective engine houses and, clad in their bright uniforms, would stand in readiness for the alarm, all eager and impatient for the contest. At the first tap of the bell out they would come in a mad rush for the scene, and the company which had been informed in advance of the exact location of the blaze generally arrived first, and had the first stream playing on the fire. Such fires seldom entailed much loss, but after a time, when by their frequency it became apparent that they were caused by premeditated intent, a strict watch was kept and they then stopped. In justification of the practice the firemen used to say that, for the appearance of that end of the street, and as a preventative against a big fire, the little old buildings ought to be burned down. The owners and village officials evidently thought differently.

### The Advent of the Steam Fire Engine

In 1865 East Saginaw attained a population of about six thousand and spread far beyond the original limits of the village. For six years it had enjoyed the city form of government, and during this time some important buildings had been erected, including the Bancroft House, the Bliss Block, Crouse Block, Little Jake Seligman's blocks, the Methodist, Congregational and Episcopal Churches, and St. Mary's Roman Catholic Church, and many pretentious dwellings. To safeguard this valuable property, and insure against a disastrous fire, it was deemed advisable to reorganize the fire department, purchase a steam fire engine, hose carts and complete equipment, and make it a really efficient fire-fighting machine, with minute men as its standby. Then, too, the novelty of the volunteer organization, with its

competitive element, had worn off, the men no longer assembled and practiced in fire-fighting for the mere sport of it, and it was becoming more difficult every year to keep the companies recruited to an efficient working force. The glitter of the uniforms had disappeared, and only stern duty and the need of protection remained.

Early that year the common council entered into contract for the purchase of one No. 2 Rotary Steam Fire Engine, of Silsby's Island Works, Seneca Falls, New York, together with hose cart, hose and tools. The contract for the engine, the Valley City No. 1, provided that it should discharge five hundred gallons of water per minute, throwing one stream through one and a quarter inch nozzle, two hundred feet; through one and one-eighth inch nozzle, two hundred and thirty feet; through one thousand feet of hose and one-inch nozzle, one hundred and sixty-five feet; and two streams through three-quarter inch nozzles, two hundred feet.



"VALLEY CITY" BOYS, 1864

Thomas Stolze      Nick Raup      John Kinney      Charles Smith      M. Mergen  
Eugene Draper      Jesse A. Burdick      Eddie Burdick      Ben Potter      Vick Heston

The engine was delivered in November, 1865, and on the seventeenth the trial tests were held. In every test the engine more than met the contract stipulations, and accomplished the far more difficult feat of throwing a stream, through fifteen hundred feet of hose, with one and one-eighth inch nozzle, a distance of one hundred and forty-six feet eight inches. On the following Monday, in a trial for the purpose of initiating a new engineer, the "Valley City" threw a stream from one and one-eighth inch nozzle, two hundred and thirty-seven feet, taking water from the river.

The committee on fire engines of the council, composed of Messrs. Jeffers, Lewis, Wickes, O'Brien, Keeler, Ward, Deitz, Buckhout, Hovey,



Joslin and Swartz thereupon voted unanimously to accept the engine and hose cart and twenty-five hundred feet of rubber hose, the report to the council being signed by M. Jeffers, Chairman, and George F. Lewis, Secretary.

To properly house the new fire engine, hose cart, hose and other equipment of the new company, together with three horses, a new brick fire station was built at the southwest corner of German and Cass (Baum) Streets. This was a small two-story structure, substantially built, with a lofty tower in which was hung a large fire bell. The fire engine horses were then always kept in harness, so as to be ready for action at a moment's notice, and the engineer, Jesse A. Burdick, and his family lived in the upper portion of the building, and he was required to be always on hand, or furnish an able substitute during his absence. The other members of the Valley City Company were minute men, who were expected to respond quickly on call.

Soon after the inauguration of the new company, the engine houses of Pioneer Engine Company, No. 1, and Excelsior Engine Company, No. 2, (formerly the Jesse Hoyt No. 2), were removed from their original locations to the lot adjoining the new brick fire station, and the department thus consolidated. Cataract Engine Company, No. 3, with its hand engine was also housed here. With all the passing years the old Valley City engine house, with its several additions, is still in use as headquarters of the department; and the old bell rings out the alarms as it did many years ago.

In those days, long before the inauguration of the water works system, the fire engine took water from the river, and sometimes pumped through two thousand feet of hose to reach a blaze some distance back in the outskirts of the city. At big fires the old hand engines were brought out, manned with volunteer firemen, and pumped dry all the wells and cisterns in the vicinity. As the city expanded and the outlying sections needed better protection, large cisterns and tanks were placed under ground at suitable places, and kept filled with water by the steamer working at the bank of the river. Many disastrous fires were prevented by having an ample supply of water at hand, and a steam fire engine to throw steady streams. In the case of nearly all fires down town, the steamer would pump water from the river, furnishing one strong effective stream, but in some instances threw one stream on the fire and pumped water through another line of hose to one or two of the hand engines working near the fire.

Labor at the hand engines was then compulsory, rendered so by State law, and every able-bodied man was required to work at the brakes, when called on by the chief. Byron B. Buckhout was chief of the department for a number of years and, though short of stature, was a picturesque figure at fires, clad in uniform with red helmet and belt, and carrying a huge speaking trumpet, which he used very industriously. On one occasion when a big fire threatened on Water Street, being short handed at one of the engines, he ordered a strapping lumber-jack to take a place at the brakes. Being refused by him in an insolent manner, the chief struck him a stunning blow on the head, knocking him down. This act had a salutary effect on the bystanders, and there was no further trouble in manning the engines.

In those days nearly all the buildings were of wood of flimsy construction, and great quantities of saw dust and slabs scattered about, so that there were a good many fires for a small city. The firemen were often called out three times in a day, and once five times, but on an average there were about five fires in a week, and in summer four or five a month. There was no water works then, and the firemen often had to work with long lines of hose, and take water from the bayou, which was very muddy. Yet through all this hard and continual service, the "Valley City No. 1," as reported by

the engineer in 1869, "never gave out or failed to do its work in a perfectly satisfactory manner, and that all the repairs to it during the four years had not exceeded one hundred dollars; and it works just as well as on the day we got it." The engine was a part of the fire-fighting equipment of the city for about twenty-five years, although after the Holly Water Works was put in commission, in December, 1873, furnishing a direct pressure at the hydrants, it was kept in reserve. About 1890 the old steamer was sold to William Williamson, of South Saginaw.

### Reorganization of the Department

As the city expanded and building operations assumed large proportions, the old central station system, with its one or two full pay men, and pipe and ladder men "on call," was deemed entirely inadequate for the protection of valuable property. In 1874, when George D. Walcott was chief of the department, a thorough reorganization was effected and five small hose houses were built and equipped in widely separated sections of the city. Each of these stations was provided with one hand hose cart, four hundred feet of hose, play pipe, wrenches and lantern. The station at South Saginaw had, in addition, the hand fire engine No. 2, three hundred feet of hose, brass play pipe, lanterns and wrenches, and one hook and ladder truck with five ladders, pole and grappling hooks, pick and chopping axes and speaking trumpet.

In perfecting the organization, S. S. Ellsworth, foreman of Valley City No. 1, was appointed secretary of the department, and given a general supervision of all the auxiliary hose houses and equipment. Under his immediate command at No. 1 were a groomsmen, six firemen and two hydrant men. Hose house No. 2 was located on Franklin Street, between Astor and Potter, and Henry Naegely was foreman with seven firemen; hose house No. 3 was located on Sixth Street, between Lapeer and Tuscola, and Charles W. Wrege was the foreman with six firemen; hose house No. 4 was located on Emily Street, between Hoyt and Merrill, and William Ellis was the foreman with nine men; hose house No. 5 was located on McCoskry Street, between Washington and Water, and George C. Merrill was the foreman with six men; and hose house No. 6 was located on Center Street, near Mackinaw, and C. C. Martindale was the foreman and had seven firemen under his command. Hook and Ladder Company No. 6, was also stationed at this house, and comprised eighteen members, including Charles P. Hess, Kasper Zeigin, H. Chriscaden, A. H. Starring, Peter Stine, Daniel Edwards and Henry Blankerts, all old residents of the South Side. The foremen of these hose companies, excepting No. 1, acted as janitors of their respective houses, reported on the condition of the equipment every week, and drilled the men in their duties. They were paid ten dollars per month, and the firemen six dollars per month, for their services "on call" in fighting fires.

### Stewart S. Ellsworth Becomes Chief

Upon the resignation of Mr. Walcott, on March 31, 1875, Stewart S. Ellsworth was appointed chief engineer of the department, but he retained the position of foreman of Valley City No. 1, at a salary of eight hundred dollars a year. Under his able and wise management of affairs, covering a period of more than ten years, the department was greatly strengthened, the equipment improved, and the men attained a high efficiency. His economical handling of department matters was manifested on various occasions. At one time, when better protection was urgently needed at South Saginaw, he repaired the old hand engines, sold one to the village of St. Charles, and one to Vassar, applied the proceeds, by consent of the council,



VALLEY CITY NO. 3 FIRE STATION  
Department Headquarter, Corner Germania and Baum.

to the purchase of a new two-horse hose cart for Valley City No. 1, and transferred a good one-horse hose cart from there to Hose House No. 6, on Center Street.

In the early eighties the old call system was gradually superseded by the full pay system, the number of men devoting all their time to the duties of the department being increased to about nineteen. This force included nine men stationed at Valley City No. 1, whose pay ranged from one thousand dollars a year for the chief engineer and foreman, three hundred and twenty to five hundred and sixty dollars for foremen who were also drivers of carts, to two hundred and forty dollars for pipemen, and one hundred and eighty for hosemen, the pipemen and hosemen, however, having other occupations close to the fire stations. These men lived and slept in the upper portions of the hose houses, which were made quite comfortable for them, and were thus always on hand to respond to alarms.

To each hose house was allotted a foreman and two pipemen; and one-horse hose carts were substituted for the old hand carts previously used. Hose companies Nos. 2 and 3 were consolidated, and the station removed to Third and Potter Streets. In 1885 the Gamewell Fire Alarm System was introduced, with twenty-five boxes well distributed in all sections. This was a great advantage to the department and the city, and was very largely due to the efforts and repeated recommendations of the chief engineer. Mr. Ellsworth died December 15, 1885, shortly after extreme exertions at a fire in the Burnham and Still mill.

#### George W. Wallis — Veteran Fire-Fighter

The oldest man now in the department, in point of service if not in years, is George W. Wallis, who has seen thirty-seven years of continuous service to the city, twenty-eight of which he has filled the office of chief. On May

24, 1878, he was appointed call man at Valley City No. 1, at the munificent salary of ten dollars per month. At that time there were only three full-pay men in the department, two of whom were attached to Valley City No. 1, and the third to Hose House No. 6, at South Saginaw. Afterward the pay of hosemen was advanced to fifteen dollars per month for call service; and the records show that in March, 1884, George Wallis and Thomas Passmore were appointed pipemen at twenty dollars a month salary. In 1887 Mr. Wallis was appointed chief of the department, and three years later was reappointed to the same position and responsibilities for the consolidated Saginaws.

During this long and faithful service he has witnessed many changes in the East Side, and has endeavored to keep the department apace with the fire hazard of a growing and prosperous city. Soon after he took charge the fire-fighting force was put on a full-time, full-pay basis, and the number of men increased from time to time, so that now there are thirty-three men in the department on the East Side. The old wooden hose houses have been replaced by substantial brick buildings, in places calculated to best serve the sections in which they are located. All the one-horse hose carts have been replaced with two-horse hose wagons, carrying from seven hundred to one thousand feet of hose and tools used in fighting fire; and the hand-drawn ladder trucks have long since been displaced by two-horse hook and ladder equipment. Even these will soon disappear in favor of motor propelled and motor driven fire engines, ladder trucks and water towers, thus greatly increasing the efficiency of the force.

The City of Saginaw now owns five pieces of motor equipment, engine No. 3, introduced into the department in the fall of 1911, engine No. 13, stationed on the West Side, delivered in 1914, chemical engine No. 6, at the City Hall station, commissioned late in 1915, a motor-driven ladder truck and the chief's motor car. Other equipment will soon be added to the department; and eventually all the apparatus will be of the machine type.

Of the older members of the force were Thomas J. Passmore, who entered the service February 16, 1880; George Scollen, in February, 1882; H. E. McNally, in April, 1882; Edward Taylor, in May, 1883; Fred Beck, in April, 1884; Duncan J. McIntyre, in January, 1886, and Frank Powd, in May, 1886. The only one of these now in the service is H. E. McNally, the captain of hose company No. 1.

The six hose houses on the East Side are located and manned as follows:

No. 1 — At Kirk and Fourth Streets, A. J. McNally, Captain, three men.

No. 2 — At Fitzhugh and Sixth Streets, William Feeheley, Captain, three men.

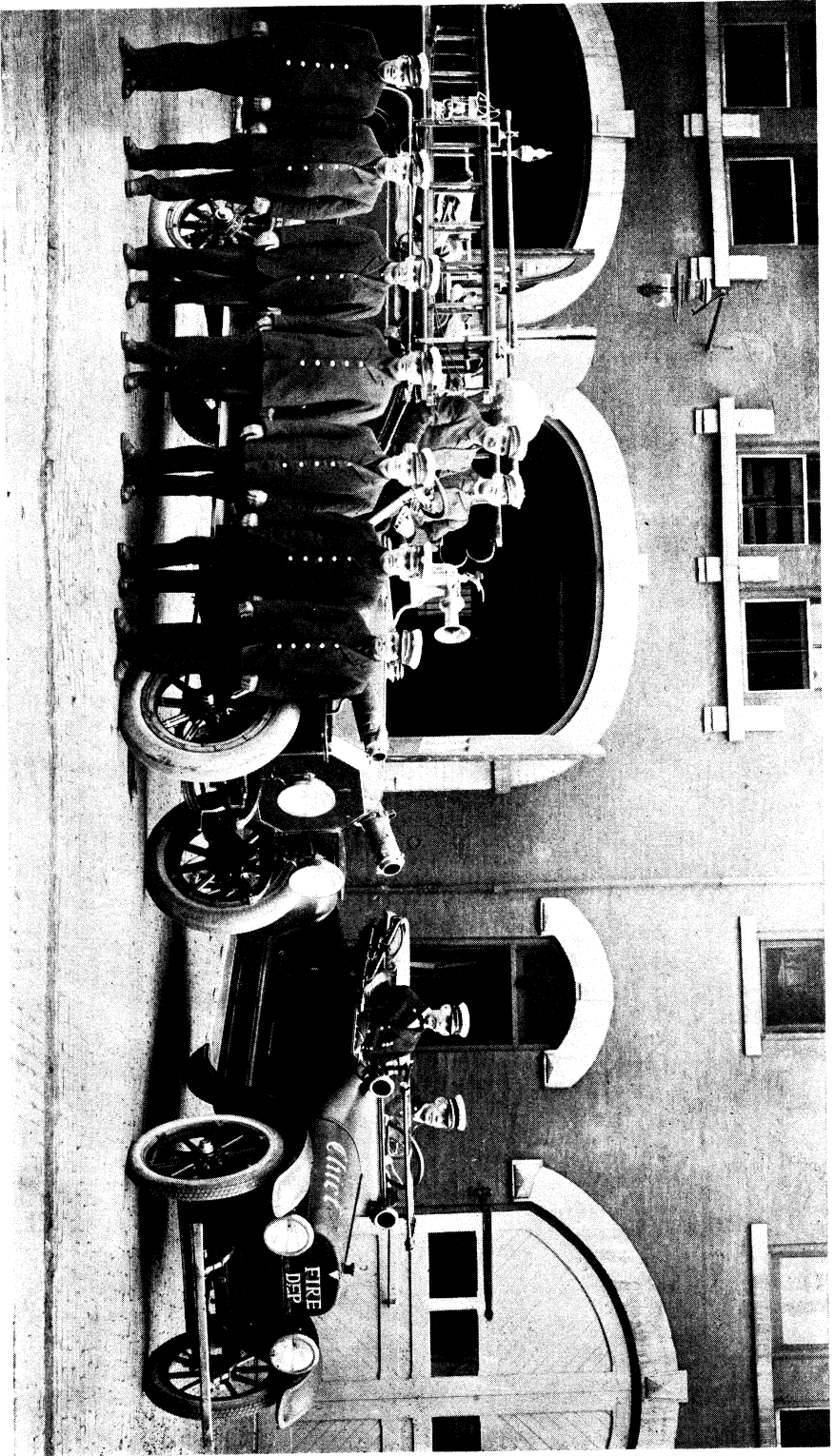
No. 3 — At Germania and Baum Streets, William Brockless, Captain, nine men. J. Kreuzberger, Captain Hook and Ladder Company.

No. 6 — On South Washington Street, near City Hall, Angus McLeod, Captain, six men.

No. 7 — On Perkins Street, near Genesee, H. E. McNally, Captain, three men.

No. 8 — On Center Street, near Fordney, Dave Schaefer, Captain, three men.

The fire alarm system connecting all these houses has also expanded in the thirty years it has been in use, and there are now fifty-four boxes on the East Side. The service thus rendered, together with the aid of the two local telephone systems, with more than six thousand connections, is of the greatest advantage to the department and the city.



VALLEY CITY BOYS, 1915  
With Number 3 Engine, and Chief Walks and Ass't Chief Hudson.

### The Fire-Fighters of Saginaw City

Immediately after the incorporation of Saginaw City, in May, 1857, the earliest measures for fire prevention were introduced, and two Fire Wardens were appointed by the council, one for each ward. An ordinance relative to the prevention of fires was passed and approved by the mayor, Gardner D. Williams, on May 13, in which the duties of the fire wardens were clearly defined. The first fire wardens were Nathaniel Gibson and David H. Jerome, and it was their duty, or either of them, in the months of May and November, "to enter into any house or building, lot, yard or premises in said city, and examine the fire places, hearths, chimneys, stoves and pipes thereto, and ovens, boilers and other apparatus likely to cause fires, also places where ashes may be deposited, and all places where any gun powder, hemp, flax, rushes, shavings or other combustible materials may be lodged, and to give such directions in regard to these several matters as they may think expedient, either to the removal, alteration, or better care thereof." The penalty for neglect to comply with the directions thus given was fixed at thirty dollars fine, and two dollars per day after thirty days from date of notice.

These measures were evidently regarded as sufficient protection to the infant city, for the primitive "bucket brigade" was still the only means of fighting fire. It was not until 1863, when the city had attained a population of about three thousand, that the first measures were taken by the council to organize a fire department and to equip it with engine, hose cart, hook and ladder truck, hose and tools. On January 7, 1863, a resolution was passed by the council for the purchase of such equipment, and the lease or erection of a suitable building for a hose house. For this purpose it was proposed to sell city bonds in the sum of two thousand dollars, which was approved by a vote of the people, and the bonds issued.

In April the council authorized alderman William H. Taylor "to purchase for fifteen hundred dollars the best fire engine offered for sale by the City of Detroit, and for one hundred and fifty dollars the best hose cart, hook and ladder truck and other appurtenances," he having inspected fire engines there and in Cincinnati and other cities the preceding January. On May 4, aldermen Taylor and Paine were appointed a committee, "to purchase five hundred feet of new hose in addition to what has already been purchased for use of the fire department." The following month Augustus S. Gaylord was appointed the first chief engineer of the department, and Isaac Parsons, Jr., was appointed assistant chief. The engineer was then authorized "to expend five dollars for putting an attachment to the Presbyterian Church bell, to be used for fire alarms." On June 25, James M. Gale was appointed fire warden to succeed P. C. Andre, resigned.

The fire department was thus organized under very auspicious circumstances, and the first company was styled the "Active Hook, Ladder and Hose Company No. 1." Its engine and hose house was situated on North Hamilton Street, in the middle of the block between Ames and Jefferson (now Cleveland) Streets, on the site of the present brick livery and sales stables. Adjoining it on the north was the blacksmith shop of Robert Wiley, and on the corner stood the original frame portion of the Kerby House, which is now a landmark of the West Side. Although the hand engine and other apparatus was second-hand equipment, the needs of the city were filled for a time, and the citizens no doubt felt some measure of security in their fire-fighters. That the company was well drilled and took a certain pride in their equipment is evident by their turning out and going to Bay City, on the occasion of the Fourth of July celebration, in 1863.

Two years after, not to be outdone by their more progressive neighbors across the river, some of the leading men advocated the purchase of a steam fire engine, as a further safeguard of valuable property. The need of such additional means of fire protection was apparent, and soon a third-class Silsby rotary fire engine was added to the equipment of the fire-fighters. It was capable of throwing four hundred gallons of water a minute, and was regarded as a valuable acquisition to the department. Prior to the inauguration of the water works system, in 1872, this fire engine was used at nearly all fires, sometimes running for eight or ten hours without stopping. For forty-nine years it was continually in commission, and was only retired from service by the purchase of the motor driven fire engine No. 13, in the summer of 1914. The old steamer is now kept in reserve at Hose House No. 6, to be called out only under stress of extreme necessity.



ACTIVE HOSE, HOOK AND LADDER COMPANY NO. 1

Saginaw City in the Early Days

(Left to right) Robert Wiley, chief; John Lamont, John Sharrow, Frank Vondette.

In 1869 Saginaw City attained a population of about seven thousand, with the western boundaries extended some distance back from the river, and it was deemed a public necessity to erect a new fire engine and hose house. The site selected was on the northeast corner of Harrison and Van Buren Streets, and a two-story brick structure with mansard roof and tower was soon completed and turned over to the department. For many years this was the headquarters of the "smoke-eaters," but in time it proved too small for the increasing needs of the city, and was rebuilt and enlarged. It is the most pretentious fire station in Saginaw, and houses Company No. 13, comprising ten men, with the latest type of motor-driven fire engine, hook and ladder truck (horse drawn) and complete equipment.

In addition to the new fire station, another precautionary measure was taken in the construction of four cisterns, or reservoirs, to hold twenty thousand gallons each. These cisterns were placed under ground below the action of frost, and were on Harrison Street at the intersection of Monroe, Franklin (Cleveland), Van Buren and Williams Streets. They were constructed entirely of brick and were twelve by twenty-four feet in size, and eight feet deep. The cost of these improvements was more than thirteen thousand dollars, and was derived from the sale of city bonds drawing ten per cent. interest. T. S. North was then chief engineer of the department, and Fred Clifton was engineer of Steamer No. 1. In 1874 and succeeding years George L. Burrows was chief engineer, and G. A. Lyon was the assistant chief. The department was then well organized and thoroughly efficient, comprising five hose companies, one hook and ladder company, three thousand feet of hose, and one steam fire engine.

As years passed and the city increased in population, the old hand-drawn hose carts gave way to one and two-horse hose carts, the old time hook and ladder truck to more modern apparatus, and the force placed on full-time, full-pay basis. Later hose wagons supplanted the old reel hose carts. At present there are four hose companies on the West Side, located as follows:

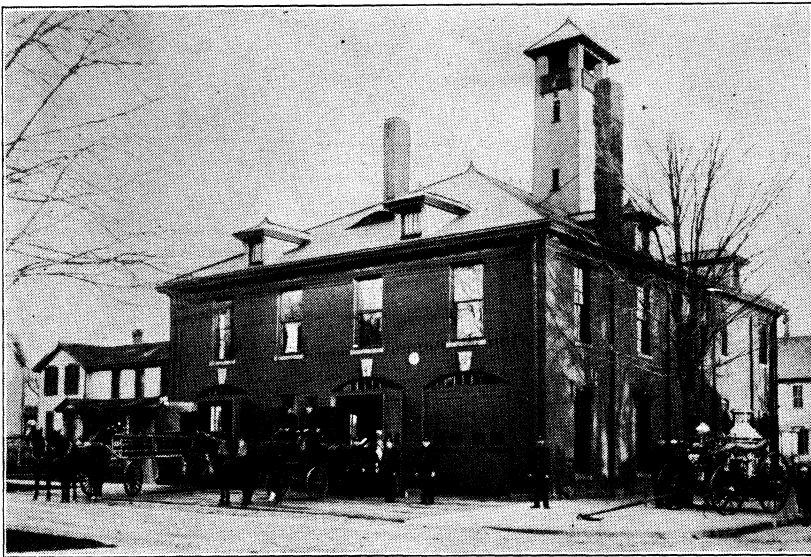
No. 10—On North Michigan Avenue, near Genesee, George Fradd, Captain, three men.

No. 13—At Harrison and Van Buren Streets, John Duncan, Captain, nine men.

No. 15—On South Hamilton Street, near Lee Street, Albert Hudson, Captain, three men.

No. 19—At South Michigan and Sherman Street, Fred Schunecht, Captain, three men.

Robert Hudson is the efficient assistant chief of the Saginaw Fire Department, and makes his headquarters at the hose house of Company No. 13. He is one of the few veterans of the department, having entered the service



HOSE HOUSE NO. 13, HARRISON AND VAN BUREN STREETS  
Headquarters of Ass't Chief Robert Hudson



April 1, 1887, and was appointed assistant chief on December 5, 1892. During his twenty-seven years of faithful duty, he has witnessed many changes and betterments in the department, some of which were made through his untiring efforts for improvement.

### Some Big Losses by Fire

The first saw mill erected on the Saginaw River, operated by the Williams Brothers, was burned on July 4, 1854, the blaze being started by a fire-cracker. On May 7, 1861, a disastrous fire started in the Jeffers Block on Water Street, and wiped out twenty-three buildings and other property, entailing a loss of fifty-five thousand dollars. The steam grist mill of W. L. P. Little & Company was burned on May 10, 1860, the loss being thirty-five thousand. A. W. Wright's mill was wiped out on June 13, 1865, with a loss of eighty thousand dollars; and the Chicago mill at Carrollton was burned the same day, loss ten thousand.

On Saturday, February 27, 1870, a fire broke out in Eolah Hall, in the Van Wey Block, adjoining the Taylor House, and spread rapidly. Mayor A. F. R. Braley sent a messenger to East Saginaw for assistance, and in a short time B. B. Buckhout and his fire-fighters appeared with the steamer Valley City No. 1. After a severe battle the flames were brought under control, but not without considerable loss to the property.

The Crouse Block, which stood on the site of the Eddy Building, was entirely destroyed by fire in October, 1872, with heavy loss to merchants and other tenants. On May 26, 1873, Jackson Hall on South Washington Street, opposite the Bancroft House, was burned. William E. Pringle and P. A. Burns, pipemen of the Valley City Company, were stationed in an archway of the building when they had warning that the wall was falling. Burns jumped further under the arch and escaped injury, but his comrade jumped to the other side and was instantly crushed to death.

The Janes, Mead & Lee planing mill, lumber yard, and a number of dwellings were destroyed June 20, 1873, with a loss of seventy-five thousand dollars; and on August 23 following, Paine's mill and salt block were burned with a loss of seventy thousand. On June 30, 1874, George T. Williams & Brother's saw mill burned, with a loss of forty thousand dollars; and on August 16, 1875, occurred the fire at Grant & Saylor's mill, which was totally destroyed with a loss of thirty-five thousand.

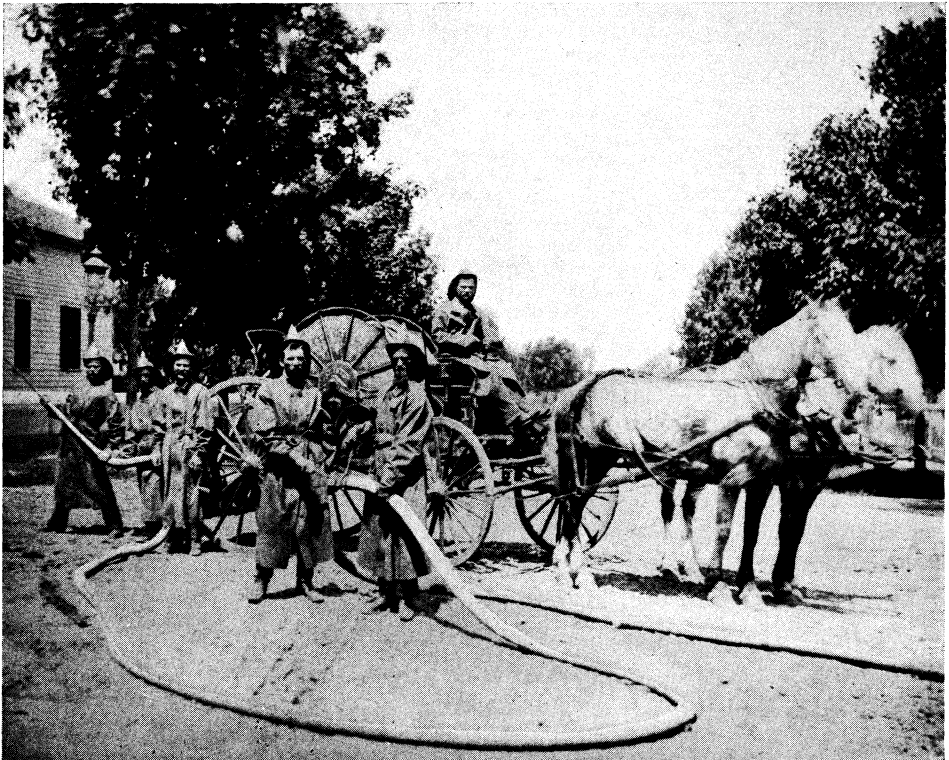
On December 4, 1878, A. P. Brewer's saw mill, John G. Owen's lumber and salt sheds, Tuttle & Pease's saw mill and property belonging to B. B. Buckhout were destroyed, entailing a loss of two hundred and fifty-four thousand dollars. Sanborn & Bliss' mill at Carrollton was burned on August 20, 1879, the loss being one hundred and thirty-seven thousand. Wells Stone & Company lost sixty thousand dollars' worth of property on January 2, 1880; and A. D. Camp lost his saw mill and salt block by fire on November 24, the same year. On December 8, 1882, fire destroyed the large plant of the Saginaw Barrel Company, at the foot of Wayne Street, with a loss of two hundred thousand dollars.

The Hoyt planing mill was totally destroyed on May 16, 1882, the loss being seventy thousand dollars; and on October 28, Hamilton & McClure's plant at Zilwaukee burned, loss ninety-three thousand. On April 4, 1884, the Michigan Saw & File Company's works, at the corner of Washington and Astor Streets, burned, involving a loss of ninety-five thousand dollars; and the same night St. Paul's Episcopal Church, at the corner of Lapeer and Warren Streets, was totally destroyed. In August, 1887, John G. Owen's planing mill was burned, the loss being one hundred and twenty-one thousand dollars; and on August 8, 1888, Lee's planing mill and a number of

residences burned, with a loss of one hundred thousand. On November 6, 1890, C. S. Bliss & Company's saw mill, at the west end of the F. & P. M. R. R. bridge, was destroyed, the loss being twenty thousand dollars.

### The Great Fire of May, 1893

At ten minutes after four o'clock on the afternoon of May 20, 1893, an alarm was turned in for a fire on the old "Middle Ground," in the abandoned saw mill of Sample & Camp. The wind, blowing a gale, carried burning embers to the Bristol Street Bridge, one-half mile distant, setting fire to it and the cooper shop adjoining. The fire spread rapidly to the square bounded by McCoskry Street, Washington Avenue, Atwater and Tilden Streets. While the department was trying to prevent it from crossing



OLD STYLE HOSE REEL AND FIRE COMPANY, ABOUT 1881

Ben Smith, driver. (Left to right) John Frederick, Frank Vondette, F. Bush, John Lamont, Louis Sharrow.

Washington Avenue, fire broke out in the Standard Lumber Company's property in the bayou; also at St. Vincent's Orphan's Home, at the corner of Emerson and Howard Streets, eight blocks away. The fire-fighters were finally driven off Washington Avenue, being compelled to abandon all lines of hose, and return to Hose House No. 3 for a new supply.

At this time the conflagration was terrific. The wind was blowing a gale and carried huge embers long distances and started fresh fires in dozens of places. It seemed that no human power could stay the progress of the flames. The department made heroic stands at Holden and Tilden Streets, at three points on Jefferson, at Sheridan and Holden, Cornelia and Martha, Owen and Emerson, Emerson and Sheridan, and at the corner of Warren and Martha Streets.

After a fierce and determined battle, aided by firemen and equipment from Bay City and Flint, the fire was surrounded, and the wind dying down, the fire was placed under control at 6:30 P. M. It had burned over an area of twenty-three squares, destroying two hundred and fifty-seven buildings, and rendering hundreds of families homeless.

At six o'clock in the evening fire started from some unknown cause in the planing mill of Edward Germain, on Holland Avenue, about a mile from the center of the fire zone, and the plant was totally destroyed, together with a large quantity of lumber. The department was unable to respond to this fire until nine o'clock, owing to the demands of the big fire. The total loss during the day was six hundred and seventy thousand dollars, and the amount of insurance paid was four hundred and sixty-four thousand.

On October 3, 1895, the Saginaw Box Company sustained a loss of thirty-one thousand dollars by the burning of their factory at the corner of Wheeler and Green Streets. The Central School on Court Street was damaged on April 15, 1896, to the extent of twenty-six thousand dollars. On November 3, 1896, Crume & Sefton's butter dish factory was burned, loss thirty-two thousand; and on December 30, Gebhart & Estabrook's planing mill, loss twenty-one thousand. The Bliss & Van Auken saw mill was destroyed on December 18, 1898, the loss being thirty-two thousand dollars. In 1899 the plants of F. G. Palmerton Woodenware Company, and Green, Ring & Company, were totally destroyed.

Thomas Jackson & Company's planing mill was burned March 2, 1903, loss forty-two thousand; and on November 5, 1905, "Old Gray Pat," of Hose Company No. 13, while on a run to a fire dropped dead in front of the new Jackson factory. This faithful old horse was twenty years old, and had been in the service for fifteen years. On December 15, 1907, at the fire at the Saginaw Produce and Storage Company, ten firemen were injured or overcome by the dense smoke. At a fire in the cooperage plant of Malcolm & Brown, on Queen Street, four firemen were seriously injured, one suffering a fracture of the right shoulder, and laid up for thirty-three days.

### The Holly Water Works

Under the provisions of a special act of the State Legislature, approved February 28, 1873, it became the duty of the common council of East Saginaw to appoint five persons, residents and freeholders of the city, as a Board of Water Commissioners, to hold office for the term of one, two, three, four and five years from the first Tuesday in March, 1873. At its regular meeting held on March 3, the council thereupon appointed Wellington R. Burt, James G. Terry, John G. Owen, Conrad Fey and H. H. Hoyt, to fill the respective terms which were decided by lot. Their first meeting was held March 10, 1873, when they proceeded to elect officers for the ensuing year, John G. Owen being chosen president, Wellington R. Burt, treasurer, Ferd A. Ashley, secretary. On April 23 the board contracted with George D. Walcott to act as engineer and superintendent of construction.

The first Board of Water Commissioners of East Saginaw thus organized was required "to examine and consider all matters relative to supplying the city with a sufficient quantity of pure and wholesome water for the use and convenience of all the inhabitants thereof, to be obtained from the Tittabawassee River, or such other source of supply as may be deemed expedient, and to so plan, manage and construct such water works as to provide for an ample supply to protect the city against fire and for other public and sanitary purposes, as the best interests of the city and its inhabitants may seem to require."

For this purpose the board was empowered to borrow from time to time, as they might deem expedient, a sum of money not exceeding three hundred thousand dollars, and to issue bonds pledging the faith and credit of the city for the payment of the principal and interest, said bonds to bear interest not exceeding the rate of eight per cent. per annum, and payable at a period not exceeding thirty years from date of issue.

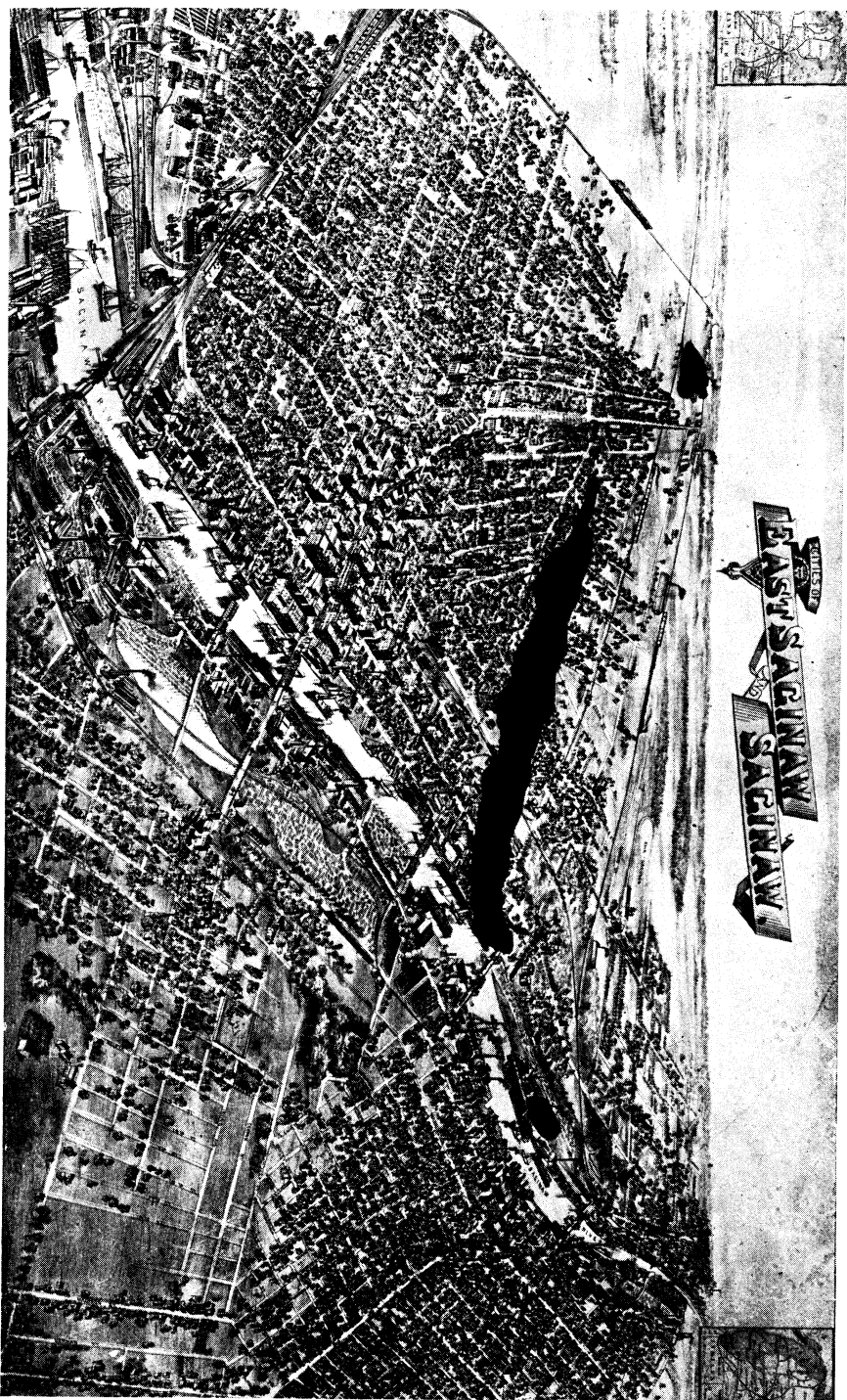
Upon assuming control the commissioners found in their possession a tract of ten acres of land lying along the Saginaw River, near the mouth of the Tittabawassee, which the common council had purchased for the site of the pumping station, for one thousand dollars. On this land there had been constructed a pile and plank dock, upon which had been piled a large quantity of brick, for the construction of the water works building. There was also a contract made by the council with the Holly Manufacturing Company, of Lockport, New York, dated December 13, 1871, for all the machinery and pumps necessary to supply the city with two million gallons of water every twenty-four hours, including boilers, connections, auxiliary rotary pumps, shafting, gearing and couplings. In consideration for the specified machinery, the city agreed to pay the sum of thirty-two thousand dollars, in five monthly payments from May to September, 1872.

There had been many difficulties and delays in prosecuting the construction work on the piping and buildings, and on assuming control of affairs, six months after the time specified for the completion of the work, the machinery was still lying at the works in Lockport, upon which only two payments had been made. The first duty of the board was to advertise for proposals for furnishing and laying the necessary iron water pipes and for building the water works structures according to plans and specifications which had been adopted. W. R. Coats was soon after awarded the contract for the pipe work, and William Grant the contract for the buildings, brick chimney, cisterns and all mason work. The carpenter work, including putting on the iron roof, was done by P. V. Westfall. The total cost of the completed water works ready for efficient service, was two hundred and seventy-three thousand three hundred and fifty-four dollars.

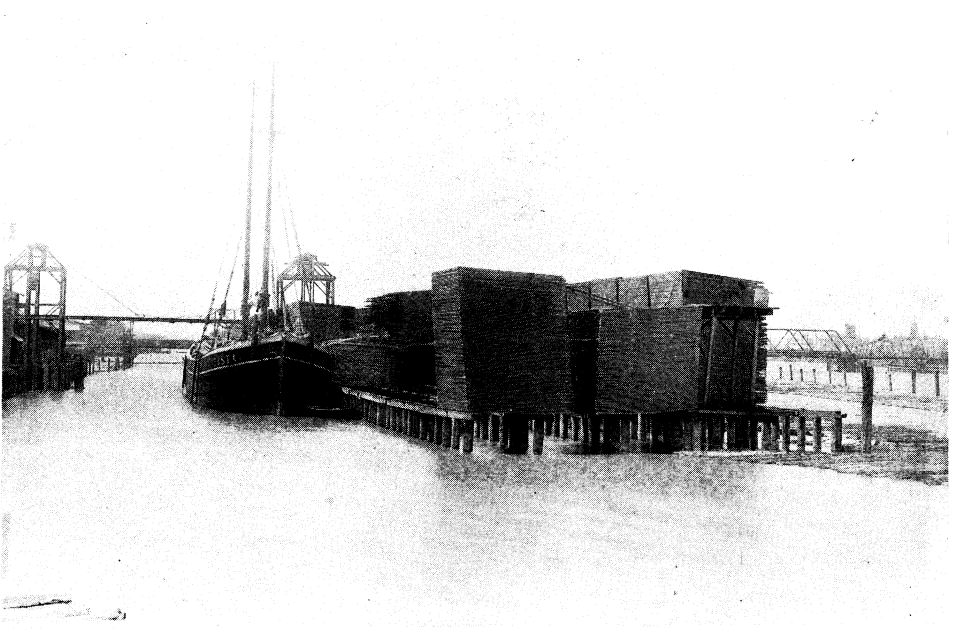
The pumping machinery was completely installed and connections made to the mains about the middle of November, 1873, and during the month of December the works were put in effective condition for all ordinary purposes of fire protection. Their efficiency was practically tested at the fire in the Moores Building, on the morning of the twenty-fourth, a large amount of property being saved by their use. The official tests were held January 10, 1874, with the following results:

	Vertical	Horizontal
First — On Potter Street, six one-inch streams.....	80 feet	120 feet
Second — On Sixth Street, six one-inch streams.....	90 feet	170 feet
Third — On Hoyt Street, six one-inch streams.....	100 feet	192 feet
Fourth — At Baptist Church, one one-and-one-half-inch stream .....	160 feet	200 feet
Fifth — At Bancroft House, three one-inch, two one-and-one-eighth-inch, one one-and-seven-eighth-inch streams .....	125 feet	
Sixth and Seventh — Bancroft House, same pipes as above with four additional.....	120 feet	

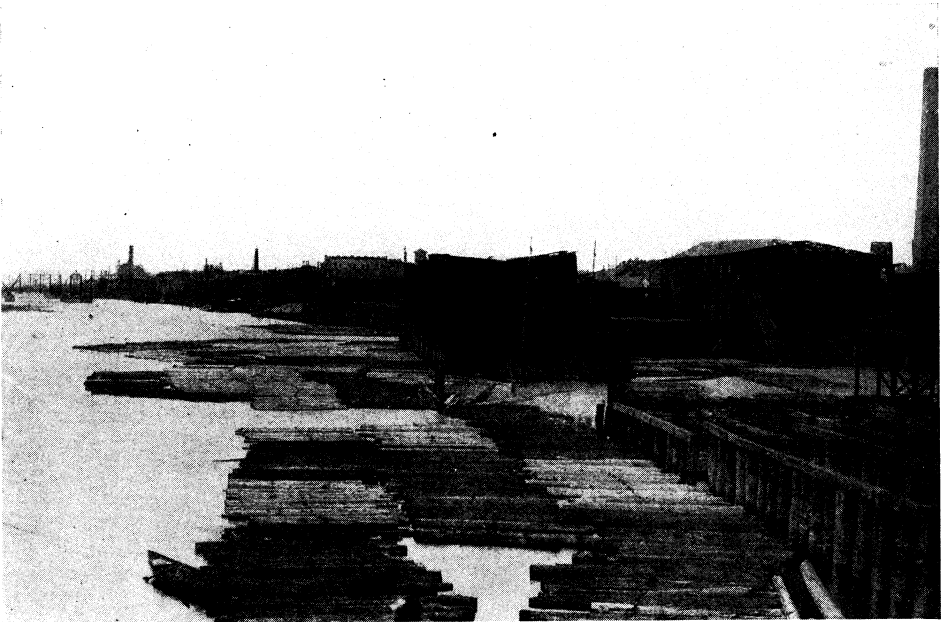
During the construction of the water works, including the filter beds, Mr. Burt was one of the most active members of the board, and in their first annual report to the common council, dated January 1, 1874, the other members expressed their appreciation of his services, in these words:



THE CITIES OF SAGINAW AT HEIGHT OF THE LUMBER INDUSTRY  
Showing Burned Area of the Great Fire of May 20, 1893



LOADING AT HOLLAND'S DOCK, 1879



THE SAGINAW RIVER, LOOKING NORTH FROM M. C. BRIDGE

"The condition of the money market the past season, and more especially since the financial panic in October, has made the negotiation of our bonds a matter of extreme difficulty, as that class of securities felt most this financial stringency. And the board feel that they have been especially fortunate in being able to dispose of the large amount they have at so favorable a rate. The magnitude of the work to be done made constant demands for large sums of money to keep the work progressing steadily, and the balance of the board feel under great obligations to their treasurer, Commissioner Burt, for his untiring efforts to provide the necessary funds, and also for a large amount of time given to a personal supervision of the entire work."

For the purpose of extending the piping system, the legislature in March, 1874, authorized the issue of fifty thousand dollars additional water bonds, and at a special election held April 6 a large majority of the electors voted in favor of such additional issue. The bonds were sold in sums of five hundred dollars each, payable twelve years from date. During 1874 and subsequent years to and including 1881, eighteen thousand nine hundred feet of three, four and five-inch mains were laid, making a total of eighteen and a half miles then in use. At that time there was a great accession to the population, and in 1882 the city issued bonds in the sum of fifty thousand dollars for the purpose of making needed additions to the pumping machinery. A new Holly quadruplex compound condensing engine, capacity six million gallons daily, was installed and put in operation April 14, 1883. Three years later a further bond issue of seventy thousand dollars provided for extensions of the mains, which in 1890 were thirty-eight miles in length.

In 1890 the Gaskill horizontal compound condensing engine, capacity twelve million gallons daily, was added to the pumping machinery, and has been in almost constant use since February 13, of that year. Pipe extension continued and in 1900 there were fifty-two and a half miles of mains in use. In 1910 the pipeage system had reached a total of sixty-three and a half miles, and 1915 it was more than seventy-four miles, mostly of six, eight and ten-inch pipe, the feed mains being sixteen, twenty and twenty-four inches in diameter. In 1913 a Meyer cross compound pump of six million gallons capacity was installed to provide additional fire protection. Two Wickes vertical water tube boilers, of three hundred horse power each, have been in use since 1911. Charles A. Scherping is chief engineer, and Charles W. O'Brien and Charles Partridge are assistant engineers of the East Side station. The bonded indebtedness on the East Side pumping system has now been reduced to two hundred and thirty-eight thousand five hundred dollars.

### The West Side Water System

The project for water works at Saginaw City, to afford ample fire protection and to provide a sufficient quantity of pure water for the use of its inhabitants, was launched and promoted in 1872. Early in May of that year the city issued bonds in the sum of sixty thousand dollars, bearing eight per cent. interest, and payable in fifteen to seventeen years. The pipeage system was planned and laid out by George L. Burrows, who for several years was very active in promoting better fire protection, and was then chief of the fire department. The pumping station was located on Water Street at the foot of Franklin (Hancock), and the machinery consisted of one Holly quadruplex compound condensing engine, of two million gallons daily capacity, auxiliary pumps and boilers. There was some discussion at the time

over the location of the pumping station, a number of citizens advocating a place up the river nearer the Tittabawassee, where the water was clear and free from sewage, but fire protection was the main issue, and the station was erected in the present location to afford a better direct pressure at the fire hydrants. It was planned to eventually take water from the Tittabawassee through a conduit put down from near its mouth to the pumping station, but in all the intervening years this much needed improvement has not been made, and is not likely to be made.

In August, 1873, a further bond issue of fifty thousand dollars was made to provide for extensions of the mains, which were much needed, and were chiefly of four and six-inch pipe, with feeders of eight and ten-inch pipe. This work progressed as the city expanded so that by 1885 there were twelve miles of high-pressure water mains, some of which were twelve and sixteen inches in diameter. In that year bonds in the sum of twenty-five thousand dollars were floated to provide for a new Gaskill horizontal compound condensing engine, capacity four million gallons daily, which has been in almost constant service since. No further extensions were made until 1890, when about one-half mile of six-inch mains was laid, and one Rogers Brothers duplex horizontal compound condensing engine, capacity two million gallons daily, was installed.

From 1890 to 1900 slightly more than thirteen miles of pipes were laid, making the total about twenty-six miles. During the next ten-year period the pipeage system was increased to forty-two miles, and in 1915 it reached a total of fifty-one miles, and some of the smaller mains were replaced with larger pipe. To provide for this needed improvement bonds were issued in November, 1893, to the amount of twenty-five thousand dollars; in July, 1894, for ten thousand, and in September, 1906, for five thousand. The total bonded indebtedness of the West Side water works is now one hundred and twenty-seven thousand four hundred dollars, all of which matures before March 10, 1924.

In 1895 three Wood water tube boilers in separate arches, rated capacity one hundred and twenty-five horse power each, were installed, and Aube smoke consumers were added to the furnaces in 1911. In that year the pumping machinery was augmented by two Fairbanks, Morse & Company's compound duplex direct-acting pumps, of three million gallons daily capacity each, replacing the old Holly two million gallons capacity pump and the Rogers pump. This pumping station is capable of furnishing direct pressure for the ordinary needs of fire protection, excepting in the outlying sections of the city.

### A Consolidation of the Water Systems

Since 1890 the question of consolidating the water works has been before the people, but in the Summer of 1915 the numerous problems connected with the project remain unsolved. The first definite plan to provide for one adequate and complete pumping station, together with a filtration plant to supply clear water, was put forth in 1905, but the bond issue necessary to carry out the project was voted down by the people. The question of location of the pumping station and the method of purifying the water were not thoroughly settled in the minds of the people; and besides, a large number of citizens were not satisfied that the source of supply (the Tittabawassee River) was the best, holding that Saginaw Bay furnished an inexhaustible supply of pure, soft water for all domestic purposes. Others, too, contended that the Ogemaw Springs water was by far the best for all purposes of the city and individuals.

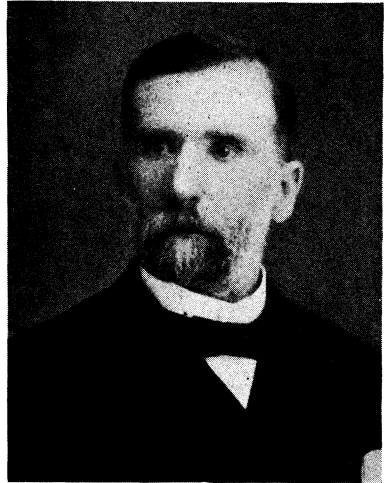


### The Police Department

In the early fifties all that was needed to keep the peace in Buena Vista Township, in which the village of East Saginaw was situated, was the services of one constable; and even after the city was chartered, in 1859, there was no regular police, the ordinances and by-laws of the city being enforced by a marshal and constables. At times, as occasion required, night watchmen were employed, and not until May, 1868, was the first police force organized and uniformed. The first chief was James A. Wisner and he had seven patrolmen under his control. In 1869 the city charter was so amended as to merge the two offices of marshal and chief of police and Mr. Wisner was appointed marshal. The force then consisted of one marshal, one captain and eight patrolmen. In the following year Peter McEachron was appointed marshal, and the force was increased to ten patrolmen, and it remained at this strength for three years.

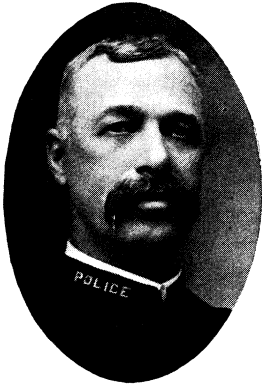
The act of 1873, amending the charter of the city, created a Board of Police Commissioners to consist of three members, comprising the Mayor, and two other persons to be appointed by the common council, who were given entire control of the police department. The first commissioners appointed were Frederick W. Carlisle, for a term of four years, and Charles F. Shaw, for two years; and the other member of the board was the mayor, William L. Webber. Bradley M. Thompson was attorney and clerk, and Benjamin B. Ross was surgeon.

In the reorganization of the police force which followed, T. Dailey Mower was appointed chief of police. Under his command were James Connon, captain, James Nevins, George Major and Thomas P. Oliver, sergeants, sixteen patrolmen and one jailor. The force was divided into two divisions, one for day and one for night duty, the hours of duty being from eight o'clock in the morning until eight o'clock in the evening, and from eight o'clock in the evening until the same hour in the morning. The day force consisted of the chief, one sergeant and six patrolmen, while the night force was made up of captain, one sergeant and ten patrolmen, so stationed that at night nearly the entire city was patrolled. The oldest member, in point of service, then on the force was Captain Connon, who was appointed May 21, 1868; and the next oldest was Patrolman Henry H. Pries, who joined the force August 1, 1870. Sergeant Thomas P. Oliver was appointed June 16, 1871, and Patrolman James P. Walsh, who served so many years as captain of the First Precinct, and as Chief of the department in 1914, was appointed July 22, 1872. Patrick Kain entered the service October 18, 1873, and in 1915 completed his forty-second year of continuous and faithful duty.



T. DAILEY MOWER

The police headquarters in those days was located at the corner of Genesee and Cass (Baum) Streets, the office being kept open at all hours, with an officer always on duty to hear complaints and attend to them. In his first annual report to the Board of Police Commissioners, Chief Mower stated: "The present building erected at a cost of something over one thousand dollars, is amply large for the present wants of the city; it is well ventilated and very comfortable."



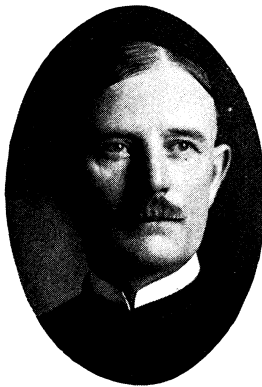
ZACH BASKINS



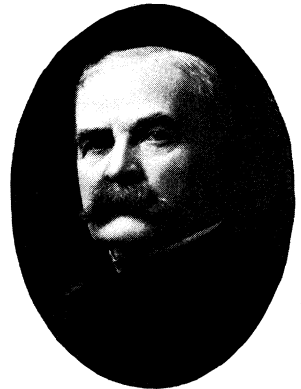
JAMES P. WALSH



PATRICK KAIN



ELMER E. BISHOP



TIMOTHY McCOY

OUR GUARDIANS OF PUBLIC SAFETY

### Controlling the "Red Sash Brigade"

These were the prime days of the "red sash brigade," recruited from the ranks of hardy lumber-jacks of the north woods, when a person could walk but a few blocks on the main streets without seeing a fight of some sort. And how these rough, ignorant woodsmen could fight. When the camps broke up in the Spring they would come to town in droves, and trail along from one saloon to another in Indian file, just as they tramped through the woods. In this fashion they would often meet with other files or gangs of reckless dare-devils, and then nine times out of ten a pitch battle would ensue. They fought as regularly as they ate, and if it was not with another gang they went at each other. Drunkenness, licentiousness and boisterous revels were the order of the day, and of the night for that matter, and the police were kept very busy in maintaining a semblance of order. That they succeeded in this was due to prompt and fearless execution of their duty on all occasions.

### Enter a New Element — Patrick Kain

Potter Street and the vicinity of the Flint & Pere Marquette depot was then a hot-bed of turmoil and fistic encounters, and night was rendered indescribably fantastic, and sometimes tragic, by the numerous woodsmen who infested this section. Sanford Keeler was then master mechanic of the road and alderman of the first ward, and in 1873 he recommended for appointment to the police force a young Canadian, who was employed as blacksmith in the shops. The recommendation was favorably acted upon, and in due course Patrick Kain became a patrolman and was assigned to Potter Street, working the beat in turns with John Wiggins. A new element and a new policy in handling the "red sash brigade" was thus injected into the service. It worked so well that the policy was soon adopted by the department officials, and has been pursued ever since in handling criminals.

Patrolman Kain sized up the situation on Potter Street, and came to the conclusion that the first duty of an officer was to keep the peace. He trailed the rough, half-drunken woodsmen, and when they started a fight he jumped right into the thick of it and stopped them. But this was no picnic, as the jacks never hesitated to strike out, and, quite naturally, he got in the way of a good many hard blows. The scheme seemed to work though, and the number of arrests on the beat fell off one-half. Instead of having the record for the greatest number of arrests made in the city, or anywhere else for that matter, Potter Street became as orderly as any business street. This condition of affairs soon came to the notice of the commissioners, and they looked for the cause.

One day Commissioners Carlisle and Shaw drove down to Potter Street, found the new patrolman with the advanced ideas, and questioned him as to how the number of arrests from his beat had fallen off. The officer thought he was to be reprimanded, and spent some very uncomfortable minutes explaining his mode of handling street fights, and the lumber-jacks in general. The commissioners said nothing until he had finished, and then they told him, much to his relief, that he was right and to continue that line of action. Shortly after this incident the police force was called together and Bradley M. Thompson, then city attorney, gave the men a talk, instructing them to always remember that a police officer is first in all qualifications a *peace officer*, that he should be alert, intelligent, well read, and a master of self. He should be a better student of mankind than the mere "husky," capable of overpowering the other fellow by brute force, and possess undoubted courage to act fearlessly on all occasions.

### When Changes Were Rapid

Mr. Mower continued as chief of police for nine years, or until 1882, when he resigned and James Adams was made head of the department. He was chief for about six weeks and then relinquished the office to James Connon, who had served as captain for several years. After filling the position of chief for eight months, Mr. Connon resigned and Mr. Mower was recalled and persuaded to remain as head of the police force. On January 6, 1883, Patrick Kain was made sergeant, his commission being signed by L. Simoneau, president of the board, and Ferd A. Ashley, clerk; and on November 6, 1883, he was promoted to first sergeant. Upon the retirement of Mr. Mower, on January 11, 1890, Sergeant Kain was made chief of police of East Saginaw, and on April 22 of the same year, was appointed chief for the consolidated Saginaws.

After faithful and continuous service of twenty-four years, during which the force under his command made many important captures, not only for themselves but for the departments of other cities, Mr. Kain was retired on January 1, 1914. Captain James P. Walsh was then appointed chief by the new council, composed of Mayor Ard E. Richardson and four councilmen, and he remained at the head of the department until his death on March 11, 1915. During this period Elmer E. Bishop held the position of captain at the First Precinct station, detailed on day duty; and Lieutenant Timothy McCoy had charge of this station at the night detail. On March 30, 1915, Captain Zach Baskins, of the Second Precinct station, was appointed chief of police, and Lieutenant McCoy was made captain, in charge of that station. These appointments were in force, however, for only two weeks, for upon the organization of the new council, April 13, with Mayor Hilem F. Paddock in the chair, Patrick Kain was reinstated to the position of chief, Chief Baskins being reduced to the rank of captain, in charge of the Second Precinct. Captain Bishop was also reduced to first sergeant; and Captain McCoy was transferred to the First Precinct on day duty.

### Saginaw an Orderly City

Despite its early reputation as a rough border town, wide open and given over to the lumber-jacks and river men, which has clung to it for years, statistics and facts show that Saginaw now compares very favorably with other cities of its class for orderliness. It has had a full quota of crimes, some brutal and revolting, as must be expected, but the records show an improvement from year to year. "Compared with other departments," Chief Kain said, "I think the men of the Saginaw force size up well for intelligence and efficiency, and they are faithful and conscientious, even if not yet perfect. I have always refrained from talking about arrests of the early days, because I can recall a number of instances where men who have served terms of imprisonment have started anew, and are now leading useful and reputable lives, and I do not propose to put any stone in their paths.

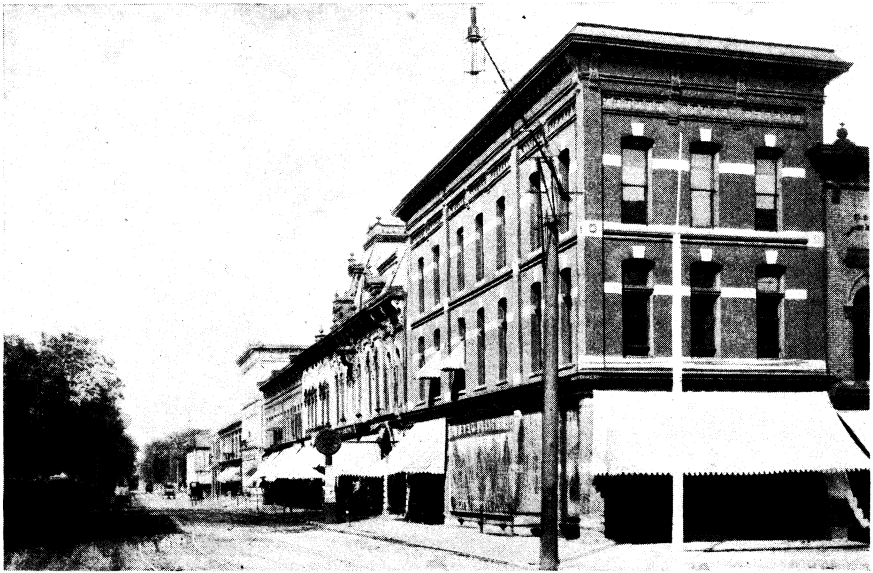
"Thieves and criminals of the present day have, so to speak, kept pace with the general advancement. Their schemes are more ingenious in the larger crimes; they frequently show a remarkable degree of misdirected skill and cleverness, to say nothing of intelligence, and the needs of police departments of the present day correspond. The police must meet the changed conditions; each officer must be keenly alert, exercise careful judgment, and be a close student of human nature."

During his long and active career Chief Kain has met nearly every police officer of prominence in the United States and Canada; and has come into contact with crooks of high and low degree and made many important

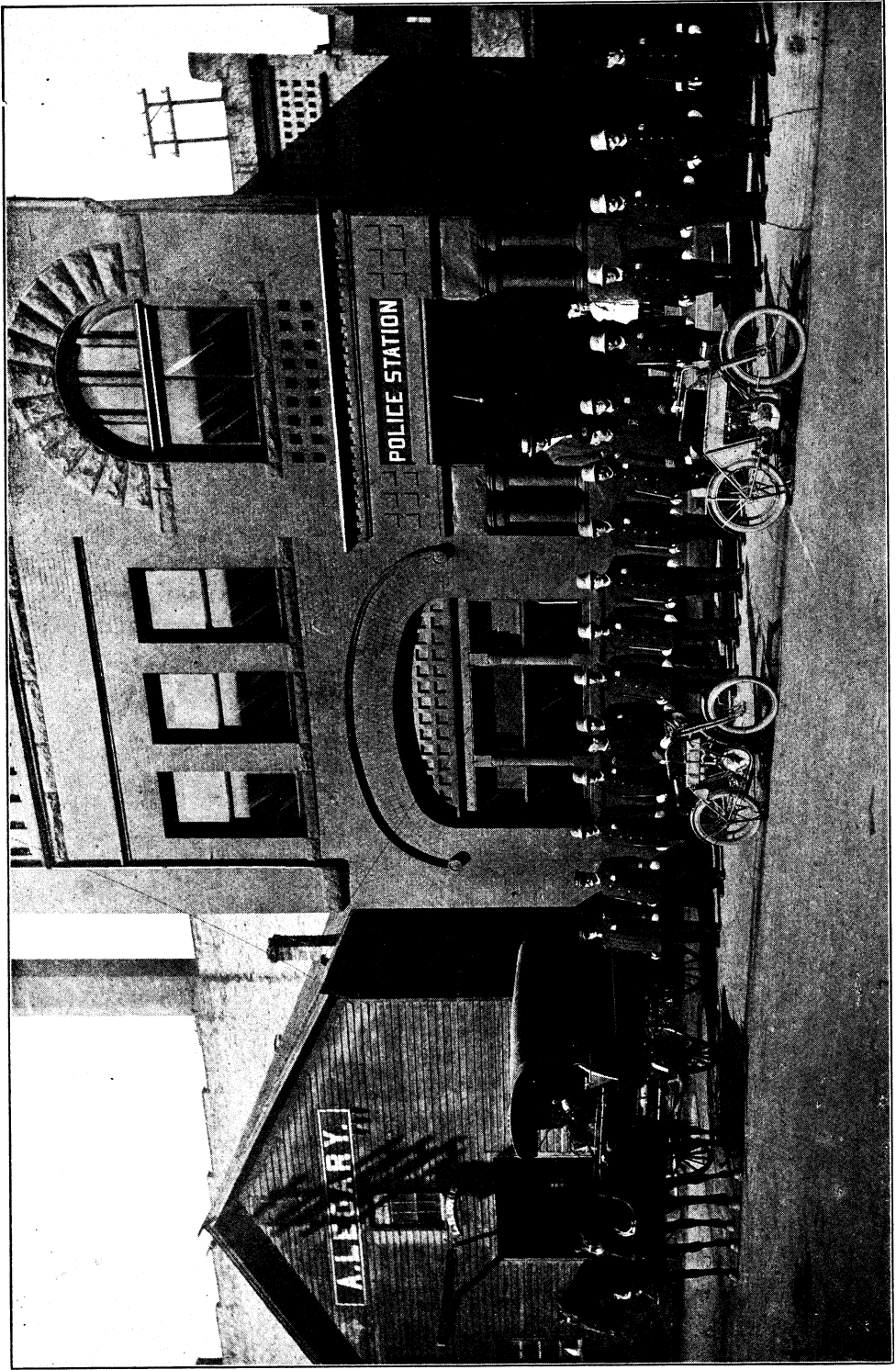
captures. A few years ago he was instrumental in bringing about the arrest of two dangerous New York crooks, who had perpetrated a great diamond robbery, and was warmly thanked by Chief Inspector Byrnes, of the New York department. Having a natural aptitude for the business of running down criminals, an unusually accurate memory and a reader of the workings of the human mind, his record as a sharp tracer of thugs and confidence men is well known to all police departments. His name is such a terror to a long list of crooks that they give Saginaw a wide berth.

But the demands upon this efficient and capable chief of police are varied, by no means being confined to the ordinary routine duties of his office. The demands of the help-seeking public require that he shall be something of an attorney; something of a lecturer; a mind reader and several other things, as well as a friend to all in trouble. They all come to him with their troubles, and many matters are straightened out by the police that are far from the regular line of duty, but which is helpful to the individual and the community.

In recent years the old horse-drawn patrol wagons, which served the department in making quick hauls, have given place to new motor propelled wagons having a wider range of service and far greater speed, which have added to the efficiency of the force. The department now has two motor patrol wagons of approved type, one stationed at each police station, and one motor car used by the chief. The First Precinct station, which has been in use for about forty years, is on Germania Avenue, adjoining Valley City Company, No. 3; and the Second Precinct Station, a more modern structure on the West Side, is located on the north side of Adams Street, between Michigan Avenue and Hamilton Street. The force on the East Side now (1915) numbers forty men, and on the West Side twenty-four men, a total of sixty-five, including the chief, in the department.



HAMILTON STREET NORTH FROM COURT



SECOND PRECINCT POLICE STATION, ADAMS STREET  
With the Officers and Some Patrolmen of the West Side

## CHAPTER XIII

# THE CONSOLIDATED SAGINAWS

Intense Rivalry Between the Two Cities — East Saginaw Starts Public Improvements — Veto of the Electric Lighting Project — Consolidation the Only Remedy — Provision for a New City Hall — Court Street Bridge — Other City Bridges — City Sewer Systems — Street Improvements — Cement Sidewalks — City Deep Wells — The Idea of Civic Beauty — Beginning of Our Park System — Bliss Park, the Ideal Playground — Board of Park and Cemetery Commissioners — Ezra Rust Park Improvements — Fordney Park — Jeffers Park — Federal Park — Small Parks — Mershon-Whittier Natatorium — Brady Hill Cemetery — Oakwood Cemetery — Forest Lawn — The Auditorium — City Government by Commission — The Present Council — City Officers in 1915.

FROM the day that Jesse Hoyt crossed the river, and in a woody marsh located the site for a new city, which he intended should soon rise, a spirit of opposition to the enterprise possessed the leading men of Saginaw City. He had come to this place with an idea of investing heavily in desirable property, of making many public improvements to attract immigration to the valley, and, of course, to profit thereby. Backed by the ample capital of the Hoyts, he was in a position to erect substantial buildings, promote great industries, expand the natural resources of the valley on a huge scale, and build up an enterprising and prosperous city. He was exactly the type of man the land-poor, slow-going inhabitants of the village, to the number of five hundred and thirty-six, needed to put them on their feet. Yet, when he with ready money endeavored to buy property on an equitable basis — at a price attractive to capital — so unreasonable were these narrow-minded men in their demands that the great opportunity slipped through their fingers. So exorbitant and headstrong were they that Mr. Hoyt, unable to make any progress in his negotiations, gave up in disgust; and it seems was actually driven from the place.

This unfortunate occurrence was a monumental blunder — one of a long series of blunders which illustrate the folly of some "west siders;" and the effects have been far reaching. It blasted all hopes of making a city which should be the metropolis of Saginaw Valley, and left the village in the hands of irrational men. It resulted in the founding and building up of another city on a low, undesirable site, and in dwarfing the efforts of a few enterprising men of the older village to promote the best interests of the community.

From every sense of the fitness of things and the economics of creating commercial centers and pleasant and healthy places of abode, East Saginaw never should have been begun. There never was a practical or logical excuse for its existence. The level plateau arising from the west bank of the river from a short distance north of Green Point to the Penoyer Farm, and extending west to the Tittabawassee River, offered the one feasible site for the exercise of Mr. Hoyt's enterprise. In the early days of settlement, when the Government established old Fort Saginaw, this place was recognized as the ideal location for permanent residence in the wilderness, and it is now, as it was then, the best site for miles around for a great city. But instead of building here on the foundation already laid, a new settlement was dumped into a marsh. Capital, brains, enterprise and an idomitable spirit to do things were the elements which soon produced a thriving village and later a prosperous city.

But worst of all, the spirit of opposition and intolerance, kept aflame by commercial rivalry and bicker, engendered in the minds of the west siders a keen hatred of all persons in any way identified with the remarkable progress of East Saginaw. This feeling found expression in numerous ways, a favorite occupation of some of the "old fellows," who loafed in the office of P. C. Andre, or the store of George W. Bullock, being to denounce in brilliant and expressive language the activities of the hustling residents of "east town," and to curse in staccato tone the enterprise of Norman Little and his associates. That such enmity should have existed was incomprehensible to the inhabitants of the more prosperous city, and they generally treated it with mild contempt or indifference. As strange as it may seem, this feeling of petty jealousy has come down through two generations of men and women, even to the present; but is met with a smile and an expression of incredulity whenever manifested.

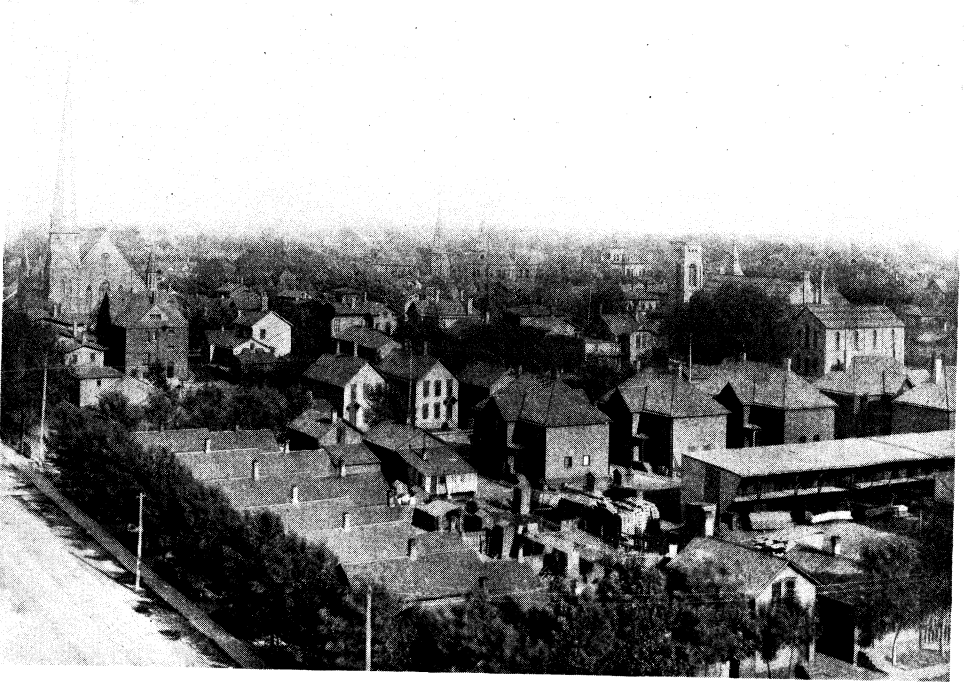
### East Saginaw Starts Public Improvements

Along in the eighteen-eighties, about the time that the lumber industry was at its height, East Saginaw began a broad scheme of public improvements. For twenty years previous the city had been busy with its sewage and water systems, in opening up and grading new streets, laying sidewalks, and providing for fire and police protection. Having arranged all these matters satisfactorily, it was thought incumbent on the council to plan and order street paving on a moderate scale. Definite action was taken and in due time a new cedar block pavement was laid in Genesee Street, to replace the old Nicholson pavement, extending from the river to Williams (Janes) Street. Soon after Washington Street, north and south from Genesee, and several side streets in the business section, were improved with the same material. These improvements added greatly to the prestige of the city as the metropolis of the valley, and excited the envy of the backward city on the other side of the river.

It is related that at this juncture in the affairs of the two cities, many of the more liberal minded citizens of Saginaw who owned stylish "turnouts," drove over in the summer evenings through the mud and saw dust of their streets to enjoy riding on the new pavements of their neighbors. In this pleasant pastime they noted, not without some degree of envy, the vastly improved appearance of the streets and public buildings, the new and attractive residences surrounded by well kept lawns and flower beds, and the tone of prosperity that pervaded the city. The streets were brilliantly illuminated at night with electricity furnished by the new plant of the Swift Electric Light Company, which was located in a three-story brick building on Water Street near Johnson. It was one of the show places of the city, in which the people were justly proud, as it was one of the first electric plants erected in this country for public lighting purposes.

These evidences of enterprise and public spirit made a deep impression on the progressive men of Saginaw City, who had made money in the lumber and salt industries, and some conceived the idea of promoting like improvements in their city. They realized that progress in such matters was necessary if they were to grow and prosper, and could see in their minds Court Street, and Washington (Michigan) and Hamilton Streets, converted as if by magic from lanes of mud holes into beautiful boulevards lighted at night with brilliant electric arcs. Some day they would have a connecting boulevard with the well paved streets of "east town," a dream of municipal opulence in strange contrast with the niggardly policy that had been pursued in public affairs.





FROM THE ROOF OF THE "ACADEMY" LOOKING EAST, 1886



FROM THE ROOF OF THE "ACADEMY" LOOKING SOUTHWEST, 1886

So these prosperous citizens, having ready money to pay their share of public improvements, went before the common council with a measure to provide for such pavements as they desired, and deemed necessary for the advancement of the city. Other prominent men, however, some of whom had exerted a large influence in shaping public matters, were strongly opposed to improvements on an elaborate scale, and only after much discussion was the paving of the streets in the business section, including sections of Washington Street, ordered by the council. This was one of the first moves for civic betterment in Saginaw City, and the effect was far reaching.

But the old policy of blind conservatism, encouraged by a deplorable want of public spirit, was still dominant in the conduct of public affairs, and so insistent was it that the city came very near losing the county seat, in 1883. The old court house, which had served as the abode of justice for almost fifty years, was then deemed inadequate to the needs of the county, and a project for the erection of a new edifice was presented. As usual with such measures it met with little support by a certain element among the leading citizens, and for a time little progress was made toward the desired result. At this juncture East Saginaw, with its characteristic enterprise, came forward and offered to donate a suitable site and erect a large and stately court house, to cost not less than seventy-five thousand dollars, if the seat of justice was removed to that city. This proposition stirred the people of Saginaw City to strenuous effort to retain the county seat, which, more than sixty years before, had been gained by chicanery, but of which they were not responsible. At length, by making a bid exceeding that of their neighbor across the river, they preserved to themselves the honor of having justice meted out in their midst. They erected a very imposing court house, on the site of the old, which had been donated to the county by Samuel Dexter, at a cost of one hundred thousand dollars, provided by an issue of city bonds in that sum, all of which was paid by the consolidated city.

### Veto of the Electric Lighting Project

Meanwhile, the more progressive men of Saginaw City were gradually getting control of public affairs, and early in 1884 they introduced a measure in the common council for the erection and operation of an electric lighting plant, to be eventually owned by the municipality. The only public lighting then afforded was by scattered gas lamps which, though they marked a way through the streets, accentuated rather than relieved the gloom. Contrast with the brightly lighted thoroughfares of "east town" was decidedly distasteful, and a latent spirit of civic pride was awakened among the people. They were almost ready to approve any public improvement which would aid them in keeping within measurable distance of their prosperous neighbors. The lighting project, however, failed through the action of one man — the mayor of the city.

The proposition presented to the council by the Van Depoele Electric Light Company provided for the erection of a generating plant equipped with all requisite machinery, five mast towers, one hundred and twenty-five feet in height, and one hundred pole lights distributed throughout the city. In all there were to be one hundred and thirty standard lamps completely wired and with all connections ready for use. Upon completion of the plant the company was to operate it for two weeks as a practical test, at their expense, when, the installations proving satisfactory, the city was to lease the property for a term of two years, and to pay the company within fifteen days the sum of eight thousand five hundred and twenty-three dollars. One year after the city was to make a further payment of nine thousand five hun-

dred and forty-six dollars, and at the expiration of two years a final payment of nine thousand and thirty-four dollars, with interest at six per cent. The city, having paid twenty-seven thousand one hundred and four dollars, was then to receive from the company a clear deed to all the property.

The electric light committee of the council appointed to consider the matter was composed of D. C. Dixon, chairman, E. A. Kremer, C. F. Zoeller and Dan P. Foote, city attorney, who were among the more progressive citizens. This committee, upon thorough examination of the project and consideration of the proposition, reported unanimously in favor of it, and thereupon it was passed by the council by a vote of seven to four. Evidently the proposition was a very favorable one to the city, and it is certain would have provided a much needed improvement. But when the resolution came up to the mayor, Charles L. Benjamin, for his signature, the influences at work in opposition prevailed, for he vetoed the measure and the whole project fell through. This act of Mayor Benjamin, it was said, retarded the progress and advancement of Saginaw City for several years, the city settling back into its old time lethargic existence. Years afterward he admitted to a resident of the East Side that his veto of this measure was the greatest blunder of his official life.

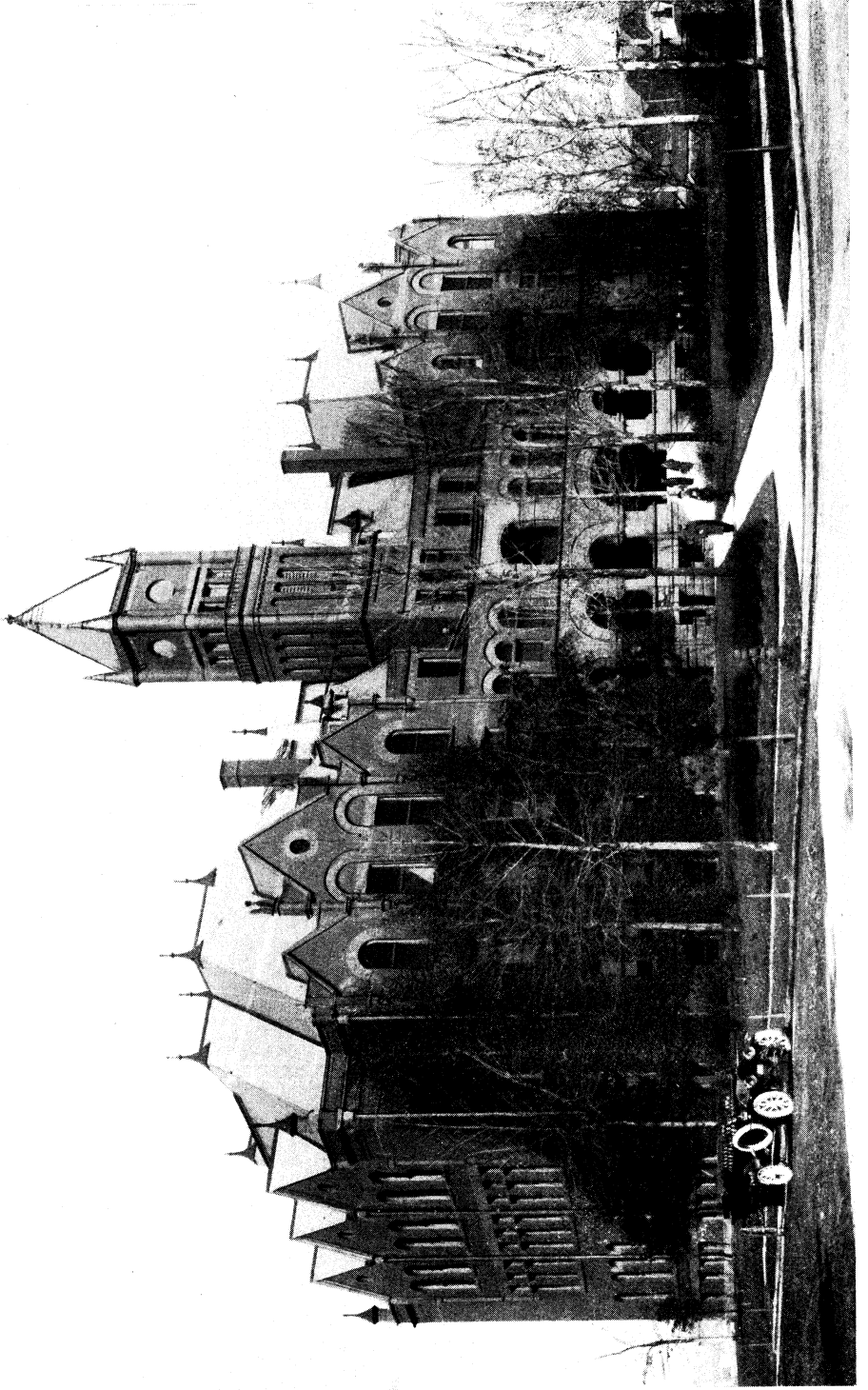
### Consolidation the Only Remedy

The rivalry between the two cities, often degenerating into bitter contests, finally reached a stage where the progressive men of both sides of the river concluded that consolidation was the only remedy for the conflict of interests. The question of consolidation had been brought before the State Legislature several times, but without success. There was a great diversity of opinion among the people as to the desirability of consolidation, and it is doubtful if a majority of the people of both sides would have voted in favor of the proposition at the time it was adopted. At length a number of leading citizens of the two cities met in conference, and after prolonged consideration, they resolved to appeal to the Legislature to pass an act uniting the Saginaws upon certain terms and conditions. Accordingly, a bill was drawn up and introduced in the Legislature of 1889, and after due deliberation it was passed as Act 455, of the Local Acts of the Legislature, and approved June 28, 1889.

The consolidation of the two cities, which was thus effected, marked an important stage in the history of Saginaw, the beneficial effect of which exceeded the expectations of its projectors. On the first Monday in March, 1890, the officials and aldermen of the new city were duly elected to office; and on the twelfth of March the first meeting of the new council was held, with George W. Weadock, mayor, in the chair. The council was composed of Aldermen Daniel J. Holst, Charles M. Harris, William Rebec, John G. McKnight, Fred J. Buckhout, Henry Naegely, William C. Mueller, John Klein, John Elwert, Charles Ziem, James S. Cornwell, Joseph B. Staniford, Chris Maier, E. Everett Johnson, Michael Rellis, Joseph Provencher, Solomon Stone, John W. Wiggins, Joseph B. Clark, Charles Schaefer, Theodore R. Caswell, Aaron P. Bliss, James Higgins, Fred Stobbe, Emil Achard, John L. Jackson, Michael Klemm, Robert D. Stewart, James McGregor and Clark L. Ring.

### Provision for a New City Hall

Among the conditions of consolidation was one fixing the location of the new City Hall, which, though near the geographical center of the city, is one mile from the business section of the East Side, and one mile and a half from the business section of the West Side. The location is convenient to



THE CITY HALL

no one, being a compromise to satisfy the demands of some west siders; and the handsome edifice which soon rose is a monument to their folly. The City Hall, a large structure of brick and stone, was erected on the site of Curtis Emerson's house, which he facetiously called the "Halls of the Montezumas," at a cost of one hundred and seventy thousand dollars, the site alone costing fifteen thousand one hundred and fifty dollars. The building was completed and first occupied in 1893, the city offices being removed from the Schmitz Block of the Germania Society to the new and perfectly appointed quarters.

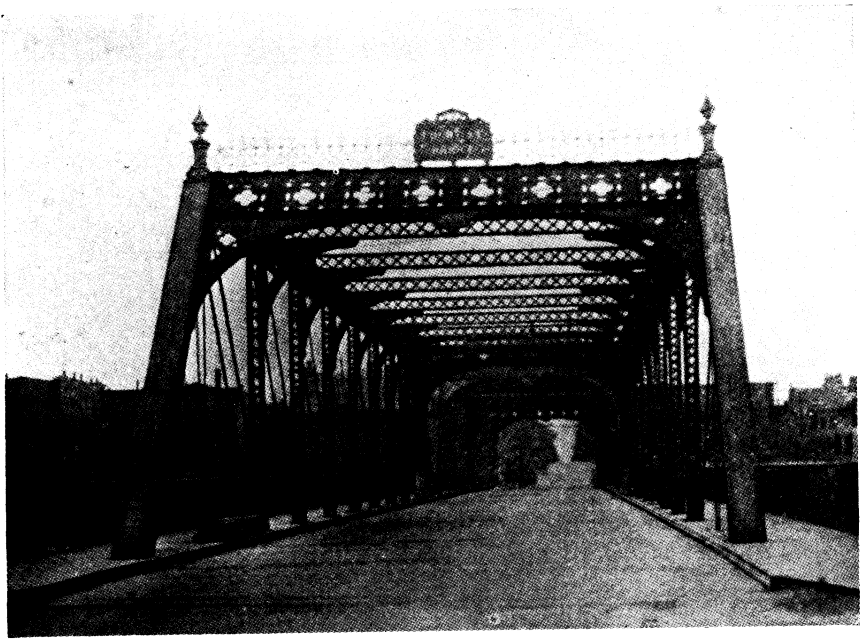
### The Court Street Bridge

Another condition of consolidation was the building of three bridges across the river, to accommodate the growing population of both sides. At the time there was but one bridge free from street railway tracks, and it was not in a location to conveniently carry a large vehicular traffic. Although there was some difference of opinion as to when and where the new bridges should be built, it was conceded that Court Street would afford an unobstructed, popular channel of communication between the two sides. The leading business men of the city were working together harmoniously, and they exerted every influence to bear on the project to build a wide, modern bridge at the foot of this street, and a connecting roadway across the middle ground and Emerson Bayou to Washington Street. Their efforts were successful and in 1897 the new thoroughfare was completed and opened for traffic. During the intervening years it has been kept free from car tracks, and is largely used and appreciated by owners of motor cars, as well as by the general public. The cost of this improvement was met by an issue of city bonds in the sum of sixty-eight thousand dollars.

The building of the other bridges was deferred for some years, partly on account of the policy of retrenchment in public improvements then pursued, and also because of the difficulty in deciding the exact locations for them. The bridge at the north end of the city, to connect with the Township of Carrollton, was constructed in 1904, the superstructure being the old Genesee Avenue bridge which was then being replaced by a modern lift bridge. Although in an out-of-the-way place, as respects population, this bridge serves the farming interests of both sides of the river; and it intersects North Washington Avenue at Sixth Street, hence the name of Sixth Street Bridge. The cost of construction was forty-three thousand dollars, provided by an issue of city bonds to that amount. The other bridge was an entirely new structure and satisfied the demands of the "south siders" for direct communication with the rapidly growing manufacturing district of the Nineteenth Ward. It spans the river at the foot of Center Street and meets an extension of Florence Street, which intersects Michigan Avenue at the Belt Line crossing. This bridge and roadway was completed in 1906 at a cost of eighty-nine thousand dollars, also provided for by a bond issue.

### Other City Bridges

The first bridge put across the Saginaw River was at the foot of Genesee Street, and replaced the old and uncertain rope ferry, which had been operated by E. N. Davenport for thirteen years, except when ice and the weather prevented. The bridge was built in 1864 by a few enterprising business men, who organized the Saginaw River Bridge Company January 21, of the preceding year, and was seven hundred feet in length with a draw span to allow vessels to pass through. The roadway across the bayou at the west end of this bridge was constructed by the primitive method of laying slabs and bark to a width of about twenty feet and then covering the founda-



COURT STREET BRIDGE, 1898

tion with layer upon layer of sawdust. When thoroughly packed down this material made a passable road, but at this place during spring freshets it was covered with water to a depth of four to six feet. The track of the street railway, which connected the business sections of the two cities through Washington (Michigan) Street, crossed the bayou on a trestle of piling, and thence by the bridge to the Bancroft House.

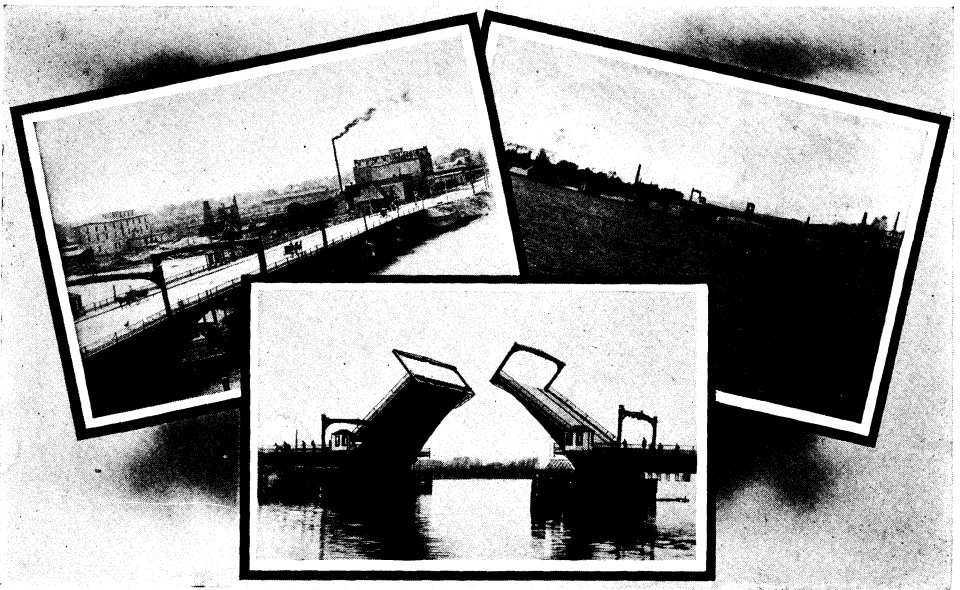
In 1865, to afford further communication with the west side of the river, the same company built a bridge at Bristol Street, to cross which a toll was exacted. This bridge was considerably longer than the other, the distance from shore to shore being ten hundred and eighty feet, and had two draws, one near each end. It was conveniently located for the growing population of both cities, and about 1885 was purchased by the Central Bridge Company, rebuilt and used by the cars of the Union Street Railway to reach the business center of Saginaw City. Since that time it has been one of the main arteries of travel across the river. In the nineties a new steel swing span was placed at the west channel, to safely carry the increasing traffic and the travel to and from Riverside Park. In 1911 this bridge was entirely rebuilt by the street railway company, at a cost of about thirty thousand dollars, and on May 6, 1912, the ownership passed to the city, without consideration, the only condition being its maintenance by the municipality.

The Mackinaw Street bridge was built in 1874 by the Saginaw Bridge Company, a corporation of which the officers were: David H. Jerome, president, Daniel L. C. Eaton, vice-president, and George L. Burrows, treasurer. The bridge and approaches were seven hundred and sixty feet in length and thirty feet in width, and formed a direct and convenient communication with the hustling town of South Saginaw. About fifteen years later the title and

ownership of this bridge passed to the city, at a cost of eighteen thousand dollars. It is now the oldest bridge on the river, having been in constant use for forty-one years, fifteen of which it carried the street cars which ran to and from the "south end."

About the time the lumber and salt industries slowly approached the zenith of production, the west side of the river directly opposite East Saginaw was a very busy place, and a bridge at Johnson Street, the second north of Genesee, was deemed a public necessity. Accordingly, in 1878, a bridge thirty-two feet in width, having an iron swing span and two fixed spans of wood and iron, was built at this location. The cost to the city was eighteen thousand eight hundred and fifty-five dollars. For many years this bridge carried a considerable traffic, directly with the numerous mills and salt works along the river as far as Carrollton, but when these industries declined it fell into disuse. In 1912 it was condemned as unsafe for any other than pedestrian travel, and the following year was replaced by a modern steel girder, Scherzer Lift bridge, thirty-five feet five inches wide, having a total length of five hundred and twenty feet. The superstructure was built on solid concrete piers, and it is probably the best and most substantial bridge ever secured by the city for anywhere near the cost, the total expenditures on its account being within eighty-five thousand dollars. Contrary to the usual custom of issuing bonds for such improvements, the entire cost of this bridge was met by four annual items placed in the tax budget, beginning with 1910.

During the intervening years since the construction of the original bridge at Genesee Street, this thoroughfare has been the main artery of travel between the two sides and will always remain so. As far back as the seventies the first bridge proved inadequate, and was rebuilt and



GENESEE AVENUE BRIDGE, 1905

strengthened. Following the catastrophe in which the east approach collapsed under the weight of hundreds of persons, who were watching the progress of a fire a short distance up the river, a number being drowned, an entirely new superstructure was erected and general repairs made at a cost of eighteen thousand five hundred and ninety dollars. This bridge served the needs of the city until 1901, when it was condemned as unsafe for street car service, it having been weakened by heavy interurban traffic. In the Fall of 1903 the bridge was taken down, and a new modern bridge of the girder type, having a Scherzer lift affording a clearance of one hundred and nineteen feet, was begun to replace it. The new structure has a total length of four hundred and forty-one feet, a width of fifty-six feet, is paved with concrete and creosote blocks, and is borne on solid concrete piers of the most enduring character. Both approaches are of earth filling, tamped and paved. The leaves of the Scherzer lift are operated by electricity, and are quickly raised and lowered for the passage of vessels, with but slight interruption to traffic. The bridge was completed and opened to the public early in September, 1905, and the total cost exceeded one hundred and eighty-eight thousand dollars; which was provided for by the issue of city bonds in that amount. This sum was about thirty thousand in excess of the estimated cost of the bridge, and was due to many changes in the contract plan, including the raising of the superstructure about three feet above the predetermined grade, due to the great flood of 1904 in which damage resulted to other city bridges.

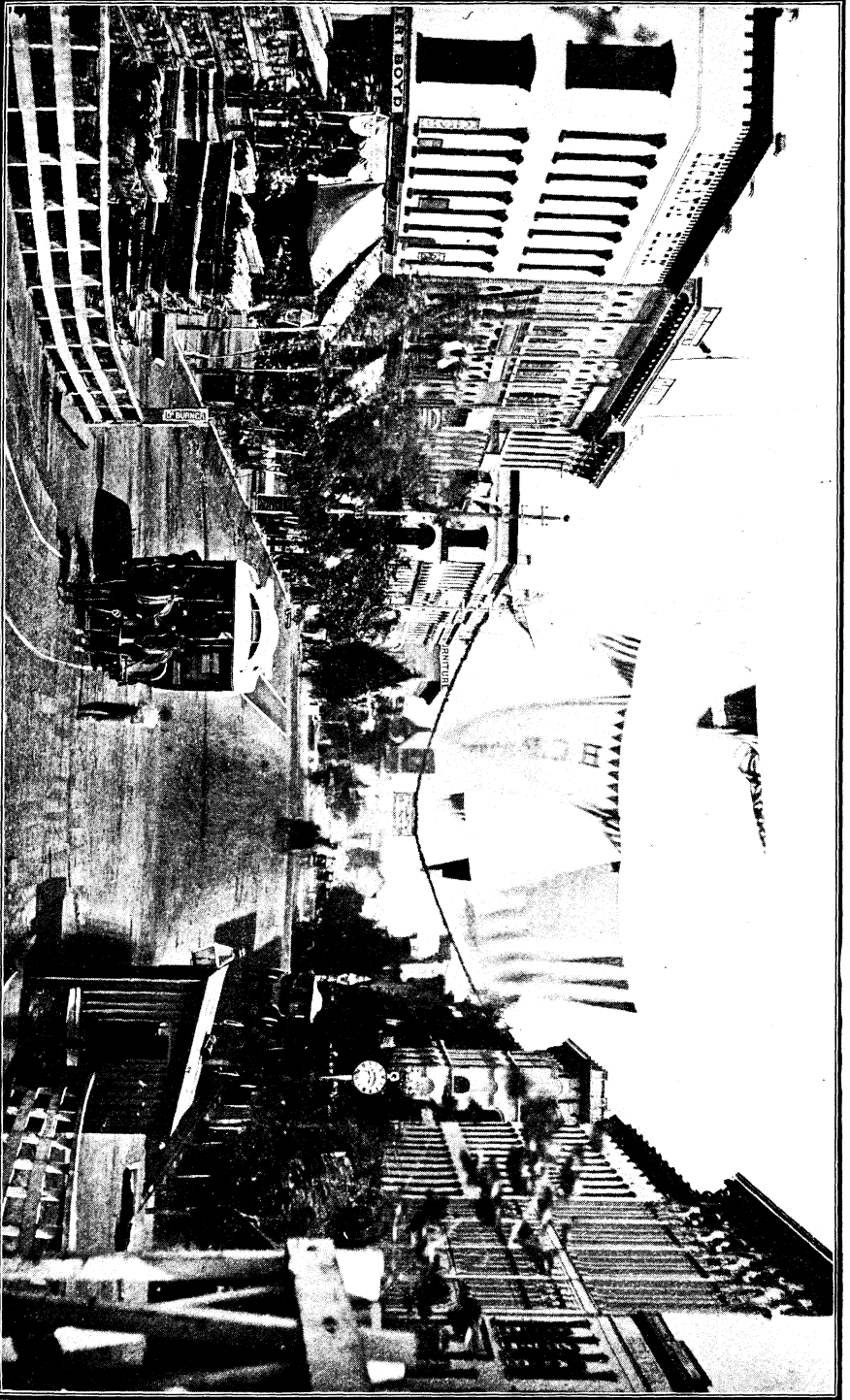
### The City Sewer System

Since 1866, a year in which East Saginaw expended more than eighteen thousand dollars for the construction of sewers, almost continuous progress has been made in this department of public works. To and including 1889, before consolidation with Saginaw City was effected, this city paid more than half a million dollars for sewers, about one-half of which was assessed directly against the property benefited by the improvement. The expenditures between 1880 and 1889 were particularly large, and at the latter date the city was well drained, excepting in some of the outlying sections. Since 1890, moreover, the sewer system of the Eastern District has been greatly extended, and the total cost has reached the sum of seven hundred and forty-six thousand dollars. Four hundred and fourteen thousand dollars of this amount was paid by assessment on the property benefited.

In providing for this very necessary public improvement Saginaw City was not far backward. From 1881 to and including 1889, the expenditures here reached two hundred and fifty-seven thousand dollars, only eighty-three thousand of which was paid by the property benefited. In the period following consolidation, to January 1, 1915, the mileage of sewers was greatly augmented, and the expenditures reached a total of six hundred and forty-two thousand dollars. A change in the policy of apportioning the costs resulted in three hundred and twenty-four thousand dollars of the total amount being paid by the property benefited.

On January 1, 1915, the total length of all main and lateral sewers in both taxing districts was one hundred and seventeen miles; and the total cost was one million three hundred and eighty-seven thousand eight hundred dollars. City bonds had been issued from time to time to meet the expenditures, but at the above date the amount outstanding was only three hundred and fourteen thousand one hundred dollars, showing that the city has paid in special assessments and through the general tax budget more than a million dollars for its sewer systems.





GENESEE AVENUE DURING SAENGERFEST IN 1872

### Street Improvements

The one big item in our elaborate scheme for civic improvement is street paving, and it constitutes the largest expenditure the city is called upon to meet. City pavements are expensive necessities, and their cost adds appreciably to the tax burdens of the average citizen. In the beginning of street improvements cedar blocks, laid on one-inch boards upon a smooth bed of sand, was the material exclusively used, and it made a smooth and satisfactory pavement. But it was not a durable pavement, and although its cost per square yard, compared with brick or sheet asphalt, was small, it was soon discarded for more enduring materials. Of the several hundred thousand yards of cedar block pavements in the streets of both cities prior to consolidation, only fifteen thousand three hundred yards now remain, and the streets so laid are now almost impassable. Some cobble stone pavement was laid in the eighties, and some cedar with brick or cobble stone gutters, but it also proved unsatisfactory in a few years of use. The first brick pavement was laid in North Franklin Street in 1891, and though it bore heavy traffic for twenty-three years it was still in condition in 1914 so that resurfacing with sheet asphalt was all that was needed to make it a good pavement with the appearance of an entirely new one. The brick pavement in Washington Avenue, between Johnson and Janes Streets, was put down in 1893, and is still in fair condition.

The first smooth enduring pavement of sheet asphalt was laid in Genesee Avenue, from Water to Jefferson Streets, and from Janes to Hoyt Streets, in 1896. It proved so satisfactory that in the following year a pavement of the same materials was laid by the Barber Asphalt Paving Company, in Jefferson between Genesee and Holland Avenues; and in 1898, in Jefferson between Genesee and Potter, and in Hoyt Street between Jefferson and Genesee Avenues. On the West Side, the first asphalt pavement was laid in 1897, in Harrison Street between Court and Gratiot; and in 1898, in North Hamilton Street between Court and Bristol Streets. Court Street, from the river to Bay Street, a distance of nearly a mile, was put down in 1899; and Hamilton Street between Court and Mackinaw Streets was likewise improved the same year. After a few years' satisfactory test of asphalt, this material with brick gutters became the standard for practically all of the city paving.

While the total cost of the city pavements, which have a total length of seventy-two miles, has been enormous, the liquidation of the city bonds, which were issued yearly to pay for the improvements, has gone on steadily the maturing bonds being easily met by special annual assessments on the property directly benefited by the improvement. By this means the city merely uses its high credit to finance street betterments, for and to the aid of individual citizens. The total amount of all street improvement bonds outstanding January 1, 1915, was six hundred and sixty-nine thousand three hundred dollars, divided between the two taxing districts, the Eastern, four hundred and eighty-eight thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars, and the Western, one hundred and eighty thousand five hundred and fifty dollars.

### Building Cement Sidewalks

In the early days of street improvements, if there were any sidewalks at all in a street, they were invariably of white pine planks, usually from twelve to sixteen inches wide and two inches thick, laid on stringers of the same material and spiked down. Along Genesee Street, in front of store buildings, the planks were laid crossways of the street, and after they had become warped and worn the walking was not good and easy, nor altogether safe.

In the residence streets the planks were laid lengthways of the road, from five to eight planks wide, and when new afforded very comfortable walking. But the average life of such walks was less than ten years, and some property owners became careless about keeping them in repair. Falls, broken bones and sprained ankles were of almost daily occurrence, and damage suits brought against the city for such injuries at length became very numerous.

Late in the nineties the situation had become so serious that the mayor ordered all dangerous and defective walks torn up, and a thorough inspection was started in all sections of the city. So vigorous was the crusade of destruction that in about two weeks miles upon miles of bad sidewalks had been entirely removed, leaving in many instances hollows of soft muddy earth, into which persons stumbled or fell in the dark. There was a very general complaint of the conditions throughout the city; but the decree had gone forth that no more board walks should be laid anywhere.

At this time the business sections of the city were quite generally provided with sidewalks of brick or artificial stone, as being more durable and economical, and many citizens laid hard walks in front of their residences. Concrete was an expensive material to use, and other citizens, through indifference or unwillingness to incur the expense of laying new walks, did nothing. A year or two after the decree went forth the situation was not greatly improved, and not until the council decided to pursue the same plan in building sidewalks, as had been followed for years in laying pavements, that relief was afforded. By this plan of bonding for special improvements, the property owner was ordered to lay a walk in front of his lot or lots, of specified materials. If he chose to disregard the order the city built the walk according to specifications, and assessed the cost to the owner of the property, the payments of the same with interest being divided into ten yearly payments, to fall due at the time of the city tax collections.

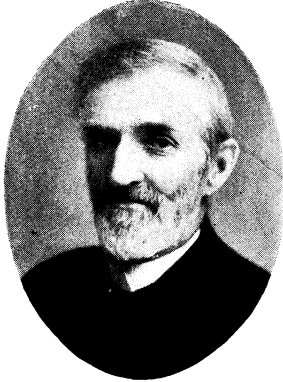
This plan worked out very well and soon became the popular procedure, thousands of sidewalks in all sections of the city being built of concrete, strictly according to specifications and carefully inspected during the work. As a result the streets everywhere are lined with smooth, durable sidewalks, with cross walks of asphalt on streets paved with that material, and of stone elsewhere. The bonds are retired on the same plan as those issued for street paving, the amounts outstanding January 1, 1915, being, for the Eastern District, ninety thousand six hundred dollars, and the Western District, seventy-nine thousand two hundred dollars, a total of one hundred and sixty-nine thousand eight hundred dollars.

### **The City Deep Wells Are Popular**

Before passing to a more important subject mention will be made of the City wells, which supply a large proportion of the population with good water for drinking and cooking purposes. No one uses, or should use, the water pumped through the city mains for such purposes, and it is scarcely fit for any domestic use, especially on the West Side. But many families, for want of a better supply, are forced to use it for washing and bathing, though for no other purpose. For culinary uses they resort to the water pumped from deep wells, either private or public. Years ago the city authorities and the people generally recognized the fact that river water was an exceedingly dangerous fluid to take into the human system, and measures were taken to supply clear, sparkling water from deep down in the earth. Many citizens of means put down private wells on their premises, and often supply their neighbors' needs, as well. But at best these could furnish only a small percentage of the water required by the whole city.



HERBERT H. HOYT  
1874



JOHN G. OWEN  
1870



JOHN WELCH  
1879-81



A. F. R. BRALEY  
1867-69



LYMAN W. BLISS  
1879-80



FRANK LAWRENCE  
1883



JOHN S. ESTABROOK  
1884-85



HENRY M. YOUMANS  
1886

SOME OLD-TIME MAYORS OF THE SAGINAWS

Long before the consolidation of the two cities, several deep wells were drilled at Saginaw City at the expense of the city for public use. They were located at Court Street and Michigan Avenue, Genesee and Michigan Avenues, Niagara and Hancock Streets, Bond and Clinton Streets, Bristol and Hamilton, and Hamilton and Perry Streets. These wells filled such a public need that, in the nineties, several others were put down in convenient places. In 1900-01-02 nineteen more were drilled, and for ten years thereafter, an average of four was added each year. At the beginning of 1915 there were sixty-six deep wells on the West Side owned by the city.

On the East Side municipal deep wells were first drilled in 1892, when wells at the City Hall, in Hoyt Park, at Washington Avenue and Mackinac Street, and at Genesee Avenue and Lapeer Street offered cool, refreshing water to the thirsty. Other wells were soon added, and from 1900 to 1910 they multiplied until at present there are eighty-five deep wells scattered over the city, maintained and kept in repair by the municipality. They may not furnish the best water that is easily available for culinary use, but they are certainly a valuable source of supply under the present conditions of our water works. There are now one hundred and fifty-one of these wells in use, and their depth varies greatly, the shallowest being eighty-five feet and the deepest two hundred and twenty-five feet in depth. The best water is not always found at the greatest depth, as is proved by the superior quality of some waters taken from shallower wells.

### The Idea of Civic Beauty

In strolling through our parks and playgrounds and noting their beauty and charm, it is not easy to realize that they are a work of comparatively recent years. Cut out of the native forest they seem to have always existed, and it is a long stretch of the imagination to conjure up the wigwam of the red man on the spot where we linger in meditation of past scenes.

The first concern of our pioneers was to make homes, to provide a living for their families, and the wilderness offered little choice of occupations. In the primitive settlements the struggle for existence was hard and long, and the village fathers were chiefly concerned in the business of grading streets and laying out new ones. Long after the cities were formed the problems of sanitation and public safety were urgent of solution; and afterward, the desire for street improvements led to the transformation of mud and sawdust towns into pleasant places in which to live. This awakened in many citizens a personal pride in the appearance of their homes and grounds, and a new tone of prosperity was everywhere apparent. Later, when public buildings and better facilities for communication between the two sides had been provided, the people settled back to enjoy a rest. But the rest was of short duration, for the idea of Civic Beauty—an aesthetic creation—asserted itself.

### The Beginning of Our Park System

In the true narration of human events, Jesse Hoyt may properly be termed the "father" of our system of public parks. More than thirty years ago, perceiving that Saginaw was destined to become a large and prosperous city, its citizens appreciating the finer things of life which please and delight the eye, he bequeathed to East Saginaw a considerable tract of land in the James Riley Reserve, for park purposes. Then but little more than wild land, heavily wooded on the upland, and a waste of marsh in the low land, it was a very unsightly spot upon which to make a city park. Along the Washington Street front was a common board fence, of what use it is hard to conjecture, unless it was to keep the cattle, which roamed the streets at

will, from doing damage to the forest trees. The idea of Civic Beauty had not yet taken root in the public mind, and for several years nothing was done to improve the land, except to trim and thin out the forest trees.

It was well along in the nineties that the first definite plan of improvement was formulated. The ground of the upland was graded and seeded, gravelled roadways were laid out, and the slopes cleared of brush and weeds. Afterward, flower beds were set out and a band stand erected, and the upland assumed the appearance of a real city park. As yet the low waste of marsh remained untouched, and was still the abode of bull frogs, muskrats and water snakes. By 1894 the cost of improvements in Hoyt Park amounted to twenty-five thousand dollars. Meanwhile the triangular spaces at Second, Park and Tuscola Streets, and at Weadock and Hoyt Street, were laid out, trees and shrubs planted, and made attractive at a cost of five hundred and one thousand dollars, respectively.

With this modest beginning in beautification, Civic Pride was thoroughly aroused, and the city entered upon an era of expansion and development of its park property. The rapid progress made in this direction is worthy of note, the results accomplished being a work of the last twelve or fifteen years. In the early years of this century the wild and unsightly bottom land in Hoyt Park was still in its native state, but about 1904 the ground was drained, plowed and leveled, and seeded to lawn. A roadway was built along the east side and connected at either end with roads leading to the upland. At the north end a sump, or well, was constructed and a pump house with necessary equipment was erected, to drain off and pump out flood waters in the Spring. This was a work of two or three seasons, but when completed the results were very satisfactory.

In place of wild marshy grass covering pools of slimy, stagnant water, fit breeding places of mosquitoes, a beautiful lawn greets the eye. Including the slope from the upland, this lawn comprises more than twenty acres of the twenty-seven in the whole park. With the gently-rising slope forming a natural amphitheater for thousands of spectators, this sward is an admirable parade ground and arena for games and sports. It has often been used for Masonic drills and maneuvers of the militia; and during the Semi-Centennial celebration of 1907, it was a popular place for holding such events, and has been the scene of many brilliant gatherings. For the exhibition of fire works it could not be surpassed, as many as fifteen thousand people having witnessed displays on the evening of a Fourth of July.

In these days of public playgrounds Hoyt Park has been given over very largely to such purposes. During the Summer it is popularly used for base ball games, and in the Fall for foot ball, while in Winter the bottom land is flooded to form a huge ice skating rink. Coasting on the hill is also a popular pastime, and it has been suggested that a portable toboggan slide be erected to enhance the enjoyment of this sport.

### Bliss Park — The Ideal Playground

The transformation of the old Campau property, embracing the "Butchers Woods," in the Fourteenth Ward on the West Side, into a park of rare attractiveness, abounding with native forest trees and such a profusion of flowers as to charm the visitor, was equally noteworthy. It was made possible by the munificence of ex-Governor Aaron T. Bliss, who, in just pride of his home city, purchased the site for a park to bear his name, and not only gave a liberal sum for its improvement, but endowed the park for its future maintenance. The work of creating a beautiful park was performed during 1905 and 1906, a part of the cost, to the extent of ten thou-



VIEWS OF HOYT PARK



SCENES IN BLISS PARK



sand dollars, being borne by the city under the terms of the grant. It was a happy circumstance that the donor thus realized the fruition of his plans in the beautification of a public resting place, which has become the most popular of our parks.

Bliss Park is an ideal place for picnics and family parties, and almost every day from the beginning of warm weather until after the first of September, it is the scene of happy gatherings. The wooded section and playground is safely removed from the traffic of the streets, and mothers can rest in the shade of the trees or enjoy the flowers, while the babies and children disport themselves in the sand pile, or in the swings, teeters, slides and other play apparatus, with which the park is well provided. The flowers in the sunken garden are especially worthy of note, the large variety of peonies, phlox, asters, petunias and gladioli, oriental poppies and many flowering shrubs, adding greatly to the beauty of the park. With its numerous groupings consisting of many varieties of plants, shrubs and trees, increasing in beauty from year to year, and lending the charm of their varied coloring to the landscape, it affords great pleasure and interest to visitors.

Toward the close of the Civil War, the ground of this park and the vicinity was the scene of the organization of the 29th Regiment, Michigan Volunteer Infantry, of which Colonel Thomas Saylor was the commanding officer. Fifty years after, during the Summer of 1914, a large field boulder was placed in a prominent place at the junction of the main walk and the winding road, to mark the vicinity of the camp. On October 20 the appropriate monument was dedicated, the unveiling and exercises taking place before a considerable number of the survivors of the 29th Regiment, public officials and citizens. There was placed in the boulder a copper box containing records and souvenirs of the Regiment, and data and records about the city, and the occasion of the unveiling. On the bronze tablet in the face of the boulder is an inscription denoting its purpose, the date, and names of the donors of the monument.

#### **Creation of Board of Park and Cemetery Commissioners**

By an Act of the Legislature May 24, 1905, the parks of the city passed into the care and control of a Board of Park and Cemetery Commissioners. The original members of this board, appointed May 29, 1905, were James G. Macpherson, E. P. Waldron, Frank Plumb, Charles H. Peters and William B. Mershon. On December 31, 1906, Walter J. Lamson was appointed a member of the board to fill the unexpired term of E. P. Waldron, resigned; on January 17, 1910, John A. Cimmerer replaced Frank Plumb, resigned; L. C. Slade was appointed November 21, 1910, to fill the unexpired term of Charles H. Peters, deceased; and O. R. Fowler succeeded William B. Mershon January 6, 1913, on account of expiration of term. The board was automatically retired January 1, 1914, by provision of the new city charter, and the commission form of government, which went into effect on that date.

During the life of this board, covering a period of eight and a half years, was witnessed the greatest progress in carrying out the idea of Civic Beauty, in the development of our park system. Great credit is due the members of the board, for their untiring and unselfish efforts to beautify the city, and in particular do our citizens honor William B. Mershon and James G. Macpherson, and cherish the memory of Charles H. Peters with tender care. Under the new city government William H. Reins, one of the five councilmen, was designated Commissioner of Parks and Cemeteries on January 2, 1914. His term expired April 11, 1915, but he was re-elected for a

two-year term, his conduct of the office on an economic basis of efficiency being eminently satisfactory to the city. Daniel H. Ellis, the superintendent of parks under the old board was retained, his valued services recognized by the new administration.

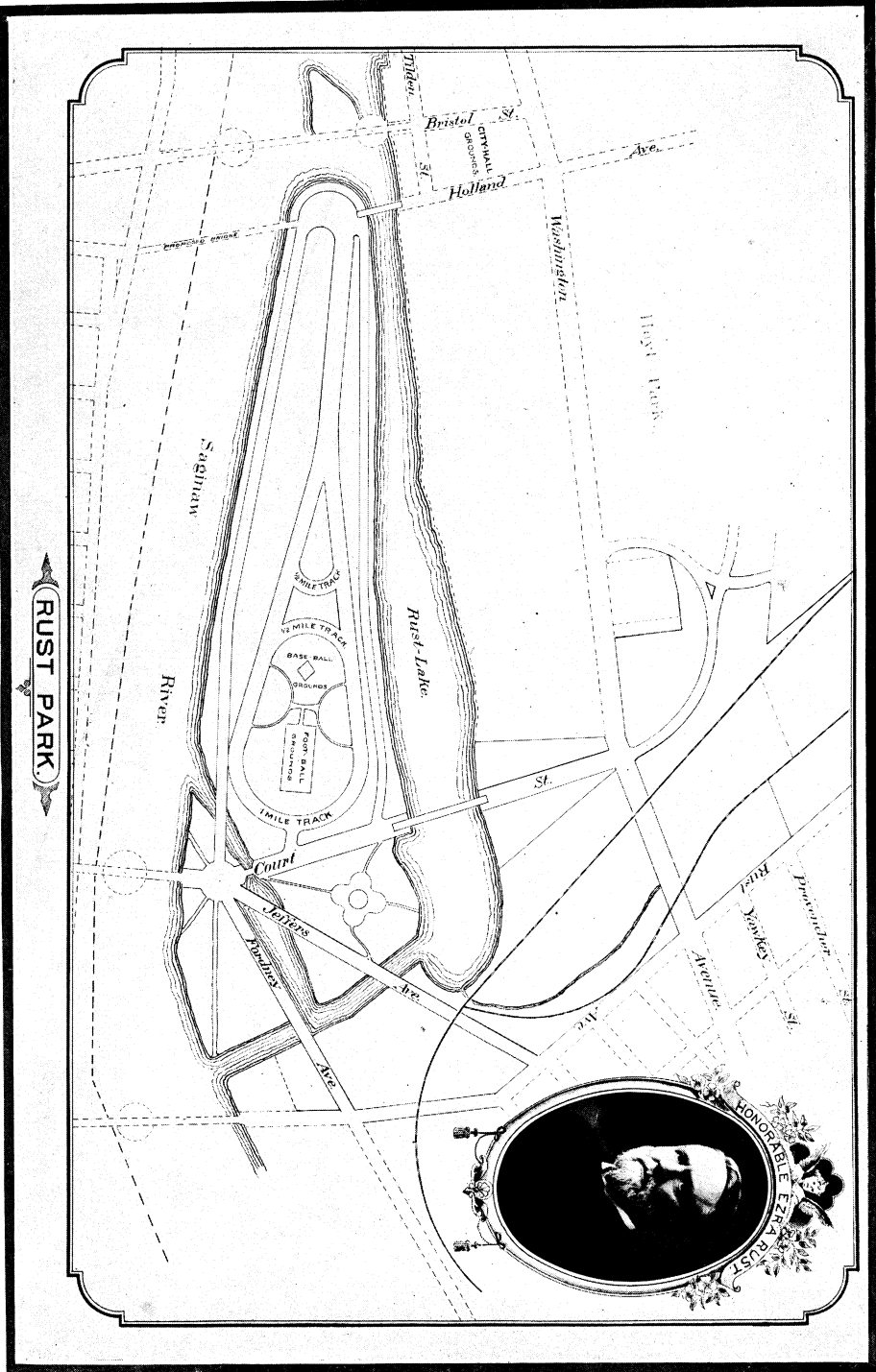
### Ezra Rust Park Improvements

It was during the existence of the old board of commissioners that the great preliminary improvements were made to Ezra Rust Park. In the Summer of 1906 a survey was made of that part of the park lying between Lake Linton and the Saginaw River, including the waters adjacent thereto, and therefrom a grade was fixed for the filling, and an estimate made of the quantity of earth required. The year previous William S. Linton, who has ever had the interests of the city at heart, interested his friend Ezra Rust, in a project to secure title to the old "middle ground" lying in the river between the Bristol and Mackinaw Street bridges, and in time convert the unsightly ground into an attractive city park. It was a huge undertaking, but through the generosity of Mr. Rust the property was purchased and a proposal made to the city for its improvement. The property with several additions since made by the donor, now comprises one hundred and thirty-six acres in the heart of the city, and eventually will be one of its chief show places.

By the terms of the proposal, which was accepted by the city fathers, the city contributed fifty thousand dollars, to which Mr. Rust added a like sum, for the cost of filling; and on September 24, 1907, a contract for the work of dredging and filling was awarded to H. W. Hubbell & Company for ninety-six thousand five hundred and twenty-five dollars. During the seasons of 1908-09 the work was vigorously prosecuted with a hydraulic dredge and a dipper dredge, under the direction of Mr. Hubbell, until the completion of the contract in December, 1909.

The work of filling of the ground north of Court Street brought the elevation to five feet above city datum, and that south of Court Street to six feet, while the dredging of Lake Linton (Emerson Bayou) and the waters adjacent gave a depth of ten to twelve feet below city datum. Six hundred thousand cubic yards of filling was required for this preliminary improvement. Much further filling was required, however, to bring the elevation above flood waters, and this was provided during the Summer of 1914 by hydraulic dredges working in the river on a government contract for widening and deepening the stream. Upon the settling of the ground to a permanent level, this section of the park, comprising seventy-six and a half acres, will be in condition for the permanent improvements which contemplate the laying out of two base ball diamonds, a foot ball field and tennis courts, within a mile speedway, and an elaborate plan of beautifying the ground. The filled area has a water front of two and a half miles, and a water area of over thirty acres.

The benefit of this improvement in converting a large area of swamp land and stagnant water into solid ground and living water, and the general benefit to the health of the people, cannot be measured by a monetary consideration. It is even greater than the improvements already made to the entrance and older portions of the park, improvements that please the eye, give a quiet restful tone to the whole neighborhood, and help to make life worth living in the city. To the parkings in the vicinity of Washington Avenue a peculiar interest attaches by the presence of a boulder marking the site of the camp of organization of the 23d Regiment, Michigan Volunteer Infantry, which was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies on September 11, 1913; and also by a smaller boulder bearing a bronze tablet,



**RUST PARK**

MAP OF EZRA RUST PARK  
Showing proposed improvements

to mark the spot upon Mound Hill on which once stood an ancient Indian village, which was placed by the Saginaw Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution, and dedicated by them on October 26, 1911. The Still fountain at the intersection of Washington Avenue and Court Street, is also a work of some interest.

### **Fordney Park**

The use of this attractive park, which was presented to the city by Joseph W. Fordney, is very similar to that of Bliss Park, a neighborhood resting place, popular for picnics and a playground for the children. It is the latest acquisition to our park system, having come under the care and control of the park commissioners in 1913, and comprises ten acres of woodland, level green sward and a small pond. Conveniently situated in the southwest part of the West Side, adjoining the estate of the donor, it is of easy access to a large population, and its privileges are enjoyed by numerous parties and individuals during the Summer.

### **Jeffers Park**

At the triangle formed by the intersections of Genesee, Germania and Warren Avenues there is a small park quite tastefully laid out with shrubs and flowers. A few years ago this property was covered with business blocks, but in order to leave a fitting memorial to his brother, the late Michael Jeffers, John Jeffers and his niece Miss Elizabeth Champe, cleared the ground and converted it into an attractive little park. To perpetuate the memory of the man who had done so much for the upbuilding of the city, Mr. Jeffers soon after erected an enduring monument, in the form of a large and ornate drinking fountain supplied with crystal water from a deep well close by. The park is situated almost in the center of the business section of the East Side, and, although small in area, is much frequented by the public.

### **Federal Park**

Adjoining the Federal Building on the south, and between it and Hoyt Library, from Jefferson to Warren Avenues, there is a plot of ground exactly one acre in extent, which is called Federal Park. It was laid out and improved by the planting of trees and shrubs shortly after the government building was completed, and is now an attractive feature of a very pleasing landscape of stone edifices covered with ivy. In the center of this park is a soldiers monument and fountain erected about twelve years ago by Aaron T. Bliss, as a memorial to his comrades who fell in battles of the Civil War. The trees in this park are now of sufficient size to afford an abundance of shade—a feature of no little importance in providing a comfortable resting place down town.

### **Small Parks**

Supplementing the park system there are a number of circles and cultivated spots at irregular intersections of streets, all properly cared for by the department, such as Germain Park, Second Street Park, Sheridan Avenue Park, Weadock Park, Park Place Park and Webber Circle. There are also two unimproved plots of ground, named Linton Park and Webber Park, which will probably be objects of city appropriations for improvements in future years.

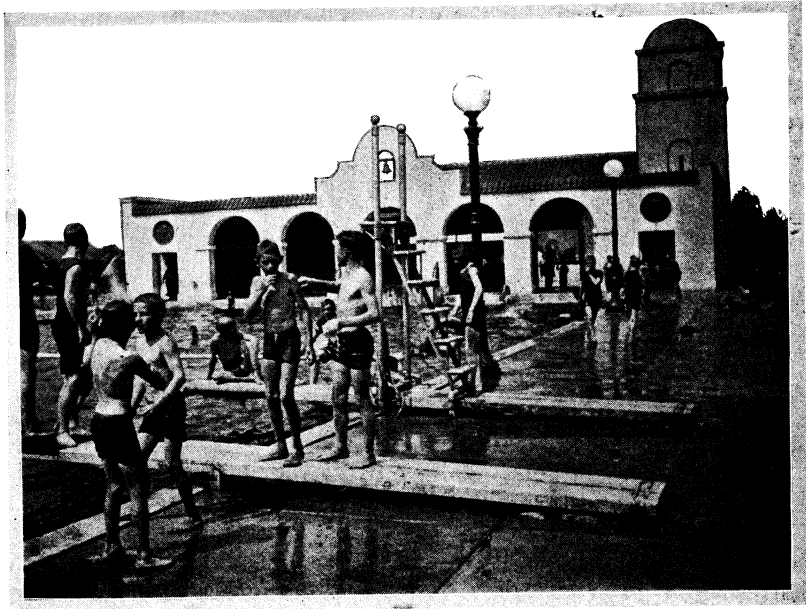
The total area of Saginaw's parks is two hundred and twenty acres, of which about one hundred and twenty-five acres are improved and a source of joy and pleasure to the people. As years pass by the section of Ezra Rust Park called Ojibway Island will be improved, and other betterments made, and eventually the city will have a park system unsurpassed by any city of

its class in the Middle West. The present expenditure for maintenance and improvements of the parks exceeds fifteen thousand dollars annually, and is increasing from year to year.

### The Mershon-Whittier Natatorium

A fitting adjunct to our parks is the Mershon-Whittier Swimming Pool, which is under the care and control of the Commissioner of Parks and Cemeteries. This unique feature of the city's utilities was built and presented to the city in August, 1910, by Edward C. Mershon and Charles Merrill & Company, as a fitting memorial to Augustus H. Mershon and Joseph A. Whittier, both of whom were esteemed citizens of this city; men of great integrity who did much for its upbuilding and firm establishment. The site for this swimming pool is on the old Whittier mill property at the west end of the Johnson Street bridge, a very accessible location; and the records show that in 1914 the attendance was twenty-eight thousand eight hundred and seventy-seven, of which five thousand four hundred and eighteen were women and girls, using the pool on Tuesday and Thursday only.

Under the terms of the grant the city furnishes river water for the filters, and provides for the maintenance and operation of the pool. All the water that enters the pool first passes through the filter, which has a capacity of two hundred gallons per minute, and thence into one or other of the two sections of the concrete basin. The first section is sixty-eight by sixty-one feet in size and ranges in depth from eighteen inches to four feet, while the other is sixty-one by thirty-one feet in size and has a depth of eight feet. These sections are separated by a concrete wall and railing, so that children unable to swim will not readily get into deep water. While the pool is in use the water is continually being changed, the overflow passing into a round, shallow pool in the center of the court, where all persons are required to wash with soap before entering the swimming pool. Around the walls of the court are benches, lockers and hooks for the use of the bathers,



MERSON-WHITTIER NATATORIUM

who may check their valuables with an attendant for safe keeping. A nominal charge for towels, bathing suits, lockers and similar privileges produces a small revenue of about five hundred dollars each season, which is used toward defraying the expense of operation. In 1914 the pool was in use one hundred and one days, an average of six hours each, using forty-seven thousand five hundred gallons of filtered water each day, and a total of four million eight hundred thousand gallons for the season.

### The City's Cemeteries

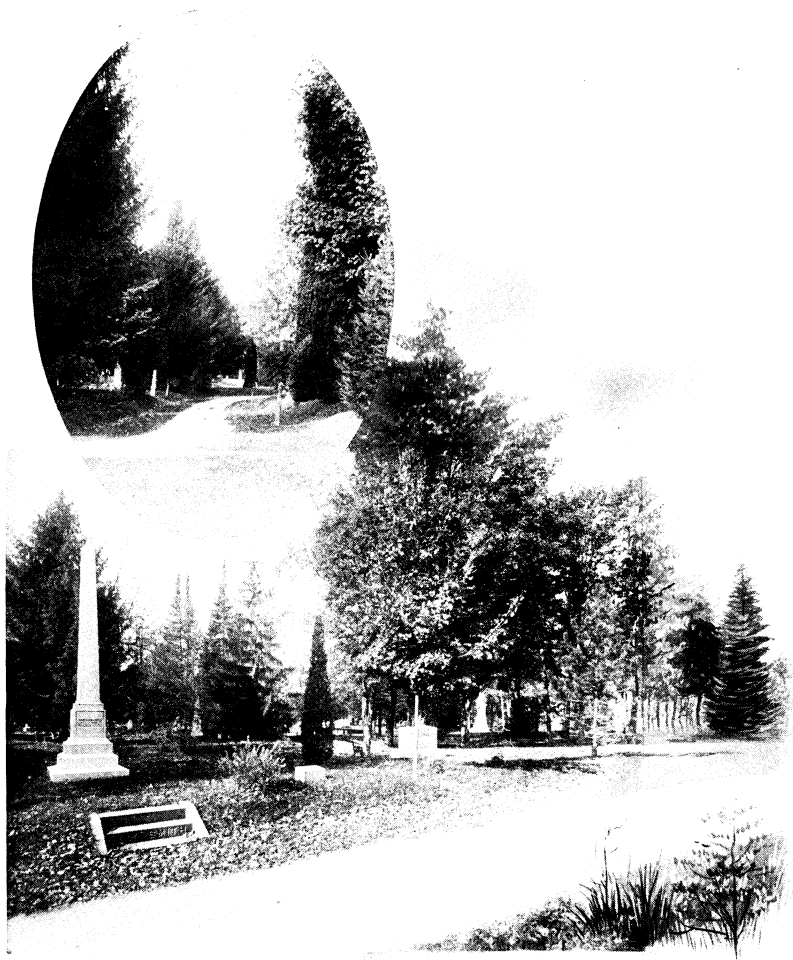
The public cemeteries owned and cared for by the city, like the public parks, passed under the control of the Board of Park and Cemetery Commissioners, May 24, 1905. Brady Hill, the oldest of the city's burial grounds, comprising about twenty-two and a half acres, was first used in 1855. The first conveyance was from Alfred M. Hoyt to the Board of Health of the Township of Buena Vista, which, in 1882, by quit-claim, conveyed the same to the City of East Saginaw. The following year William L. Webber, executor and trustee of the estate of Jesse Hoyt, executed a release to the city of all the rights reserved in the original deed made by Alfred M. Hoyt, which perfected an absolute title in the city. With but limited revenue from the sale of lots, it was then almost entirely dependent upon city appropriations for its care and maintenance, no endowment fund having been created in former years for this purpose.

As a result of a want of foresight on the part of the early board of health, and the parsimony of the city fathers thereafter, Brady Hill Cemetery was very much neglected for a number of years. But in 1908, with a view of adding to the finances of the cemetery, the commissioners had the unoccupied portion, at the corner of Holland and Jefferson Avenues, replatted into lots to be sold for burial purposes. This action brought forth a protest from the residents of the neighborhood, together with a proposition from them to make a gift of four hundred and sixty-four dollars, so subscribed by them, to the commissioners for the sole purpose of defraying the expense of parking the unused portions of the cemetery along Jefferson Avenue, and at its intersection with Holland Avenue. This proposition was accepted by the commissioners, and the improvements made at a cost of about seven hundred dollars.

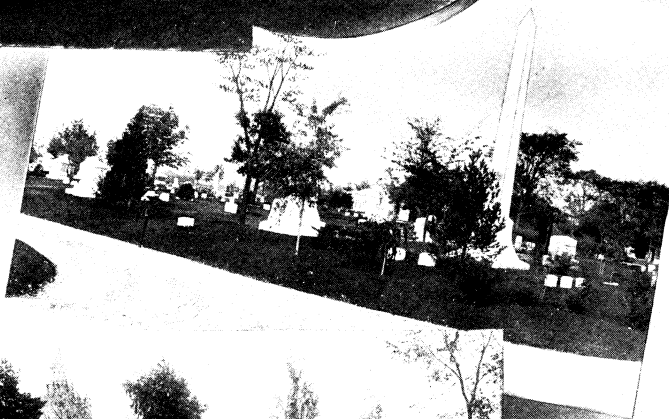
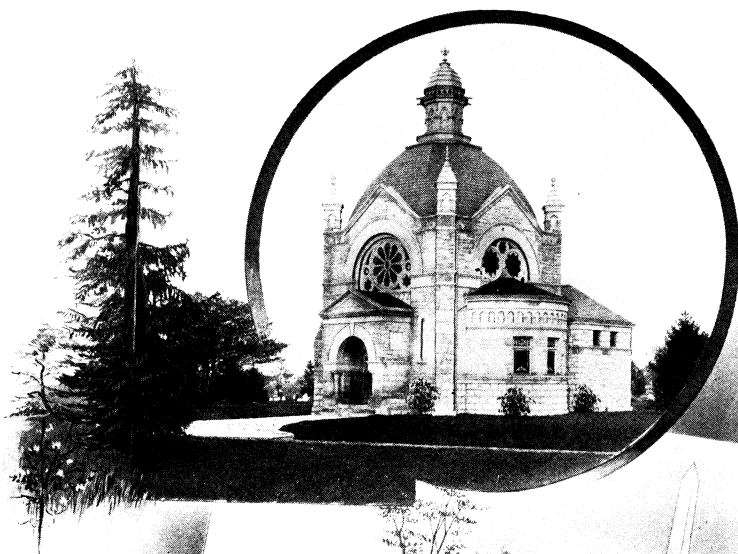
In 1914 the income of the Louisa C. Bartlett Endowment Fund for this cemetery became available, and about nineteen hundred dollars were spent that year in improvements about the family vault and the grounds immediately surrounding it. With this work completed and a small sum reserved for care and maintenance, the balance of the money from the endowment will be available for use elsewhere in the cemetery. The permanent improvements already made have added greatly to the appearance of the cemetery, and shows what can be done with intelligent use of the funds available.

### Oakwood Cemetery

A very suitable plot of ground, although not conveniently situated, was purchased by Saginaw City for burial purposes in 1867. It is two miles beyond the present city limits, on the Gratiot State Road, and will never be encroached upon by the future expansion or growth of the city. As a place of burial it was opened in 1868, and is now the resting place of many pioneer citizens who were early identified with the growth and progress of Saginaw. Comprising ninety-eight acres with a noble forest of oak, beech and maple trees, and with natural ravines insuring perfect drainage, it is an ideal location for a cemetery to endure for ages.



VIEWS IN OAKWOOD CEMETERY



VIEWS IN FOREST LAWN CEMETERY



It is unfortunate that no endowment, or trust fund, has been established for Oakwood, a provision which is necessary if annual appropriations in future years for care and maintenance are to be avoided. The present conditions are such that the revenue from lot sales barely meets the current expenses. To put this cemetery on a self-supporting basis for the future should be the aim of interested lot holders, and could be accomplished by donations and bequests, left in trust, the income from which to be used for its care and perpetuity. Endowments also may be made by lot owners and deposited with the city for the special care of lots and keeping in repair the stones and monuments thereon.

### Forest Lawn

In 1881 the limited number of lots in Brady Hill made it necessary for the city to secure additional burial grounds, and for this purpose the D. L. C. Eaton farm at the southerly limits of the city, containing ninety-seven and a half acres, was purchased at a cost of about seventeen thousand dollars. In the same year the noted landscape artist, Joseph Earnshaw, of Cincinnati, furnished plans, consisting of a general lot plan, drainage and platting plans, together with the staking out and numbering of thirteen hundred lots and five hundred and eighty single graves.

Superseding the old and obsolete methods of small sections and sunken paths, which were not economical from either an income or maintenance standpoint, the new plans were drawn on modern lines, known as the lawn system or park plan. The observance and effect of this system with skill and taste in arrangement, produced a uniform and restful beauty throughout the whole cemetery.

The Chapel and Receiving Vault, a durable and handsome edifice, well adapted for the purposes intended, was constructed in 1901, at a cost of eight thousand nine hundred dollars, and is held subject to the wishes of any persons who may need its use, at a nominal charge. The artistic setting of the chapel has been enhanced by the judicious planting of shrubs and evergreens around the building, which is of Byzantine style, the whole effect being very pleasing to the eye.

In 1893 a Local Act was passed by the Legislature providing for a trust fund for Forest Lawn, consisting of "fifty per cent. of all moneys which shall from time to time be received from sale of lots and single graves in said cemetery, shall constitute a trust fund, the income from which, together with the remaining fifty per cent., shall be used for the general care and maintenance of said cemetery." The amount of this fund on January 1, 1915, was eighty-five thousand five hundred and eighty-four dollars, invested in our city or county bonds. As the income from this trust fund is used for the general care and maintenance of the cemetery, and not for special care of lots, monuments and mausoleums, a number of lot owners have made endowments, amounting to seven thousand two hundred dollars, for the care and improvements of their lots.

The Jefferson Avenue entrance gates and parking were constructed and improved from a fund provided by William L. Webber, and applied for these purposes through the sanction and interest of his daughters, the gate piers being of Bedford stone. The Washington Avenue entrance is now improved with wrought iron gates of graceful design, and with simple but massive granite piers that will endure for ages. Mr. O. C. Simonds plan for planting at this entrance, when fully carried out, was very pleasing in effect. The public service building, combining rest room and sexton's office, which was built in 1913, covers a long desired necessity, and is artistic in giving a proper setting to the main entrance.

Besides the city's public cemeteries there are Calvary and St. Andrew's Cemeteries, which are owned and maintained by the several parishes of the Roman Catholic Church. Calvary is situated on the brow of a hill a short distance south of Brady Hill, and is reached by a winding road through Hoyt Park, and also by a lane from Jefferson Avenue. Though not a large burial ground, a number of Saginaw's pioneer and representative citizens have here a final resting place. It is a beautiful spot, well cared for, and commands a fine view of Hoyt Park and environs.

### The Auditorium

More than twenty-five years ago, during a strike of lumber shovers, or "dock-whallopers" as they were called, Wellington R. Burt, in discussing the situation with another citizen, conceived the idea of establishing a large building where the people could get together and talk over matters in dispute, and thus more quickly come to an understanding. As time passed and the need of such a building, where conventions and public meetings could be held, seemed more urgent, a tentative plan gradually unfolded itself in his mind, and he resolved to put the matter before the people. He had just witnessed the completion of the Manual Training School, which had been made possible by his generosity and personal interest in the welfare of the rising generations, and he wanted to do something for the older people. The spirit of helpful co-operation and interest in the future prosperity of his home city, which he had known for more than fifty years, were strong within him, and he manifested it, as usual, in a practical way.

About 1905 he accordingly launched a movement for a public convention hall, to seat from three to four thousand people. The site at first advocated was the parking between the Federal Building and Hoyt Library, but many citizens, wishing to preserve this attractive spot as a park, objected to this location, and for a time the project was in abeyance. The vacant corner at Warren and Germania Avenues was also suggested as a suitable site for a public building of this character, but the location likewise met with disfavor, the price asked being generally regarded as prohibitive. Thus the matter drifted until October, 1907, when Wellington R. Burt and Temple E. Dorr made a joint proposal to the city council, providing for the erection of a municipal convention hall.

Their proposition was a very favorable one to the city, inasmuch as it provided for an expenditure on their part of seventy-five thousand dollars toward the project, the city to furnish the remainder of the cost of construction and equipment. The offer was duly accepted by the council, plans and specifications were prepared by W. T. Cooper & Son, and the contract for the erection of the building awarded to John H. Qualmann. The site finally selected was entirely satisfactory to the citizens in general, and has a frontage of one hundred and twenty feet on Washington Avenue, and extends one hundred and eighty feet on Janes. On April 24, 1908, the corner stone was laid with interesting ceremonies, and the construction work was rushed during the Summer, in order to have it completed in October, for the Fifty-sixth Convention of the Michigan State Teachers Association.

On September 30 the large building was so near completion that the first public meeting was held, and on October 23 occurred the first formal civic opening, when the keys of the Auditorium were delivered by the donors to the trustees, who had been duly appointed to manage its affairs. The dedicatory ceremonies, taking the form of a grand musical festival, were held on October 28 and 29, and eclipsed anything of this nature ever attempted in Saginaw Valley. The great feature of the concerts was the New York Symphony Orchestra, directed by Walter Damrosch, aided by a mixed



THE AUDITORIUM

Erected in 1908 through the munificence of Wellington R. Burt and Temple E. Dorr

chorus of four hundred voices under the direction of John G. Cummings, and the great organ played by C. H. White, of Bay City. The soloists were Mme. Johanna Gadski, Mme. Isabella Boulton, contralto, and George Hamlin, tenor; and Earl Morse, violinist, and Frank LaForge, pianist, added greatly to the enjoyment of the concerts.

The climax of the grand festival was on the evening of the twenty-eighth, when Mendelssohn's Hymn of Praise was rendered by the chorus, orchestra and organ, in a manner surpassing any previous effort of the singers, and which still lingers in the memory of all music lovers who were present. On the following afternoon occurred the second of the orchestra concerts, and in the evening was given the complimentary concert to the teachers at the convention. More than four thousand were admitted to the great hall, yet many were unable to enter, so crowded was every corner of the structure. When Mme. Gadski learned of this condition, she kindly offered, in order that none of the teachers should be disappointed, to give an extra concert the following morning, which was held to an overflow house at the Academy of Music.

On these occasions the great organ, a magnificent gift of Mr. Burt, was heard for the first time by throngs of citizens, and visitors to the city, all of whom were captivated by its tone and power. In the lofts at either side of the stage, and in the center of the ceiling, are the great, swell, pedal and echo organs, while the four manual console, electrically operating many hundred pipes of the fifty-five stops, is in the center of the orchestra pit. The organ is one of the great features of the Auditorium, and is heard to splendid advantage at the Sunday afternoon concerts during the Winter, and at musical festivals and other gala occasions. It was built and set up by the Austin Organ Company, at a cost of about twenty thousand dollars, and ranks among the largest and best in the State.

The Auditorium itself is a valuable asset to the city, and with its splendid equipment, thanks to the generosity of Messrs. Burt and Dorr, has cost the city only about fifty thousand dollars, the burden of which is spread over a number of years. The benefits accruing from this large and useful building are enjoyed by present generations, as well as it will be by those to follow, and is for the use of the people, not for any particular party, class or creed, but is open to the humblest citizen. It provides a suitable place for holding large public meetings, conventions, industrial expositions, musical festivals and theatricals, while the banquet hall above the lobby affords every facility for dancing parties, art exhibits, lectures and small gatherings. The Board of Auditorium Trustees is composed of William S. Linton, president, William Ferris, secretary, and W. R. Purmort, treasurer.

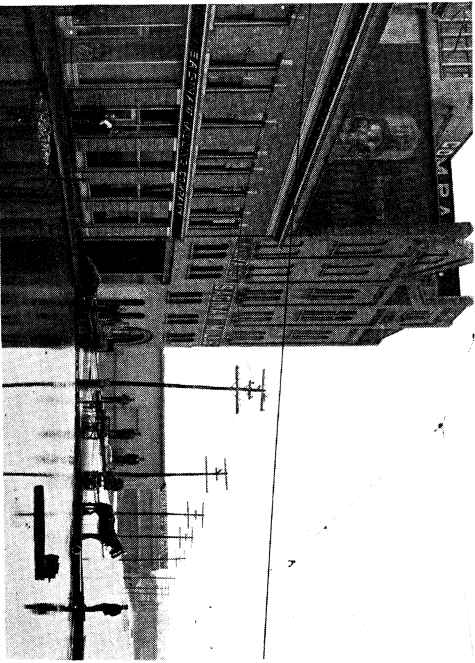
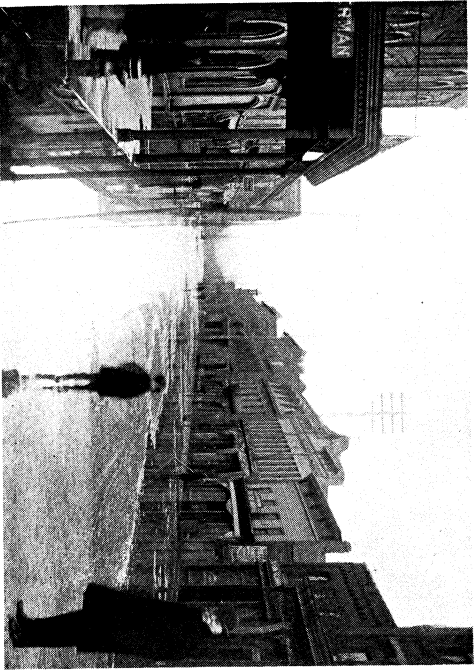
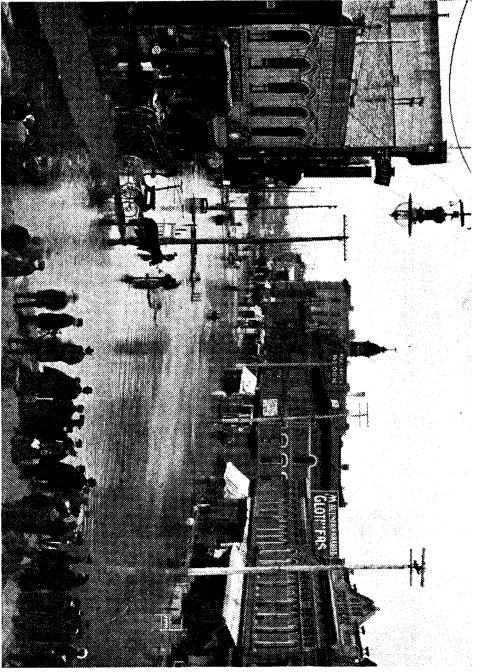
Adjoining the Auditorium on the west is the new and well-equipped Armory Building, which houses the local company of the State Militia and the Second Division of the Michigan State Naval Brigade. This is a three-story and basement brick and stone structure, sixty by one hundred and twenty feet in size, of pleasing and appropriate style, and was completed in the Fall of 1909. It was built jointly by the State and the city, the legislative appropriations being twenty thousand dollars, while the city contributed ten thousand dollars additional, for its construction. Affording complete club facilities, with reading room, billiard and pool room, bowling alleys, gymnasium and drill hall, and shower baths, the new armory is much appreciated by the officers and men of the two companies.

Directly opposite the Armory, at the foot of Janes Street, is Battery Park, on ground which was purchased by the city in 1909 for a municipal dock and water front park. It is an admirable drill ground for the militia, and affords convenient docking facilities for the naval reserve cutters and small craft in general. The municipal investment in this park and the improvements was about eight thousand dollars, the benefits of which will largely accrue to following generations.

### City Government by Commission

As a whole the citizens of Saginaw, with all their progressiveness and enterprise, have been quite free in the past from adopting fads and fancies, seemingly being content to "let well enough alone." But in the matter of civil government they all at once discovered, or thought they had, that they were far behind the times, and, throwing traditions aside, they overturned the old party regime, with its cliques, combinations and frame-ups, and adopted a new and less cumbersome municipal government. Among the various causes for this revolution may be cited sectional strife and jealousy, party garb for spoils; it was charged there was wasteful and inefficient conduct of city affairs; and possibly the Genesee Avenue Bridge muddle, the gas franchise scandal, the electric lighting contracts, and disregard of the will of the people had something to do with it.

As a matter of fact the city was not badly managed as many of our citizens imagined. At the time of transition to "commission form of government," Saginaw stood at the head of all cities in the United States of like population as to its general credit, rate of taxation, etc. Even granting the errors and omissions of former councils, a grave doubt existed in the minds of many conservative, yet progressive citizens, that the new form of government was any better than the old, or would deliver them from blunder in the future. The ideas of the reformers however prevailed, and the question of making a new charter was put to a vote of the people, and carried. In due course the charter commissioners were elected, and after many months of deliberation over the various provisions proposed, a new charter was com-



STREET SCENES DURING THE GREAT FLOOD OF MARCH, 1904

pleted and presented to the people. At a special election held November 15, 1913, the charter was approved by a majority of nine hundred and ninety-two, and it took effect January 1, 1914.

By the terms of the new charter, a primary election was required to be held on December first next following, for the purpose of choosing the nominees for mayor and four other councilmen, and ten supervisors at large. There was a large field of available material, for the most part eager to be retained or to get in public service, and great interest was aroused among all classes of the people. The campaign waxed warm and fifty-four candidates qualified for the councilmanic plums, and forty-three for the office of supervisors. The three candidates for mayor were Ard E. Richardson, Albert W. Tausend and Daniel Crane. From the first strong opposition was aroused to the candidacy of Mr. Tausend, chiefly among the leaders of his own party (politics still dominating the situation), and personal animosities entered in no small degree to heighten the interest. The Democratic party was dominated by the Beach-Lown faction, which insisted on simon pure Democratic timber for all public offices, and never forgave Tausend for a division of the offices with hated Republicans, especially certain city officials who were kept in office by the Tausend-Stenglein-Graebner combination in the council.

This combination procured for the city a non-partisan body of city officials, at the head of which was George C. Warren, controller (Republican). Mr. Warren's efficiency is unquestioned. He placed the city's accounting upon a basis second to none in use in any municipality in the country. Mr. Tausend's (Democrat) effort for efficient non-partisan city administration cost him defeat in immediate future aspiration to office.

The spirit of revolution was strong among the voters, and they determined to establish an entirely new regime in city affairs. A new square deal was what was needed for the best interests of the city. To change the system, as they had previously voted to do, and reorganize the city business, and then put back into control the men who were wrongfully charged by the press with having strenuously fought against any change, would be the height of folly as showing a lamentable want of common sense. An entirely new set of managers was what they wanted. The truth was many of the members of the old Council, including Mayor Tausend, were in favor of and voted for the new form of government. So the electors marched dutifully to the polls and registered their verdict, with the result that Ard E. Richardson was *elected* mayor by a majority of fourteen hundred and twenty-two, carrying sixteen of the twenty wards. The councilmen nominated at the primary were: William F. Jahnke, Robert F. Johnson, William Heim, William H. Reins, George Holcomb, Egbert H. Patterson, J. E. Runchey and Charles H. Peters.

The election of the councilmen and supervisors was held December 22, 1913, and was merely formal as carrying out the expressed wishes of the people. Some surprising results obtained nevertheless, and most noteworthy being the strong following of William H. Reins, who led all the nominees. The vote was: William H. Reins, four thousand and twenty-one; William F. Jahnke, thirty-eight hundred and twenty-nine; George Holcomb, thirty-eight hundred and twelve; and Robert F. Johnson, thirty-six hundred and fifty-eight. The supervisors elected were: Charles F. Bauer, John J. Leidlein, Abe Van Overen, Leo J. Demers, Fred Bluhm, John B. Nauer, Adam Sharp, Fred E. Curtis, Julius C. Hahn and George E. Scollen. These men elected at large represent the entire city on the Board of Supervisors, and act with the mayor, councilmen, city controller, city engineer, city attorney, and the five members of the board of review, as representatives of the City of Saginaw on the county's governing board.



This cut represents the last Common Council of the City of Saginaw, under the old form of Government, taken December 31, 1913. On January 1, 1914, the new Council took charge under "Commission" form of government.

- 1—Albert W. Tausend, Mayor.
- 2—Henry J. P. Graebner, Alderman 16th Ward.
- 3—Joseph Seemann, Alderman 7th Ward.
- 4—John O'Neill, Alderman 11th Ward.
- 5—Herbert S. Gay, Alderman 1st Ward.
- 6—Albert E. Braun, Alderman 2nd Ward.
- 7—A. Elwood Snow, City Attorney.
- 8—Rudolph Asbeck, Jr., Alderman 4th Ward.
- 9—John Waihler, Janitor City Hall.
- 10—Wm. F. Jahnke, City Treasurer.
- 11—John Southgate, Deputy Assessor.
- 12—Henry L. Schuch, Alderman 15th Ward.
- 13—Charles F. Schmidt, Alderman 6th Ward.
- 14—George T. Johnson, Alderman 14th Ward.
- 15—Wm. H. Barton, City Clerk.
- 16—George Phoenix, Alderman 12th Ward.

- 17—Thomas D. Madden, Alderman 18th Ward.
- 18—Fred R. Strutz, Alderman 9th Ward.
- 19—Geo. C. Warren, City Controller.
- 20—Otto E. Eckert, Assistant Engineer.
- 21—John A. Manwell, Deputy City Clerk.
- 22—Edward S. Golsen, Assistant in City Engineer's Office.
- 23—Fred C. Trier, Alderman 20th Ward.
- 24—John Stenglein, Alderman 17th Ward.
- 25—Charles M. Martin, Reporter Courier-Herald.
- 26—Herbert A. Otto, Alderman 13th Ward.
- 27—Edward H. Hartwick, Reporter Press.
- 28—Wm. H. Ferris, Alderman 5th Ward.
- 29—Frank Arden, Alderman 15th Ward.
- 30—Herman W. Zahnow, Alderman 8th Ward.
- 31—Sebastian Nothelfer, Alderman 10th Ward.
- 32—Chester M. Howell, Reporter News.

### The Present Council

The new charter provided that the term of the first council should expire on April 11, 1915, and a new council elected for two and four year terms. At the primaries held on March 16, with a strong array of candidates in the field, Ard E. Richardson and Hilem F. Paddock were nominated for the office of mayor, George Holcomb was *elected* councilman (having received a majority), and the choice of six other nominees for councilmen and twenty for supervisors was consistent with the idea of good government. Political influences, however, were still strong in moulding public opinion and party lines were drawn close, especially in the contest for the mayoralty.

The dominating faction of the Democratic party rallied to the support of Mr. Paddock, and conducted a quiet, inside campaign of great effectiveness. In this policy they were unconsciously aided by the supporters of Mr. Richardson, who adopted a blatant, laudatory method of conducting their campaign, featured by expressions so derogatory to the opposing nominee as to be almost vituperant in intensity. Other influences also were at work, reminding the people of certain acts of the chief executive, evidently prompted by the reformers of his party, including the disorganization of the police department, the fire department investigation farce, and other ill-advised matters, which at the time met with wide public disapproval. Although many voters were not impressed by the administrative abilities displayed by the Mayor, they generally agreed that the city had never had a more conscientious and hard-working official — actuated by high ideals.

The election was held on Tuesday, April 6, 1915, and resulted very happily to the supporters of Mr. Paddock, he being swept into office by a majority of ten hundred and fifty-three. All the other councilmen, William F. Jahnke, Robert F. Johnson and William H. Reins were re-elected to office by substantial majorities; and the supervisors elected were: Charles F. Bauer, Fred Bluhm, Sr., John J. Leidlein, George Schulz and Adam Sharp, for the four-year term, and Charles A. Beckman, Fred E. Curtis, John H. Deibel, Julius C. Hahn, and Chester A. Howell, for the two-year term.

### City Officers, July 1, 1915

Mayor, President of the Council,	Hilem F. Paddock
Commissioner of Health and Safety.....	Hilem F. Paddock
Vice-President of the Council,	
Commissioner of Light, Water and Sewers.....	Robert F. Johnson
Commissioner of Finance.....	William F. Jahnke
Commissioner of Public Works.....	George Holcomb
Commissioner of Parks and Cemeteries.....	William H. Reins
Controller.....	George C. Warren
Deputy Controller.....	Carl A. Werner
Treasurer.....	William F. Jahnke
Deputy Treasurer.....	Hoyt Holcomb
Clerk.....	Herbert S. Gay
Deputy Clerk.....	Frank Ardern
Assessor.....	Charles Spindler
Deputy Assessor.....	Charles Evans
Attorney.....	Robert T. Holland
Recorder and Police Judge.....	William H. Martin
Justice of the Peace.....	Arthur Clements
Health Officer.....	Dr. W. J. O'Reilly
Physician.....	Dr. F. W. Edelmann
Chief of Police.....	Patrick Kain



Chief of Fire Department.....	George W. Wallis
Assistant Chief of Fire Department.....	Robert B. Hudson
Superintendent of Poor.....	John Clark
Plumbing Inspector.....	Joseph Schrems
City Electrician.....	James Niven
Inspector of Foods and Measures.....	Noble R. Snell
City Engineer.....	Herman H. Eymer
Assistant Engineer.....	Otto Eckert
Superintendent of Parks.....	Daniel H. Ellis

**Board of Estimates**

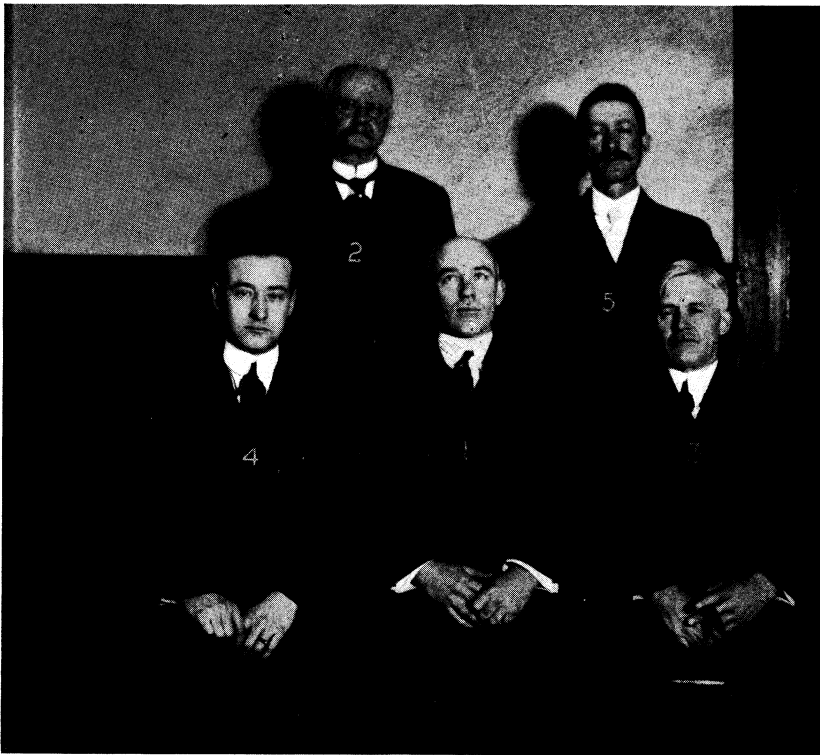
Jacob Schwartz, President

W. E. McCorkle   M. W. Guider   Fred J. Buckhout   James G. Macpherson

**Board of Review**

George S. Lockwood, President

James C. Cornwell   F. C. Trier   William A. Brewer   Simon G. Koepke



**THE FIRST COUNCIL UNDER THE COMMISSION GOVERNMENT**

- 1—Ard E. Richardson, Mayor      2—Robert F Johnson  
 3—George Holcomb                  4—William F. Jahnke                  5—William H. Reins

### Mayors of East Saginaw

1859	—William L. P. Little	1874	—Herbert H. Hoyt
1860	—William J. Bartow	1875	} —Chauncey W. Wisner
1861	} —Charles B. Mott	1876	
1862		—William F. Glasby	1877
1863	—James F. Brown	1878	
1864	—Samuel W. Yawkey	1879	} —John Welch
1865	—Dwight G. Holland	1880	
1866	—Wellington R. Burt	1881	} —Leander Simoneau
1867	} —James L. Ketcham	1882	
1868		—John G. Owen	1883
1869	—Leander Simoneau	1884	} —John S. Estabrook
1870	—Charles L. Ortman	1885	
1871	—William L. Webber	1886	} —Henry M. Youmans
1872		1887	
1873		1888	} —William B. Baum
		1889	

### Mayors of Saginaw City

1857	} —Gardner D. Williams	1873	} —Benton Hanchett
1858			
1859	} —George W. Bullock	1874	} —Fred H. Potter
1860			
1861	} —John Moore	1875	} —George F. Lewis
1862			
1863	} —Peter C. Andre	1876	} —Lyman W. Bliss
1864			
1865	—Stewart B. Williams	1877	} —Arthur Hill
1866	—William M. Miller	1878	
1867	} —Alfred F. R. Braley	1879	} —Peter C. Andre
1868			
1869	—William H. Sweet	1880	} —Charles L. Benjamin
1870	—George F. Williams	1881	
1871	—William H. Sweet	1882	} —Arthur Hill
1872		1883	
		1884	} —John H. Shackelton
		1885	
		1886	} —Lyman W. Bliss
		1887	
		1888	} —Gilbert M. Stark
		1889	

### Mayors of the City of Saginaw

1890	} —George W. Weadock	1904	} —Henry E. Lee
1891			
1892			
1892	} —William S. Linton	1906	} —William B. Baum
1893			
1894			
1895	} —William B. Mershon	1907	} —George W. Stewart, M. D.
1896			
1896			
to	} —William B. Baum	1908	} —Albert W. Tausend
1904			
		1912	
		1912	
		1913	
		1914	} —Ard E. Richardson
		1915	
		1915	—Hilem F. Paddock



**HILEM F. PADDOCK**  
Mayor of Saginaw  
1915-1919

## CHAPTER XIV

# OUR EDUCATIONAL DEVELOPMENT

---

The Earliest Schools—A. S. Gaylord Takes Charge—The New "Union School"—Expansion of the Schools—The Union School District—Modern Buildings—The Arthur Hill Trade School—The First School at East Saginaw—Building the "Academy"—Pioneer Teachers—Alonzo L. Bingham in Charge—Organization of Board of Education—Extension of the School System—Prof. Tarbell's Unique Action—The Burt Manual Training School—Sectarian and Parochial Schools—The First Public Library—The Public and Union School Library—The Butman-Fish Memorial Library—The Public Library—Hoyt Library—Literary and Reading Clubs—The Art Club.

ONE of the chief drawbacks to pioneer life in the wilderness was the want of schools, which, with the hardships and privations suffered by the early settlers, was keenly felt. Scarcely had the woodsman felled the trees that supplied the logs for his house, and disturbed the soil for planting potatoes and corn, ere his thoughts turned to the education of his children. Coming from New England or New York where in boyhood he had received such instruction and training as was afforded by old established schools, he naturally brought the educational habit with him, and his early efforts to provide school instruction speak well for his intelligence. It is therefore eminently fitting that some account of the inception and growth of the work which was started by our sturdy pioneers, should be included in this narrative of human progress.

### The Earliest Schools

The first school in Saginaw County, or in fact in this section of Michigan, was opened in the Fall of 1834 by Albert Miller. It was located in a portion of the old log barracks which had been erected by the United States troops in 1822. In the little dingy room, the walls of which were hewed logs with mud and moss filling the crevices, and the windows covered with oiled paper, were gathered all the children for two or three miles around, from eighteen to twenty-five in number, some of whom were half-breeds. Here, in the forest wilderness, on the border of a great unknown territory stretching westward to the Pacific, was planted the first token of advancing civilization. It was in strong contrast to our present elaborate system, with brick and stone school buildings perfectly equipped, corps of intelligent teachers and thousands of pupils.

In 1837 School District No. 1, of Saginaw Township, was organized, and the first school house, a small frame building, was erected on the south side of Court Street near the site of the court house. Some years later it was removed across the street to ground now occupied by the county jail. The first teacher of this organized public school was Horace S. Beach, of New York City, whose efforts to instill knowledge in the young members of the community evidently were successful, for he retained the position until 1840.

During the following winter Henry A. Campbell and Dion Birney, the latter a brother of James G. Birney, followed as teachers, and in the Summer of 1841 the position was filled by Miss Catherine Beach, afterward Mrs. Samuel Shattuck. From 1842 to 1845 the school had several teachers succeeding each other, including Ira Bissell, of Grand Blanc; Daniel Woodin,

of St. Clair; and Edwin Ferris, of New York. During the term of Mr. Ferris the number of pupils became too large for one room and one teacher, and the school building was thereupon enlarged and Miss Harmony Haywood employed as assistant. Shortly after Mr. Woodman, of Hamilton, New York, was employed as teacher for a few months.

In 1845 Miss Harriet A. Spaulding, a young woman of fine education and accomplishments, came as missionary from Boston. In the public schools she found an excellent opportunity to advance good work among the young, and was so employed during that year and in 1846. Her mission was not in vain, for years after her pupils still cherished letters written to them after her departure, which prove her sincere regard for them. From 1847 to 1850 there were several teachers, including Miss Eliza Booth, E. C. Erwin, Miss Anna Dayton, Joseph A. Ripley, of Tuscola, Charles T. Disbrow, and Milo Woodward, of Ohio. In 1847, when the district school was in charge of Miss Booth, a private school was taught for several months by Miss Angeline J. Berry; but the public school from its beginning generally met the educational needs of the time.

### Augustine S. Gaylord Takes Charge

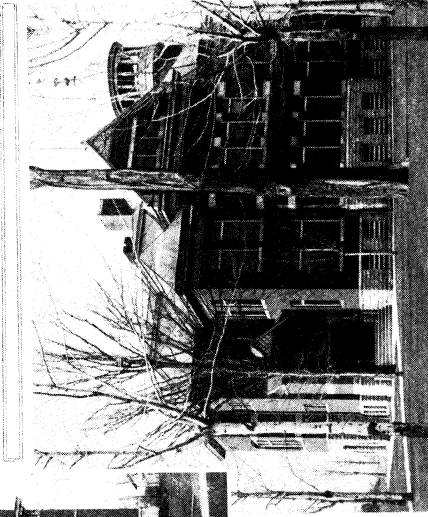
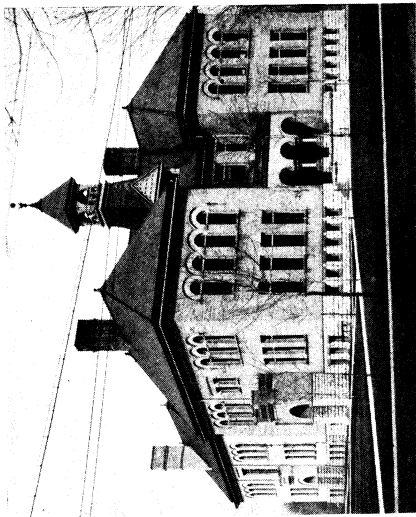
Early in April, 1851, Augustine S. Gaylord came here from Ohio and was employed as teacher of the school, which then had an average attendance of fifty-five scholars. In November of the same year Mr. Gaylord was appointed deputy county clerk, and relinquished the duties of teacher to Charles Johnson who filled the position until the Fall of 1853. At this time Saginaw City abolished the rate bill and made her school absolutely free, being one of the first towns in the State to take such action.

The new "Union School," which had been in process of erection on the south side of Court Street, at the east corner of Webster Street, was completed late in 1853. It was a two-story frame building, divided midway of its length by a hall and double flight of stairs, and contained four rooms to accommodate about two hundred pupils. For sixteen years this school was the chief temple of knowledge to the rising generation, and within its walls many of the prominent citizens of Saginaw City received their early education. In 1868 the building was removed to the Fourth Ward, where it served the same cause for a number of years. It was afterward used as a parochial school by SS. Peter and Paul Church.

The first teacher of the new Union School was Charles R. Gaylord, who received a salary of five hundred dollars for the school year of forty-four weeks. This was the highest compensation ever before given to a teacher in the Saginaw school. He was assisted by Miss Mary Rice, of Grand Blanc, and the attendance in two rooms was about one hundred and fifty scholars. In the following year the number of pupils increased to one hundred and eighty, necessitating the employment of a second assistant teacher. The studies pursued were the common English branches, natural philosophy, algebra and Latin.

Mr. Gaylord was succeeded in 1855 by P. S. Heisrodt, who conducted the schools with characteristic vigor for four years. He was followed by A. L. Bingham, a life-long and successful teacher, whose memory is held in grateful remembrance by many of our older citizens. The principals who succeeded Mr. Bingham were: Isaac Delano, 1862-63; Lucius Birdseye, 1863-65; Joseph W. Ewing, 1865-69; C. D. Heine, 1869-72; Cornelius A. Gower, 1872-76, and Cyrus B. Thomas, 1876 to 1885.

Among the well-known teachers at this period and for some years following were: Miss Sibyl C. Palmer, Miss Sarah L. Johnston, Miss Josephine E. Johnston, Miss M. J. Alexander, Mrs. Juliette Fonda and Mrs. Mary H.

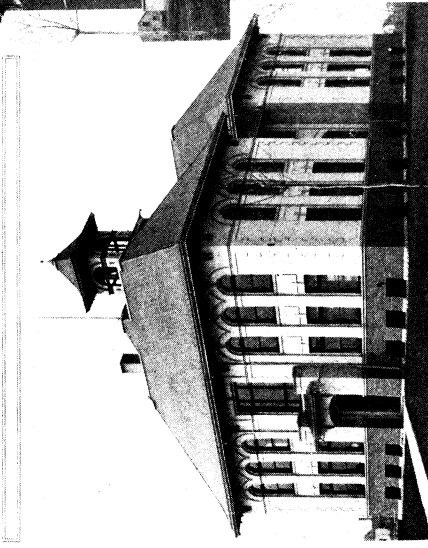
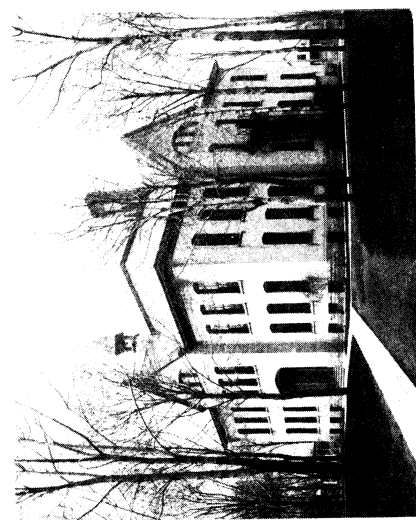


Stone  
Bliss



A GROUP OF WEST SIDE SCHOOLS

Herrig



Roeser  
Durand

Prentiss. In 1881 George Hempel was principal of the High School, and Miss Isabella Ripsom and Miss Mary E. Gelston were his assistants. The lower grades were taught by the Misses Annie and Minnie De Land, Mary E. Atwater, Fannie G. Lewis, Lucy L. Townsend and Maggie A. Durand. The German-English course, fifth and sixth grades, was conducted by Constantin Watz; and Misses Emily Barck, Florence E. Guillott and Anna Rose taught the primary grades. Other successful teachers were Misses Emily Case, Carrie Redman, Gertrude Lee, Rhoda I. Van Zile, Jessie Lee, Emma Plessner, Sadie Ketcham and Lella M. Lyon. Mr. L. M. Fetzer was instructor in German-English in the Fifth Ward School.

### Expansion of the Schools

In 1860 the population of Saginaw City was nearly eighteen hundred, and the need of additional school facilities began to be felt. Immigration to the valley during this decade was so rapid that it was difficult for those in charge of educational affairs to provide accommodations for all the children who would attend school. Every few years the school board provided for the erection of a new school, but it was not until 1868 that the demand was fully met.

The Sixth Ward school house, a two-story brick building, was erected in 1863 at a cost of three thousand dollars. Though of plain exterior, its two rooms furnished pleasant accommodations for one hundred and twenty pupils, who, after four years of primary instruction, were promoted to the Central School.

In 1865-66 a new brick school house was erected in the Third Ward, at a cost of seven thousand five hundred dollars. It was a two-story structure containing two large and well-lighted rooms, a wide hall and ample cloak room. The first four grades only were taught here, the scholars then being sent to the fifth grade in the Central School.

The First Ward School at the North End, or what was known as the Penoyer Farm, was a frame building, one story in height, was built in 1868, and enlarged in 1872. It contained three rooms in which the pupils completed six grades of school work before promotion to the Central School.

The first really imposing school building in Saginaw City was built in 1867-68, and was called the Central School, its location being on the north side of Court Street, between Harrison and Webster Streets. It was constructed of brick and stone, three stories in height, with a basement, and was crowned with a Mansard roof above which rose a lofty bell tower. This school house contained twenty-seven assembly and recitation rooms, capable of seating about eight hundred pupils. All the grades were taught here, pupils remaining twelve years in the school before graduation. Afterward, the building was provided with steam heat and thorough ventilation, when it was exceedingly well fitted for the purposes of education. Twenty years ago it was gutted by fire, rebuilt along modern ideas, newly equipped, and given the name, John Moore School.

The Fifth Ward School, occupying an entire square on Charles Street, one block north of Court, was a two-story frame building containing four rooms, and planned to seat about two hundred pupils. It was built in 1872 at a cost of five thousand dollars. Only the two primary grades were here taught, pupils being transferred at the end of the second year to the Central School.

In 1870, when the population of the city had reached seven thousand five hundred, the official school census showed twenty-one hundred children of school age (from five to twenty-one years), and the number of teachers employed was twenty-five. The total enrollment for that year was four-

teen hundred, and the average daily attendance was about eight hundred. Ten years later the population had increased to ten thousand six hundred, and the teachers numbered thirty-five, including Superintendent Thomas and special teachers in penmanship, drawing and music. The total enrollment of pupils was seventeen hundred and sixty-seven, and the average daily attendance for the year was twelve hundred and thirty-three.

### **The Union School District**

By a special enactment of the Michigan Legislature in 1865, the Union School District was organized, and put under the exclusive control of a school board of six trustees. Under this special act the schools were carefully reorganized with three departments—primary, grammar and high school. Each of these departments covered four years, and a course of study was prescribed for the twelve years. The first class to complete the course graduated from the high school in 1870, and was composed of ten scholars, four boys and six girls.

During these years the services of several public-spirited citizens, who gave time and attention to promote the advancement of learning, stand out boldly. Such services were rendered, as a rule, without adequate reward or appreciation, unless the consciousness of doing a good work may be counted compensation. In the earlier years Hiram L. Miller, Dr. Davis, Jabez Sutherland and Dr. M. C. T. Plessner were conspicuous. Later, John Moore, William H. Sweet, Benton Hanchett, Jay Smith, Dr. I. N. Smith, Dr. J. H. Jerome and D. B. Ketcham took an active and honorable part. In 1881 the school board was composed of David H. Jerome, president; Otto Roeser, secretary; George L. Burrows, treasurer; and the other trustees were D. L. C. Eaton, A. T. Bliss and A. W. Achard.

In June, 1880, a committee of the Faculty of the University of Michigan, invited by the school board, visited the schools, and carefully examined into their organization and the methods and thoroughness of the instruction given. As a result the school was at once recognized as a preparatory department of the University, and its graduates of 1880 were admitted to the University classes without examination at Ann Arbor.

### **Modern School Buildings**

In the last thirty years great progress has been made in providing proper and adequate facilities for education, and particularly in the erection of new and modern school buildings in convenient locations. The old frame structures, in which many of our citizens prominent in business and social circles, received their early training, have gradually been replaced by buildings of brick and stone, equipped with the latest and best appliances for training the youthful mind. Enlargement and improvement of these earlier school buildings is constantly going on, to keep pace with the increasing demands for space and better facilities. In 1915 the Union School District comprised ten modern schools, valued with their equipment at half a million dollars, in which convenience for students and teachers, and sanitary arrangements are prominent features.

The John Moore School, very properly named after an honored citizen, who was a member of the first board of trustees of the Union School District, and who served many years after, is a modern brick structure erected on the foundation of the old Central School. It contains sixteen school rooms and the well furnished and equipped offices of the school board, which meets every month, all the business of the district being transacted through a competent clerical force under the direction of Arthur D. Bate. German is taught in eight grades in this school.





THE JOHN MOORE SCHOOL

The Stone School, named after Farnum C. Stone who served the Union School District as treasurer for many years, is located at the corner of State and Stone Streets. It is a modern brick building containing sixteen class rooms, office of the principal, teachers' room, and also a room equipped with the necessary materials for first help in sick cases. The eight grammar grades are taught in this school, the blackboards being graded.

The Bliss School, named after Aaron T. Bliss who was president of the board for a number of years, is located at Bond and Bristol Streets. This is also a modern brick structure containing eight class rooms in which the first seven grades are taught.

The Herig School is named after Dr. E. A. Herig, who for thirteen years was a member of the board, holding various offices and was chairman of the committee on teachers. This school is a substantial brick building completed in September, 1907, and has eight class rooms, ante-rooms, sanitary wardrobes, graded blackboards and other modern appliances in school house architecture. The first six grades, including German, are taught in this school.

The Otto Roeser School, named after a prominent citizen who served the school district as secretary for many years, is a brick building remodeled with all modern appliances, and with heating and sanitary arrangements well carried out. There are eight class rooms in which the first six grades are taught, including German in the first and second.

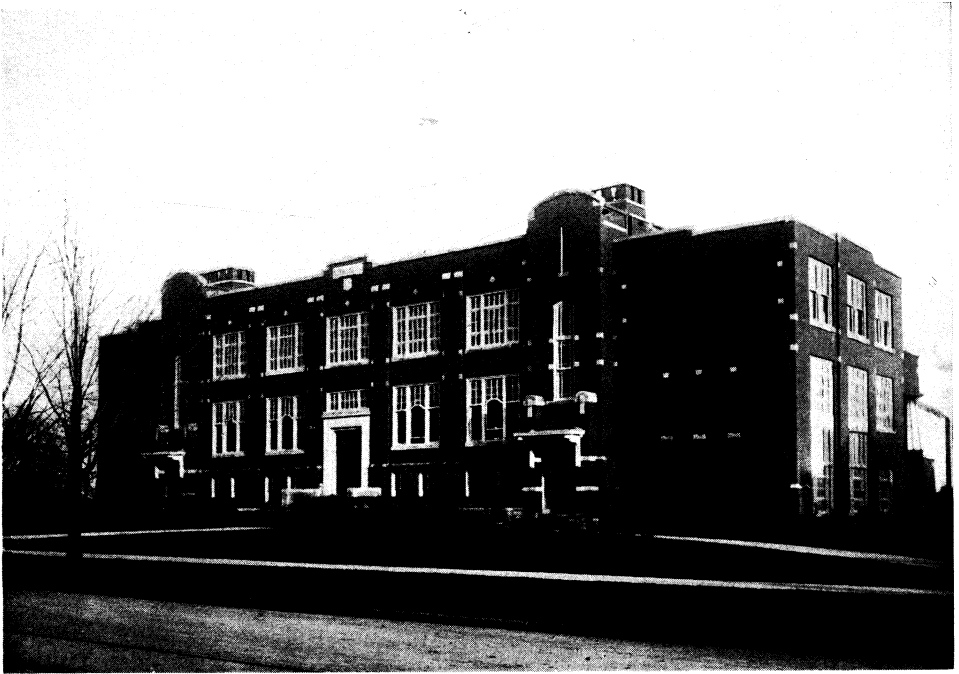
The Williams School, named in honor of the family of Gardner D. Williams, one of the early pioneers in this section, is situated at the corner

of Harrison and Williams Streets. It is a two-story brick building, and until recently four grades were taught by two teachers, but is not now in use.

The Jerome School, named after David H. Jerome, one time governor of Michigan, is situated at the corner of Harrison and Dearborn Streets. It is a modern brick structure with all sanitary arrangements, and contains eight rooms in which the first seven grades are taught.

The Durand School, situated at the corner of Grout and Joslyn Streets, is named after a long-time president of the board, Lorenzo T. Durand, in honor of his faithful and efficient service. This school, which is modern in every respect, was erected in 1904 and enlarged in 1915, and has sixteen rooms, principal's office, teachers' room, graded blackboards and other conveniences. German is included in the courses of study in this school.

The Arthur Hill High School, in which is the office of the superintendent of schools, is situated at the corner of Court and Harrison Streets, and is a modern building in every respect and perfectly equipped. Three complete laboratories, chemical, physical and biological, render valuable and indispensable aid to the students in science. There are full courses in German, French, Latin and English, and a well-equipped business department prepares students for commercial work. The County Normal Training School, which prepares teachers for county schools, is also in this building. The high school is affiliated with a long list of universities and colleges, at which the graduates are accepted without examination, on presentation of their diplomas. The school is named after our distinguished citizen, Arthur Hill, who in 1893 established four scholarships at the University of Michigan. One is awarded each year to the graduate student standing highest in his work during the senior year, and is valued at one thousand dollars.



THE ARTHUR HILL TRADE SCHOOL

### The Arthur Hill Trade School

Mr. Hill's efforts in matters educational in his home city did not end with his gift of scholarships. There was in his mind, as a part of our common school system, the need for the trade or vocational school where boys and girls could acquire something to aid them by training the hand and eye as well as cultivating the mind, to better equip themselves for work with the hands, and that it was desirable that they should acquire that knowledge during the school age rather than through apprenticeships after leaving school. Desiring to have this broader field entered at an early day, he bequeathed to the Union School District the sum of two hundred thousand dollars for establishing an industrial school. Seventy-five thousand was to be set aside as a permanent endowment toward the support and maintenance of the school, and the remainder to be used for the purchase of a site and the erection and furnishing of the school building.

The courses of study to be taught in the trade school and the equipment to be used were in a general way determined before the plans for the building were considered, the intention being to provide a thoroughly practical plant and one economical to operate. Preliminary work in connection with securing the site, which is on the east side of South Michigan Avenue at Mackinaw Street, was begun early in 1911, and the building was completed and transferred to the Union School District, September 23, 1913.

The school building was designed as a shop, but it also contains the necessary class rooms, library, drafting room, laboratory, exhibition space and administration quarters. The shops are centered about the power plant, in which are installed many types of stationary and marine engines, also electrical equipment for use in producing light and power for the building. All this is valuable for demonstration to the students of the school. There are also various types of machine tools, forges and pattern-making equipment, all of which are of use in courses of training common to stationary, marine and electrical engineering, or for special instruction and practice.

The building trades, such as carpentry, bricklaying and plumbing are accommodated in shops designed especially for handiwork, and are equipped with the usual tools and appliances used in actual practice. There are also courses in elementary forestry, machine sewing, dressmaking, millinery, novelty work, drawing, trade mechanics, industrial history and English.

As the school is for those who through choice or necessity elect to make their living through industrial and trade pursuits, in order to be of the greatest service to the community, there are, in addition to a day school, a continuation and a night school. The continuation school is intended to give boys and girls between fourteen and eighteen years of age, who are already engaged in a trade, an opportunity to complete their general school education, and also to improve their theoretical and practical knowledge of their trade. The night school is to help men and women engaged in a vocation to better their condition by increasing their knowledge and skill.

In order to meet these conditions the school is kept open all the year round, and every day from eight to eleven-thirty in the morning, from one to three-thirty, from four to six, in the afternoon, and from seven to nine in the evening. Saturdays the school closes at noon; and holidays are observed according to law.

The instructors for the trade work are men and women who have been engaged in practical work, specialists in their particular line, men of broad training, who know the requirements in the world of trade and industry, and who are able to appreciate what is best for the students. All cultural

subjects taught in the school are closely correlated with the vocation studied, and are taught by regular teachers who understand the boys in their period of adolescence.

The aim of this school is in harmony with and is the same as the general aim of all education; but the specific aim is the development of trade efficiency and love of work, and with this the cultivation of those virtues which effectiveness of effort and love of work immediately call forth: conscientiousness, diligence, perseverance, responsibility, self-restraint and dedication to an energetic life. In addition to filling its purpose as an educational institution, the distinctive character of the gift as executed is a fitting memorial to Arthur Hill, whose interest and service were of such great benefit to the public schools of his home city.

Mr. Hill was a man of broad culture, of exceptional vigor and ability, and was a philanthropist and philosopher. Notwithstanding his various activities he yet found time for extensive travel in America, Europe and Asia. He occupied many positions of public trust and made many gifts to public institutions, particularly of educational character. He gave to the University of Michigan, from which he graduated in 1865, a farm for forestry purposes, also a beautiful bronze bas-relief of President Angell, now in Memorial Hall, the work of the well-known sculptor Karl Bitter; and he left the university by his will a fund for the building of a much needed Auditorium, which was completed in 1914.

He served upon the school board of Saginaw City for six years, most of which time he was its president. In 1901 he became a regent of the University of Michigan, which office he held at the time of his death, December 6, 1909. Taking a broad view of education, he was a firm believer in our free public schools, and sought in every way to broaden their scope to meet the changing needs of the age.

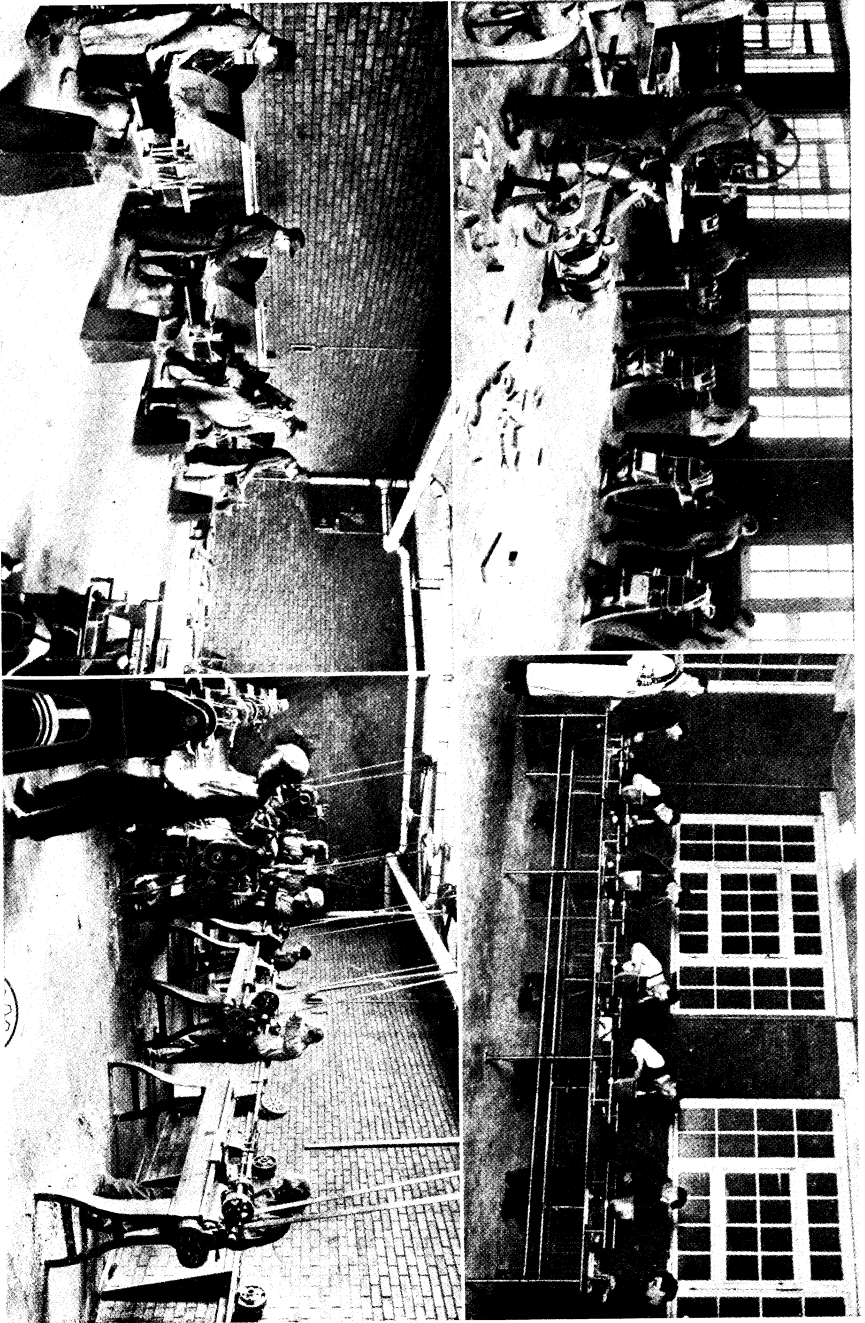
The members of the board of the Union School District in 1915 were: Lorenzo T. Durand, president; Ernest A. Snow, vice-president; E. D. Church, treasurer; Charles A. Khuen, secretary; and Dr. E. E. Curtis and Harker W. Jackson.

In 1914-15 the total enrollment of pupils was thirty-eight hundred and sixty-three, and the daily attendance was thirty-one hundred and thirty-six; and the number of teachers was one hundred and nine.

### **The First Schools at East Saginaw**

The history of the schools of East Saginaw commenced with the efforts of the early settlers to build a city, which was coincident with the clearing away of the forest on Hoyt's Plat begun in the Spring of 1850. The territory embraced within the limits of the little settlement was a part of the Township of Buena Vista, and it was by authority of the township board that Morgan L. Gage, director, engaged Dr. C. T. Disbrow to teach a school at his residence. This was a plain board house which stood on the north-east corner of Washington and Emerson Streets; and the school sessions were held in the upper story. Years after the house was remodeled and enlarged after the style of a "Gothic Cottage," and became the home of A. W. McCormick. It was an interesting landmark of this part of town, but was torn down about 1892 to make way for contemplated railroad improvements. The site is now occupied by the Michigan Central Railroad station.

The pioneer children came flocking to this school faster than they could be cared for; and on March 10, 1851, School District No. 1, of the Township of Buena Vista, was duly organized, and a call issued for the first primary



SOME OF THE SHOPS IN THE HILL TRADE SCHOOL

Pattern Making  
Forge Shop

Plumbing  
Machine Shop



ARTHUR HILL

Honored Citizens Who Have Done Much for the Cause of Education in Sagshaw



WELLINGTON R. BURT

school meeting to be held on the fifteenth. At this meeting of the qualified voters of the district, D. W. Norton was chosen director, J. T. Calkins, moderator, and C. G. Persons, assessor. From the minutes of this meeting we learn that the district officers were empowered "to make such arrangements as they think best for a school this season," and to carry out this purpose a resolution was passed "that forty dollars be raised by tax to provide for a suitable room for the school," and in addition "twenty dollars for purchasing globes, outline maps and other apparatus for the use of the school."

Under these provisions a rough board shanty was built on the site of the Bancroft House, and Miss Carrie Ingersoll, sister of Mrs. C. T. Disbrow, was engaged as teacher. The attendance at this school varied from twenty to twenty-five pupils. At this time not more than six blocks of land had been cleared out of the dense forest, which covered the site of the infant settlement. But the progress under the able management of the Hoyts was rapid, and the development of the schools kept pace with it.

Early in 1852 Truman B. Fox, the pioneer historian of Saginaw Valley, established a select school in a small building which stood on the corner of Water and Hoyt Streets. The whole number of pupils, he records, was about eighty about whom many pleasant memories were associated in his mind, with those days. During recess the children would gather wild flowers that grew abundantly in the green woods, within a few rods of the school house door, and bring them as peace offerings to their teacher, for those who happened to be a little tardy in coming to the call of the bell.

#### **Building the Union School, or "Academy"**

Among the other provisions of the primary school meeting was one for raising by tax of two thousand dollars for the purpose of building a school house within the district; and a committee, composed of Curtis Emerson, Morgan L. Gage and Norman Little, was appointed to select a site for it. After due consideration of this matter the committee reported that Alfred M. Hoyt and Curtis Emerson had offered to donate the block bounded by Jefferson, Emerson, Cass and Hoyt Streets, for school purposes. This liberal offer of public-spirited men was thereupon accepted, and upon the ground which is now the site of the Hoyt School was erected the first school house in East Saginaw, the forerunner of our splendid school system.

At a school meeting held May 3, 1851, a plan of the new school building was presented by J. E. Voorhees, upon which the lowest estimate of cost was two thousand six hundred dollars. This amount being largely in excess of the tax levied for the purpose, the officials were in a dilemma until Norman Little, with characteristic liberality, offered to erect the building and finish it for two thousand five hundred dollars, taking the tax of two thousand dollars when collected, and a mortgage on the building for five hundred, payable in five years, in equal annual payments. This offer was unanimously accepted by the inhabitants of the new settlement, who displayed a commendable zeal and promptitude in providing for the education of their children.

A contract with Mr. Little having been entered into, the work of assembling the material and erecting the building was at once begun, and it was completed in the Summer of 1852. Standing, as it did, on the highest ground in the township, it was conspicuous for its stately appearance, and soon became known as "The Academy." The pioneers who are still living remember it as a commodious, square building, resting on a stone foundation, and containing on the first floor two large rooms, one on each side of a broad hall. On the upper floor was one large room, or hall, with

recitation room and wardrobe annexed. It was used as a town hall, and for church services, all religious denominations in the absence of church organizations, irrespective of creed or church forms, worshipping together.

At this time the only means of crossing the bayou, which lay west of the school and extended in both directions far beyond the limits of the settlement, was by a rude foot-bridge at Hoyt Street, and a plank walk connected it with Washington Street. When water filled the bayou, both teachers and scholars who lived upon the opposite side (and very few persons then lived east of it), had to be ferried over, or make a detour of Genesee Plank Road, which was then the only team bridge crossing the bayou. There was quite a hill from the west side of the school house to the margin of the bayou, and in winter this was the coasting ground for the boys and girls, and the bayou afforded fine skating all the way to Genesee Plank Road. Their playground was virtually unlimited, as the beautiful forest of Maple, Oak, Beech and Elm, approached to the east side of Jefferson Street.

### The Pioneer Teachers of the "Academy"

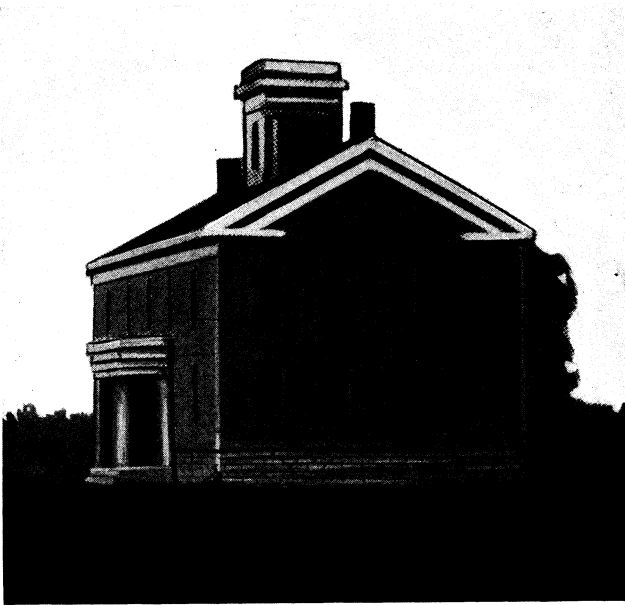
Upon the completion of the "Academy" a competent teacher from the East was engaged as principal, and Miss Mary Rice, a teacher in the Saginaw City school, was employed as assistant at a salary of seven dollars a week. When the time came for the opening of the new school, the principal failed to appear, thereupon Miss Rice assumed the duties of that position "without change of salary." In an early report of the Board of Education, 1873, page 43, Miss Rice recounts her experience:

"I could see the beautiful new school from my room at the Webster House in Saginaw City. Looking over toward it the morning I was to commence my duties there, and remembering that, instead of the comparatively easy work of assistant, I was to fulfill the more arduous task of Principal, I felt over-awed and timid. 'I never can do it,' I was beginning to sigh, when courage came back saying, 'Yes, you can.' So I went over resolved to be equal to my work, and to give myself entirely to it. The first day I was alone with a house full of pupils, large and small, untaught and advanced, all sorts and all sizes.

"At my suggestion Mr. Morgan L. Gage, Director, secured the services of Miss Charlotte Messer (Mrs. Norman L. Miller, of Saginaw City), who was then teaching a private school there. After classifying our scholars so that she had about sixty primaries, I was still left with as many as the upper room would seat. So Miss Clara Dean, of Pine Run, was engaged as my assistant. Every boat landing at the wharf brought to the town new comers, and of children there was a fair share. Miss Messer's room was soon crowded to the utmost, and Miss Nellie Little (Mrs. Derby) was called to assist her. Our salaries were moderate, ranging from four to seven dollars a week, and were paid monthly.

"We had 'company' almost every day and it encouraged and stimulated us greatly. It was not always easy to get to the school house. Jefferson Street, toward the north, was marked by a line of stumps, west was the bayou, and east and south dense woods. Such splendid woods! Full of mosquitoes they were, too. They came in clouds, if not thick enough to darken the air, yet thick enough to oblige us to build 'smudges' in daytime. We had a floating bridge over the bayou. Often when Miss Messer and I were crossing, our affectionate pupils would throng around us, and the bridge would sink two, three or six inches in water, so we often taught all day with wet feet. But we were young, strong and happy, and neither feared or minded a cold much."





THE OLD "ACADEMY"

The First School House in East Saginaw, Erected on the Site of the Hoyt School

At the end of this pleasant school year, in the Spring of 1853, an exhibition and picnic was held. It was no easy task to bring to the school house such things as were needful for the occasion. James L. Webber, however, undertook to draw the lumber and to construct the seats for the visitors in the "grove" near the school house. The reader should not underrate such an effort made more than sixty years ago. Instead of driving due south as he could today, on well paved streets, he had to drive north, then east on the plank road, and south wherever he could find solid ground for his team and a passage through stumps and brush. But the exhibition came off in style, according to the report, and "there were refreshments and speeches, varying with declamations and music." An essay was read by Chauncey Gage, which received high commendatory notice, and the exercises were closed with an address delivered by William L. Webber.

The *Weekly Enterprise* of September 21, 1853, announced the opening of school under the guidance of J. O. Selden, principal, assisted by Misses Emeline and Clara Dean. The school attendance for this year was two hundred; and the school was in session seven months, and the whole amount paid to teachers was four hundred and eighty dollars. Besides the common English branches, physiology, philosophy, botany, algebra, bookkeeping and vocal music, were taught in the school.

School opened in the Fall of 1854 with J. C. Warner as principal and Miss Rice as assistant. He was a graduate of Yale and eminently qualified for his position, but his health was feeble and he died in September of the following year. His successor was Dr. R. H. Steele, who remained only a short time, being dismissed by resolution of the board. Other teachers at this period were: Misses Harriet Weller, Helen King, E. R. Burt, Clark, Parker, Jennie Frey, and Mrs. C. E. Stearns.

### Alonzo L. Bingham in Charge

On December 21, 1855, Alonzo L. Bingham took charge of the school, and thereafter it was "in successful operation," the new principal giving "general satisfaction." At the close of the winter term in 1856 there was a thorough examination of the school, to which the public was invited by Mr. Bingham. The schools in those days commanded a fair share of public attention, and the Union School is mentioned as having formed a part of the procession on the Fourth of July, 1857. The manner of equipping the school with books is shown by the calling of a meeting on September 28, for the purpose of voting a tax in order to procure a Webster's Dictionary. The school census of 1857 gives the number of children of school age (between four and eighteen years), as six hundred and forty-six, but the number in attendance is not given.

Mr. Bingham continued as principal of the school until 1860. His work marked a new era, and gave a tone and discipline to the primitive school that had before been lacking. During the Civil War he served with honor, with the rank of Captain, and was present at the Wilderness, Spottsylvania and Petersburg, and returned, scarred by wounds, to live out a life of usefulness, and receive in death, which occurred in January, 1893, the tribute of our leading citizens.

The moderators of School District No. 1—Township of Buena Vista, from 1851 to 1853 were: J. T. Calkins, H. B. Hubbard, Morgan L. Gage, L. H. Eastman, R. C. Newton, Chester B. Jones, W. H. Warner, Henry Woodruff and J. S. Curtis; and the directors were: D. W. Newton, J. E. Voorheis, Morgan L. Gage, William L. Webber, D. W. C. Gage, Charles T. Disbrow and George W. Merrill.

### Organization of Board of Education

In February, 1859, an act to incorporate the Board of Education of the City of East Saginaw was approved by the Legislature, and the first Board of Education was organized March 22, a date which marks a distinctive period in the growth of our school system. These were changeful and stormy times, after the quiet progress of the preceding four years, and the board was embarrassed by the want of funds, and discouraged by the ill success of so many principals, following the able administration of Mr. Bingham. The fall term of 1860 began with D. B. Sturgis as principal, and four women teachers, but the total number of pupils enrolled was only two hundred and ninety-eight, and an average daily attendance of one hundred and seventy-five. Mr. Sturgis tried the experiment of "moral suasion," with the usual result, of that time, that he left at the end of the year.

Beginning with March 1, 1860, the proceedings of the board were regularly published, Perry Joslin contracting to do this work for twenty-five dollars a year. From these proceedings it appears that the fall term of 1861 opened with C. J. Myers, a cultured man, of pleasing manner, as principal; and he taught the school successfully until the end of the spring term of 1865. Two of his assistants were Miss Mary Rice, the first teacher of the "Academy," and Miss M. Gillett who also achieved an enviable reputation as a popular teacher.

At a special meeting of the board on March 13, 1862, occurred an interesting and novel event. This was the first "annual report" ever made to the board by its president. For sound judgment, admirable arrangement, keen insight, and comprehensive understanding of what the schools had done, and what they should do in the future, this report has not been surpassed. It was made by John J. Wheeler, and marked him as an intelligent

and public spirited citizen, even if no other record of his work could be found. From the report we glean the fact that the number of children in the city of school age was eight hundred and fifty-one; the number of pupils enrolled was four hundred and fifty-nine, and the school rooms could properly accommodate only two hundred and sixty. As some of the citizens had expressed the opinion that "the schools cost too much," the report showed that the annual cost per pupil, taking the average daily attendance as a basis, was eight dollars and seventy-seven cents, which was very much less than the cost in many other cities.

### Extension of the School System

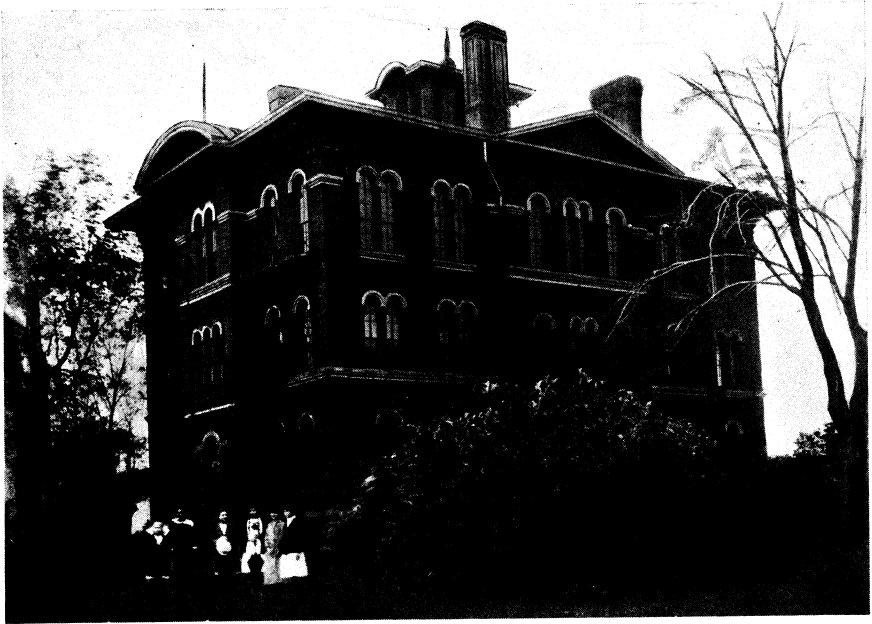
As early as 1857 the "First Ward" school house, a small frame building of "cottage" style, was built near the site of the present Crary School, on Warren Avenue. In those days it had the name of being a very hard school. Eleven years later it was replaced with a two-story brick school house, containing four rooms with two hundred and sixty-five sittings. This building was afterward enlarged by the addition of four class rooms, to accommodate the demands of this growing section of the city, and is still in use.

About 1863 the board purchased a site for a school on German Street, between Clay and Rockwell (Park and Second), on which was a large, barn-like unpainted house, containing two large, poorly furnished rooms. It was known as the "Old Tin Shop" school, the building in an earlier day having been used for that purpose. To meet the growing needs of the schools the board in 1866 built on this site a substantial brick building, which soon became known as the Central School. This school contained seven large rooms and accommodated five hundred and ten scholars. The cost of the structure was forty thousand dollars, a large expenditure for educational facilities in those days. For a number of years this was the largest school in the city, seven departments being conducted — the High School, Grammar, Intermediate, and four primary grades.

The first principal of the Central School was William S. Tennant, afterward circuit judge, who had charge from April to July, 1866. He was succeeded by Professor Joseph Estabrook, under whose superintendency, covering a period of five years, the number of teachers in the four schools increased from sixteen to thirty-two. An important event was the incorporation, in 1870, of the German schools with the public schools. The "Germania School," a three-story brick structure, was built, but not completed, by the Germania Society in 1868. English and German were taught in this school by teachers employed by the society, but in the year stated it passed under the control of the Board of Education, on the condition that instruction in German be continued.

At this time the number of teachers employed by the society was three—two German teachers and one English—and the number of pupils enrolled was below one hundred. The teaching of German in the lower grades, at first confined to this school, increased until in 1893 the number of pupils who received primary German instruction was about eleven hundred. This department then required twelve teachers, one of whom, L. J. A. Ibershoff, acted as supervising principal. During the twenty-two years intervening, Mr. Ibershoff has served faithfully as principal of this school, which is one of the distinctive features of our school system. The German schools are graded and taught in the same manner as are the other public schools in which English branches alone are taught.

It is not needful to here enlarge upon Professor Estabrook's work in connection with our schools, his career belonging rather to the history of the State. In July, 1871, he was succeeded by Professor H. S. Tarbell, who



THE OLD CENTRAL SCHOOL, ERECTED IN 1866

remained with the board until the close of the school year of 1877. During his efficient superintendency several important changes occurred, including the incorporation of the South Saginaw schools with those of the city. One of the principal problems with which the board had to deal at this time was that of providing sufficient room for the increasing number of pupils who desired to enter school, but it was solved in a manner characteristic of a progressive people.

From 1870 to 1875 the extension of the school system was very rapid, not less than eight new school houses of brick and wood being built to accommodate the increasing demands of the growing city. The Potter School in the First Ward, and the Houghton School in the Third Ward, both wooden buildings of four rooms each, and containing sittings to the number of two hundred and thirty, were erected in 1870. Following these was the new Hoyt School built to replace the old "Academy," which was burned in 1871. The new school, a fine modern structure of brick, containing six rooms and sittings for three hundred and twenty-five scholars, was opened on November 11, 1872. About twenty years later this building was rebuilt and enlarged, requiring ten teachers to instruct the four hundred scholars it accommodates.

The Emerson School in the Sixth Ward, a brick building containing four rooms and accommodations for two hundred and ten pupils, was added in 1872; and the following year the Salina School, a wooden building with four rooms, was incorporated in the school system by the village of South Saginaw consolidating with East Saginaw. In 1874 the Jones School in the Fourth Ward, and the Sweet School in the Seventh Ward, were built. Both of these buildings were of brick and added nearly four hundred sittings to the former capacity of the schools. In recent years all the old wooden buildings have been replaced with large modern structures, perfectly furnished and equipped with the best appurtenances for the training of the youthful mind.

### Professor Tarbell's Unique Action

In 1874 the Board of Education made a contract with Professor Tarbell for three years service at three thousand dollars a year; and two years later, when the city passed through a period of financial depression, he sent the following communication to the board:

"In recognition of the importance of making the burdens of the taxpayers as light as possible, and in hope that a concession on my part may aid in maintaining the several departments of the schools unchanged, and the salaries of the teachers untouched, I hereby suggest and consent that the sum of twenty-five hundred dollars only for the superintendent be included in the estimates for the coming year."

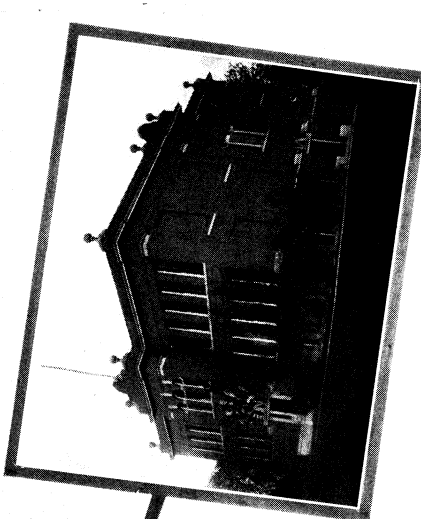
This is the first, and probably the only, case upon the records of a man's salary being reduced at *his own suggestion*.

The Board of Education which, during this period of expansion, directed the improvements and additions to the school system of East Saginaw, was composed of some of the leading men of the city, and deserve honorable mention in this connection. In 1868 the members of the board were: Edwin Aiken, president; A. P. Brewer, John S. Estabrook, C. O. Garrison; George W. Merrill, Leander Simoneau, inspectors; and George Maurer, secretary. The presidents of the board were: W. L. P. Little, 1859; W. J. Bartow, 1860; John J. Wheeler, 1861-62-64-65; John B. Dillingham, 1863; Edwin Burt, 1866-67; Edwin Aiken, 1868; George C. Warner, 1869-70; Charles E. Doughty, 1871; George W. Morley, 1872; Chester B. Jones, 1873 to 1875; Henry M. Youmans, 1876 to 1878; Alex. G. Anderson, 1879; Edwin Saunders, 1880 to 1882.

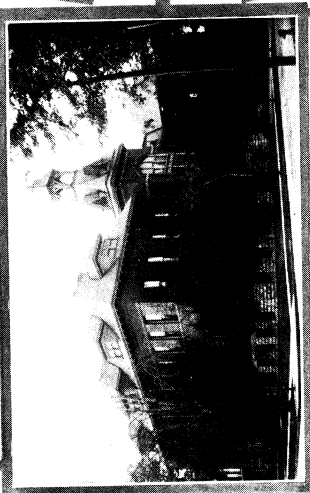
Mr. Tarbell's successor was Professor J. C. Jones, the principal events of whose superintendency were the establishing of the Training School for teachers; the erection of a new High School building in 1880; and the inauguration of the free text-book system in the Fall of 1885. While the necessary preparation for adopting the free text-book system was made under the supervision of Professor Jones, the details of its execution were carried out by Professor C. B. Thomas, he having been called to take charge of the schools on the resignation of Mr. Jones, in 1885. Probably no one measure ever adopted by the board has been productive of more beneficial results than this, and the example of Saginaw has since been followed by the principal cities of Michigan.

The new High School which stands at the corner of Warren Avenue and Millard Street, was originally an eleven room, two-story brick building, in which but three rooms were used for assembling pupils, the others being used as recitation rooms. It was heated by hot air coal furnaces, a marked advance over the old method of heating the schools by wood and coal stoves; and it had sittings for two hundred and eighty-two scholars. In 1893 this building was remodeled and enlarged at a cost of thirty-two thousand dollars, increasing the capacity to six hundred pupils, and providing a chemical laboratory, a physical laboratory, and an assembly hall with gallery.

Professor Thomas continued as head of the schools until late in 1890, being succeeded by Professor C. N. Kendall, and he by A. S. Whitney. From 1884 to 1890 the Hoyt, the Emerson, the Potter, and the Jones schools were all replaced with modern school buildings, built of brick, and equipped with the most approved systems of heating and ventilating. One entirely new school, the Washington, was built at South Saginaw; and modern methods of heating and ventilating applied to all the other schools. In more recent years the Longfellow School, and the new Salina School, both brick structures perfectly equipped, have been added to the school system.

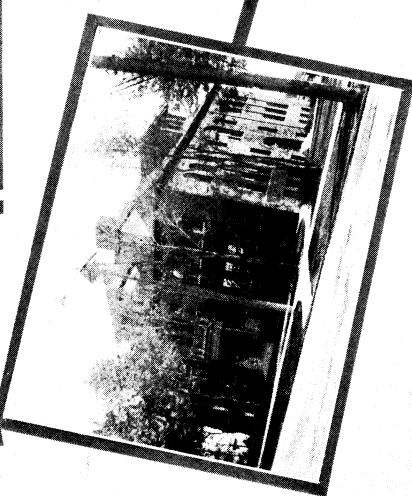


Salina  
Emerson



A GROUP OF EAST SIDE SCHOOLS

Houghton  
High  
Hoyt



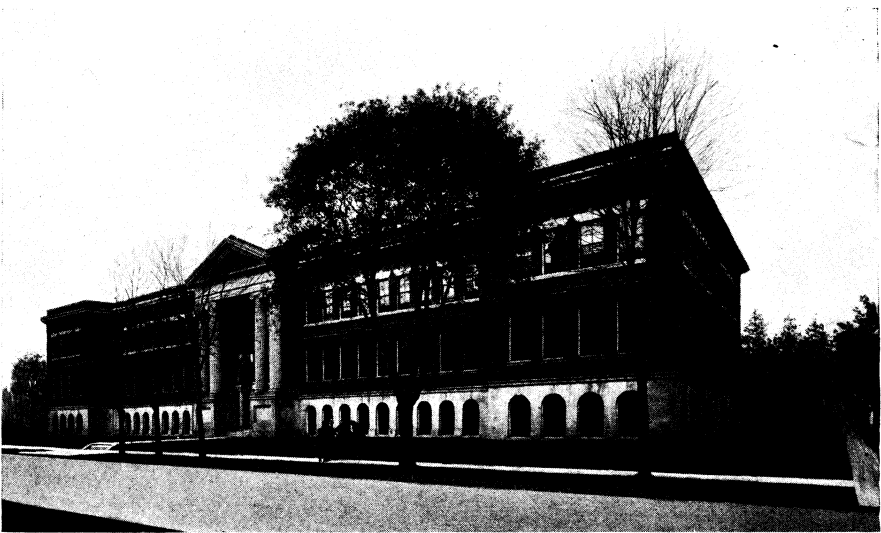
Potter  
Longfellow

Under Mr. Kendall's supervision the Kindergarten was made a part of our school system, being gradually extended to the various schools of the city. Besides maintaining the work of all departments at the high standard attained by able instructors, special attention was then being directed to physical and moral training. Thus, by reaching out to form and develop the three-fold nature of the child; the moral, the intellectual, and the physical, it was believed that the schools would, in a wider sense than ever before, be the nurseries of good citizenship.

### The Burt Manual Training School

Following advanced ideas, the course of study in our schools aims to be of such a practical character as to fit its students, so far as possible, for the actual work of life. Besides the time-honored subjects of instruction, there are modern enrichments of the course of study in drawing, music, nature study and manual training, with competent supervisors at the head of each department. The Saginaw High School with its splendid equipment, is particularly strong in its physical, chemical and biological laboratories, and its library is well supplied with needful reference books. Since 1879 this school has enjoyed the privilege of entering its graduate students in the University of Michigan without examination.

In its facilities for manual training — the teaching of trades and vocational occupations, the Saginaw High School is in a fortunate position. Through the noble generosity of Wellington R. Burt, the city schools possess a manual training department of unusual excellence. Imbued with the idea of affording a practical course of helpful studies to advanced pupils, Mr. Burt was the forerunner of manual training in the valley. As a result of his interest in the cause of practical education for the young, of all classes and creeds, and the contribution of a fund of about two hundred thousand dollars, there was opened in September, 1905, the magnificent Manual Training High School, which, with its complete equipment and swimming pool, represents an investment, including the city's share, of a quarter of a million dollars. Its equipment includes machinery and tools for wood and iron work for the boys, and sewing and cooking for the girls.



THE BURT MANUAL TRAINING SCHOOL

On the first floor of the spacious building, which is built of paving brick and stone, and directly opposite the High School, are two rooms for wood-working, one for carpentry and joinery, and the other for wood turning and pattern making. In these shops thorough instruction is given in joinery and cabinet making, as well as in the use of the wood lathe, planer, drills and light tools. On this floor is also the clay modeling room, where opportunity is afforded for work in clay, a kiln for firing clay work being located in the foundry room. The foundry is thoroughly equipped for molding, also for casting in iron, lead and brass, having an iron cupola and brass furnace and a core oven. The forge shop has twenty Sturtevant down-draft forges, and the same number of one hundred and thirty pound anvils. In the machine shop are twelve lathes, including a Reed lathe with motor directly attached. There are also a Gray planer, shaper, Cincinnati milling machine, Stuart gas furnace, and Landis universal grinder.

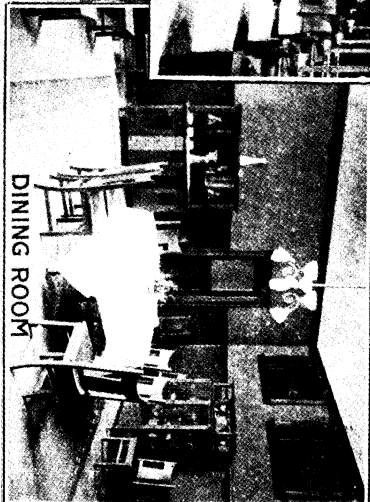
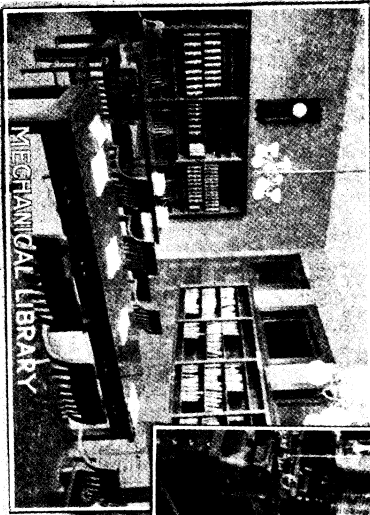
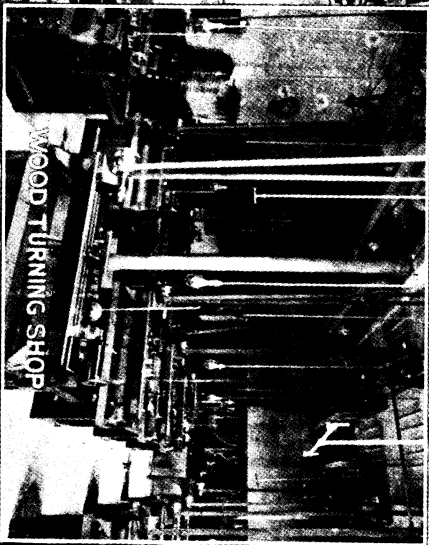
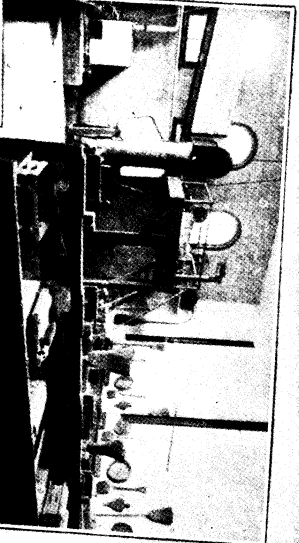
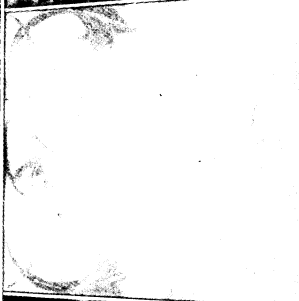
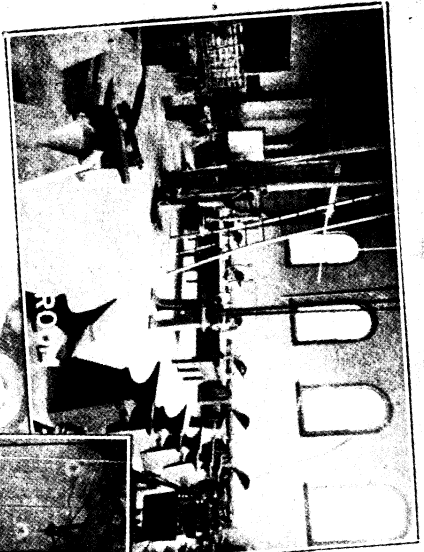
On the second floor are the two drawing rooms, one for mechanical and one for free-hand drawing, the mechanical and technical library and reading room, and the offices of E. C. Warriner, the superintendent of schools. A unique feature of this floor is the suite of rooms illustrating all the typical rooms of a house, for the teaching of domestic economy. This suite of rooms comprises a kitchen, butler's pantry, dining room, reception room and bed room. These rooms are all plainly but appropriately furnished, the bed room affording opportunity for instruction in the elements of nursing. The three sewing rooms are on the third floor and are equipped with tables, drawers, showcases, sewing machines and other appurtenances. The stenography and typewriting room and the bookkeeping department are also located on this floor.

To afford physical training of boys and girls there is a splendidly equipped gymnasium, thirty-nine by seventy-four feet in size, with locker rooms for both sexes adjoining. Connected with this popular and valuable accessory to the school by a passageway, is the bath house and swimming pool. The pool is twenty-two by sixty feet in dimensions, with water three feet deep at one end and six feet at the other. In the bath house are tub and shower baths, with a hair dryer for drying women's hair. In the swimming pool instruction is given to High School pupils, as well as to those of the seventh and eighth grades, in the art of swimming. The pool is kept open during the summer months for the benefit of school children.

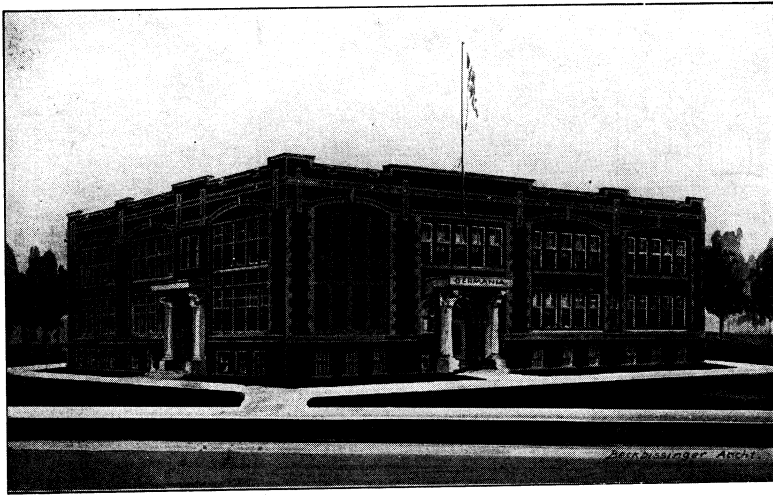
As a further adjunct to practical education, evening classes are maintained in school each winter in machine shop practice, mechanical drawing, sewing, cooking, stenography, bookkeeping and woodworking. A complete course of this important branch of study is also given in grades below the High School. In the first four grades the work is done by the regular grade teachers, under the direction of a supervisor, and consists of paper folding, weaving with raffia and yarn, and basket making with raffia and reed. In the fifth and sixth grades the work is done by two special teachers who go from school to school, visiting each of these grades once a week. The work here consists of elementary sewing for the girls and knife work for the boys. In the seventh and eighth grades there are special teachers for cooking and bench work in wood. There are two woodworking centres for the seventh and eighth grades, one at the Manual Training School, and the other at the Salina School, and two cooking centres for the girls, one at the Central School, and the other at the Washington.

The Board of Education of Saginaw (East Side), in 1915, was composed of the following members: Dr. William F. English, president; Gustav F. Oppermann, vice-president; J. Will Grant, Dr. Charles P. Stone, Frank E. Bastian, George H. Zuckerman, Hamilton Watson, Henry





INTERIOR OF BURT MANUAL TRAINING SCHOOL



THE NEW GERMANIA SCHOOL, COMPLETED IN 1914

Witters, William J. Johnson, Charles W. Thompson, John Gerhart and Bertram A. Wright. The secretary of the Board, who has served in that capacity for thirteen years, is William C. Klumpp; and the office of superintendent has been filled with marked ability by E. C. Warriner, for a period of twenty years.

During the school year of 1914-15 the total enrollment of the Saginaw, East Side, schools was five thousand and forty-four; the average number belonging was forty-two hundred and fifty-two, while the average daily attendance was forty-one hundred and thirteen. The number of teachers employed, including special teachers and supervisors, was one hundred and fifty-five. The total valuation of the fourteen school buildings, the complete equipment and appurtenances approaches a million dollars. In the school year of 1914-15 the cost of maintaining the schools was two hundred and eleven thousand five hundred dollars, including purchase of new school site, renewals, library and new books, payment of bonds, etc., which amounted in the aggregate to thirty-four thousand dollars.

### Sectarian and Parochial Schools

Besides the public schools there are a number of sectarian and parochial schools maintained by various church societies of the city. On the East Side are the Roman Catholic schools of St. Joseph's, St. Mary's, Holy Family, Holy Rosary and Sacred Heart churches, and the schools of St. John's, St. Paul's and Trinity Evangelical of the Lutheran body. On the West Side are the schools of Holy Cross and SS. Peter and Paul Roman Catholic Churches, St. Andrew's Academy, also of that body, and the Michigan Lutheran Seminary. These schools, in addition to the usual English and German branches, mathematics, history and the sciences, instruct the pupils in the strict religious tenets peculiar to their faith.

### The First Public Library

Coincident with the beginning of education in this county arose the need for books, with which to instruct the youth and to enlighten the minds of older persons. The more intelligent pioneers had brought with them to the

forest wilderness such of their books as they cared to preserve, and thus whiled away many of the dreary hours of winter. Although few in number, the books filled a niche in the life of the early settlers, and were made to do multiple service by being loaned about from house to house.

When the school under Horace S. Beach was thoroughly organized in 1836, someone conceived the idea of making a collection of such books as the owners would donate, for the purpose of founding a public library. Though their means were limited and their possessions small, their interest in education was strong, and they responded liberally. In a short space of time a carefully selected list of books was prepared, and the volumes collected and shelved in the school house, which stood near the site of the present court house.

From the dim and musty records of the past has come to light an interesting letter written the following year by Norman Little, in regard to books for the newly founded library of the Mechanics' Association. It was evidently the custom to request of newcomers a donation of books to the library, and in this particular instance the letter addressed to Daniel H. Fitzhugh, of Geneseo, Livingston County, New York, anticipated his taking up a residence here. He afterward moved his family to this valley, locating on land south of the Tittabawassee opposite Riverside Park, where he lived for many years.

Written long before the days of steel pens, fading ink and rotting paper, this letter, manifesting the enterprising spirit of the writer, comes down to us well preserved and perfectly legible. Before the invention of the paper envelope a sheet of foolscap, upon which the message was written, was made to serve a double purpose. One-half of the back of the sheet was left blank, and the sheet was so folded that this was on the outside with the flaps within. It was then sealed with wax and addressed. Postage stamps had not yet come into use, but the postage, which then was twenty-five cents, was indicated by figures placed in the upper right hand corner.

This letter of Mr. Little's has been framed with glass over both sides of the sheet, and hung in the new Butman-Fish Memorial Library on the West Side. It is a unique message of a by-gone age penned by the founder of our city and of such unusual interest that it is reproduced in facsimile.

The list of books comprising the Mechanics Library in 1837, which was included in the letter, embraced standard works of philosophy, history, biography, travel and religious subjects. There were "The Philosophy of Sleep," "Dick's Mental Illumination," "Pierre's Study of Nature," "Theory of Another Life," "Shaw's Architecture," "McIntosh's England," "History of Italy," "Henderson's Brazil," "Plutarch's Lives," and works of Johnson, Burns, Goldsmith and Sterne. "Pilgrim's Progress," "Paul and Virginia," "Gil Blas," "Gregory's Letters to His Son," were also on the list with "Irving's Works," and the novels of Bulwer, Scott and Cooper.

Other titles sound strange to devotees of present-day literature, and the contents of some books, though of deep and serious nature, would no doubt cause some merriment today. "Guide to the Thoughtful," "Treasury of Knowledge," "Spiritual Despotism," and "Hervey's Meditation" hardly fit in with modern thought and ideas, while "Mother at Home," "Father's Book," "Poor but Happy," "Beauty of Female Holiness," "Fireside Piety," "Placid Man," "Thinks I to Myself," and "Man as He is Not" are quite without the realm of good reading in this age. In all there were three hundred and ninety-one volumes in the collection, some of which are still to be found on the shelves of the West Side School Library.

Dear Sir

Saginaw City April 15. 1837

Understanding that you wish to make a donation  
of Books to the Mechanical Association of this City from  
Your Library, at their request I send you a ~~list~~  
list of Books now in the library that you may better  
judge of the selection you will make for your library  
Things move forward in this city this spring and  
specimens are favorable for large accession to our  
population the coming season. I trust you will  
go forward in your contemplated improvement  
if the statistics this season and become a  
resident of our delightful city with yourself  
family. You will perceive by the Saginaw  
Journal that the Steam Boat Gov. Marcy will  
commence her regular trips between Detroit &  
this city on the opening of navigation ~~to~~ the

I trust we shall see you early this  
at our city. Remember me to your  
Say to him the Mechanics of Saginaw  
and I am happy to see you. I am  
Yours truly  
J. M. H. H. H.

coming season  
in April &  
will be very  
books from them  
arrange table

have also three aspects "One Sloop & two Schooners  
which will be employed in the Sagway trade  
You will also see the two General Bunkers  
as papered by the Michigan Legislature Street  
You will think it advisable to become a large stockholder

Saginaw & Michig }  
Apr. 15: 1837 }

D J

Doct Paul H. Fitzhugh  
Genl  
Livingston New York

FACSIMILE OF LETTER WRITTEN BY NORMAN LITTLE IN 1837  
(The signature appears on the margin at the lower right hand corner.)

### **The Public and Union School Library**

From this small beginning made by Norman Little and others nearly eighty years ago, has been developed the useful and efficient library on the West Side. The collapse of the speculative boom in 1838 was followed by a period of extreme depression in this valley, and not until 1849 did the four or five hundred inhabitants of Saginaw City notice any indication of returning prosperity. The school and the church had struggled along miserably, and not until several years after were these institutions of our social fabric thoroughly organized. In 1857 the early collection of books, augmented by personal donations from time to time, was re-established as a public library, and eight years later when the Union School District was organized it was turned over to the first school board. Thereafter it was known as the "Public and Union School Library of Saginaw City."

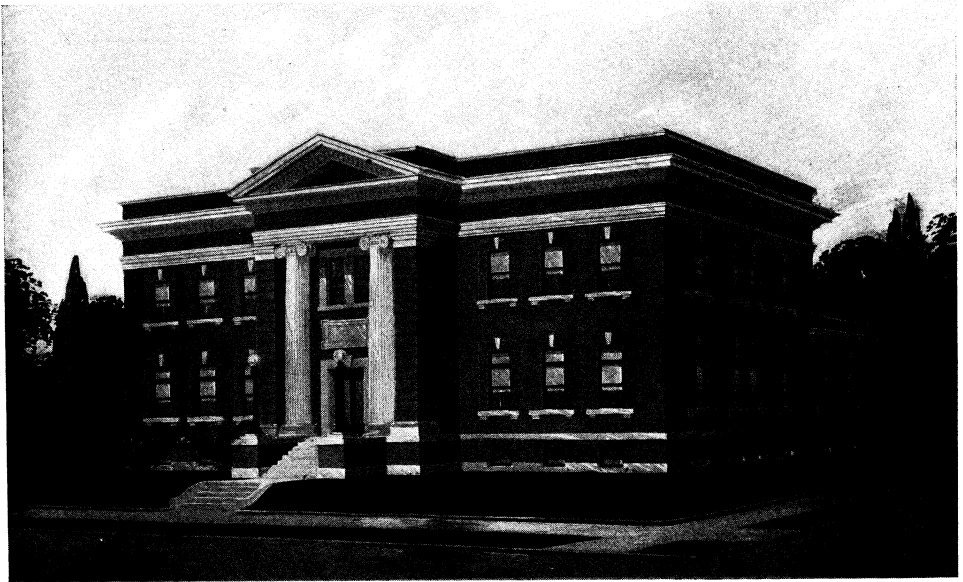
When the Central School on Court Street was completed in 1868, the library was removed to a suitable room on the first floor of that building. In the fire of 1895, which nearly destroyed the imposing old school house, the books of the library were greatly damaged by water and smoke, but all those not rendered useless were carefully dried and cleaned, and removed temporarily to a room in the High School. During the reconstruction the library was conducted there, but upon the opening of the John Moore School, which replaced the old Central, it was removed to a basement room in the new building. Although a high and well ventilated basement, some damage resulted to the books from dampness, and the library was moved in September, 1900, to the Kindergarten building in the same block. It remained there until November, 1915, when upon completion of the new Butman-Fish Memorial Library building, it was installed therein. Since September, 1899, the library has been in charge of Miss Anna Benjamin, whose ability and fitness for the position are recognized by students and citizens generally.

### **The Butman-Fish Memorial Library**

Several years ago, when the need arose for a suitable building to accommodate the Public and Union School Library, the interest and co-operation of some prominent families of the West Side were solicited to provide it. The idea was for one family to erect a library building, specially designed for present and future needs, as a memorial to those who have passed to the beyond. Among the persons of generous and philanthropic nature who were thus approached were Mrs. Myron Butman and her daughter, Mrs. Mary P. Fish. Through a life-long friendship with the librarian they knew the needs of the library, and also the possibilities of greater usefulness. After much thought and consideration they decided to provide a handsome edifice, which would stand for ages as a fitting memorial to husband and father, the late Myron Butman.

Before definite plans could be formulated and put into execution both Mrs. Butman and Mrs. Fish were stricken by death. Fortunately for the library their ideas and often expressed wishes have been duly respected by the executors of the estate, for not long after their death the sum of twenty-five thousand dollars was made available to the trustees of the Union School District, for the purpose intended. Afterward, when it became evident that this amount was insufficient to complete the structure, the sum of five thousand dollars was added to the gift.

While the total amount thus given has provided a very suitable and convenient library building, especially designed for the purpose, the needs of the future, owing to want of adequate funds, have been little considered. The sum regarded as necessary for the proper fulfillment of the project was fifty



THE BUTMAN-FISH MEMORIAL LIBRARY

thousand dollars. This amount was often named by the librarian in conference with Mrs. Butman and Mrs. Fish, on the subject, and it is believed that they fully intended to make a bequest to the library in this sum. Nevertheless, the stately building which has risen by their misdirected munificence, stands as a noble monument alike to the memory of one of Saginaw's foremost and upright citizens, and to his wife and daughter.

The new library building is conveniently and appropriately situated on the John Moore School grounds, at the corner of Harrison and Hancock Streets. Built of dark paving brick embellished by trimmings of Bedford stone, the structure presents a rather imposing appearance. Entering through the wide portico, flanked by lofty columns of the Ionic order of architecture, a vestibule and hall leads direct to the librarian's desk and book stacks. The stacks are arranged around three sides of the bay, and rise to and above a gallery which is reached by short steps conveniently placed. For both reference and circulation the library now contains about eighteen thousand volumes, including the best of current literature. On either side of the hall are spacious reading and study rooms, admirably lighted and made cheerful by huge fire places at the ends. One of these rooms is intended for the exclusive use of children and the other for adults.

From the vestibule double stairways lead to the floor above. Here was recently established a museum of prehistoric and Indian relics and antiquities of real value and interest. In the collection already assembled is the splendidly arranged group of Indian relics and curios of Mr. Fred Dustin, mention of which was made and some illustration given in the first chapter of this work. This is well worth a careful examination and study. The walls of the three rooms on this floor were designed for the hanging of paintings and other works of art, and special attention has been given to correct lighting to insure the proper effects. It is believed that eventually this division of the library will contain many public and individual groups of valuable paintings, works of art, curios and relics of a bygone age, to be handed down in proper form to posterity.

### The Public Library

Like other collections of books for public circulation in pioneer days, the Public Library of the East Side had a small and insignificant beginning. As early as May 5, 1859, a committee was appointed by the school board to consider the subject of a library, and to make a report on an ordinance for government of same. This committee reported "that the whole library of the School District No. 1 of the Township of Buena Vista belongs to this board." The clerk of the board was thereupon instructed to ascertain and report to the board "the present condition of the library and the books now absent and in whose hands, and also to make a catalog of the books now belonging to the library." Morgan L. Gage was appointed librarian to take possession of the books. On September 13, 1859, the board requested the common council to raise by tax one hundred dollars for library purposes.

Shortly after, the committee on teachers and books recommended that the library be removed to the Union School and that A. L. Bingham be appointed librarian. Evidently this was favorably acted upon, for on November 15 the committee reported that the clerk of the Township of Buena Vista had come and taken possession of the books of the library by charges thereon, and carried them off. An effort was then made to secure a settlement of the disputed ownership of the books by legal means. Meanwhile the money collected in the tax of 1859 for library purposes was diverted to other uses. In 1861 another fund of one hundred dollars was collected by tax and the purchase of books authorized. The books arrived in November, the expenditure being one hundred and ninety-one dollars; and the hours of opening, 2 to 5 on Saturday, were established.

The annual report of 1862 states that two hundred and twenty-six dollars were spent on the library, and that there were one hundred and nine volumes on the shelves. Reference was made to the fact that the Buena Vista library was estimated to be worth three hundred dollars, but apparently no settlement had been reached as to the ownership. A few months after the books had increased to one hundred and seventy-five, and the circulation for seven months was five hundred. C. K. Robinson was the librarian, but was succeeded the following year by M. H. Allard. From this small beginning made under great difficulties has sprung the large and efficient public library, which is an important factor in our educational development.

In 1872 a room in the Central School, opposite the superintendent's office, was fitted up for the library, and the library committee was authorized to make a new selection of books. Miss Louise Johnson was then appointed librarian at a salary of one hundred and fifty dollars a year, the library to be open on Wednesdays from 4 to 6 and on Saturdays from 3 to 7 o'clock. That year seven hundred and ninety dollars were spent for books, when the number of volumes increased to eleven hundred and thirty-eight. In 1874 the library was recatalogued and renumbered, and four hundred and forty-seven dollars spent for new books. It was then deemed necessary to secure larger quarters and adopt new methods to make the library more useful to the public.

With this in view a proposition was presented to the board for the purchase of the books and property of the Library Association, which occupied a building on Washington Avenue. After much discussion of the matter, the real estate consisting of the so-called "library building" with twenty feet frontage, was taken over by Christopher Palm, and on October 18, 1875, the Library Association turned over its library and furniture to the Board of Education, for the consideration of one dollar. The board then leased of Mr. Palm the second floor of his building, at a rental of one hundred and twenty dollars a year, for a period of five years, for use of the library and board



rooms. The library was then moved to the more central and convenient location, and merged with the other. The consolidation added eighteen hundred and thirty-five books to the seventeen hundred and seventy-eight volumes of the Public Library, making a total of thirty-six hundred and thirteen. Additional book shelves were provided, a catalogue recommended, and the public congratulated on possessing a "valuable library." In 1876 William L. Smith was the librarian, his salary being two hundred and fifty dollars a year.

In 1878, in order to make the library still more useful to the public, the hours of opening were extended to eleven hours a week, namely, from 3 to 5 every day except Sunday, and from 6 to 8 every evening, except Sunday and Wednesday, and from 10 to 12 on Saturday morning. Up to this time the work had been done by some teacher or other person devoting only a small portion of one or two days a week, but from now on the librarian was expected to give her whole time to the work. Mrs. Emma I. Shaw was then appointed to the position at a salary of four hundred and fifty dollars a year. In 1881 a petition was received asking for a reading room and periodicals, and, since more room was needed for the uses of the library, it was removed in January, 1882, to the second floor of the building on South Jefferson Avenue, where it has since remained. On June 18, 1879, Mrs. Susan Cole was elected librarian. The number of volumes had increased to forty-seven hundred and twenty, and the circulation to thirty-three thousand five hundred. The number of cards was thirteen hundred and sixty-five, showing that the facilities of the library were more generally enjoyed by the public.

Mrs. Cole served as librarian until July 1, 1886, when she was succeeded by Mrs. Lucy E. Houghton who continued in the position for a period of twenty-five years. During her efficient administration the library expanded greatly, so that at the time she relinquished her duties the number of volumes had increased four fold, and the library become correspondingly more useful. On July 1, 1911, Miss Mary E. Dow assumed charge of the library, and in a relatively short period has greatly increased its usefulness. The library in



INTERIOR OF PUBLIC LIBRARY, EAST SIDE

1915 contained twenty thousand volumes, and the circulation reached eighty-two thousand. In that year the second floor of the building was given over entirely to the use of the library, and remodeled to meet the growing needs of the time.

The front is entirely of glass from floor to ceiling, affording an abundance of light; and the book stacks are arranged so as to be easily accessible to persons wishing to browse among the books. Besides the reading and study room at the front, there is a children's section supplied with low tables and chairs, and shelving with separate catalogue for juvenile books. There is also a mechanical branch in the Manual Training School, and books are distributed from three other schools. The library has a yearly income of about five thousand dollars, but after the usual expenses are deducted only a small sum — about three or four hundred dollars — remains for the purchase of books. This small amount does only meager service in supplying new books from the ever increasing literature of the age.

### The Hoyt Public Library

Approaching the end of an honorable and successful life, Jesse Hoyt summoned to his home in New York City his counsel, Abraham Van Santvoord, and his Michigan attorney, William L. Webber, in order to arrange for the preparation of his will. His large properties and interest in Michigan necessitated the presence and advice of someone familiar with the laws of that State. During the conference and while the Michigan properties were under discussion Mr. Hoyt expressed his deep interest in Saginaw and his desire to do something for that city in permanent form which should be an evidence of his affection and a lasting token of his good will towards its people.

The gift of Hoyt Park to the city had been considered and the establishment of a library for the benefit and free use of all the people of Saginaw was suggested. Mr. Hoyt felt that some portion of the expenses of a library should be borne by the city and finally gave the park under such conditions, benefiting the proposed library, as his executors should prescribe. Mr. Hoyt then said that he would give a site for a library building and one hundred thousand dollars as a fund with which to build the building, purchase books and carry on the institution. Mr. Van Santvoord, probably aware of the real requirements, suggested that the amount should be fixed at two hundred thousand dollars, but Mr. Hoyt replied: "No, that should be enough. If the people want more than that will accomplish they ought to provide it." The will was executed on June 26, 1882, and Mr. Hoyt died on August 12, 1882.

On January 26, 1883, William L. Webber, Michigan executor and trustee of the Estate of Jesse Hoyt, conveyed the four lots upon which the library building stands to Henry C. Potter, Joseph C. Jones, Timothy E. Tarsney, Henry C. Potter, Jr., and James B. Peter, as trustees and paid to them one hundred thousand dollars. The trust deed empowered surviving trustees to fill vacancies and perpetuate the trust. The present trustees are Eugene C. Warriner, Gilbert M. Stark, James G. Macpherson, Fred Buck and James B. Peter. In the interval between the date of the deed of trust and the present time, William L. Webber, Aaron T. Bliss and Thomas A. Harvey were elected to fill vacancies and served as trustees until their deaths; Benton Hanchett and George W. Weadock were also elected to fill vacancies and served as trustees until their resignations. The officers of the Board of Trustees are: President, Eugene C. Warriner, who was preceded by Benton Hanchett, Henry C. Potter, and William L. Webber; Secretary and Treasurer, James B. Peter.

Contemporaneously with the establishment of the library, in consideration thereof and of the transfer of Hoyt Park by the Estate of Jesse Hoyt to the city, the latter agreed to pay one thousand dollars annually to the trustees for library expenses and also agreed to pay all taxes assessed against the library property.

The fund remained invested until 1887. During that and the following two years about fifty-six thousand five hundred dollars was used in the erection and equipment of the building and approximately twenty-five thousand dollars was used in the purchase of books. There then remained about fifty thousand dollars of the original bequest. In November, 1901, Alfred M. Hoyt, Samuel N. Hoyt, Estate of Mary N. Hoyt Pettit, Estate of Reuben Hoyt and Mary Hoyt each gave five thousand dollars, and in February, 1907, Samuel N. Hoyt gave twenty thousand dollars to the library; the whole forty-five thousand dollars so given being placed in a special fund, the income only derived therefrom being available for library uses. The income from the unexpended portion of the bequest and from the subsequent gifts, together with the annual payment by the city, constitutes the entire income of the library.

The building was designed by Van Brunt and Howe, of Boston, who were appointed architects after a competition in which such eminent architects as H. H. Richardson, of Boston; McKim, Mead and White, of New York, and others participated. The accepted plans for the library resulting in a building of dignified and artistic proportions, with outer walls of stone from the Bay Port quarries, trimmed with Lake Superior red sandstone. The finish of the interior is of oak. All division of space was planned for the most convenient and economical use by librarian, attendants, students and readers. In the construction of that portion of the building in which the books are shelved protection from fire was especially considered; the shelving capacity being estimated at fifty thousand volumes. For the protection of the building the grounds are surrounded by a substantial but open iron fence, and with the trees, vines, shrubs and flowers are well kept and attractive.

The name of the library was established by the deed of trust which also provided that the library should be for consultation and reference only. The selection of the first books purchased was by Professor I. N. Demmon of the University of Michigan and included about twelve thousand volumes, which number was increased by the purchase of about four thousand volumes by the librarian under authority from the trustees and by the acquisition of some two thousand volumes of governmental reports. Mr. Webber at that time also donated about five hundred miscellaneous books. When the library was opened it contained something over eighteen thousand volumes and now has approximately thirty-five thousand volumes, representing every department of research required in a well balanced library of reference. All subsequent purchases of books have been made by the librarian under authority and by approval of the trustees. Many valuable books, pictures and other things of historical value have been received as gifts from various donors. There are about two hundred periodicals, scientific, literary, artistic and miscellaneous, which include the best of English, American, French and German publications, many of which to be accessible are bound annually.

The library was opened for free use by the public about November 1, 1890, under the care of Miss Harriet H. Ames, who came from Boston in 1888, was then appointed librarian and during the following two years completed the preliminary work of placing the library in order. Under her most helpful and satisfactory management, thankfully appreciated alike by the trustees and users of the library, its work has been ever since conducted. In addition to the librarian there are two assistant librarians and a janitor, this



THE HOYT PUBLIC LIBRARY

being the entire salaried list. Excepting for the annual summer vacation of one month and on Sundays and holidays the library is open every day and evening and has an average daily attendance of over one hundred readers and students.

The average annual income of the library is about six thousand four hundred dollars; the average annual expenses, including usual repairs, about four thousand six hundred dollars, leaving about one thousand eight hundred dollars. After payment for newspapers, periodicals and binding there remains available for necessary improvements, extraordinary repairs and the purchase of new books an average annual amount of less than five hundred dollars. In order to maintain the condition of the building, which as time passes requires more frequent attention and larger sums, less funds remain with which to acquire new books or to otherwise increase the efficiency of the library. This unfortunate situation is increasing and in all probability will be more marked when in the future, as will probably be the case, the rate of interest upon safe and desirable investments is reduced. No part of the trust funds of the library, either principal or interest, has ever been lost or its value impaired. The average annual expense of caring for the financial and accounting department has been less than one hundred and fifty dollars per year.

The trustees appreciate that the usefulness of the work in their hands might be enlarged and increased. The library occupies a unique situation in that it is solely for study and reference and has no department of books for circulation. It is evident that provision must be made before many years for an increase of shelving capacity. The building was located as it stands with reference to possible future additions which might be required. The deed of trust contemplated the possibility of placing the City Library upon the grounds adjoining that occupied by the Hoyt Public Library, and ample room remains for a building to be attached to the present building, of the

same material and architectural design. Neither library would conflict with the work of the other and each would fill its respective field to the benefit of the public.

The library should be open every day and evening of the year. In many cities a special department for young children has been very attractive and successful. Lack of and inability to command means has prevented the trustees from making improvements and carrying out plans the profit and success of which have been demonstrated in other libraries. The trustees are empowered to receive money or property from other sources and use the same for educational purposes without the restrictions attached to the bequest.

The results of the years of its existence justify the foundation of the work which has stimulated and enriched the intellectual life of Saginaw.

The name of Jesse Hoyt is linked in many ways with Saginaw and its history but in no more visible, enduring and useful way than through the institution which bears his name.

— James B. Peter

Time through the intervening years has mellowed the colors of the stone of this artistic building, and nature has outdone the architect by covering the walls with a luxurious growth of ampelopsis. Besides the rare trees and shrubs which adorn the grounds, there is a somewhat unusual hedge of hollyhocks, which in bloom is the special pride of the librarian. With the attractive little park adjoining and the Federal Building, this square is one of the beauty spots of Saginaw.

The entrance to the library is through a broad porch on the south and west facades, the columns and arches of which are of red sandstone, and the entablature of the same material is richly carved. Opening from the double vestibule on the main floor are a cloak room, two large reading and study rooms, librarian's office and the stack room. Through faulty design the stacks are entirely shut off from the other rooms, and the books not being easily accessible to the public the library falls short of meeting its utmost usefulness. On the second floor is a lecture hall, now used as a stack room for government documents, including the "Globe" and other Congressional records and department reports, of which the library is especially strong. There are also on this floor a trustee's room and a smaller room used for study purposes. All the rooms utilized for study are spacious, well lighted and quiet, thus insuring an ideal place for students and readers.

That the privileges of the library are appreciated by High School students is evidenced by the large number who frequent the study rooms during the latter part of the afternoon. To the literary and reading clubs the facilities for research afforded by this library are invaluable, and much of the successful work accomplished by the clubs is directly due to the earnest co-operation of the librarians. In times past Miss Grace Bush was the accomplished assistant to the librarian, and her years of faithful service are alike appreciated and remembered by the older patrons of the library. In more recent years the greater part of the detail work of the library has devolved upon Miss Blanche Topping, the able associate librarian, and Miss Mae Hebert, her assistant, whose untiring efforts to increase the usefulness of the library have added appreciably to its popularity.

### Literary Clubs

In the broad and liberal view of education, the literary and reading clubs of Saginaw command a prominent place in her intellectual life. For nearly forty years women's clubs have been an important factor in the general scheme of education, and today their work is along lines of deep and thorough

research. In striving for higher culture—the object and aim of literary circles, the mind is broadened and one's views of life, under the influence of proper reading and debate, often undergo a corrective change. This has an important bearing upon the home life and tends to elevate the moral tone of the household.

Among the very early clubs, the forerunners of our prominent literary organizations of the present day, was the Tuesday Club. It was a small but very exclusive club of women, all very close friends, who were prominent in the social and religious life of the city. They first met together in the early eighties, and the name was suggested by the choice of Tuesday as the weekly time of meeting. The membership was limited to fifteen, and there was always a waiting list of leading women eager to enter the inner circle of their friends. There was no very formal organization, and the charter members were not enrolled on vellum in letters of gold. The gold they sought were the nuggets of knowledge gleaned from thoughtful study and reading of the best literature. The picture on the opposite page, taken from a photograph made in 1885, probably embraces nearly, if not all, the original members.

The members shown in the picture, which was taken on the steps of Mrs. Buckhout's home on North Washington Avenue, are: Mrs. Chauncey Wisner, Mrs. Farnum Lyon, Mrs. C. Stuart Draper, Mrs. Gurdon Corning, Mrs. Edward Mershon, Mrs. Henry D. Wickes, Mrs. William F. Potter, Miss Lizzie Thurber, Mrs. James F. Brown, Mrs. L. A. Clark, Mrs. Sanford Keeler, Mrs. Byron B. Buckhout and Mrs. John J. Wheeler. Mrs. Robert Boyd and another member of the club, not now recalled, were not present at the time this picture was taken.

The work of the Tuesday Club was always conducted very quietly, without the least publicity, but its influence upon the intellectual life of its members, with reference to the sociological and philanthropic side of their natures, was very marked. Through death and removal from the city of its leading members the club at length disbanded, after an existence of more than twenty-five years, but the recollection of its good work still lingers with the few members still living.

The Monday Club, the Tourist Club, the Carpe Diem and other literary clubs of later years, all accomplished an excellent work covering a more or less extended period, but for various reasons finally dissolved, and only the memories of pleasant and profitable hours spent in meeting remain for those who once were prominently identified with their work.

### The Winter Club

Of the prominent literary clubs to retain their organization and continue research work, the Winter Club is the oldest. It owes its existence to an informal gathering of less than a dozen men and women in the autumn of 1877, for the study of English history. This band of studiously inclined persons numbered twenty at the close of the first year, but was increased to twenty-four in the second year. There was no formal organization, although a chairman was elected who appointed a committee to arrange a course of study, as required from time to time.

In October, 1879, the membership was increased to thirty-two, officers were duly elected, a constitution and by-laws adopted, and a line of study mapped out. Meeting regularly each Monday evening, for seven months of the year, at the homes of members, the club was fairly launched into club life, with Julius K. Rose as first president. In 1880-81 George B. Brooks was president, and the first printed program appeared with the subject of Roman history, with appropriate readings from Shakespeare. The second part of the program contained the full list of officers and members, and it is interest-



MEMBERS OF THE TUESDAY CLUB AT MRS. BUCKHOUT'S HOME

[From a Photograph by Goodridge, 1885.]

ing to note that a quarter of a century after, eight of the thirty-two still retained active membership. George B. Brooks has the distinction of being the only charter member still active in the club work.

Those who became members in 1878-79 were Mrs. Byron B. Buckhout; Miss Harriet V. Bills, now Mrs. George B. Brooks; Miss Fanny C. Farrand, now Mrs. John F. Boynton; Mrs. Henry C. Ripley, with Julius K. Rose, James T. Oxtoby, D. D., and John S. Estabrook. In 1881-82 Bradley M. Thompson was president, and the detailed program gave thirty evenings in Greece, in the study of the art and literature of that ancient civilization. The following year, with William H. Masker in the chair, the subjects took the members through sunny France. In their literary travels the members visited the ends of the earth and the isles of the sea; they traversed Siberian wastes and penetrated African jungles; they climbed lofty mountains and stocked aquariums from the depths of the sea; they sorrowed over the perils and sufferings of Arctic navigators, and they shuddered at the wickedness and horrors of war.

Science and invention opened their secret doors to curious eyes; and the voices of the wizards Edison and Marconi awakened them to the possibilities of new forces, while the feats through the upper air of Santos-Dumont thrilled them, and they rejoiced in all their triumphs. In later years they studied the great lights of English, German, French and Italian literature; gave many original interpretations of the immortal lines of Shakespeare, entered heartily into reform work with Luther, Wyclif, Savonarola and Ballington Booth, indicated to the Pope of Rome a few errors in his theology, and gave their views regarding the care of alien races, the uplifting of the negro, and the civilization of the American Indian.

The Winter Club is the only association in the city where men and women meet on a common footing, and is one of the very few clubs in the State to which men are admitted, on any terms. Besides those already mentioned there were Theodore Nelson, Franklin Noble, Warren F. Day, L. M. Woodruff, George H. Wallace and William H. Gallagher, the characteristics and distinctive attainments of each being treasured memories of members still living. Roswell G. Horr with his fund of humor added greatly to the pleasure of the club, during the short time he was a member. Among those who won national fame was Mrs. Alice Freeman Palmer, who was with the club two years during its programless period, and who died in 1903 in Paris, where she was studying with her husband. Two others of the High School were John O. Reed and E. C. Goddard, who later, with Bradley M. Thompson, one of the charter members, filled places of honor in the University of Michigan.

The club opened its thirty-ninth year on November 1, 1915, with a review of current events. In the meetings which followed general subjects were treated, the choice of topics being left to individual members. This plan has been successfully followed for some years, and, while the subjects chosen have no correlation, the papers are generally very thorough and comprehensive, as members choose subjects with which they are familiar, or at least, which appeal strongly to them. As a result the papers are highly interesting and instructive, and are enthusiastically received by all the members. Some of the subjects chosen this year were: China and Japan, Cavour, World Troubles of 1915, A Vacation in Alberta, Phil A. Sheridan, Literature of the War, The Criminal from a Medical Standpoint, The Isle of Fire (Iceland), William Morris and Prohibition of the Liquor Traffic. The officers of the club for the present year are: Julian A. Keeler, president; Mrs. William Glover Gage, vice-president; Mrs. William L. Whitney, secretary; Robert H. Cook, treasurer.



### The Saginaw Reading Club

Organized in 1885 with forty-six members, the Saginaw Reading Club, meeting on the West Side, has contributed very largely to the literary culture of the city. Pursuing a very active and progressive policy it was incorporated in 1894, admitted as a member of the General Federation in 1893, and of the State Federation in 1895. It began its thirty-first year of study in the Fall of 1915, under the direction of the following officers: Mrs. Carrie Goff, president; Mrs. Maude Grigg, vice-president; Mrs. Jessie Johnston, secretary; Mrs. Augusta Tubbs, treasurer, and Mrs. Harriette Robertson, librarian. The current subjects of study were: Social Progress of the Present Age, Literature, Art, Music and the Drama. The club holds weekly meetings on Mondays at three-thirty, from the middle of September to the first of May, at St. John's Church Parish House. Its present membership comprises fifty-six active members, fifty-three associate members, and five honorary.

The club collect — "Keep us, O God, from pettiness; let us be large in thought, in word, in deed. Let us be done with fault finding and leave off self-seeking. May we put away all pretense and meet each other face to face without self-pity and without prejudice. May we never be hasty in judgment and always generous.

"Teach us to put into action our better impulses, straight forward and unafraid. Let us take time for all things; make us grow calm, serene and gentle. Grant that we may realize that it is the little things that create differences; that in the big things of life we are as one. And may we strive to touch and to know the great common woman's heart of us all, and O Lord God, let us not forget to be kind."

### The Saginaw Woman's Club

Another of the leading clubs, and the largest in point of membership, is the Saginaw Woman's Club. This club was organized in 1892, federated in 1895, and incorporated in 1914. It has an active membership of seventy-five, an associate membership of the same number, and an honorary list of four. The subjects of study for its twenty-fourth year, which commenced on October 15, 1915, were: French Art, Modern American Literature, Music and Drama, Sociology and Political Science, Minor Nations in the War Zone. The work of the club is directed by the following officers: Mrs. Fanny Croley, president; Mrs. Mark S. Brown, vice-president; Mrs. John Langdon, recording secretary; Mrs. Walter E. Moore, corresponding secretary, and Mrs. Albert Bumgarner, treasurer. Club meetings are held Tuesdays at two-thirty, from the middle of October to the first of May.

### The Research Club

Although of limited membership the Research Club, organized in 1894, has always occupied a prominent place in literary circles of the city, and accomplishes a good work. It was admitted to City Federation in 1900 and to State Federation in 1901. The club flower is the scarlet carnation, and the club motto is "Qui non proficit, deficit." Meetings are held on Tuesdays at two-thirty, between October and May. The club study for its twenty-second year, which began on October 5, 1915, was miscellaneous subjects. The membership of the club comprises twenty-five active, twelve associate, and seven honorary members; and the work is directed by the following officers: Mrs. W. H. Minard, president; Mrs. David Nichol, vice-president; Miss Edith Markey, secretary; and Mrs. William H. Granville, treasurer.

### The Edelweiss Club

Of later organization the Edelweiss Club, which came into existence in 1899, is also deserving of honorable mention. This club entered the City Federation in 1908 and the State Federation the following year. Its colors are brown and gold, and its motto is "He who does not progress, fails." Club meetings are held on Tuesdays at two-thirty. Beginning its seventeenth year in October, 1915, its work was directed by Mrs. George Hanks, president; Mrs. William Hoyt, vice-president; Mrs. Noel Laing, secretary; Mrs. Harry Tyler, assistant secretary; and Mrs. Charles Robbins, treasurer. The club numbers seventeen active, five social, and four honorary members.

### The Art Club

Thirty years ago several young women of Saginaw City, desiring to delve into foreign art and to cultivate their taste for the beautiful, met together at their homes for studies in art. They were the pupils of John P. Wicker, a successful teacher of drawing and painting, who aroused in many of his students a fine sense of artistic values. Their studies eventually took them through realms little dreamed of in their school work. No very formal organization was affected at that time, but those most prominent in the affairs of the society, to which they gave the name "Art Club," were: Misses Winnifred Smith, Lucy Burrows, Ida Rust, Harriet Wood, Maude Penoyer, Louise Grout and Mrs. Edwin P. Stone.

As the work of the club expanded and the interest increased, other young women with artistic tastes were admitted to membership, and the club became a recognized factor in the intellectual life of the city. In 1896 the club was Federated, and in the following year it was duly incorporated with twenty-nine charter members. The first officers were: Winnifred Smith, president; Harriett Powell, vice-president; Carolyn Robinson, secretary; Henrietta Schemm, treasurer, and May Joslin, librarian, who also comprised the board of directors. In 1898-99 there were twenty-eight active and ninety-seven associate members, and in 1913-14, the last year of regular program work, there were twenty-three active and ninety-three associate members.

The papers given at the meetings of the club were prepared with unusual care and thoroughness, and were rendered even more interesting by the exhibition of art pictures and lantern slide views, bearing directly on the subjects treated. With the passing years the collection of lantern slides has grown to considerable value, as has also the club library of art books, photogravures, and photographs of works of general interest to art. With a fine appreciation of their value as a factor in education, the club in recent years has placed its library, lantern and slides at the disposal of the schools, for lectures and exhibitions, and thus greatly increased the scope of its work and usefulness.

Of late years the Art Club has discontinued the preparation of individual papers, and adopted a schedule of prescribed readings for members at home from art books and journals. This work is supplemented by lectures given from time to time by prominent artists and others; and the club gives art exhibitions each year which, open to the public free of charge, have been productive of awakening a general interest in art. The club owns a number of fine paintings of considerable value, which are loaned to one or another of the public libraries for more extended exhibition. The officers of the club for the ensuing year were: Miss Winnifred Smith, president; Mrs. William L. Whitney, vice-president; Mrs. William Glover Gage, secretary; Mrs. Julian Keeler, treasurer; and Mrs. George B. Brooks, librarian.

## CHAPTER XV

# RELIGIOUS AND SOCIAL LIFE

---

Early Missionaries — Organization of the First Church — St. John's Episcopal Church — The Methodists of Saginaw City — German Lutheran Church — The Liberal Christians — First Baptists — St. Andrew's R. C. Church — SS. Peter and Paul Church — Other West Side Churches — The First Church at East Saginaw — St. Paul's Episcopal Church — The Congregationalists — The First Baptist Church — Warren Avenue Presbyterian — St. Mary's R. C. Church — St. Joseph's R. C. Church — Church of the Sacred Heart — St. John's Evangelical Lutheran Church — St. Mary's Hospital — St. Vincent's Orphan Home — Saginaw General Hospital — The Woman's Hospital — Home for the Friendless — The Young Women's Christian Association — The Young Men's Christian Association — The Germania Society — The Arbeiter Society — Teutonia Society — The East Saginaw Club — Country Club — The Canoe Club — The Elks — Masonic Orders — Other Fraternal Societies.

**T**HE religious history of Saginaw Valley began with the brief, but heroic labors of several ardent missionaries who came among the sturdy pioneers to this wilderness. As early as 1832 the Methodist conference sent out the Reverend Bradford Frazee to establish a mission among the Indians. The white fur traders, who because of their friendly relations with the savages exercised a certain influence over them, were opposed to the conversion of the Indians from their primitive and simple belief in the Great Spirit, and the efforts of the missionary were of little avail. In 1835 and 1836 the Reverend William H. Brockway spent some time at Saginaw and vicinity, his labors being among the white settlers, by whom he was well received. After Mr. Brockway came the Reverend F. O. North and also a Methodist minister named Babcock, but they did not do much towards building up the church. In 1838 the Reverend Hudson, an earnest and faithful minister of the gospel, took up his labors here and was instrumental in placing Methodism on a solid footing in this valley.

### Organization of the First Church

Swept along by the incoming tide of emigration of 1836 was the Reverend Hiram L. Miller and his wife, Adaline, a daughter of Doctor Charles Little. In early days he had enjoyed the ministrations of Albert Barnes, whose lectures under the title of "Barnes Notes on the Gospels," made his name familiar over the whole protestant world; and his theological instructor was Doctor James Richard, of Auburn Theological Seminary, whom he greatly revered and loved. These were the two men who moulded his spiritual life and gave shape to his theological views. His first pastorate was at Trumansburgh, New York.

Soon after his arrival at Saginaw, filled with the zeal of a true missionary and actuated by the devotion to his faith, he set about to form a church society of the Presbyterian creed. This was the first church organized in Saginaw Valley. The organization was effected on March 1, 1838, in a carpenter shop which stood on the southwest corner of Washington (Michigan) and Madison Streets; and the little society numbered but twelve members who were: Norman Little, Jane A. Little, Elizabeth Rice, Thomas Smith, William Heartwell, Mrs. Harvey Williams, T. L. Howe, Mrs. T. L. Howe, Hinds Smith, Mrs. Julia Smith, Mabel Terrill and Mrs. Hiram L. Miller.

This devoted servant of God first preached in the carpenter shop, then in the office of Norman Little and in Mechanics Hall on Washington Street, and at times in the homes of church members. Afterward the little band of Christians met in the first public building erected in the valley, serving as



THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH AT SAGINAW CITY

school house, town hall and court room, which stood in the rear of the old court house. In December, 1838, a series of revival meetings were held by the Reverend O. Parker, with marked success, during which Albert Miller, one of the most public-spirited of the early pioneers, with others, joined the church. The pastorate of Mr. Miller continued for two years, and a noticeable improvement was made in the religious and social status of the inhabitants.

The Reverend Harry Hyde supplied the church in 1842 and 1843. He was a strong Congregationalist, and prevailed upon the younger members of the church to change its government and connection to that of the Congregational body. Hiram L. Miller, who was present when the vote was taken, refused to unite with the new society, and stated that he felt that it would be his duty to organize a Presbyterian church as soon as one could be sustained. A new church was never organized. The old society, unable to maintain distinctive service, later merged itself into a miscellaneous congregation, uniting in the support of any minister of any denomination who proved himself acceptable.

It was just at the revival of commercial activity in 1851 that the Reverend David M. Cooper visited Saginaw. On the evening of his licensure at Detroit the Reverend Calvin Clark asked him if he had ever thought of becoming a foreign missionary. He replied that he had often discussed the matter with his chum at Princeton, who had decided to go to India. "Well," said the reverend gentleman, "I have found you a field. I want you to go right up among the heathen at Saginaw."

Closely following upon this he received earnest letters from Saginaw inviting him to visit the place, and especially one from Charles D. Little, which he preserved with care. These invitations he persistently declined, feeling unfit for the work, and being desirous of continuing his studies under the direction of the Reverend George Duffield. But finding himself shortly after supplying the pulpit at Flint, he concluded to visit Saginaw and see for himself what manner of heathen these people were, what kind of clothes they wore, and what gods they worshipped. So he pushed on through sloughs of mud, the wearisome journey being alleviated by the company of Albert Miller, then of Lower Saginaw.

"It was a little handful of people—ten resident members, of which number only three were men," said Mr. Cooper, "who had extended to me the invitation to visit them. A subscription for the erection of a church edifice was already in existence amounting to twelve hundred dollars, with the promise from the citizens of a bell in case theirs was the first church edifice erected in the place. They seemed importunate to have me remain with them. I considered. The subscription, unless speedily secured, would vanish away. They promised to put up the building themselves without burdening me with any of the responsibility. There was no church of our denomination nearer than Flint. It seemed impossible to find another man and so I consented to stand in the breach.

"As I look back it seems presumptuous for me so young and inexperienced, and in every way so poorly equipped, to have undertaken the pastorate of a church upon the outskirts of civilization as Saginaw was at that day. That Sunday, April 6, 1851, when I entered upon my labors, I can never forget. No preacher ever stood up in a modern Gothic cathedral with its groined arches and stained glass windows and elaborate architecture, with as much pride as I stood up in that little school house, thirty by forty feet in size, its seats, after the old fashion, ranged on the sides, and preached Christ. My soul bubbled with joy to think that I was deemed worthy to preach the gospel, and that even a score of persons were willing to listen to my poor stammering. The walls of the room had been neatly white-washed and festooned with flowers, and Welcome! seemed to shine on every face. My text was 1 Tim. 4:8, 'Godliness is profitable unto all things having promise of life that now is and of that which is to come.'

"My first lodgement when I arrived at Saginaw," continued Mr. Cooper, "was at the renovated Webster House, but I soon found myself settled for housekeeping in a small one-and-a-half-story dwelling on Washington Street. An ingrain carpet for the parlor, a deal table; for curtains, cotton sheets suspended on forks; a kitchen stove, a barrel of flour, a cord of maple wood, an axe, a saw and sawbuck to exercise the wood with, Mrs. Miller to supply us with doughnuts and jumbles for dessert, a stock of four sermons and the prospect of four hundred dollars salary per year, comprised my total belongings and my equipment. But I entered upon my work with elasticity and joy. Like Mark Tapley, I was soon 'floored' by ague that never wholly remitted its attacks during my sojourn in the valley, and yet, like Mark also, I managed also to continue 'jolly.'"

The promise made to erect a church edifice on condition of Mr. Cooper remaining with them was speedily fulfilled, mainly through the untiring energies of Mr. and Mrs. Miller. The former not only superintended its erection, but day by day might have been seen adjusting timbers, carrying stone, digging in the cellar, sometimes mounting on the roof—anything to hasten completion, while the latter, in the quiet of her home, was writing letters of appeal to old friends. As a result of her efforts a thousand dollars came from outside, another thousand was received from her personal solicitation in the village, and her own gift of a thousand more made a total of

three thousand dollars, which was a large proportion of the cost of the building. It was a handsome, commodious structure of architecture peculiar to the time, and was dedicated December 15, 1852.

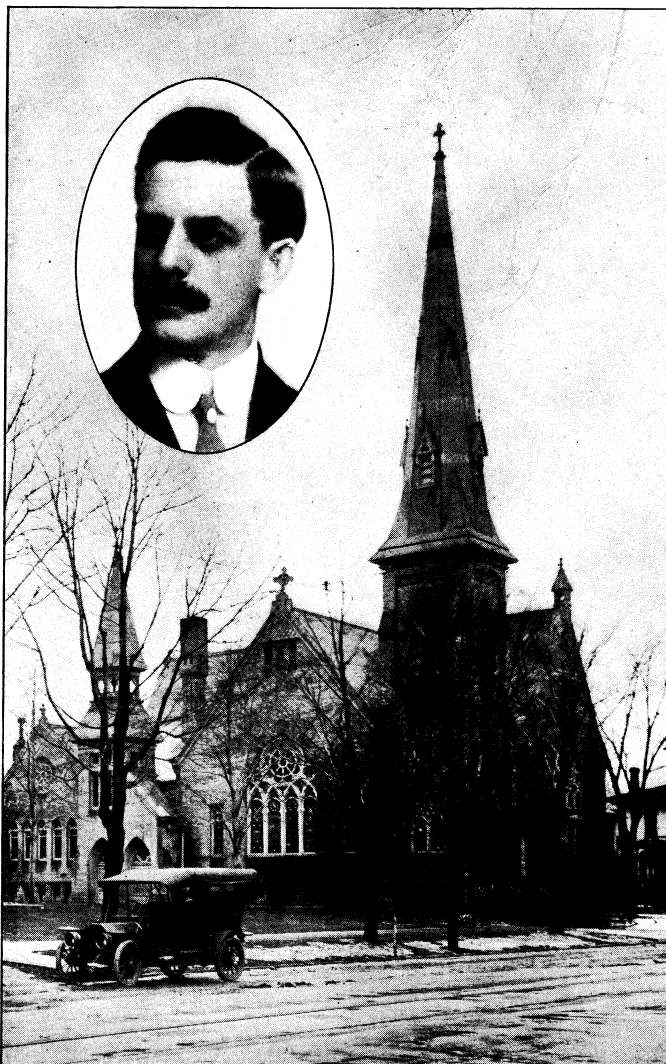
The most prominent feature of the new church was the pulpit, covering nearly one-third of the area and reaching up toward the ceiling, capacious enough, it was said, to accommodate a meeting of the presbytery. On either side of it was a winding stair, which required unusual exertion to surmount, so that by the time the pastor reached the top he was compelled to rest on a sliding hair-cloth sofa, and regain his breath before proceeding with his sermon. On the desk was a large cushion for the Bible, and the top was covered with cloth that hung in folds half-way to the floor, and was ornamented with cords and fringes and tassels, which were twisted and woven in the parsonage with a skill quite equal to that of Aholiab, the noted embroiderer, in blue, scarlet and purple, a combination of colors which illy comported with the sombre hue of the coverings. The material was of olive-colored broadcloth, which answered fairly well in daylight, but at night, in candlelight, it assumed the semblance of mourning and appeared more like a catafalque than a sacred rostrum. Afterward, in the interest of good taste, the pulpit of wonderful proportions was removed, and a low platform put in its stead.

Until some time after the dedication of the new church Mr. Cooper acted as stated supply, but on March 3, 1853, he was duly ordained to the gospel ministry, the sermon being preached by Reverend R. R. Kellogg, and the charge to the pastor was given by Reverend Noah Wells. On March 20th he preached his first pastoral sermon, the text being, 2 Tim. 4:5, "Do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry." At this time the church membership numbered eighteen, four men and fourteen women, and the average Sunday congregation was from eighty to one hundred.

In 1859, having planted the Presbyterian faith over this extreme northern outpost, Mr. Cooper was compelled by failing health to relinquish his charge; and was succeeded by the Reverend David H. Taylor. The Reverend Jesse Hough was called to the pastorate in 1865, and in the following year the edifice was enlarged, refurnished and rededicated. The small and old-fashioned pews raised above the level of the aisles, and the high and box-like pulpit, still remained, and something of the spirit of the founders of the church lingered to give inspiration to their faithful followers. Of this remarkable old church Mr. Hough long afterward wrote: "A precious building was that old church, representing an amount of faith and patience and loving sacrifice such as no other church that will ever adorn the valley, however costly and splendid, will represent."

In 1883, when the church had entirely outgrown the accommodations of the primitive edifice, the present brick structure was begun on the site of the old, and finished in the following year. It was enlarged in 1902, during the pastorate of Dr. W. C. Covert. To keep pace with the demands of the time, in 1914 the basement was entirely remodeled, and another addition made, thus enlarging the stately building to its present proportions.

Since the coming of Reverend David M. Cooper the First Presbyterian Church has been served by a long line of able and consecrated ministers, among whom were: Reverend O. S. Taylor, 1868-69; Reverend George Duffield, D. D., 1869-73; Reverend R. P. Shaw, 1873-78; Reverend A. F. Bruske, D. D., 1878-92; Reverend Charles E. Bronson, D. D., 1892-1900; Reverend William C. Covert, D. D., 1900-05; Reverend Frederick W. Lewis, 1905-09; and Reverend Harry Rogers Stark, D. D., 1910. Under the leadership of these earnest preachers of the gospel, the church has grown to be one of the strongest and most influential of the Presbyterian faith in our State.



FIRST PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH

### St. John's Episcopal Church

As far back as 1836 there were in Saginaw Valley only three communicants of the Episcopal Church, and in them — Mr. and Mrs. James Busby and Mrs. Amanda L. Richman — was the nucleus of the present St. John's. They looked and labored for the time when the services of the Church might be established in Saginaw City, and in 1841 occasional services were held by the Reverend Daniel E. Brown, of Flint. After he had ministered to the little company of devoted church people for several years, the Reverend Mr. Rieghley, also of Flint, held frequent services in Saginaw. It is therefore to St. Paul's Parish of Flint that St. John's, the mother parish of the Episcopal churches in Saginaw Valley, owes a debt of gratitude for inspiration and encouragement to establish a congregation which was to take a prominent part in the religious and social development of the community.

St. John's Church was organized in 1851, and was the third church society formed in Saginaw Valley. The first settled clergyman was the Reverend Joseph Adderly, who, after a service of one year, was followed



OLD ST. JOHN'S, ERECTED 1853

by the Reverend D. B. Lyon, of Grand Rapids, who also remained for a year. In 1853 the Reverend Voltaire Spalding came to St. John's as its rector at the munificent salary of three hundred dollars a year. Services were then held in the old school house at Court and Fayette Streets, and also in the old Court House. The number of communicants at this time was eleven, who were: Mrs. Eliza H. Williams, Mrs. A. M. Richman, Mrs. Lucy Spalding, Mrs. S. E. Westervelt, Mrs. Maria Warren, William Spalding, Richard Sibley, Mrs. Mary Sibley, Miss Caroline Wickham, William Hutton and Mrs. A. A. Hayden. Mrs. Ann Fitzhugh, of Lower Saginaw (Bay City), was also a communicant and attended services whenever it was possible to travel the fifteen miles from and to her home.

On April 11, 1853, the corner stone of the first church edifice of St. John's was laid by Bishop McCoskry, but, owing to lack of funds the construction of the building did not progress very satisfactorily. In 1856 the need for a church home becoming more and more pressing, the Reverend V. Spalding went East and collected the sum of five hundred dollars from devoted churchmen, towards the building fund. Later, by the advice and consent of the Bishop, Charles L. Richman supplemented the efforts of the rector by visiting some of the large eastern cities, and succeeded in raising six hundred dollars more. There were also presented to St. John's a baptismal bowl and a communion set by Mrs. Ebenezer Hale, of Canandaigua, New York. The church edifice was at length completed, and on October 11, 1857, the first services were held in it. The Reverend Mr. Spalding resigned the rectorship May 2, 1858, the number of communicants at that time being twenty-four.

Occasional services were held that year by the Reverend Mr. Swan, of Flint, and the Reverend O. H. Staples, of Grand Rapids, but on March 17, 1859, the Reverend Edward Magee, of the Diocese of Ohio, became rector. On May 9, 1860, the church was consecrated by Bishop McCoskry, a debt of four hundred dollars having been assumed by members of the vestry, who were Newell Barnard, William Binder, Myron Butman, N. D. Lee, David H. Jerome, L. Webster, George L. Williams, William H. Sweet, John Parish and Stewart B. Williams, the last two being the wardens. The Reverend Mr. Magee served as rector for two years, and at the time of his resignation the number of communicants was twenty-seven.

The Reverend Osgood E. Fuller accepted the rectorship June 18, 1862, and at this time the first rectory was built. It was a small wooden structure of Gothic design, and much of the work of building it was done by the rector. In 1865 Mr. Fuller resigned leaving a communicant list of fifty-seven. In July of the same year the Reverend John Leech, of Elmira, New York, assumed the duties of rector. On July 16, 1866, the bell now in use was hung in the belfry of the church, and a bible and prayer book were given by the Ladies' Society. The baptismal font now in use was presented to the church by Mrs. Amanda M. Richman, in memory of her daughter, Kate Richman. Mr. Leech resigned in 1870, leaving one hundred and sixty-two



communicants in the parish. This notable gain in confirmations shows that the church was then keeping pace with the growing city, and that the sacrifice and devotion of the faithful few in the early days was beginning to bear its fruition.

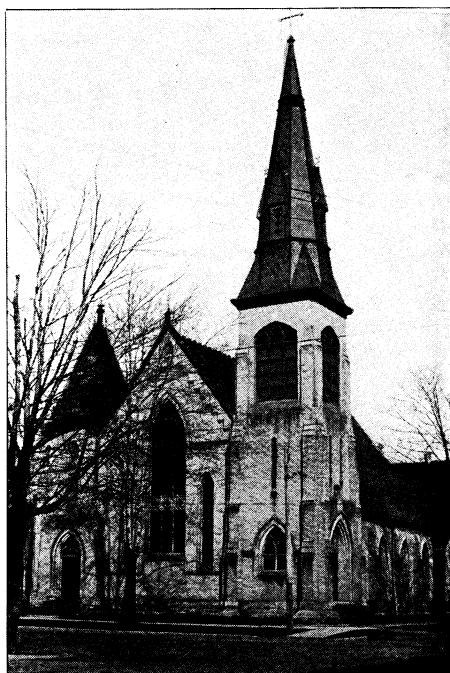
In December, 1871, the Reverend W. H. Watts, of Kalamazoo, entered upon his duties as rector of St. John's, and two years later the church edifice was enlarged at an expense of twenty-two hundred dollars. After serving for five years Mr. Watts resigned, leaving one hundred and eighty-six communicants in the parish. On December 3, 1876, the Reverend L. S. Stevens, of Toledo, Ohio, became rector, and under his charge St. John's grew in influence, if not in numbers. In 1878 a new rectory was built at a cost of thirty-five hundred dollars, which sum was raised largely by the women of the parish. Having served faithfully for five years Mr. Stevens relinquished his charge with a communicant list of two hundred and three.

### The New Church Edifice

For a year and five months the parish was without a rector and the church work suffered. Though without a spiritual head the vestry, in the faith that a proper man would soon be found, formulated plans for the erection of a new church building. On April 17, 1883, the Reverend Benjamin F. Matrau, of Owosso, accepted a call to become rector of the parish, and on Sunday, May 6, he held his first services. The erection of the present church edifice of brick and stone was begun the following day, the building committee being composed of Newell Barnard, Ezra Rust, George F. Williams, Dudley J. Smith and David H. Jerome. The corner stone was laid July 12, 1883, by Bishop Harris. In 1887 and 1888 the parish house and the rectory were built of the same materials and in an order of architecture conforming with the church edifice.

The Reverend Mr. Matrau served as rector for six years and six months, during which time the church membership reached its greatest number—four hundred and ninety-five. He was an indefatigable worker, a man of strong individuality and personal magnetism, and was much beloved by all classes; and his name is much revered in hundreds of homes in Saginaw, even to this day. At this time St. John's established a choir of boys and men, which was a leading feature of the church services, and under the able direction of Henry B. Roney soon came to be regarded as one of the best in the diocese, winning fresh laurels of praise and appreciation whenever heard in neighboring cities.

The able assistant to Mr. Matrau in all his labors at St. John's was the Reverend George D. Wright, now of the diocese of Chicago, and the record of official acts in the parish register is abundant proof of the tireless energy of these two devoted servants of God.



ST. JOHN'S EPISCOPAL CHURCH

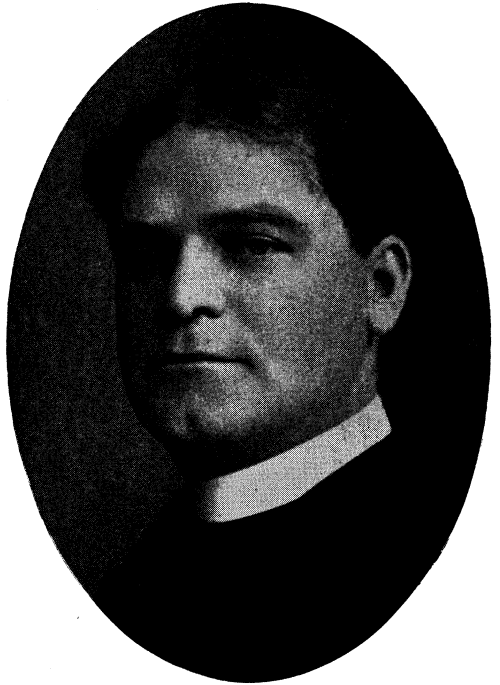
By the earnest and zealous efforts of Mr. Matrau, Calvary Memorial Church, at Genesee and Hill Streets, came into being as a mission. The edifice was erected through him by a gift of Madame Le Brun, of Owosso, to whom Calvary Church is a memorial. For several years the services and mission work were conducted by the rectors of St. John's, but later was organized as a separate parish. St. Paul's Church at East Saginaw and Trinity Church at Bay City also owe their early existence to the mother church of St. John's.

On April 30, 1890, the Reverend Dean Richmond Babbitt, L. L. D., entered upon his duties as rector. He was a very scholarly man of high attainments, possessing a brilliant mind and unusual power as a preacher. During his rectorship, which continued until February 26, 1893, he attracted much attention among the religious and intellectual classes by his splendid discourses on the gospels. He was succeeded by the Reverend Benjamin T. Trego, B. D., who assumed his duties June 1, 1893, and resigned in December, 1896. In the following Spring the Reverend Ralph H. Baldwin became rector and continued in charge for one year.

#### **Reverend Emil Montanus Becomes Rector.**

The church was then vacant for a year, and in May, 1899, the Reverend Emil Montanus, the present rector, took charge. Coming to St. John's at a time when the parish was thoroughly disorganized, its members discouraged, if not disheartened, he has by conscientious effort and the exercise of rare judgment, built up the parish to its proper sphere of influence and good in the community. The true missionary spirit is strong within him.

By countless acts of kindness and benevolence, he is beloved by the poor, the sick, and the needy, and his name is a watchword in hundreds of humble homes in which formerly little was known of the true God. From a scant two hundred names on the list of communicants sixteen years ago, the number of professing churchmen and churchwomen has, by his efforts and influence, increased to three hundred and fifty-two, and is growing steadily.



**REV. EMIL MONTANUS**

#### **The Methodists of Saginaw City**

The earliest record of any effort to plant Methodism in this valley was of May 20, 1850, when the Reverend George Bradley, "Presiding Elder of Grand Rapids District," made a certificate appointing Andrew Bell, Stephen Lyttle, Levi D. Chamberlin and Louis Hart "Trustees of the Methodist Church in Saginaw County." This certificate was recorded June 24, 1850. The preliminary organization then created must have lapsed, as when John Moore came here in 1851 it had no active existence, and was never after recognized. "Andrew Bell," said Mr. Moore, "must have been a minister who had prior

to that date preached here. None of the others resided here in the Spring of 1851, and there was no Methodist Church organization, no class, and no regular preaching. Occasionally, in the Summer of that year the Reverend George Bradley preached in that part of the court house then finished and used as a court room and for all public meetings."

In the Fall of 1851, the Reverend C. C. Olds was sent by the Conference and remained here for one year. He organized a class consisting of Theodore Dean, his two sisters, and Mrs. John Moore, the only persons here at that time who professed to be Methodists. This was the first class formed and the commencement of the present church organization. Shortly after there were several persons of this faith residing near Shattuck's Mill, who met for worship as a separate class in Ure's school house, and were James N. Gotee and wife, Mrs. Shattuck, C. C. Batchelor, Mrs. Swarthout, and perhaps a few others. Dean and his sisters soon after moved away, and Mrs. Moore was left the sole resident survivor of the first class.

Mr. Olds remained until the Fall of 1852, when the Reverend George Bradley was appointed to look after the straggling band of Methodists in the whole of Saginaw Valley, including Indian missions. He was followed in the Fall of 1853 by the Reverend A. C. Shaw, who resided at East Saginaw and preached in both villages.

In July, 1854, a contract was made for the purchase of part of the ground upon which the church buildings now stand, and the interest on the purchase price and the taxes were guaranteed by John Moore. Soon after, the old school house was purchased and moved upon the lot, fitted up as a chapel, and so used until the more commodious church was built. The old building was then made over into a parsonage, which purpose it served until 1873 or 1874, when it was sold and moved off. On November 10, 1859, the stipulated price, two hundred and fifty dollars, on the lot, was paid and the title conveyed to James N. Gotee, L. B. Curtis, Major W. Hollister, Smith Palmer, Edwin Saunders, George A. Davis and Abner Hubbard, as trustees. Additional ground adjoining was purchased the following year, and in 1866 fifty feet more was donated by L. B. Curtis and John Moore.

The church building as first erected was commenced in 1859 or 1860, while the Reverend William Fox was pastor, and finished in 1861. Charles E. Miller was the builder. Afterward the church building was enlarged by the addition of thirty feet in the rear, and again by what was the lecture room. The parsonage was erected during the pastorate of Seth Reed, and his successors appreciated his self-sacrificing labors and hold them and himself in grateful remembrance. In the Spring of 1884 the church building with all its contents was destroyed by fire; and upon its site rose the stately edifice which, with its several additions, has filled the needs of the congregation for more than thirty years.

Through a long line of able pastors, from the Reverend Mr. Olds and the Reverends Washburn, Hawks, Allen and Lovejoy to the present pastor, the Reverend E. P. Bennett, the Methodist church on the West Side has grown to be a large factor in our religious life, and its progressive policy promises well for the future.

### **The German Lutheran Church**

As early as January 29, 1849, a few German Lutherans, J. A. Gender, K. F. Kull, J. J. Weiss, E. Weggel, J. M. Hancke, G. Dierker, M. Backer, M. Gremel, M. Winkler and J. M. Strauss organized a church society, and extended a call to O. Homer Cloeter to become pastor. He accepted the charge and was installed November 30th by the Reverend F. Sievers. In

the same year the congregation bought a lot on the southeast corner of Court and Washington (Michigan) Streets, and in 1850 built a small church and parsonage thereon. Five years later the society bought a house and two lots for a parsonage, and the small house beside the church was thereafter used for a school.

In 1857 Mr. Cloeter was succeeded by the Reverend J. A. Huegli, and two years later the Reverend M. Guenther was installed as pastor. In 1866 the society sold the parsonage and bought the present church property on Court Street, between Fayette and Harrison. They soon erected a new parsonage, and in 1868 built the present church at the corner of Fayette Street, at a cost of eighteen thousand dollars. The church was dedicated February 7, 1869. Following Mr. Guenther as pastor was the Reverend Joseph Schmidt and in 1875, when a new organ was installed the membership comprised one hundred and sixty families.

This church deems it a duty to provide the children of its members with sound religious instruction, and therefore supports a well-conducted parochial school. In the early days the work of instruction fell upon the pastors, but in 1861 a school house was built and a teacher called. In 1868 the two-story frame school house was built on Court Street, and in 1872 a third teacher was employed, the number of school children having increased to one hundred and sixty.

### The Liberal Christians

This society of professing Christians was organized in 1871, with the Reverend J. H. Burnham as pastor. The members at once resolved to build a church edifice, and within a few months their liberality and labors resulted in a brick building being erected for a house of worship. This church, which was dedicated July 18, 1871, still stands on South Michigan Avenue between Adams and Cass Streets. The society grew in numbers until there were about two hundred and seventy members; and in 1874 the trustees were: A. W. Wright, A. W. Thompson, Thomas L. Jackson, W. H. Sweet, James Hay and T. M. Hubbell. Later the organization was discontinued, the church building sold to the First Baptist Society, and the members left at liberty to attach themselves to any denomination of the Christian Church. The church building, which characterized its projectors, as well as their financial and religious liberality, served the Baptists as a house of worship for more than thirty years.

### First Baptists

From the time of the organization of the Baptist Church at East Saginaw, in 1858, the followers of this faith on the west side of the river had been connected with that church. But in November, 1863, fourteen of them asked for letters of dismissal from the society in order that they might form themselves into a church in Saginaw City. These earnest church workers were: Valorous A. Paine, Mrs. Harriett Paine, Ebenezer Briggs, William M. Haskell, Eli Townsend, Mrs. Hannah Townsend, Mrs. Belinda Benjamin, Mrs. Nancy A. Cody, Mrs. Jane Low, Mrs. Matilda Miller, Mrs. Christina Ross, Mrs. Mercia B. Palmer and Hannah Briggs. In addition to these, Mrs. Julia A. Burrows brought a letter from the First Church of Rochester, New York, and Mrs. Jennie F. Paine from the church in Bay City.

The meeting for organization was held in the home of Mr. Paine, on Court Street, in the place now occupied by the Smith Building. This house is still standing on the corner of Michigan Avenue and Adams Street. The Reverend J. S. Goodman was chairman of the meeting and V. A. Paine was



JEFFERSON AVENUE, NORTH FROM HAYDEN STREET, 1886



WEADOCK AVENUE, NORTH FROM THOMPSON STREET

clerk; and the Articles of Faith and the Covenant were duly adopted. On December 3, William M. Haskell and Ebenezer Briggs were chosen deacons. The legal organization and incorporation of the church society was effected in July, 1864, the trustees being: Valorous A. Paine, George L. Burrows and William J. Bartow.

For a time services were held in the jury room of the court house, but in 1865 a church building was erected by the society on the corner of Fayette and Franklin (Hancock) Streets. Thirteen years after, this building, then outgrown by the congregation, was sold to the Evangelical Association. The parsonage on the adjoining lot on Fayette Street was first occupied July 31, 1877, and is still owned and so used by the society. The Mission Chapel, on Fayette Street between Perry and Dearborn, was built during the pastorate of the Reverend W. W. Pattengill, and dedicated June 4, 1871. The church building on Washington Avenue (now Michigan), near Adams, was purchased by the Baptist Church from the Liberal Christian Society; and was dedicated on March 27, 1878, the sermon being preached by the Reverend Dr. Hotchkiss, of Buffalo, New York. This church edifice served the congregation for about thirty years.

The present commodious and imposing structure of the Michigan Avenue Baptist Church, at the corner of Michigan Avenue and Adams Street, was erected in 1908 through the united efforts of Dr. W. P. Morgan, L. A. Burrows and other zealous church members. It is conveniently arranged to meet the needs of the various church activities, and contains large Sabbath School and society meeting rooms, the church office and pastor's study, arranged with outside entrances. The style is of a composite type of church architecture, and the materials were brick and concrete with facing of dark paving brick and trimmings of stone.

The first superintendent of the Sunday School was the Reverend J. S. Goodman. He was succeeded by Dr. George Northrup, and he by Levi Clark. In 1871, Dr. W. P. Morgan assumed the duties of this office, a christian work in which he was very successful and conducted for many years, imparting to teachers and scholars a large measure of his spirit of zeal and religious training. In September, 1880, Dr. Morgan was elected one of the deacons of the church. The Mission Sunday School was organized by the Reverend N. P. Barlow, who was the first superintendent. Afterward the office was filled by Messrs. Irving, Pattengill and Wood, the latter serving for six years.

In 1875 the number of trustees was increased to seven, and in that year were: George L. Burrows, O. C. Davis, N. W. Dennison, W. P. Morgan, A. B. Paine, William T. Tibbetts, and N. S. Wood who was then treasurer of the society.

Of the earnest and devoted members of this church, who labored long for the cause of righteousness, were the late William P. Morgan and Latham A. Burrows. The former spent a life of service to mankind, and his influence in the church activities will be felt for years to come. Mr. Burrows was also a steadfast Christian — a seeker after the truth. He was a musician of more than ordinary ability and attainments, and for a long term of years served the church as organist and choir director.

Among the early pastors who ministered to the congregation were the Reverend L. L. Fittz, 1867-68; the Reverend N. P. Barlow, 1868-70; the Reverend W. E. Lyon, 1870-73; and the Reverend W. W. Pattengill, 1873-81. Other devoted ministers no less able and beloved have carried on the work of the church through intervening years, the present pastor being the Reverend Francis C. Stiffer, who assumed charge in the Fall of 1912.

### St. Andrew's Roman Catholic Church

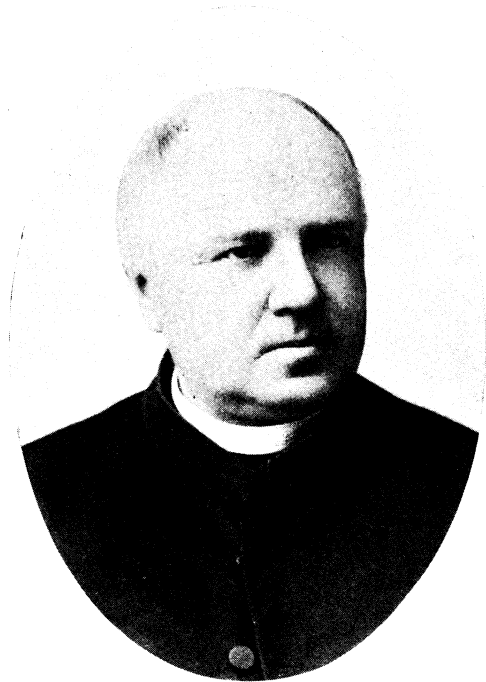
The earliest record of ministrations of the Roman Catholic Church in Saginaw is of 1841, when the Reverend Martin Kundig came to establish a Catholic mission. In the month of May of that year he held the first services in the house of I. J. Malden, on Water (Niagara) Street, near the location of the first freight house of the Jackson, Lansing and Saginaw Railroad. Afterward, the Reverend Lawrence Kilroy was appointed to the charge of the mission, and for several years held services of the Church in the homes of his faithful followers. Father Monahan and Father Kendekens succeeded him, coming from Flint to hold services. The Reverend H. T. H. Schutzes, secretary of Bishop Burgess, was the first priest appointed to the special charge of the Saginaw Valley missions.

The first church house of St. Andrew's parish was a carpenter shop, purchased in 1852, which stood on the west side of Washington Street, just south of Adams. The following year this rough building was moved to the corner of Washington and Monroe Streets, and used as a church for twelve years. Reverend Father Vanderhayden was appointed priest of the Roman Catholic missions at Saginaw City and East Saginaw, in 1862, and under his direction the first church edifice of St. Andrew's was built in 1865. Five years later the building was inadequate to seat the rapidly increasing congregation, and was enlarged, and the erection of a parochial school commenced. Later, a priest's residence was built adjoining the church.

In 1866 the mission at East Saginaw was set off as a separate parish, and the Reverend Father Vanderhayden was appointed pastor of St. Andrew's Church. Thus St. Andrew's is the mother church of the Catholic parishes in Saginaw, its history antedating any other efforts of the Roman Church in Saginaw County.

The first committee of St. Andrew's Church, elected in 1862, was composed of Patrick McCullen, F. H. Fish, John Schnecker and John W. Richardson. To all activities of the parish these staunch churchmen lent their aid and encouragement, the liberal support of Mr. Richardson for a period of more than fifty years, until his death in February, 1915, being especially noteworthy.

Father Vanderhayden was a very earnest and energetic priest, and his labors in Saginaw City were fruitful of increasing members in the fold. He established St. Andrew's parochial school, which in its early years was conducted by the Sisters of Divine Providence. Greatly beloved by his own people and citizens outside the Catholic Church, he continued his labors for thirty-nine years, or until 1901, when he retired from active work and returned to his old home in Holland.



FATHER VANDERHAYDEN

The Reverend Father Vanderhayden was succeeded by the Reverend Joseph J. Vogl, whose pastorate continued for ten years. In 1911, upon the consecration of the Reverend Joseph Schrembs as bishop of Toledo. Father Vogl was transferred to the charge of St. Mary's Church, Grand Rapids, thus left vacant. It was during his ministrations at St. Andrew's that initiative was taken toward the erection of a new church edifice, and a large proportion of the subscriptions to the building fund was secured by his efforts. The old church was removed to a lot adjoining the priest's residence, on Hamilton Street, and the foundation of the new church was soon after laid on the old site.

The present pastor is the Reverend H. P. Maus, of Grand Haven, Michigan, who succeeded Father Vogl. Soon after he assumed charge the new church edifice, which had been in process of erection by Father Vogl, was completed at a cost of about fifty thousand dollars. On Decoration Day, May 30, 1913, at 7 A. M., the magnificent church was consecrated by Rt. Reverend Edward D. Kelly, D. D., auxiliary bishop of Detroit. Pontifical High Mass was celebrated at 10:30 A. M., by Rt. Reverend Henry Joseph Richter, D. D., in which the new church was opened to the public, no less than twelve bishops and priests participating. In the evening a banquet was given to the visiting clergy, and toasts responded to by the Mayor and leading Catholic citizens. The old church building has since been remodeled into a useful parish hall, in which many events in the social life of the Church are held.

Father Maus is a man of powerful figure and commanding presence, and is a very energetic priest with a firm grasp of the affairs of the parish, both material and spiritual; and is tireless in good work among his people. He is a strong and eloquent speaker, and his sermons are delivered with convincing manner and telling effect, thus drawing many persons outside the Roman Catholic faith. In all he is an able successor of unusually able priests in the Lord; and the church work of St. Andrew's advances with the material progress of the city.

### SS. Peter and Paul Church

Twenty-eight years ago the increasing need of a new parish in the southern portion of the city, resulted in the formation of SS. Peter and Paul Church, and the erection in 1888 of a substantial brick edifice on the corner of Wayne and Fayette Streets. The Reverend Father Lefevre, who had served for many years as assistant to Father Vanderhayden in St. Andrew's parish, was largely instrumental in organizing the new church, the first trustees of which were: E. P. Austin, Hugh McPhillips, Patrick McManmon and F. J. Ruchser, now all deceased with the exception of Mr. McPhillips. The new church building was dedicated in October, 1888, by Bishop Henry Joseph Richter, of Grand Rapids, with a membership of two hundred and eighty-eight souls.

The first pastor of the church was the Reverend Father Lefevre, who, after a long and faithful service, still ministers to the congregation. Being of a strong and energetic nature, and zealous for the upbuilding of the Kingdom of Christ, he soon cleared the church of debt, and in 1889 opened a small school with three Sisters as teachers and eighty-six children. But the school grew so fast that every year to 1892, one room and one teacher was added to meet the needs for primary instruction and religious training. In 1892 the pastor's residence was built on Wayne Street, and in the following year an addition of two rooms was made to the school house. The congregation at that time numbered seven hundred and seventy-five members.



In 1909 a large new church school was begun and finished in 1910. Including a Sister's residence this school has twenty-one rooms, and cost with its furnishings twenty-five thousand dollars. On September 6, 1914, the school opened with twelve teachers in charge and three hundred and sixty-five children; and the congregation increased to over thirteen hundred souls, now being one of the largest churches in the city. In that year a large addition to the church edifice was built, the interior redecorated and new furnishings installed, at a cost of twelve thousand dollars.

The Fall term of 1915 opened very auspiciously with thirteen teachers and nearly four hundred children. In the past three years SS. Peter and Paul school has been affiliated with the Michigan University, and is in good standing in all its twelve grades.

#### Other West Side Churches

St. Paul's Evangelical Lutheran Church was organized November 30, 1851, by the Reverend Julius Ehrhart with twenty-two members. The first officers of the society were: William Barie and M. Strauss, deacons; J. P. Roller, H. Schnuphase and Dr. M. C. T. Plessner, trustees. In 1857 a church was erected at the corner of Harrison and Ames Streets. Twelve years later the present edifice was built at a cost of eight thousand dollars, and dedicated October 17, 1869.

The first pastor of the church was the Reverend J. Ehrhart, who was succeeded in the early years by Reverends Christian Foltz, Conrad Foltz, C. Adam, Hugh B. Kuhn and Chris Eberhardt. The present pastor is the Reverend J. H. Westendorf, a native of this county, who was born and reared at Zilwaukee. He assumed charge in February, 1898, and in eighteen years of faithful service has witnessed a steady growth of the church, both in numbers and in spiritual life.

From the time this church was organized a parochial school has been maintained to afford religious instruction to the children and youth of the members. It also offers elementary education in English and German. In the early days the pastors were also the teachers of the school, and the old church building, upon completion of the new edifice, was devoted to school purposes. In 1883 the present school house was built, but owing to greatly increased attendance, it was enlarged in 1892. Three teachers are employed, and the average daily attendance is about one hundred and twenty-five in the eight grades. The graduates of the school pass directly to advanced courses in the Arthur Hill High School.

The Evangelical Association was formed in 1875 by the Reverend M. Heinger, of Flint, and Vincent Gaum, president; Daniel Haller, secretary; John Himmelbach, treasurer, and the Reverend J. M. Fuchs, pastor. In 1878 the old Baptist Church, at Fayette and Franklin (Hancock) Streets, was purchased by the association and improved for chapel purposes, for which it was used for nearly thirty years. The pastors of early years of the association were the Reverends J. M. Fuchs, C. C. Stiffield, W. F. Zanders and H. Schneider. In 1881 the membership had reached forty-five; and the Sunday School was in charge of John Himmelbach as superintendent, Barbara Stengel, secretary, and V. Gaum, treasurer.

#### The First Church at East Saginaw

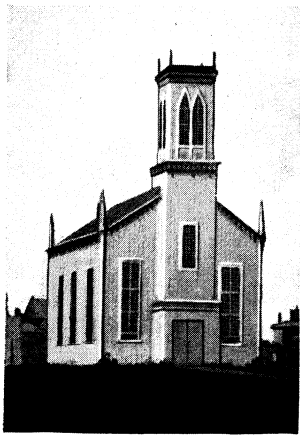
To the Methodists belong the honor of having organized the first church society at East Saginaw, at a time when the place was but a hamlet, built upon a marsh. Previous to the Fall of 1852 there was no class or organization representing Methodism on the east side of the river, but at the conference of that year the Reverend George Bradley was appointed missionary for the Saginaw Valley. On the sixteenth of December, 1852, he organized

the "Methodist Episcopal Church of the Village of East Saginaw," making a certificate for the appointment of trustees. At that day there was not a man, woman or child in the village who professed to be a Methodist, so Mr. Bradley named Charles Johnson, then a teacher in the Indian Mission School at Kaw-kawlin, Samuel N. Warren and Henry T. Higgins, of Flint, himself, as Methodists, and Norman Little, Charles T. Disbrow and John Moore, trustees.

The first Methodist sermon was preached by Reverend Bradley in the "Irving House," the leading hotel of the place; and services were held there for some time thereafter. The pastor meanwhile purchased some lots on Water Street as a suitable site for a church, but they were never used for that purpose. In the summer of 1853 John W. Griswold took up his residence in the village, and soon made himself known as an earnest Methodist. He was a man of some means, and acting with Mr. Bradley selected the lot at the southeast corner of Washington and German Streets, now occupied by a part of the Hotel Vincent, as a suitable site for a church building. Soon after he purchased the lot in his own name and his own cost, and deeded it to the church society January 20, 1854. Such an act of generosity attracted considerable attention in the village, but the donor soon left and his whereabouts were unknown. Reverend Bradley thereupon started plans for the erection of a church building; but in the Fall he was superseded by the Reverend A. C. Shaw, who had been appointed to the charge of the churches on both sides of the river.

Reverend Shaw was a man of great energy, understood western life, and it was not long before he knew everybody on the river. He made a great stir, and early in 1855 had a church building under way. Many amusing stories have been told about this ardent missionary. He could preach and pray with the solemnity of a Bishop, could work on the church building with hammer and saw, cross the river on a saw log to meet appointments; and there was nothing reasonable or consistent with his following, that he could not, or did not do, in carrying on his work.

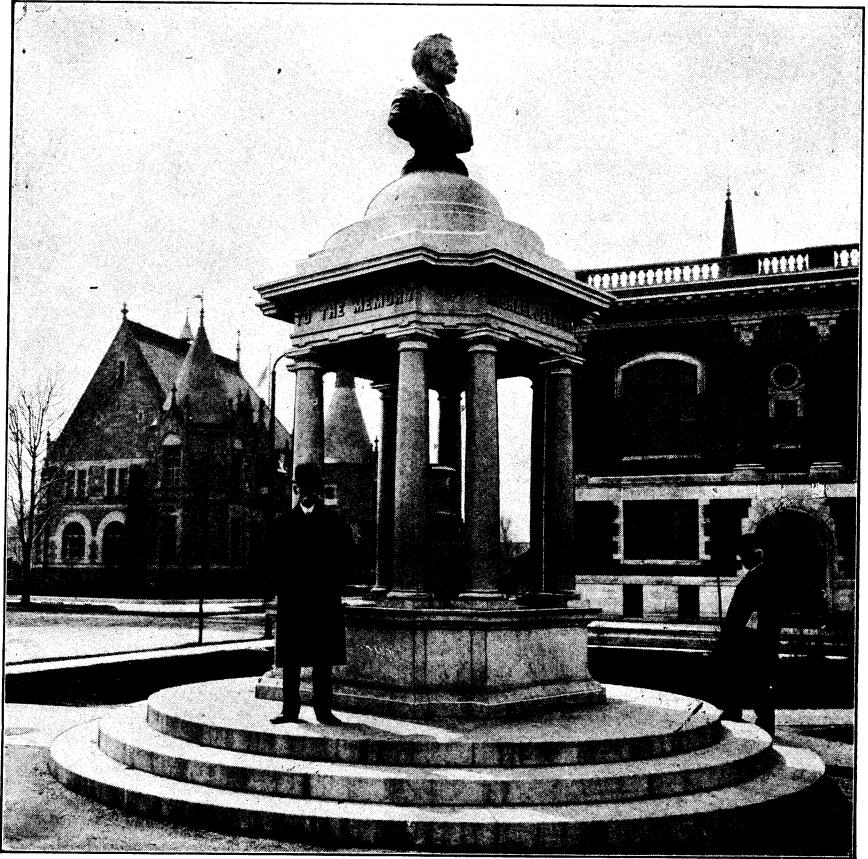
The style of the church building was pleasing, it was said, to only one member of the board of trustees, Norman Little, who represented the Hoyt interests and had great influence in such matters. The church was at length completed and dedicated in the Fall of 1855; and the Reverend Samuel Clemens was sent to take charge of the work on both sides of the river. He remained for one year and was followed by Reverend Belknap, whose pastorate was of only six months duration as he was obliged to leave on account of failing health. In the Fall of 1857 the Reverend Mr. Mosher came, and during the two years of his labors there was a great revival and increase in membership. He was succeeded by the Reverend H. N. Brown who remained for two years, then the Reverend H. O. Parker was pastor for one term. Late in 1863 the Reverend F. A. Warren became pastor and remained for one year.



OLD METHODIST CHURCH

During these years of hardship and sacrifice, worship was still held in the little brown church on Washington Street. It was not a fashionable congregation — Methodists, Presbyterians and Baptists — that gathered together in those early days; and they resorted to the use of candles to light the

church for evening service, some brother or sister having the honor of holding the candle during the singing so that those around them could see the music of the hymns. Other sisters brought scissors to snuff the candles,



**JEFFERS FOUNTAIN**

The Federal Building and the Elk's Temple in Background





PORTRAIT GALLERY OF RESIDENTS OF SAGINAW CITY, 1860-1875

## INDEX TO PORTRAIT GALLERY OF OLD-TIME RESIDENTS

- |    |                      |    |                      |     |                                  |
|----|----------------------|----|----------------------|-----|----------------------------------|
| 1  | Mrs. James Jerome    | 36 | Mrs. John Moore      | 71  | Charles Burleson                 |
| 2  | Unidentified         | 37 | Mrs. Purmort         | 72  | Newell Barnard, Sr.              |
| 3  | Charles E. Wheeler   | 38 | Augustine S. Gaylord | 73  | Mrs. Aaron Parsons               |
| 4  | A. B. Paine          | 39 | Mrs. Isaac Parsons   | 74  | Captain Slenaw                   |
| 5  | Mrs. A. B. Paine     | 40 | Mrs. J. H. Morley    | 75  | Mrs. Hudson                      |
| 6  | David H. Jerome      | 41 | Mrs. A. S. Gaylord   | 76  | Jimmie Hay                       |
| 7  | Mrs. D. H. Jerome    | 42 | Amasa Rust           | 77  | Mrs. W. H. Taylor                |
| 8  | Thomas S. Jerome     | 43 | Mrs. Amasa Rust      | 78  | Daughter of Mrs. Taylor          |
| 9  | Rev. Hough           | 44 | Charles A. Rust      | 79  | Mrs. Ripley                      |
| 10 | Mrs. W. H. Carpenter | 45 | E. G. Rust           | 80  | Mrs. E. Ripley                   |
| 11 | Mrs. Anna Palmer     | 46 | A. G. Van Wey        | 81  | Mary Ann Ripley                  |
| 12 | Dr. Smith            | 47 | Father Vanderhayden  | 82  | Anna Ripley                      |
| 13 | Ezra Rust            | 48 | George T. Williams   | 83  | Henry Ripley                     |
| 14 | Mrs. Ezra Rust       | 49 | Mrs. Winder          | 84  | Fred Ripley                      |
| 15 | Bird Richman         | 50 | Dr. Plessner         | 85  | Sarah Ripley (Mrs. Fraser)       |
| 16 | Mrs. C. L. Richman   | 51 | Libby Benjamin       | 86  | W. D. Carpenter                  |
| 17 | Wheaton Carpenter    | 52 | R. J. Birney         | 87  | Mrs. W. D. Carpenter             |
| 18 | William H. Taylor    | 53 | F. R. Potter         | 88  | Frank Webster                    |
| 19 | } Sons of Mr. Taylor | 54 | J. Blackmore         | 89  | Nellie Keedy                     |
| 20 | } Mrs. G. K. Grout   | 55 | Mrs. E. R. Ayres     | 90  | Hattie Wright                    |
| 21 | Harry Miller         | 56 | Mrs. D. W. Briggs    | 91  | Charles Stinchfield              |
| 22 | Mrs. Charles A. Rust | 57 | Mrs. G. L. Burrows   | 92  | Rosetta Lewis (Mrs. Wellington)  |
| 23 | Jay Smith            | 58 | Ed. Behan            | 93  | James Jerome                     |
| 24 | Mrs. Jay Smith       | 59 | J. W. Penoyer        | 94  | Lizzie Merrill (Mrs. C. L. Ring) |
| 25 | Dr. J. B. White      | 60 | Winnie Smith         | 95  | Mrs. Dr. Smith                   |
| 26 | Mrs. J. B. White     | 61 | Miss Nettie Ripley   | 96  | Daughter of Dr. Smith            |
| 27 | Henry Miller         | 62 | Unidentified         | 97  | } Misses Bither                  |
| 28 | D. L. C. Eaton       | 63 | Mr. Frazee           | 98  | } Willie Armstrong               |
| 29 | Mr. Bostwick         | 64 | L. W. Wade           | 99  | Frank Purmort                    |
| 30 | Miss Bernhard        | 65 | Unidentified         | 100 | Widow Penoyer                    |
| 31 | Miss Weigart         | 66 | Mrs. Bullock         | 101 | Mrs. Smith Palmer                |
| 32 | John Moore           | 67 | E. Ripley            | 102 | Mrs. D. F. Paine                 |
| 33 | Mrs. L. T. Durand    | 68 | W. S. Green          | 103 | Mrs. J. F. Wider                 |
| 34 | Mrs. D. F. Paine     | 69 | James G. Terry       | 104 |                                  |
| 35 |                      | 70 | Mrs. J. G. Terry     |     |                                  |

thereby giving a little more light. The interior of the meeting-house was bare of carpet except in the pulpit and on each side of the altar, but the spirit of the Almighty was present, His power being displayed in the conversion of sinners and in the sanctification of believers. To afford better light for the pastor, a beautiful lamp was afterward presented by John P. Allison, for use on the pulpit; and soon after oil lamps replaced the candles.

The Ladies Aid Society of the Methodist Church was organized in 1863, for the purpose of aiding the project for a new church. Mrs. A. M. Driggs was its first president and guiding spirit in years to follow. During the succeeding fifteen years, by personal solicitation, socials, church suppers and other activities, the society raised at least twelve thousand dollars, which was expended for furnishings, expenses and charitable work. During the Civil War its relief work for wounded soldiers was a notable feature of its labors; and in after years became the main stay of the pastors, and was an inspiration to the male workers of the church. For some years the society paid the insurance on the property, kept the organ in repair, paid the organist and sexton, bought fuel for heating the church, and dishes for the parsonage and the church kitchen.

In 1864 the Reverend R. R. Richards was sent by the Conference, and he worked in good earnest. By his special request Mrs. Mary West became superintendent of the Sabbath School, which position she filled for many years. During his pastorate the little church became over-crowded with worshipers, and in 1868 the building and parsonage were sold to the newly organized Presbyterian society. Services were then held in Penney's Hall, on Genesee Street, and later in Jackson Hall, on Washington Street. Reverend Richards retired in 1867, and was followed by the Reverend J. H. McCarty. Meanwhile, the society purchased a new lot on Jefferson Street, and a subscription raised for the erection of a new meeting-house.

The corner stone of the new church was laid by Reverend McCarty on March 27, 1867, but the building of so large and well appointed an edifice was a big undertaking, considering the resources of the society, and it was not until the fourth Sunday in August of the following year that the first services were held in the basement. The church was finally completed and dedicated by Bishop Haven, December 27, 1868, at which time there were one hundred and fifty members. The total cost of the edifice, including the spire rising to a height of one hundred and sixty-two feet, was fifty-one thousand dollars. In 1870 Mr. McCarty was succeeded by the Reverend J. M. Fuller, and after two years of toil was superseded by the Reverend David Casler, who remained for three years.

Other pastors of the church were: Reverend Castor, 1875-78; Reverend W. E. Bigelow, 1878-79; Reverend J. N. McEldowney, 1879-81; Reverend John Wilson, 1881-84; Reverend Charles H. Morgan, 1884-87; Reverend George W. Hudson, 1889-90; Reverend Camden M. Cobern, 1890-91; Reverend William Dawe, 1891-93, and six years as presiding elder; Reverend W. W. Washburn, 1893-95; Reverend George W. Jennings, 1895-98; Reverend J. S. Haller, 1898-1902; Reverend E. A. Elliott, 1902-07; Reverend A. B. Leonard, 1907-09; and Reverend C. B. Steele, 1909-11.

The present pastor is the Reverend Frederick Spence who came to this church in 1911, and will soon conclude his fifth year of faithful service to the congregation. In his pastorate extensive alterations were made to the church edifice, and refurnishing and other improvements added appreciably to the attractiveness of the audience and Sabbath School rooms. The parsonage directly back of the church on Warren Avenue is a valuable adjunct to the property, and is a comfortable home for the pastor, from which the various activities of the church are directed. In 1916 the membership was five hundred and fifty in good standing.

In 1873, through the persistent efforts of the Reverend James Riley, the Ames Chapel Mission was established on Penoyer Farm. This mission, in the midst of a new settlement directly across the river from the business section of East Saginaw, occupied a comfortable chapel on Fourth (Hanchett) Street near Lincoln (Genesee) Avenue. As this section of the city built up a separate and independent congregation was formed from the mission, and regular church work and services have been maintained there since. The present pastor is the Reverend G. H. Curts who came to the church in September, 1912; and the membership is now one hundred and ninety.

### St. Paul's Episcopal Church

St. Paul's Parish, like other Catholic churches, had its origin in a mission established in the early days of settlement of East Saginaw. It was in 1854 that the Reverend Voltaire Spalding, who had charge of St. John's Church at Saginaw City, organized this parish on the east side of the river. No other church than the Methodist society then existed, so that St. Paul's is next in order of seniority. Like all the others this little company of churchmen and churchwomen was for a time without a church home, and was dependent upon public halls in which to worship.

At length Jesse Hoyt, who ever had the social, religious and cultural welfare of the city at heart, as well as its material progress, made the parish a gift of a lot at the northeast corner of Warren and Lapeer Streets, as a

suitable site for a church building. The location was then well removed from the center of the settlement, being on the edge of the almost unbroken forest, but the ground was firm and solid. Upon this site which is now close to the center of the business section of the East Side, was erected in 1864 the first St. Paul's, a wooden building of the medieval style, comfortably furnished, heated and lighted. It had seatings for about four hundred persons and cost about twenty-two thousand dollars.



OLD ST. PAUL'S, ERECTED IN 1864

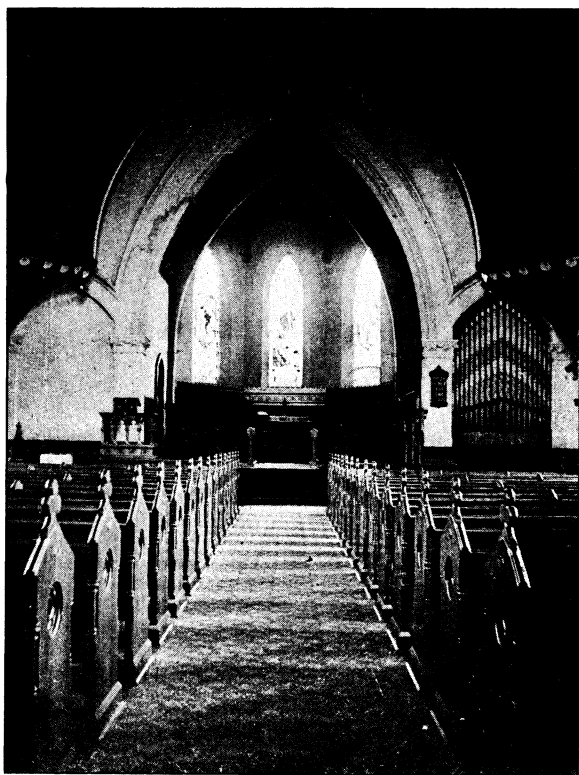
Among the early rectors may be named the Reverend G. B. Eastman, the Reverend George W. Wilson, the Reverend L. S. Stevens and the Reverend William A. Masker who assumed the duties of rector

May 25, 1881. In 1874, under the ministrations of the Reverend G. W. Wilson, the membership was one hundred and seventy, and the Sunday school numbered one hundred and fifty. St. Paul's was then keeping pace with the growth of East Saginaw which was fast becoming a lumber port of considerable importance.

On April 4, 1884, the parish suffered the loss of its church building by fire. This was a severe blow to the congregation, which was soon after enhanced by a disruption among the members over the selection of a more favorable site for the erection of the new church. After many heated discussions in which it was impossible to arrive at an agreement, the parish at length divided, the majority, comprising the older and more influential element supporting the old organization.



The other and more radical element of the congregation, which was composed very largely of "high churchmen," thereupon organized the new parish of All Saint's, and called the Reverend Father Radcliffe to the rectorship. He was an earnest and faithful priest and drew many persons into the fold. A very appropriate location for the new church edifice and rectory was chosen at the northeast corner of Genesee Avenue and Burt Street, and the erection of the building begun. In due course it was completed and furnished at large sacrifice by the devoted members of the congregation. For several years All Saint's Church did a good work in the eastern part of the city, but the burden of debt which had been assumed at the time of building the church was too great to be carried, and the parish sold its property and dissolved. Some of the more active members then allied themselves with Calvary Memorial Church at North Saginaw, to the work of which they entered with their accustomed zeal and faithfulness.



INTERIOR OF ST. PAUL'S CHURCH

The old St. Paul's congregation, meanwhile, had chosen lots at Washington Avenue and Fitzhugh Streets, and in 1887, during the rectorship of the Reverend Isaac Barr, commenced the erection of a stone edifice for their church home. At this time Henry D. Wickes, his brother, Edward N. Wickes, John J. Wheeler and C. Stuart Draper were influential vestrymen of the parish, and gave most liberally of their time and means to forward the building operations. The beautiful new church was completed and dedicated in the Summer of 1888; and services of the Church have since been held within its walls.

The Reverend Isaac Barr was followed in 1890 by the Reverend William H. Gallagher, a very able and devoted minister, who remained rector of St.

Paul's for a period of twenty years. His broad and liberal Churchmanship, sturdy Christianity and good deeds without number, soon brought him into prominence in the religious life of the city, and few clergymen have enjoyed the universal esteem and high regard in which he was held by all classes of citizens, irrespective of creed or religious belief. His preaching, though never sensational, was vigorous and masterful, and was marked by deep and thorough knowledge of the scriptures. He appealed to the reason and to the spiritual sensibilities of his hearers rather than to the emotions; and his beautiful reading of the church service will always be remembered with peculiar pleasure by the members of his congregation.

The present rector of St. Paul's is the Reverend Thomas E. Swan, who has filled the churchly office for the last four years, and is carrying on the good work of the parish and Sunday School.

### The Congregationalists

In the early years of Christian endeavor in Saginaw there were a number of persons professing the faith of the Congregational Church, but, for want of a separate organization they worshipped with the members of other churches. In Saginaw City they became strong enough in 1842, as we have seen, to change the established Presbyterian Church to their own organization, and, although the society later went back to its previous form of government, a few persons still adhered to the covenant and fellowship of the Congregational Church.

Among these true and zealous Christians was Chester B. Jones, who was yet a devoted member of the First Presbyterian Church. In April, 1853, imbued with a true missionary spirit, he organized the first Sabbath School on the east side of the river, the sessions being held in the "Academy" on South Jefferson and Hoyt Streets. The few families which professed membership in the Congregational Church, like the Presbyterians and Baptists, worshipped with the Methodists whom they had aided in building the first church edifice at East Saginaw.

At length it seemed advisable to have another church in this place, and the Congregationalists and Presbyterians united and began to look about for a suitable minister. In the Spring of 1857 Mr. Jones and a few others withdrew from the church in Saginaw City, in which they had labored for several years, and were instrumental in forming a new congregation on the East Side. On May 3rd the Reverend William C. Smith, of Lapeer, preached in the Methodist Church, which stood on the southeast corner of Washington and German Streets, and in the evening in Buena Vista Hall. He was immediately engaged by the society with much zeal, as their pastor, for one year; and services were held in the hall, which had been offered to the citizens by Jesse Hoyt, for public worship.

On the first Sunday of the following June Mr. Smith and a few others formed a Sabbath School, Mr. Jones being chosen superintendent. Within a few weeks the school numbered about one hundred and fifty scholars, and had a library of six hundred volumes, many of which were the gift of friends at the East through John P. Allison. Mr. Jones held the office of superintendent for six terms, and was succeeded by Henry M. Flagler, the school at that time having three hundred and thirty-six scholars. After three years H. T. Collins was chosen to the office, and later was succeeded by Lucius C. Storrs.

When the society had been well established some of the members desired a church organization, and a meeting was held Tuesday, September 11, 1857, to consider the subject. Those present were Mr. and Mrs. W. H. Warner, Mr. and Mrs. Jacob E. Vorhies, Mr. and Mrs. Henry Woodruff, Mr. and Mrs.



THE FIRST CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH

Erected in 1860 at the Southwest Corner of Washington and German Streets

George Morris, Mrs. Norman Little, Mrs. Menzo C. Stevens, Mrs. William L. Webber, Mrs. DeWitt C. Gage, Mrs. Robert Pearson, Mrs. Stephen B. Knapp, Mrs. Nancy Brown, Mrs. George Elseffer, Mrs. William McKnight, Miss Catharine Lathrop, Solomon Lathrop, Edwin A. Moore, Horace B. Hubbard and Chester B. Jones.

Having decided upon a church organization the form of government was determined by ballot, eighteen votes being cast for the Congregational form and four for the Presbyterian. The name chosen was "The First Congregational Church of East Saginaw;" and on October 7, 1857, an Ecclesiastical Council organized the church, the Reverend William C. Smith offering the Prayer of Organization. At this time Mrs. Smith, the wife of the pastor, and Miss Augusta E. Kimball were admitted by letter, and the Misses Helen R. G. Little, Amanda and Elizabeth Woodruff by profession. The first Preparatory Lecture was given October 31, and the Sacrament was first celebrated November 1, 1857.

After a faithful and honored service of eight years Mr. Smith resigned the pastorate and closed his labors here on Sunday, April 30, 1865. Following him was a line of able and consecrated servants of God, who were: Reverend John G. W. Cowles, 1865-71; Reverend Joseph Estabrook, as supply in 1871; Reverend William DeLoss Love, 1871-76; Reverend William F. Day, 1877-82; Reverend Franklin Noble, 1883-89; Reverend George R. Wallace, 1890-94; Reverend William Knight, 1894-97; Reverend Andrew Burns Chalmers, 1898-1901; Reverend Nelson S. Bradley, 1901 to the present time.

To co-operate with the church the First Congregational Society was formed September 7, 1857, and the following were elected trustees: Norman Little, DeWitt C. Gage, Chester B. Jones, Jacob E. Vorhies and George J. Dorr. Others serving later in this capacity were: W. L. P. Little, John H. Elseffer, Henry Woodruff, George W. Waldron, William C. Janes, Alfred T. Silsbee, George H. Newcombe, Henry M. Flagler, Dwight G. Holland,

Erastus T. Judd, Charles K. Robinson, D. Forsyth Rose, William H. Warner and Byron B. Buckhout. In 1911 the society and church were consolidated under the name of "The First Congregational Church of Saginaw."

The first house of worship used by this church was built on the southwest corner of Washington and German Streets, directly opposite the Methodist Church; and the first effective work on it was performed in October, 1860. It was first used by the congregation for worship on February 3, 1861. The original cost of the structure was two thousand dollars, but in the following year additional pews were provided and the gallery enlarged, bringing the cost of the church property, including heating and lighting arrangements, to forty-five hundred dollars.

In the Autumn of 1866, to provide for the increasing membership, measures were taken toward building the present church, and its dedication was held on Sunday, June 14, 1868. Professor Joseph Haven, D. D., of Chicago, preached the Sermon of Dedication, after which upwards of twenty-two thousand dollars was added to the subscriptions to the building fund; and in the evening the Reverend J. W. Hough preached, and more than six thousand dollars was added to the fund. The Prayer of Dedication was then offered by the pastor. In 1891 extensive repairs and alterations were made in the edifice and chapel, including a new elevated floor, new opera chairs, and perfect electric lighting and ventilating arrangements throughout. The organ was moved from the side to the center, back of the pulpit, thoroughly rebuilt, and a place provided for the chorus choir of about thirty voices. The total cost of the church property, including these improvements, has been seventy-seven thousand dollars.

The Men's Club of the First Congregational Church was organized October 30, 1907, for church extension and social purposes, and has had a useful existence since that time. The original officers were: William P. Powell, president; Robert T. Holland, vice-president; Fred C. Roberts, recording secretary; Norman N. Rupp, secretary; William A. Brewer, treasurer.

Among the general interest meetings that have been held may be mentioned those in which Wellington R. Burt spoke on "The Constitutional Convention," William B. Mershon on "Forestry," William S. Linton on "The Parcel Post," Professor R. C. Allen on "The Iron Mines of the Upper Peninsula," Frank C. Peck on "Railway Mail Service," Eugene Wilber on "Alaska," Professor Shull on "Eugenics," William J. Gray, of Detroit, on "The Federal Reserve System," C. W. Stive on "The Shipping Bill," and Bishop Charles D. Williams, of the Episcopal Diocese of Michigan, on "Taxation."

The club has extended its membership to include others than those connected with the Congregational Church, and has added materially to the cultural life of the city.

#### **The First Baptist Church.**

The first Baptist Society was organized in 1853 with scarcely a score of members, but with zealous purpose of worshiping according to the tenets of their church. Their first house of worship was a small frame building erected by James S. Webber, on South Jefferson Avenue nearly opposite the present church. A picture of this primitive meeting house appears on page 191. The first meetings of the society held in this building, which was known as "Union Hall," were on the third and fourth of July, 1858. Ten years later, when there was extensive church building and other improvements in East Saginaw, the society acquired the lot at the northeast corner of Jefferson and German Streets, and soon after erected thereon a red brick

edifice with gray stone trimmings. In style the church building resembles the Methodist and St. John's German Lutheran churches, and has an audience room seating six hundred, noted for its excellent accoustic properties. The basement is divided into lecture and Sabbath school rooms and pastor's study. Even in the early days the church was heated by steam and lighted by gas; and the total cost was thirty-six thousand dollars.

The erection of this substantial church edifice in so commanding a location was largely due to the indefatigable labors of the Reverend H. L. Morehouse, who was pastor for twelve years, and also to the liberal support of the active church members, many of whom were numbered among our most solid citizens. In 1873, the Reverend Theodore Nelson assumed the pastorate and under his able ministrations covering a long period of years, the membership, which was one hundred and seventy at his coming, increased more than two fold. He was followed by the Reverend Taber and other able ministers; and in 1908 his son, the Reverend Wilbur Nelson, was called as pastor and remained in charge four years. The present pastor is the Reverend Stuart Gordon Boone who assumed his duties July 1, 1912.

In more recent years the church property has been greatly improved, the stained glass windows and large pipe organ being features appreciated by the large congregation.

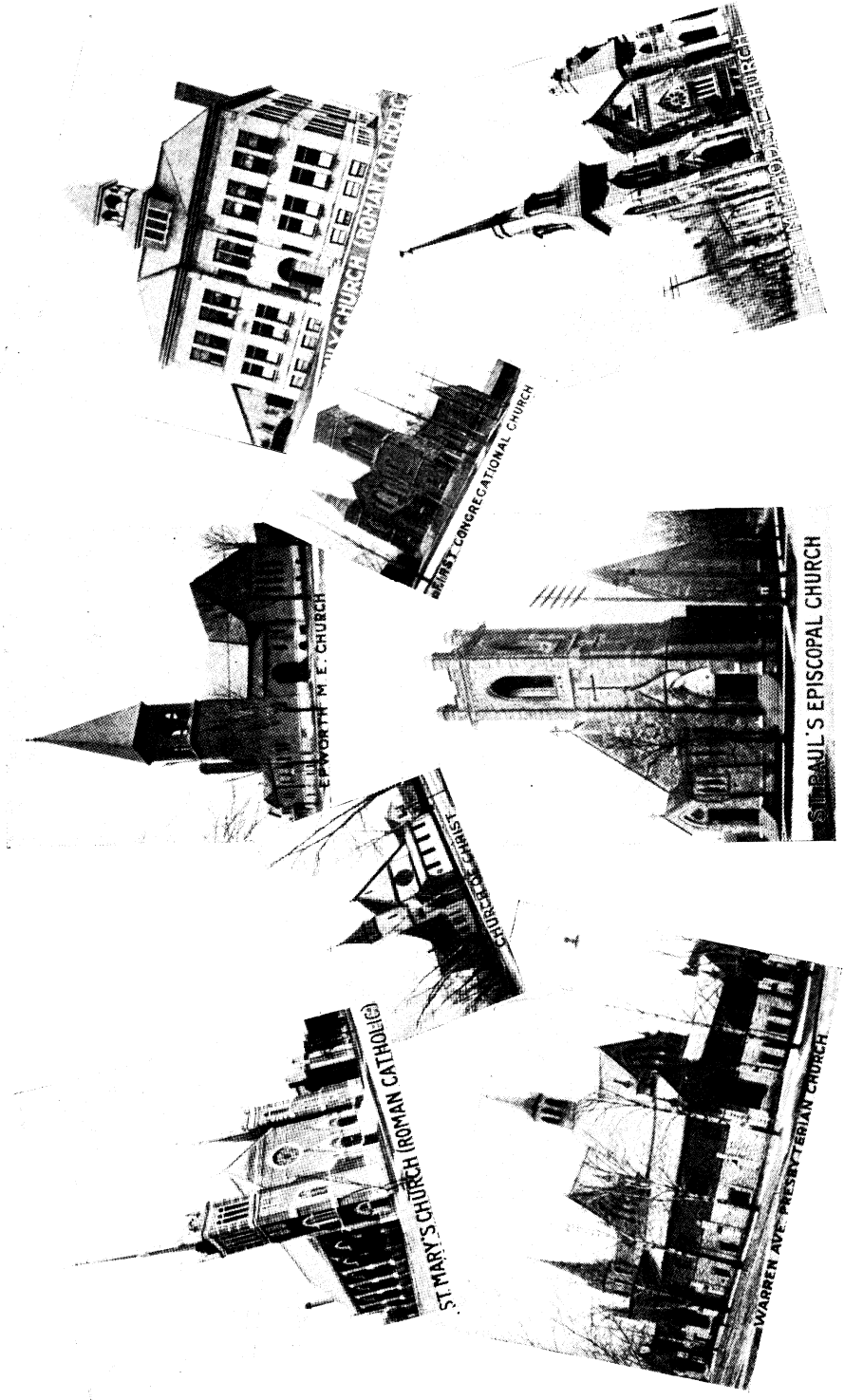
Other church societies of the Baptist faith are the Fordney Avenue Church, at South Saginaw, and the Zion Baptist (negro), at the corner of Johnson and Second Streets.

#### Warren Avenue Presbyterian

Among those who formerly united with the Congregationalists in sustaining preaching in East Saginaw, were a few persons who still adhered to the Presbyterian faith. These devout Christians withdrew in 1867, and on March 24th of that year organized the "First Presbyterian Church of East Saginaw," afterward changed to the Warren Avenue Presbyterian. On that day the Reverend L. J. Root preached and administered the Sacrament, and was assisted by the Reverend Calvin Clark, secretary of Home Missions. Alexander Mitchell and Alexander Ross, having been previously ordained, and duly elected ruling elders of the church, were regularly installed as pastors. Besides these devoted ministers and their wives, there were thirty-two charter members of the society, including Mrs. Frances E. Spinney, Mr. and Mrs. William Allen, Mrs. Isabel Sutherland, Mr. and Mrs. David M. Austin, Orrin M. Stone, Mrs. Mary A. Hodson, David Taggart and Mr. and Mrs. Thomas Steele.

The Reverend W. W. Thorpe ministered to the congregation and was succeeded by the Reverend A. F. Johnson. In 1870 the Reverend S. E. Wishard became pastor and remained for two years, when the Reverend Thomas Middlemis took charge and continued his ministrations for five years. During his pastorate the society, which hitherto had not prospered, began a new life and built a substantial brick church building on the corner of Warren and Millard Streets. It was at length completed at a cost of twelve thousand dollars, and first used as a house of worship in the Fall of 1874, when the congregation comprised seventy-six members.

In 1877 the Reverend David Van Dyke was called as pastor, and on July 1, 1880, the Reverend John T. Oxtoby, of hallowed memory, assumed pastoral charge. Under the ministrations of this able and scholarly minister the church grew in members and influence, and soon numbered among its staunch supporters some of our representative citizens. His pastorate covered a period of sixteen years, during which he endeared himself to thousands by his sturdy Christianity, strong character and great sympathy for all in



GROUP OF SAGINAW CHURCHES

distress. He retired in 1896 and was followed in March of that year by the Reverend Joseph Riley Tewell, who ministered to the congregation until his death in 1903.

Mr. Tewell was an earnest and devoted minister of rare spiritual endowment, and an indefatigable worker. Through his efforts the church edifice was greatly improved, refurnished and redeccorated, and a new heating system installed. But by a strange turn of fortune the house of worship was not again to seat the congregation, for on the very Sunday morning that it was to have been reopened for worship and joyful hymns of praise, a fire started around the furnace and the structure was entirely destroyed. Dismayed but not disheartened by the loss of their church home, the minister and congregation set about with commendable energy to rebuild the edifice along modern lines well adapted to present needs. In a remarkably short time the present building arose on the site of the old, and is a monument to the labors of Reverend Tewell and his able helpers in the congregation. By his influence and persistent efforts the entire debt on the property, including three thousand dollars for the organ, was liquidated shortly after the church building was completed. The strain of overwork, however, was too great for his enfeebled state of health, and he died on February 23, 1903, deeply mourned by all who had known him, or had come under his helpful influence.

The present pastor is Reverend J. A. Dunkel who assumed charge September 1, 1903. Under his able direction of the church activities the membership increased to eight hundred and fifty, including a mission maintained in Buena Vista. The other church property consists of church house at 510 South Warren Avenue, and the Manse at 710 South Weadock Avenue, from which the religious work of the congregation is directed.

Other churches of the Presbyterian faith are: Grace Presbyterian, at the corner of Dearborn and Fayette Streets; Immanuel, on Genesee Avenue between Hill and Hanchett Streets; and the Washington Avenue Presbyterian, at the corner of Washington Avenue and Williamson Street.

### **St. Mary's Roman Catholic Church**

The beginning of St. Mary's Church, the largest and most influential of the Roman Catholic parishes of this city, was in a small mission established by Father Schutzes in the eighteen-fifties. He was one of a band of devoted priests of Dutch descent who came to the forest wilderness along the Huron shore, to establish missions among the pioneer settlers. At the mouth of the Saginaw River he first planted the Cross, but soon pressed on to the settlement of East Saginaw, where he formed a flourishing mission among the few followers of his faith. This good work he continued until 1863, when Father Vanderhayden, who the preceding year had assumed charge of the mission at Saginaw City, was assigned to the duties of both missions.

The first church edifice of St. Mary's was built in 1863, and dedicated on Christmas day of that year. It stood on the site of the present imposing and churchly building, at the corner of Wells (Owen) and Hoyt Streets, and was capable of seating about six hundred persons. From 1863 to 1866 the parish was under the charge of Father Vanderhayden, who was then relieved of the duties of this church to devote all his energies to the upbuilding of St. Andrew's on the west side of the river. Father Vanderbom was deputed to the work at St. Mary's, which he continued for twenty-three years, and was greatly beloved by his flock. In 1874 the number of communicants was fourteen hundred and thirty-two, an illustration of the remarkable success of the early missionary priests of the Church.

During the pastorate of Father Vanderbom the church property was greatly improved by the addition of the parochial school and priest's residence

on Hoyt Street. Besides the church services and pastoral duties his activities included the establishment of a branch of the Convent of the Immaculate Heart, consisting of four sisters, who taught in the school which numbered two hundred and seventy pupils. St. Vincent's Orphan Home, which cares for a large number of indigent children, was also established, very largely through the efforts of this devoted servant of God.

In 1889 Father Michael Dalton was appointed to the charge of St. Mary's, and ministered to the spiritual needs of the congregation for over twenty-four years. He was born in County Clare, Ireland, February 24, 1852, and received elementary education in schools of his native land, where he finished his classical and philosophical studies. Upon coming to America he continued his preparation for the priesthood at Mt. St. Mary's Seminary in Cincinnati. He held pastorates at Sandwich, Ontario, Detroit, Ludington, Berlin, Grand Haven and Big Rapids, and came to Saginaw in the prime of his intellectual and spiritual power. It was during his charge of St. Mary's that the magnificent church edifice was erected with its many beautiful memorials and costly gifts, representing the sacrifice and loving devotion of the faithful in Christ.

Father Dalton died October 9, 1913, greatly mourned by his congregation which then numbered more than twenty-five hundred souls; and the parish of St. Mary's with its many activities in religious and charitable work, is a monument to his consecrated life.

The Reverend Edward A. Caldwell was then appointed to the charge of this prosperous church, the appointment being a high tribute to years of faithful service in minor parishes. Father Caldwell was born and reared in this city, and received his early education and religious instruction in the school of the church over which he now presides as priest. Before the altar at which he says mass and hears songs of praise, he received his first communion, and at the confessional in which he hears of the sorrows of the penitent, he first confessed his sins. To him his people are like one great family which he has known and loved for a lifetime, and which, having known him from boyhood, regard him as their very own.

### St. Joseph's Roman Catholic Church

In 1872 a number of Catholic families connected with St. Mary's Church, among whom was Michael Jeffers, set about to form a new parish in the northern part of the city. This section of East Saginaw was then beginning to build up by railroad men in the employ of the Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad, and the church people saw an opportunity to plant the Cross on fruitful soil. They entered with zeal upon the task of organizing the new parish, and in the Summer of 1873 the Reverend Richard Sweeney was appointed to the charge. He was a young man of exceptional ability, and grew in favor with his people, so that soon the church numbered one hundred and thirty-five families.

The commodious and churchly house of worship, which was begun in 1872 at the corner of Sixth and Sears Streets, was finished soon after Father Sweeney assumed charge, and has served the congregation to the present time. In due course a pastoral residence was built adjoining the church, and a parochial school and Sisters' house erected at the rear. From a small beginning made forty-four years ago, St. Joseph's parish has become one of the best equipped Catholic churches in Saginaw Valley.

Father Sweeney remained the beloved pastor of St. Joseph's, laboring long and late for the spiritual welfare of his flock, for forty-one years, and relinquished his charge only when, old in years, his enfeebled state of health compelled such action. This was much against the wishes of his devoted





parishioners, many of whom he had baptised, communed, married and watched over as they grew from childhood to manhood, and became steadfast followers of the faith.

This able and consecrated prelate was succeeded by the Reverend K. J. Whalen, who assumed charge January 1, 1914. He is a priest of commanding figure, a powerful preacher, a true friend of the poor and needy, and is endeavoring by spiritual grace to worthily continue the good work of his predecessor, and afford comfort and assurance to the two hundred families which comprise his flock.

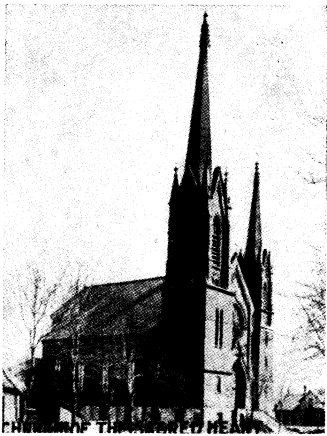
#### **Church of the Sacred Heart**

Like St. Joseph's parish, the Church of the Sacred Heart sprang from the mother church of St. Mary's. On the fifteenth of January, 1874, the first meeting of the German Catholics of the old congregation was held to elect trustees of the new parish. A. Baumgarten acted as chairman and Arnold Nachtweih as secretary of the meeting. The trustees were: Adolph Schmidt, Alois Grohmann, Gottfried Fritz, Simon Frey, G. Schmitt, William Casparr, George Wirtz, Bernhard Berghoff, Caspar Echenbach, Joseph Hamburger and John Henrigs.

The corner stone of the building intended for the use of the church and school was laid on August 24, 1874. The location, at the corner of Sixth and Cherry Streets, was most advantageous for steady growth of the parish, and time has shown the wisdom of its selection by the founders of this prosperous and influential church. At that time the congregation consisted of only forty-five families, but by personal efforts and large sacrifices they at length completed the building, at a cost of seventy-three hundred dollars. The school opened very auspiciously on December 14, 1874, with Miss Weiss and Miss Geisler as teachers in German and English. On Sunday, December 20th, of that year, the first service was held in the new church-school, the pastor being the Reverend Hugo Praessar.

The priests' residence on Cherry Street was built in the Summer of 1878 by Father Joseph Reis, who assumed charge of the parish September 28, 1876. During his remarkable pastorate covering a period of forty years, he has witnessed great changes in the city and wonderful growth of the Roman Catholic churches. His congregation has grown steadily, and at present consists of one hundred and sixty families. The school has also kept pace with the advancement of Catholicism, and now has enrolled one hundred and forty-five scholars, divided into eight grades. At present the school is in charge of the Dominican Sisters.

The present church edifice, which is an excellent example of true ecclesiastical architecture, was commenced in 1891. The high basement was soon completed and finished off, and used for church services for a number of years. Meanwhile the erection of the imposing superstructure was under way, and was completed in 1911 at a cost of eighty thousand dollars. In this large and beautiful church the congregation worships, listen to songs of praise, and receives spiritual comfort from the scholarly discourses of their beloved rector, which are spoken in both English and German.



Father Reis, the aged prelate who still ministers unto his people, directs the activities and benevolent work of this prosperous church. There are few priests of the Church in Michigan whose labors for the upbuilding of the Kingdom of Christ have been of longer duration; and the Church of the Sacred Heart, in both its material and spiritual establishment, is to a large degree a monument to the patient, persistent and kindly endeavors of this consecrated priest.

Other Roman Catholic parishes of Saginaw are: Holy Family Church (French), Father Louis M. Prud'homme, priest in charge, on South Washington Avenue opposite Hoyt Park; Holy Rosary Church (Polish), on Annesley Street between Thirteenth and Fourteenth Streets; Lady of Mt. Carmel Church (Italian), on Warren Avenue between Lapeer and Tuscola Streets; and St. Josaphat's Church in the northwest section, and its parochial school with two Dominican Sisters and one hundred and twelve pupils.

### St. John's German Evangelical Lutheran Church

Another of the older church organizations is St. John's German Evangelical Lutheran, whose valuable property is situated on Germania Avenue between Second and Third Streets. The substantial brick church was erected in 1868, at a cost of thirty thousand dollars, and is of a style of architecture common to that period, and has a chime of bells in the tower. In later years a comfortable and attractive parsonage was erected on Second Street, adjoining the church, and in 1915 a large brick school house replaced the old wooden building on the corner of Germania and Third, which had served the needs of the society for nearly fifty years.

The form of worship observed by this society is distinctively Lutheran as laid down in the rubrics of the Reformed State Church of Germany. The Reverend Conrad Volz was pastor of this church for many years, and was greatly beloved by the old and the young. Under his able ministrations the society increased in membership and in influence, and upon his death his son, the Reverend Frederick Volz, who for many years had labored in the church as assistant to the pastor, was called to the pastorate, and continues the good work of the church.

In addition to the older churches of the Lutheran faith there are: St. James German Lutheran, on the east side of Washington Avenue, south of Ortman Street; St. John's Evangelical Lutheran, on the southeast corner of Bliss and Elm Streets; St. Paul's Evangelical Lutheran, South Fifth Street, between Germania and Lapeer; Trinity German Evangelical Lutheran, corner of Cherry and Ninth Streets, and Zion Lutheran at Hancock and North Mason Streets.

Other denominations of the Christian Church are: St. Mark's Evangelical at Lapeer and Third Streets; the Michigan Avenue Evangelical; Church of Christ, at Genesee Avenue and Burt Street; Genesee Avenue Congregational, at 1815 Genesee Avenue; Free Methodist, at Clinton and North Harrison Streets; the First Methodist Protestant, corner of Farwell and Fourth; the Stevens Street Methodist Protestant, at Stephens and Fayette Streets; the First Church of Christ (Scientist) on Warren Avenue at Hayden Street; The Free Methodist and the Seventh Day Adventist, and the Hebrew Temple B'Nui Israel.

The total valuation of all church property, including parochial schools, in the City of Saginaw, is placed at one and a quarter million dollars, and is increasing each year.

### St. Mary's Hospital

This well known and admirably conducted institution was founded August 22, 1874, and incorporated as the "Sisters of Charity of St. Mary's Hospital, East Saginaw." Father Vanderbom, rector of St. Mary's Church, and Doctor B. B. Ross, a leading physician of this city, were largely instrumental in establishing the hospital, which was first opened in a private house on Washington Street, near Wickes Brothers plant. The location selected for the hospital building, on South Jefferson Avenue, was a most fortunate one, as it is the highest ground in the vicinity and permits of expansion to meet future needs. The first wooden building was completed in 1875, and accommodated from eighty to ninety patients.

The Sisters of Charity of St. Vincent de Paul, by whom the hospital is conducted, is an ancient order of consecrated women with the mother house in Paris. In the United States there are two provinces governing the order, the mother house of the Eastern province, with which the Sisters of St. Mary's are connected, being at Emmitsburg, Maryland, near Baltimore, and that of the Western province at St. Louis, Missouri. The four Sisters who opened St. Mary's Hospital were Sister Mary Elizabeth Roche, deceased; Sister Cecelia Casey, now connected with the retreat at Dearborn, Michigan; Sister Agnes Bauer and Sister Regina Wren. During the forty-one years of the hospital's existence it has ministered to thousands of suffering humanity, and attained a high reputation for the excellence of its service and care of patients.

In the days of extensive lumbering in this section of Michigan, St. Mary's came into prominence for its care of injured and maimed woodsmen. For a small individual fee paid to the hospital early in the logging season, as a sort of insurance premium, the Sisters agreed to care for and nurse back to health the holder of the insurance certificate, in case of accident or sickness. This was a noble work, and furnishing protection, as it did, to thousands of lumber-jacks in the north woods, brought a steady income to the Sisters of Charity.

At length the demands upon them for medical and surgical treatment became so great that a new and larger hospital building was laid out on an extensive scale, providing for future as well as the present needs. To this end the south wing of a magnificently planned hospital was built in 1891. It is a substantial brick structure with a height of four stories and high base-

ment, which is capacious and well equipped. At some future time the main building will be erected without destroying the architect's original scheme of noble proportions or beauty of design. At present the grounds are capacious with broad driveways and well-kept lawns, which are a source of pleasure to convalescent patients and to the public in general.

The fine new hospital building was opened under the supervision of Sister Frances O'Connor, who ably conducted its noble service to mankind until 1905. She was succeeded by Sister Eugenia Gill, who still has charge of the institution. In 1916 there were twelve Sisters and thirty-three nurses in the training school, who cared for the ninety to one hundred patients, the normal capacity of the institution. The old hospital building, since the erection of the new structure, has been used as the nurses' home.

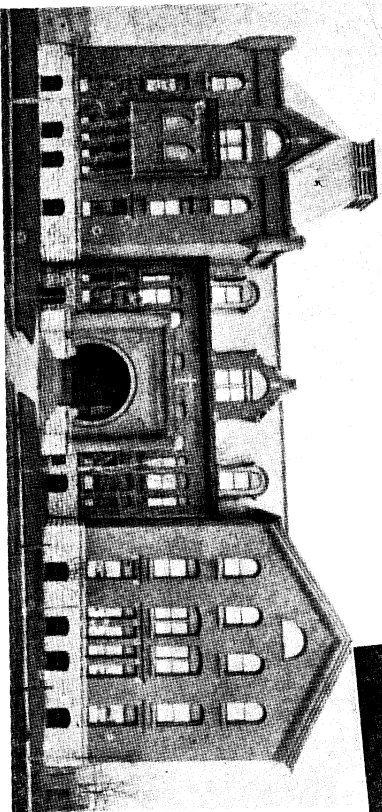
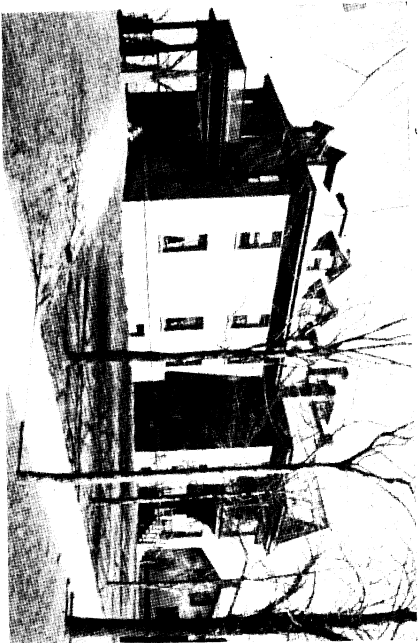
### St. Vincent's Orphan Home

Another institution of benevolent character conducted under the direction of the Sisters of Charity of St. Vincent de Paul, is St. Vincent's Orphan Home. This institution was founded in 1875 by Sister Cecelia Casey, and was first opened in a small house in Hoyt Street. Soon after, the increasing demands on the Home and the liberality of Catholic churchmen, resulted in the erection of a wooden building on the corner of Howard and Emerson Streets, a very appropriate site affording ample play grounds for the children. This institution carried on a successful work for indigent children, continually growing in influence and public favor until the great fire of May 20, 1893, when the Home and its contents was entirely destroyed in the conflagration.

Not discouraged nor disheartened by their great loss, the Sisters at once set about to rebuild a more substantial structure on the site of the old. To their appeals for aid in their inspired work, Roman Catholics and others not connected with the Church responded liberally, and in 1895 the present structure was opened. Sister Cecelia directed the activities of the Home until July, 1915, when she retired and was succeeded by Sister Marie Murphy, an able and competent director.

At present there are about one hundred and fifty children cared for in the Home, requiring the devoted services of nine Sisters. The work of the Home is not confined to receiving and caring for children of Catholic families; all indigent children are welcomed, and no child under any circumstances is refused admission. As the noble work is very largely among the very poor and needy, or unfortunate class, very little revenue is received from the parents or natural guardians of children so entered, and the income is principally derived from the annual banquet given on the anniversary of Washington's Birthday, by the devoted women of the Catholic parishes. Citizens of all creeds and denominations of the Christian Church, to the number of about fifteen hundred, support this event with enthusiasm, and a considerable sum is derived for the support of this worthy institution. In addition to this source of income an annual collection in all Catholic churches is made throughout the Diocese, for the support of St. Vincent's and a home of similar character in Grand Rapids.

Aside from the physical care of children, mental and moral training is carefully attended to by the Sisters in charge. The little one's life is made as bright and cheerful as possible, and everything is done to care for those bereft of parents. In all eight grades of schooling are conducted by the Sisters, and instruction given in sewing, darning, cooking and house work, and domestic science to older children. Afterward the inmates are sent to industrial schools conducted by the Church, and prepared for the practical work of life.



SOME OF SAGINAW'S BENEVOLENT INSTITUTIONS  
The Woman's Hospital  
St. Vincent's Orphan Home

Saginaw General Hospital  
Home for the Friendless

### Saginaw General Hospital

This public institution so well situated off the main travelled thoroughfare between the east and west sides, and looking on beautiful Bliss Park and the fine group of buildings and grounds of the Michigan Employment Institution for the Adult Blind, is one of Saginaw's leading hospitals. It was incorporated May 4, 1887, and opened to the public in June, 1889. The main hospital building as originally planned soon proved too small for the demands upon it, and in 1897 the Amasa Rust Memorial Annex was built. Three years later another addition, the Farnam C. Stone Memorial Annex, was erected at the north end, providing for a model operating room which is well equipped for the large amount of work which comes to the hospital. The property now comprises three structures, the main four-story hospital building, the Christian Endeavor Hospital for contagious diseases, opened December 7, 1894, and the Davis Nurses' Home, opened in 1907.

The main building has accommodations for twenty-four patients in the general wards, and there are twenty-one private rooms. One of these is maintained by the Martha Washington Chapter No. 113, O. E. S., while others are cared for as memorials by some of our prominent citizens. A feature of the hospital is the visiting nurse system for the care of tubercular cases, which was established in 1905 under endowment of Mrs. Paul F. H. Morley. This has proved a most helpful and successful work, and led to a system of visiting nurses for general cases. In 1914, the city having taken over the work of caring for tubercular cases in its fine new hospital, erected especially for this purpose, this feature work of the hospital was discontinued, and the endowment fund transferred to the building fund for the new hospital.

For several years Miss Anna Coleman was matron and superintendent of this hospital, and under her able direction it was brought to a high state of efficiency. Under her direct control were sixteen nurses and other necessary help for the conduct of the institution. The assistant superintendent and the head nurses are all graduates of recognized training schools, and under them are nurses in training in the efficient service of the hospital, who are graduated upon completion of their terms of training. The present superintendent is Miss Edith R. Jefferies, and has as her assistants an able corps of nurses. The medical staff is composed of sixteen of Saginaw's representative physicians, with Doctor E. E. Curtis, president, and Doctor J. W. Hutchinson, secretary.

The organization of the hospital embraces fifty active members of whom Mrs. Wallis Craig Smith is president; Mrs. George L. Burrows and Mrs. S. S. Roby, vice-presidents; Miss Carrie M. Durand, secretary; and Charles H. Khuen, treasurer. The board of trustees comprises twenty-four members, in addition to the above named officers, meetings of which are held on the second Thursday of each month. There is also an advisory board composed of nine prominent citizens.

To place the hospital on a firm and enduring basis, endowments have been made to it by interested citizens, and the total is now one hundred and fifty-eight thousand eight hundred dollars. The principal endowments are the Harriott F. Stone and Louise Miller Rust funds, of twenty-five thousand dollars each; the Helen Wells (Mrs. P. F. H. Morley) fund of thirty thousand, and the Arthur Hill fund for charity and relief of inebriates, of fifty thousand dollars. The total annual income, including hospital service earnings, is about thirty thousand dollars; and the total expenditures are about twenty-nine thousand dollars.

The location of the hospital, a short distance from Michigan Avenue, is ideal for the quiet and seclusion of patients. Though they can see through

the park the traffic of the thoroughfare, they are sufficiently removed from it to escape its noise and confusion. The public demands on the hospital are increasing year by year, and it will soon be necessary to erect an entirely new and modern structure at this location. To this end the creation of a building fund is now under way, and in a few years a more commodious and adequate building will doubtless replace the old.

### The Woman's Hospital

Pleasantly situated on Janes Avenue, at the corner of Seventh Street, is the Woman's Hospital. It was established in 1888 by prominent women of the city, and the association owns a substantial three-story brick building, with ample grounds, to which several additions have been built; and there is space for future expansion. The grounds are well shaded and neatly kept, adding attractiveness to invalids and patients. For several years the hospital was in charge of Miss E. A. Dark, who came from Buffalo, New York, in 1907, her wide experience in hospital work making her services a valuable acquisition.

Under the matron of the hospital are fifteen nurses who are efficient and capable of caring for the sick. A training school for nurses is also conducted in connection with the hospital, and its graduates are eagerly sought for in medical cases. The hospital has a general ward which will accommodate five patients, and there are also several private rooms. There is also a large nursery capable of caring for a goodly number of infants. The entire building and annex are admirably laid out, and has a fully equipped operating room; and the hospital is well appointed for the great work it is doing for womankind. The average number of patients in this hospital is about twenty.

The present officers of the Woman's Hospital Association are: Mrs. John C. Davies, president; Mrs. Emmett L. Beach and Mrs. William S. Linton, vice-presidents; Mrs. William Polson, recording secretary; Mrs. John A. Cimmerer, corresponding secretary, and Mrs. Charles A. Howe, treasurer.

During its existence of twenty-eight years the hospital has found in Wellington R. Burt a true benefactor. Besides contributing to its general fund for operating expenses, on two occasions of pressing necessity he came forward with donations amounting to thousands of dollars, to lift the mortgage on the property and strengthen its financial condition. This is another illustration of Mr. Burt's wholehearted and generous interest in every project for the betterment and advancement of his home city.

### Home for the Friendless

In order to care for infants and children either bereft of parents, or whose parents find it convenient or necessary to place them out of their homes while they are at work, the Home for the Friendless was established. In 1870 some of our leading women who were identified with local charities met together and organized the association, which controls and directs the institution through a board of managers. These women assume all responsibility of the maintenance of the home, and to provide necessary funds for the work, the annual rummage sale has become a regular event, the treasury being replenished by upwards of two thousand dollars thereby.

The Home occupies a fine brick structure situated at the corner of Howard and McCoskry Streets. Surrounding it are spacious premises affording ample play grounds for the little ones. On the front is a well-kept hedge, and the lawns are maintained in the best condition. On an average there are from eighty to one hundred children cared for each year, all ages of the

homeless finding shelter and loving care within its walls. The Home is doing a noble work, and is capably managed by the matron, Sarah J. Graham, who has filled the position for a long term of years.

The present officers of the Home are: Mrs. George W. Morley, president; Mrs. James T. Wylie, vice-president; Miss Elizabeth Gage, recording secretary; Mrs. William F. Schultz, corresponding secretary, and Mrs. John F. Boynton, treasurer.



THE NEW Y. W. C. A. BUILDING, ERECTED IN 1912

### The Young Women's Christian Association

At a meeting of a few women interested in a good cause, held at the home of Mrs. William Callam, on October 13, 1891, the Young Women's Christian Association came into existence. The conditions surrounding girls and women in business life twenty-five years ago were not conducive to their comfort or happiness. There were no rest rooms or other place where they could go during their noon hour, and those who lived or roomed at some distance from their places of employment brought lunches, which they ate on dry goods boxes, behind their counters and office doors, often without even a glass of water. To correct these conditions and throw a helpful influence over working girls, this association was duly organized.

The first board of managers was composed of Dr. Harriett V. Brooks, president; Dr. Della Pierce, vice-president; Julia Hoffman, treasurer; Elizabeth J. Stalker, corresponding secretary; Mrs. C. N. Kendall, recording secretary; and Mrs. Gurdon Corning, Mrs. Elizabeth J. Freeman, Mrs. G. B. Wiggins, Mrs. Fred Wolpert, Mrs. O. A. Sears, Mrs. I. Humphrey, Mrs. T. P. Whittier, Mrs. J. H. Simpson and Mrs. Thomas Merrill.

On January 15, 1892, a few rooms were rented in the Chase Block, on North Washington Avenue, and furnished through the generosity of Mrs. Sears. In these rooms business girls and women were welcomed that they might have a cup of hot tea, cocoa or milk with their lunch. Miss Bernice Hunting, of Flint, was called as the first general secretary, and gospel meet-



ings were held every Sunday afternoon and on Friday evenings. A few classes for study also were formed. After two years of helpful work the finances were harder to meet, notwithstanding the liberal support of the founders and others interested in the association, and for a time things looked dark.

With the coming to the association as secretary of Miss Carrie J. Woodhull, who assumed her duties on March 17, 1894, a brighter era for the association dawned. Under her wise management, covering a period of ten years, the association grew steadily in membership, which meant new life and activity. Larger rooms were soon necessary and on January 1, 1895, the association moved to quarters in the First National Bank building. Here the educational work began to grow, and Mrs. Grace Whitney Evans, of Detroit, brought to the association a religious interest, and her personal helpfulness during that year left a lasting imprint on the characters of the members. In 1896 the association again moved to more adequate rooms in the Brewer Block, on North Franklin Street, which were occupied for nearly sixteen years.

Miss Woodhull's efficient work as secretary was manifested in the interest shown in the various lines of social, educational and religious work. An employment bureau was also established by her, to which many young women owe their start in business life. During the Winter of 1898-99 there were two hundred and sixty-six women enrolled in the evening classes, and thirty-three passed the international examinations. Doctor Ostrom delivered a series of lectures on "First Aid to the Injured," and fifteen of the thirty-five enrolled in this class were given the Red Cross diploma on graduation. Many girls and women who were not privileged to enter and complete High School courses attended the association classes to study bookkeeping, arithmetic, English literature, penmanship, stenography, domestic science, physical culture, music and other branches. The classes in commercial arithmetic were taught by C. P. Colvin, in penmanship by Miss Ella Feige, and in stenography by Mrs. J. B. Howell, and these were perhaps the most successful. Mrs. Ellen K. Hooker, whose personal influence meant so much to many girls, taught the English literature classes for two years; and Mrs. Alice Freeman Palmer gave several inspiring talks, her lecture on "Personal Reminiscences of Whittier, Holmes and Phillips Brooks," being recalled by those who were present.

Thus the association grew steadily in membership and influence, and the quarters in the Brewer Block, which so long had seemed ample, were too inadequate to meet the expanding needs of the work. At this crisis in the affairs of the association, Wellington R. Burt, with characteristic generosity, offered to give the sum of twenty-five thousand dollars toward a fund for the erection of a suitable building, for the future as well as the present needs of the association.

Bequests had previously been made by Mrs. Louise C. Bartlett, of one thousand dollars, Jennette E. Rose, of one hundred dollars; and Mrs. Grace Whitney-Hoff had sent two hundred dollars from abroad. Mrs. Mary Hanchett Stone solicited five thousand dollars in the city for the purchase of a building site, which was of her selection on South Jefferson Avenue, opposite Federal Park, a very commanding and convenient location. Additional funds were raised by the young business women and others connected with the association, in a spirited subscription campaign, and plans for the structure were speedily prepared. The corner stone of the imposing building was laid on June 6, 1912, with appropriate ceremonies. In the magnificent building which soon rose, with perfect appointments, gymnasium, rest rooms, dormitory arrangements, and cafeteria which is open to the public, the association began its twenty-first year of noble work.

The spacious building is constructed of brick and reinforced concrete, with a facing on the street side of dark paving brick and Bedford stone, and is four stories in height with a high basement. On the first floor is a broad hall leading to the stairway and to the cafeteria, to the right of which are the reception and reading rooms, and to the left the offices of the association. On the second floor rising through the third at the front is the gymnasium, which is well equipped with all needful apparatus for physical training of women. Back of the gymnasium is the dormitory which also extends over the whole of the fourth floor, affording accommodations with most pleasant surroundings and helpful influences to many otherwise homeless young women.

The present officers of the association are: Mrs. William J. Spencer, president; Mrs. Julian Keeler, Mrs. W. H. Wallace, Mrs. H. B. Brooks, Mrs. F. E. Button, vice-presidents; Mrs. Peter Mitts, recording secretary; Mrs. C. L. Judd, corresponding secretary; Mrs. Charles T. Kerry, treasurer, and Miss Amelia Huss, general secretary.

To Elizabeth J. Freeman's interest in the welfare of girls and young women, and her persistency, is largely due the establishment and permanent work of the association in this city; and to express the sincere appreciation of her labors for the betterment of conditions surrounding working women, Mrs. Freeman was unanimously elected President Emeritus, in 1910.

Because of Mr. Burt's large heartedness in making possible a finely equipped building for the special needs and enjoyment of the girls and women of Saginaw, truly the present and future generations of his fellow citizens do and will honor him with their deepest gratitude.



THE CAFETERIA OF THE YOUNG WOMEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION



A GROUP OF PROMINENT CITIZENS AND OTHERS IN FRONT OF THE SAGINAW CLUB

[From a photograph taken in 1907 during the Semi-Centennial Celebration]

### The Young Men's Christian Association

The origin of this worthy institution in East Saginaw is not definitely known. It may have had its inception in the Young Men's Association, which was formed October 7, 1864, and organized August 18, 1865. This association was managed by a board of directors elected annually by the members, the first board being composed of Henry C. Potter, president; George L. Newcombe, vice-president; Irving M. Smith, treasurer; L. C. Storrs, recording secretary; George F. Lewis, corresponding secretary; and George B. Boardman, William L. Webber, George C. Warren, Chauncey H. Gage and S. W. Yawkey. It was closely allied with the East Saginaw Library Association, which had rooms on Washington Street; and every winter an interesting course of lectures was given, some of the best public speakers of the time being engaged. Any resident of the county above the age of eighteen years was eligible to membership, the initiation fee being two dollars and the annual dues the same amount. On October 18, 1875, the Library Association turned over its library and lease of its rooms to the Board of Education; and it is probable that the Young Men's Association dissolved at that time.

About 1886 a few earnest church workers at East Saginaw met together to organize a Young Men's Christian Association. There appeared to be a need for an organization of this kind in the rough lumbering town, and men of the leading churches became interested in it. A committee was appointed to search out suitable quarters, and after thorough inspection of available halls, vacant rooms in the Bates Block on Franklin Street were secured for this purpose. These quarters were nicely fitted up with reading room, office and bowling alley on the ground floor, and a well-equipped gymnasium and baths on the floor above. With additions of space and improvements from time to time, these rooms were occupied by the association for a number of years. Like nearly all associations of the kind the revenue derived from membership dues never met the annual expenses, and only by liberal subscriptions of interested business and professional men was the association kept alive.

At length it seemed advisable to reorganize the association and erect a suitable building for its needs, in which the good work among young men and boys could be conducted on a larger scale. The rooms then occupied by the association, on the second floor of the Pere Marquette Building, were poorly adapted to its work which had languished, and there had been difficulty in getting competent men to conduct it. Finally the aid of prominent business men was enlisted in the new project and a whirlwind subscription campaign started. The old rooms of the association were closed and a vacant store at the corner of Franklin and Tuscola Streets rented for the campaign headquarters. Wallis Craig Smith was the chairman of the subscription committee, which comprised a number of representative young business men.

After a spirited campaign of about three weeks duration the subscriptions reached a total of more than fifty thousand dollars, and the prospect of a successful issue of the campaign was very bright. But at this juncture differences arose among the workers and church members over minor technical questions of management of the association, a rupture occurred in the ranks, some of the larger subscriptions were withdrawn, and the whole project was abandoned. Shortly after this unfortunate occurrence, which was in 1905, the affairs of the old association were wound up and the organization dissolved. Since that time there has been no effort to re-establish the association on the East Side, and no concerted work among the young men and boys, outside of the church societies, has been attempted.

### The Association on the West Side

In the palmy days of the old association, when the membership included a number of young men of the West Side, a branch was established there. This department afforded practically all the privileges enjoyed at the parent association home, and accomplished a good work in that part of the city. Early in 1895 it was decided to transfer this branch to an independent organization to be known as the West Side Y. M. C. A. of Saginaw. The organization was effected and assumed the liabilities and took over all the assets of the old branch.

The officers of the new organization were: W. P. Morgan, president; J. F. Barrows, vice-president; S. S. Roby, secretary, and L. A. Burrows, treasurer.

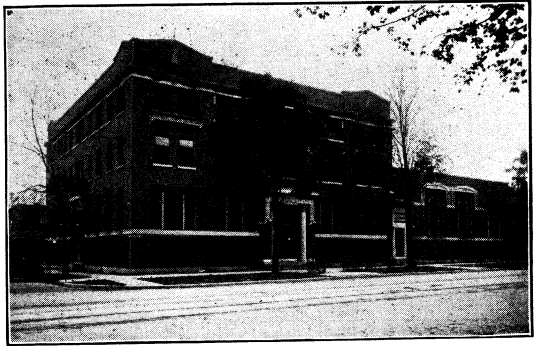
These, with the following men, constituted the board of directors, J. D. Leland, C. H. Green, Thomas Jackson, D. W. Briggs, A. T. Bliss, E. T. Loeffler, Stewart Williams and T. C. L. Zander. There were thirty-one charter members in all.

At that time the work was carried on in rented quarters, and was much restricted on account of limited facilities. J. W. Whitney was the general secretary, but was succeeded April 1, 1895, by Stewart Williams, and he the following year by I. E. Baker. In 1898 an assistant secretary, John Hood, was provided to successfully carry on the increasing work of the association. On January 1, 1900, W. H. York became general secretary. About 1902 the association found itself in financial straits, and the house which had been acquired for its home was closed and the work discontinued. For about seven years very little was done, there being only an occasional meeting of the board of directors.

Upon the death of Aaron T. Bliss, on September 16, 1906, the association became the beneficiary of a bequest of twenty thousand dollars, to be used toward the erection of a suitable building for its needs, or, in case a building was already provided for, the bequest was to constitute an endowment for its maintenance. On December 6, 1909, Arthur Hill died, leaving a provision in his will for twenty-five thousand dollars for the association.

These liberal bequests made by public-spirited citizens resulted in the re-establishment of the association, and the splendid building which it now occupies attests their interest in the welfare of young men and boys. In March, 1910, J. M. Davis was engaged to promote a campaign for funds for a building, and the following May it was carried to a successful conclusion. H. L. Markell was engaged as general secretary in August; and ground was broken for the new building in April, 1911. On October 1, 1912, when John Herzog was president of the association, the new building was opened to the public. The value of the property is approximately one hundred thousand dollars.

The Y. M. C. A. building provides for all forms of association work. It has a splendidly equipped physical department, consisting of a modern gymnasium containing a complete line of apparatus, and a thirty-two lap running track, a hand ball court, and locker rooms for seniors, visitors and



THE NEW Y. M. C. A. BUILDING

business men. The swimming pool, which is one of the great features of the building, is one of the finest in the State. It is sixteen feet in width by sixty feet in length, and has a depth of three and a half to seven feet. Almost the entire length of the pool is under skylight; and there is a visitors' gallery along one side. The water for the pool passes through two efficient filters, a thousand gallons of fresh water being added daily, and a vacuum cleaner keeps the floor of the pool free of sediment.

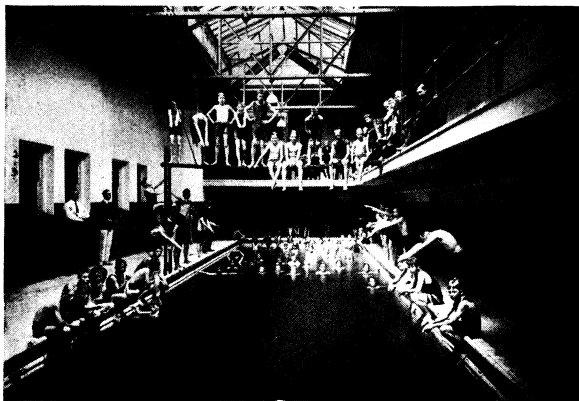
The social department of the association has commodious quarters on the lower floor, and is provided with three pocket billiard tables, one carom billiard table and two bowling alleys. On the second and third floors are forty-seven well furnished dormitory rooms, which are occupied most of the time by young men away from home. For the accommodation of the dormitory men and other members a self-serve restaurant is operated in a light, pleasant dining room on the first floor, the room also being used on occasions as an auditorium.

The boys' department is an association within the association, and has its own entrance on Ames Street. A large social room with many games is provided for the boys, also a reading room, a special locker room and shower baths. More attention is given the boys than to the men, and within the department are many and various clubs for the physical, moral and mental training of boys. The reading room on the main floor is supplied with Saginaw and Detroit daily papers, and the best weekly and monthly magazines published.

Mr. Markell continued the good work of the association until the Summer of 1913, and was succeeded by F. W. Boswell. He in turn resigned in September, 1914, and was followed by the present secretary, Phil B. Willis. Under him are assistant secretary F. B. Davis, physical director J. H. Fee, and boys' work secretary Doctor F. A. Poole.

The present officers of the association are: P. W. Staffeld, president; M. N. Brady, vice-president; George L. Burrows, Jr., second vice-president; J. C. Graves, secretary, and N. G. Begle, treasurer. The board of directors comprise these officers and the following: B. S. Tefft, J. W. Johnson, A. D. Bate, J. E. Anderson, C. W. Alderton, Newell Barnard, W. P. Powell, B. G. Appleby, Dr. W. L. Crego and George B. Bliss.

Upon the death of Latham A. Burrows, who was one of the most active workers in the association since its beginning, the Y. M. C. A. came into



SWIMMING POOL AT Y. M. C. A.

possession of a beautiful tennis court situated about a mile from the building. This property consists of two very fine tennis courts, an indoor base ball diamond, and a well-equipped club house.

In addition to the work which the equipment especially provides for, the association carries on other activities. In the course of the year many young men are directed to positions, movements of public interest are promoted, such as summer gardening, swimming campaigns and school play festivals. In the line of religious work there are Bible classes, and religious meetings are held regularly, the association co-operating with its controlling body, the Church.



GROUP OF GERMAN CITIZENS, 1865

F. Ziegner	F. Schade	C. Watz	C. Roseland
P. Geisler	J. Leidlein	E. Bruske	C. Schroeder
	Otto Schmitz		F. Palm
F. Wrege	J. F. Frey	A. Schmitz	

### The Salvation Army

Twenty-eight years ago the Salvation Army commenced work in Saginaw, first being located on the West Side. The barracks were on South Hamilton Street, and Captain Frazee was the officer in charge. Shortly after the work was extended to the East Side, the corps being located on South Franklin Street under the command of Captain and Mrs. Watts. Since that time the local army work has been in charge of Captain Hoare, Ensign Underwood, Captain Bouters, Captain Stocking, Adj. Mason, Captain Lawton, Ensign Porter, and Captain and Mrs. Atwood who are in charge at present. Evangeline C. Booth is commander of the Salvation Army in America, and Lieutenant Colonel A. E. Kimball is in command of this province.

The work of the Army in this city is extensive, and those in charge are at the call of the distressed twenty-four hours a day. They help the needy in sickness and poverty, and no call of genuine need is ever turned down. Services are held every night in the year at seven-thirty, and on Sunday at ten-thirty in the morning, while the Sunday School meets at one-fifteen. Praise meetings are held at three o'clock and Young People's meetings at six, followed by the regular evening gospel services at the usual hour. At Christ-

mas two hundred and fifty baskets filled with the needful things for a family dinner are distributed to the worthy poor of the city, which otherwise would not know the good cheer of the gladsome season; and an entertainment is given to five hundred children who are freely supplied with toys, candy and nuts.

All the various activities of the Army are supported by voluntary contributions of the rich and poor, that is, by the small offerings of the working class and by the larger sums of the wealthy. By this means the property at 130-132 South Baum Street, now occupied by the corps as a permanent place of worship, was secured, a large number of influential men of the city, among whom was Wellington R. Burt, making this possible by their generous financial support.

The corps now has a small band which is making progress under the leadership of Ellis Metcalfe, and renders effective aid at the song services. The Sunday School is in charge of Oscar McClure, and the Young People's Legion is directed by Mrs. Metcalfe. Besides Captain and Mrs. Atwood, who have charge of all local army work, there are Cadet Lockwood, assistant, Herbert J. Reynolds, William Harbrom, treasurer, Daniel Smalley, secretary, and Miss Bertha Harmon, secretary of the Junior Salvation Army.

In connection with the work there is a relief department and industrial store, in charge of Major Reynolds, where waste material is received and donations of various articles are used in the best possible way, distribution being made with a view of uplifting the needy rather than of pauperizing them.

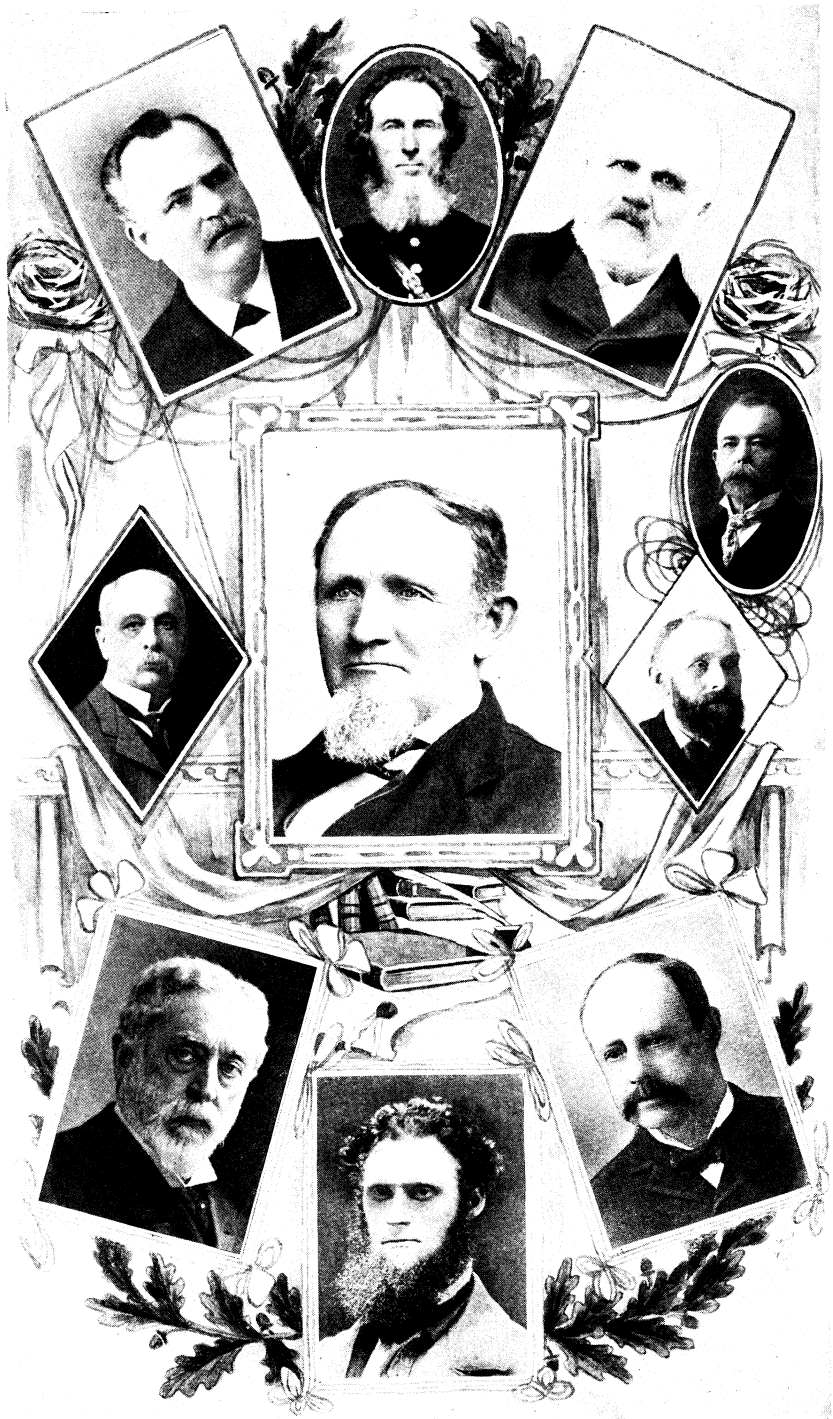
#### Rescue Missions

The City Rescue Mission, at 117 Lapeer Avenue, another helpful institution to the poor of the city, was organized in 1905 by Melvin E. Trotter, of Grand Rapids, aided by A. C. White and other earnest churchmen. In the broad scope of its work it reaches out a helping hand to the down-trodden and unfortunate, and relieves much suffering among the very poor and needy. Its noble work extends far beyond the scope of modern church activities, and hundreds of "down-and-outs" have been given practical and sympathetic aid and encouragement to live better lives. Many of these men have been saved, and some have taken up mission work among their fellow men and conduct missions elsewhere. For its motto the mission has "Who-soever Will May Come."

The first superintendent of the mission, when it was located at 111 Genesee Avenue, was George W. Trotter, a brother of the founder. By his earnest efforts the mission became thoroughly established, it grew in influence and endeavor, and was recognized as an important factor in evangelical work. Several years after the quarters were removed to Germania Avenue between Washington and Franklin Streets; and in 1913 the present hall on Lapeer Avenue was secured. There is increasing need for a mission building equipped with additional Bible class rooms and dormitories, and other facilities to make the work even more effective.

A distinctive feature of the mission is the "open door," by which the missionary work of the churches is greatly broadened. Its doors are open from eight-thirty in the morning until nine at night, and persons come in from all walks of life, in every condition, some to be sheltered from the cold or receive material aid, others through curiosity, or because they heard the call to lead a better life. They all hear the gospel story, for every night in the year it is preached and salvation freely offered them. In 1915 four hundred and forty-one gospel services were held in the hall, with an average





SOME PIONEER MEMBERS OF THE "GERMANIA"

C. Watz  
 William Barie  
 A. Schupp

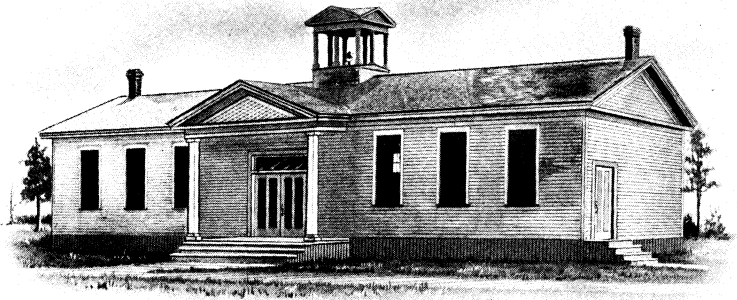
A. L. Bingham  
 Fred A. Koehler  
 James C. Davenport

V. Bude  
 C. Oppermann  
 Daniel Holst  
 Chauncey H. Gage

attendance of forty-two, resulting in two hundred and eighty-six confessed conversions, and two hundred and three others who were enough interested in their own salvation to request prayer.

Fellowship meetings of the workers are held at nine-thirty on Sunday mornings, and the mission Sunday School meets at three in the afternoon. The average attendance of the Sunday School is well above one hundred, John Deford being the acting superintendent. The men's Bible class meets at four fifteen under the instruction of Charles H. Dennison. There are also a girl's Bible class and the Women's Society which are doing a splendid work.

Other activities of the mission included three hundred and ninety-two calls during the year upon the sick and needy, by the City Missionary, in which aid was extended in many ways, and more than one thousand articles of clothing were distributed and groceries and fuel placed in homes where most needed. Good homes were found for a number of children and old people, who were without the comforts of home, thus helping to preserve the morals of childhood and to relieve the sufferings of the aged. The city mission also conducts a free labor bureau, a relief work for boosting the



THE FIRST GERMANIA SCHOOL

under-dog, no less than two hundred and twenty-three men and fifty-one women having been aided in securing work. In every way the mission seeks to be a real friend of the man in trouble, always having in view the salvation of his soul.

Our citizens who are especially interested in the City Rescue Mission, and comprise its board of directors are: Doctor T. E. Howson, president; C. H. Parker, vice-president; D. H. Ellis, secretary; B. F. Griffin, treasurer; Robert A. Allen, superintendent, and E. V. Stark, F. W. Hollister, J. W. Johnson, Charles H. Dennison, W. H. Meader, Mrs. J. K. Rickey, J. Smith and Doctor Martha Longstreet. The mission is supported entirely by voluntary offerings of earnest church workers and others interested in benevolent work, the revenues for 1915, amounting to about twenty-three hundred dollars, being the subscriptions of four hundred and fifty persons.

The Central Rescue Mission on the West Side, which is doing a splendid relief work among the very needy, is another worthy institution which merits the support of our citizens. It was founded in 1909 by the late George A. Newberry, and its hall was opened for services on July 13th of that year. Mr. Newberry had been engaged in Salvation Army work here, but upon closing of the barracks he was prevailed upon by Riley L. Crane and other

interested persons, to remain and establish a mission. Thus the Central Mission was organized with Mrs. May C. Bliss as president, W. L. Paxson, secretary, and John W. Foote, treasurer.

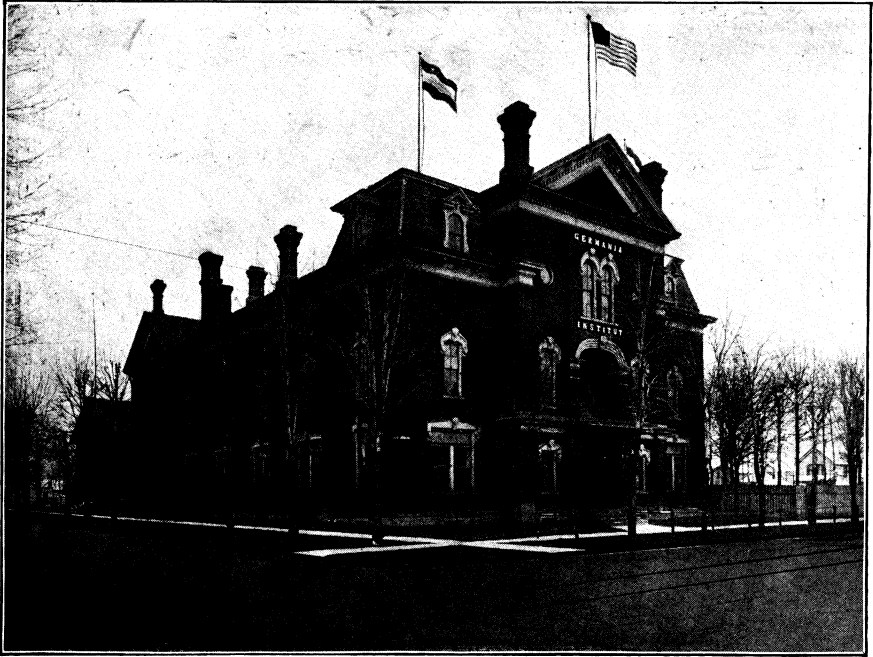
The work of the mission is very similar to that of the City Rescue Mission, the relief given to distressed and suffering humanity being its chief concern. Mr. Newberry, its superintendent, was the soul of the institution, and hundreds of unfortunate and profligate men have been raised up and given a new start in life. The most that the average "down-and-out" wants is a chance, and to give him honest employment and opportunity to make a decent living is far better than to extend to him the hand of charity. By thus aiding him he is not pauperized, and his self-respect is preserved.

To very few mission workers, however, is given the spiritual power and grace to successfully reach the hearts and better impulses of degenerates. Along these endeavors Mr. Newberry was greatly gifted, and he exerted a wonderful influence upon young men and women on the downward path. His services every Sunday in the county jail were productive of great good, prisoners seeming to feel that in him they had a real friend. So marked was this impression in the minds of sinful men — some hardened by dissipation and crime, that upon his death they gave their last few pennies for simple flowers for his bier. In all his labors for the uplift of the down-trodden, he had the earnest and devoted co-operation of Mrs. Newberry, his able assistant in the mission.

Their extensive Christmas activities for 1915 included giving a big mission dinner to the poor, to the number of two hundred and fifty, who otherwise would have gone unfed and without cheer, and also the Christmas tree festivities in which more than four hundred little children were made happy with toys and candy. A large share of the work fell upon the superintendent, and so weakened was he by his zealous adherence to his duties that a severe cold contracted the day after quickly developed into pneumonia, and he died on December thirtieth. His entire energies throughout an active and useful life were devoted to mission relief work, in which he was eminently successful, and few Christian workers in this city have been so universally beloved and esteemed.

The present quarters of the mission, at 115-117 South Niagara Street, were secured by Mr. Newberry and the board of directors through a bequest of the late Thomas Merrill, of fifteen hundred dollars. The property was owned by Ezra Rust who, upon being informed of the desire of the mission workers to own it as a permanent rescue home, offered it at a very low price and donated one thousand dollars to the fund. Thus the mission came into possession of a two-story brick building with forty feet frontage, which was remodeled to meet the needs of the work and otherwise improved. The location is considered well adapted to mission work, and it is hoped that the mission will eventually change the character of the street in its vicinity.

In its organization the mission has the co-operation as directors of F. E. Emerick, W. L. Case, L. Crane, Riley L. Crane, W. E. Crane, J. E. Anderson and Frank Abel; and the trustees are Mrs. May C. Bliss, Mrs. J. E. Ferris, Mrs. F. A. Hicks, Mrs. D. F. Morgan, Mrs. Dr. Goodsell and Mrs. F. E. Button. The Reverend Emil Montanus, rector of St. John's Church, is also deeply engrossed in the work of the mission, giving generously of his time and energies in visiting the sick and poor, in investigating cases of poverty, and offering sympathy and substantial aid to the needy. He is a frequent speaker at the regular evening services at the mission, and in numerous ways proves that he is a true friend of all in distress.



THE GERMANIA INSTITUTE

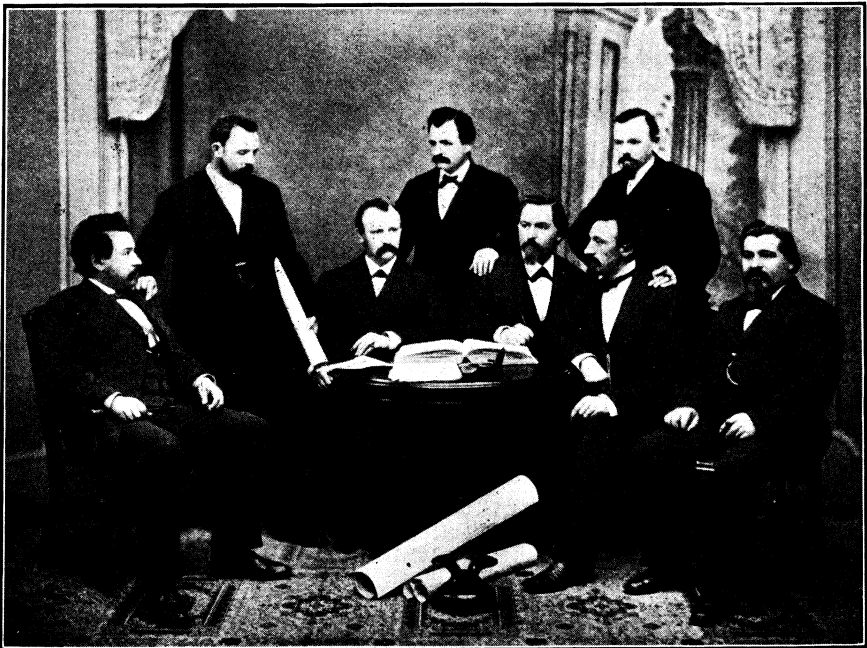
### The Germania

Of all the German Societies in Michigan, the Germania stands second to none in the State. Primarily the Society was organized as a Turn Verein. In the Spring of 1856 the following Germans met and formed a Turn Verein, viz.: Adolph Schill, Carl Stoecker, F. Ziegler, F. Lange, F. Palm, Johann Springer, Ed. Bloedon, Fred Koehler, F. A. Guenther, L. Baumgart, G. Richter and A. Alberti, and at a subsequent meeting negotiations were put on foot whereby entire block 58, Glasby's Addition to East Saginaw, was subsequently secured. This block is bounded by Lapeer, Third, Fourth and Tuscola Streets. Originally only a part of the block was purchased of Mr. Wm. F. Glasby, but permission was secured to use the entire block for turner exercises, provided the Society would "free the premises from stumps and underbrush." From an exclusive turn verein the association gradually added music, a kindergarden and a library, which latter is the largest German library in Michigan, comprising over eight thousand five hundred volumes. On the 26th of August, 1856, the Society adopted a constitution and by-laws, adopted the name "Germania," and the object to be "physical and intellectual development, social and musical entertainment of its members." On the 2nd of September of the same year the constitution was signed by all of its members. J. H. Springer was president; Jacob Schoen, vice-president, and Frederick Koehler, treasurer. The secretary's name does not appear. It was apparent that the Society, at the time of organization, did not contemplate to confine its membership to Germans, and does not at this date (1916). Among the names of signers of the constitution appear the following well-known Americans: Albert Bates, Truman Hawley, D. H. Nelson, G. L. Walker, Chauncey H. Gage, M. Y. Hood, George H. Richardson, James Rivard, W. H. Little, A. L. Bingham, B. B. Buckhout, Dan P. Fox, Sant Keeler, Jas. C. Davenport and Wm. Bordino.

Out of this simple Turn Verein Society grew what is today "The Germania." The original object of the society was considerably surpassed — its singing section, the "Maennerchor," is very popular, not only in the State, but at national festivals it gathered laurels for the Germania. The Society is proud of this branch. The library, which is so extensive, eight thousand five hundred volumes, it having outgrown the Society, is at the disposal of our city school teachers, the scholars of our public schools and Germans, and those interested in German literature in general, regardless as to being members of the Society.

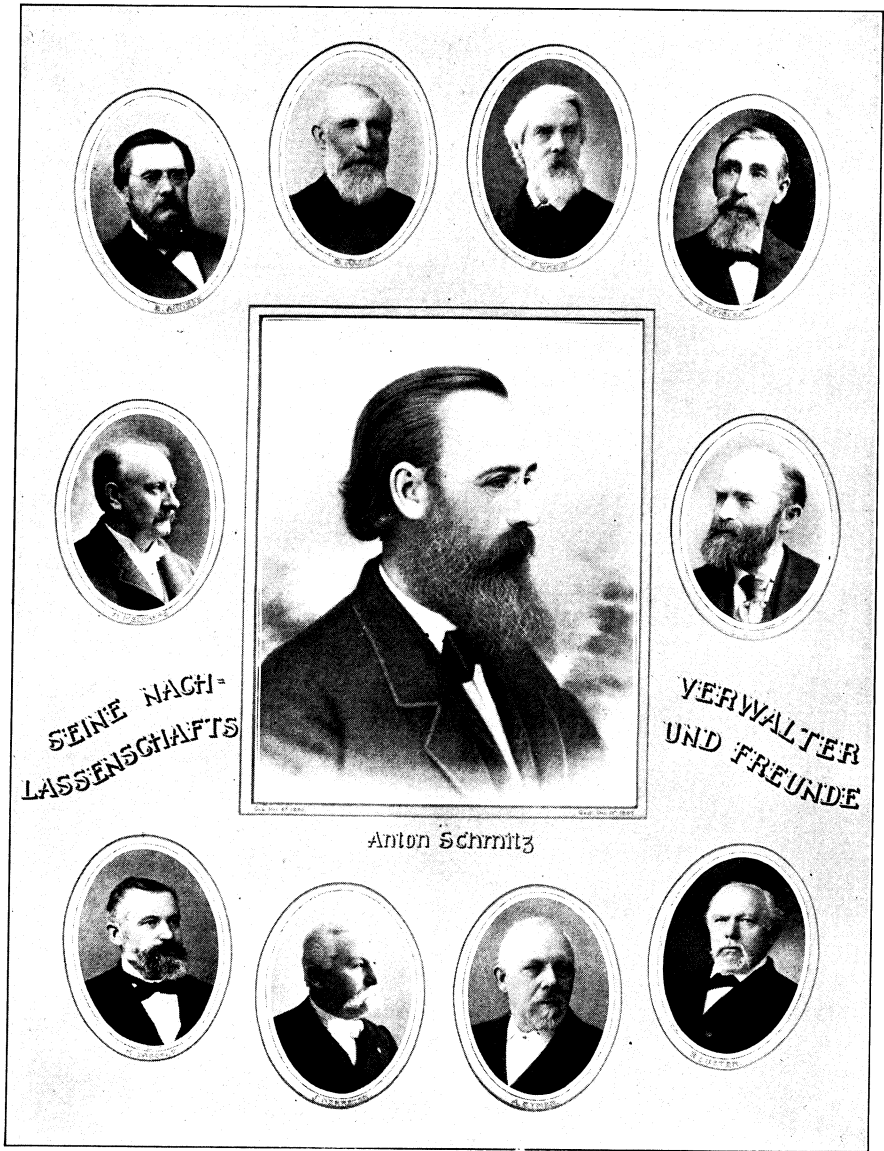
In the matter of education the Germania was foremost in effort to introduce the teaching of German in our public schools. As early as 1859 the Society engaged Mr. J. H. Springer as its first teacher, a small frame one-story building was erected, which, as time passed was enlarged, and finally in 1868 the Society erected a three-story brick building on the northern half of the block, in order to accommodate the increasing attendance and demand—the Germania School. Financial conditions compelled the Society to place a fifteen thousand dollar mortgage on this portion of its real estate. In a few years after this school was in full operation, the demand for German teaching being on the increase and the city board of education taking notice of the desire of its citizens, and the board desiring to introduce German into various of its grades and schools, a proposition came from the city and the school was sold in 1873, with the proviso that teaching of German must be continued in the school. In the early development of education in Saginaw the Germania was foremost in its assistance.

A sketch of the Germania would be incomplete without mention of the Society's benefactor, Mr. Anton Schmitz. Upon the death of Mr. Schmitz, October 10, 1869, which was accidental, he, while looking after the repair of a lightning rod on his building where the Barie department store now stands, fell from its roof and was instantly killed, his "beloved Germania" was bene-



MEMBERS OF THE GERMANIA BUILDING COMMITTEE

Daniel Patzer                      E. Feige                      E. J. Heyde  
 C. Beierle                      H. Melchers                      J. Nerreter                      G. W. Bruske                      J. G. Edelmann



SEINE NACH-  
LASSENSCHAFTS

VERWALTER  
UND FREUNDE

Anton Schmitz

THE FIRST TRUSTEES OF THE SCHMITZ ENDOWMENT

E. Anneke  
H. Melchers  
H. Vasold

B. Haack  
J. Nerreter

ANTON SCHMITZ

F. Wrege  
A. Eymer

P. Geisler  
Dr. B. Hesse  
R. Luster

fiary of this property. The present Germania Block (The Wm. Barie Department Store) was erected by the Society in 1899, and is a parcel of real estate that has been advancing in value from time to time and is worth at least one hundred and fifty thousand dollars today. It is the income from this source that enables the Society to support its various branches, as not one of them is self-sustaining. Anton Schmitz's generosity, coupled with efficient management on the part of the various executors of his estate, have made the Germania one of the wealthiest German societies in the United States.

The provisions of the Schmitz testament was undoubtedly responsible for the organization of the kindergarten. In April, 1876, Miss Henrietta Jahns, of Milwaukee, Wisconsin, (now Mrs. A. W. Barck), was secured as the first teacher, and on May 11, 1876, the school was opened with fifty-six children. One remarkable fact about this branch is that a majority of the little tots here are the children of American parents, and it is astonishing how readily and easily these three, four and five-year-old American children acquire the German language. This is a very worthy branch of the Society. The present average attendance is forty.

The Germania, at the present day, January, 1916, has a membership of three hundred and ninety-eight, of which sixty-two are Americans.

The Maennerchor comprises an average of thirty regular singers, but on occasions when district Saengerfests are held it often reaches over fifty. This branch is at present, and has been for some years past, under the efficient directorship of Mr. F. A. Berger, who has been in harmonious accord not only with the singers but with the Society in general.

The turner branch comprises a total of one hundred and twenty members in all its divisions and has been for the past eighteen years under the able directorship of Mr. Franz Dreier, than whom there is none more able in the State. He is also physical director in our public schools.



FRANZ DREIER AND SOME OF THE TURNERS, 1906

The officers this year (1916) are: G. F. Oppermann, president; Franz Leitzow, vice-president; George A. Klette, secretary, and Joseph Maerz, treasurer.

### Our Arbeiter Vereins

The Arbeiter Unterstützung Verein of East Saginaw is the parent German workingmen's association of the Saginaw Valley. In August, 1869, the first effort was made toward its organization, and on the twenty-sixth of the same month the actual incorporation took place. Its first incorporators were Adam Wegst, Conrad Fey, Christian Schlatterer, Heinrich Schmidt, Wilhelm Edinger, Johann Buckel, Doctor Friedrich Massbacker and Friederich Neidhardt. Christian Schlatterer (1916) is the only remaining living member of the original incorporators.

Shortly after its incorporation the Arbeiter Verein was consolidated with the German Young Maenner Club. The latter was a society organized for social and musical purposes and comprised perhaps forty young Germans, and this acquisition at once gave the Arbeiter Verein an impetus which materially assisted in its rapid growth.

The object of all Arbeiter Vereins in the State of Michigan, under the jurisdiction of the State Bund, is to assist its members when sick during a period of at least twenty-six weeks, at a rate of five dollars a week. In case of death fifty dollars is appropriated toward funeral expenses of the deceased, and in case of a member's wife dying a like amount is given for the same purpose. It is also the duty of the committee on sick to pay regular visits and to do all in their power to relieve distress.

As is usual, the first object of a growing society is to secure a home and toward that purpose the best energy of its members was directed. In 1880 the society purchased a block located on the corner of Janes and Fourth Avenues, upon which a commodious hall was erected at a cost of over twenty thousand dollars, and the remaining space converted into a beautiful garden. That the Verein of East Saginaw possesses suitable and beautiful quarters was evidenced by the fact that the State Bund has held its annual sessions here for four different years, 1871, 1884, 1898 and 1912.

Beginning with 1870 and continuing for forty-one years, the local Verein expended for sick benefits the sum of forty-eight thousand three hundred and seventy-five dollars, and for death benefits, that is, funeral expenses, twenty-three thousand three hundred and thirty-nine dollars; and during the same period paid into the State Bund one hundred and eighteen thousand three hundred and forty-seven dollars. From these figures it would seem that the local society is materially assisting the State Bund. The society at the present time numbers something over one thousand members, and its real estate is worth fully fifty thousand dollars.

The entrance fee for young men from eighteen to twenty-five years of age is gratis; from twenty-five to thirty years, one dollar; from thirty to thirty-five years, two dollars; from thirty-five to forty years, three dollars; from forty to forty-five years, seven dollars. The dues are one dollar a month.

The officers for the year 1916 are: John Leidlein, president; Albert Bender, vice-president; Ferdinand Heymann, corresponding and recording secretary; T. F. Reitz, treasurer; Doctor F. W. Edelman and Doctor Karl Kanzler, physicians; Karl Reusch, secretary for the sick; William Oldenberg, Edward Beuthin and Simon J. Koepke, trustees, and Ray Corbin, flag bearer.



The society has a women's auxiliary which was organized in 1896 with forty-five members. The object of the auxiliary is to render whatever assistance they can for the benefit of the male branch, at the same time to render sisterly assistance in time of need or distress to its members. In 1912 this auxiliary reported a membership of over six hundred, the second strongest in the State.

Its first president was Mrs. Augusta Walter whose energy and perseverance did more than any other influence to increase the membership of this worthy branch. They do not have any specified sum in case of sickness, depending entirely upon the circumstances of the case, but in case of death they allow the family two hundred dollars for funeral expenses.

### **The Arbeiter Unterstützung Verein of Saginaw City**

On Easter Sunday, April 9, 1871, this society was organized and the committee appointed to work out the constitution and by-laws comprised F. Dengler, A. Ganschow, C. Radke and A. Kern. The first regular meeting of the society took place on Sunday, April 16th, of the same year under the chairmanship of F. Dengler. There were present fourteen members who signed the constitution and elected the following as their first officers: August Ganschow, president; Rudolph Kern, secretary; Friedrich Dengler, treasurer, and Theodore Krauss, physician. Two weeks later a vice-president was added in the person of Adolph Laue, and a corresponding secretary, Emil Schoeneberg.

In the beginning of 1872 the society had increased to one hundred members, and in the following year a lot was purchased on the corner of Adams and Oakley Streets, for fifteen hundred dollars. Two years afterward, on the thirteenth of December, 1875, the society had erected a beautiful hall upon the site, and its dedication took place at that time. The society increased very rapidly and in 1908 reached a membership of one thousand and forty-seven, being the largest of any Arbeiter society in the State.

Since the organization of the Verein the following amounts to 1908, were expended: Funeral expenses, thirteen thousand seven hundred and ninety-one dollars; sick benefit expenses, forty thousand four hundred and forty-five dollars; received from the State Bund, eighty-six thousand four hundred dollars; paid to State Bund, one hundred twenty thousand eight hundred and six dollars; and the number lost by death was one hundred and seventy-five.

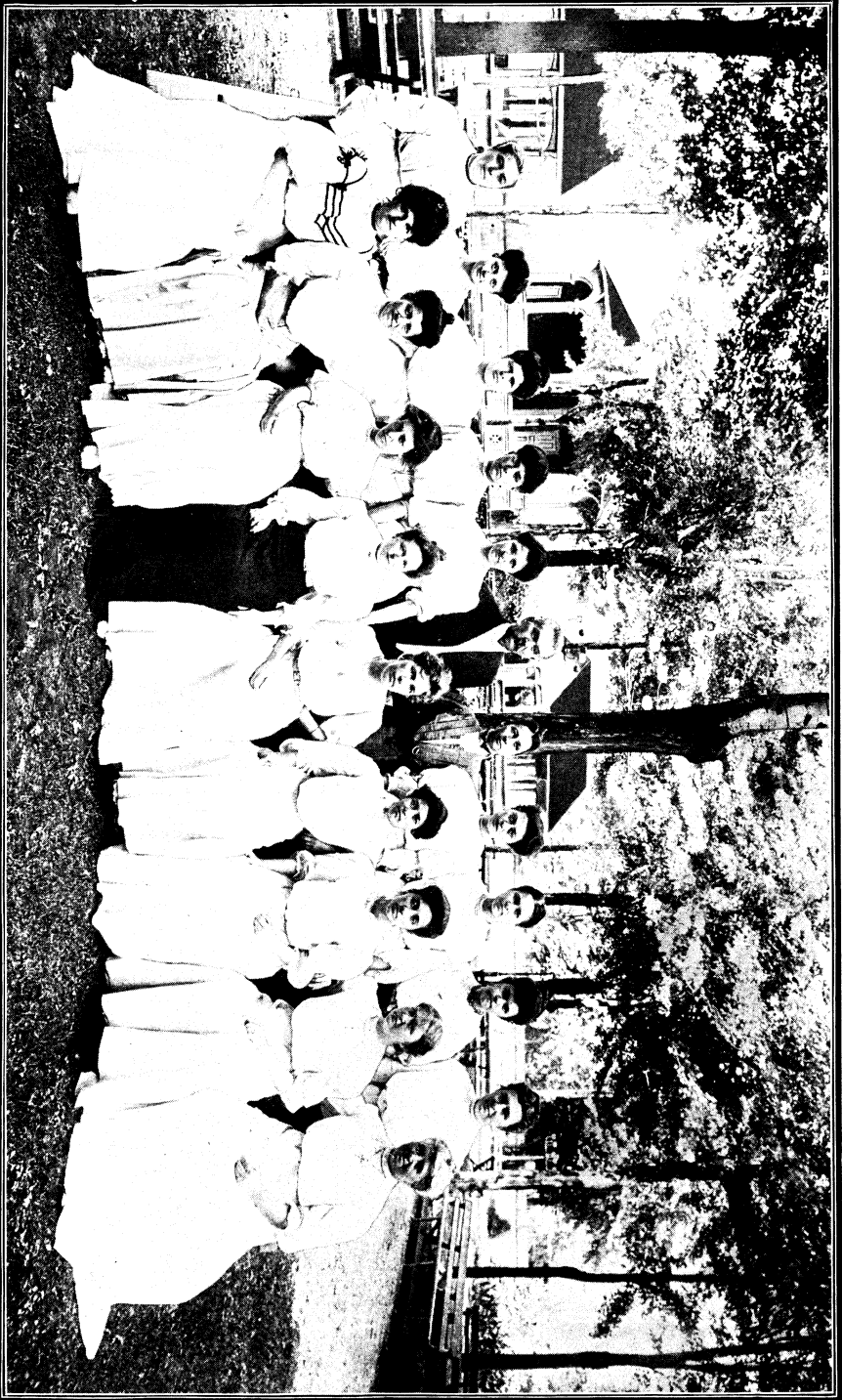
The present officers (1916) are: F. J. Plettenberg, president; J. L. Weigl, vice-president; John Broederdorf, secretary; Edwin Kersten, corresponding secretary; Henry Maier, treasurer; Albert O. Richter, Martin Fieger, John C. Krogmann, H. C. Reincke and William Geese, trustees; Emil P. W. Richter and L. Miller, physicians; August Borchard, chairman of the house committee; Emil Wagner chairman sick committee, and Edward Schrank, Phil Deibel and Paul Bohnhof, finance committee.

The society also has a woman's auxiliary which was organized on the twenty-eight of July, 1898. Its first president was Mrs. Elizabeth Deibel, through whose efforts the auxiliary grew rapidly. The first officers elected were: Elizabeth Deibel, president; Louise Kessel, vice-president; Ernestine Bluhm, secretary, and Emma Heidmann, treasurer. A short time afterwards an executive board was elected comprising the following women: Mrs. Minna Ewald, Bertha Krukenberg and Anna Plettenberg. The membership in 1908 was four hundred and seventy-two, and the number of members lost by death was twenty-one.

— Joseph Seemann.



THE GERMANIA MAENNERCHOR, 1905



THE GERMANIA DAMENCHOR, 1905

### The Teutonia Society

This well known and popular society of West Side citizens was organized in December, 1869, by the amalgamation of three German societies. The first of these was the Turn Society, which had been organized in August, 1856; and the others were the School Society and the Library Society, which had been formed soon after. They held their meetings and enjoyed amusements in Ritter's Hall, at the northwest corner of Water and Franklin Streets (now Niagara and Hancock Streets), in a building which is still standing.

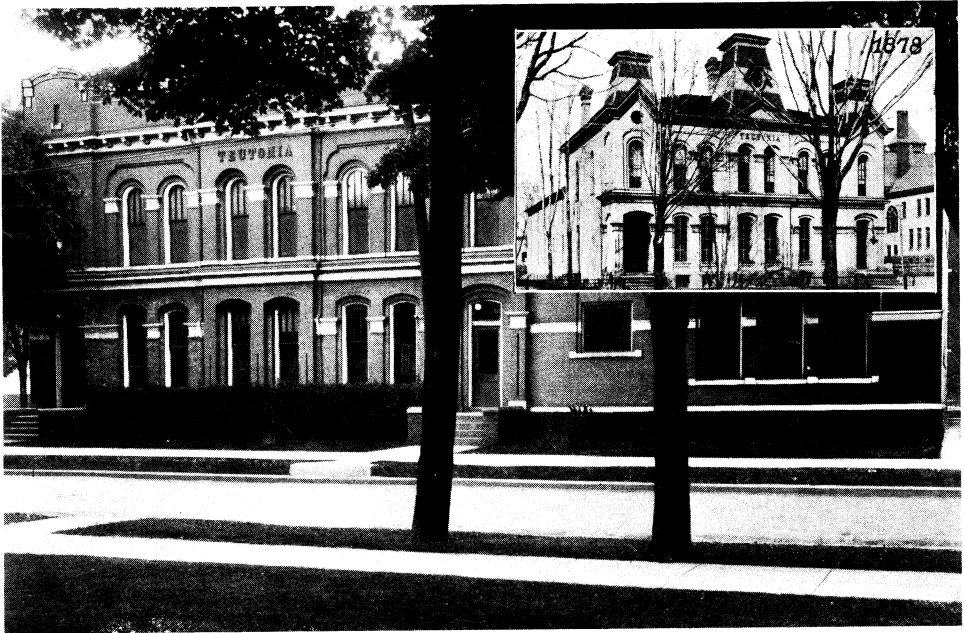
When the Teutonia Society had perfected its organization, the members decided to build a new hall of their own, and a lot on South Fayette Street, between Court and Adams Streets, was purchased for this purpose. A school house at the corner of Harrison and Adams Streets, which had been erected by the former School Society for the purpose of teaching the German language, was moved to the newly acquired lot, and the new hall was built as an addition to it. This building was completed in January, 1871, and was used for meetings of members of the society and various amusements given by the various divisions. In these social activities the singing sections gave concerts, the dramatic section presented plays, held masquerade balls, and otherwise added materially to the gayety of the town.

In the Summer of 1872 a fair was held in the new hall, which placed the financial condition of the society on a firm basis, and thereafter it assumed a permanent position in our social life. Several years later the wooden building in front of the main hall was replaced with a two-story brick building, which has since been used as a club rooms, thus greatly extending the scope and usefulness of the organization. Afterward a bowling alley was placed in the basement of the new structure, adding another feature to the social status of the society.

The Teutonia has always been in a fairly prosperous condition, but in the last ten years has made efforts to interest the younger members, and in this it has met with fair success. Within recent years the society has shown great activity in the various branches of its educational and social life, and is today one of the favorite social clubs of the city. Its valuable property consists of one-half of the block in the center of the West Side, a spacious brick building for club and social rooms, and beautiful lawns and attractive flower beds which add much to the civic beauty of this section of the city. The building is conveniently arranged for the purposes of the society, the club rooms and buffet being on the main floor, with library, reading room, and large dining room, together with a ladies' club rooms on the second floor, while the large hall with gallery accommodates all the big social functions held on the West Side.

Enrolled in the membership of the Teutonia are about three hundred men of the solid, substantial element of our citizenship, some of whom were identified with it in the early days and aided in giving it character and permanence. In 1907 a Grand Fair was held which resulted in providing a fund for expansion and giving new life to the society, with an incentive to further activities. The membership increased rapidly for a time, and in recent years little effort has been made to secure new members.

The recent officers, with one or two exceptions, have served the Teutonia Society for the past six years or longer, and are: J. W. Ippel, president; Peter Bauer, Jr., vice-president; Frank Herrig, financial secretary; Hugo Schreiber, corresponding secretary; Charles A. Khuen, treasurer. The directors comprise the above and the following: Charles T. Schoeneberg, Adolph Roeser, Otto Stempel, librarian, and B. Gaertner, steward. The representatives to the Central Board are Louis Liskow, Otto Stempel and John Eib.



THE TEUTONIA HALL

As it appears today and as it was thirty-eight years ago

### The Wah-wah-sums

The famous boat club, the Wah-wah-sums, was organized December 12, 1868, the first officers being L. Burrows, Jr., president; G. A. Lyon, vice-president; E. N. Briggs, secretary, and G. B. Grout, treasurer. It was a popular club in its day, the members were enthusiastic in their rowing exercises and practice, and eventually became very efficient in the art. Their peculiar cognomen was given them by Chief Shop-en-a-gons who, upon being asked to suggest a name for the rowers, asked, "Good men are they?" "Sure," replied Mr. Burrows. "Then call them 'Wah-wah-sum'—lightning on the water," said the old chief.

The story of this famous water team is a romantic one. In the sixties there was a crew of "east town" oarsmen, composed of Frank Wilkins, Jim Mack, Met Brown, Pat Glenn, Joe Stringham and Frank Lawrence, and their boat was named the "Neptune," from which they took their name. These boys in their showy uniforms would frequently row over to Saginaw City, pulling a beautiful oar, and sport around in those waters in a very tantalizing manner. They would then go ashore and get some refreshments at the new Taylor House and other places, meanwhile, putting on, as some of the "young bloods" thought, unwarranted "airs." These actions so aroused some of the husky fellows over there that they got together and formed a rival crew.

The first barge of the Wah-wah-sums, named the "Eclipse," was six-oared, and the boat house was directly south of the Mackinaw Street bridge. The stroke oar was Mr. Slenau, No. 2 oar was pulled by John Smith, No. 3 oar by Pat McElgunn, No. 4 by Henry Smith, No. 5 by Bert Payne, and No. 6 by Ed. Behan. Charles E. Wheeler, then with Rust Brothers, was coxswain. The rival teams first clashed in 1869, the Wah-wah-sums six and the

Neptunes eight oars, and the former won. From that time these sturdy lumbermen won race after race by brawn and skill, not knowing the sting of defeat.

Their first important event was in the regatta at Detroit in 1870, when they rowed in the six-oared barge race, making one and a half miles in eleven minutes forty-five seconds, and won the race. At Oconomowoc these oarsmen again showed their skill, and in the fourth annual regatta of the N. W. A. B. A. Association, held at Erie, Pennsylvania, July 10 and 11, 1872, they won the championship race with six-oared shells. At Toledo, in July, 1873, they won the championship race, and in the contests of the following year added to their honors.

The career of this club was exceptionally brilliant, and continued to retain its high repute in boating circles for many years. In 1881 the officers were: Edward I. Peck, president; R. J. Birney, secretary; Henry Smith, captain; L. A. Burrows, 1st. coxswain; E. J. Fisk, 2d. coxswain. Upon decline of the sport, late in the eighteen-eighties, the club disbanded.

### Military Companies of Early Days

The first military company in Saginaw was the Hampton Guards, organized at "East Town" in November, 1856, and was commanded by Captain Thomas.

The Saginaw City Light Infantry completed its organization March 10, 1859, and on April 25th following the company appeared on parade fully equipped. The first officers were: Louis Franke, captain; Henry Miller, 1st. lieutenant; Hugo Wesener, 2d. lieutenant; Theodore Sceurus, 3d. lieutenant; C. A. Ranke, secretary, and Charles Miller, treasurer.

The East Saginaw Light Artillery Company followed in September, 1859, with Captain A. D. Robinson, Jr., Lieutenant A. Ferguson, Sergeant A. L. Rankin, and Corporal R. H. Loomis, in command. Among the privates of this company were: F. N. Bridgman, James F. Brown, George F. Corliss, R. A. Eddy, G. F. Hobbs, J. H. Hilliard, Michael Jeffers, J. H. Mershon, J. E. Mershon, Sanford Keeler, Emil Moores, F. W. Wiggins, T. T. Willey, Z. W. Wright and A. F. Young.

On April 13, 1873, the East Saginaw Rifles was organized, and immediately attached to the Third Michigan Infantry, as Company E. D. D. Keeler, A. L. Button and F. H. Doughty were the first officers of the company. The seventh anniversary of the company was properly observed in 1881 by a public parade, after which the veteran corps met in the armory and elected the following civil officers: C. F. Shaw, president; Theodore S. Hill, vice-president; W. S. Doughty, secretary, and A. L. Button, treasurer. The company then numbered seventy rank and file, fully equipped and drilled.

Under the various enlistments for the Civil War in this county, the first company to leave for the front was the East Saginaw Light Guard, organized April 19, 1861, with Captain William Kremer and Lieutenant Emil Moores and John Leidlein in command. On the thirtieth of April the company, mustering seventy-nine officers and men, left for Detroit, the Flint & Pere Marquette Railway taking them to Pine Run, then the terminus of the road. From there they were conveyed by wagon to Fentonville, on the line of the Detroit & Milwaukee Railroad, and arrived at Detroit in the evening of the following day. On June 5th the company left for Washington as Company H of the 2d Michigan Infantry, the first three-year regiment which left the State.

The Hoyt Light Guards, under the command of Captain H. W. Trowbridge and Lieutenants William O'Donnell and Charles H. Hutchins, was organized April 24, 1861, with a strong desire to go to the front in the early days of the war.

The military census of the county showed twenty-one hundred and thirty men fit for service, of which number six hundred and eighty-six were already enlisted in active service, in September, 1862, including the 23d Michigan Infantry mustered in on the thirteenth of that month. During the year 1863 the county contributed three hundred and sixty-five men, making an aggregate of ten hundred and forty-one furnished since the beginning of the war. Enlistment continued through 1864, and the 29th Michigan Infantry was organized by John F. Driggs, July 29, 1864, and mustered into service October 3rd, with eight hundred and fifty-six officers and men. Their camp ground was on the west side of the river within the present confines of Bliss Park, where a stone marker was erected by the survivors on the fiftieth anniversary, in 1914, and unveiled with impressive ceremonies. The regiment left Saginaw October 6, 1864, under the command of Colonel Thomas Saylor.



COLONEL THOMAS SAYLOR

From October 31st until the close of recruiting on April 14, 1865, one hundred and thirty-four men enlisted, bringing the military representation of Saginaw to two thousand and thirty-nine, or about one forty-fourth of all the troops sent to the front by the State. The aggregate expenditures of the county for war purposes, up to and including the year 1866, was one hundred and fifty-eight thousand one hundred dollars; and the various sums granted to the families of volunteers amounted to eighty-one thousand. The donations of money, clothing and various articles was about seven thousand dollars which, added to the other expenses, made a grand total of two hundred and forty-six thousand one hundred dollars, a large sum of money considering the condition of the country at that time.

A review of the military campaigns in which the Saginaw troops participated, and in which so many patriotic men won a soldier's crown, would take in every field contested in Southern States. As this has been quite thoroughly covered in Chapman's History of Saginaw County, 1881, copies of which are still in existence and may be consulted by interested persons, it does not seem necessary or desirable to repeat the accounts here. It is sufficient to add that through the brilliant campaigns which marked the progress of the terrific struggle, there was scarcely a black letter in the records of the troops furnished by Saginaw, unexcelled bravery and magnificent endurance marking their service in the defense of the Union.

A review of the military campaigns in which the Saginaw troops participated, and in which so many patriotic men won a soldier's crown, would take in every field contested in Southern States. As this has been quite thoroughly covered in Chapman's History of Saginaw County, 1881, copies of which are still in existence and may be consulted by interested persons, it does not seem necessary or desirable to repeat the accounts here. It is sufficient to add that through the brilliant campaigns which marked the progress of the terrific struggle, there was scarcely a black letter in the records of the troops furnished by Saginaw, unexcelled bravery and magnificent endurance marking their service in the defense of the Union.

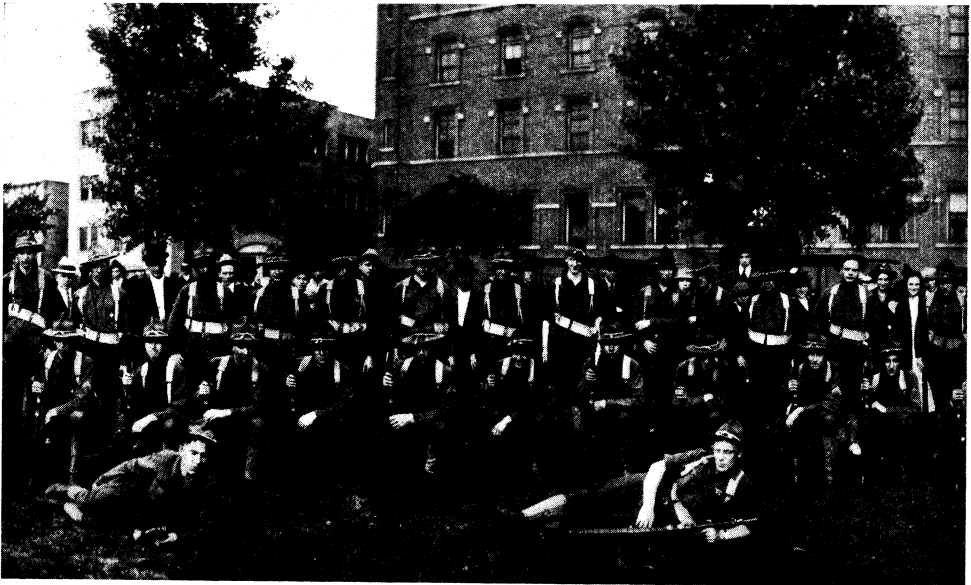
It is to be regretted that reliable information pertaining to the organization and equipment of the local military Companies C and D, (the latter now known as Company F, Thirty-third Regiment) of the Michigan National Guard, is not available for this work. A search of the early military records

of the State, in the Adjutant General's office at Lansing, divulged the fact that the former Company D, Third Regiment, was organized January 21, 1882. Company E, Third Regiment, located at East Saginaw, was organized April 13, 1874, and mustered out June 5, 1905.

Many changes have taken place since those days, and great progress made in maintaining this defensive arm of the State. Not only have large and substantial armories been built in the largest centers of population, but the equipment and arms have greatly improved, and much attention is given the physical condition of the enlisted men. The spirit of the troops as a defensive force is excellent, as was manifested in 1913 when the entire guard was sent to the Upper Peninsula to restore and maintain order during the great strike of copper miners, a task which kept the troops on duty for several months.

Nothing could be more conclusive of the general preparedness of the State troops than the prompt response to the call of the President, on June 18, 1916, for the mobilization of the National Guard. Within a few hours practically the entire Company F, like other companies throughout the State, had assembled in the armory in readiness for further orders. Recruiting was undertaken in an effort to raise the muster rolls to full strength of one hundred and forty, in anticipation of service along the Mexican border, but a true spirit of patriotism among the young men of Saginaw was evidently lacking, at a time when war threatened, and ninety-eight was the total enlistment of the company. On Saturday, June 24, the company and band entrained for the military camp at Grayling, where three entire regiments of the State troops mobilized on that day. Inspection, medical examination and mustering in the Federal Army service followed, in which about sixteen men of the local company were refused for physical defects or weakness.

Interest in the military and naval defense arms is enlivened in Saginaw by the presence of the Thirty-third Regiment Band, which was reorganized here about six years ago. The members of this excellent and popular military band were recruited from the ranks of Saginaw's leading professional musi-



ENLISTED MEN OF COMPANY F, THIRTY-THIRD REGIMENT, M. N. G.  
[From a photograph taken in front of the Armory, June 20, 1916]



cians, a number of whom had swayed under the baton of Professor Reiss in his famous organization of years ago, and also under Professor William Boos. The band has a membership of thirty-six and is ably directed by Professor Arthur Amsden, who has served many years with the State troops in the capacity of band leader. So high is the reputation of this organization that wherever it is heard, as well as in this city, it is greeted with enthusiasm and applause. During the Winter the Sunday afternoon concerts at the Auditorium, given by the Thirty-third Regiment Band, are largely attended, while in Summer the weekly concerts in various parks meet with the popular accord.

The officers of Company F, Thirty-third Regiment, Michigan National Guard, in 1916 and for several years past are: William H. Martin, captain; Frank McCullagh, first lieutenant; William Bohstedt, second lieutenant.

### The Saginaw Naval Reserves

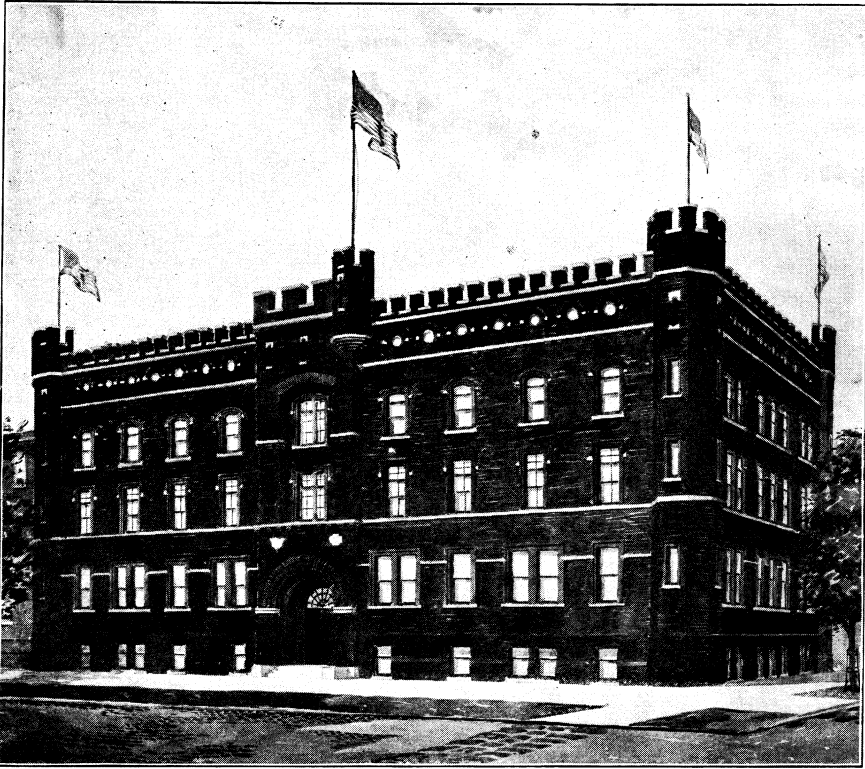
It was fitting the geographical position of Michigan, surrounded as it is on three sides by the waters of the Great Lakes, that the Naval Militia of the interior should have been founded on its shores. On February 28, 1894, a few enthusiastic yachtsmen of Detroit met and decided upon the formation of the Michigan Naval Brigade. Among them was Truman H. Newberry, destined in after years to hold the highest office in the Navy Department, and who was an indefatigable worker in the upbuilding of the Reserves. The first division of the brigade was quickly recruited to eighty members — professional and business men — with the inborn sense of duty of the patriot.

The object of the Naval Militia is to furnish the navy of the United States in time of war, with an auxiliary force of well drilled and seasoned crews, trained in navigation, engineering, gunnery and signalling, and familiar with and subject to discipline and ship routine. The organization has the same relation to the navy that the State militia has to the regular army; and is of great importance, since it is impossible to recruit trained bluejackets from the ordinary pursuits of life in time of need.

From the beginning made in Detroit the movement spread, and in the Fall of 1894 Samuel F. Owen, Rollin A. Horr and others, who had some military training, organized a division in Saginaw. On December 6th about forty professional and business men representing the younger element, met at the Bancroft House, signed the articles of incorporation, and proceeded to effect a permanent organization. This division, which took the name of Second Division, Michigan State Naval Brigade, was soon recruited to more than sixty members; and elected officers as follows: Samuel F. Owen, lieutenant, commanding; Rollin A. Horr, lieutenant, junior grade; Lorenzo Burrows, Junior, and James H. Gilbert, ensigns, and Charles A. Wood, assistant paymaster.

The petty officers of the division were: Fred J. Buckhout, boatswain's mate—first class; John R. Mearns and Arthur C. Perrin, boatswain's mates—second class; C. D. TenEyck, gunner's mate—second class; Ira D. Alden, quartermaster—second class; Edwin C. Peters, Charles A. Khuen, J. Will Grant, Herman A. Wolpert, coxswains; J. H. Goodby, Junior, Elmer B. Norris, gunner's mates—third class; and Frederick A. Dudley, quartermaster—third class.

During the Winter of 1894-95 the reserves were drilled in infantry tactics, the handling of arms, in knotting and splicing, gunnery and general orders. The armory was located in the three-story brick building at 113 North Washington Avenue, the second floor being used for club rooms, office, locker rooms and storage for accoutrements, while the third floor with its high ceiling was a suitable drill hall.



THE ARMORY, ERECTED IN 1909

In July, 1895, the division joined the second and third divisions, of Detroit, in a cruise in the vicinity of Mackinac Island, old Fort Mackinac being the headquarters of the brigade. The gunboat *Michigan*, manned by officers and bluejackets of the United States Navy, lay in the harbor, and each morning the reserves with their own officers, under Lieutenant Gilbert Wilkes, brigade commander, went on board the antiquated war ship. There they went through various drills, the handling of the thirty-two pounder guns, and were instructed in general ship routine, including "clearing decks for action," "all hands to quarters," manning the capstan to "up anchor," and "laying over the masthead" which consisted of climbing the ratlines on one side of the ship, crossing over the masthead, and coming down on the other side. In the evening the divisions returned to the barracks at the old fort.

On the third day, before boarding the *Michigan*, two men from each section were detailed for target practice on shore. Ten rounds were fired in the morning and ten in the afternoon at the rifle range, the target being at a distance of two hundred yards. Coxswain Edwin C. Peters carried off the honors of the day in this practice, scoring sixty-one out of a possible one hundred points.

On the *Michigan*, which steamed out into Lake Huron, the divisions were drilled in gunnery, the targets being placed three hundred rods from the ship. Special details were engaged in sub-calibre practice with the three-inch rifles. There was a heavy wind and a choppy sea, which interfered with accuracy of aim at the bobbing target nearly a mile away, and Fred A. Dudley was the only man to hit the mark. At a subsequent practice, when the sea was less choppy, Arthur Beese made three successive hits, being the best record of this cruise.

In 1896 the Second Division cruised in the old *Michigan* on Saginaw Bay, off Point Aux Barques, and in the numerous gun and boat drills added practical experience to their previous training in armory and on board ship. The weather during a greater part of the week of the cruise was stormy, and the amateur sailormen were confined closely to the ship's quarters, little shore leave being granted. Lieutenant Commander Leutze, U. S. A. commanded the old gunboat, and so severe and unyielding was he in the unpleasant duty of training the landsmen that the boys facetiously dubbed him "Old Rain-In-The-Face." Lieutenant Marble was another officer of the *Michigan*, whom the reserves disliked exceedingly. The following year the three divisions mobilized at Fort Mackinac for further instruction and drills on board the *Michigan*.

During the Spanish War the Michigan Naval Brigade saw actual naval service and warfare on the Atlantic. To the number of almost two hundred and fifty officers and men, they comprised the crew of the auxiliary cruiser *Yosemite* in blockade duty off the coast of Puerto Rico, and were engaged in several bombardments of Spanish Forts. There were no casualties in the brief engagements, and the divisions returned when the war was over with the men in good physical condition. This was quite in contrast with the weak and emaciated condition in which the members of the State Militia returned home after their terrible experience in Cuba.

Within the last ten years the naval militia has grown more rapidly, and there are now two battalions of six divisions comprising the Michigan State Naval Brigade. The total enrollment is four hundred officers and men. The fourth division of the first battalion is located at Benton Harbor, on Lake Michigan, while the divisions of the second battalion are located at Hancock, on Lake Superior, and Escanaba on Lake Michigan. The training ships manned by the brigade are the *Don Juan de Austria*, of eleven hundred and



SAGINAW NAVAL RESERVES ON BOARD THE  
"MICHIGAN," 1895

Sibbald  
Khuen Williams Mearns Buckhout Martin  
Mills Plummer Fitzgerald

thirty tons, stationed at Detroit, and the *Yantic*, in charge of the second battalion and stationed at Hancock. The former ship is of historic interest, being one of the Spanish ships sunk by Admiral Dewey in the Battle of Manila Bay, which was afterward raised by Captain Hobson, repaired, and brought to this country. The *Yantic* is one of the old frigates of the Civil War times, having been launched at Philadelphia, on August 12, 1864, and is of brigantine rig.

The Saginaw Naval Reserves of today is an entirely different body of men from that which perfected its organization and performed a useful part in the Spanish War. Another generation of young and enthusiastic patriots has grown up to take the place of those who by much personal sacrifice and hard work established the naval brigade. The conditions of service today are very different, too, from those of twenty or more years ago. Instead of rented halls ill adapted to the use and work of the reserves, the Second Division occupies a part of the perfectly appointed Armory at the foot of Janes Avenue, and facing Battery Park.

Within this solid structure of paving brick and concrete is every facility for the proper training of citizen bluejackets. There are spacious club rooms well furnished for the comfort and enjoyment of the members, a perfect system of lockers, splendid equipment and arms, and a four-inch rapid firing rifle complete, for practical instruction in the handling of big guns. On the water front, only a few rods from the Armory is a boat landing, where are kept the small boats of the division. These comprise a completely equipped steam cutter, of a type used on modern war ships, an eight-oared barge, and whale-boats. With this equipment it is possible to supplement the practices at oars on the river, with short cruises up and down the stream and on Saginaw Bay, adding greatly to the efficiency and skill of the enlisted men.

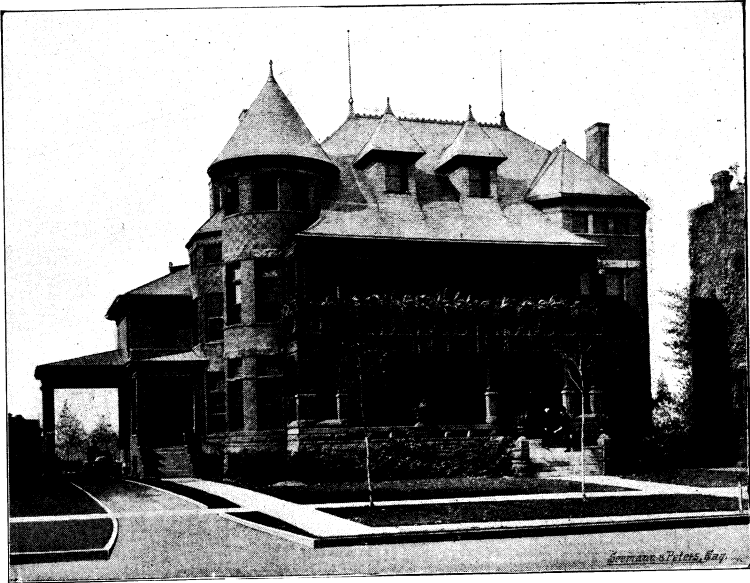
The present officers of the Second Division of the Michigan State Naval Brigade are: Warner L. Cooper, lieutenant, commanding; Guy Palmer, lieutenant, junior grade; John J. Spencer, Jr., and James F. Cooper, ensigns.

### The East Saginaw Club

On Thursday Evening, April 18, 1889, a number of representative citizens met together at the old council rooms in the Schmitz Block, for the purpose of organizing a social club. Among these men was Oscar F. Wisner, who had been active in arousing interest in the project, and in securing subscribers to it. The first proceeding of the meeting was to call Mr. Wisner to the chair, and to appoint Ferd A. Ashley secretary. The club was thereupon organized with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, and the articles of association were drawn up and signed by forty-seven members.

An election was then held and Oscar F. Wisner, William F. Potter, B. F. Webster, William Callam, William B. Mershon, George B. Morley, Robert M. Randall, J. Will Grant and John M. Brewer were elected a board of managers. This board then met and elected the first officers of the club, who were Oscar F. Wisner, president; William F. Potter, vice-president; A. H. Comstock, treasurer; and Ferd A. Ashley, secretary.

A committee was appointed to select a suitable site for the club house, and after careful consideration of available locations recommended the purchase of the lots on Washington Avenue, having a frontage of one hundred and forty feet. This property was soon after acquired at a price of forty-seven hundred and fifty dollars; and plans for a pretentious club house were drawn by W. T. Cooper. In due course the contract for the mason work was let to William C. Mueller, and that for the carpenter work to Michael Winkler, and the work of construction proceeded with diligence. The cost of the building, including the heating and lighting arrangements, was about twenty-five thousand dollars.



THE EAST SAGINAW CLUB

When completed the club had a home in which the members took a just pride. Everything that went into the construction was of the highest grade, and the furnishings and equipment were sumptuous and in good taste. Some of the fine leather furniture, in excellent condition after a service of twenty-seven years, is still in use. The property of the club has always been kept in good condition, and affairs well managed.

In the early years of the club the membership varied from two hundred and fifty to three hundred in number, but it was afterward limited to the former figure and then to two hundred and twenty-five. The low ebb in membership was in the period of 1898 to 1900, but in the succeeding ten years the city gradually regained its former prosperity, and the club acquired many desirable members from among the newcomers. It also took in a number of young men who, since its organization, had grown to manhood. The membership was then increased to about three hundred and fifty, with that figure as the limit.

Through these years of prosperity and decline of the club and its gradual rehabilitation, Thomas A. Harvey was one of its most interested and helpful members. Few indeed, in a period of more than twenty years, did so much for its advancement, aiding every movement for its increased popularity. In 1905 additional property was purchased at the rear of the club house, and the building enlarged at a cost of about ten thousand dollars, providing for a grill room on the main floor and a roof garden above. In this, as in other improvements, Mr. Harvey was one of the foremost members, subscribing liberally with others, for the additional stock then issued. He also inaugurated the movement for the acquisition of art treasures, oil paintings and pictures of real value.

In this department the club is indeed fortunate, possessing a number of paintings of more than usual interest. These were acquired from time to time by personal subscriptions of prominent members, the gift and list of donors being enrolled in the records of the club. There is a large full figure portrait of Shopenagons, the noted Indian chief, done by Couse, the well

known portrayal of savage life, and two or three other paintings of Indian characters, which are of high order. A group of western cowboy pictures, said to be of very unusual interest, was presented several years ago by Arthur Hill.

The present officers of the club are: Fred J. Fox, president; James E. Vincent, vice-president; A. H. Ale, secretary and treasurer; and R. Max Boyd, chairman of house committee. The president, vice-president and the following members constitute the board of directors: R. M. Boyd, E. A. Robertson, H. T. Wickes, E. P. Stone, H. S. Siebel, A. R. Treanor and H. R. Wickes. The membership is now about three hundred and eighty, with a limit of four hundred; and the value of the club property is placed at eighty thousand dollars.

#### Um-zoo-ee Club

In years long passed the Um-zoo-ee Club, an association of leading young men and women for the purpose of holding dancing parties, filled a prominent part in the social activities of the city. It was organized in the late seventies, at a time when the city was enjoying a phenomenal growth, and numbered among its members young men who have since become some of our most solid citizens. Its parties were the social events of the season, and for brilliancy and pure enjoyment have seldom been equalled since.

In the Winter of 1880-81 the officers of this club were: Thomas A. Harvey, president; William B. Mershon, vice-president; Albert H. Morley, treasurer; and W. S. Conklin, secretary. The committee of invitations was composed of J. Will Grant, chairman; Misses Mamie Wickes and Kitty Penoyer; the committee of arrangements comprised George B. Morley, chairman, Miss Winnie Smith and W. S. Conklin, while that on the "German" was Albert H. Morley, chairman, Miss Lizzie Thurber and William B. Mershon.

After a pleasant existence of more than twenty years, during which it was recognized as the leading dancing club, it at length disbanded, and only the recollection of brilliant and enjoyable events it promoted, linger with its one time active members.

#### Saginaw Country Club

The origin of the Country Club was in the gentlemen's game of golf, which was introduced into Saginaw about eighteen years ago. Charles H. Davis in his travels throughout the country had visited several prominent golf clubs, and had seen such men as Marshall Field, Robert T. Lincoln and other distinguished men climb high fences, break through miniature jungles, and wade shallow creeks in quest of the elusive ball. He was seized with an overwhelming desire to follow their pursuit, and returned to Saginaw thoroughly inoculated with the microbe of this strenuous game. Golf as yet was unknown in this part of the State, no one, excepting Samuel C. Kimberly, having had the temerity to allude to the sport.

Mr. Davis was determined to introduce the game into his home city, and accordingly laid out a nine-hole course at his farm on the Gratiot Road. When everything was in fine shape and the country clad in its richest verdure, he invited some of his friends and citizens out to the new links to see what the game really was. He was proficient in the game, and to those who realized its possibilities of out-door enjoyment, he instructed in the various strokes and rules of the game. Soon after, in the Fall of 1898, small groups of business and professional men might have been seen wending their way out to the Davis farm, where they spent a morning or afternoon in mastering the details and acquiring skill in the sport.



SAGINAW'S GRAND OLD MEN IN 1907

H. C. Potter

Age 85

Thomas Merrill

Age 92

This remarkable picture was taken in Dr. Potter's Grounds on the occasion of his

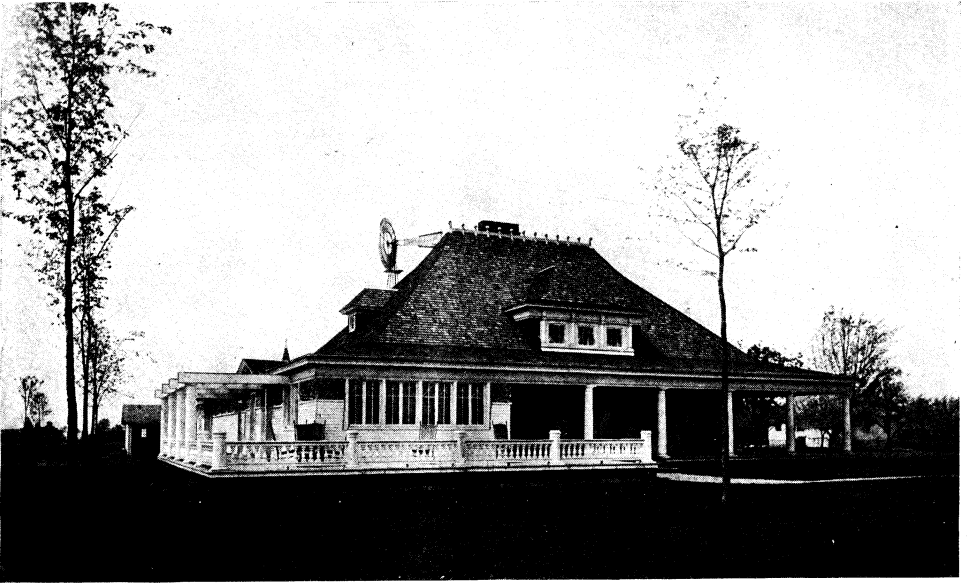
eighty-fifth birthday, July 15, 1907.

Joseph A. Whittier

Age 87

Amni W. Wright

Age 85



THE SAGINAW COUNTRY CLUB

From this beginning emanated the Saginaw Country Club, which was organized March 24, 1899, the articles of association being signed by John S. Porter, Frank R. Judd, J. Will Grant, A. S. Whitney, C. W. Penoyer, W. J. Wickes, Willis T. Knowlton, E. C. Fisher, H. E. Cross, Gilbert M. Stark, Albert H. Morley, Charles A. Rust, Doctor F. Gaertner, Charles E. Mershon and H. T. Wickes.

The following year the club purchased ten acres of the east part of the E. G. Rust farm, and erected an attractive club house and other buildings, leasing from Mr. Davis the nine-hole golf course. Ten years later the club purchased the course comprising about forty-seven acres of valuable land, and later added the property directly across the road, which was owned by Thomas A. Harvey and George B. Morley. This land embraced a picnic grove of large, natural-growth timber, and was fifty-one and a half acres in extent. Upon this tract a new nine-hole course was laid out and improvements made, so that the whole property is not only beautiful, but one of the best eighteen-hole courses in the country. The total land holdings of the club is one hundred eight and a half acres, and is piped with water mains and carefully tile drained.

Twice in the life of the club has the State Golf Tournament been held at its links, the second being played on the new eighteen-hole course. This event was a very brilliant affair, and was referred to by visiting golfers as the best tournament ever held in the State, the perfect golf course, the club house, the hospitality of the members and the good management of the special committee in charge, being highly complimented. Again, in the Summer of 1916, the club entertained the State Golfers in a grand tournament, which added to the high reputation already attained. The club has been further honored by James T. Wylie twice winning the State Championship, and Arthur Hill Vincent was runner-up in the State championship contest in 1913.

The past presidents of the club, the men who have been especially prominent in shaping the management of its affairs are: Charles H. Davis, James T. Wylie, George B. Morley and Clark L. Ring. During the past



year Lewis C. Slade was president, Gilbert M. Stark, vice-president, Edwin P. Stone, secretary, and James A. Montross, treasurer. The directors were George B. Morley, A. T. Ferrell, Amasa M. Rust, S. A. Sommers, Gilbert M. Stark, Wallis Craig Smith, Lewis C. Slade, H. J. Gilbert and Norman N. Rupp. The chairman of the Ground Committee was William B. Mer-shon; of the House Committee, Norman N. Rupp; of the Tournament and Entertainment Committee, S. A. Sommers; of the Ladies' Entertainment, Mrs. Mary E. Harvey; of the Tennis Committee, J. W. Symons, Jr.; of the Membership Committee, Wallis Craig Smith, and of Auditing, Gilbert M. Stark.

The club has an active membership of one hundred and fifty-nine, and an associate and non-resident membership of about one hundred. The valuation of its property, including the valuable land holdings close to the city limits, is placed at forty thousand dollars.

### Saginaw Canoe Club

This popular club composed very largely of the younger element of our best citizenship, holds a unique place in the social life of the place. It was organized to bring together young men, and to promote an interest in canoeing, boating and aquatic sports. To this end articles of association were drawn up on February 24, 1904, and signed by George L. Burrows, Jr., Fred L. Cribbins, W. H. Howland, George C. Potter, Edward T. Lindsay, V. E. Schwahn, James A. Griggs and Benjamin Farmer. Organization was perfected and the above members and Paul F. H. Morley constituted the first board of directors.

In the Summer of 1904 a small but attractive club house was erected at the west end of Riverside Park, facing the Tittabawassee. This was an ideal location for a canoe club, and it soon became a popular rendezvous of devotees of the sport. Members quite generally kept their canoes at the club house, as it was the most convenient point from which to paddle in the shade of overhanging trees along the banks, or through the "cut" into the Shiawassee.

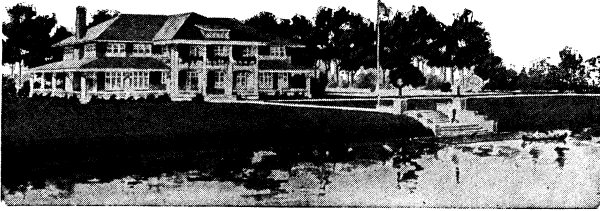


THIRTEENTH GREEN  
Saginaw Country Club Golf Links

The following year the scope of the club was extended to include dancing parties on the broad porch, and catering service was inaugurated. Afterward clay pigeon shooting was added to official sports, and a small stand was erected for the comfort of the members and their friends. A tennis court was later laid out to accommodate members devoted to this game. In all, the club has been prominent in promoting interest in wholesome out-of-doors sports and games.

At length it seemed advisable to extend the privileges and usefulness of the club by building a larger and better appointed club house. The question of location was debatable for a time, but the appropriate grounds on Osakina Island of Ezra Rust Park offered the greatest advantages to the greater number of members, and was chosen to the general satisfaction of the club. The capital stock was increased to ten thousand dollars, and a campaign started for increased membership. This move was successfully made and in 1913 the large new club house was erected and furnished in rare taste. The following Summer the grounds were brought to grade, levelled off and seeded, and otherwise improved. A landing for canoes and boats was constructed on the river bank close to the side of the club house, and proper housing provided for all canoes owned by the members. A good catering service was provided and everything arranged for the pleasure and comfort of members, which generally identify well conducted social clubs. The dancing parties and social functions given by the club or by individual members, are among the brilliant social events of the year, and the popularity of the club is increasing.

The members comprising the present board of directors are: Howard O'Brien, president; Archie Milne, commodore; Doctor J. A. Connery, vice-commodore; F. H. Jerome, secretary and treasurer, and Robert H. Cook, Herbert E. Cross, John Benson, J. C. Graves and T. A. Saylor.



SAGINAW CANOE CLUB ON OSAKINA ISLAND

### The Elks

Saginaw Lodge, No. 47, of the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks, was instituted June 23, 1886, and chartered on December 12th of the same year. The objects and purposes of the association are to protect and aid its members and their families, and to promote friendship and social intercourse, and to accumulate a fund for that purpose. The articles of incorporation were drawn up and signed by fourteen members as follows: H. D. Norris, O. F. Stevens, William C. Bernard, C. E. Ring, Edward W. Henssler, Hamilton Bogardus, James G. Harris, Merritt H. Eggleston, John Prendergast, John P. Hemmeter, Edward W. McCormick, Charles C. Stevens and W. K. Kerwin. The lodge was thereupon instituted by John R. Sterling, District Deputy, assisted by members of Detroit Lodge, No. 34, with thirty-eight charter members. The regular sessions of the lodge are held every Thursday evening at the Elk's Temple.

The first lodge hall of the order was in the McLean Block, on the north side of Genesee Avenue between Baum and Jefferson. As the lodge increased in membership the quarters were moved to the Lloyd Block on Washington Avenue, which, upon reconstruction of the building by the late Michael Jeffers, were again moved to the Metropole Building on North Washington. But as the order continued to grow in numbers and influence a club house, built especially for the social needs of the lodge was deemed necessary, and the valuable property at the northwest corner of Germania and Warren Avenues was purchased for five thousand dollars. Plans were then drawn for an elaborate and perfectly appointed club house, which was erected in 1906 and 1907, at a cost of about fifty thousand dollars.

The Elk's Temple is an imposing structure of paving brick and cut stone, two stories and high basement; and was dedicated on November 18, 1907, with appropriate ceremonies. It is the social center of the Elk's activities,

and affords every facility for the exercise of those cordial and fraternal relations among the members, which have made the order famous throughout the country. There are bowling alleys, billiard and pool rooms, a perfectly appointed grill, reading room with current magazines, and a small library.



THE ELK'S TEMPLE

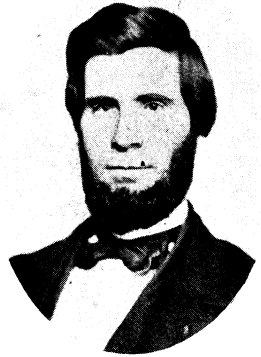
At the time the club house was projected there were about three hundred members enrolled in the lodge, but so successful has been the social and benevolent work of the club, that the membership in 1916 reached eleven hundred. As the building was designed to comfortably accommodate three hundred and fifty to four

hundred members, it has become greatly overcrowded, especially on occasions such as the annual Christmas tree festivities, and annual and special meetings. To meet the emergency a project was advanced in 1916 for the addition of another story to the building which, provided with casement windows, would serve as a roof garden in Summer, and a large auditorium in Winter. This improvement when realized will relieve the congestion on the other floors, and afford space for private dining rooms and other conveniences greatly needed.

Every Tuesday afternoon the dining room of the club is given over to the ladies of the members, and their friends, who quite generally avail themselves of the privileges extended, for the purpose of holding card parties, socials and teas.

The Past Exalted Rulers of the Elks are: Rowland Connor, James Stewart, George A. Reynolds, Thomas A. Kerr, H. D. Norris, W. H. Winnie, C. J. Reynick, C. F. Schoeneberg, J. W. Messner, W. C. McKinney, Emmett L. Beach, Julius W. Ippel, Edwin C. Peters, C. E. Gage, C. F. Bauer, C. E. Lown and A. W. Ganschow.

The present officers are: Alexander C. Sutherland, E. R.; Carl J. Bauer, E. Leading K.; Henry Naegely, E. Lecturing K.; Doctor Charles P. Stone, E. Loyal K.; Charles F. Nelson, Tyler; Robert T. Holland, Esquire; Herman Krause, Inner Guard; Rowland Connor, Secretary, and Henry Witters, Treasurer.



PIONEER RESIDENTS OF SAGINAW CITY

William Binder  
Mrs. Jennie Paine  
George L. Burrows

Mrs. W. A. Armstrong  
Lorenzo Burrows, Jr.  
Mrs. George L. Burrows

Harvey Joslin  
Teresa Jones  
Harry Miller

### Masonic Orders

The Masonic Order in Saginaw Valley had its beginning in Germania Lodge, No. 79, which was organized in Doctor M. C. T. Plessner's house in March, 1854. The first officers of this lodge were M. C. T. Plessner, W. M., Count Solms, S. W., and G. Liskow, J. W., who with five members instituted the lodge and held meetings in the building at the corner of Cass and Hamilton Streets. Doctor Plessner was Worshipful Master from 1854 to 1862 and from 1865 to 1874; Otto Roeser, 1863-64; Count Solms, 1875-76. Afterward Henry Barnhard, A. W. Achard and Peter Herrig held the office. The present officers are Frederick G. Oppermann, W. M.; William Stange, secretary; Andrew Gosen, treasurer.

At East Saginaw the organization under dispensation of Saginaw Lodge, No. 77, F. & A. M., was next effected. On June 23, 1855, the dispensation was granted by the Grand Lodge to Moses B. Hess, as W. M.; David Hughes, S. W. and James A. Large, J. W. The other charter members were S. C. Munson, S. C. Beach, A. F. Hayden and David F. Hess. On the last day of July, 1855, the degree of E. A. was conferred upon Norman Little, William L. P. Little, William L. Webber and Charles B. Mott. The charter was granted in January, 1856, and the lodge was dedicated on February 27th. Among the early Worshipful Masters of the lodge were James A. Large, William L. Webber, William J. Bartow, J. S. Goodman and Frank Lawrence. In 1868 the lodge had a fine hall, thirty-two by fifty feet in size, well furnished and lighted with gas. The present officers are D. A. Nicol, W. M.; Z. D. Ells, S. W.; Harold Walz, J. W.; H. A. Penney, treasurer; J. W. Billing, secretary; Trustees, A. G. Ritchie, W. J. Winston and A. G. Meakin.

Saginaw Valley Chapter, No. 31, R. A. M., received its charter January 12, 1864, with William L. Webber, H. P.; Charles B. Mott, K.; S. W. Yawkey, S., and William J. Bartow, Ezra Rust, E. W. Lyon, L. N. S. Lemheim, George W. Merrill, J. C. Lowell, Charles E. Gillett, George F. Lewis, John J. Wheeler, R. H. Weidemann, A. P. Brewer, M. B. Hess, John S. Estabrook, I. M. Smith, Charles W. Grant and William Hodgson, charter members. The first meeting of the chapter was held on February 4, 1864. The officers in 1916 are: Frank W. Pohlman, H. P.; William A. Shackelford, K.; Doctor C. M. Welch, S.; George E. Scollen, secretary; Harry Oppenheimer, treasurer.

Saginaw Valley Lodge, No. 154 was organized under dispensation February 19, 1864, with D. M. Bennett, W. M.; William McBratnie, S. W., and T. L. Jackson, J. W. A charter was granted by the Grand Lodge on June 13, 1865, under which the same officers were installed. The present officers of this lodge are: Fred Dustin, W. M.; G. J. Brenner, S. W.; Richard W. Atwell, J. W.; Charles W. Khuen, treasurer; Wm. H. McBratnie, secretary. Executive Committee: Henry R. Witt and J. A. Huff.

Saginaw Council, No. 20, R. S. M., was organized July 25, 1866, and soon attained a high place among Masonic Orders of the State. In 1881 its officers were: Fred E. Hoyt, T. I. M.; D. B. Reeves, D. M.; Charles Doughty, P. C. of W.; W. Fitzgerald, C. and G.; D. Hoyt, treasurer, George B. Gage, recorder, and H. H. Cheeney and William Cole. The officers for 1916 are: R. K. Logan, T. I. M.; Fred Dustin, D. M.; Thomas Brown, P. C. W.; Frank Robinson, secretary; Henry Feige, treasurer; C. M. Welch, C. G.; Roy Rogers, C. C.

St. Bernard Commandery, No. 16, K. T., was also organized in 1866, and at the annual conclave F. E. Hoyt was elected E. C.; T. E. Borden, general; George L. Remington, captain general; Edwin Saunders, prel; F. A. Ashley, S. W.; A. D. Macomber, J. W.; William H. Clark, treasurer; J. H. Woollacott, recorder; William Grant, St. B.; William H. Cambrey,

S. B.; Charles A. Lee, warden; William Cole, sentinel; William Williamson, C. W. Gray and O. J. Hetherington, guards. The present officers of this commandery are: William H. Filbert, E. C.; William H. McBratnie, G.; James A. Griggs, C. G.; H. B. Fry, S. W.; Charles Koeppler, J. W.; Reverend Emil Montanus, P.; William Wallace, treasurer; Andrew J. Lynd, recorder.

Joppa Chapter, No. 63, R. A. M., was organized January 13, 1869; and in 1881 G. K. Grout, Charles A. Lee, DeWitt C. Dixon, Frank R. Ganschow, George H. Durand, John Ballentine, Jira S. Martin, E. I. Peck, N. W. Wright, B. B. Bartlett, W. W. Knight and H. W. Whitney were most active in conducting the work. The present officers are: Burton S. Tefft, H. P.; Howard J. Gilbert, K.; Clarence Bauer, S.; L. J. Richter, treasurer; J. A. Huff, secretary.

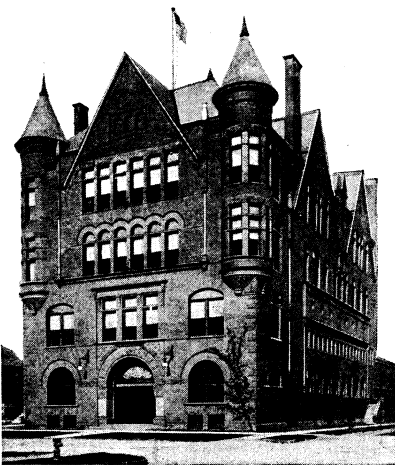
Elf Khurafeh Temple, A. A. O. N. M. S., meets at Masonic Temple on call. Of its officers Hiram A. Savage is Potentate; Floyd A. Wilson, C. R.; John O. Newberry, A. R.; Wm. H. Mead, H. P. and P.; Charles A. Khuen, O. G.; Harry E. Oppenheimer, treasurer; Wm. H. McBratnie, secretary.

Arab Patrol has for its officers Otto F. Richter, president; Clarence M. Ireton, captain; Edwin C. Forrest, adjt.; William H. McBratnie, secretary.

Ancient Landmarks Lodge, No. 303, F. & A. M., was instituted in the Spring of 1871 with C. H. Gage as W. M. Doctor B. B. Ross, Lawson C. Holden, Henry B. Roney, Charles F. Weber, J. M. Brooks, Douglas White and William Cole were prominently identified with it. The present officers are: Homer L. Blaisdell, W. M.; Guy D. Meston, S. W.; Otto E. Eckert, J. W.; Charles L. Bigelow, S. D.; Joseph S. Gerhart, J. D.; Charles J. Phelps, secretary; Frank W. Perry, treasurer.

Apollo Lodge, No. 348, was organized in 1877 with W. W. Knight, W. M.; Byron B. Stark, S. W.; Reuben W. Andrus, J. W.; Oliver P. Barber, secretary; and Nathan S. Wood, treasurer; Thomas M. James, S. D.; and Charles E. Wheeler, J. D.

Salina Lodge, No. 155, was instituted in 1867; Saginaw Valley Conclave, No. 4, of the Red Cross of Constantine was organized April 27, 1874, and East Star Lodge, No. 6 (colored) was chartered in 1862.



MASONIC TEMPLE

Merlin Grotto No. 63 Mystic Order Veiled Prophets Enchanted Realm, was instituted under dispensation by Harold M. Harter, of Toledo, Ohio, the Grand Venerable Prophet, on April 15, 1915, with a charter membership of fifty-one. The first officers appointed at this time were: Lynn B. Emery, Monarch; J. A. Huff, Chief Justice; Charles E. White, Master of ceremonies; Charles J. Phelps, Secretary; Simon G. Koepke, Treasurer.

On April 28th, the first Ceremonial and Initiation was held at the Academy of Music, the Degree being conferred by Zal-Gaz Grotto, of Ann Arbor, on eighty-five candidates. A charter was granted by the Supreme Council at the annual meeting held in Buffalo, N. Y., on June 9, 1915. The present membership is 385.

The Grotto has for its purpose the bringing together of all Masons into one common body and promoting the spirit of good-fellowship.

### Other Fraternal Orders

Of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, Saginaw Lodge, No. 42, was the first to be instituted in Saginaw. On February 9, 1849, this lodge was organized by Charles D. Little, special D. D. G. M., and the following officers were elected: W. L. P. Little, N. G.; J. S. Woodruff, V. G.; J. B. Chamberlain, secretary, and J. Bookstaver, treasurer.

Oriental Lodge, No. 188, meets Friday evening at 2710 South Washington Avenue. James P. King is N. G.; Roy W. Phoenix, R. S.; and Frank Newvine, treasurer.

The Star Lodge, No. 156, was the second circle of Odd-Fellowship organized in this city, with Charles Moye as N. G., in 1853. The lodge was reorganized in 1872. Its officers are G. J. Watkins, N. G.; William Parkins, secretary; Frank Maruna, treasurer.

O-Saw-Wa-Bon Lodge, No. 74, was instituted at East Saginaw on June 2, 1855. Owing to the small population of the place and other causes, the lodge, whose first officers were Charles B. Mott, N. G., and Alexander Ferguson, V. G., gave up its charter two years later. It was reorganized in 1865 with J. S. Curtis, N. G.; A. Ferguson, R. S.; C. H. Barton, P. S.; and W. F. Glasby, S. This lodge has since become one of the largest and most influential in the city. The present officers are: John T. Dunn, N. G.; Edward J. Diehl, recording secretary; George E. Dunn, treasurer.

Washington Encampment was instituted May 9, 1866, by M. W. G. P. Dennis, with thirty members among whom were A. G. Van Wey, W. McRath, D. H. Buel, A. O. T. Eaton, B. Rice and A. F. Rockwith. Valley Encampment, No. 20, was instituted May 10, 1866, with J. S. Curtis, C. H. Burton, A. Ferguson, T. E. Doughty, W. H. Southwick, J. M. Luther and J. H. McFarlin, charter members.

The other lodges of this order are the Empire, organized August 12, 1874; the Buena Vista Lodge, on February 26, 1872; the Oriental, instituted in 1872 with LeRoy H. DeLavergne, N. G.; and the Magara Encampment, organized April 28, 1875.

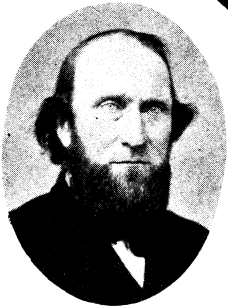
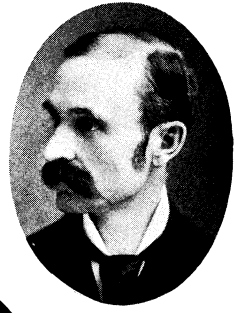
Saginaw Lodge, No. 10, Knights of Pythias, was organized March 28, 1873, with James G. Terry as C. C. This important lodge has been well maintained through the years, and its social and financial condition is unequalled. The present officers are: Charles W. Light, C. C.; A. E. Goldsmith, K. of R. and S. and M. of F.

Thesus Lodge, No. 119, meets every Wednesday evening at 413 Court Street. The officers are: Clinton W. Osborn, C. C.; Benjamin F. Eaton, V. C.; Charles W. Ellis, prel.; John Ferguson, M. of A.; E. Baskins, trustee.

The Achilles Lodge, No. 15, was instituted January 7, 1874; and in 1881 Charles D. Little, Robert J. Birney, Benjamin Geer, Thomas L. Jackson, Racine Purmort, C. M. Beach, and J. T. Burnham, all prominent citizens of Saginaw City, were its most active members.

East Saginaw Lodge, No. 172, Good Templars, was established November 24, 1865, with Reverend B. F. Taylor, W. C. T. Fountain Head Lodge was instituted May 19, 1875, with George Stevens, W. C. T., and forty charter members.

Among the older orders of which record is found was a lodge of the Daughters of Rebekah, known as Azure Lodge, No. 43, which was instituted in Saginaw in 1871. At present the order is represented here by Azure Lodge, No. 37, Ilah Lodge, No. 174, Magnolia Lodge, and Naomi Lodge, No. 270, all of which are in flourishing condition.



OLD-TIME PORTRAITS OF WELL-KNOWN CITIZENS

Charles R. Penney

Walter Gardner

John Weller

Isaac Bearinger

John Jeffers

Mrs. E. J. Ring

Frederick H. Herbert

Isaac Parsons

Gurdon Corning and Ida C.

Mrs. C. W. Wells

Nicholas A. Randall

Dr. H. Williams

Judge L. C. Holden



Court Valley, No. 232, of the Independent Order of Foresters meets in Foresters' Temple with C. E. Hamilton as C. R.; W. P. Stewart, V. C. R.; L. W. Hodgins, recording secretary; A. G. Meakin, treasurer; H. J. Lemcke, financial secretary, and A. Robertson and William J. McDonald, trustees.

Other lodges of this order are: Court Acme, No. 551; Court Mountaineer, No. 577; Court Starlight, No. 1024; Court Waldon, No. 529; and Court Wanigas, No. 4529. There are also four courts of the Lady Companion Independent Order of Foresters.

The Macabees are a strong fraternal order in Saginaw, having no less than ten tents, namely: Allemania Tent, No. 114; Concordia Tent, No. 132; East Side Tent, No. 385; Gage Tent, No. 111; Italy Tent, No. 866; Jesse Hoyt Tent, No. 51; John A. Edget Tent, No. 430; Lincoln Tent, No. 113; Penoyer Tent, No. 204; and Saginaw Tent, No. 107. There are also nine hives of Ladies of the Macabees.

The Prudent Patricians of Pompeii, of Washington, D. C., is splendidly represented here by nine primaries, which are: Peninsular Primary, No. 1; Paragon Primary, No. 3; Purity Primary, No. 5; Peerless Primary, No. 6; Pleasant Primary, No. 8; Puritan Primary, No. 16; Peerless Primary, No. 21; Philemon Primary, No. 29; and Penoyer Primary, No. 54; all of which are in flourishing condition.

The Tribe of Ben Hur is represented by Saginaw Court, No. 85, of which J. B. Johnson is P. C.; John McDonald, Chief; Robert Schenk, Judge; E. Schenk, Scribe; and by Eros Court, No. 27, with Otto A. Weidemann, Chief; Clarence L. Hay, Judge; Anna B. Gray, Scribe; and also by Washington Court, No. 116. William H. Borrowman is Deputy.

The Royal Arcanum has two councils in this city, Central Council, No. 29, having for its officers Elmer E. Bishop, P. R.; William E. Goodman, R; William Curtin, V. R.; J. C. Bauer, O.; H. J. Lemcke, secretary; J. H. Woollacott, collector, and Carl R. Rogner, treasurer. Saginaw Council, No. 33, meets at K. of P. Hall on the West Side, and is also in flourishing condition.

The Royal League has one council, Saginaw Council, No. 44, organized in March, 1887. Gordon Robertson is archon; W. W. Grobe, scribe, and D. A. King, treasurer.

The Royal Neighbors of America has Clover Leaf Camp, No. 157, and Woodbine Camp, No. 1549; the Royal Order of Lions is represented by Saginaw Den, No. 304; and the Protected Home Circle by Saginaw Circle, No. 133, and by Silver Leaf Circle, No. 243. The Loyal Guard has Saginaw Division, No. 21; the Loyal Order of Moose by Saginaw Lodge, No. 82; the Modern Brotherhood of America by Michigan Lodge, No. 1099, and Saginaw Lodge, No. 1255.

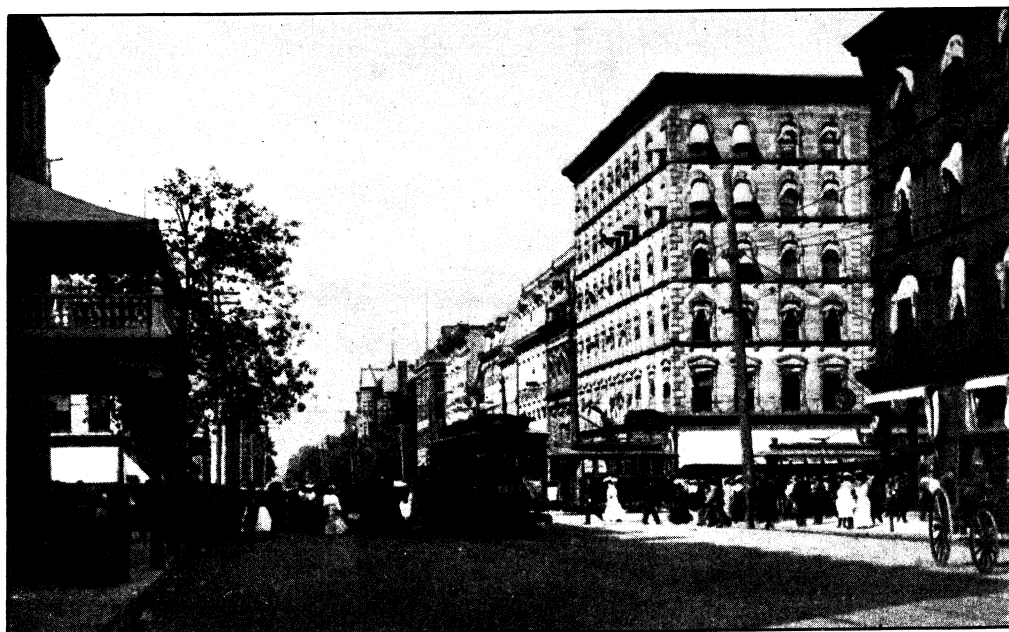
The Modern Woodmen of America has three camps, East Saginaw Camp, No. 915; South Saginaw Camp, No. 4723, and Wheeler Camp, No. 4848. The Orangemen have Eden Lodge, No. 120; and the National Union, East Saginaw Council, No. 179.

The Fraternal Order of Eagles is represented in this city by Saginaw Aerie, No. 497, with Fred L. Travers, W. P.; Charles C. Holmes, W. V. P.; E. B. Mowers, W. C.; H. J. Lemcke, secretary, and John N. Richter, treasurer.

The Knights of Columbus have a strong council in Saginaw Council, No. 593, which has a fine building on North Washington Avenue for its club home. The membership is said to be about five hundred, comprising the foremost Roman Catholic citizens. There are also the Knights of St. John with District Commandery and No. 158; and Knights of Honor represented by Schiller Lodge, No. 837, organized January 1, 1878, which meets on the West Side.



GENESEE AVENUE, LOOKING WEST FROM JEFFERSON, 1900



WASHINGTON AVENUE, LOOKING NORTH FROM BANCROFT HOUSE, 1900

# THE INDUSTRIAL HISTORY OF SAGINAW

---

## CHAPTER XVI THE LUMBER INDUSTRY

---

Predictions of First Settlers—Earliest Saw Mills—The “Williams” Mill—The First Mill on the East Side—Emerson Shipped the First Lumber—Evolution of Sawing Machinery—Logs and Booms—The Output of the Tittabawassee—The Famous Cork Pine of the Cass—Lumber Production of the Saginaw River—Experiences in the North Woods—Theology in Camp—“Captain” Naegely and the Lumber-jacks—Some Old-time Mills—A Model Establishment—Saw Mills in the Eighties—Output of Saginaw Mills in 1892—Saginaw Becomes a Distributing Market—Charles Merrill—John S. Estabrook—Samuel H. Webster—Benjamin F. Webster—Washington S. Green—Isaac Parsons—Characteristics of Ammi W. Wright—Ralph A. Loveland—William H. Edwards.

**T**HAT the Saginaw Valley is entitled to pre-eminence in a history of the lumber industry of the Northwest, is generally conceded, in view of the fact that from the earliest days of the State's development, it was the central figure around which the lumber business of a large section of Michigan revolved, while in the main its conditions were an index to those of the State at large. The Saginaw River is the effluent of a number of streams which penetrate the confines of the Huron watershed, and drain an area of thirty-two hundred square miles. The principal stream is the Tittabawassee with numerous branches extending to the North and West. At the confluence of this river with the Saginaw is the Shiawassee River running southward, while a short distance above are the Cass and Flint rivers, extending to the East and Northeast, with various creeks penetrating the pine forests of the “Thumb.”

The early settlers of Saginaw Valley of the period of 1830, while fully aware of the existence of vast forests of pine throughout this section of the State, did not fully comprehend their extent or value, yet knew enough to render them skeptical as to the possibility of their exhaustion in their own, or the lifetime of their children. The supply of timber in the illimitable, but accessible forests of Maine, was supposed to be sufficient with the most wasteful extravagance, to answer all the demands of the East for a century, hence the idea that the timber of Michigan could ever be in more than local demand, was preposterous. How correct these predictions; how short a time—scarcely more than half a century—it has taken to tell of the destruction of the vast pine forests of Michigan and Wisconsin, as well as those of Maine. Even the present timber resources of Canada would provide for the consumptive demand of the United States for only a few months. Later, when lumber was shipped by cargo to the Albany market, in active competition with the product of Maine, the views of the early settlers underwent a change; and late in the sixties it was foreseen that, at the rate the pine was then disappearing, before the close of the century the pine lumber business of Michigan would end.

### The Earliest Saw Mills

Albert Miller, in his interesting contributions to pioneer history, mentions that, on his first visit to Saginaw in 1830, he passed the saw mill of Rufus Stevens at the crossing of the Thread River, near Flint, and asserts that this was the first mill on waters tributary to the Saginaw. Another mill was that of Rowland Perry and Harvey Spencer at Grand Blanc, on the head waters of the Thread River. The first raft of timber floated on the tributaries of the Saginaw was out at the Stevens mill, and hauled to the Flint River, a distance of about three miles, where it was rafted. In 1830 an attempt was made by Alden Tupper to build a mill on the Flint below Flushing, but it never did any work. George Oliver ran the Thread River mill for Mr. Stevens, and a few years later a grist mill was added, and thereupon became known as the "Thread Mills."

The first lumber at Saginaw probably was cut by Albert Miller in the primitive man-power method, he being the "pit" sawyer and Joseph Busby or Charles A. Lull the "top" sawyer. This was early in the thirties, and the lumber thus laboriously made was used for building their homes.

### The "Williams" Mill

It was in 1834 that Harvey Williams, familiarly known as "Uncle Harvey," came to Saginaw from Detroit and built for Gardner D. and Ephraim S. Williams, his cousins, the first steam saw mill on the Saginaw River, thus inaugurating the lumber industry of this stream. This mill, which was first operated in 1835, was a very primitive affair, having a single gate saw driven by an engine of wonderful proportions, and calculated to cut about two thousand feet of one-inch boards in a day of twelve hours. The engine, originally built for the first steamboat, the *Walk-in-the-Water*, to ply the Great Lakes, had a cylinder six inches in diameter by forty-eight inches stroke, and afterward, following the wrecking of that boat in 1822, had been installed in the steamboat *Superior*, and rendered good service for more than ten years longer. Harvey Williams was an excellent blacksmith and all-round mechanic, and personally forged the main parts of the iron work for the mill, bringing it from Detroit when ready for use. He succeeded in adapting the peculiar construction and power of the engine to the uses and needs of sawing machinery; and afterward provided a run of stone for gristing.

To Gardner D. Williams, who came to this forest wilderness in 1826, is honor due for being the first lumberman on the Saginaw. He was of the sturdy, progressive type of pioneer, fearless, and undaunted by the difficulties of border life. A strong man, physically and mentally, he became inured to hardship and privation, and in following the occupation of fur trader gradually assumed the customs and habits of the native Indians, whose true friend he was. (A portrait of Mr. Williams appears on page ninety.) In this connection an interesting tale is told by a well known lady of the East Side, who, coming to the settlement on the Saginaw when a mere child, lived with her family in the old block house, which had been a part of Fort Saginaw in 1822-23.

"It was yet in the thirties," she said, "that one delightful day in Summer a young Indian girl appeared at the block house, with basketry and other articles of craftsmanship of her race for sale. Because of her beauty and grace of bearing, as well as by the fine texture of her dress, she everywhere attracted attention and was an object of my curiosity, though I was but a mere child. Instead of the loose and much soiled garments of the average Indian, she was clad in a beautiful robe, evidently of European manufacture, her stockings were silken, and instead of moccasins she wore fine



CHOPPERS AT WORK IN THE FOREST

leather shoes of style and fit which betrayed a foreign origin. Her skin, though tanned by exposure to the elements, was soft and fair, her hands were shapely and without the appearance of toil or drudgery, and her luxuriant hair was carefully combed and dressed in some semblance to the style of the frontier. Her manner was gentle and her voice soft and musical, denoting care and patience in her training to young womanhood. I had never seen so striking a beauty among the Indian girls, and was eager to know her name and whence she came.

“When she had gone I asked the woman who conducted the little tavern, who she was and where she lived. “‘Why, have you not heard?’ she replied, ‘the little Indian girl is the daughter of the great trader, Gard Williams, whose Indian wigwam is on the banks of the Tittabawassee.’” Afterward, I learned that the abode of the squaw who was her mother, and one among a thousand of her race, was indeed up the river on the site of an ancient Indian village. Within, it was lacking the tawdry trappings of the savage, but was comfortably furnished with home-like articles of real utility, and the clothing of the Indian woman was of the finest texture and weave.”

In extenuation, it may be said that in the earliest days of settlement of the wilderness, when the whites were so few and interspersed with renegades from Canada, the mixing of the races and rearing of Indian families by the traders, was not an uncommon occurrence, though frowned upon by the better element of the scant population.

The mill of the Williams Brothers, at the foot of Mackinaw Street, was for several years of more than ample capacity to supply the wants of the few settlers who had made homes for themselves in the valley. A cut of two thousand feet per day was considered excellent, and required the engine to be run at its full power, with its ponderous sash or gate rising and falling with every revolution of the twelve-foot fly wheel, to which it was directly connected. With various improvements of equipment this mill was operated off and on for a number of years, but was finally burned July 4, 1854, having been set on fire, it was supposed, by a fire-cracker. It was rebuilt and oper-

ated during the period of increasing production of lumber on the river, but was again destroyed by fire in the early eighties. Rebuilt by George F., William A. and Stewart B. Williams, sons of Gardner D., on a much larger scale and equipped with modern sawing machinery, with an extensive salt block, this mill was one of the largest at the upper end of the river, and continued in operation until the exhaustion of the pine timber resources of this section. At the close of the century the "Williams" mill, as it was commonly called, was for the third time wiped out by fire, and nothing remained to mark the location of a once prosperous business.

### **The First Mill on the East Side**

In the Fall of 1836 "Uncle Harvey" Williams built a mulay mill on the east side of the river for Mackie, Oakley & Jennison, of New York, in which firm he had a financial interest, and thus, with Norman Little began a new settlement. The mill was situated (see page 141) on rising ground just south of the present Bristol Street bridge, on the site of the gas works. When ready to commence operations in 1837, with an engine of ten inch bore and fourteen inch stroke, it was confidently expected that its capacity was fully equal to any demand for lumber for at least a quarter of a century. How little was it comprehended that within the lifetime of the pioneer lumbermen, the demand upon, and the production of lumber in the Saginaw Valley would reach a thousand million feet in a year, as was the case in 1882.

The mill was engaged in the first few years of its operation in cutting "long stuff" for the Michigan Central Railroad, then but recently commenced. After an uncertain existence of eight years the mill was closed down, and with three empty houses stood as a reminder of shattered hopes. Its usefulness was not ended, however, for under the influence of youthful energy and determination, and ample capital, its machinery was overhauled and again put into action.

Curtis Emerson was the rejuvenating spirit of the old mill, who, in the Spring of 1846, in association with Charles W. Grant, purchased the property and one hundred and seventy-five acres of land in the vicinity, for six thousand dollars. Having spent ten thousand dollars in placing new boilers, engine and other new equipment, the mill was ready for successful operation; and was thereafter known as the "Emerson" mill. It was fifty-five feet by one hundred and twenty feet in dimensions, and had three upright saws of three thousand feet a day capacity, each; one edging table and a butting saw. The engine was of seventy-five horse power, with a stroke of four and a half feet, and the new boilers were eighteen feet long by forty-two inches in diameter. The annual capacity was about three million feet, working by day only. In those days no slabs or saw-dust were used as fuel, the refuse from the saws being hauled away to dumps at an expense of five dollars a day, though the boilers consumed seven cords of mixed wood in twelve hours, at a cost of two dollars a cord. In later years, when cord wood was not so easily obtained, a large part of the waste was burned under the boilers of the river mills.

### **Emerson Shipped the First Cargo of Lumber**

The first cargo of clear lumber ever shipped from the Saginaws was loaded at the Emerson mill in 1847. It was consigned to C. P. Williams & Company, of Albany, New York, and was the first cargo of clear cork pine to reach that market. Its peculiar value quickly attracted attention, and an immediate demand for Saginaw pine lumber was created. This first shipment to a foreign market was the birth of the lumber business in the valley, and Emerson & Eldridge, who then operated the mill, projected better facilities for transportation.

In 1850 Charles W. Grant and Jesse Hoyt built the second mill on the east side of the river, at the foot of German Street. It was known as the "Hoyt" mill, and was successfully operated until March 26, 1854, when it was destroyed with a large quantity of lumber, in the great fire which swept from the river to Washington Street. The next mill in succession was that of Sears & Holland, erected in 1855, near the foot of Atwater Street.

Meanwhile, the great flow of capital to the valley had stimulated investment in timber lands and building of saw mills, and by 1854 there were, upon the authority of John S. Estabrook, twenty-nine mills on the river, and nine others in process of building, with an estimated cutting capacity of one hundred million feet a year. At the upper, or Saginaw, end of the river there were in 1857 fourteen saw mills, and nine on the tributary streams, and these cut in that year sixty million feet. An authentic list of these mills appeared in the first History of Saginaw County, published by Truman B. Fox, in 1858, and is herewith transcribed:

#### East Saginaw

	Cut	Value
Cushing & Company.....	4,500,000 feet	\$ 36,000.00
J. Hill .....	2,500,000 feet	21,000.00
L. B. Curtis.....	3,000,000 feet	24,000.00
D. G. Holland.....	1,500,000 feet	10,000.00
Whitney & Garrison.....	3,000,000 feet	24,000.00
Gallagher Mill, (W. F. Glasby).....	2,000,000 feet	14,000.00
Copeland & Company.....	1,500,000 feet	10,000.00
Atwater Mill, (Sears & Holland).....	3,500,000 feet	30,000.00

#### Saginaw City

Gang Mill .....	7,000,000 feet	\$ 30,000.00
G. D. Williams & Son.....	2,500,000 feet	21,000.00
Millard Mill, (Curtis & King).....	3,500,000 feet	30,000.00

#### Zilwaukee

Johnson's, (John Drake).....	4,000,000 feet	35,000.00
B. F. Fisher.....	1,500,000 feet	10,000.00
J. A. Westervelt.....	4,000,000 feet	35,000.00

	44,000,000 feet	\$330,000.00
--	-----------------	--------------

Tributary mills, including four water power, at St. Charles, Chesaning, Birch Run and Frankenmuth .....	16,000,000 feet	105,000.00
---	-----------------	------------

Total .....	60,000,000 feet	\$435,000.00
-------------	-----------------	--------------

Average value, per thousand feet, seven dollars and twenty-five cents.

#### Evolution of Sawing Machinery

Up to this time the mills of the valley had passed through the evolution from the sash to the mulay saw, which was superseded in turn by the rotary, or "circular," as it was commonly called. Ten years later nearly all the mills had discarded both gate and mulay, and the circular with a few gangs did practically all the cutting, the former, of four to six gauge, having a capacity of about one thousand feet an hour. The Sage & McGraw mill, at the southern limit of Bay City, which was the largest mill on the river, had one mulay for siding down the large logs, (which were then quite common, and too valuable to be slaughtered on a rotary, the width of whose cut was limited), one rotary saw, two slabbing gangs, and two stock gangs of forty saws, each, making a seasons cut of about thirty million feet.

The rough edges of the lumber as it fell from the saw were removed by a single circular saw on a table at the side of the mill, which was operated by men who walked its length, returned, turned the board over and repeated the operation for each individual piece. But long in the sixties William H. Taylor, a lumberman of Saginaw City, conceived the idea that the circular saw was capable of cutting more than one thousand feet an hour, and made a wager with George Williams that he could cut double that quantity. On a given day a test was made in the presence of a large number of incredulous mill men, who came to be witnesses of Taylor's discomfiture. Imagine their chagrin when, in less than an hour the mill was piled full of unedged lumber, which the edging table could not take care of. The saw had cut more than four thousand feet of lumber in the hour, and demonstrated that its capacity was limited only by an ability to edge the lumber and remove it from the mill.

Inventive genius was at once set at work, and in a short time Thomas Munn, of Bay City, introduced a double-edging table which, with mechanical feed, quickly trimmed both edges of the board at one operation. The double



LOADING ON SLEIGHS



HAULING TO SKIDWAY

edger was at once received into favor by mill men, and within a few years was to be found in nearly every mill in the country. The limit of capacity of the circular saw was so greatly increased that twenty-four thousand feet per hour has been attained by a Texas mill, cutting Southern long-leaf pine.

Improvement of the gang saw followed, and the great waste in the early cutting operations was largely eliminated. In this important advance the machinery firm of Wickes Brothers, composed of Henry D., Edward N., and Charles T. Wickes, performed great service to the lumber industry, and their perfected gangs have been the standard wherever lumber is manufactured. Today, their gang saws, adapted to every and particular need of the industry, are made in this city, and are sent to every country in the world.

The first experiment in the use of a band saw for cutting lumber was made by James J. McCormick, in his mill at Bay City about 1858, but proved a failure from the multiplicity of wheels employed to secure a proper tension, and was discarded as impractical. At the Centennial Exposition of 1876 a band saw mill was exhibited by J. F. Hoffman, of Fort Wayne, Indiana; and he may fairly be called the father of the practical band-saw mill. It was not



until about 1883-84 that the possibilities of the band saw began to gain recognition, and in a highly perfected condition has since found general acceptance in the saw mill world. The chief advantage of the band saw lies in its speed and thin kerf, thereby reducing the cost of operation and also the waste. Especially is this true in resawing, the facilities of which have been greatly increased by the line of perfected resaws manufactured in Saginaw by W. B. Mershon & Company. Starting about twenty-five years ago in a small way, by the making of a few resaw machines, the invention of Edward C. Mershon, for local trade, the business has grown to enormous proportions, and resaws for every purpose and need are made and shipped to every country on the globe.

### Logs and Booms

The log product of the vast forests to the North and West was floated mainly to the mills of the Saginaw River, for the handling of which booms became a prime necessity. As the number of operators putting logs of various marks into the different streams, increased, it was necessary that some



A LOG DUMP



RAFTING LOGS

central point should be established, at which the logs could be separated and each owner be enabled to claim his own. To this end boom companies were incorporated, and large sorting works erected at the mouth of the various main streams.

At each banking ground where the logs were dumped into the stream, the end of each log was marked with a hammer containing the letter or device adopted by the owner as a distinctive mark. These marks consisted in many instances of a single letter, and in others of a device such as crossed keys, square and compass, a boot, an anchor, or a square or diamond enclosing an initial letter in capitals two or three inches long. Enough hammer strokes of the letter or character were struck upon each log to ensure that whatever side of the log floated upward, a mark would be visible. In this simple manner the logs of a score or a hundred different owners would be separated at the sorting gap, so that each owner could receive his own.

The logs which had been dumped promiscuously into the stream at various points, were floated by the current to the head of the boom works, where they were diverted from the main stream into a large boom or enclosure

occupying one-half of the river and reaching for miles up its course. At the lower end was a narrow sorting gap, through which, as each log passed it was examined for the owner's mark upon its end, and run into a pocket containing logs of the same mark. As the logs of each owner accumulated they were rafted, by securing each by a slotted wooden pin driven into its side at the middle, through which a rope was stretched making "strings," or rafts, to be floated or towed to the mill boom of the owner. These operations, including the delivery of rafts to the mill booms, were performed by the boom companies.

### **The Output of the Tittabawassee**

The Tittabawassee was the leading boom of the Saginaw district, as indeed of the State. The first boom on this stream was built in 1856 by Joseph A. Whittier for Charles Merrill & Company, and from that date until 1864 about one billion seven hundred million feet of logs were rafted out to supply the Saginaw mills. In 1864 the Tittabawassee Boom Company was organized to take over the business, and that year rafted out ninety million feet of logs, leaving six million in the boom. Two years later the company had twelve miles of booms, gave employment to about two hundred and fifty river men, expended twenty-one thousand dollars for rope to be used in rafting, and rafted out one hundred and eighty-six million feet of logs. In 1867 Joseph E. Shaw was president of the company, Joseph A. Whittier, secretary, Ammi W. Wright, treasurer, and Charles Burleson, agent; and the company sorted and rafted nine hundred sixty-seven thousand six hundred and ninety-five pieces, scaling over two hundred and thirty-six million feet.

The high tide of the output of this famous stream was reached in 1882, when six hundred eleven million eight hundred and sixty-three thousand feet of pine saw logs were rafted and delivered to the owners. From that date the cutting of logs gradually fell off, until in 1895 only fifteen million feet were rafted, and in the following year ten million feet. The total output of the Tittabawassee and its tributaries aggregated eleven billion eight hundred and fifty million feet, figures which stagger the mind to grasp. No other logging stream has floated such an enormous quantity of logs, and the high record is likely to stand for generations.

### **The Famous Cork Pine of the Cass**

Next in importance was the cork pine of the Cass River, the first cutting of which was as far back as 1836, on the banks of Perry Creek. During a period of fifty years, in which was witnessed the rise and fall of logging on this stream, the finest growth of cork pine timber in the United States was swept away, and a fine agricultural country has taken its place. While the stream was not as prolific of timber as some other Michigan rivers, it made a notable showing with one billion one hundred and twenty-six million feet, and its fame in point of quality will live as long as the annals of Michigan lumbering are preserved.

The first saw logs from the Cass were cut in a little mill that had been put up by E. W. Perry, on the banks of the creek that bore his name, near the present village of Tuscola. The mill was constructed primarily to supply the local demand for lumber, that section beginning to attract settlers, but even its limited capacity was more than sufficient to supply the wants of the locality, and as the stock accumulated Mr. Perry sought other markets for it. Cass River at that time was obstructed by driftwood and snags, and before any attempt was made to clear the stream, this pioneer lumberman made up the lumber in the form of small cribs and ran them down the river. He succeeded in reaching Saginaw with the greater portion of his stock, and



THE LUMBER-JACKS AT THEIR NOON MEAL IN DEPTHS OF FOREST

shipped sixty thousand feet to Cleveland on the schooner *Lorraine*, Captain Pool, in which market it was sold and Perry received his pay. In 1839 he shipped another cargo to Detroit, but before he received payment for it the bankruptcy law of 1840 became effective, and the purchaser of the lumber paid for it in a bankrupt's notice.

The first saw logs of any amount were rafted down the Cass River in the Spring of 1847. Curtis Emerson and James Eldridge, who were operating the old yellow mill which was near the site of the City Hall, sent a lumberman from Maine, named Daggett, up the Cass to make selections of timber which it was proposed to purchase and stock the mill. Daggett went over this section and returned with a doleful story that there was not enough timber available on the stream to furnish logs for a saw mill to run three years. Nevertheless, one tract of timber that he said would furnish logs for one seasons' run, was purchased, a road cut through to the timber, a camp started and logging begun. The camp was located within eighty rods of the present court house at Caro. The inaccuracy of the old lumberman's estimate is illustrated by the fact that twenty-six years later more than one hundred million feet of logs were rafted out of the Cass in a single season.

The difficulties of hauling supplies to that primitive camp on the Cass were herculean. Every pound of feed for man and beast had to be hauled from Saginaw, one-half of the distance being through a dense wilderness, with only a rough trail winding through the forest. There was no bailed hay in those days, and by the time a load of loose hay had been hauled many miles through the forest, a considerable portion of it was pulled away by the limbs of overhanging trees. But with all the trials and hardships, the early woodsmen were equal to the occasion, and a good stock of the famous cork pine was put into the stream, and in the Spring floated down to the mill at Saginaw.

In later years, it having been demonstrated that logs could be handled by organized effort more effectively and economically, the Huron Log Booming Company was organized with a capital of twenty-five thousand dollars. In 1864, the first year of its operations, the company had three miles of booms and rafted about forty million feet of logs, and in 1867 handled nearly seventy-two million feet. During the season from sixty to eighty river men were employed on the booms and rafts, and almost nineteen thousand dollars worth of rope was used in rafting. The officers of the company were: C. K. Eddy, president; J. F. Bundy, secretary, and Edwin Eddy, treasurer.

The largest output of the Cass in a single season was in 1873, when one hundred four million four hundred and fifty-eight thousand feet of logs were rafted out; and the prices of cork pine logs ranged from two and a half dollars to five dollars a thousand feet. Such lumber as these logs produced, clear without shakes or sap, would bring on the market today more than one hundred dollars a thousand feet.

By 1885 the cork pine had been nearly cleaned up on this stream, but for about ten years longer hemlock and hardwoods were cut and rafted, but never exceeding five million feet in a season, ranging from one and a half million to three million feet, the logging operations being conducted by individual owners. One stand of cork pine, however, the last of its kind, consisting of two hundred and sixty trees, on a one hundred acre tract two miles east of Cass City, was held for thirty-five years by John Striffler and sold in 1907 to the Sterling Cedar Company, of Monroe, Michigan, for eighteen thousand dollars. The largest trees measured a little over five feet in diameter at the stump, while others ranged from four to two feet, the whole bunch cutting more than one hundred thousand feet of high grade lumber.

In 1865 the Bad River and tributaries contributed about twenty million feet of logs to the Saginaw mills; in 1866, twenty-three million feet, and in 1867 about nineteen million. During the same years the Flint River yielded thirty million, twenty-two million and five million five hundred thousand feet, respectively, mostly for John P. Allison, James Shearer & Company, William Hodgson and J. S. Noyes. The rapid decline of production on this stream, of timber coming to the Saginaws, was attributed in part to the fact that a number of inland mills erected near the head waters of the river consumed a large portion of the output, and also to a combination of operators that existed to prevent logs from coming down. In 1897 only one hundred thousand feet of logs came out from the Bad and Flint Rivers, and the pine timber of these streams passed into history. Their output cut by the Saginaw mills was by no means inconsiderable, as nearly three hundred and nineteen million feet of logs were rafted from these streams from 1872 to the close of logging operations.

#### Lumber Production of the Saginaw River

Without delving too far in the realm of statistics, it may be well to include, for the sake of permanent record, the yearly cut of the Saginaw River mills, and the production of shingles, from 1851 to and including 1897, as follows:

	Lumber, feet	Shingles pieces		Lumber, feet	Shingles pieces
1851	92,000,000		1875	581,558,273	124,030,240
1852	90,000,000		1876	583,950,771	204,316,725
1853	96,000,000		1877	640,166,231	167,806,750
1854	100,000,000		1878	574,162,757	153,999,750
1855	100,000,000		1879	736,106,000	218,934,000
1856	110,000,000		1880	873,047,731	241,075,160
1857	113,700,000		1881	976,320,317	304,925,590
1858	106,500,000		1882	1,011,274,605	295,046,500
1859	122,750,000		1883	938,675,078	242,126,000
1860	125,000,000		1884	978,497,853	261,266,750
1861	120,000,000		1885	728,498,221	222,953,000
1862	128,000,000		1886	798,826,224	227,463,000
1863	133,580,000		1887	783,661,265	196,983,000
1864	215,000,000		1888	880,669,440	297,224,000
1865	250,639,340		1889	851,823,133	220,786,250
1866	349,767,344		1890	815,054,465	221,839,000
1867	423,963,190	60,983,000	1891	758,610,548	222,607,250
1868	451,395,225	104,104,500	1892	708,465,027	182,315,200
1869	523,500,830	119,843,500	1893	585,839,426	112,856,000
1870	576,726,606	178,570,000	1894	481,244,039	85,602,250
1871	529,682,878	187,691,000	1895	433,683,083	52,845,000
1872	602,118,980	159,001,750	1896	316,797,879	38,180,000
1873	619,877,021	218,394,558	1897	339,991,000	48,276,000
1874	573,632,771	208,489,500			
				22,930,757,551	5,580,535,223

The above table will give a fair idea of the advance in lumber production from year to year toward the maximum in 1882, and of the rapid decline both in lumber and shingles. No figures are available to show the shingle production previous to 1867, while no estimate can be offered regarding the minor production of lath and pickets, but the aggregate quantity of the former must have reached high figures.



"SNAKING" LOGS BY OX TEAM, 1860

Many million feet of pine saw logs were rafted from points on the Huron shore north of Tawas and from Lake Superior to the Saginaw River, of which no records are at hand. In 1892 there came from these sources sixty-three million feet of logs, and in 1894 about thirty-eight million feet. The pine forests of Georgian Bay also yielded a great quantity of logs for our mills, the inception of the bag boom in 1891 marking the first year of any considerable movement from Canada to this river. In that year eighty million feet of logs were towed across the lake, the rafts ranging from two to six million feet, and while a raft occasionally went ashore in a gale, the loss of timber was only about five hundred pieces to every seventy thousand pieces rafted. In 1892 there was brought from Georgian Bay to Saginaw River, one hundred eighty-four million five hundred thousand feet of pine logs; and in 1893, two hundred and seventy five million feet to Michigan mills, while in 1897, one hundred and sixty-seventy million five hundred thousand feet came to this river. The estimated value of the logs handled in 1895 was eleven dollars a thousand, and many Michigan lumbermen made large purchases of pine timber limits in Canada to stock their mills.

#### Experiences in the North Woods

An old time tale of actual experiences in the northern pineries was told some years ago by the late William Callam, better known as "Bill Callam," one of the best known lumbermen of the valley. He came to Saginaw in boyhood and grew up with Wellington R. Burt's big saw mill, his first job being to bundle lath, fifty pieces in a bundle. Every lath was made clean and sound in those days from the great slabs that came from the logs. Afterward he ran the lath saws, and as he grew stronger bolted the slabs, and finally became foreman of the mill in the sawing season, and foreman in the woods in the Winter.

While directing the felling, skidding and hauling of the logs to the stream, he looked timber a little, and one day far away from camp, away up the Chippewa, he found a most beautiful body of white pine timber. He

sized it up as it stood, fifty, sixty, seventy and even eighty feet to the first limb of some of the giants, and stumbled across the witness tree and the corner stake that had been planted by the government surveyors only a few years before. It read, "Section Eighteen, One West," and appeared to him a beacon to success.

He was then twenty-three years of age, married, and had saved twenty-five hundred dollars from his earnings, which was deposited in the hands of his boss to his credit. At the end of the sawing season he quit his job at the mill, drew out his savings, and proceeded to carry out his cherished plan of making a start for himself.

"Before sun-up the next morning, he said, "I started out with a few dollars in my pocket, taking along as a companion an old muzzle-loading rifle that had fallen to me in a previous Thanksgiving raffle, and set out on a tramp up the Tittabawassee. This was in '58, in the Fall of the year, and the weather was fine. A gun wasn't taken out just for ornament in those days, for you could stumble on to bears and cats and deer, wolverines and such like, almost anywhere. Now, bears never trouble a man unless it's occasionally an old she-bear, unless he gets cornered, and then he is likely to get ugly. I got up to the mouth of the Pine and arranged with an old chap who ran a store there for an outfit. I packed up just eighty pounds of pork, beans, flour, tea and salt, and the next morning started up the Pine and branched off up the Chippewa.

"Before leaving Saginaw I had gone to the land office and had found that section eighteen, one west, still belonged to the government. I often wondered why, because it was a magnificent piece of timber, and logging operations had been going on up the Chippewa for several years. The next day I found the witness tree and the corner stake, and I spent a week in the woods up there pacing off forty after forty, and picking out the very best portion of the timber. I hadn't seen a soul, but about four o'clock one afternoon I saw tracks. They weren't Indian tracks either. I knew 'em. They were landlookers tracks, and they were fresh, and I said to myself, 'Bill, if you get this land you have got to get a move on yourself.' Bill got.

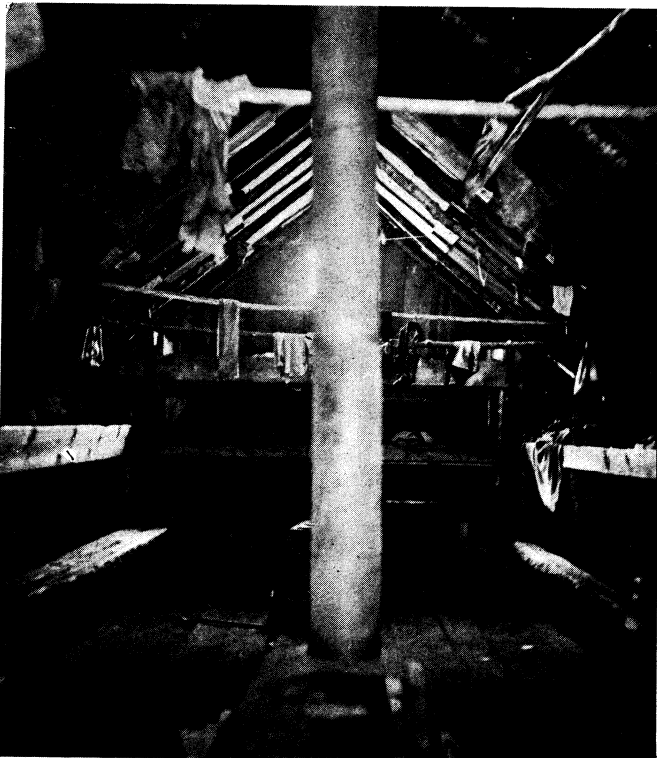
"It was sixty miles by trail to Saginaw, and I waited just long enough to hide my gun in a hollow tree, and started, and I never stopped. I didn't go home to see my wife, but staggered into the land office just as it was being opened up, and I gasped: 'Let me see the map covering eighteen, one west, again.' I got the map in my hand. The section was still unentered. I picked out two hundred and forty acres of the six hundred and forty of the section, and had the clerk enter them to me. I handed him twenty-five dollars and told him I would be back in fifteen minutes with the rest of the three hundred. You know we bought government land then at ten shillings an acre. I rushed into my house, tore up a corner of the carpet, grabbed a handful of bills and hurried back to the land office. The clerk was just signing my receipt when up in front rode my old boss' landlooker wit' his horse dripping with sweat and dead beat. I had beaten him in afoot by just fifteen minutes.

"I bought six horses, hired fifteen French-Canadians, not one of whom could speak a word of English, bought supplies of fodder and provisions, axes, cant hooks and peavies, and loaded the whole outfit on an old sand scow that I chartered for the Winter. My wife went along. We poled that good hundred miles up the Saginaw, the Tittabawassee, the Pine and the Chippewa. On the upper river we would occasionally find a riffle, where we would have to unload the horses and drag the scow up to deep water again. Eventually we arrived at section eighteen, one west, and built a shanty of logs, roofed with rived shakes, partitioned off a little room in the rear for my wife's bedroom, and started camp for the Winter.

"The boys slept and ate and fought and swore, and swore and fought and ate—al! in French-Canuck—in the main part of the shanty. We built another shanty for the horses; then we made a few roads that were necessary, and started in felling and skidding logs. We all worked like Trojans. Those Frenchmen worked hard because I worked with them. My days were busy in the woods, and the evenings I spent in repairing harness or mending sleels, and making whiffletrees. My wife was the only woman in the camp, and was the most popular person in it. Even out of the few materials at hand she conjured dainties for the men that they highly appreciated.

"It was a great Winter. The snow fell early and stayed without a break-up. We did hustle logs and in the Spring with the breaking up of the river, we started down a drive of one million four hundred thousand feet of cork pine logs, that averaged less than three to the thousand. The old sand scow was transformed into a cook house, and with my wife aboard, brought up the rear of the drive. We made a clean drive that Spring, and we got the whole bunch of logs safe and clean into the Green Point boom.

"I owed everybody. I didn't have a cent left to pay my crew, but I coaxed Uncle John Estabrook—dear old chap—to advance me twenty-five hundred dollars and take his pay in lumber at seven dollars for culls, twelve dollars for common and forty dollars for uppers. Seven, twelve and forty was no slouch of a price for lumber in those days. Well, that was my start in lumbering on my own account, and I stuck to it as long as there was any timber left in these parts."



INTERIOR OF BUNK HOUSE



### Theology in Camp

Years ago, among the hardy river drivers of this section, there was a noted character named "Silver Jack," otherwise John Driscoll, who was a "tough" by nature and universally feared and dreaded throughout Northern Michigan. The incident embodied in this verse was given to the writer, Clarence H. Pearson, substantially as related, by one of Driscoll's former associates:

"I was on the drive in eighty,  
Workin' under Silver Jack,  
Which the same is now in Jackson,  
An' ain't soon expected back;  
An' there was a chap amongst us  
By the name of Robert Waite,  
Kinder cute and smart and tonguey —  
Guess he was a graduate.

"He could talk on any subject  
From the Bible down to Hoyle,  
An' his words flowed out so easy —  
Jest as smooth an' slick as oil;  
He was what they call a skeptic,  
And he loved to set and weave  
Hifalutin' words together  
Tellin' what he didn't b-leve.

"One day while we all was waitin',  
For a flood we sat around  
Smokin' nigger-head toboccer  
An' hearin' Bob expound;  
Hell, he said, was all a humbug,  
An' he showed as clear as day  
Thet the Bible was a fable,  
An' we 'lowed it looked that way.

"'Miracles,' said he, 'an' sich like  
Is too rank for me to stan';  
As for him they call the Savior,  
He was jest a common man.'  
'You're a liar!' someone shouted,  
'An' you've got to take it back.'  
Then everybody started —  
'Twas the voice of Silver Jack.

"An' he cracked his fists together,  
An' he shucked his coat and cried,  
'It was in thet thar religion  
Thet my mother lived an' died;  
An' although I haven't allus  
Used the Lord exactly white,  
When I hear a chump abuse him  
He must eat his words or fight.'

"Now this Bob, he warn't no coward,  
An' he answered bold and free:  
'Stack yer duds and cut yer capers,  
For there ain't no flies on me.'  
An' they fit for forty minutes,  
An' the lads would whoop and cheer  
When Jack spit up a tooth or two,  
Or Bobby lost an ear.

"But at last Jack got him under  
An' he slugged him onct or twict,  
An' Bob straightway acknowledged  
The divinity of Christ;  
But Jack kept reasonin' with him  
Till the poor cuss gin a yell  
An' allowed he'd been mistaken  
In his views concernin' hell.

"Then the fierce discussion ended,  
An' they got up from the ground,  
An' someone fetched a bottle out  
And kindly passed it round;  
An' we drank to Jack's religion  
In a solemn sort of way,  
An' the spread of infidelity  
Was checked in camp that day."

### "Captain" Naegely and the Lumber-jacks

In the good old lumbering days of the seventies and eighties, when all was bustle and activity on the river, the "red sash brigade" of lumber-jacks was one of the picturesque features of the border towns. Upon breaking up of the lumber camps in the Spring, these hardy woodsmen came to town in droves, bedecked in Mackinaw coats of many colors, red sashes, pacs and hurons, and with large rolls of money, the earnings of a Winter's work, which they spent freely in revelry and dissipation. Saginaw was a "wide open" town, and welcomed the reckless woodsmen with open arms, a condition which was exactly to their liking, and they did just about as they pleased. Some lumbermen, however, made their homes here, working in the mills in Summer and in the pineries in Winter.

On quitting the camp the lumber-jacks were paid off in "camp orders" drawn on the lumber company, for the net amount due each one, and were payable at the company's office in the Saginaws. No money circulated in the camps, but the simple wants of the men, such as heavy, warm clothing worn in the woods, pacs, tobacco and pipes were supplied them from the company stores and charged to their account. Beyond these necessities there

was no way of spending money in the depths of the forest, and the men who stuck to the camp through the long Winter, came out with orders drawn for two to three hundred dollars, or even more.

At that time "Captain" Naegely kept a hotel in the low two-story brick building, which is still standing, on the west side of Jefferson Street, near Tuscola. He was a "father," so to speak, of a large number of lumber-jacks who stayed at his house and enjoyed his hospitality, and he knew how to handle them. The wise ones who realized the pitfalls of the city, made him their banker, and he would cash their camp orders, either handing out a generous roll of bills or retaining the greater part of the amount in his safe keeping. This preliminary arranged, nothing would do but he should look after their physical comfort. A visit to Jerry's barber shop on Lapeer Street relieved them of a Winter's growth of hair and whiskers, and a hot bath made them tolerably presentable. Next, a call at Bendit's or Koch's clothing stores refitted them with new, clean outfits, including the inevitable red sash, and at Lenheim's or Warner's with new boots or pacs.

After some minor purchases had been made and the woodsmen had filled up on the feed provided by the "Captain," they were ready to "take in the sights of the town," and this they proceeded to do in characteristic fashion. Water Street from the depot at Potter Street to Sears and Holland's mill, near Bristol, was the principal trail of the lumber-jacks, one of their favorite haunts, the Riverside House, being situated at the corner of McCoskry and Water Streets. The main streets of the town were rendered indescribably gay and fantastic by the fighting woodsmen, the lives of law-abiding citizens often being jeopardized by their murderous outbreaks. Many reckless spirits lost their "wads" in one night by theft, others spent their all in a week or ten days, while a few wiser ones managed to "have a time of it," and still keep some of their hard earned wages. The truth was, the tradesmen were "out" to get the woodsmen's coin, and the rough element got the most of it, from Warren Bordwell's show house, on Washington Street, to the ever open row of resorts on Franklin Street. The scenes of revelry witnessed by those who were thrown much with the lumber-jacks and river men, will never be erased as long as memory lasts.

In those days everybody was busy as there was plenty of work to do, and with money and spenders everywhere, many enterprising men were gaining wealth. The foundation of many a substantial fortune was laid in trading and less legitimate pursuits, generally at the expense of the dwellers of the north woods. As years went by, the "Captain," as the friend of the woodsmen, acquired a handsome competence and erected the three-story brick hotel, nearly opposite his old place, which for many years bore his name, and in which he continued to entertain the lumbermen and the traveling public.

### Some Old-Time Saw Mills

Beginning at the lower end of town, at the railroad depot, and proceeding up the river one would come to the steam saw mill of Dwight G. Holland, capable of making five million feet of lumber annually and giving employment to eighteen men. Next in order was the ship yard of Jesse Hoyt, and then the extensive stave factory of C. & E. Ten Eyck, with a capacity of two million staves and employing ten men. Afterward the manufacture of shingles became the principal product of this concern. Jesse Hoyt's planing mill, working twenty men, came next, and its capacity was forty thousand feet of planed lumber per day. Above this was the Genesee Iron Works of Wickes Brothers, and the Mayflower Mills owned by Jesse Hoyt and operated by John Bradfield. Its capacity was one hundred and fifty barrels of flour per

day, and was considered one of the best equipped flouring mills in the country. L. C. Whiting's saw mill came next, and had a capacity of three million feet annually, employing eighteen men.

The saw mill of W. F. Glasby, of three million feet capacity, was next in order, with stave making machinery which turned out fifty thousand staves per day, and shovel handles and wood work generally, giving employment in all to thirty-six men. In the same establishment was the planing mill of A. H. Mershon, with a capacity of twenty-five thousand feet per day, and a pump boring machine capable of boring one thousand feet of pump logs in a day, and other machinery for cutting, sawing, boring and planing, requiring eighteen men. E. A. Wilder also had in operation at this mill a patent hoop machine, which turned out twenty thousand barrel hoops per day.



TABLES SPREAD IN "CHUCK" SHANTY

Above this factory was the mill of Penny & Quackenbush, giving employment to fourteen men and turning out about two million feet of lumber in a year. Next above was the large mill of G. C. Warner & Company, of six million feet capacity and employing twenty-eight men. Near by was the foundry and machine shop of Warner & Eastman, and the brewery of John Erd, which made three thousand barrels of ale and beer in a year. The iron foundry of George W. Merrill came next giving employment to ten men. Above the foundry was the immense saw mill of F. P. Sears & Company which cut seven million feet of lumber and manufactured staves for forty thousand nail kegs in a year, employing thirty-five men. In 1863 the combined capacity of the mills at East Saginaw was forty million feet of lumber, and large quantities of square timber, staves, shingles and lath.

In other parts of the city were numerous works of various kinds, among which was the sash and blind factory of Hosea Pratt, on Hayden Street, which employed twelve men; the "City Mills," owned by O. H. P. Champlin, with a capacity of fifty barrels of flour per day; the sash and blind factory of Allen & McLean, on Jefferson Street adjoining the hotel of H. Naegely, and the brewery of Charles Langlas, on the same street.

Near the upper limits of Saginaw City was the shingle mill of William H. Tuttle, and near by the steam saw mill of Jerome & Taylor, with a capacity of five million feet of lumber. Next in order coming down the river, was the saw mill of Williams Brothers, cutting three million feet, and further down the gang mill of Millard, Paine & Wright, then the largest mill in the world. This mill had a capacity of ten million feet in a year, which was regarded as a phenomenal production. Waterman & Harrington, and Blanchard & Sons, had large factories, and N. R. Ramsey an extensive sash, door and blind shop. There was also a steam flouring mill, having two run of stone, owned by E. R. Shimmons, on Water Street, all within the limits of one mile.

### A Model Establishment

In the seventies the saw mill of W. R. Burt & Company, situated about seven miles below the city, was one of the most complete establishments on the river. Whether its sawing capacity, or its stave and heading mill, barrel factory, shingle mill or salt works, all combined under one management, was considered, and its carpenter and blacksmith shops, gas works, school house and public library—everything requisite for a community in itself—the guiding spirit of a master mind was everywhere apparent. The mill was completed in July, 1868, and the banks of the river at the isolated and barren location presented an almost unlimited space for boorage and dockage, and with a channel of a depth of eleven feet to the Bay. To reach Zilwaukee a roadway had to be made through the prairie on the bank of the river, but the principal mode of conveyance to East Saginaw, where Mr. Burt lived and had an office, was by boat. The investment in plant was nearly two hundred thousand dollars, a large capital for that time, and was exclusive of heavy investment in timber lands in adjoining counties.

During the sawing season one hundred and fifty men were employed in the mill proper, which ran night and day with an average cut of one hundred thousand feet every twelve hours. There were two gangs, one circular and one upright saw, with edging tables and cut-off saws, a lath machine which made twelve thousand pieces in twelve hours, and stave machinery turning out seven thousand pieces and a heading machine eight hundred sets in the same time. The shingle mill employed twenty-five men and boys, who made fifty thousand shingles, and the cooper shop with fifteen men turned out three hundred barrels daily. The salt works had a capacity of two hundred and seventy-five barrels per day, and gave employment to forty men. In all two hundred and thirty men were employed at this mill, and formed a community living in cottages erected and owned by the company, and in large boarding houses, all on the premises. It was Mr. Burt's policy to employ married men whenever possible, as they were more steady and less excitable in time of strikes. In one instance, when nearly every mill on the river shut down on account of labor troubles, the Burt mill did not stop a day, the men being contented and well satisfied with conditions. A school house erected by the company was open to children of employees seven months in a year, and a well stocked public library was maintained for the benefit of the people.

The lumber cut in this mill was shipped largely to Ohio ports, and the salt found a ready market at Chicago and Milwaukee. As an index of the volume of business transacted by this company, the shipments for the first half of 1874 amounted to fourteen million feet of lumber, one million two hundred and thirty thousand pieces of lath, forty-five thousand sets of heading, two million and seventy-seven thousand shingles, one hundred thousand staves, and thirty-one thousand barrels of salt. The office in Saginaw was on Water Street and was in charge of Frank Lawrence, afterwards an extensive real estate dealer and mayor of the city.

### The Saginaw Mills in the Eighties

About two miles below the Burt Mill, at Melbourne, was the large saw mill and salt works of Whitney & Batchelor; and above, at Zilwaukee, were the mills of Rust, Eaton & Company, E. F. Gould, Bliss, Brown & Company, and C. L. Grant & Company, while on the east side of the river were the mills of the Saginaw Lumber & Salt Company, Melchers & Nerreter and S. W. Tyler & Son. At Carrollton, coming up the river, was the saw mill and solar salt field of J. C. Lockwood, the mills and salt works of W. A. DeGrauw, Aaron T. Bliss, T. Jerome & Company, E. F. Gould, J. Riley, and the planing mill and salt works of William B. Mershon. On the middle ground opposite was the extensive plant of the Hoyt Estate, managed by William L. Webber, which included a complete planing mill on the east side of the river; the planing mills of Witham, Anderson & Company and J. J. Winsor, and the large plants of John G. Owen, comprising saw mill, salt works, and planing mill which also made sash, doors and blinds.

At Florence, directly opposite East Saginaw, were located a number of lumbering concerns, including Backus & Binder, Whittier & Company (also making shingles), Charles Merrill & Company, the salt works of George E. Anthony, the saw and shingle mill of James Patterson, the shingle mill of George Davenport, and the extensive plants of C. K. Eddy & Son, J. H. Pearson & Son, and the shingle mill and salt works of Wylie Brothers. On the east side of the river were the mills of C. & E. Ten Eyck, Charles Lee, Warner & Eastman and Nelson Holland.

Within the limits of Saginaw City during this prosperous period in our history, were the mills of A. W. Wright & Company, the planing mill of Wright & Knowlton, the shingle mills and salt works of D. McLeod & Company and Brand & Hardin, the planing mill of D. Hardin & Company, the saw mills and salt works of G. F. Williams & Brothers and N. & A. Barnard (the latter also operating a shingle mill), Cameron & Merrill and Green, Ring & Company. On the middle ground, now Rust Park, were the saw mills of Sample & Camp, W. B. Stillman and A. D. Camp, the shingle mill of D. S. Chapin, the saw mill of Burnham & Still, and the mills and salt works of Gebhart & Estabrook.

At Salina, on the east side of the river, were the salt works of E. J. Ring, the planing mill of A. Linton & Son, the saw mills and salt works of Rust Brothers & Company, Eaton, Potter & Company and Wiggins, Cooper & Company. Above, near the head of the Saginaw, were the shingle mill of F. Kelly, the salt works of F. Beschke and W. A. O'Donnell, the shingle mill and salt works of E. R. Phinney and John Creenie, the salt works of Redmond & Nolan; and the shingle mill of F. & L. Brucker, completes the list of sixty-one active lumbering and salt making concerns.

### The Output of the Saginaw Mills in 1892

The manufacturers of lumber, lath, shingles, staves and heading, in 1892, embracing a majority of the concerns enumerated above, employed eighteen hundred and ninety men in the saw mills, and two hundred and ninety-two in the shingle mills, and paid in wages six hundred twenty-six thousand six hundred and forty-four dollars in the saw mills, and seventy-three thousand dollars in the shingle mills. The value of the product was four million eight hundred and twenty-four thousand dollars for lumber, and three hundred thirty thousand five hundred and ninety-two dollars for shingles. The total cut of the Saginaw mills, in 1892, was three hundred twenty-one million eight hundred and thirty-one thousand feet of lumber; one hundred twenty million two hundred and fifteen thousand shingles; fifty-nine million seven

WARNER & EASTMAN,  
Manufacturers and Dealers in

**Gang and Circular Sawn Lumber,**

North Water Cor. Emerson, and North Water Cor. M.  
ST SAGINAW, MICH.

C. & H. TEIN HYCK,  
Manufacturers of and Dealers in

**Shingles, Staves & Boards**  
Water Street, near F. & P. S. E's.

F. R. PAINE,  
CATLIN & PAINE,  
Inspectors and Commission  
**LUMBER DEALERS,**  
and to the Purchase, Inspection and Shipping of  
any point on Saginaw River.  
East Saginaw, Mich.  
Give prompt attention.

G. F. Williams & Bros.,

MANUFACTURERS AND DEALERS IN

**LUMBER, TIMBER, LATH,**

Shingles, Posts, Pickets,

Office at

CHAS. MERRILL & CO.,  
Manufacturers and Dealers in

**Dry Gang Sawn Lumber,**  
And Timber of all sizes  
DEALERS  
D. E. C. EATON, FRED. H. POTTER, GEO. L. BURROWS, L. BURROWS & CO.,  
NEW YORK

Cars Loaded to any  
Freight East Saginaw Depot on  
P. S. E.  
EAST SA

**EATON, POTTER & CO.,**

MANUFACTURERS, WHOLESALE AND RETAIL DEALERS IN

**LUMBER, LATH AND SALT.**

MILLS AND SALT WORKS IN EAST SAGINAW.

P. O. ADDRESS:

NEW CITY,

J. F. BROWN,

THOMAS SAYLOR,  
Manufacturers and Dealers in

**GANG SA WED LUMBER,**  
Planed Lumber, Flooring, Siding, Pickets and Lath.  
Also, SALT.  
Bill Lumber furnished on R.R.  
MILL AND WORKS AT

our facilities for shipping by either Rail or Water are unsurpassed.  
Post Office address.

CHAPIN, BARBER & CO.,  
Manufacturers of

**LUMBER,  
SALT AND SHINGLES.**

Special attention paid to furnishing Bill Stuff, Timber,  
Saw Mill and Office, east end of  
SAGINAW.  
Shingle Mill, F. & P. S. E.  
CLEVELAND, OHIO

SEARS & HOLLAND,  
Manufacturers and Dealers in

**LUMBER, LATH, SHINGLES & SALT,  
AND DEALERS IN  
PINE LAND AND LOGS.**  
Bristol (Street Bridge)

Office at No. 1 and Salt W  
EAS

JANES. MEAD & LEE,  
KRAUERS IN

Lumber, Sash, Doors, Blinds, Mouldings,

Siding, Flooring, Ceiling and Hard Wood of all kinds.

Cor. Hayden & Franklin Sts., nr. Washington  
EAST SAGINAW, MICH

A. W. WRIGHT & CO.,

MANUFACTURERS OF

**Gang Sawn Lumber,**

LATH AND PICKETS,

Shoop & Water Sts.

NEWELL BARNARD & CO.,  
Dealers in

**GANG SA WED LUMBER,**  
LATH, JOISTS  
And Timber of all sizes  
DEALERS  
SCANTLING,  
shipped by Panels or on Cars  
AND FARMING LANDS.  
JOHN L. BARN

BUTMAN & RUST,  
Manufacturers and Dealers in

**Gang Sawn Lumber,**  
AND DEALERS IN LOGS AND PINE LANDS.  
SAGINAW CITY, MICH.

BARNARD & BINDER,  
Manufacturers of

**Gang Sawn Lumber,**

LATH, SCANTLING, JOISTS,  
AND TIMBER OF ALL SIZES.

SHOES AND HEADING.

also Manufacturers of  
**and Dairy Salt.**  
WM. BINDER

W. J. BARTOW,  
Manufacturer and Dealer in

**GANG SA WED LUMBER,**  
AND DEALERS IN  
Pine Land

Real Estate,  
East Saginaw, Mich.

hundred and seventy thousand lath; thirteen million two hundred and two thousand staves, and seven hundred and fourteen thousand sets of heading.

### Saginaw Becomes a Distributing Market

Early in the seventies the necessity of adopting a general system of preparing lumber for use, previous to shipping it, became manifest, and serious consideration was given the subject of establishing planing mills and lumber yards in the Saginaws. The shipment of rough lumber, either green or dry, involved the transportation of a large percentage of waste material, as dry, dressed lumber weighs only half as much as rough green, and the bulk is twenty per cent less. Lumber must be seasoned and planed and otherwise prepared before it can be used for most purposes, dry kilns and planing mills doing the bulk of this necessary labor. It was evident that if they were located here, instead of at Ohio ports, and at Buffalo and the Tonawandas, and the debris and waste incident to their operation removed before any transportation costs were incurred, a great advantage would accrue to this market, and the shavings and trimmings could be utilized as fuel in the manufacture of salt, our other large staple. A discussion of this subject by A. H. Mershon, Inspector General of Lumber in 1874, was pertinent to the case, references from which are transcribed:

"The dull state of the lumber market, slow sale, low prices, slight demand, causes the anxious manufacturer to ask what is the matter, and (what is more to the point) what is the remedy? \* \* \* The consumers are, as far as we are concerned, the retail lumber yard men and the large builders, but we hardly recognize them in our trade. We have only sought to sell by the cargo or the million feet to the large city and lake port yards. Somebody must pay the yard and dock rents, the sorting and piling, the office and incidental expenses, that do not add one cent to the value of the lumber. What can't be added to the price and got out of the consumer, must be subtracted from the price paid the producer by the middle men *who have made fortunes out of simply handling our lumber*. Heretofore the consumer has paid his share, and I think the manufacturers begin to realize that they have paid theirs, and unless they change their tactics they will, from this time on, pay the whole of it.

"The consumers have found out that there are railroads to Saginaw and beyond. They have heard that lumber is cheaper than it was. One comes to Saginaw and tells us what he wants—perhaps a car load of two-by-fours, a car load of stock boards, one or two of selects or finishing lumber, a few uppers and a load of flooring, some siding and fencing. We patiently listen and say we can't bother with his order. We have a cargo or two of log run, or common and culls, or bill stuff, but as for selling in such dribblets as half a dozen car loads, we can't bother with it; all is piled together and we can't pick it out for you. The country dealer from Ohio thinks he has come to the wrong place, and goes up the road to the little one-horse affairs, as we contemptuously call them, and finds just what he wants—buys it and goes home. In a few days his lumber arrives by rail, without transfer, and is unloaded already sorted, directly in his yard, and he finds that he has saved several dollars per thousand, and the only expense he regrets is the cost of spending a day or two in Saginaw. \* \* \*

"Our railroad connections now are such that we can reach almost every section of the country. We have the advantage of being the largest manufacturing point of lumber in the world, and we would never know what hard times are if we worked the manufacturing business down to a fine point—do the work and sorting here, so that we can sell the cus-

tomer just what he wants without compelling him to take a great surplus that he doesn't want. There is a demand for all we make, dry and dress it, do it here before it starts, and keep the fuel at home to make salt. \* \* \*

"What we want for the good of the trade and the good of the valley, is more labor put upon the lumber right here at home. Increase our population by giving more men work, and increasing the value of our production instead of the amount of feet. The argument that water freights are cheaper than rail 'won't wash.' You can't reach the consumer by water, and rough lumber as usually shipped by water weighs two tons a thousand feet, while dry and dressed lumber weighs one, and the different transfers are saved and the lake port charges and profits. Sort your lumber, sell your customers what they want, and you can get your price and your pay; almost anyone can buy a few car loads if he can get such as he wants. Sub-divide your common lumber, sell the coarse low and get its value for the finer grades."

At that time (1874) several lumbermen had already established sorting yards, among whom was Jesse Hoyt, all his lumber being handled in this way, about one million feet of dressed lumber going from the planing mill every month. Wright, Tipton & Company, John McGraw & Company, Brooks & Adams, C. Merrill and several others were doing a prosperous business in this way. The distributing market, though slow in starting, began to increase in the eighties and at about the height of its trade, in 1892, there were eighteen concerns in the Saginaws doing a yard and planing mill business, namely: Bliss & Van Auken, Wright Lumber Company, E. O. & S. L. Eastman, D. Hardin & Company, York & Tillotson, Briggs & Cooper, Gebhard & Estabrook, E. Germain, Linton Manufacturing Company, O'Donnell, Spencer & Company, Avery & Company, George F. Cross Lumber Company, W. B. Mershon & Company, Ayres Lumber & Salt Company, Charles Lee, Saginaw Box Company, Charles Noll and L. C. Slade, a wholesale lumber yard only. These concerns employed an average of twenty-three hundred men and boys during 1892, to whom were paid eight hundred twelve thousand, four hundred and twelve dollars in wages. They also employed twenty-four commercial travellers. The value of their manufactured product was five million, two hundred and eight thousand dollars, which was four hundred thousand dollars more than the value of the product of the saw mills.

### Characteristics of Ammi W. Wright

At a gathering of business associates of Mr. Wright, July 5, 1892, to celebrate his seventieth birthday, James H. Pearson, a partner in some of his numerous enterprises, gave a few of the peculiar and strongly marked characteristics of their host:

"His motto was 'Early to bed, and early to rise.' He was a sound sleeper whether it be on the floor of a lumber camp, with his coat for a pillow, and a buffalo robe or blanket over him, with the temperature twenty degrees below zero; it was all the same to him. In one minute after his head was on the pillow he was sound asleep. He was the first man to arise and take a general survey of all the horses, oxen, bob-sleds, logs and camp equipments; find out how much pork, beef, flour and other supplies there were on hand; how many logs were banked, and how many skidded, and he would have the foreman of each department render an account before breakfast of everything that was going on in and about the lumber camp.

"One little incident illustrates his hardy nature. I came over from Chicago some twenty-five years ago to spend a week with Mr. Wright in visiting the fifteen or twenty camps in which we were interested,



thereby making a circuit of two or three hundred miles with a pair of horses and a tote sleigh. We started on Monday morning and we rounded up on Saturday night at what they called old Daddy Wright's place, some ten or twelve miles above St. Louis. The snow was two feet deep or more, and the night we stayed there the thermometer was between twenty and thirty degrees below zero. Mr. Wright got up in the morning, put on his pants and a woolen shirt, and pulling up his pants as a boy would who was going to wade in the summer time, went out barefooted into the snow two feet deep to the barn to feed his horses.



GRINDING AXES IN CAMP



DRAWING WATER AT SPRING

I think it must have been thirty degrees below zero; the snow creaked, and I thought it a most insane thing to do.

"When he came back into the log house he went to his cold room, and with a dry towel wiped his feet perfectly dry for more than ten minutes, then he put on a pair of good, dry woolen socks, his boots, no overshoes for him; simply a pair of thick boots. 'Never go near the fire in cold weather,' he said, 'if you want to keep warm.' We drove fifty miles that day and I thought I should freeze, yet he said he was not cold at all. I was never so glad in my life to get to a warm house in Saginaw.

"I mention some of these things that you may know, as I do, of his wonderful power and business capacity, his ability to endure hardships and to overcome all difficulties. He had a wonderful tact in dealing with all classes of men, and knew what to say and what not to say on all occasions; he was a good judge of human nature. I know of no man his equal to conduct a large business, and to comprehend the entire situation and to make a success of whatever he might undertake to do."

### Charles Merrill

Among the prominent lumbermen of Saginaw Valley was Charles Merrill, who was born at Falmouth, Maine, in February, 1793. With ripening years he engaged in the lumber business at Lincoln in his native State, where he operated a saw mill; and in 1836 visited Michigan and made some purchases of virgin forest lands on the St. Clair River. In 1845 he located permanently in Detroit, and began a series of investments in some large tracts of pine lands in Saginaw Valley, and was accounted one of the largest owners of timber limits in this section of the State. He purchased in 1854 the saw

mill which had been erected the previous year by Michael Jeffers, on the river bank opposite East Saginaw. The mill was rebuilt and improved from time to time, making it one of the best equipped on the river; and in the half century of its successful operation under the same ownership, its production reached a total of nearly half a billion feet of lumber.

It was the policy of Mr. Merrill to admit to an interest with himself in the lumber business, such faithful and competent men as in his judgment would conduct his affairs with discretion. He supplied the capital, while they devoted their time, experience and best energies to the carrying out of his plans and policies. For more than forty years his interests in Saginaw Valley were in charge of the late Joseph A. Whittier, who was recognized as one of the leading lumbermen and an honored citizen of this valley. Mr. Merrill was pre-eminently a man of business, taking little interest in politics and politicians, while withal intelligent in his citizenship. He was a staunch Republican, and his influence was always consistent in the advocacy of those principles and measures which commended themselves to his conscientious judgment.

Mr. Merrill was married in 1836 to Miss Frances Pitts, of Maine, and to them was born one daughter, who in womanhood became the wife of Thomas W. Palmer. The death of Mr. Merrill in 1872, was universally regretted in the removal of a man of integrity and probity of character, enterprising in business, far seeing, and one who in the midst of many activities was not unmindful of the rights and interests of his fellow men, and of the community in which he dwelt.

### John S. Estabrook

Few men connected with the early development of the Saginaws, had a more intimate knowledge of the lumber trade than John S. Estabrook, who was born at Alden, Erie County, New York, in 1826. He received a common school education in his native village, supplemented by a winter's course in a select school. In 1844 he was employed in a grocery store at Buffalo, but in June of the following year he took passage on the schooner *Cambria*, bound for St. Clair, Michigan, then one of the leading lumber ports west of Buffalo. He was here employed as tail sawyer in the mill of Wesley Truesdell, attending school in the Winter. The following Summer he was head sawyer in the same mill and spent the Winter in a logging camp. After other varied experiences he arrived at East Saginaw in 1852, and purchased for his employer, Willard Parker, one million feet of very choice cork pine from the Cass River stock, paying eight dollars for "quarters" and fifteen dollars for "uppers." From John Gallagher he bought an additional two hundred thousand feet of equally choice lumber at the same prices. The deals netted Mr. Parker in the Albany market a net profit of ten thousand dollars, and so pleased was he with this result that he gave outright to Mr. Estabrook the sum of two thousand dollars, and instructed him to return to this valley and search for other bargains on joint account.

So successful was he in the selection of prime stock that he soon began an investment of timber on his own account, and in the Winter of 1853-54 lumbered a tract on the Cass River, bringing down three million feet of logs. The following year he operated on the Shiawassee, but without marked success, and became associated with Samuel W. Yawkey & Company, in the commission and inspection business. In 1862 he became associated with L. P. Mason, of this city, in the inspection and shipping of lumber and allied products, a partnership arrangement which continued for several years. His field of activities was enlarged in 1871 by the purchase, with A. Gebhart, of the Curtis & King mill at Salina, which they rebuilt and

commenced the manufacture of lumber on a commercial scale. In 1876 the firm began the shipment of their products by rail, the preparation of the stock requiring the erection and equipment of an extensive planing mill, and for years thereafter they sold direct to retail dealers in all sections of the country.

Mr. Estabrook was married in 1854 to Miss Ellen R. Burt, of Ypsilanti, who died in January, 1863, leaving one child, Winnifred, afterward the wife of W. P. Powell, of this city. In 1865 he was married to Miss Helen C. Norris, who died in 1867 leaving two children, Justus Norris and Mary Elizabeth. On the third of September, 1889, he was married to Miss Harriet Sharp, of Jackson. Mr. Estabrook was prominent in social life, eminent in Masonic circles, and a staunch Republican, having held the office of mayor of Saginaw (see portrait on page 250) and other municipal positions of trust; and was twice elected to represent his district in the State Legislature. For many years he was an active member of the Board of Trade, and was a recognized authority upon all matters connected with the business interests of Saginaw Valley. In his declining years he still enjoyed the regard and esteem of all classes of the community, which he had done so much to mold, and died in peace on October 4, 1903.

#### Samuel H. Webster

A well known and highly esteemed lumberman of the old days was Samuel H. Webster, who was connected with its trade when the supply of pine timber was supposed to be inexhaustible, and lived to see the days of its decadence. He was born in New Hampshire, in 1822, and in his early years alternated between work on his father's farm and the district school. After following various occupations, in one of which he was associated with Ammi W. Wright, he turned his face westward, and arrived in Detroit in 1847, taking an interest in a grocery store. In 1855 he came to Saginaw and purchased some pine lands on the Cass River, which he lumbered and found a customer for his logs in McEwen Brothers, of Bay City. There were no boom companies on the rivers, and he found it necessary to supervise the work of running the logs down the river and delivering them to the mill boom.

Mr. Webster continued lumbering on the Cass for several years, and then transferred his operations to the Bad and Pine rivers. In 1860 he became associated with Myron Butman, and the firm built a saw mill and salt works at Zilwaukee. Later he built a mill at Carrollton, having a capacity of seventy thousand feet of lumber a day, which was afterward sold to C. W. Grant & Company. During the sixties and seventies Mr. Webster owned and operated many large tracts of timber lands in Saginaw Valley and elsewhere, and eventually made the handling of pine lands his business. It was said that his knowledge of existing conditions and stumpage values was second to no other man in the State.

In 1849 Mr. Webster was married to Miss Angeline Rice, of Vermont, and to them one son, Benjamin F., was born. Mr. and Mrs. Webster made their home at the Bancroft House for twenty-eight years, in which they were identified with the social activities of the city. In politics Mr Webster was a Republican, but was never an office seeker, preferring to devote all his energies to his business interests. He was a director of the First National Bank, and was connected with many mercantile institutions of the valley. Few men have exercised a more salutary influence over the business circles with which they have been connected.



RECORD LOAD HAULED BY ONE TWO-HORSE TEAM

#### Benjamin F. Webster

Benjamin F. Webster, only son of Samuel H. Webster, was born September 8, 1853, at Detroit, and may be said to have been "brought up" in the woods of the Cass and other logging streams of the Saginaw Valley. His father at the time was superintending his own camps during the winter months, and running the logs down the river in the Summer, and the lad was kept in the camps and on the drives until he was old enough to go to school. He then attended the common schools of Saginaw. When his schooling was completed he began working in his father's mill office, and to so good purpose that in a few years he became manager of the immense lumbering operations.

In later years he became interested in Lake Superior and Georgian Bay timber limits, and also lands in Mississippi. He was a director of the First National Bank and of the Saginaw Valley Insurance Company; and commanded the respect and confidence of the business men of the valley. He was married in 1879 to Miss Leona Livingston, of Saginaw.

#### Washington S. Green

For more than thirty years W. S. Green was prominently identified with the lumber interests of Saginaw, his residence here dating from 1864. He was born at Leonardsville, New York, in 1814; and upon attaining manhood was engaged in making agricultural tools. Upon coming to Saginaw he, in company with Daniel Hardin, purchased the saw mill of Hale & Stinson, which was operated under the firm name of Green & Hardin, and in later years that of Green, Ring & Company, with an annual production of twenty to twenty-five million feet.

Mr. Green was well versed in wood craft, and until well advanced in years had charge of the outside business of the firm, in the care of the

camps and the logging operations. He was interested in the Bradley-Ramsay Lumber Company, of Lake Charles, Louisiana, and also in a tract estimated to be one hundred million feet, in the State of Washington. In other industrial affairs he was prominently identified, generally in association with his son, Charles H., and was interested in the Bank of Saginaw in its early history. In later years he engaged in mining operations in the San Juan district of Colorado, and in the Kootenai district of British Columbia, in which he was very successful.

As an ardent Republican Mr. Green never aspired to the calling of a politician, or to hold political office, but was content to hold a higher place in the esteem of his fellow citizens, having a more honorable record in all that pertains to good and useful citizenship. Mr. Green died November 11, 1897, in his eighty-fourth year.

### Isaac Parsons

Another pioneer of the lumber industry in the Saginaws was Isaac Parsons, who came here in the early fifties and engaged in "looking" land for some of the leading lumbermen of the valley. He was born at Leyden, Lewis County, New York, November 19, 1829, his father being of English descent, sprung from Sir John Parsons who came to Massachusetts in the early colonial days, while his mother was Mary Brown Parsons, of Scotch descent.

His boyhood was spent in his native village where he attended the district school, and upon attaining manhood he came to Saginaw. With his brother, Aaron A. Parsons, he engaged in the real estate business at Saginaw City, and made the first set of abstract books for this county. While thus occupied he gradually acquired extensive holdings of land in and near the city, of which the Parsons Addition and the Gaylord & Parsons Addition represent the large tracts. He also at one time owned the larger portion of the river front of Carrollton; and he and Doctor I. N. Smith owned the farm which later comprised Union Park.

About 1866 Mr. Parsons embarked in the lumber business, associated with William Little. It was a time when the pine forests were yielding fortunes to enterprising men, and soon after he formed a partnership with Alfred F. R. Braley, and still later with Aaron P. Bliss. The firm of Bliss & Parsons operated extensively in Wisconsin for some years, considerable profit accruing to each member. In later years Mr. Parsons secured mining interests in Montana and in Canada.

On July 10, 1866, Mr. Parsons was united in marriage with Miss Helen Ackley, and to them was born one daughter, Helen A. Parsons. Isaac B. Parsons, a nephew, who resides at Haywood, California, was adopted by them in boyhood, and was as a real son to them. Mr. Parsons was devoted to his home and his business, and never cared for the honors of political office or of public life. He was counted as a Democrat, though for years he belonged to the class of independent voters who acknowledge allegiance to no party. As a husband and father he was sympathetic, kind and generous, and as a neighbor and friend he was true and helpful. As a member of St. John's Episcopal Church he served as vestryman for many years, and was a liberal supporter of the good work of the parish. After an illness of about four years he died on Sunday morning, September 7, 1902, in his seventy-third year.

### Ralph A. Loveland

The lumber business in the main has been carried on by men of rare intelligence and good citizenship, and Ralph A. Loveland, for many years at the head of the Saginaw Lumber & Salt Company, belonged to this repre-

sentative class of lumbermen. He was born at Westport, New York, January 17, 1819, the son of Erastus and Lucy Bradley Loveland. In his youth he devoted his Summers to boating on the Hudson River and Lake Champlain, and his Winters to study at Essex Academy. Later he engaged in shipping on those waters, in which he was successful, but in 1863 he disposed of these interests and removed to Janesville, Wisconsin. There he was occupied in sheep raising and wool growing, a business which he followed for six years.

In 1869, in company with D. L. White, S. W. Barnard, A. S. Page and A. G. P. Dodge of New York, he established a lumber yard at Chicago, with branches on the North Side and on the North Branch. Closing out this business in 1876, Mr. Loveland purchased a small mill with a tract of timber in Montcalm County, Michigan, upon the exhaustion of which he bought lands on the Au Gres River in Iosco County, estimated to cut one hundred and fifty million feet of sawed timber. The logs were cut and rafted to the mill at Crow Island, four miles below Saginaw. The cutting of this tract continued until 1893, after which the mill was supplied with logs from Georgian Bay, towed across the lake in huge rafts.

The Saginaw Lumber & Salt Company was organized in 1881, with James Maclaren, president, Otis Sheppard, Vice-president, R. H. Roys, secretary and D. L. White, Jr., treasurer. For many years the average cut of the mill at Crow Island was twenty million feet per year, and ten to twenty million feet in addition was cut at other mills on the river, for the company. The salt block connected with the mill had a yearly capacity of fifty thousand barrels, in the manufacture of which the mill refuse, formerly a source of expense in its removal, was made to pay a profit as fuel in salt manufacture. Afterward the mill plant was removed to Sandwich, Canada, opposite Detroit, where it was operated for several years and then again taken down and rebuilt at Georgian Bay, near the timber limits of the company. Associated with Mr. Loveland in these enterprises were his sons, Daniel K. and Ralph, who conducted the business long after his death.

Mr. Loveland was married March 25, 1840, to Miss Harriet M. Kent, daughter of Daniel M. and M. G. Kent, of Benson, Vermont. She died at Saginaw, December 23, 1887. In March, 1894, he married Miss Helen Crittenden, of San Francisco, a lady of refinement and culture. He was interested in all public affairs that concerned the welfare of the city and State, and was a Henry Clay whig and afterward a Republican. In his religious convictions Mr. Loveland was a Baptist, and an influential member of that church. He was an excellent type of the average lumberman of past years, exhibiting enterprise and public spirit, qualities which characterized the lumber fraternity.

#### William H. Edwards

For many years prior to 1860 William H. Edwards was a prominent figure in the lumber trade of the Saginaw Valley. He was born at Huntington, Connecticut, in 1816, and enjoyed the limited privileges of the schools of the day, combined with employment in a woolen factory. At the age of eighteen he worked in a machine shop, acquiring a general knowledge of machines and tools. In 1848 he engaged in cutting lumber at Lockport, New York, adding a four-foot circular saw in 1852, one of the first in that section, and afterward began the manufacture of cut shingles. He gradually extended his lumbering operations, and in 1858 removed to East Saginaw, which offered a more extended field.

From that time Mr. Edwards carried on quite an extensive business in logging from lands located on the Flint River, and on the Tittaba-



LOADING LOG TIMBER FOR SHIP SPARS

wassee. About 1870 he operated a shingle mill opposite East Saginaw, and later erected a circular saw mill in Ogemaw County, which was burned in the forest fires of 1875.

Mr. Edwards was an enthusiastic Democrat, and was so devoted to the principles of the party that in 1870 he established the *Saginaw Courier*, a daily paper advocating those principles. Through constant advances of money in its support, it fell into his hands and drew heavily upon his fortune.

Jovial in disposition, Mr. Edwards was a most genial man with a heart ever ready to respond to the claims of friends, or relief of the needy, and probably he never had an enemy during his long life, numbering eighty-one years. In 1857 he was married to Miss Harriet Beardsley, of Bridgeport, Connecticut, two sons and one daughter blessing the union. He died February 9, 1897, but the mental image of a good citizen and honored lumberman remain with all who knew him.

### Side Lights on Some Pioneer Lumbermen

Among the numerous anecdotes related of our pioneer lumbermen, a few leave vivid impressions of the men connected with them. One in particular, concerning an honored citizen, illustrates the rapidity with which timber lands in those days increased in value, often without the owners being aware of the fact.

Early in the seventies S. Bond Bliss, who built the four-story brick block, now known as the Mason Building, being in need of some ready money, applied to Wellington R. Burt, then one of the big lumbermen on the river, for a loan of four thousand dollars. The security he offered was ample, being a mortgage on the business block he owned, but Mr. Burt, with customary caution, hesitated a moment while debating the matter in his mind.

Mr. Bliss said, "I own a section of timber land at the head waters of the Muskegon, near Houghton Lake, and will throw that in for good measure.

I have never seen the timber, but I think there must be some value to it." After a few minutes consideration the terms were arranged, the loan made, and the papers delivered.

Nothing more was thought of the matter, much less the timber land, for several years, but when the principal and accrued interest amounted to more than six thousand dollars, Mr. Burt began to doubt the sufficiency of his security. He had never taken the trouble to have the land "looked," to determine the amount of standing timber, as it was far removed from his lumbering operations, and there was no railroad anywhere near it; and so the matter rested.

One day a stranger entered the office. He was a rough, hardy fellow with all the marks of having come down from the woods, evidently to get a job in town. At the moment of his coming Mr. Burt was very busy at his desk with some important business, and spoke without looking up. The man asked if he was interested in some timber land on the upper Muskegon, giving a description of the land. Mr. Burt replied that he was and that the land was for sale.

"What is your price for it?" asked the stranger.

Still intent upon his work, the thought ran through his mind that the fellow was a "timber wolf" who wanted an option on the land in order to sell it to some other lumberman, so Mr. Burt replied in a loud tone, as if to dismiss the whole matter: "One hundred thousand dollars is my price."

The man waited a moment and then asked, "Is that your best terms?"

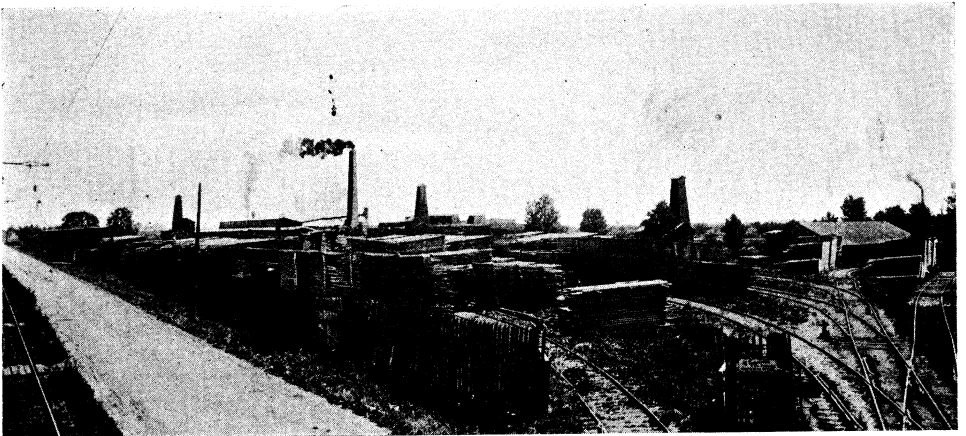
"Yes," snapped the busy lumberman, without glancing up, but hoping thus to be well rid of the intruder.

"Well! We will take it," was the calm reply.

The explosion of a bomb could hardly have produced a greater sensation. Awakened to the situation Mr. Burt wheeled in his chair and for the first time faced the woodsman.

"Do you mean that?" he thundered, "Who are you anyway?"

"Yes, I mean it," he replied, and added, "I represent Hackley & Humes of Muskegon. If you will have the deeds drawn at once, and sent to our bank in Muskegon the money will be paid over. The funds are there awaiting you."



SAW MILL AND LUMBER YARD IN THE CAR TRADE



Never before in his all his varied experience had such a deal as this been put through in such an amazing manner, but it was a bona-fide bargain and was closed according to arrangement. The land which Mr. Burt would have sold for five thousand dollars was worth a hundred thousand to those who could lumber it along with their operations in the neighborhood. A handsome profit accrued to the Saginaw lumberman, and a well-known merchant and realty owner was again "put on his feet."

When the country to the north and west of Saginaw was yet in its wild, primitive state, a large reservation was set off in Isabella County as a tribal home for the Chippewa Indians. In this almost unbroken wilderness the savages roamed, and fished and hunted, set up their villages and planted maize, unmolested by white men. But when lumbering operations crept up the tributary streams and approached the boundaries of their retreat, covetous eyes were cast on the pine timber which covered the land. Soon "land lookers" were going among the Indians offering to buy the timber, giving in exchange trinkets dear to the untutored mind, necessities of savage life, and perhaps a little money. Not all were fortunate enough to pick up *valuable* timber in this way, and some got none at all.

When the cutting of timber on the reservation lands actually began, it was observed that one company, headed by a leading citizen of Saginaw City, had title to the very choicest timber in the reservation, and in such an aggregate amount as to cause much comment and concern by their rivals in the business. Section after section of the best timber had been deeded by the Indians to the head of the company; and no hint or trace could be found as to when or how the deals with the red-skins had been made. The old lumbermen spent many sleepless nights figuring out how the trick had been turned, and they had been check-mated in the game.

One thing they learned, too, that increased their amazement and chagrin. It was the fact that insignificant consideration had been given for most of the choicest timber. In talking with the former owners of a valuable tract, the land lookers or agents would invariably ask, "What did you get for this fine clump of trees?"

"Huh! Me get pint fire-water, gun, powder, blanket, all good," the Indian grunted.

Another said, "Me get big pipe, much heap smoke, fire-water, red sash."

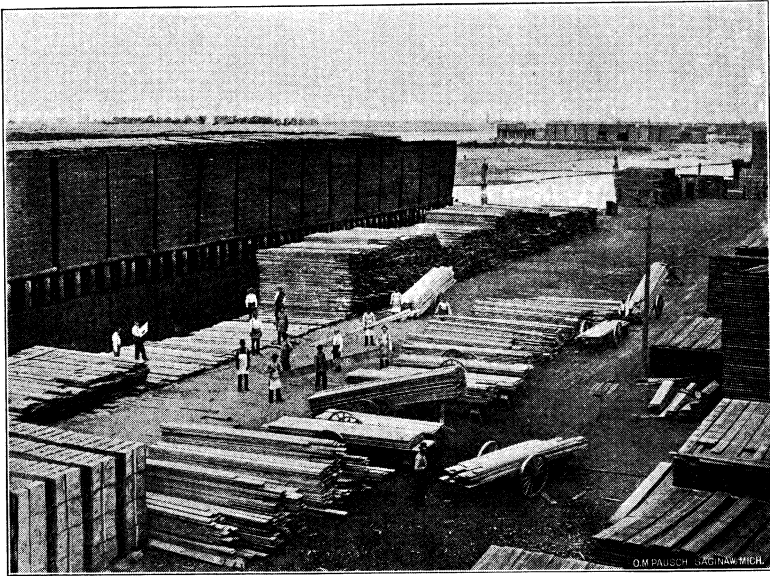
"Us get pale face canoe (batteaux), hook 'em fish, axe, knife," others said.

It was apparent that little or no coin had been given, and the value of the stuff which attracted the Indians was very small and insufficient. With all their searching and questioning nothing which threw any light on the subject was ever discovered.

Years afterward, when lumbering operations in this section had been brought to a close, the secret was told.

There was an old lawyer and politician, named John Eaton, who lived in the forest settlements, and later settled at Clare. He had somehow "got wind" of the time and place of holding of the council, when the reservation lands were to be given over to the red-skins individually. Here was an opportunity, he believed, for some shrewd lumberman with means to get a decided advantage over his competitors.

So he wrote to Arthur Hill, whom he knew quite well as one of the rising lumbermen of Saginaw Valley, to come up and meet him in the village at the appointed time. Without knowing what had been "cooked up" by the crafty lawyer, Mr. Hill went to the place of meeting in the woods, and put up at the little tavern which was the only lodging place in the wilderness for miles around.



SCALING AND SORTING LUMBER ON THE DOCK

The following day the Indian Commissioners with their luggage arrived at the tavern, ready for the final council with the Chippewas. One piece of baggage in particular attracted the attention of the lumberman, and the lawyer guessed that it contained the official papers in the big deal. So they kept an eye on this valise and took note where it was stowed away behind the bar, which also served as the office counter of the border tavern.

Late at night, when all was quiet in the place, the schemers lighted a candle, crept out softly in their bare feet, and slipping below lifted the valise from behind the counter and took it to their room. It was the work of only a moment to find the official list of Indian reserves, with the description of the land each was to receive. A longer time, however, was required to make a hurried copy of the list, when the original paper was replaced in the valise and it was put carefully back in its place. So stealthily had this been done that no one dreamed of the trick that had been put over the commissioners.

To send competent and trustworthy land lookers through the reservation and pick out the choicest timber was the next move. Then the shrewd lawyer, with this information and the official list of reserves, checked up with it, did the rest. He knew many of the Indians personally, and it was not a difficult matter to get them "feeling good," and then by offering them the necessities of savage life they craved, to induce them to sign away their timber rights.

When the truth was known and the story told, the whole affair was regarded as a huge joke on the other lumbermen, who were thus compelled to take the "leavings."

In speaking of the good old lumbering days on the river, O. E. Elsemore, one of the prominent log scalers and boom men of the time, recently said: "The famous cork pine of the Cass was indeed a wonderful timber, but some equally as good, though in small lots, was found on the Tittabawassee and tributaries. I well remember one fine tract near Red Keg (Averill), which cut twenty-seven million feet of logs to a section; and one

acre of especially fine trees, which I had measured and staked off, was cut and skidded separately to satisfy my curiosity. This one acre scaled more than one hundred thousand feet of logs, some of which ran two to the thousand, a record which has seldom been equalled.

"I came to Saginaw in 1867 and went to work on the old Huron boom in the Cass River. It was a busy stream in those days, and from scaler I advanced to the position of foreman of the boom, which I held for thirteen years. The boom company was composed of such men as Sears & Holland, N. B. Bradley, Bundy, Brown & Little, Shaw & Williams, Edwin Eddy, Ketcham & Company, Avery & Murphy, Charles K. Eddy, James Tolbert and others. Those were great days. The memorable forest fires of October, 1871, destroyed a vast quantity of valuable timber, and in order to save that which had been killed, but not burned, the logging operations the following winter were on a big scale. As a result the logs rafted and delivered to the mill booms from the Cass, in 1872, reached a total of one hundred and four million feet, the greatest in its history. The following year the production fell off to about fifty-six million feet, and soon dwindled to fifteen or twenty million. By 1885 the pine and hemlock timber on this stream, including a territory many miles back on both sides, was entirely exhausted, though small rafts amounting in the aggregate from one and a half to five million feet, came down for several years after.

"The Saginaw Valley lumbermen, as a whole, were as honest and straightforward a lot of business men as you would find anywhere; but, since you ask it, I will say that they all were looking after their own best interests. This sometimes resulted in coups, misunderstandings and hard feelings. No timber was stolen outright—it was too cheap for such tactics, but the timber itself was sometimes purloined and the loss not discovered by the owner for several years. In cutting a quarter or an eighth section here, or a quarter in an adjoining section, or another tract some distance away, which belonged to the operator, he was careful, you may be sure, in the absence of very definite lines, to get all the timber belonging to him, and if his cut extended well over on the land of his neighbor there was no one there to dispute or stop him, and he got away with it. Some men grew rich, I have no doubt, in following this practice, but it was not so universal as was at one time supposed. Wealth came easily to energetic men of ability and capital, and it was not necessary to encroach on the rights of others to gain a fortune. It was rather the traits of integrity, perseverance and hard labor which brought wealth to our lumbermen."



THE TITTABAWASSEE AT RIVERSIDE PARK

## CHAPTER XVII

# THE SALT INDUSTRY

An Essential Element of Life—Doctor Houghton Makes Early Discoveries—The State Bores for Salt—Failure of the Project—Granting a Bounty on Salt—Incorporation of the First Salt Company—Erection of the First Salt Block—United with the Lumber Industry—Repeal of the Bounty Law—The State Reaps the Benefits—Purity of Saginaw Salt—Early Methods of Manufacture—Rapid Development of the Industry—Difficulties Beset the Manufacturers—Formation of the Saginaw & Bay Salt Company—The State Salt Inspection—Michigan Salt Company—Decline of Salt Production—Economies of Modern Salt Making—Utilization of Exhaust Steam—The Wilcox Automatic Rakes—Working Up the By-Products—Salt Production.

FROM its being one of the usual and necessary constituents of food and a component part of the blood, salt is an essential element of life, while the enormous consumption and variety of purposes to which it is applied in manufacturing operations, invests its history with a peculiar interest. In consequence of the great demand in the economy of human life, constant exertions have been made, both by public and private enterprise, to devise new sources for its production, either as a rock salt or in the form of salt brine.

Salt also possesses an element of romance. The mining of it has been carried on in Austria for centuries, the mines in the wonderful salt country around Ischl being show places, through which tourists are conducted for a fee. In the valley of the Vistula, in Austrian Poland, there is an underground city hewn from rock salt. It was started a thousand or more years ago, and now has winding streets, railway stations, churches, restaurants and other features, both civil and industrial, of a prosperous community.

### Doctor Houghton Makes Early Discoveries

Although the Saginaw Valley and a large portion of Lower Michigan is underlaid with an immense bed of rock salt, of inexhaustible proportions, which might be and indeed has been mined, the economical production of salt in this State, as at other points in the Middle West, is by the simple reduction of resulting brines. As early as 1837 Doctor Douglas Houghton, the State geologist, in his first report on the subject of brine springs, speaks of one at the mouth of Salt River:

“On the Tittabawassee River, in Midland County, numerous indications of the existence of brine springs were noticed, extending from near the mouth of Chippewa River as far as I ascended the former stream, being a few miles above the mouth of Salt River. Upon either side of the Tittabawassee River, between the points noted, small pools of brackish water were observed, as also, occasionally, springs discharging a similar water in small quantities; and although an examination showed the waters to contain large quantities of the salts of lime, and occasionally of iron, they were never destitute of more or less salt.

“Springs of a more decided character occur in the vicinity of the mouth of Salt River. The first observed occurs in the stream near the right bank of the Tittabawassee, a little below Salt River, \*\*\* and was found by actual measurement to discharge about seventy gallons of water per hour. Nearly a mile above this spring upon the same bank, and elevated from eight to ten feet above the water of the river, is a

second spring, discharging a somewhat larger quantity of water. Near by, but at a greater elevation, several small springs of brackish water were seen issuing from the sloping bank of the river, which, upon examination, were found to contain a notable quantity of salt.

"The quantity of water discharged from these springs is small, but when considered in connection with those already noticed, they become matters of considerable interest, since they serve to show that the salines are not confined to one or two springs, but are widely dispersed over a large district of country. Brine springs are known to exist near the mouths of Flint and Cass Rivers in Saginaw County; but they occur in a flat country and the unfavorable season compelled me to defer examining them until some future time."

In commenting on this report, Stevens T. Mason, the first governor of Michigan, in his message of January 4, 1838, to the Legislature, says:

"The examination of the saline springs has been carried so far as to render it certain that we possess an extensive salt region, and that, with but a comparatively trifling expenditure, we shall be enabled to manufacture salt in sufficient quantities not only for home consumption, but that it must become an article of extensive export. The whole number of salines granted by the Act of Congress have not as yet been located, in consequence of a want of time to examine the northern region of the State; but such a number have been secured as to justify the Legislature in authorizing preparatory measures for bringing them to public use."

In accordance with the recommendation contained in the governor's message, the Legislature, by act approved March 4, 1838, directed the State geologist to commence boring for salt as soon as practicable at one or more of the State salt springs. He was authorized to employ a chief assistant well skilled in the practice of salt-boring, and other assistants as might be necessary, appropriating a sum not exceeding three thousand dollars to defray the expenses, to be paid out of the internal improvement fund. The geologist accordingly visited the principal salt wells of Ohio, Pennsylvania and Virginia, with a view of availing himself of the most recent improvements in the method of conducting the work.

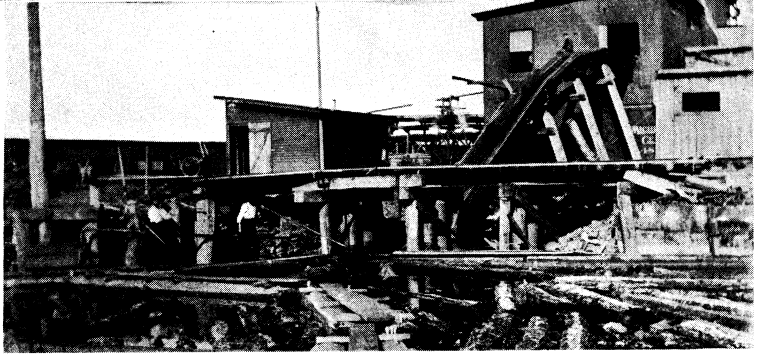
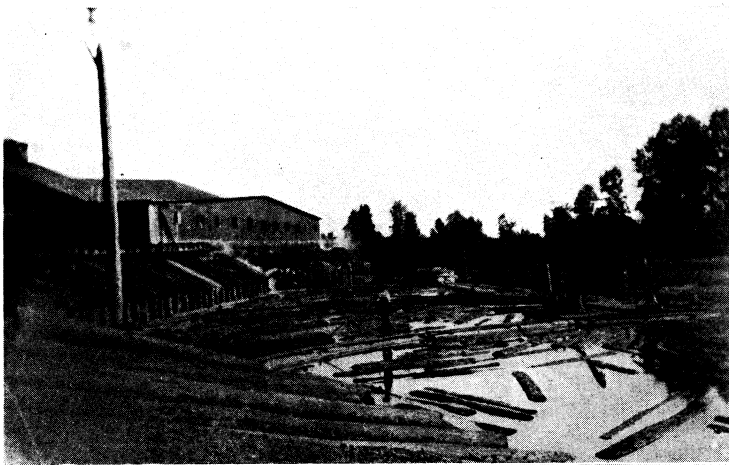
The salt springs of New York were so differently situated that a satisfactory comparison with them could not be instituted, on which point he said:

"Any attempt to improve the water of our own springs upon the plan there pursued, would most assuredly prove valueless. The brine springs of our State, like those of Ohio, Pennsylvania and Virginia, emanate from a rock which lies deep, being covered with a mass of earthy matter, which it is necessary to penetrate. But the appearance of salt springs at the surface is of itself far from being evidence of water below. It is only a single link in the chain of facts."

#### **The State Bores for Salt**

Two points were selected for test wells; one on the Grand River about three miles below the village of Grand Rapids, and the other on the Tittabawassee, at the mouth of Salt River. The appropriation for this purpose was quickly expended in preliminary work, the country roundabout being a forest wilderness; but the following year the Legislature directed the geologist to continue the improvements, and appropriated fifteen thousand dollars to defray the expenses thereof.

In speaking of the well at the Tittabawassee River, Doctor Houghton in his annual report says:



SALT BLOCK AND MILL BOOM

THE LOG END OF SAW MILL

"In continuing the shaft commenced at this place much difficulty has been encountered from the influx of water; but the condition is such that this difficulty may now be easily overcome by properly sinking tubes. All is in readiness to proceed with rapidity, and the whole outlay for materials having been incurred, the remaining expense of completing the work will be comparatively small.

"At a little less than fifty feet a continuous vein of salt water was opened, but so intermixed with veins of fresh water as to make it impossible to determine the absolute quantity of saline matter contained in it. \*\*\* Although this water is not of sufficient strength to admit of its economical use for the manufacture of salt, it nevertheless serves to add confidence to the hope before expressed, of eventual success in obtaining the object sought, if the plan proposed be carried out."

The work at that time was suspended because the moneys appropriated could not be realized; and the report of the select committee called attention to the fact that seventy-two sections of land, amounting to more than five thousand acres which, apart from the special value in consequence of the salt springs, were worth five dollars an acre, must be regarded as a gift from the United States, in consideration of the testing of their value for the production of salt. "Your committee are fully aware of the opinion," the report reads, "that the prospects of success, offered by a continuance of the improvements in progress, are such as not only to warrant their continuance, but also that the best interests of the State demand it."

By act of March 30, 1840, the Legislature appropriated five thousand dollars for the improvements at the salt springs on the Grand River, and a like amount on those on the Tittabawassee. Under this act a contract was made with Ira T. Farrand, by which he agreed to sink the shaft upon the State salt lands at Tittabawassee to the rock beneath, and a well in said rock to the depth of three hundred feet from the surface, the price to be seventeen dollars per foot for the first fifty feet; and sixteen dollars per running foot for the remaining two hundred and fifty feet; and in addition the State was to pay for the tubing if any be used. The contract was confirmed on March 16, 1841, and the work, which for eighteen months had been suspended, was speedily resumed.

At the mouth of Salt River, where the earth-boring was originally estimated at one hundred to one hundred and fifty feet, after nine months of continuous labor the contractor had only been able to reach a depth of one hundred and thirty-nine feet. The results were disappointing, but the geologist restates the opinion that to obtain water at maximum strength the shaft should be sunk to a depth of at least six hundred feet, and recommends that the well be completed at an early day.

#### Failure of the State Project

An appropriation of fifteen thousand dollars was approved February 14, 1842, to be expended upon the two wells already commenced; but further attempts to obtain water possessing qualities suitable for making salt proved unsuccessful. The salt lands of the State were then platted into lots and leased with the right to manufacture salt, provided that at least four cents per bushel of fifty-six pounds be paid to the State for the water. No further progress was made at the springs on the Tittabawassee, except to keep the machinery in repair; and some doubt was entertained as to the validity of the title of the State to the land where the salt well was commenced.

The foregoing facts, comprising the principal action of the State toward the development of the salt springs in the Saginaw Valley, prior to 1859, were embodied in a paper prepared by the late William L. Webber, and read before the State Pioneer Society, February 2, 1881. The paper was honored by publication in the Michigan Pioneer Collections, Vol. IV, pp 13-22.

#### Granting a State Bounty on Salt.

In 1859, some citizens of Grand Rapids applied to the State Legislature for an appropriation of ten thousand dollars to be used for further testing the question of the existence of salt at the Grand River well. There was no proposition for continuing the experiment in the Saginaw Valley, and, as the State treasury had no great surplus, the Legislature would not make an appropriation to be applied merely for experiment. Knowing this fact, a few prominent men of East Saginaw having faith in salt, met at the office of Charles B. Mott, on January 26, 1859, and after a general discussion of the whole matter appointed a committee, consisting of Norman Little, Morgan L. Gage, Doctor George A. Lothrop and William L. Webber, with instructions to petition the Legislature for such aid as in the opinion of the committee the Legislature would be most likely to grant.

The committee believed it would be useless to ask for a money appropriation, but it was thought probable that a bounty would be granted contingent upon success. A petition to that effect was duly prepared and sent forward, and a bill proposing a bounty of ten cents on each *barrel* of salt made was sent to James Birney, then representing the Saginaw district in the Senate, to be presented to that body. The Legislature seemed to regard it as a harmless bill, and by way of ridicule some member moved to make the bounty ten cents a *bushel*, equivalent to fifty cents a barrel. Willing to

carry out the joke, the Legislature passed the bill in that form, and it was approved February 15, 1859. The act as passed also exempted from taxation all property used in the business of manufacturing salt.

### **Incorporation of the First Salt Company**

Encouraged by this act of the Legislature, and with no more doubt that the State would in good faith observe and keep its promises than that it would ultimately pay its bonds, the enterprising men of East Saginaw, including Jesse Hoyt, of New York, formed themselves into a corporation under the general manufacturing law as the "East Saginaw Salt Manufacturing Company," with a capital stock of fifty thousand dollars, consisting of two thousand shares of twenty-five dollars each. The whole amount was subscribed in two days and the articles of association were signed on April 16, 1859.

The men to whom the Saginaw Valley and the State are indebted for the discovery of brine, and to whose risk and expense this industry, which proved of such great value, was created, were William L. P. Little, Webber & Wheeler, James L. Ketcham, George A. Lathrop, Dwight G. Holland, Moses B. Hess, Alexander English, John F. Driggs, William J. Bartow, William F. Glasby, Jesse Hoyt, Charles B. Mott, Henry C. Potter, Chester B. Jones and John P. Derby, each of whom subscribed for one hundred and twenty shares of the capital stock. William C. Yawkey and George W. Merrill each took forty shares; D. W. C. Gage and O. P. Burt twenty shares each; and Chauncey H. Gage and Perry Joslin ten shares each. Doctor George A. Lathrop was elected president of the company, W. L. P. Little, treasurer, and William L. Webber, secretary; and these officers, with Messrs. Mott, Ketcham, Hess, Potter, Merrill and Glasby, comprised the board of directors.

Organization having been perfected, Jesse Hoyt tendered the use of ten acres of land near the bank of the river for the boring of an experimental well, with an option in case of success to purchase the same at an agreed price. The location selected was north of Washington Street and just below the site of Carlisle's tannery. None of the men connected with the enterprise had any knowledge of the geological formation of the valley, or any experience concerning the boring of salt wells, so a committee, consisting of George W. Merrill and Stephen R. Kirby, was appointed to visit the Onondaga salt wells in the State of New York, and learn what buildings, machinery and tools were necessary for the boring of the well.

After a thorough investigation of the matter by these practical mechanics, some of the tools and equipment required for the work were purchased at Syracuse and shipped by way of the Erie Canal and the lakes to Saginaw. In due course the work was commenced by the erection of a drill house, an engine was procured and the machinery set up and put in operation under the direction of Sanford Keeler, then a young engineer on the river. Other necessary tools and appliances were made or purchased, tubing for the earth boring was secured and the well begun.

Soon after the work was well under way, Mr. Kirby, who had general charge of the enterprise, was called to the West to look after some of the Hoyt interests, and the direction of affairs and the whole responsibility of carrying on the operations devolved upon Mr. Keeler. He was equal, however, to every emergency, and the results obtained were due very largely to his ability and perseverance. The first well bored was four inches in diameter, carried through a layer of soil ninety-two feet in thickness, at which point a brown sand rock was encountered. From that the boring continued down through alternate strata of rock to a depth of six hundred and thirty-three feet, terminating in a fine sandstone known as salt rock.

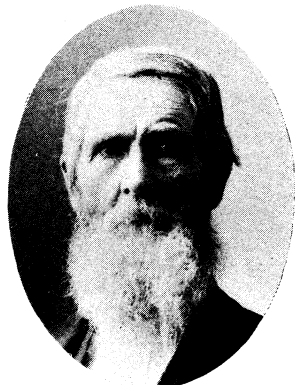




Stephen R. Kirby  
Who Planned the Operations



Sanford Keeler  
Who Drilled the First Salt Well



George W. Merrill  
Who Made Part of the Machinery

TO WHOM HONOR IS DUE FOR THE DISCOVERY OF SALT

The want of definite knowledge of the geological formations delayed the operations considerably. At Onondaga, the wells were carried down only to the salt rock, but here it was found necessary to penetrate the saline deposit; and in doing this a new difficulty arose. The drills which had been used in boring were not suited to working in salt rock, they would wear dull very quickly and then stick and break, on one occasion requiring incessant labor for three weeks to dislodge the parts and remove the fragments, so that operations could be resumed. On account of these delays, which taxed the patience and ingenuity of the young engineer, it was not until February 7, 1860, that the work on the well was completed; nor until that date did the board of directors declare the experiment a success.

On the ninth of February public announcement was made of the discovery of brine of sufficient strength for commercial reduction to salt, and as stated in the *Courier* of that date, the "news struck the community like an electric shock." In their report to the stockholders the directors said:

"We have been aware of your natural anxiety for information during the progress of the work, but the board of directors at an early day adopted the policy of studiously withholding the facts developed from time to time, however encouraging, lest they might excite hope which the final results would not justify. We are happy now to assure you that Saginaw possesses salt water second in strength and purity, and we believe in quantity, to none in the United States."

#### Erection of the First Salt Block

Greatly enthused over the success of their experiments, the company at once proceeded to the erection of works for the manufacture of salt, consisting of two kettle blocks after the manner of those in use at Syracuse. Cord wood was used for fuel, and the manufacture commenced in the latter part of June, 1860. The production the first year was ten thousand seven hundred and twenty-two barrels of salt, consisting of five bushels each; and

in the second year—July 1, 1861, to July 1, 1862, the production of this company alone was thirty-two thousand two hundred and fifty barrels. As soon as the success of this experiment was thoroughly demonstrated, other companies were formed and wells commenced at various points on Saginaw River. In five years the production had reached five hundred and twenty-nine thousand barrels; and in 1880—twenty years after the discovery of brine—the manufacture was two million six hundred seventy-eight thousand three hundred and eighty-six barrels, being something over thirteen million bushels of salt.

Experience demonstrated that the mode first adopted for the manufacture was not calculated to produce the best economical results. The East Saginaw Salt Company estimated that the wood used in 1862 cost twenty-five and a half cents for each barrel of salt made, and that each cord of wood used in the kettle blocks gave a product of about seven barrels of salt. Cord wood at that time could be procured at about one dollar and seventy-five cents per cord of average quality, but soon after the manufacture of salt increased the price was raised to about three dollars a cord, which brought the cost of fuel to about fifty cents a barrel of salt.

### **The Salt and Lumber Industries United**

Saginaw River was then lined with saw mills producing vast quantities of sawdust and slabs, which could be utilized as fuel, far in excess of that required for the use of the mills. It was soon discovered that the quality of the brine was such that evaporation in vats and pans was more economically accomplished than in kettles. The heat in the exhaust steam of the saw mills, it was also found, could be utilized for this purpose; and by combining the two manufactures, salt and lumber, the fuel for the former could be obtained practically without cost. Thus the two industries were united, or rather, salt manufacture was largely developed by the lumber business. For the production of salt in 1880 the saving in fuel alone was one and a quarter million dollars, and the consumer received the benefit of this saving. In 1870 the average price of salt at Saginaw was one dollar and thirty-two cents per barrel, but ten years later it had dropped to seventy-five cents per barrel, or fifteen cents a bushel, at which price no one could manufacture salt in kettles without loss.

### **Repeal of the Salt Bounty Law**

The Legislature of Michigan, having passed the salt bounty bill providing for a bounty five times greater than was asked or desired, with the object of encouraging private enterprise of a measure, in which public experiment had signally failed, soon discovered its mistake, and at its session of 1861 repealed the act absolutely. The result was that the East Saginaw Salt Manufacturing Company, at whose risk and expense this great industry was discovered and developed, received from the State as a bounty only the sum of thirty-one hundred and seventy-four dollars, which was paid by a compulsory writ from the Supreme Court. The payment was but a trifling compensation for the losses incident to the making of the discovery of brine, and testing all the experimental questions in the manufacture of salt, competing, meanwhile, for the market with a rival so strong as the Onondaga Salt Association which, to cripple the Saginaw industry, sold salt in competition at one dollar a barrel at the lake ports, when their retail price at Syracuse was two dollars and thirty-five cents a barrel.

The changes in the method of manufacture were such that the stockholders of the East Saginaw Salt Manufacturing Company, who had paid in on the capital stock (which had been increased to two hundred and fifty

thousand dollars), the sum of one hundred and seventy-five thousand dollars, found themselves with practically a worthless property on their hands, their competitors, who had profited by their experience, keeping the price so low that no profit could be realized from the manufacture by their method. At least one hundred and fifty thousand dollars was sunk by this company for which no return was ever received, and the stockholders had to content themselves with the satisfaction of knowing that to them, and to their enterprise and expenditure, was the State indebted for this industry which assumed such enormous proportions within twenty years.

### **The State Reaps the Benefits**

The advantages which the State received from the manufacture of salt on a commercial scale within its boundaries, were inestimable. From 1860 to and including 1881, the production of salt in Michigan amounted to eighteen million eight hundred sixty-five thousand three hundred and sixty-nine barrels. Everything used in the manufacture and packing for shipment was produced at home, except the nails to hold the hoops and heads on the barrels, so that practically all the money received for the product added to the wealth of the State. At an average price of one dollar per barrel for all the salt produced in the twenty-one years, the total valuation was almost eighteen and a half million dollars. Prior to the discovery of brine, the price paid for salt by the people of Michigan was much higher than prevailed afterward; and on a basis of one bushel a year for each individual, the consumption in 1881 was about three hundred thousand barrels. If the saving to these consumers was only half a dollar per barrel, the total amount for twenty-one years was fully two and a quarter million dollars. In addition to this, the value of taxable property was greatly increased, thus lightening the burdens of other portions of the State.

### **The Purity of Saginaw Salt**

At an early day in the development of our salt industry it was determined by practical tests that the quantity of brine in the Saginaw Valley was inexhaustible. Every new well bored produced an abundant supply, and excessive pumping reduced the strength only temporarily, the brine at once regaining the prime standard when the excessive drain was checked. The brine was perfectly clear and apparently pure when drawn from the wells, but by exposure to the atmosphere some impurities were precipitated, and in the process of manufacture others were developed and removed by careful treatment. Care in the process greatly enhanced the preservative qualities of salt, and the majority of the Saginaw manufacturers produced an article so pure and wholesome as to stand the test of most thorough experiment and investigation. As a result a high reputation was soon attained for Saginaw salt in all the markets it reached.

### **Early Methods of Manufacture**

Almost at the beginning of the salt industry there were two modes of manufacture, one by the evaporation of the brine by artificial heat, the other accomplishing the same result by the heat of the sun.

The mode first employed here was that evaporating by artificial heat, of which there were several processes, the original being the kettle process. A salt block consisted of fifty or sixty kettles and the stone or brick work in which they were set. The kettles were arranged close together in two rows, over two arches with only a dividing wall separating them, reaching from the mouth of furnace to the chimney. The arches in front were about three feet deep, the bottom gradually rising as they receded, so that under the back kettles the space was only ten or twelve inches. Each block was



SAGINAW RIVER IN THE EIGHTEEN-NINETIES, FROM THE WEST END OF THE PERE MARQUETTE RAILROAD BRIDGE

housed under a wooden building from seventy-five to one hundred feet long, and about twenty-five feet high in the center, with sheds on each side containing bins for the drainage of the salt as made. After remaining in these bins for two weeks the salt was packed in barrels for market.

When the works were in operation, an engine at the well pumped the brine through pump logs to vats or cisterns close by, flowing in through a spout over the top. From these vats another set of pump logs carried the brine into the block, and along the top of the masonry between the rows of kettles, with a spout extending over each kettle. When the kettles were filled and the brine was heating by the rousing fire of four-foot cord wood beneath, before boiling commenced, a scum arose on the surface and was removed. After boiling a short time the crystals of salt began to form on the surface and fall to the bottom; and when boiled down about one-half the salt was dipped out with a long-handled pan and thrown into a basket placed over one side of the kettle, for draining: The "bitter water" thus drained off carried with it the Calcium Chloride and other impurities, the elimination of which was an all important point in this mode of manufacture.

Solar salt, produced by the other mode of manufacture—evaporation by the heat of the sun, was made in shallow wooden vats, and was much purer than that first made in vats in the ground. A salt cover was eighteen feet square, and had an annual capacity of fifty bushels. The solar process was very simple and entailed but slight expense in operation.

Late in March the water which had remained in the vats during the winter, to preserve them from the action of frost, was drawn off, and everything cleaned and put in order. As soon as the sun's rays began to have sufficient warmth, the brine was poured from the reservoirs into the hundreds of wooden vats, each of which was provided with a movable cover or roof, mounted on a trolley stage, so that it could be moved backward and forward over the vat to protect or expose the brine, as the state of the weather rendered desirable. The appearance of these acres of rows of wooden pent covers from a distance, gave the otherwise desolate marshes over which they spread the semblance of a barrack ground. On approaching them the illusion was quickly dispelled, and instead of a bugle call or sentry challenge, the sharp shriek of the engine whistle, calling the men to their labors, or the noise of the pumps, greeted the ear.

The brine was allowed to remain in the vats from six weeks to two months to evaporate, according to the number of warm sunny days, when the salt was all deposited, drained off and dried, and at once packed in barrels for shipment. The works produced three crops of solar salt in a season, the first being gathered about the middle of July, the second in September, and the third the last of October. A small quantity, about a tenth of a crop was gathered in November, from the vats which produced the first crop. The middle crop was considered the most valuable due to the exceeding coarseness of granulation, by reason of its more rapid evaporation in hot, dry weather. This coarseness of solar salt gave it increased value, and it was highly prized by pork and beef packers, as it prevented the meat from packing too closely and permitted a free circulation of the brine. It is also peculiarly adapted for salting hides and for other purposes of like nature. The last solar salt works to be operated at this end of the river was that of Mitchell, McClure & Company, below Zilwaukee, but it was abandoned and fell into ruin about ten years ago.

### Rapid Development of the Industry

By means of various processes in manufacture, such as kettles, solar and steam evaporation, pans, and Chapin's Patent which originated here, the production of salt at Saginaw increased very rapidly. In 1867 one and a

quarter million dollars were invested in the industry, which produced three hundred and fifty-eight thousand barrels of salt, and gave employment to four hundred and seventy-one men. The following table gives the names of manufacturers, location of works, production, number of men employed and the investment:

George D. Lord, Zilwaukee.....	11,224	15	\$100,000
Western Salt Company, Zilwaukee.....	35,000	40	82,000
Oneida Salt & Lumber Co., Crow Island.....	10,900	11	35,000
Orange County Salt Co., Carrollton.....	14,000	20	75,000
Saginaw Valley Salt Company, Carrollton.....	16,000	14	74,000
Chicago Salt Company, Carrollton.....	22,500	30	30,000
Empire Salt Co., Carrollton.....	10,000	14	50,000
Elisha C. Litchfield, Carrollton.....	14,000	18	30,000
Haskin, Martin & Wheeler, Florence.....	47,467	50	70,000
East Saginaw Salt Mfg. Co., East Saginaw.....	21,500	75	140,000
Buffalo Salt Co., East Saginaw.....	15,000	15	35,000
F. Briggs, East Saginaw.....	11,049	10	18,000
Chapin, Barber & Company, East Saginaw.....	1,250	3	7,000
Burnham, Lawton & Co., East Saginaw.....	2,863	6	25,000
D. G. Whitney, Saginaw City.....	8,500	13	28,000
Mack, Schmid & Kull, Saginaw City.....	11,550	8	10,000
Barnard & Binder, Saginaw City.....	16,000	10	25,000
Green & Hardin, Saginaw City.....	13,148	10	12,000
Heather & Allison, Saginaw City.....	4,500	1	10,000
Forest City Salt & Lbr. Co., Saginaw City.....	9,219	9	15,000
N. B. Nye & Co., South Saginaw.....			28,000
Ann Arbor Salt & Lbr. Co., South Saginaw.....	9,030	11	17,000
Rust & Ingledew, South Saginaw.....	6,000	6	10,000
Allen Sutherland, South Saginaw.....	1,660	5	8,000
Steven, Cromwell & Co., South Saginaw.....	7,252	16	30,000
Medina Salt Company, South Saginaw.....			12,000
Salina Salt Company, South Saginaw.....	16,300	25	30,000
New England Salt Works, Buena Vista.....	3,000	6	5,000
Wayne County Salt Co., Tittabawassee.....	9,589	9	5,000
Albany Salt Co., Cass River.....	9,000	15	85,000
Gordon, Penny & Co., Cass River.....			30,000
Union Salt Works, Bridgeport.....	500	6	10,000

### Difficulties Beset the Manufacturers

Along in the sixties the salt industry began to feel the effects of over-production and the want of co-operation among the manufacturers in the matter of proper handling of the market demand. Experience was also having its effect in teaching the lesson of economy and perfection in all the processes of manufacture. From the excitement of the early years, caused by tapping an inexhaustible reservoir of wealth, leading too frequently to enterprises suggested by imagination rather than by calm judgment, the industry was getting down to the hard pan, which was reached when it was discovered that skill was required to make good salt, economy and industry to make cheap salt, and business tact and judgment to put it on the market in competition with Onondaga and Ohio River salt, so as to produce a profit. The combination of the salt block with the saw mill, peculiar to this valley, was a remarkable instance of mutual adaptation and co-operation between separate industries, the use of exhaust steam from the saw mills in evaporation of the brine, being an important economic measure, as the cost of fuel for this purpose was eliminated.

### Formation of the Saginaw & Bay Salt Company

As a result of these economic changes in the salt business, an associative movement began in 1866, under the name of the Bay County Mutual Manufacturing Company. The following year the concern adopted the name of Bay & Saginaw Salt Company, and broadened its operations in an endeavor to market the production of the Saginaw Valley. Shortly after the company was reorganized under the name of the Saginaw & Bay Salt Company, with a capital of two hundred thousand dollars; and Henry M. Fitzhugh was president, Newell Barnard, vice-president, John S. Judson, secretary, and N. B. Bradley, treasurer. This was a long step in advance in the salt business, and its operations gave steadiness to the market, prevented speculation, and the absorption of the profits of manufacture by middle men.

The company was organized on strictly mutual principles, its stock being held by manufacturers only, who chose the directors from their own number. It received all the salt made by the stockholders, giving liberal advances on the product on their docks, sold it on the best terms, and made monthly settlements of accounts due; and by circulars issued each month kept its members well informed of the entire situation and of the affairs of the company. It gradually extended its business with the largest markets, reaching many points never before touched by individual effort, and realized better prices as indicated by the appended table of average prices per barrel for 1867:

May .....	\$1.77	September .....	\$1.73
June .....	1.77	October .....	1.75
July ....	1.74	November ..	1.85
August .....	1.78	December .....	2.16

These prices were net, covering all expenses, and paid in cash to the producers. In addition five cents a barrel was retained by the company to cover expenses of administration and incidentals, from which revenue a considerable surplus accumulated for the payment of dividends to the shareholders.

The cost of producing a barrel of salt in Saginaw at this time was estimated as follows:

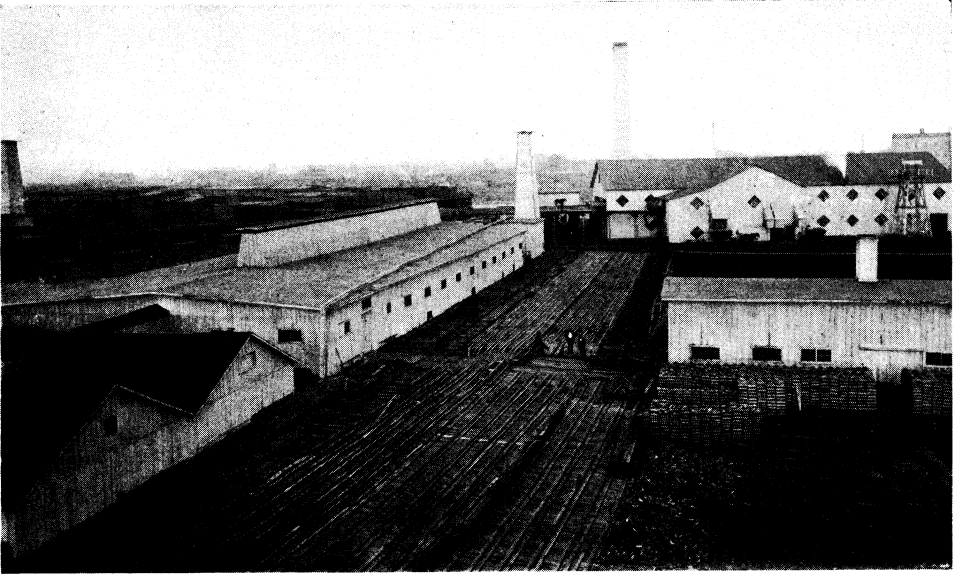
Pumping .....	\$ .05	Labor .....	\$ .30
Barrel .....	.40	Fuel .....	.50
Packing, etc. ....	.08 $\frac{3}{4}$	Interest and Repairs.....	.15
Inspection .....	.01 $\frac{1}{4}$		
			\$1.50

The number of men employed directly and indirectly in the manufacture of salt was about one thousand, and the average wage was two dollars a day.

In 1868 the company sold and shipped three hundred eighty-two thousand two hundred and fifty-two barrels, the Chicago market receiving and consuming the larger proportion of this quantity. Its operations brought about a uniform system of inspection and introduced order and reliability into a business which, without such general regulation, had proved unenumerative.

### The State Salt Inspection

In 1869 a rigid inspection of Michigan salt was instituted, and in a few years fully realized the expectations of its originators. Owing to its established character Michigan salt met with steadily increased demand, and found a ready market throughout the country. Samuel S. Garrigues, a scientific and practical chemist of ability and reputation, was the first State Salt Inspector with an office at East Saginaw. In 1874 George W. Hill was deputy inspector at East Saginaw, H. Estabrook filled the same position



SALT BLOCK, SAW MILL AND COOPER SHOP OF CHARLES MERRILL & COMPANY

at South Saginaw, V. W. Paine at Saginaw City, James Hill, at Carrollton, and John Haight, at Zilwaukee. In later years Mr. Hill became the State Inspector, an office he held for an extended period.

Four grades of salt were created, the product being packed in barrels of two hundred and eighty pounds, or fifty-six pounds to the bushel. No. 1, Fine, was for general use and all family purposes; Packers was suitable for packing and bulking meat and fish, one of the finest and best brands for such purposes; Solar salt, when screened and branded as "C Solar C" for coarse, and "F Solar F" for fine grades, was equal in all respects to New York solar salt; No. 2, Second Quality, was a grade intended for No. 1, of any of the above grades, but which for any cause did not come up to the standard tests, and was so branded and sold as such. It was good for salting stock, hay, hides and such purposes.

During 1873 the distribution of Saginaw salt was three hundred and twenty-five thousand barrels to the Chicago market, one hundred and fifty thousand barrels to Milwaukee, fifty thousand barrels to Cleveland, one hundred and fifty thousand barrels to Toledo, twenty-five thousand barrels to Sandusky, and about seventy-five thousand to Michigan points. So high was the favor in which the local product was held that the managers of the exposition at Cincinnati awarded a handsome silver medal and diploma to the exhibitors of Saginaw salt, namely: Burnham & Still, for two barrels of fine steam salt; Bundy & Youmans, for fine kettle salt; T. Jerome & Company, for fine pan salt and packers; Thomas Saylor & Company, for exceptional quality of solar salt. This prize was awarded from a locality heretofore supplied by the Ohio River and Onondaga Salt Companies, and was a high compliment to Saginaw salt which attracted much attention at the exposition.

In 1872, at the Union Fair at Grand Rapids, and at the State Fair the following year, Saginaw salt from the works of John F. Driggs took the first premium in competition with Onondaga salt. Fifty years of progress in the manufacture of salt in New York State, where it had been produced since 1797, did not equal the progress made in five years in the Saginaw Valley.



### Michigan Salt Association

The Michigan Salt Association — the successor of the older co-operative companies, which was managed so many years by Dwight G. Holland with great skill and energy, was a powerful factor in the business and constantly extended its field of operation by introducing its product into new markets. The Association was organized in 1876 and embraced as members all the manufacturers of salt in the State excepting thirteen. Its object was to secure united action among the many producers and to market their product through one channel, thus by a minimum expense of distribution obtain better net prices for its members. Taking their salt as fast as it was made and shipping it to the consumers direct, or to its different reshipping points, the Association made liberal advances on the monthly output and paid the manufacturers in full when sold.

This method of handling such a large quantity of one commodity, proved such a success from the start that the members conceived the idea of building spacious warehouses at the large lake ports, for reshipping to the interior, those at Chicago, Milwaukee, Toledo, Detroit and Michigan City being the largest. The prices at which the salt was sold was fixed by the Association, and each member contributing received the same price per barrel, or per ton in bulk, no limit being placed on the output.

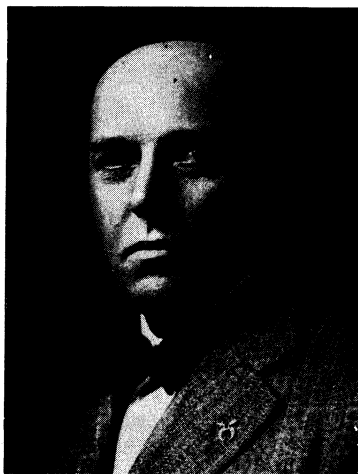
The first officers of the Association, which was capitalized at two hundred thousand dollars, were: Wellington R. Burt, president; Albert Miller, vice-president; Thomas Cranage, Jr., treasurer, and Dwight G. Holland, secretary. The executive committee was composed of Wellington R. Burt, J. L. Dolsen, Thomas Cranage, Newell Barnard, and W. J. Bartow. These officers were elected year after year and by their management the salt business of Michigan reached such gigantic proportions, the Association marketing from three to four million barrels per year.

Wellington R. Burt held the office of president until 1894, when Thomas Cranage was elected to this position. In 1896 he was succeeded by E. D. Wheeler, of Manistee, who served two years; and in 1898 Walter S. Eddy was elected president and continued until 1914.

The secretary of the Association was Dwight G. Holland, who served continuously from the organization until his death in 1903, a period of twenty-seven years. The office of secretary and treasurer were then consolidated, and C. M. Ireton, who was assistant secretary for many years, was elected to fill both offices which he continued until 1914.

On January 1, 1914, C. M. Ireton and A. A. White associated together, and securing the assets and good will of the Association, are continuing the business of distributing and wholesaling salt, with offices in Saginaw.

C. M. Ireton was born in Kalamazoo, Michigan, July 23, 1857, and came to Saginaw four years later with his parents. From the age of twelve to seventeen he worked during the Summer in and around saw mills on the river, being able to "hold down" any job that was assigned him; and he attended the public schools in Winter. He then went to the Highland Military Academy, at Worcester, Massachusetts, from which he graduated with the class of 1877.



C. M. IRETON

His business experience was gained through service with Morley Brothers, Avery & Company, and Eddy Brothers & Company; and through Wellington R. Burt he was appointed to a position in the office of the Michigan Salt Association. There by strict attention to business he has gained his present standing in commercial circles, being recognized for his integrity and sterling qualities.

On December 11, 1878, Mr. Ireton was married to Miss Isabelle Fraser, daughter of Murdock Fraser, one of the earliest pioneers to this section of Michigan. The two children living as a result of this union are a son, Russell, and a daughter, Winifred.

Mr. Ireton received a First Lieutenant's commission under Governor E. B. Winans, in 1892. Fraternally he is a 32nd degree Mason, Past Commander St. Bernard Commandery, K. T.; Past Potentate Elf Khurafeh, Shrine A. A. O. N. M. S., being organizer and captain of this Shrine's famous patrol.

### Decline of Salt Production

The manufacture of salt, even at the height of the industry, was productive of very small profits, but the making of by-products from the waste bittern by new and economical processes gradually brought about a revolution in the business. The cost of fuel was the largest single item of expense of manufacture, and the effect of the decline of the lumber business, upon which the salt industry depended for its existence, was noticeable in the eighteen nineties. Without the once free exhaust steam from the saw mill engines, and refuse from the saws, no salt wells could be operated at a profit, and hundreds of pumps that in former years were active soon fell into disuse, and the salt blocks were dismantled. The industry was kept alive, however, by the development of the coal fields in Saginaw Valley, by which cheap slack coal was burned under the saw mill boilers to furnish steam for the brine pumps and salt blocks. Even this means of bolstering up a declining industry was not altogether successful, and the price of salt declining to forty-five cents or less a barrel, its manufacture here was rendered unprofitable.

The industry in the Saginaw Valley has not failed absolutely, as in recent years the price of salt has risen to a more profitable plane. In 1916 the business at Saginaw was represented by six active corporations, five of which were engaged in wood-working, and one in making plate glass. They were the Bliss & Van Auken, Mershon, Eddy, Parker Company, S. L. Eastman Flooring Company, Strable Lumber & Salt Company, E. Germain Estate and the Saginaw Plate Glass Company. It was at the last named plant that the most complete salt-making works in the country were completed and put in operation in 1906, and since that time has been the largest producer in Saginaw County.

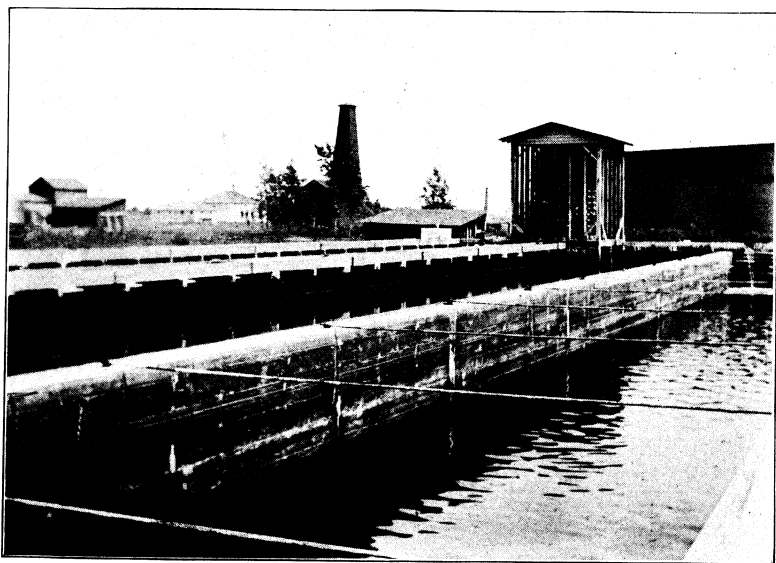
### Economics of Modern Salt Making

In erecting this new salt block advantage was taken of all new devices, machinery, and methods of handling the product, so that one thousand barrels of fine salt packed ready for market, without the touch of a hand or lift of an arm, are produced in twenty-four hours. The cost of producing fine merchantable salt, moreover, has been reduced to a figure astonishing to all salt experts. The three factors that bring about this economy are solid reinforced concrete grainers, waste exhaust steam from the numerous engines of the glass-making plant, and automatic machinery by which no hand touches a crystal of salt. Only the master saltmaker and a few helpers are required to watch the machinery and keep it in perfect running order.

The salt brine is supplied by twelve wells about one hundred and fifty feet apart, ranging in depth from seven hundred and seventy-five to eight hundred feet, and penetrating the rock salt for some distance. The wells are encased with heavy tubing extending down into the rock, through which the saturated brine is brought to the surface; and above rise the drill houses with their high towers protecting the pumping machinery. Each well is equipped with a brine pump operated by a seven and one-half horse power electric motor, the current being furnished by generators in the power plant of the glass works. From the drill houses the brine is pumped to an elevated circular tank of two hundred barrels capacity.

All brine is more or less impregnated with iron and other impurities; and to free it of these it is drawn from the elevated receiving-tank to one of a series of settling tanks, to which it flows by gravity. These tanks are built of solid concrete, each one hundred and seventy feet long by twenty feet wide, and seven and one-half feet deep, and are reinforced by long corrugated rods of iron. Every alternate dividing wall is provided with a narrow plank walk, so that the saltmakers can more readily examine the brine. The flow of brine through the troughs along the top and end of the settling tanks is controlled by a simple arrangement of gates, through which it may be made to flow into any of the tanks desired.

In these settling tanks the brine is treated to a solution of lime, which precipitates the remaining impurities held in suspension, leaving the brine as blue as ocean expanse, and as pure and clear to the eye, but far more salty to the taste. The purifying of the crude brine through the agencies of the sun, air and chemical action, having been fully accomplished, the clear brine is ready for the next important operation—its conversion into crystalline form. This is the most interesting part of salt making. The clear brine is pumped into one of the salt blocks, a wooden building one hundred and eighty feet square, and conveyed to two concrete pre-heaters, where it is heated by steam coils and made ready for evaporation.



SECTION OF SETTLING TANKS, SALT WORKS OF  
SAGINAW PLATE GLASS COMPANY

The grainers, ten in number, are the principal feature of the whole works, and were the first ever constructed of solid concrete. By this departure from the old method of using wooden planks, calked, the builders achieved a remarkable advance in salt-making. The grainers are long shallow tanks of concrete, each one hundred and fifty feet long, twelve feet wide, and twenty inches deep. The sides and bottom vary in thickness from six to ten inches, and rest upon a firm earth foundation, and so constructed with steel reinforcement that no damage occurs by reason of the constant expansion and contraction going on through the changing temperature of the mass. Through the entire length of each grainer are ten four-inch steam pipes, running close together through truss bars suspended about eight inches from the floor of the grainer, by means of wire cables secured to heavy beams above.

### **The Utilization of Exhaust Steam**

All the engines of the large plate glass works exhaust into an elevated main, twenty-two inches in diameter, connecting the works with the salt blocks. This main is protected with asbestos covering and the steam is conserved for all the requirements of the salt-making processes. When the engines are not running live steam direct from the boilers is turned into the exhaust main, which is not an unduly expensive procedure since the boilers are fired with cheap slack coal from the coal mines of this valley. The main steam pipe enters the block at the rear end, and extends across the ends of the grainers at right angles to them. At intervals of fifteen feet along the main feed pipes branch off to the right and connect with the ten steam pipes in the grainers. This is done in such a way that there is equal distribution of steam to all, so that all the grainers may be operated at the same time.

When the brine in the pre-heaters has reached the requisite temperature, it is allowed to flow into a grainer, nearly filling it. Exhaust steam is then turned on, and passing through the steam pipes in the grainer, continues the heating of the brine to the boiling point, when crystalization begins. This is a most interesting chemical action. Upon the steaming-hot surface of the brine a pellicle of salt forms; it soon breaks and sinks down to be followed by another, and the crystalization proceeds rapidly throughout the grainer. It is the extreme rapidity of the process in the concrete grainers that astonishes the old saltmakers, who declare they have never seen anything like it before.

"The secret is this," explained one of them: "the concrete becomes so extremely hot from the maintained temperature of the brine, that it acts as an oven and actually makes salt on its sides. Even after the steam is turned off the grainer goes on making salt for an hour or two. We have had to put on scrapers to remove the salt from the sides of the grainers; and is a device which saves the wages of three or four men."

### **The Wilcox Automatic Rakes**

The salt accumulates rapidly on the floor of the grainer, and to remove it there were installed the Wilcox automatic rakes, which operate beneath the steam pipes. These are long rigid frames of steel, running the entire length of the grainer, of angle-iron construction, which slide backward and forward along a steel track which is bolted to the concrete walls about six inches from the bottom.

At intervals of eight feet, beginning at the extreme back end of the grainer, are hung crosswise rakes of galvanized bar iron, about six inches wide, hinged to turn upward and forward. This steel frame with the rakes



ONE OF THE TEN CONCRETE "GRAINERS," WORKS OF  
SAGINAW PLATE GLASS COMPANY



AUTOMATIC RAKES DUMPING SALT FROM GRAINERS ONTO CONVEYORS  
SAGINAW PLATE GLASS COMPANY



HILLS OF SALT IN HUGE WAREHOUSE, DRYING OUT FOR PACKING IN BARRELS, SAGINAW PLATE GLASS COMPANY

is attached at the front end to a hydraulic cylinder, of nine feet stroke, so that with each forward movement of the piston rod the salt is gathered by the rakes and moved along the floor of the grainer nine feet toward the front end. The return stroke places the rake next in front one foot behind the little pile of salt, twelve feet long or the width of the grainer, the hinged rake slipping over, and the operation is repeated again and again. This goes on through the whole length of the grainer, a complete stroke requiring three minutes. The last rake of the series at the front end brings up the accumulated salt on an inclined table which drains off the brine and then dumps it over the edge into a wooden conveyor below.

As the salt drops into the conveyors, which are twelve inches wide and twenty inches deep, automatic rakes carry it along to a series of hoppers, set in the bottom of the conveyor, at intervals of twenty-five feet. Beneath the hoppers are fast-running rubber belts, fifteen inches wide, which catch up every particle of the salt and carry it into the storage building adjoining. The salt, as it leaves the belt is caught up by vertical conveyors, lifted to the roof and deposited on other conveyors which carry it to any part of the big buildings desired, where it slips off, forming huge piles. The power to drive these conveyors is furnished by a number of electric motors placed at convenient places for the transmission.

When the salt has been inspected it is branded with the company's trade brands, and is then ready for shipment. If loaded in bulk in cars, the operation is simply to run a pair of bucket conveyors into the car and in a short time thirty tons or more of the glistening white crystals are transferred from the hillsides of salt. The usual practice, however, is to ship in barrels, even though the package costs more than the salt it contains.

#### Working Up the By-Products

A further economic advantage to the Plate Glass Company in the manufacture of salt, lies in the fact that two of the constituents of plate glass—saltcake and soda ash—are by-products of saline brines. As the brine lies

in inexhaustible supply deep down in the earth's crust and under the immense plant, it is, of course, simply a matter of good business to bring the brine to the surface and work it up into the various products, some of which are essential to their other processes. The waste bittern, which remains after the salt has been taken from the brine, is here treated by chemical processes and converted into a dry solid—calcium chloride, which resembles salt.

This chemical is used for a number of other purposes, and is in demand principally for refrigerating, cold storage, cooling, the making of artificial ice, and to take the moisture out of blast-furnace gases. It is also used on roads to settle dust, as it is cleaner and better than crude oil. About thirty tons of the substance are made per day in the chemical plant, adjoining the salt blocks, which is thoroughly equipped for the purpose. In each department of the great industry nothing is wasted.

Within the last two or three years the chemical business in Saginaw has been augmented by a similar plant for the reduction of salt brine bittern, by S. L. Eastman Flooring Company, at their salt works adjoining the maple-flooring mill in Carrollton, about two miles below the city.

### Salt Production

The production and value in Michigan for 1914, according to the last report issued, were greater than for any previous year, the total amount of brine and rock salt being eleven million six hundred seventy thousand nine hundred and seventy-six barrels, valued at three million two hundred ninety-nine thousand and five dollars. The average price per barrel was twenty-eight cents three mills, the highest since 1901 except in 1904 when it was thirty cents nine mills. From 1905 the average price per barrel has risen from nineteen cents six mills to the present figure.

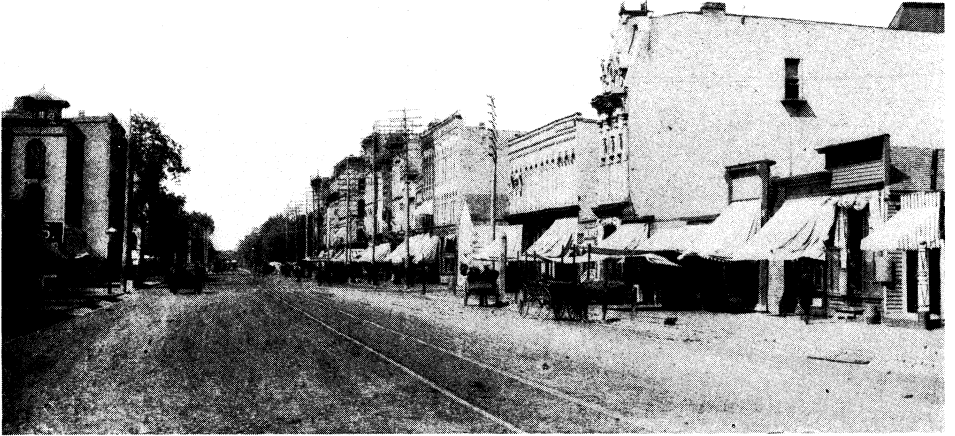
The following table shows the production and value of salt in this State during the last decade:

	Barrels			Barrels	
1906	9,936,802	\$2,018,760	1911	10,320,074	\$2,633,155
1907	10,786,630	2,062,357	1912	10,946,739	2,974,429
1908	10,194,270	2,458,303	1913	11,528,800	3,293,032
1909	9,966,744	2,732,558	1914	11,670,976	3,299,005
1910	9,452,022	2,231,262			

Since the decline of the lumber industry in Saginaw Valley the manufacture of salt here has fallen off to a little more than three per cent. of the total output of the State; and in 1913 and 1914 was as follows:

	1913		1914	
	Barrels		Barrels	
Common fine . . . . .	95,478	\$49,991	30,795	\$15,065
Coarse . . . . .	266,579	105,053	367,272	176,003
	<u>362,057</u>	<u>\$155,044</u>	<u>398,067</u>	<u>\$191,068</u>

In 1914 the production of Saginaw County was only three and four-tenths per cent of the State production, but in value it was five and seventy-nine hundredths per cent of the total amount received by the manufacturers. The largest proportion of salt output of the State is now derived from the immense salt works on the Detroit and St. Clair Rivers and at Manistee and Ludington, although Bay County still contributes a considerable quantity.



WASHINGTON STREET NORTH FROM JANES, 1888



CASS (BAUM) STREET SOUTH FROM TUSCOLA, 1888



## CHAPTER XVIII

# THE COAL INDUSTRY

---

Primitive Coal Mining — Discoveries in Saginaw County — Early Mining at Sebewaing — First Mines in Saginaw — Expansion of the Industry — Arthur Barnard Begins Mining Coal — Labor Difficulties — Some Miners Become Operators — The Operators Take a Hand — Caledonia Wins Out — The Operators Regain Advantage — Characteristics of Saginaw Coal — Development of Mines — Costs of Mining — Value of Coal Lands — Methods of Mining — Introduction of Mining Machines — Coal Production — The Output of Saginaw County — Consolidation of Coal Interests.

**T**HE existence of coal beds in Michigan has been known for many years, almost since the early settlement of the State, but for economic reasons they were not developed until comparatively recent years. Fuel for the pioneers lay at their very doors, the wood from the forests which were leveled to make ready for agriculture, supplying all their simple needs. Timber was a waste product of advancing civilization and had to be burned to get it out of the way. As years passed and cities and towns took the place of primitive settlements, quantities of hardwoods, and the refuse of the saw mills which sprang up on every stream, were made to furnish heat for the inhabitants. Not until the timber supplies of the State began to fail, and other sources of fuel were sought, did enterprising men turn to deposits of coal in the earth.

In 1856 the first coal mines in the State were opened a few miles west of Jackson, and five years later mines in the city were first worked by William Walker. The operations were conducted on a small scale, and in 1877 only four mines were worked, giving employment to about two hundred men and producing sixty-eight thousand tons of bituminous coal in a year. Later coal beds at Corunna were developed on a commercial scale, but the product was of poor quality, containing a high percentage of sulphur and ash, although running well to fixed carbon and volatile matter. There was yet but small demand for such fuel and slight incentive for capital to develop new coal fields.

### Discoveries of Coal in Saginaw County

The first discovery of coal veins underlying the Saginaw Valley was made in 1859, in drilling the first salt well of the East Saginaw Salt Manufacturing Company. This well, it will be remembered, was on the east side of the river, just below the present site of Carlisle's tannery. From the diagram of the upper portion of this well, which was made at the time it was put down, it is seen that the drills passed through two coal bearing strata, one twenty-three feet in thickness, at a depth of two hundred and eleven feet from the surface, and the other ten feet in thickness, at a depth of two hundred and forty-six feet. Nothing whatever was done to examine these coal strata or to determine their extent, which is an illustration of the fact that the people had not yet begun to comprehend the great natural wealth and resources of this valley. A wealth of forest in all directions awaited their enterprise and energy to create fortunes therefrom, and lumbering was the one great industry. In drilling into the earth salt brine was what they were seeking, and the discovery and development of it occupied their whole attention. Very many salt wells afterwards drilled passed through various coal strata, but no efforts were made at the time to arouse any public interest in mining it.

In 1875 a vein of coal was discovered on the Shattuck farm, five miles west of the city, and created some interest among our enterprising citizens. In a report of the discovery made public at the time, it was stated that: "Two holes, one-fourth mile apart, were sunk to the depth of one hundred and sixty-four feet, resulting in finding a superior article of bituminous coal. During the past summer another hole was bored nearly a fourth mile distant from the others, and the following is the log of the borers: 'sand, sixteen feet; sandstone and slate, twenty-three feet; coal, four and a half feet; sandstone, slate and shale, twenty-four feet, and coal, seven feet, a total of one hundred sixty-one and a half feet.'

"The following analysis was reported by the chemist to whom the coal borings were submitted: 'Carbon, seventy-three and three tenths per cent; ash, five and seven tenths per cent; sulphur, sixty-eight hundredths of one per cent.'

"The almost entire absence of sulphur and the large preponderance of carbon render this, it is claimed by those who claim to be posted, fully equal to the product of the celebrated Blossburg and Cumberland mines."

The report concludes with an account of the drilling at a point southwest of the holes mentioned, on the farm of William Badger on the banks of the Tittabawassee, in which a bed of coal seven feet in thickness was struck at a depth of one hundred and fifty-eight feet from the surface. As in previous discoveries of coal nothing was done to open up mines and as late as 1892, when coal was found at numerous places, south and southwest of Saginaw, from forty to fifty feet below the surface, with good roof, and in beds from five to seven feet in thickness, and of excellent quality, capital was still reluctant to develop the new fields. At that time it was believed that the whole Saginaw Valley was underlaid with rich deposits of coal, and it was confidently predicted by some enthusiasts that coal "would furnish an unlimited supply of fuel for the great manufacturing industries to be developed."

### Early Mining at Sebewaing

Ever alive to the commercial interests of the valley, William L. Webber was the first to practically develop coal mining in this section. He made it the hope of the commercial and industrial development of Saginaw by opening a mine at Sebewaing, in Huron County, on the line of the Saginaw, Tuscola & Huron Railroad, of which he was president. In 1889 John Russell, a well borer, reported to Mr. Webber that he had drilled through a vein of coal about four feet thick, and submitted specimen of coal in fine particles, which was taken from this drill hole. Mr. Webber tested the specimen and finding good coal directed several test holes to be made at his expense. These holes revealed the presence of a bed of considerable extent, and he directed that a shaft be put down in order to take out enough coal to test its quality with other coal then sold in this market. The comparison proving satisfactory, a coal company was formed, of which Mr. Webber was the principal stockholder, and he was elected its president.

Mining at Sebewaing by the Saginaw Bay Coal Company was actually commenced in the latter part of 1890, and soon reached a commercial scale, the product finding a market at Saginaw and other cities of the valley. The coal vein was about one hundred feet below the surface, and averaged four and one-half feet in thickness. The quality of the coal, however, was not what had been confidently expected; it contained a large percentage of sulphur, and in burning had a tendency to cake or run together and form a mass on the grates. For this reason it was found to be unsuited for steam-making purposes, and was little used by manufacturing concerns. The coal

was thoroughly tried out in engines of the Saginaw, Tuscola & Huron Railroad, with only partial success; and later was tested by the Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad, but after several months of experiment it was abandoned as unfit for use in locomotives. This decision closed a wide market for Sebewaing coal, and thereafter it was in less demand.

Meanwhile much trouble had been experienced in the mining operations by "flooding," and the scarcity of labor, and because of these and other adverse circumstances the Sebewaing mine was closed down in 1894. During 1892 there were mined and shipped from Sebewaing by this and another mine operated by Bay City capitalists, eight hundred and six cars of coal, being an average of sixty-seven cars a month. The amount of coal raised and shipped during the four years of its operation was about sixty-six thousand tons, but the sales did not compensate Mr. Webber and his associates in the mining project for the time and money expended in this experimental stage. The discovery then made and pushed forward proved an incentive for others to follow, and to Mr. Webber, perhaps more than to any other pioneer mine owner, is credit due for having inaugurated a great industry, with numerous mines scattered through the valley, from which thousands of tons of bituminous coal are being hoisted daily.

Some years later the old Sebewaing mine was reopened by Thomas P. Whittier and others for the purpose of recovery of pyrites, a mineral which was abundantly associated with the slate. Mining operations were carried on for some time, but without very marked success, the production of coal being a secondary consideration. Pyrites is commonly of a bright brass-yellow color, and is often found crystallized in cubes. It is very widely diffused, frequently being found in coal fields, the action of water and air changing into sulphate of iron, during which so much heat is devolved as to render some mines unworkable. The mineral is used for the manufacture of sulphuric acid and alum, and sulphur is obtained from it by sublimation.

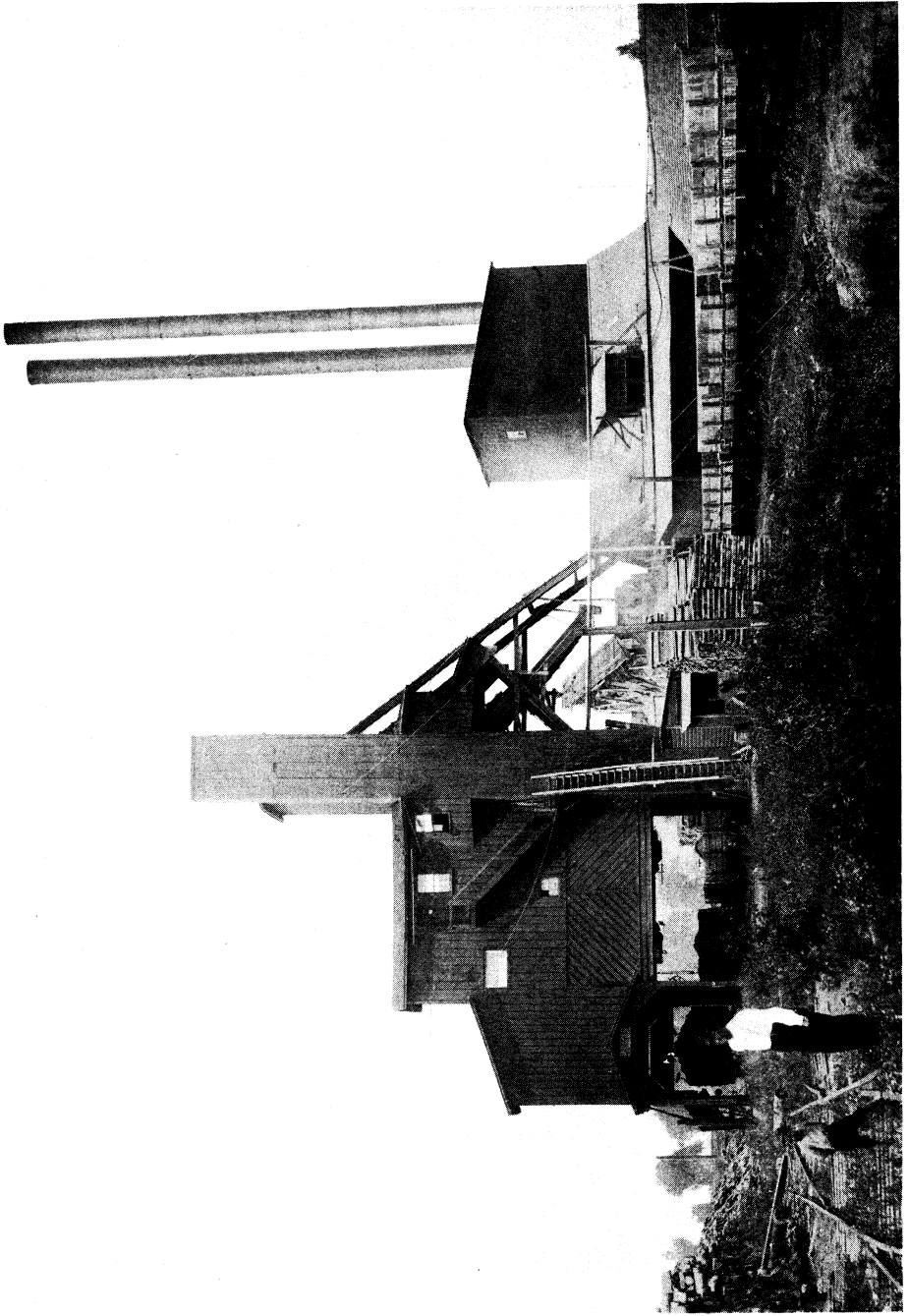
### **First Mines in Saginaw County**

Coal was first mined in Saginaw County early in the eighteen-nineties by local capitalists, who sunk a shaft at Verne, in Taymouth Township, about twelve miles south of the city. This was the original proved coal vein in the valley, and mining operations were conducted on a small scale there for several years. At first the coal met with a ready sale among the farmers and the villages within easy wagon haul of the mine, but gradually it found a market at Saginaw. The quality, however, was inferior to the Ohio and West Virginia coals then used in this city for steam and domestic purposes, and the production being limited it was never favorably known here. Later its production was used exclusively near the mine, when it could not be worked profitably and was abandoned.

The first production of coal on a commercial scale in this county was at the old Saginaw mine, located on the Genesee plank road, in May, 1896. The company which controlled this property was promoted by William T. Chappell, to whom is due the honor of having successfully inaugurated the coal industry in this city. This mine tapped the richest vein of coal on the east side of the river, and was operated at a good profit through miles of passages until very recent years. When the long distances the coal had to be hauled to the shaft rendered further operations unprofitable, the mine machinery was removed and it was closed. No other mine in this district has had so long a life, or produced so great a quantity of good coal.

### **Expansion of the Industry**

Encouraged by the success of this venture in coal mining, capital was at last released for investment in the infant industry; and such astute



**THE FIRST COAL MINE IN SAGINAW COUNTY**  
The Old "Saginaw" Mine Opened Up in 1896, by W. T. Chappell

business men as Harry T. and William J. Wickes organized a company, with Robert M. Randall as general manager, to prospect for and mine coal. As a result the Pere Marquette Coal Company sunk a shaft on the John P. Allison farm, near the Saginaw mine; and it was named Pere Marquette No. 1. Soon after a second shaft was sunk on the West Side, just beyond the city limits between Gratiot and Brockway Streets. This mine was known as Pere Marquette No. 2, and soon mining was commenced on a large scale.

About 1899 the Standard mine, located a short distance south and west of the original mine, was completed and put in operation by other parties; and the coal business of the valley was fairly launched. The product found a good market close at home, and at a good profit in active competition with Ohio and West Virginia coals, which had to bear a freight charge from three to eight times more than that of the local coal.

### Arthur Barnard Begins Coal Mining

An enterprising citizen early identified with the coal industry was Arthur Barnard, who first secured coal leases in Blumfield Township, about nine miles east of the city. On this land he soon after sunk a shaft near the line of the Saginaw, Tuscola & Huron Railroad, which formed an outlet for the product. This mine was successfully operated for a number of years, the coal taken from the entries being of very good quality, and was mostly consumed at home.

The success of this mine and the prosperity attending the expansion of the industry led to further investments, and early in the present century he "Jimtown" mine, in James Township, the Riverside mine, south of the city on the Tittabawassee, the Chappell & Fordney mine, on the Belt Line near Gratiot Street, and the Barnard mine, on South Michigan Avenue, were sunk by enterprising operators, and the coal business in Saginaw began to assume large proportions.

Meanwhile the Pere Marquette Coal Company was absorbed by the Saginaw Coal Company, which was composed of practically the same stockholders, and the mining operations of the company expanded to a huge scale. Besides sinking new shafts in proved coal veins, the company purchased several of the independent coal companies, whose operations had not proved entirely successful, and in a few years it practically controlled the coal business at Saginaw. Some of the older mines, such as the Pere Marquette No. 1, which had reached the end of profitable operation, were dismantled and abandoned. In others improved machinery, electric haulage, and modern equipment were installed, to place them on a better paying basis. For economic reasons the industry was gradually becoming consolidated, not only to better control the market and the shipment of coal, but also to fix the selling price. In this city the price was fixed on the basis of the price of Ohio and West Virginia coals at the mines, plus the freight charges to this point, and ranged from four to four and a half dollars a ton delivered.

### Labor Difficulties

During the early period of coal mining in Saginaw Valley, the labor problem was the greatest difficulty encountered. At first there were no experienced miners here, and after the industry was fairly started it was necessary to go to Ohio and West Virginia coal fields for them. This was no easy matter to bring about, as the Michigan coal fields were almost unknown to the miners of the old fields, and they were reluctant to leave their homes to try out newer conditions in the Michigan field. It was necessary to send a good man with tact, judgment and patience into the coal fields, and corral every unemployed miner and as many others as could be induced to leave

their jobs, herd them together as a party in chartered cars for the trip to Saginaw. A close watch had to be kept over them at every place the train stopped, to keep them from wandering off; and even then a number of the recruits would desert their new "boss" at the first opportunity, although the fares and expenses were paid by him. It was altogether a strenuous job to land the greater portion of a gang of new miners in Saginaw, and actually get them started to work in the mines. In this work of bringing in miners Frank S. Spencer, for a number of years with the Saginaw Coal Company, was very successful.

### **Some Miners Become Operators**

The operators in the Saginaw coal field, which includes all mines in this county, have experienced the usual labor troubles arising from disagreements, disaffection and the persistent efforts of the miners to improve working conditions. Added to these difficulties was the active influence of Socialism, which has many followers among the workingmen in Saginaw, and cries out against the employers with some bitterness. Some of the Socialist miners in looking around for something more practical than verbal expressions of hatred, conceived the general plan of the Caledonia Coal Company, a purely co-operative concern, which was organized in 1905.

It was planned to make this essentially a workingmen's mine, the company to be composed of practical mine workers, each of whom was to have an equal share of the stock, and to be equally interested in the output. Every man would thus be working for himself, and whatever his ability and industry gained would be of direct value to himself, instead of going as profit to the capitalist class. The mine and the general business of the company was to be directly controlled by a superintendent, who was accountable to a board of managers; and the decision of this body was to be at all times subject to review by the general assembly of the miner-stockholders.

To the socialist mind the plan had much charm, and many workmen were attracted to it. As organized the company consisted of one hundred men with a capitalization of fifty thousand dollars. A year later the number of shareholders and workers was increased to five hundred, and the capital stock to two hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The individual contributions were not large, and some workmen paid for their shares in labor, believing that if the co-operative plan was worth anything, it was worth the trial.

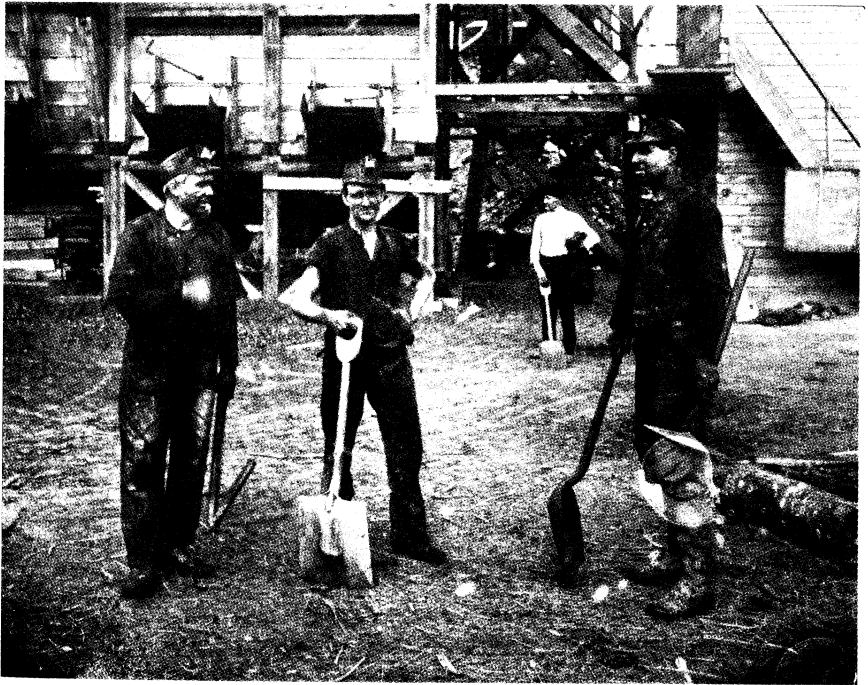
The organization of the company was perfected with the utmost secrecy, and all arrangements quietly made for sinking a shaft. A little tract of forty acres in the eastern limits of the city, upon which the coal lease, originally held by one of the old companies, had been allowed to lapse, was quickly secured by the Caledonia Company; and only when actual work on the shaft was begun, did the coal companies and the public learn what was going on. The shaft was put down with surprising rapidity, and on September 1, 1905, coal was sold from the new mine, the entries of which were at a depth of one hundred and sixty-five feet. There still remained the work of clearing away the waste and rock, extending the entries, and erecting the necessary structure over the shaft; and it was late in the Fall before the company was ready to enter the market with its product.

### **The Operators Take a Hand**

Meanwhile the operators had advanced the price of coal for the local trade, to the regular winter rate of four dollars and fifty cents a ton, although coal was sold at points a hundred miles or more away, with three times the freight charge, at considerably less. Thereupon the Caledonia Company began selling coal at four twenty-five a ton.



LOADING COAL IN WAGONS AT CALEDONIA MINE No. 1, 1905



SOCIALIST MINERS JUST UP FROM THE MINE, 1905

This unheard-of proceeding aroused the operators to quick action. A conference was held at which they explained to the little group of socialist miners their painful duty. But the miners were not won over.

"We must protect the public against extortion," they contended, a principle which fell on unheeding ears. The operators were firm. "You know the price of life," they said.

The Caledonia reply was instant and unmistakable. The price of coal was dropped to four dollars, then to three-fifty, at which point it remained for several years.

The action of the operators was equally positive. Coal was rushed to the new mine, at which most of its product was sold, and was offered directly in front of the Caledonia mine at the startling price of one dollar and seventy-five cents a ton. This action was kept as secret as possible, as it was hoped that the socialist miners would be brought to their senses, without wide publicity of the methods employed.

### The Caledonia Wins Out

The effect was lacking, however, and when the public realized the situation the little mine was flooded with orders. It was soon evident that the operators were beaten, the supply of one seventy-five coal was withdrawn, and the general retail price for the city trade was fixed at three dollars a ton, delivered, fifty cents under the Caledonia price. But the little socialist mine with only forty acres of coal had already gained many friends, and these continued to stand by it.

It was soon evident that the Caledonia mine was the key to the whole situation as only because of its competition was the low price conceded by the operators. If at any time through lack of support or any other cause the Caledonia had succumbed, the retail price would at once have advanced to the old figure. There were enough consumers in the city who realized this fact, and they kept the mine well supplied with orders. It thrived largely because of the difficulties that beset it.

True to its promise the Caledonia mine ran regularly, even through the bituminous coal strike of 1906, when every other mine in the State was closed down for several months. The owners of the mine worked it themselves, they had no labor troubles and were unaffected by labor disturbances outside. Every man was personally interested in the company, and eager to do his utmost for its success. They had the whole market to themselves, during the Summer, but the retail price of their product remained at three fifty a ton. The management was in the hands of strong, capable men.

The wage scale of the company was based directly on the Michigan scale, but was applied to "mine run" instead of to the screened coal, as applied by the operators. This was a decided advantage to the miners, and, moreover, was based on a thirty-six inch vein of coal, although in other mines it was based on a thirty inch vein. Day men received ten cents *per diem* above the price fixed by the Michigan scale. In 1906 the average wage paid in the Caledonia mine was two dollars and seventy-five cents a day.

Realizing that their original forty acres of land, hedged in on all sides by the coal leases long held by the old companies, would not hold out very long, the Caledonia people soon after secured five hundred acres of good coal land on the outskirts of the city, and set about to develop it by sinking a new shaft. All the profits of the first mine, above the operating expenses, and the proceeds of the new stock issued to new workers under their plan, were used in this development; and the company prospered to a remarkable degree. Later another site for extended operations was located on the West Side, in the vein which had produced the best coal in the valley, and it was fully developed.



### The Operators Regain Their Advantage

In January, 1910, discouraged by the continual opposition of the operators, who had become stronger than ever, the Caledonia Company entered into an agreement whereby their entire output was contracted for, covering a period of years, by the Consolidated Coal Company. The expected in regard to the city trade at once happened, the retail price being advanced to four dollars a ton; and in January, 1911, it was raised to four fifty, at which figure it has since remained. The entire production of the socialist mines has since been marketed by the Consolidated people, who, strange as it may seem, are the very "masters" the socialist miners regard with such inveterate hatred.

### Characteristics of Saginaw Coal

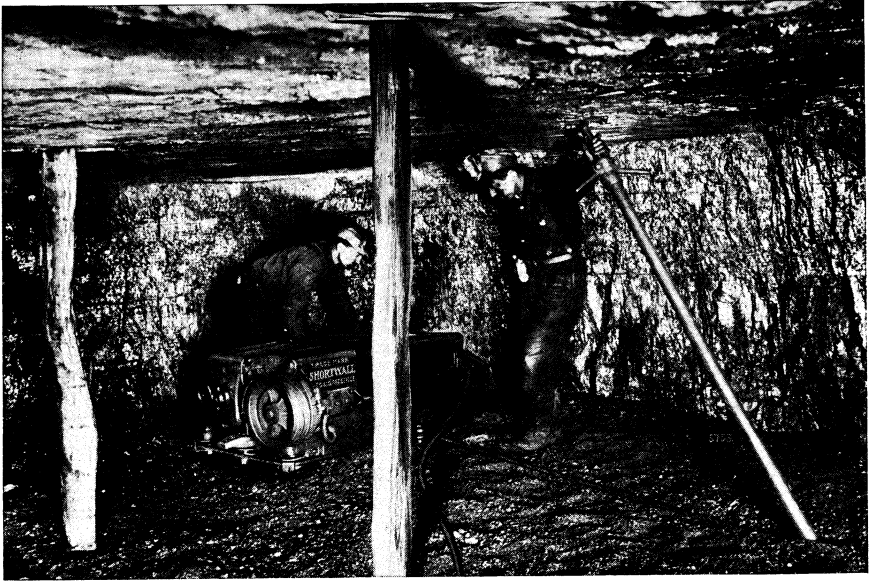
According to a report of the State Geologist, the coal veins in Michigan thicken and thin, divide and unite, and pinch out so rapidly, or are cut out by sandstone beds or by erosion so often, that the finding of a thick bed at one place forms no proof that the same bed or other beds may be found a few hundred feet away. On the other hand, the absence of coal at a particular spot does not preclude the possibility of finding workable coal at astonishing short distance away. The beds are often of such local extent that it is never safe to attempt an exploitation of coal deposits without a proving of the area by thorough drilling, and even this is not always reliable. Too often a coal bed gives way to black shale horizontally or vertically, or its place may be taken by sandstone. Cannel coal and bone coal are often observed as gradations from coal to black shale.

The Saginaw coal, one of the thickest and most extensive seams in the State, is probably the best vein in quality, though its coal is non-coking. Its thickness is often more than three feet and forms the base of most of the mining in this county. It is low in sulphur with a decidedly high heating power, and although leaning toward gas and coking types, the high content of moisture renders poor coke. Some of the later mined coals, especially of the Saginaw seam, running well above fifty per cent. in fixed carbon, with little or no sulphur, are much higher in grade. Saginaw coal in comparative tests with Hocking Valley, made by E. C. Fisher, of the Wickes Boiler Company, proved superior in several respects to that most famous steam coal. By tests the superior St. Charles coal, which comes from the same horizon, does not rank in efficiency with Pocahontas, but was better than several other coals, and nearly equal to the best Hocking Valley. Its good qualities make it a fine domestic coal and a steaming coal much in favor with railroads.

A Rider is a small coal seam found as a cap to the lower and thicker parts of the troughs of coal, and is formed by the settling and compacting made by the fifty or sixty feet of peaty material in the process of forming the main seam, in which shallow basin the rider was made. The middle or Saginaw Rider is a seam of considerable thickness, and possibly the East Side mines have their shafts in this coal. No bed of coal was ever continuous over the basin, as sandstone often replaced the beds, showing that the coal was cut out after it was formed.

### Development of Mines

There are some peculiarities in the occurrence of coal which have retarded and will continue to more or less retard its future development. Sometimes the roof is a porous sandstone or is full of fissures, allowing free circulation of water, but usually the water comes from the coal itself or from the foot walls. Heavy beds of sand and gravel in the drifts carry a great



MINERS SETTING ELECTRIC SHORT WALL CUTTER

deal of water, and are formidable obstacles in sinking shafts. Shale forms an impervious roof, but is likely to be weak and thus need considerable timbering if close to the rock surface. An impervious roof is all important in this valley, the amount of water to be handled often being a serious problem. The heavy cost of adequate machinery, and of raising the water to the surface consumes a large part of the profit in mining. For economical handling, shafts are sunk into the lowest part of the coal bed, so that all water will run towards the pumping shafts. To find the most advantageous point for beginning operations requires much preliminary drilling. Some of the larger mines have poor roofs of rotten shale or slate, and require much timbering; and frequently a shale roof slakes with exposure to air and scales off, rendering work extremely hazardous.

With all these discouraging conditions the Saginaw operators may be thankful that fire damp and coal dust explosions in this field are hardly known, while noxious gases such as choke damp are not troublesome. The mines are too wet for dust explosions, and only a few miners have ever been injured by this cause in Michigan. Nearly all the casualties in local mines have been caused by falling slate and coal, due to weak and unsupported roofs.

#### Costs of Mining

Because of excessive water, quicksands, smaller workable areas, thin veins and lower grade coal, the expense of prospecting and proving up areas, of sinking shafts, of mining thin veins, of timbering bad roofs and of handling water is far greater in this valley than in Ohio and Indiana. Higher mining and wage scale and extra allowances for narrow work tend to swell the expense rolls. The average cost of placing a ton of coal on a car, in 1910, was one dollar and seventy-nine cents a ton, which was sixty to eighty cents more than the average cost in West Virginia.

A larger part of the increased cost is keeping up the mines during the Summer, the water making it imperative that the pumps be kept working. Many operators continue mining throughout the dull season, marketing a

limited production at very slight profit, or even at a small loss. It is the cost of getting rid of the water in the local mines that enables Ohio operators, in dull times, to lay down at a small profit their excess coal at the very tipples of our mines, at prices ruinous to the operators.

Freight rates on Saginaw coal to the markets it reaches run from twenty-five cents to seventy cents a ton, and the difference between these and the rates from mines in Ohio and West Virginia, which range from one dollar and forty cents to one dollar and ninety cents a ton, to the same markets, forms a protective tariff for our coal. Thus, there is a net margin of protection to Saginaw coal ranging from nothing to forty-five cents, or a little more for purely local use. But a ton of the best Ohio or West Virginia coal is worth in actual heating power slightly more than a ton of average Saginaw coal. The difference in quality, measured by British Thermal Units, has a money value of twenty to thirty cents a ton, therefore, Saginaw coal cannot compete with the former at the same prices.

### Value of Coal Lands

Experience has shown that hardly half of the computed tonnage of a coal bed is ever realized in actual mining. This is due to incomplete and unreliable drilling, sudden or unexpected variation in thickness of the vein, or weak and treacherous roof. The first reduces the total amount of coal present; the second reduces the amount of workable coal, and the third the amount of available coal, as a large amount of coal must be left as pillars.

A three-foot vein of coal should yield about three thousand tons to an acre, which at ten cents a ton profit gives three hundred dollars as the value of coal land. But undeveloped and unproved land is worth only about one-half that of developed tracts, or five cents a ton as a base price. This figure, however, must be discounted according to the length of time before mining begins and number of years of life of the mine. The value of undeveloped but proven property is estimated at one and one-quarter cents a ton, giving a land value of thirty-seven dollars and fifty cents an acre for the coal.



ELECTRIC CONTINUOUS CUTTER MOUNTED ON TRUCK, READY FOR OPERATION

In 1910 the average price received for coal was one dollar and ninety-one cents a ton, from which was deducted the costs of operation, or one dollar and seventy-nine cents, leaving twelve cents as net profit per ton. Some mines average better, some less, and a few have run at a loss. In Saginaw County there are three thousand three hundred and ninety-seven acres of proven coal lands, estimated to contain nine million five hundred and fifty-six thousand five hundred tons of coal, and valued at three hundred fifty thousand nine hundred dollars. From these facts it is obvious that Saginaw coal lands have only slight value over and above their value for agricultural purposes.

### Methods of Mining

The thin and variable seams of coal, the treacherous shale roofs, and the abundance of water are the factors determining the methods of mining in this State. In general operators must rely upon a thorough draining system and good pumps to keep the entries dry.

The roof of most of the coal seams is a black shale, and often requires a great deal of support. Usually large pillars of coal are left standing for this purpose, but these cut out a great deal of coal per acre; and the low yield of about one thousand tons per acre is largely due to the use of the room and pillar system. Timbering is much resorted to, but adequate timber is so expensive, due to the exhaustion of the timber supplies near at hand, as to be almost prohibitive.

From actual experience the mining of veins thinner than three feet is more expensive on account of narrow working quarters and greater amount of dead work. Naturally the average cost per ton of mining a four-foot vein is less than that of a three-foot vein. Veins less than two and a half feet in thickness cannot possibly be mined at a profit under present economic conditions. In mines working beds more than three feet thick it is often possible to extend operations into areas much thinner, providing the coal is of good quality and the roof is good.

In the method characterized as "shooting off the solid" the only preparation consists of drilling the holes necessary for the explosive charge. Objection to this method has arisen because it is injurious to the mining property, in that the unusual charges of powder weaken the roof and pillars, which increases the liability to falls of roof and coal. Furthermore, it is a wasteful method in lowering the quality of the product. The heavy charges of powder necessary to blow down the coal, when it has not been previously undercut or sheared, result in the production of a much higher proportion of fine coal, and render the lump coal so friable that it disintegrates badly in handling and in transportation. This naturally creates dissatisfaction on the part of the consumer who buys lump coal and gets at best mine-run.

### Introduction of Mining Machines

The large coal operators of the Saginaw Valley have kept pace with the manufacturing interests, realizing that the best methods and the best equipments are absolutely necessary for successful mining. This is shown by the large number of mining machines installed in local coal mines, and the large proportion of coal undercut by them. The first coal cutting machines were introduced in 1898, and materially increased the quality as well as the quantity of the coal mined. They were so successful that twenty-five machines were used in the following year, and the number gradually increased until a maximum of one hundred and twenty was reached, including seventeen punches, eighteen chain breast and seventy-two short wall or continuous cutters. Even this new equipment did not keep pace with the growth of the industry, as in 1910 the machine mined coal was only forty per cent. of



CLOSE UP VIEW OF SHORT WALL CUTTER, SHOWING COMPACTNESS OF CONSTRUCTION



ELECTRIC CHAIN CUTTER OPERATING IN ENTRY

the total production. The ratio, however, increased rapidly after 1910, and in 1914 nine hundred ninety-eight thousand nine hundred tons, or seventy-seven and eight tenths per cent., were raised by machines; two hundred eighty-one thousand six hundred tons, or twenty-two and nine tenths per cent., were "shot off the solid," while only twenty-three hundred and seventy tons, or two-tenths of one per cent., were mined by hand.

### Coal Production

It was not until 1896 that Michigan began to be reckoned among the coal producing states. There was a steady but extremely slow increase from twenty-three hundred and twenty tons in 1860 to about one hundred and thirty-five thousand tons in 1882, the one hundred thousand ton mark being realized in the years 1880 to 1882, inclusive. The panicky times immediately following completely demoralized the struggling industry, so that the production fell off to about thirty-five thousand tons. In 1894 it again declined to about forty-five thousand tons, or ten thousand tons less than in 1885.

The sale of Michigan coal is limited mainly to its home markets, and coal mining wholly outstripped the growth of the cities which were its best customers, so that, in 1907, the production was much greater than their capacity to consume. The banner production of that year glutted the coal markets so that coal prices fell to points ruinous to operators; and the dull iron season of 1908 caused Ohio operators to seek new markets for their surplus coal. With cheaper mining facilities they were able to put their product at a small profit upon Michigan markets at prices that meant bankruptcy to our operators, if long continued. The year 1908 showed a decided falling off in local production, due to these causes, which has continued to the present.

The total production of the State in 1914 was one million two hundred eighty-three thousand and thirty tons, valued at the mines at two million five hundred fifty-nine thousand seven hundred and eighty-six dollars. This was an increase of fifty-one thousand two hundred and forty-four tons, or four and sixteen hundredths per cent. in quantity, and one hundred four thousand five hundred and fifty-nine dollars, or four and twenty-six hundredths per cent. in value, over 1913. The Michigan production exceeded two million tons in one year only, 1907; since then decreasing steadily until 1912 when it reached the minimum for the decade.

The decrease is attributed to the competition of higher-grade coals from West Virginia, and to the small demand for lump coal in manufacturing plants of the State, many of which are equipped with mechanical stokers and use slack coal obtained cheaply from the eastern mines. Michigan slack thus becomes a drug on the market, and the coal mines are obliged to depend almost exclusively on the domestic trade which requires lump coal. In Winter the demand for lump coal exceeds the capacity of the mines, and in Summer the production exceeds the demand.

### The Output of Saginaw County

The growth of the Saginaw coal industry has been due to the central location of the field, extensive markets near the mines, and to the complete network of railroads to the large manufacturing centers of the State. Saginaw and Bay counties produce about ninety-two cent of the total amount of coal mined in the State; and out of thirty-seven mines, Saginaw County has sixteen and Bay County twelve.

In 1914 the production in Saginaw County was five hundred eighty-four thousand six hundred and forty-eight tons, of which five hundred thirteen thousand nine hundred and eighteen tons were loaded at the mines for ship-

ment; forty-eight thousand one hundred and ninety-four tons were sold to the local trade; and twenty-two thousand five hundred and thirty-six tons were used at the mines for steam and heat. The total valuation was one million one hundred ninety-four thousand four hundred and thirty dollars, an average value of two dollars and four cents a ton at the mine. The average number of working days was two hundred and fourteen, and the number of miners was eleven hundred and ninety.

The coal production of Saginaw County in short tons from 1899 to and including 1914, the last year of which a report has been issued, is shown by the following table:

	Tons		Tons
1899.....	455,607	1907.....	1,047,927
1900.....	601,112	1908.....	999,338
1901.....	938,042	1909.....	859,434
1902.....	670,304	1910.....	667,282
1903.....	1,011,898	1911.....	667,282
1904.....	906,289	1912.....	489,198
1905.....	915,803	1913.....	521,848
1906.....	835,475	1914.....	584,648

Analyzing the production of 1913 in this county, we have the following table by months:

	Mines operated	Number of employees	Number of hours	Days per month	Average daily wages	Aggregate wages	Coal mined tons	Total mining cost	Average cost ton
January.....	11	1,063	7.6	17.7	3.30	\$62,205.64	47,168	\$93,676.54	1.98
February.....	11	1,072	7.6	18.2	3.53	68,983.72	51,860	94,641.00	1.82
March.....	9	882	7.5	19.6	3.24	56,033.66	40,608	77,869.69	1.91
April.....	9	914	7.5	18.8	3.64	62,709.	47,223	87,651.80	1.85
May.....	9	908	7.8	15.4	3.32	46,435.20	33,950	70,225.86	2.06
June.....	9	865	7.8	15.3	3.83	50,382.69	37,754	74,045.17	1.95
July.....	8	838	7.6	16.6	3.64	51,379.94	39,059	75,528.42	1.93
August.....	7	800	7.6	19.9	3.59	57,140.74	42,497	81,319.91	1.91
September.....	8	816	7.6	16.6	3.46	46,965.60	32,590	68,117.12	2.09
October.....	8	867	7.6	24.4	3.11	66,673.19	54,014	92,181.13	1.70
November.....	7	825	7.6	21.7	3.16	56,684.55	42,471	80,726.89	1.94
December.....	8	922	7.9	22.6	3.40	70,904.83	52,654	96,704.39	1.84

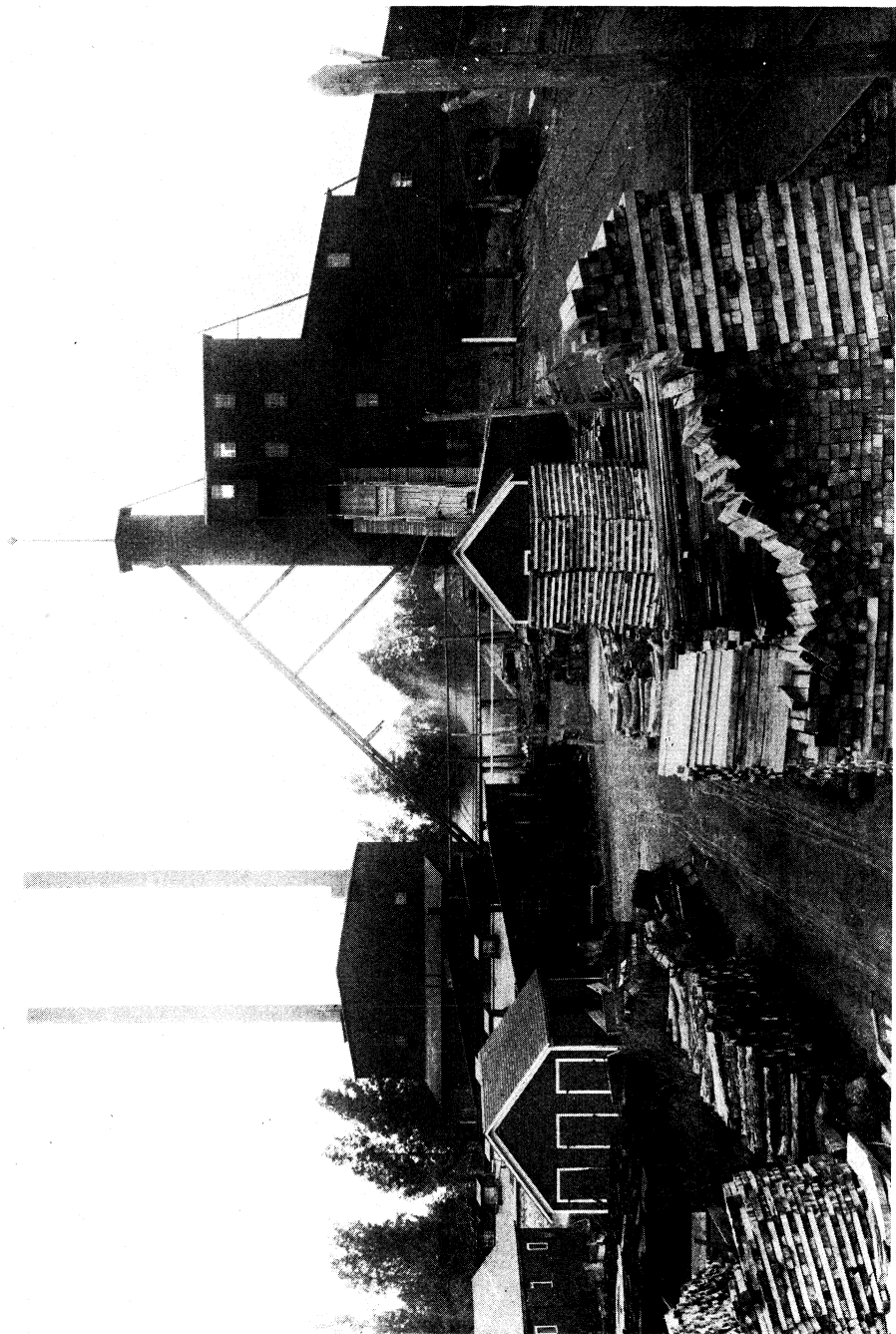
\$696,498.76 521,848 \$992,687.92

### Consolidation of Coal Companies

In order to cut ruinous local competition, reduce mining costs, and to better adapt their output to the demands of the trade, many of the Saginaw operators consolidated prior to 1906, and continued with evident good results. This was manifest in better equipped and better managed mines, so that the equilibrium between production and demand was nearly accomplished..

### The Consolidated Coal Company

The largest of these amalgamated companies is the Consolidated Coal Company, which was organized by the principal operators in this field, the Eddy and Wickes coal interests, and ably managed by Robert M. Randall. This company was incorporated February 8, 1906, under the laws of the State



TIPPLE AND POWER HOUSE OF WOLVERINE MINE No. 2, THE CONSOLIDATED COAL COMPANY



of Maine, and the first board of directors was composed of Walter S. Eddy, Arthur D. Eddy, Harry T. Wickes, H. C. Potter, Junior, William J. Wickes, S. T. Crapo, Otto Schupp, Robert M. Randall and George L. Humphrey. The officers of the company were: Walter S. Eddy, president; Harry T. Wickes, Vice-president; George L. Humphrey, secretary-treasurer; Robert M. Randall, general manager.

The coal mining companies incorporated in this important group included the Saginaw Coal Company, operating the old "Saginaw" Mine; the Pere Marquette Coal Company, operating the "P. M." Mine, No. 2; the Barnard Coal Company, which owned the old "Barnard" Mine; the Chappell & Fordney Coal Company, operating Mine No. 1; the Shiawassee Coal Company, operating the Shiawassee mine; the Northern Coal and Transportation Company, which owned the "Jimtown" Mine; the Riverside Coal Company, operating Riverside Mine No. 1; the Uncle Henry Coal Company, which operated "Uncle Henry" Mine No. 1; the Standard Mining Company owning the Standard Mine No. 2; the Central Mining Company, operating Central Mine No. 2; and the Cass River Coal Company, which operated the Cass River Mine.

In addition to these properties, which were among the most productive mines in this section of the State, the Consolidated Coal Company also acquired a controlling interest in the Wolverine Coal Company, operating Wolverine Mines No. 2 and No. 3, located in Bay County.

Since the organization of the company, whose operations have been on a large scale and tended to unify the coal interests of the valley, several mines have been worked out and abandoned. These were the old Saginaw Mine, Uncle Henry No. 1, Pere Marquette Mine No. 2, Chappell & Fordney Mine No. 1, Riverside Mine No. 1, Standard Mine No. 2, Central No. 2, Cass River Mine, Barnard Mine and the Northern, or "Jimtown" Mine.

In order to maintain their production the company has in recent years opened up Pere Marquette Mine No. 3, and Chappell and Fordney Mine No. 2; and Riverside Mine No. 2 and Uncle Henry Mine No. 2 are now in course of development. The policy of the company has been toward high efficiency and economy of operation, and to this end all their mines are fully equipped with electric haulage and the latest approved cutting and drilling machinery, some of which is illustrated in the preceding pages. The problem of excessive water in the mines is ever an active one in the Saginaw coal field, and all the mines of the Consolidated Company are equipped with electric driven pumps, which are more dependable and economical of operation than the old steam pumps.

In 1908 the company installed a modern coal washing plant, on the old Eddy mill property just west of the Genesee Avenue Bridge, and it has been in continuous operation since that time. It handles approximately two hundred thousand tons of slack coal annually, removing all impurities from the coal and leaving the product bright and clean. The impurities average about fourteen per cent. of the total shipments to the washer, the operations of removing the dirt and slate producing a very high grade of fuel, namely, Washed Nut Coal for domestic use, and Washed Slack Coal which is in high favor with steam users.

The present directors of the Consolidated Coal Company are: William J. Wickes, Harry T. Wickes, Walter S. Eddy, Arthur D. Eddy, Stanford T. Crapo, James B. Peter, Robert M. Randall, Otto Schupp and George L. Humphrey. The officers are: William J. Wickes, president; Harry T. Wickes, Vice-president; Otto Schupp, treasurer; Robert M. Randall, general manager, and Charles W. Stiver, secretary.



TIPPLE OF BLISS COAL MINE, SWAN CREEK

### The Bliss Coal Company

About 1905, during the period of expansion of the coal business in Saginaw Valley, Aaron P. Bliss and Arthur Barnard began prospecting for coal in James Township, about five miles southwest of the city. Mr. Bliss owned a tract of eight hundred and eighty acres, which was thoroughly drilled up and several veins of high grade coal were discovered. The coal was then offered for sale, but no satisfactory bids being made by the coal companies operating in the vicinity, the owners decided to organize an operating company to develop the coal beds. On May 6, 1905, the Bliss Coal Company was organized with Aaron P. Bliss, president, and Arthur Barnard, secretary and treasurer. C. E. Linton, for a number of years with the Sommers Coal Company, of Cleveland and St. Charles, was engaged as manager of the company's operations.

After further drilling had been made to ascertain the lowest point of the intersecting veins, which had an outline formation much like a clover leaf, the exact location for the mine shaft was determined. This was at a point one and a quarter miles from Swan Creek Station on the line of the Michigan Central Railroad, which furnishes all facilities for shipping and for bringing the miners from the city to and from their work.

In August, 1907, work was begun on the shaft, which was sunk to a depth of one hundred and sixty feet. Entries were then run in three directions through the veins, modern mining equipment was installed, and everything made ready for extended operations. On January 8, 1908, the first car load of coal was shipped from this mine, and thereafter the production gradually increased until the maximum was reached in 1910.

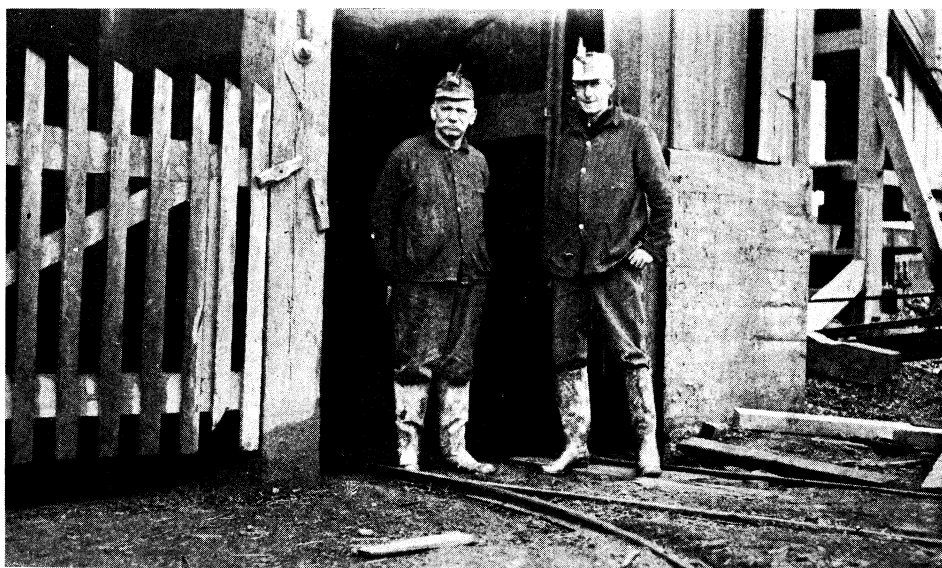
In order to place the operation of the mine on an economic basis in relation to modern methods and competition, the mine was electrically equipped with cutting and drilling machines, such as are illustrated in the preceding pages. Electric pumping machinery was also installed. The mine operating on a single day shift employs on an average one hundred and eighty-five

men, and produces about eighty thousand tons of bituminous coal annually. The coal is of high quality. It is marketed almost exclusively in Michigan, being shipped to Grand Rapids, Petoskey, Cheboygan and other northern points, and to Lansing and other points in the southern part of the State.

C. E. Linton, who has ably managed the affairs of this company since its beginning, brought to the company an experience founded in the lumber business. Years ago, with his father and brother, he conducted the large wholesale yard and planing mill business known as A. Linton & Sons, on South Jefferson Avenue. His aptitude for figures and for determining costs of production, net profits, and comparison of the same by month and year, is illustrated by concise business forms compiled by him. By aid of these forms, which show the distribution of operating expenses, the tonnage produced and per centages of entry and room coal, the cost per ton and many other details he is able to display the exact condition of the business for every month, with comparisons for any month in preceding years.

The present officers of the Bliss Coal Company are: J. F. Brand, president C. H. Brand, vice-president and treasurer; C. E. Linton, secretary and general manager. The officers comprise the board of directors. John T. Phillips is the efficient mine superintendent and underground expert, whose wide experience in mining is a valuable asset to the company. He is often called in consultation in meetings of the operators in relation to mining conditions and underground work in general.

The other large operators are the Robert Gage Coal Company, operating three mines at St. Charles and several at Bay City, and Handy Brothers, of Bay City, whose operations in Bay County are very extensive. The latter company, in order to tap new coal beds and to open up new territory for their product, promoted and built a railroad into the "Thumb." This is the Detroit, Bay City and Western, extending eastward to Caro and through Sanilac County, which will ultimately open a new outlet for this valley to the East by Port Huron.



JOHN T. PHILLIPS, SUPERINTENDENT, AND CLARENCE H. BRAND,  
AT MOUTH OF BLISS MINE

## CHAPTER XIX

# THE BEET-SUGAR INDUSTRY

---

Sources of Sugar—Sugar-Making an Ancient Science—Early Experiments in Beet Culture—General Interest Aroused in Beets—Development of the Industry—The "Sugar-Bowl" of Michigan—Building Up the Sugar-Bowl—Practical Experiments Made—Bay City Capitalists Erect the First Factory—Youman's Beet-Sugar Bounty Law—Why Saginaw was Backward—Saginaw Sugar Company Organized—Dark Days for the Industry—Utilization of Beet Pulp—Opposition of Eastern Sugar Magnates—The "Trust" Control of Beet-Sugar—Value of Beet-Sugar Industry—Trip Through the Carrollton Factory—How Beets are Scoured—Slicing the Beets—Extracting the Sweet Matter—Purifying the Diffusion Juice—Boiling Down the Rich Syrup—Converting the Syrup into Sugar—Granulation the Final Touch—Packing Sugar for Market—The Benefit to the Farmer—Single-germ Beet Balls.

**C**ULTIVATING the sweet-tooth is a favorite pastime of the American people, who now use their average weight of sugar in a year, at a cost of half a billion dollars. They are not content with being the greatest sugar-eaters on earth, but are continually demanding more, the quantity needed to satisfy the individual craving having increased from eighty-three pounds for every man, woman and child, in 1909, to eighty-nine pounds in 1915. This does not take into account the large quantities of syrup, honey and other sweets which they consume with seemingly equal relish.

Sugar, in some form or other, is in almost universal use in all parts of the world; and although the enlightened races have developed the art of sugar-making to a high degree, the semi-civilized peoples obtain their sweets in the crudest ways. The saccharine element is found, to a greater or less extent, in all fruit and vegetable juices, particularly those of the tropics, but the cost of production is so great as to render it of no commercial value. The economic sources of supply are limited to the cane, beets, corn and the juice of the maple. Large quantities of corn syrup, or glucose, are made from starch and other corn products, but no process has yet been devised to reduce it to the form of sugar at a moderate cost.

### Sugar-Making an Ancient Science

The art and science of sugar making date back to the first century of the Christian era, when the sweet sap of the Indian reed or sugar cane was sought and reduced to a syrup. It was those versatile people, the Arabs, however, who introduced granulated sugar made by a process peculiarly their own. In time the art of refining sugar with ashes was made known to the Egyptians, who in the seventh century transmitted the knowledge to the Chinese. It is known that sugar was made in Persia also at a very early day, and from Arabia the culture of sugar cane and the extraction of its sweet content spread to many lands.

Until 1747, sugar was supposed to be the product of sugar cane only, but in that year Marggraf, a German chemist, demonstrated that it was a natural product of other vegetables, and especially of the beet-root. It was near the end of the century, however, when its manufacture from that source was begun in Silesia. Almost all the sugar consumed in Europe is now, for economic reasons, obtained from the sugar beet. The cultivation of beets and the care of the soil, in Germany, are objects of national concern;

the machinery used in the industry has reached a high state of perfection, and the workmen are skilled in the art. It is from them that the people of America have learned the science, and from them that the annual supply of beet seeds is imported.

### Early Experiments in Beet Culture

The experimental period in the beet-sugar industry in the United States had its beginning as early as 1830, when a small factory for making sugar from beets was built and operated in Philadelphia; and ten years later another factory was built in Connecticut. Both were failures because of careless methods of beet culture and the crude system and apparatus used in the factories; and furthermore, neither factory was well situated in a good beet-growing district. The industry was not revived until 1870, when a factory was set up at Alvarado, California. Six years later the company failed, and not until 1879 was it reorganized; but it has been in operation every season since. As late as 1888 the output of this factory was only two million pounds of white sugar a year.

The total product of beet sugar in 1887 was six hundred thousand pounds; and in 1893 it reached forty-three million six hundred forty-eight thousand seven hundred and ninety-seven pounds, all made in Virginia, Nebraska, Utah and California. The capital invested in the seven factories was two million dollars; and they consumed the product of twenty thousand acres of land, at a cost of cultivation of five hundred thousand dollars yearly.

In 1891 the beet sugar industry had its practical beginning at Chino, California, thirty-three miles east of Los Angeles. Several thousand acres of waste land in lower Pomona Valley, at that time but recently reclaimed by irrigation, had been planted to the Mangel-wurzel beet. This variety of the sugar beet was well adapted to the soil and climate, for the crop was a complete success, the beets growing in many instances to the size of a man's body and extending a foot or more above the ground. The beets contained from ten to twelve per cent. of saccharine matter.

Meanwhile a large factory had been erected, and machinery such as was used in Germany was imported from that country. It was necessary also to bring over mechanics to set up the machinery and afterwards to operate it, so little being known in this country of the details and science of sugar-making from beets. The success of the Chino factory, owned by the Oxnard interests from the start, led to the planting of other tracts of land in California, and the erection of factories, so that in a few years the industry became well established on the Pacific Coast.

### General Interest Aroused in Beets

It was not long before capitalists and farmers in other States were attracted to the possibilities of beet-growing and sugar-making, and experiments were made toward adapting the various seeds grown in Germany to the soils of different sections of the country. The selection of the proper seeds for each soil is a very important matter, and, in fact, combined with proper fertilization and intensive cultivation, is the key to success. Wherever sugar beets can be profitably raised and the factories are properly managed, the industry flourishes. In 1909 there were sixty-seven beet-sugar factories in operation in the United States, and sixty-five in 1915.

Although these factories produced one billion pounds of granulated sugar in the season's run, this vast quantity was but one-fifth of the nation's consumption. To supply the entire needs of the country, four hundred factories would be required, and thereafter at least ten new ones added every year to keep up with the increasing demand. That this expansion of the industry

will ever be realized is not probable, because of the immense quantities of raw cane sugars produced and imported from our insular possessions. The sugars are produced by cheap labor and shipped by cheap water transportation to the great refineries, and so long as the sugar situation is controlled by the Havemeyer, Arbuckle and other large interests, there can be little hope of expansion of the beet-sugar industry.

### Development of the Industry

The development of beet sugar-making within the last fifteen years in the Middle West is very interesting, and embodies an element of romance. The soils of the vast agricultural belt extending east and west between Central New York, Northern Ohio, and Georgian Bay in Canada, and the Straits of Mackinaw westward to the Pacific, are especially adapted to beet-growing. They are rich in certain constituents that impart to the white Slesvig beet a high sugar content, the percentage under proper cultivation ranging from twelve to twenty, with an average of eleven tons of beets to the acre.

The States of Colorado, Michigan and California, in the order named, are the largest growers of sugar beets, and, of course, produce the most beet sugar which finds a ready market in the Middle West and the Western States. In Michigan, which follows Colorado so closely in point of production as to be of equal importance in the industry, the soil and climate are peculiarly adapted to the growth and culture of sugar beets; and there are fifteen factories in operation during the season's campaign, which begins in October and ends in January. The industry here cuts beets from an acreage exceeding one hundred and forty thousand, and the crop is worth nearly eight million dollars to the farmers of the State. The average test of beets for sugar content is about sixteen per cent; the skilled workmen number about eighteen hundred with an average wage of three dollars a day, while the common laborers, such as coal and lime passers, and unloaders, to the number of twenty-five hundred, receive an average of two dollars a day. To the communities at large further direct benefit is derived from the large purchases of coal and limestone, and to the railroads for hauling the beets and other supplies, and also the hundreds of carloads of refined sugar to the markets near home and to points at some distance.

### The Sugar-Bowl of Michigan

The Saginaw Valley has been very aptly termed the Sugar Bowl of Michigan, from the fact that it is the richest beet-growing district in the Middle West. In this thriving agricultural section, once famed as the great lumber mart and producer of the clearest cork pine ever known to the trade, has sprung up a new industry of the soil. Where once stood the magnificent giants of the forest, eighty or one hundred feet clear and straight to the first branches, there now grow succulent beets rich in sugar content. The "sugar bowl" is about fifty miles in diameter, with Saginaw as its center, and within it are nine large sugar factories with an aggregate cutting capacity of seven thousand tons of beets per day of twenty-four hours. The season's run, of about one hundred days, produces about one hundred and fifty million pounds of granulated sugar. The other six factories in the State are widely distributed in good beet territory, as from Mt. Clemens, near Detroit, to Charlevoix, and to Menominee, in Upper Michigan.

The Michigan Sugar Company, capitalized at twelve million five hundred thousand dollars, is the largest producer in Michigan, and operates six large factories located at Bay City, Carrollton, Sebewing, Caro, Alma and Crosswell. It is ably managed by conservative capitalists whose policy has ever been



SIX HUNDRED ACRE BEET FIELD AT PRAIRIE FARM

for the upbuilding of the industry, and the encouragement and promotion of the best methods of beet culture among the farmers. The protection afforded by the tax on raw sugar has been an important factor in shaping the success of the beet-sugar industry; and in the fight in Congress for retention of the duty, the industry has never had a more staunch advocate than Joseph W. Fordney, the popular congressman from this district.

### Building Up the Sugar-Bowl

With this brief survey of the beet-sugar industry we will proceed with the history of the "sugar bowl," which embodies some features of unusual interest. Although sugar was first made in Saginaw Valley in 1898, the first efforts to awaken the farmers to the value of sugar-beet crops, and capitalists to the apparent profits of sugar-making, were put forth several years earlier. In this preliminary work much credit belongs to Joseph Seemann, as one of the men who educated Michigan and, indeed, a large part of the Middle West, to the opportunities and advantages of sugar-beet culture, a work which had a large influence in establishing an important industry in this State.

In 1884, while on a visit to the land of his birth in Bohemia, Austria-Hungary, Mr. Seemann became interested in sugar-beet culture and the science of sugar-making. That part of Bohemia was inhabited principally by Germans, who were the pioneers of the beet-sugar industry in Europe; and he was impressed by the numerous sugar factories throughout the province. Upon inquiry he learned that in a territory somewhat smaller than the State of Michigan, there were one hundred and thirty-one sugar mills, employing thousands of skilled workmen and converting the product of more than a million acres of land into fine white sugar. On returning home he gathered all the data on sugar-beet culture that was available and found that an industry deserving the name had not yet been established in this country.

Five years later Mr. Seemann again visited Bohemia and was greatly impressed and interested in the growing sugar industry. During his investigation of the principal sugar mills, he conceived the idea of experimenting in beet culture in Michigan; and accordingly sent a kilo of Kleinwenzleben sugar-beet seeds to his business partner, Charles H. Peters. A large part of these seeds were soon after sent to Professor R. C. Kedzie, of the Michigan Agricultural College at Lansing, for experimental purposes to ascertain if the soil and climate of Michigan were adapted to their culture. In the experiments conducted in 1891 by the State agriculturists in Saginaw County, beets being grown principally on sandy loam soil, the size varied from one pound three ounces to four pounds eleven ounces, and the production ranged from twelve to thirty-two tons to the acre. On pine cut land twenty-four tons of beets were raised. The sugar content varied from ten and one-half to sixteen and one-half per cent., the beets grown on pine cut land going as high as fourteen and one-quarter; and the co-efficient of purity was very high, ranging from eighty-one to ninety-three per cent.

A singular coincidence in connection with the experiments conducted at the Agricultural College was that Edwin C. Peters, a son of Charles H. Peters, who in 1893 was a senior student in the college, was assigned one acre of ground for sugar beet experiment. He prepared the soil, planted the seed, thinned out the young plants, attended to all the cultivation, and late in September harvested a very satisfactory crop of beets. To complete the experiment and leave a permanent record of the results, he was required to write a treatise on the subject, and this was the first written from original data and personal experience on beet culture in Michigan.

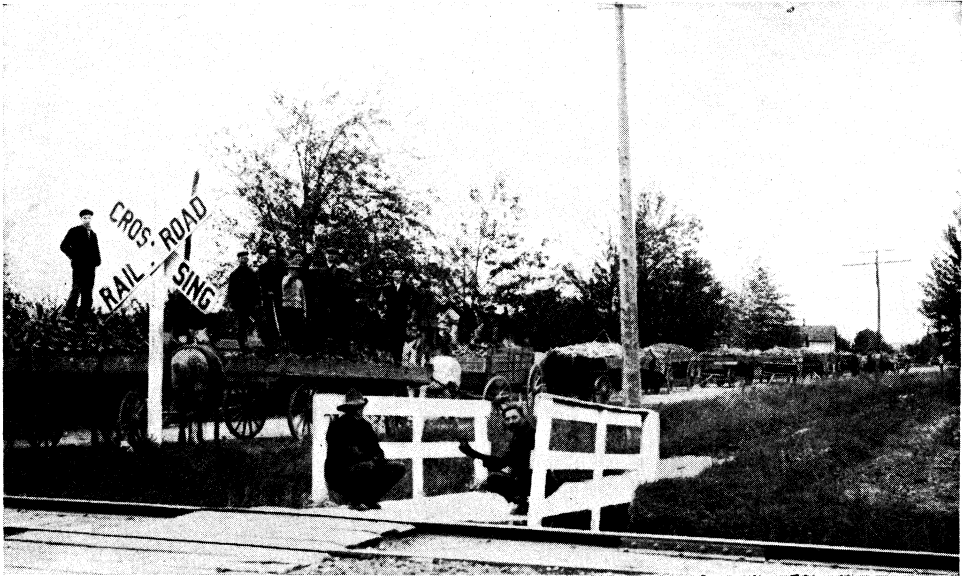


Upon his return to America, Mr. Seemann brought a number of pamphlets printed in German especially for the education of the farmers. He was thoroughly imbued with the advantages of establishing the industry in this country, and proceeded to publish in the German weekly newspaper, the *Saginaw Zeitung*, then owned by Seemann & Peters, an entire pamphlet in serial chapters. As this was printed in German it gave the German-American farmers in this section of Michigan instruction as to the proper culture of sugar-beets. Some of these farmers who had emigrated from Germany in the sixties and seventies were somewhat familiar with the growing of beets, as conducted in their native land, and they became deeply interested in the subject, and afterward were among the first in this county to experiment with beet seeds. The publication of this pamphlet was the first comprehensive information given the people of this State on what has since developed into a large and important industry. The firm of Seemann & Peters at that time also published the *Saginaw Evening News*, and they made this medium the pioneer journal in Michigan to advance the beet-sugar industry.

A few years later, between 1893 and 1898, Mr. Seemann contributed many practical and valuable articles to the State press, on the culture of sugar-beets, and aroused wide interest in the subject. In 1894 the annual production of sugar in the United States was only three hundred and five thousand eight hundred tons. This quantity, he pointed out, was less than one-sixth of the total consumption, amounting to two million and twenty-five thousand short tons, while the value of the imported sugars was one hundred and eight million five hundred and ninety thousand dollars. All the wheat and flour exported by America did not pay for the sugar it imported. The greater proportion of our sugar supplies came from the cane grown in Cuba, Porto Rico, and some of the Southern States, although about forty per cent, of the raw sugar was imported from Germany. Furthermore the price paid the farmer for his beets was four dollars and fifty cents a ton, which was twenty-five per cent. less than the price received by the growers in Bohemia. The need for large increase of home production of sugar was therefore apparent, the advantage of the sugar-beet as a rotation crop was plainly evident; and it only remained for progressive farmers and capitalists to join hands in establishing a new and prosperous industry.

The highest national and state authorities, Doctor H. W. Wiley and Professor R. C. Kedzie, determined in 1895 that Michigan, for one hundred miles north and south of Lansing, by reason of its soil and climate, was well adapted to the profitable growing of sugar-beets. From the beginning it was apparent that the successful conduct of the business was an agricultural problem rather than one of manufacturing, and the first thing to be done was to ascertain if beets of proper quality and in sufficient quantity could be produced to justify the building of a sugar factory. For the business to be successful beets should yield from two hundred and twenty to two hundred and forty pounds of sugar to the ton, and sugar produced at a cost not exceeding three cents a pound.

The proper course to pursue, as advocated by Samuel G. Higgins, who was one of the earliest promoters of the beet-sugar industry in Saginaw Valley, was to educate the farmers as to the best methods of raising beets, by giving practical instruction in the field by expert agriculturists in planting, cultivating and harvesting of the beets. It was important also to show that the sugar-beet is one of the best rotation crops the farmer can have, and should not be grown on the same land oftener than once in four years. It does not require a rich soil, as many persons believed, as it contains less impurities than when richly fertilized. While sugar-beets will grow well on almost any soil, it reaches a perfect growth in sandy loam deep enough to allow the



BEET WAGONS WAITING TO UNLOAD AT MERRILL WEIGH STATION

roots to reach down into the soil. Favorable results, the experts contended, might be expected from planting in marsh land, if the soil be well drained and tilled.

### Practical Experiments Made

Early in 1897 the whole matter reached a stage where practical experiments in sugar-beet culture were undertaken in Saginaw County on a large and comprehensive scale. To finance the operation a fund was created largely through the efforts of Harry T. Wickes, Thomas A. Harvey and George B. Morley, together with a number of prominent citizens. It was planned to secure the services of an expert agriculturist and chemist, procure a supply of proper beet seeds, and to interest by personal solicitation as many farmers as possible in making careful experiments. To this end a Mr. Lenders, a chemist well versed in the art of growing sugar-beets, was brought here and, in association with Samuel G. Higgins, commenced an active campaign.

By the influence of the publicity already given the whole matter, and the promise of successful results, six hundred farmers in this county were induced to plant, thin and cultivate small plots of ground to sugar-beets. From time to time during the Summer they were given instruction in the field as to the proper methods of cultivation, and otherwise aided in the experiments; and further publicity was given the project by Mr. Higgins in valuable articles to the press. The results from the crop, by analysis of specimen beets from each plot, showing an average of sixteen per cent. of sugar content, with some beets going as high as twenty per cent., far exceeded the expectations of the promoters, and awakened the farmers and capitalists to the great possibilities of a new industry for Michigan, and particularly for Saginaw Valley.

The climax of the experiments came in October, when in a vacant store on the south side of Genesee Avenue, between Washington and Franklin Streets, an exhibition was held of the best specimens taken from the beet crop. In all there were five hundred and twenty-seven separate specimens, well illustrating the scope and thoroughness of the experiments, and proving beyond reasonable doubt this valley to be a rich field for growing of the sugar-beet. The exhibition opened the eyes of the community to the possibilities of beet-growing and sugar-making, and exerted a greater influence than anything else, except the experiments themselves, in establishing the industry in this section of the State.

These experiments, financed by Saginaw business men, were the most systematic that had ever been conducted in this country, and the satisfactory results led Mr. Higgins to declare that "three crops of beets produced in consecutive years are worth as much as one crop of pine trees, which have been growing for one hundred years or more." The building of small sugar factories was not advocated; although the cost of a large mill and refinery necessitated large capital, and it was believed that a plant with slicing capacity of five hundred tons of beets a day, would meet the requirements of the company which was to be organized with a capital of five hundred thousand dollars.

### **Bay City Capitalists Erect the First Factory**

While the experiments in beet culture were being made in Saginaw County, preliminary to starting the industry here, Bay City capitalists, becoming convinced of the practicability of beet sugar-making, organized the Michigan Sugar Company and erected a large factory at the lower end of the river. This was the first beet-sugar factory in Saginaw Valley, and, indeed in the State, and it commenced slicing beets on October 14, 1898, from an acreage which had been contracted among the farmers near that city. So successful was the venture that three other companies were quickly organized, one being a co-operative concern capitalized by influential farmers; and the industry soon became well established in Bay County.

The rush of the Bay City people to get into sugar-making was due to two causes. At the time there was much idle capital in Saginaw Valley, accumulated by the closing up of extensive lumbering operations; and it was generally believed that the sugar industry offered the best opportunity for large investments. Then, too, the Youman's Beet-Sugar Law, passed by the State Legislature in 1897, which granted a bounty of one cent a pound upon all sugar made in Michigan from beets grown in this State, was a great incentive to prompt action. The old lumbermen in turning to sugar-making as a means of employing their idle capital, had in mind the experience with the salt bounty law which had been enacted forty years before, and repealed before the salt makers could derive any benefit from it, and they feared a like action with the sugar bounty. If they were to take all the risks of starting the new industry, they naturally wanted all the bounty money they were entitled to, and therefore lost no time in organizing their companies, contracting for beets very largely with Saginaw County farmers, erecting factories and beginning the manufacture of sugar.

### **The Youman's Beet-Sugar Bounty Law**

The beet-sugar bounty law provided that "the manufacturer shall produce good and sufficient receipts and vouchers to show that at least four dollars per ton of twenty hundred pounds, has actually been paid for all beets purchased, containing twelve per cent. of sugar," and "a sum proportionate to that amount for all beets containing a greater or less per cent. of sugar."

The benefit to the farmer, which was one of the primary objects of the law, lay in the requirement of the manufacturer to pay the following prices for beets in order to obtain the bounty:

For beets containing 10 per cent. of sugar,	\$3.33 $\frac{1}{2}$ per ton.
For beets containing 11 per cent. of sugar,	3.66 $\frac{2}{3}$ per ton.
For beets containing 12 per cent. of sugar,	4.00 per ton.
For beets containing 13 per cent. of sugar,	4.33 $\frac{1}{3}$ per ton.
For beets containing 14 per cent. of sugar,	4.66 $\frac{2}{3}$ per ton.
For beets containing 15 per cent. of sugar,	5.00 per ton.
For beets containing 16 per cent. of sugar,	5.33 $\frac{1}{3}$ per ton.

The law made no discrimination as to co-efficient of purity of beets, the same price being stipulated for beets with purity of seventy-five as for those of a purity of eighty-five, should the percentage of sugar content be the same. By co-efficient of purity was meant the percentage of saccharine matter contained in the beet that would crystalize into sugar, the remainder working up into molasses or other sweet stuff. The co-efficient varied greatly in the beets, some of high sugar content showing comparatively low co-efficiency, or from fifty to sixty, while other beets of less percentage of saccharine matter showed a high co-efficient of purity.

As a result of the failure of the law to recognize the co-efficient of purity, the manufacturers were often compelled to pay a higher price for poor beets than for good ones. The loss to the manufacturer extended in many cases to the farmer, inasmuch as at the price stipulated by the law for beets of high sugar content but of low co-efficient of purity, say at fifty, the beets could not be made into sugar at a profit, and were therefore rejected at the factory, entailing a direct loss to the grower. If the co-efficient of purity had been recognized in the law, and the prices based on it as well as on the percentage of saccharine matter, the manufacturers would probably have accepted the poorest beets in cases such as stated, and paid what they were worth to them, thereby saving the farmer from loss.

In other respects the sugar bounty law worked out very satisfactorily, the experience of the first Bay City factory, in 1898, showing that the bounty earned, amounting to fifty thousand dollars, turned an apparent operating loss of eight thousand five hundred dollars, into a profit of more than twenty per cent. of the capital invested. The bounty, however, was deemed by some legislators as unnecessarily high, though the correct position seemed to be that as to the existing factories, or those projected, the bounty should not be changed. For new companies to be organized later, some modification of the bounty seemed advisable, since the pioneers in the industry took risks that those who came later and had the benefit of the former's experience, did not have to assume to so great an extent. In a few years, however, when nineteen factories were in operation, or in course of construction, the sugar bounty law was repealed; and the industry has since stood entirely upon its own merits and resources.

### Why Saginaw Was Backward

During 1898, when there was such activity in Bay City in starting the beet-sugar industry, the business men of Saginaw still held up the organization of a sugar company here. They were entirely satisfied that the proper quality of beets could be grown here in sufficient quantity to make the business a success, but were willing, nevertheless, to let their neighbors down the river make the first manufacturing experiments, from the experience of which they would profit by. A more logical cause, however, for the delay was a statement made by Professor Smith, of the Michigan Agricultural College, at a meeting of Saginaw business men, that Saginaw River water,

from the presence of saline held in solution was a bar to the manufacture of sugar. This was a serious problem and was given thorough consideration by local investors before definite plans were formulated.

To determine the truth or falsity of this statement, which was a decided blow to the prospects of the infant industry, Joseph Seemann wrote to Doctor H. W. Wiley, chief of the Division of Chemistry, Washington, D. C., for advice in the matter, and in due course received the following reply:

"Dear Sir: I am in receipt of your letter concerning the introduction of beet-sugar manufacturing in the vicinity of Saginaw.

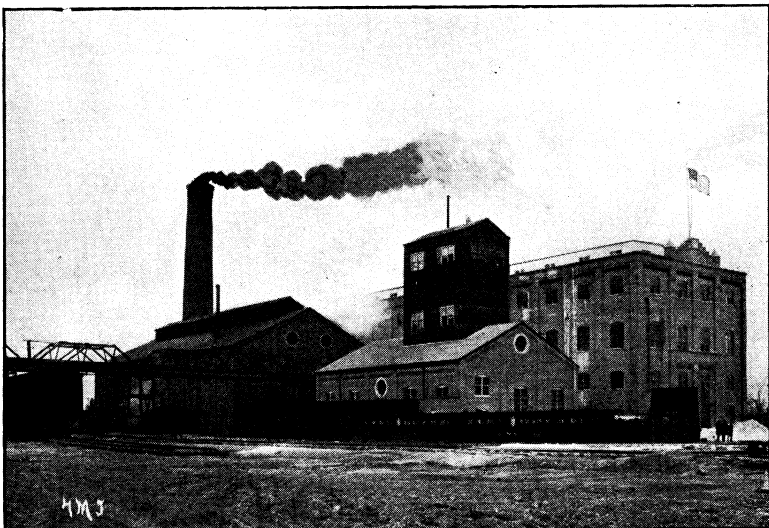
"Experience has shown that in the manufacture of sugar common salt in small quantities is *not objectionable*. The objection to most of the common saline impurities of water is that they prevent the crystallization of sugar. This is not the case with salt, as it is practically neutral so far as impeding or favoring crystallization is concerned."

(Signed) "H. W. WILEY,

Chief of Division."

This letter was published by the local press in the hope of correcting the unfavorable impression which existed regarding our water supply, and in a measure accomplished its purpose.

The quantity of water required daily for a sugar factory of six hundred tons capacity, which it was proposed to erect here, is about three million gallons, about one tenth of which is used in direct processes of manufacture, and must be filtered. Since no process of filtration will remove salt or other impurities held in solution, the old impression that Saginaw River water was entirely unsuited for making sugar still persisted, and it was necessary to settle the question before attempting to organize the first sugar company here. The problem was at length solved to the satisfaction of all concerned by sending various samples of river water to Doctor Wiley, at Washington, for analysis and further advice in the matter. After complete analysis of the waters had been made, Doctor Wiley declared very positively that the salt contained in the waters of Saginaw River would not interfere in the slightest degree with its use in manufacturing sugar.



CARROLLTON PLANT OF THE MICHIGAN SUGAR COMPANY

### Saginaw Sugar Company Organized

This decision of an authority on the subject left no doubt as to the entire practicability of sugar-making in Saginaw, and early in 1899, when the success of the first Bay City factory was assured, local capitalists, headed by W. V. Penoyer, an up Huron Shore lumberman, organized the Saginaw Sugar Company with a capital of five hundred thousand dollars. A site for the factory was soon after selected on the H. P. Smith property, at the corner of South Jefferson Avenue and Sidney (Rust) Street, plans were prepared, and the foundation for the main buildings laid in the Fall of that year.

The erection of a modern sugar mill and refinery on the most economic basis requires about one year, so that it was in October, 1900, that the work of construction of the new factory was completed, and the machinery put in condition for operation. Ample acreage had been contracted among the farmers of this county, and late in September deliveries commenced at the huge beet sheds on South Jefferson Avenue. It was a novel and interesting scene when several hundred farmers' teams congregated at this point, delivering the first crop of succulent beets to the initial sugar company of Saginaw. The run that year and the one of 1901 were entirely successful, and great hopes were expressed for the ultimate expansion of the industry so auspiciously begun.

The success of this company, however, was of short duration, and the fourth year of its operation was the last. The factory was not well located, for one thing, being nearly a mile from its source of water supply—the river, entailing a heavy outlay for extra piping and sewage systems, and additional expense for pumping. There was only one railroad connection with the plant, although another road passed close by, and an unnecessary burden for switching charges was put upon it. The plant itself was of small capacity, compared with the successful sugar factories elsewhere, and misfortune seemed to follow its operations. The management, moreover, was in the hands of men who had made fortunes in turning the pine tree into marketable lumber; and, as everyone knows, lumbering methods are the most wasteful of all American industries.

In general the sugar business in Michigan was conducted on much the same lines as success had been made in lumbering. Economics of industry did not seem to enter into the equation at all. A long time was required for the process of shaking down to an economic basis of operation. While this change was going on the pioneers of the industry learned many things about the business, including the policies of the eastern sugar magnates, and met their losses without quibble or complaint.

### Dark Days for the Industry

The result of these conditions was that after the fourth year of operation the Saginaw Sugar Company was in precarious financial position. After a time it was reorganized, and a consolidation arrangement entered into with the Valley Sugar Company, of Carrollton, whose plant had been built two years before in a very favorable location for permanent success. The business was thus put on a better economic and industrial basis, and continued operations, under the name of Saginaw-Valley Sugar Company, for several years, the old Valley plant of the company still being in use.

The old Saginaw plant, which was so badly located and of capacity which could not be operated at a profit except at large expenditure for additions, was sold, dismantled in 1905, and removed to Sterling, Colorado. The price realized from the sale was hardly more than one-third of the original cost

of the plant, the Penoyers losing, it was said, about one hundred and eighty thousand dollars by the deal, while other stockholders in the company lost as much more.

Many other troubles that came to the sugar industry in its early days were due to avoidable causes. The business was overdone in the Saginaw Valley almost from the start, factories springing up with mushroom growth, and with little or no regard for location so as to permanently control good beet-growing territory. In three years six large factories were erected in Bay City and Saginaw, within a radius of about eight miles, and, although the shipping facilities were unexcelled, it was impossible at the time (1899 to 1903) to secure enough beet tonnage to supply them all to full capacity. Other factories were built at Caro, Sebawaing, Alma, Owosso, St. Louis, Mt. Pleasant and Lansing, all of which drew beet supplies from the natural territory of the Saginaw and Bay City factories.

Although the leading farmers of this section, especially the German-American class, have been enthusiastic growers of sugar-beets and have profited thereby, the great majority of farmers in Michigan have never been very staunch advocates of beet-growing, and their education to the advantages of the industry has been a long and expensive one. In recent years, however, the price paid to the farmers for beets has risen to a point where very few progressive farmers, situated near a sugar factory, can ignore the attractive beet contracts, and few there are who do not grow a more or less extended acreage of sugar-beets.

#### Utilization of Beet Pulp

Another element of uneconomic management was the great waste of beet pulp, which in the early days of the industry was handled as a waste product. It was sold to the farmers at a very low price or thrown away in order to be rid of it. After six or eight years of harrowing experiences the leading companies began installing pulp dryers to convert the hitherto useless pulp into a valuable by-product. This is a light flaky substance packed in bags for the market, and is shipped to all parts of the country. It is especially valuable as a feed for dairy herds, and when fed to milch cows increases the yield of milk not less than a gallon, and in many cases to two or three gallons, a day, within ten days after beginning its use. It has also been known to start cows which had dried up. Its fattening qualities for steers is remarkable, a herd after forty-eight days gained one hundred and thirty-three pounds per head on seventy pounds of pulp per day, and five pounds of hay for cud. Cattle men claim that pulp-fed steers make firmer and tenderer, and better colored beef.

#### Opposition of Eastern Sugar Magnates

The troubles at home, which for a time threatened to wreck the industry, were not the only difficulties that vexed the beet-sugar companies. They had to contend with the bitter opposition of the eastern sugar magnates, who exerted every effort to ruin the infant industry. The control of the market in the Middle West and Western States, which the so-called "sugar trust" had enjoyed for many years, was jeopardized by the quantities of beet-sugar which at certain times flooded the market; and retaliatory tactics were resorted to in order to thwart the ambitious designs of the promoters of home industry. As a result of the most unscrupulous methods employed by the eastern refineries, the beet-sugar men met opposition at every turn in the marketing of their product.

One of the chief weapons of offense used by the old sugar crowd was its vigorous attack on the protective tariff on raw sugars. This tariff was, and is, the very life and backbone of the struggling beet-sugar industry. It was

used very effectually by the combatants as a "big club," by agitating a reduction in the schedule, or its entire removal. They claimed that the tariff had much to do with high prices of sugar, and that it was a "wicked tax" as it hit the workingman as it did his rich neighbor, since both consume practically the same quantity as a household necessity. "They pay not according to their ability, but according to their needs, thus reversing the elemental principle of taxation," they said.

A moderate tariff on raw sugars imported from Cuba and abroad is absolutely necessary, it is contended, if the beet-sugar industry is to prosper in this country. This is because it costs much more to produce beet-sugar, at prices paid for beets which will induce farmers to grow them, than it does to produce cane sugar at the average cost of raws, made by the cheap native labor of Cuba and foreign countries. As a matter of fact the American farmer receives more for the sugar in the beets than the refiners pay for the raw sugar laid down in New York. As it costs nearly five times as much to extract the sugar from the beets as it does to simply refine the raw sugar, the beet-sugar manufacturers must have a differential to cover the high relative price paid the farmer for the beets, or quit the business. Even with the present duty added to the raw sugars, the beet sugar costs on the average .08 of a cent more per pound than refined cane sugar.

### The "Trust" Control of Beet-Sugar

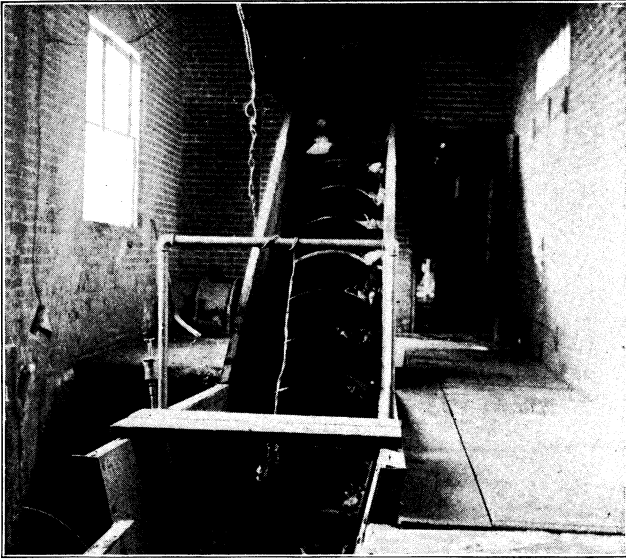
When the old sugar magnates in the East had conducted their bush warfare against beet-sugar for three or four years, and had helped to reduce the struggling industry to a pitiable condition, they appeared openly on the scene, in the guise of friends, as benefactors, to put the beet-sugar business on its feet again. Beet-sugar stocks were almost worthless, farmers who grew beets were dissatisfied with conditions, and the operators were almost ready to quit. By the use of large sums of money, in buying up stocks here and there, and by loaning large amounts to conduct the campaigns of 1904 and 1905, these shrewd financiers gained the confidence and good will of the western sugar men, and incidentally gained for themselves absolute control of the industry.

In the process of rejuvenation they instilled into the corporate system something of the element of success that had previously marked the sugar refining business; and today no one doubts the stability and value of the industry to the whole people. About 1910, when the sugar magnates had given their lesson to the westerners, and there was no prospect of expansion of the beet-sugar industry, the "Trust" began gradually to withdraw. The following year it was estimated that the trust holdings of Michigan stocks was only thirty-four per cent. of the total capitalization. Today very little Michigan Sugar stock is held directly by the Trust.

### Value of Beet-Sugar Industry to Country

The relinquishment of control of beet-sugar was a good thing for the whole country. This fact was emphasized by the effect of throwing the new sugar stocks of 1911 on the market. During September of that year the "trust" had boosted the price of sugar throughout the country to the almost unheard of figure of seven eighty-five per hundred, wholesale, which meant a retail price of nine or ten cents to the housewife. The Michigan crop of sugar-beets was the largest in the history of the industry, and when, on October 12, the new supplies of beet-sugar were placed on the market, the trust price at once fell to five fifty-five per hundred, wholesale, and the retail price to about seven cents.





THE "SCROLL" OR WORM CONVEYOR WHICH LIFTS THE BEETS FROM FLUME INTO FACTORY

The practical benefit and value of beet-sugar competition is not confined to Michigan or the Middle West, but is shared in equal measure by the whole people. This is due to the fact that the wholesale prices of the various grades of sugar, as set by the Trust, are practically the same at all points in every State and territory. The consumer in California pays on a given day approximately the same price as the consumer in Maine or New York, and the consumer in Florida the same as the consumer in Oregon. Thus, when the new stocks of beet-sugar came on the market, the high and unwarranted Trust prices were broken, and retail prices quickly fell about three cents a pound in every city, town, hamlet and corner of the country. This was true at places far beyond the zone of shipment of beet-sugar itself, and proved the influence of Michigan beet-sugar in the market.

#### Trip Through the Carrollton Factory

The Valley Sugar factory, now the Carrollton plant of the Michigan Sugar Company, was built in 1901 and put in operation late in October of that year. It ran successfully during the campaigns of 1902 and 1903, but in the following year, when the company consolidated with the old Saginaw Sugar Company, it was closed down. In 1905 the original Saginaw plant was torn down and the machinery moved away. Since that time the Carrollton plant, with a rated capacity of eight hundred tons of beets a day, and the only sugar factory in Saginaw County, has worked up beets grown on six to eight thousand acres each year.

Active operations for the annual campaign start in September, when the beets begin to mature and the farmers are busy pulling and topping them. Until about 1907 this work was done entirely by hand, but the difficulty of obtaining labor resulted in the perfecting of a machine, that not only pulls the beets without any breakage, but also removes the tops with far more precision than can be done by hand; and it also deposits the beets and leaves in separate and distinct piles. The company begins receiving beets at the factory the latter part of the month, and when fully five thousand tons are on hand, and the small army of mechanics has the machinery in the pink of condition, the factory starts for the season's run.

A large supply of beets constantly in reserve, and all machinery in fine working order at the start, are very important factors in the successful management of a sugar plant, for the reason that when operations have once begun there is no stop for an instant, at least for much of the essential machinery. The work goes on at night and day, and on Sundays and holidays, until the last beet has been worked up into fine white sugar.

The huge storage sheds, four hundred and fifty feet long and two hundred feet wide, are the first points of interest, and are veritable beehives of workers. Through wide doorways farmers' wagons are entering to unload, after weighing up at the entrance; while in the farther section of the sheds railway cars are being shunted into place for a like operation. It would be difficult to count the wagons. Sixty-four may be unloaded at the same time, while the number constantly driving away empty, and others waiting their turn, seem to be as many more. In the railway sections gangs of men are unloading the cars heaped high with the rich product of the soil, as many as twenty of the largest gondolas being placed on the two tracks.

The storage bins are constructed of concrete, and are twenty feet wide and eight feet deep, with a V-shaped bottom the whole sloping gradually to the farther end. On leaving at the factory end of the sheds, the first thing to attract attention is a series of concrete flumes, two feet wide and four feet deep, rounding away from the middle of each bin, and converging at a main flume of somewhat larger size, leading into the main building. Upon looking down into this flume a stream of muddy water is to be seen rushing along and carrying in its current a continuous mass of beets. The water, which is quite hot, is forced through the flumes from the front end of the sheds by powerful pumps; and, in conveying the beets to the factory, the further operation of removing the outer layer of dirt and weeds is easily accomplished.

The main factory building is a structural steel frame, four hundred and twenty feet long, eighty-five feet wide, and five stories in height, upon which rest the ponderous machinery and numerous tanks used in the various processes. The whole frame of heavy columns and immense girders, like the steel frame of a modern office building, and its valuable mechanical outfit, are enclosed within walls of brick and concrete, and pierced by many windows to furnish ample light and ventilation. The construction throughout gives an impression of solidity and permanence.

### How the Beets are Scoured

Before entering the main building there is a short passage through a little one-story addition, in which the main flume widens into a shallow pit which contains the lower end of the "scroll," the conveyor which lifts the beets up into the factory. This scroll is in principle an exact Archimedean screw, with the slight alteration of having the lower half of its cylinder perforated with rows of half-inch holes to drain off the dirty water, as the beets are rolled along its revolving blade. A system of levers operates a gate which regulates the flow of beets to the scroll, so that the right amount is supplied at all times to the slicing machine.

Passing along the narrow entry, which is filled with a cloud of steam, and through a doorway, the visitor is at last in the factory of mysterious doings. For a moment he stands spellbound. The massive machinery, the rumbling of hundreds of wheels, the grinding of heavy gears, the hissing of steam as it rushes through the big pipes overhead, are enough to shock the senses of sight and hearing. The next sensation is of stifling heat due to many lines of steam pipes of various sizes, and other pipes filled with boiling-hot water;

for the principal factor in sugar-making is heat, as utilized through the medium of water in its vaporous state, while as a liquid at different temperatures water is used in many of the processes.

Throwing off outer wraps the visitor is ready to follow the beets, which are coming into the factory at a lively rate. They are forced up and through an opening in the wall and dropped into a washing tank, where they are tossed about in warm water by paddles revolving on a horizontal shaft. In this process the beets are thoroughly scoured and at the end come out on a draining board, white and clean. From there they are lifted to the ceiling by another scroll, and by a bucket-conveyor are carried to the fifth floor.

### Slicing the Beets

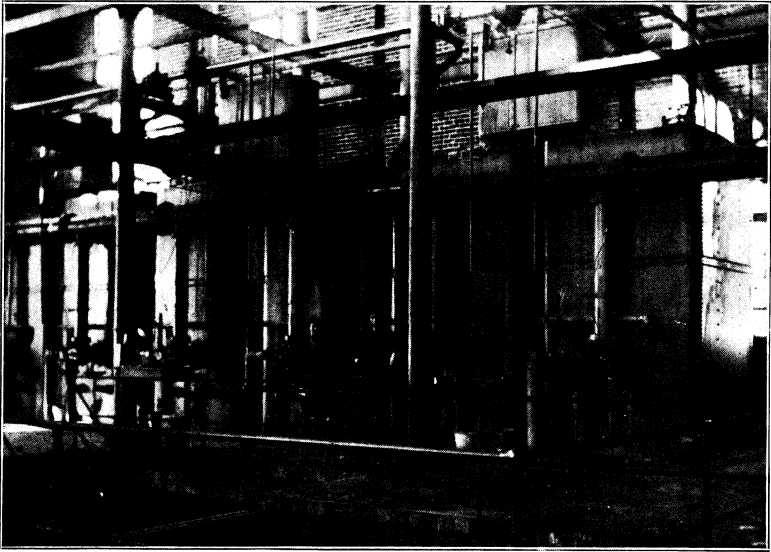
The next point of interest is at the topmost platform, under the roof, where the hopper of the huge slicing-machine receives the beets from the bucket-conveyor. From this elevation there is a good view through the center well of the fourth and third floors, of the ponderous machinery and the intense activities of the factory. The floors are constructed wholly of concrete, the stairs and railings are of iron; and throughout there is the utmost cleanliness and almost perfect ventilation. But despite the attention given to this matter, a pungent odor of lime and sulphur, with a certain acute acidity, is experienced, which at first is not altogether pleasant; but, upon proceeding through the factory, the sights and sounds and smells, as well as personal comfort, are forgotten in the keen interests aroused by each new process.

The huge hopper at the top of the bucket-conveyor, in turn deposits the beets by gravity into a weighing machine which, with every half-ton, discharges the mass through its drop bottom into the hopper of the slicing machine. Every dump is automatically registered so as to determine the exact percentage of sugar obtained from the beet tonnage. As the bottom of this hopper is bell-shaped, the beets are forced outward and fed to the swiftly revolving knives of the slicer. This is a huge upright cylinder within which is a horizontal wheel of the exact inside diameter, and placed slightly below the lower edge of the hopper. The wheel carries on its outer edge or rim an endless line of sharp corrugated knives about ten inches long, which cut up the beets in a flash as they are pressed down on them by the weight of the mass above. The slicings fall through to a receiver, where they are rasped, to tear up the cells, after which they pass out on an endless belt conveyor on the second floor, to be distributed as required to the diffusion battery.

### Extracting the Sweet Matter

In this process the series of boilers is called a diffusion battery, because the sugar content is removed from the slicings by water, into which the sugar diffuses. There are fourteen cells or huge cylindrical tanks, placed upright and close together on the ground floor. Their top openings with the connecting valves extend through to the floor above, so that the steel traps, which are three feet in diameter and open on hinges, may be closed easily, and the valves operated by hand. When three and a half-tons of the beet slicings have been taken into a cell from the belt conveyor, the supply is shut off or turned by a system of gates to another cell, and the cover or trap is swung back in place and clamped down securely, becoming air tight.

The process of boiling is, of course, unseen, but it is easily understood. The juice passes by a complicated system of pipes and valves through the charged cells of the series, always from the longest-filled cell, which contains nearly exhausted slicings, to the ones most recently filled, thus extracting the largest possible quantity of sugar with the smallest amount of water, which



THE CARBONATORS, IN WHICH THE IMPURITIES IN THE JUICE ARE ABSORBED

varies in temperature from one hundred and four degrees to one hundred and eighty-five degrees Fahrenheit. All the water, of course, must be evaporated in subsequent processes, and the nearer to saturation this solution becomes in getting all the saccharine matter that is possible from the slicings, the greater is the economy of operation.

In about an hour the slicings have become exhausted of their sweet content, when the door at the bottom of the cell is thrown open by levers, and the mass of beet pulp gushes out and runs off in a concrete flume to the pulp drier. There the pulp is thoroughly dried and otherwise prepared for shipment. The empty cell is then cleaned by jets of hot water, which remove any clinging shreds of pulp; and the cell is ready for another charge of fresh slicings. With fourteen of these cells, each of which is recharged every hour, the process may be said to be continuous.

#### Purifying the Diffusion Juice

When the diffusion juice leaves the battery it is pumped to a receiving tank, and from there to a measuring tank, which records the amount of juice being obtained from the slicings. In its present raw state it is heavily charged with various impurities, and in order to remove these there is a complicated system of purifying agents. First, the juice is pumped to two superheaters, which are tanks containing vapor coils, and in these the juice is heated to prepare it for carbonation.

In this process the two factors are lime and a gas containing about thirty per cent. of carbonic acid. This gas is made by burning lime and coke in the proportion of one part of coke to four or five parts of lime. The kiln is outside the main factory; about thirty tons of lime are made and used every twenty-four hours. The lime is thoroughly slacked with water, and the solution is pumped into the factory, where it is heated in a circular tank to a degree necessary for its useful purpose. The diffusion juice, already hot, is passed to the carbonators, in which it and milk of lime are thoroughly mixed in the proportion of five quarts of lime to every thousand gallons of

the juice, and the temperature is quickly raised to ninety degrees Centigrade. Quicklime is then added—about fifteen pounds to every hundred gallons, and the gas is pumped in by powerful pumps.

The impurities in the juice having been fully absorbed by the lime and gas, it is necessary to remove all traces of these agents; and, since the quality of sugar produced depends on the process of clarification, considerable skill and care are here required. A powerful pump now forces the solution through pressure filters. Each of these is a series of steel frames about four feet square and one and a half inches thick, over which are stretched sheets of canvas, and the frames are pressed tightly together by a screw press to render the joints water-tight. The juice is forced through pipes into one side of the press, and through the canvas of the frames, depositing the lime on the fabric and pouring out on the other side into troughs an almost clear liquid. Though this liquid has lost much of its original matter in solution, it is still far from the purity necessary to crystallize. It flows from the troughs into a receiving tank for cooling.

### Boiling Down to a Rich Syrup

At this stage it is plain that the clarified juice is a mixture of pure sugar and pure water, the sugar varying in proportion according to the richness of the beets, the fidelity of the machinery, and the watchfulness of the operators. To extract the water from the juice, thus converting it into a rich syrup, is the next process, and is an interesting one. The juice is pumped into multiple-effect vacuum evaporators, so called because the heating effect of the steam is utilized *in vacuo* as many times as there are pans in the series. Steam is supplied to the first pan, and the vapor from the boiling juice passes to the second pan, and so on through the series. From the last pan the vapor passes to a condenser kept in a constant state of vacuum by a continuously-acting pump, from which it flows away, a dark-colored syrup. When it obtains a density of thirty-one and one-half to thirty-two and one-fourth by hydrometer test, it is pumped to storage tanks. There the syrup remains until drawn off as needed in the sugar mill, which is a distinct division of the manufacturing process.



PRESSURE FILTERS, WHICH REMOVE ALL THE PURIFYING AGENTS

### Converting the Syrup Into Sugar

From the storage tank the syrup is pumped to the fourth floor and admitted to the syrup boilers, or "strike-pans," of which there are four. These are large cylindrical cast-iron vessels, provided with a vacuum pump, a condenser, and coils of copper tubing to which steam may be turned as needed. After condensation has taken place, and when the pans are about one-fourth to one-third full of rich thick liquor, a charge of cool syrup is admitted, to cause the formation of minute sugar crystals, the size being controlled by the sugar-boiler, who regulates the boiling and the admission of fresh syrup so as to avoid the formation of new crystals of "false grain." In about four hours after the beginning of the boiling, and when the pan has become filled with a dense mass of sugar crystals, a "strike" is made. This is simply emptying of the "strike-pan" of its contents into one of two V-shaped tanks just beneath the pans, and in which the mass is constantly stirred by mechanical paddles to keep it from hardening.

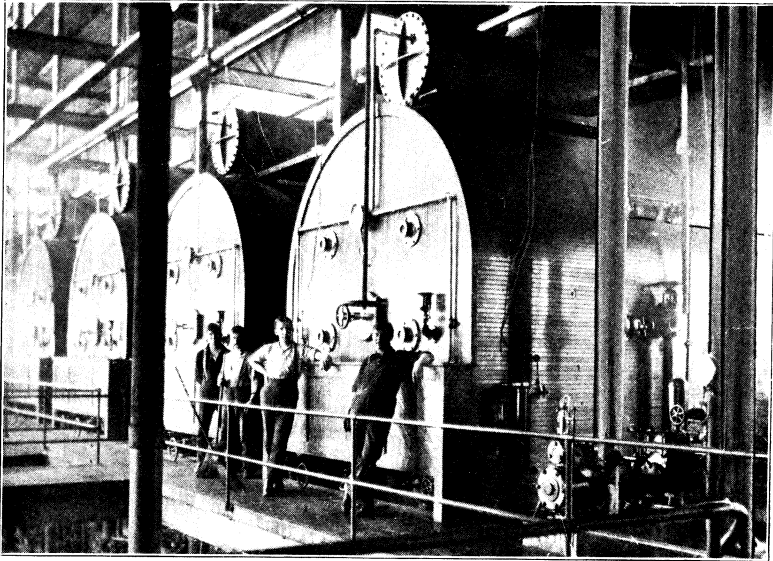
To separate the sugar crystals from the syrup that will not crystallize in the boiling, is the next process. For this machines called "centrifugals" are used. Fourteen of these machines are placed directly beneath the V-shaped tanks, so that the mass flows to them through discharge pipes regulated by cut-offs. These machines are cylindrical, metal vessels about three feet in diameter, and two and a half feet high, fitted with solid bottoms, but with walls constructed of fine wire cloth supported by a perforated brass backing. The drums are hung on vertical shafts revolving at about fourteen hundred per minute. The drum being washed out to remove all stickiness and then polished bright, a mass of sugar crystals and the containing syrup is admitted until it is about half full. The electric motor which operates the drum is then started.

### Operation of the Centrifugals

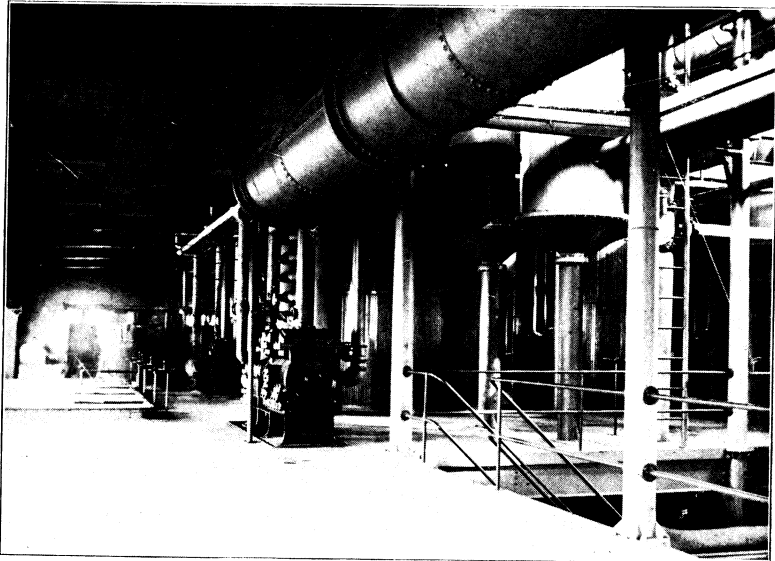
The process is very simple and the most interesting yet seen, because the vessel is open to the free circulation of air and the transition going on in it can be plainly seen. The mass is at first a dark brown color, but as the drum revolves faster the mass rises on the walls and is held there by centrifugal force. The syrup being a liquid, though thick, is forced through the fine mesh of the wire cloth, and passes off through the perforated back to tanks beneath. Watching the inside of the drum, we see the color change gradually from dark brown to a lighter shade, then to a yellow, and finally to a cream white, as the syrup leaves it. In about thirty minutes the syrup is entirely eliminated, and the sugar clings to the walls of the drum, four or five inches thick. The motor is then shut off and the operator scrapes off the sugar with wooden paddles, through a removable trap in the bottom to the receiving tank on the second floor. There the sugar is sprayed with water in which a little harmless bluing has been added to correct the yellow tint, and then is ready for the final process to render it fit for culinary use.

### Granulation the Finishing Touch

The final touch to the sugar is the granulating process, which is done in huge drums, eight feet in diameter. Through these the sugar falls, is caught up and mixed about, while a blast of hot air from steam coils is blown through. By looking through little windows in the chamber we see the sugar being tossed about inside. Finally, after twenty minutes of this treatment it has become fine white sugar, and passes to the storage bin, from which it is drawn to the barrelling room beneath. Eight to ten hours before it was



VACUUM EVAPORATORS WHICH REDUCE THE PURIFIED JUICE  
TO A RICH SYRUP



SYRUP BOILERS, OR "STRIKE PANS," IN WHICH THE RICH SYRUP  
IS CRYSTALLIZED TO SUGAR

the beet's sweet content; now it is refined sugar on its way to the peoples' tables, to sweeten their breakfast food, syrup their griddle cakes, and supply the loaf for steaming-hot coffee, to say nothing of confections.

The syrup that will not crystalize in the first boiling, and which was separated from the sugar in the centrifugals, is worked through a system of purifying machines and crystallizers entirely different from the other machines, and eventually is worked up into sugar or ordinary molasses of commerce.

### **Packing Sugar For Market**

In the packing room on the ground floor is the last scene of intense activity. Here the barrelling is done, and it is a bustling place. The foreman is filling the barrels, regulating the flow of sugar from the bins above; some workmen are lining barrels with heavy paper; others are nailing in the heads of filled barrels, while still others are rolling the barrels into the storage building just beyond. The output is about six hundred barrels every twenty-four hours, or a single barrel every two and a quarter minutes. Yet what seems through narrowed vision a great amount of sugar, is but a drop in the sugar market and a small drop at that. The State of Michigan would consume in about thirty days the product of the entire run of about one hundred days, and for the years' supply for the State the output of twelve factories of like capacity, would be required. The total annual production of beet-sugar in Michigan, if all of it were used within the State, would fill the demand for scarcely more than the year.

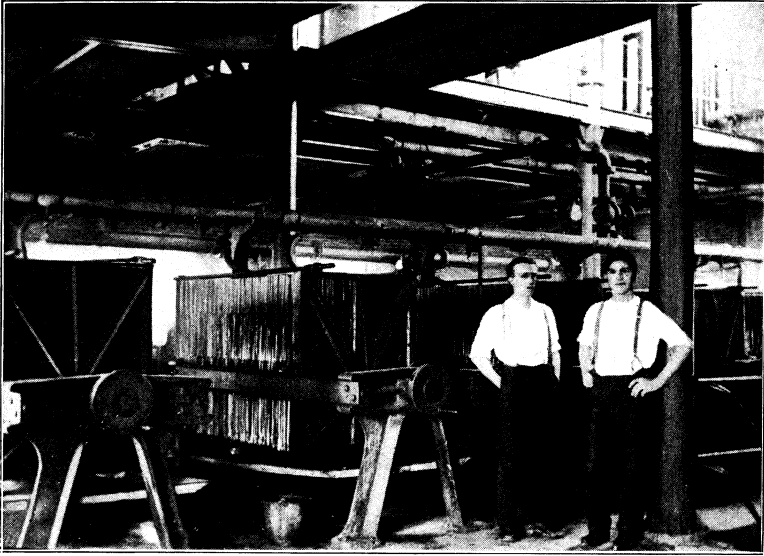
### **The Benefit to the Farmer**

The farmer is the man who is most benefited by the beet-sugar industry, if he gives thoughtful care and proper cultivation to his beet crop. While the cost of caring for the beets averages about thirty dollars an acre, the returns are large, and it is not unusual for an acre of good land to yield from sixteen to twenty tons, with an average of sixteen per cent. of sugar content. Another advantage to the farmer is the fact that the price does not vary greatly; the basis is fixed by contract before the seed is planted, and it cannot be changed. In 1915 the farmers received six dollars per ton for sugar-beets, regardless of the percentage of sugar content, at which price many netted from fifty to sixty dollars an acre, although the average for the "sugar-bowl" was not so high.

To further aid and encourage their farmer friends, the sugar companies have established weighing stations, at railroad points within a radius of thirty miles from the factories. Where distances are too great for economical haul by wagons to these stations, or roads leading to them are impossible for heavy loads, spur sidings have been put in at many scattered points, where cars are loaded. In such cases the weighing is done at the factory, a careful system of records of every carload being kept, to insure against errors.

It is an encouraging fact that wherever sugar plants have been established in good beet-growing territory, farm lands have had an appreciable increase in value. When reduced to a labor equivalent the land is proportional to the number of hands it can employ; and the utilization of the sugar-beet as a regular rotation crop means much for the soil. It also means an expansion of the dairy industry, with more meat, milk and butter, since many cattle may be fed upon the residium pulp from beet-sugar factories. This results in occupation for more men the entire year, with an advance in real estate and property in general. A thousand acres cultivated in beets, with a neighboring sugar factory properly managed, becomes more valuable and brings a larger income than any other farming purpose to which it can be put.





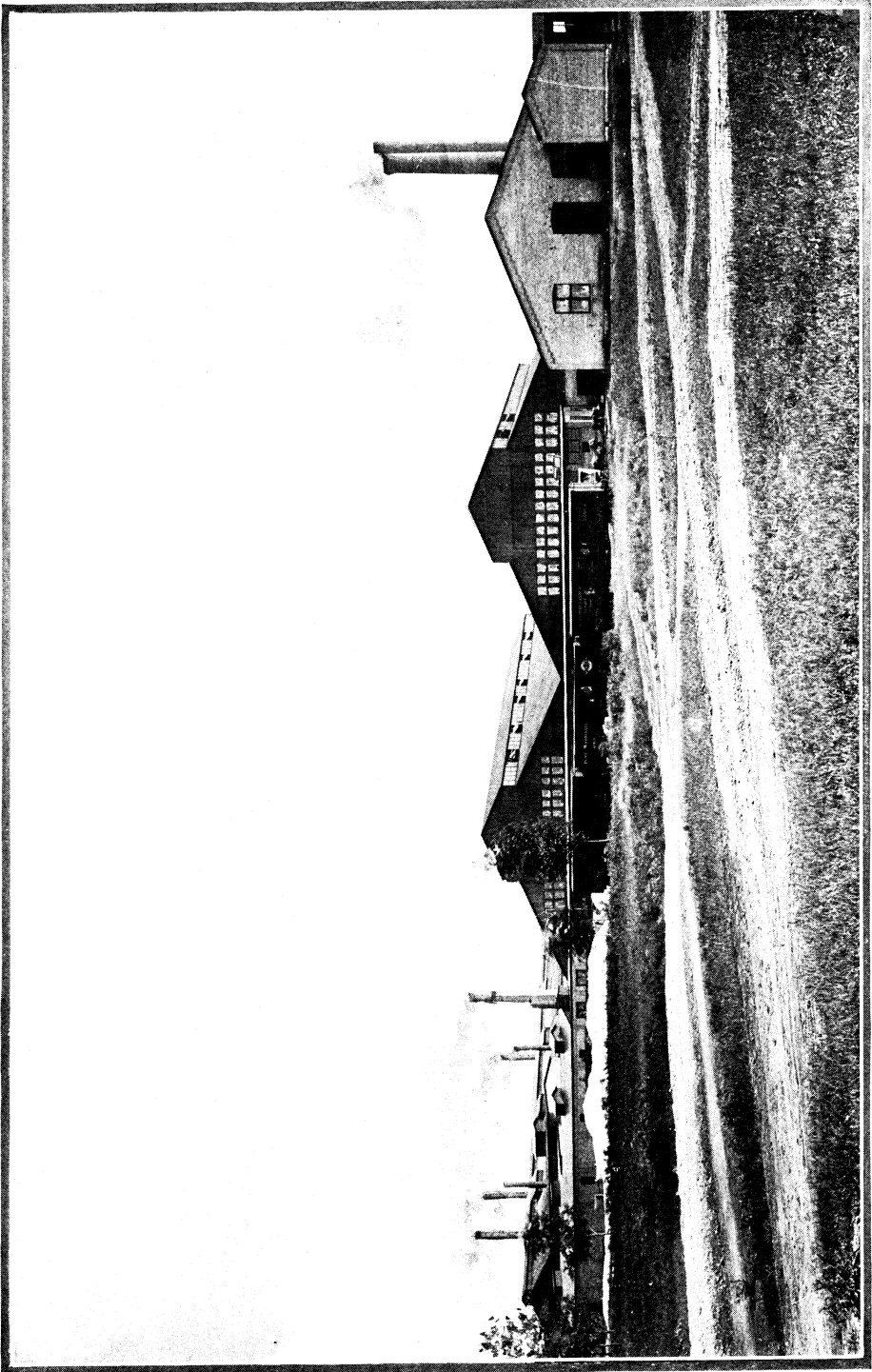
"OSMOGENES" IN WHICH THE SYRUP THAT WILL NOT CRYSTALLIZE  
IN THE FIRST BOILING IS FURTHER PURIFIED

### Single-Germ Balls

The farmer is dependent on the sugar companies for his supply of beet seed, and practically all the seed planted in this country is imported by the the companies from Germany. In that country the cultivation of beet seed is a separate and distinct industry, and has been brought to an exact science. The production of a race of single-germ beet balls, however, is purely American, something which has not been attempted by the scientists of Europe. In this country it is being attempted through selection. Each beet ball contains from one to six germs, and it is possible that each of these germs may produce a plantlet. In order to secure a stand of beets about six times as much seed as necessary must be planted; and it becomes necessary to thin out the surplus plants, leaving them standing in the row at the proper space.

If the ball producing the particular plant left standing has only one germ, in thinning we have but one plantlet to contend with. In case the ball produces several plants, these intertwine in the soil, and considerable labor is necessary in extracting the surplus plants. Not only is extra labor required but the rootlets of the plants retained will be more or less broken. This temporarily disturbs the growth and vigor of the plant in its tender stage; and it is the working theory that a plantlet produced by a single germ beet ball will be more vigorous. It will have a natural vigor that comes from better nourishment of the mother seed, as it does not have to divide its food supply with other plantlets.

This work of attempting to produce a single-germ beet ball has been systematically undertaken by the Bureau of Plant Industry, United States Department of Agriculture. By inspection nothing but single-germ seeds are selected to produce "mother beets." These beets are planted, and from the resulting crop of seed nothing but single-germ balls are selected. This work will be continuous from year to year until such time as the habit of producing single-germ seed is thoroughly fixed in this new race of beets. These experiments have been under way for several years, and enough has already been done to indicate ultimate success.



A PORTION OF THE PLANT OF THE SAGINAW PLATE GLASS COMPANY

## CHAPTER XX

# DIVERSIFIED INDUSTRIES

---

Timber Supplies Fail—Starting New Industries—Boosters Become Active—Growth of Factories—Summary of Factories and Labor—A Period of Depression—Reconstruction—How Some Gained Unexpected Riches—How Hill “Put One Over” on the Wrights—A Revival of Industries—Disruption Threatened—Celebrating a Semi-Centenary Anniversary—Retrospection—Conclusion of the Golden Anniversary—The Oil Development—The Well Spouted High—Speculators Foiled—Summary of Saginaw’s Industries in 1914—Representative Manufactories in 1917.

**T**HE decline in lumber and salt production, which began to be felt in the Saginaws late in the eighteen-eighties, was the beginning of a long period of depression in the Valley cities, and awakened the enterprising and public-spirited men to the urgent need of new industries of a diversified nature, to replace the old. This change in the commercial affairs of the Saginaw Valley was so gradual as scarcely to be perceived at the time, the rafting of logs across Lake Huron by means of bag-booms having extended the life of the lumber business for several years. But this source of supply finally failed, because of the high export duty on logs exacted by the Canadian Government, and the Saginaws soon lost their prestige as a great lumber mart.

The exhaustion of the pine forests was followed by a new era of manufacturing activity, which gained momentum with the closing of some large lumbering operations and the consequent accumulation of large amounts of idle capital. The evolution from the cutting of pine trees, and the making of lumber and salt, to varied industries of a more permanent character is still going on, and will probably continue as long as any timber remains. In the slow process the natural resources of the valley have been developed, and a number of diversified industries established by manufacturers from outside, aided and encouraged by the capital which once found employment in the lumber and salt business.

### Starting New Industries

The valuable tracts of hardwood timber tributary to this valley, comprising more than eight million acres of hemlock, birch, oak, ash, elm, and cedar and basswood was yet untouched by the woodman’s axe, and factories for the utilization of this timber soon found a place among our permanent industries. Included in the new enterprises were furniture factories, carriage and wagon works, washboard, curtain roller, box and barrel factories, a match factory, and other manufactories with varied products of which the principal component was wood.

These industries were represented by the Saginaw Manufacturing Company, Stenglein Manufacturing Company, J. H. Benjamin, Crescent Match Company, W. G. Smith, D. Hardin & Company and the Michigan Curtain Roller Company, on the west side of the river; and by O’Donnell & Spencer, Feige-Silsbee Furniture Manufacturing Company, Linton Manufacturing Company, Edward Germain, Avery & Company, Henry Feige, Alic Birss and E. A. Gyde, on the East Side. In the manufacture of logging tools the establishment of Morley Brothers on Water Street, and in dust separators for woodworking plants the Allington & Curtis Manufacturing Company, whose factory was on Holden Street, were very successful.

The heavy machinery business was well covered by Wickes Brothers, A. F. Bartlett & Company, Merrill & Bacon, John L. Jackson, William Williamson and Koehler Brothers, while the boiler shops were those of James McGregor & Sons and Thomas Steele and Wildman Brothers. There were also the Michigan Saw Company, McClellan File Company, H. L. Hildreth and others which enjoyed a profitable trade.

### Boosters Become Active

The organization of the Saginaw Improvement Company, in 1890, with its endeavors to bring in new industries, gave great impetus to the forward movement. By its plan of purchasing acreage property on both sides of the river, platting the same into lots, and acquiring factory sites convenient to the railroads, a number of new industries were secured to Saginaw with the proceeds of the lots sold. About four thousand residence lots were platted in two new divisions lying mostly within the city limits, the streets laid out were graded and otherwise improved, and railroad connections secured between the three trunk lines and the factory sites. Great interest in the project was aroused among the citizens generally, and about twenty-five hundred lots were quickly sold at one hundred and fifty dollars each.

The distribution of the lots to purchasers was by drawing, and stirred in hundreds of minds vain hopes of winning a valuable piece of property. For the capital prize, which attracted much attention, there was the old homestead of William L. Webber, on South Jefferson Avenue, which consisted of a substantial brick house set in an attractive grove of pines. This prize was drawn by Mrs. Chauncey H. Gage; and other valuable prizes comprising lots on the principal streets in the new divisions, found eager and appreciative owners. Others, less fortunate, who drew lots outside the city, or removed some distance from the factory sites, were keenly disappointed; and some never took deed of their drawings, or afterward let their lots revert back for unpaid taxes. As always follows such schemes, the business men who subscribed for the stock of the improvement company, and the majority of the lot owners, lost heavily individually.

Great benefit, however, accrued to the city at large from the activities in fostering new industries, the influence of which is still felt in various ways. In two years eight factories of importance were located here which employed six hundred and forty persons, mostly men. The sites for these manufactures, conveniently connected with the leading railroads, and the buildings for the immediate requirements of the companies, were given free of cost, and resulted in securing very substantial manufacturing concerns which were:

F. G. Palmerton Woodenware Company, Limited, manufacturing tubs and pails.

Ferrell, Prame & Ozier, manufacturing grain cleaning machinery of various kinds.

Beelman Manufacturing Company, manufacturing furniture, especially hall furniture.

Keystone Manufacturing Company, manufacturing adjustable shade rollers.

Saginaw Box Company, manufacturing grease boxes.

Crume & Sefton Manufacturing Company, manufacturing wooden butter dishes, berry boxes, etc.

Lufkin Rule Company, manufacturing steel and wood rules, steel tape lines, etc.

Peninsular Carriage Company, manufacturing buggy bodies, running-gears and bent work.

Shortly afterward the H. J. Heinz Company, of Pittsburg, established a pickling station on the East Side Improvement grounds, between the Lufkin and Peninsular factories, and has been in successful operation each year since.

Along in the nineties it was determined that Saginaw was a desirable location for the manufacture of plate glass, and in due course the Saginaw Plate Glass Company was organized. A large modern plant was erected on South Michigan Avenue, west of the city limits; and in 1906, in order to utilize the great quantities of exhaust steam produced in the various processes, a complete salt manufacturing plant was built as an adjunct to the business. Later a complete chemical plant was added to work up the hitherto waste "bittern water," a product of salt making, into valuable chemical by-products including calcium chloride. This great industry is capitalized and managed entirely by Saginaw business men.

### Growth of Factories

Besides the foregoing industries there were nine concerns employed in the manufacture of brick, which gave employment to two hundred and eighteen men, and paid in wages, in 1892, the sum of forty-four thousand dollars. The output of these brick yards was sixteen million five hundred thousand brick, valued at seventy-four thousand two hundred and fifty dollars. Saginaw County is one vast clay bed, a portion of which must be fire clay and potters clay of great value. Some very fine specimens of the latter quality have been discovered a short distance south of the city, yet nothing has been done to develop this hidden wealth of the soil.

In the manufacture of cigars seventeen concerns reported in 1892 a production of three million seven hundred and ninety-two thousand cigars, valued at eighty-four thousand one hundred and sixty-six dollars. These factories employed one hundred and twenty-seven men, and paid in wages thirty-seven thousand dollars.

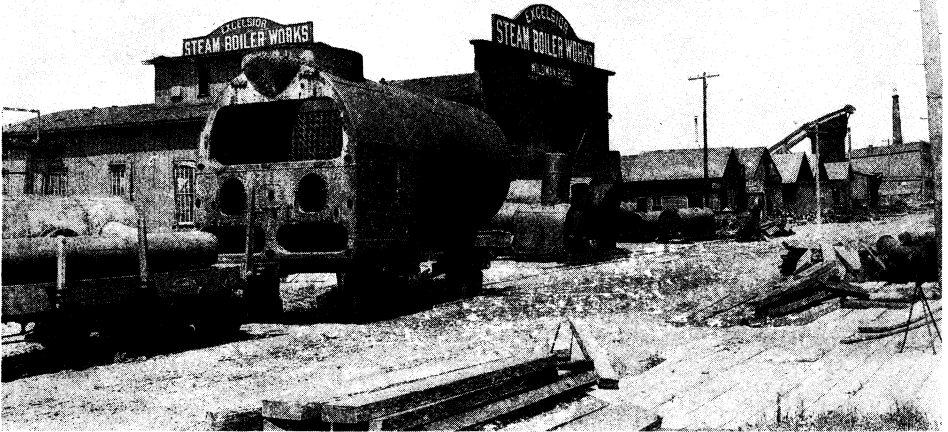
There were five steam laundries in this city in 1892, employing seventy-nine workers who were paid twenty-six thousand two hundred dollars in wages. The aggregate business was fifty-nine thousand dollars, divided among Witters Brothers, A. Robertson, F. H. Jerome, Palace Laundry and Wolpert & Son.

Five breweries reported a product valued at two hundred and fifteen thousand dollars, and employed fifty-eight men to whom were paid thirty-eight thousand dollars in wages. These breweries were the National Brewing Company, Eagle Brewery, Jacob Raquet, Saginaw Brewing Company and J. G. Schemm.

Three concerns, R. H. Crane, Saginaw Broom Company and Fred Stoerk manufactured nineteen thousand dollars worth of brooms of various kinds, and employed thirteen men at a total wage of five thousand four hundred dollars.

Although the Mayflower Mills, which was established by Jesse Hoyt and operated successfully for many years by Emil Moores, was closed down in 1892, two other flouring mills were running in Saginaw. These were the Brand & Hardin mill at the foot of Mackinaw Street, and the Saginaw Milling Company on West Genesee. In 1893 William Callam erected a new mill on North Franklin Street, which was modern and complete in every particular. The output of this mill found a ready market direct with the consumer, deliveries being made to hotels, boarding houses and residences.

One of the institutions of which Saginaw was justly proud was the tannery of F. W. Carlisle & Company, which was started in a small way many years before. Hemlock bark is secured from the surrounding country,



WILDMAN BROTHERS' BOILER WORKS, 1885, AT FOOT OF WILLIAMS (JANES) STREET, NOW BATTERY PARK

and hides are brought in from the outside points. The leather manufactured by this concern is of the highest grade, and is used chiefly in making harness.

An entirely new industry, established by enterprising business men of this city, was the United States Graphite Company, which employed a large number of men and utilized the product of the company's mine in Sonora, Mexico. The company manufactured axle grease, stove polish, paint, and prepared graphite for a large part of the lead pencil factories of the East.

A. Hobson's stone and marble yard, an old institution, employed a force of men in grinding and polishing stone from Lake Superior, and marble from the famous quarries of Vermont. The Bay Port quarries, located about fifty miles from this city, also supplied a high grade of limestone for building purposes. Being very hard and of a light blue color, this stone presents a fine appearance in large structures, and was used in several public buildings in Saginaw, notably the Hoyt Library. Before the opening of these quarries, in 1883, limestone for building purposes was brought by vessels from Lake Erie ports, and cost from ten to twelve dollars a cord, but the competition of Bay Port stone quickly reduced the price to five and seven dollars a cord.

Seven houses engaged in printing and binding reported in 1892 the value of their product at one hundred and twelve thousand dollars. They employed eighty-five workers and paid thirty-nine thousand four hundred dollars in wages. These concerns were Seemann & Peters, Jones & McCall Company, Saginawian, Ganschow & Son, Laing & Moiles, Saginaw Printing & Binding Company and G. Fox.

The Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad shops and general offices gave employment in Saginaw to eight hundred and fifty men, who received seventy-five thousand dollars a month in wages. A large number of men were engaged in building and keeping in repair equipment for seven hundred

miles of road which extended from Saginaw in all directions. Two companies operating twenty-seven miles of street railways employed one hundred and seventy-five men, and in 1892 paid eighty-five thousand five hundred dollars in wages. The number of passengers carried that year was more than four million.

Of miscellaneous industries, some small but nevertheless of importance as employing labor, were the Saginaw Roofing Company, a new concern which enjoyed a rapidly growing business; the Metallic Curtain Pull Company, which made wire curtain fixtures of ornamental design, and various other wire goods; Henry Passolt, who manufactured soaps and potash; and Case Brothers, C. H. Newell and Wider & Son, engaged in making awnings and tents.

**Summary of Factories and Labor**

Of the total number of factory employees in 1892, which was eight thousand nine hundred and sixty-three, four thousand eight hundred and sixty-six were engaged directly in the lumber and salt production, leaving four thousand and ninety-seven employed in the diversified industries of the city. The total wages paid all employees in 1892 was three million eight hundred and eighty-four thousand nine hundred and fourteen dollars, of which two million two hundred and twenty-one thousand five hundred and thirty-seven dollars was paid to workers in diversified industries. A summary in tabulated form of the various industries will be of aid in determining their importance:

Factories	Value of Product	Number of Employees	Wages Paid
Machine and boiler shops.....	\$1,068,500	480	\$288,621.00
Furniture factories .....	374,500	296	105,595.00
Breweries . . . . .	215,000	58	38,060.00
Printers and binders .....	112,000	85	39,433.00
Laundries . . . . .	59,080	79	26,201.00
Cigar factories .....	84,166	127	37,075.00
Brick yards .....	84,250	218	44,000.00
Broom factories .....	19,500	13	5,434.00
Miscellaneous . . . . .	2,236,022	1,496	563,538.00
Street Railways .....		175	85,500.00
Newspapers . . . . .		220	88,080.00
F. & P. M. Railroad.....		850	900,000.00
	\$4,253,018	4,097	\$2,221,537.00

To the above summary which omits small shops, building trades and employees in stores and wholesale houses, might properly be added the record of the planing mills, which ran the year round. These institutions alone employed two thousand three hundred and two men, who received eight hundred twelve thousand four hundred and twelve dollars in wages; and the value of the product was five million two hundred eight thousand six hundred and thirty-four dollars. Adding these figures to the footings of the summary, we have six thousand four hundred employees, who earned three million thirty-three thousand nine hundred and forty-nine dollars, and the value of whose product was nine million four hundred sixty-one thousand six hundred and fifty-two dollars. This left two thousand five hundred and sixty-three men employed in saw and shingle mills and salt blocks, who received eight hundred fifty thousand and nine hundred and sixty-five dollars in wages, and whose product was valued at five million seven hundred five thousand seven hundred and ninety-three dollars.

In view of the rapid decline of the lumber and salt production in the nineties, the growth of diversified industries in Saginaw was especially pleasing. The increase was about five times as great as the loss in saw and shingle mills for ten years previous. In 1892 the labor employed in the latter industries was only twenty-eight per cent. of the total labor employed by all industries in the city, and the wages paid was only twenty-two per cent of the total wages. The value of the product of lumber, shingles and salt, however, was nearly thirty-eight per cent. of the total valuation of Saginaw's products.

This shows that, while the saw mills and salt blocks were the main support of the Saginaws in the years of big lumbering in Michigan, other and more permanent industries were gradually taking their place. The amount paid for labor was constantly increasing, the mercantile interests were expanding, bank deposits and exchanges were growing, while the saw mills were going out of existence. The value of a factory to the city is principally in the amount of labor it employs and in the wages it pays. The saw mills only ran about six months in the year, and a greater portion of their labor was cheap and unskilled. Although some of the men worked in the woods in Winter, it was all common labor, at twelve to twenty dollars a month and keep, and many men had to find other employment at the time of year they most needed steady wages.

As a result the employees of saw mills, like the woodsmen, were a shifting element of the population, and occupied cheap rented houses living in a "hand to mouth" sort of way. The employees of a furniture factory, a carriage works, a plate glass or other permanent establishment, however, received better wages and employment the year round, and consequently secured homes of their own and became settled residents. Such an institution employing only thirty men paid as much in wages in a year as a saw mill employing one hundred men for the average run, and was a much greater benefit to the city.

### A Period of Depression

Notwithstanding the improvements in the industrial situation brought about by securing new industries to the city, the material advancement of the Saginaws was checked for a time. The final extinguishment of lumbering was marked by a long period of depression, which was keenly felt by the commercial as well as the industrial interests of the city. This period of lassitude in business was more pronounced between 1895 and 1905, in which the population fell off heavily. According to the United States census of 1890 the population of Saginaw was forty-six thousand three hundred and twenty-two, but the census of 1900 gave the city only forty-two thousand eight hundred and forty-six, a loss of about thirty-five hundred. This loss, however, was fully recovered in the following decade, when substantial gains were also recorded, the population given by the census of 1910 being fifty thousand five hundred and ten.

A contributory cause of the depression, though not directly affecting so much the loss in population, was the failure of some of the new industries established by the Saginaw Improvement Company, the readjustment of whose affairs required much time and attention. The Peninsular Carriage Company, controlled by the Den Bleykers, of Kalamazoo, was the first to show signs of distress, and soon after failed. Later the plant was taken over by Charles W. McClure and a new business in farm wagons and silos was established under the name of Farmers' Handy Wagon Company. Afterward the wagon business was discontinued, and the name changed to The McClure Company.

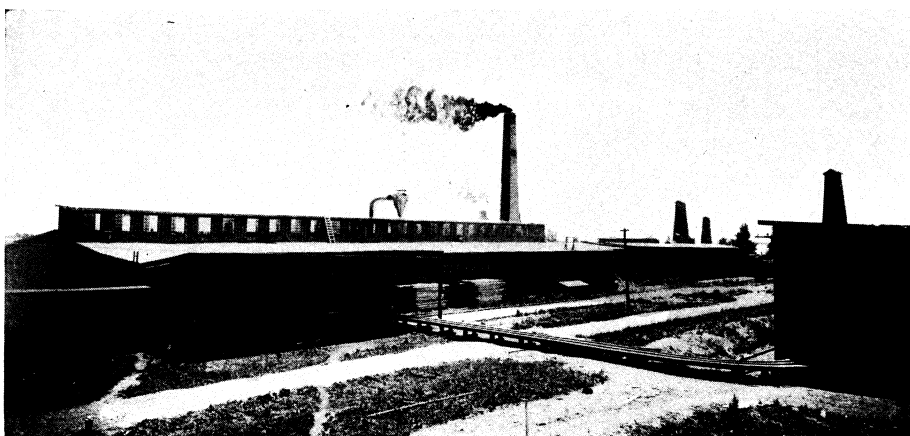


The Beelman Manufacturing Company, which was engaged in making furniture especially for halls, was the next concern to go under. The plant, however, was soon after put to good use by the Brewer-Pryor Piano Company, in the manufacture of a medium grade of pianos which were sold direct to purchasers. Later this substantial factory building was acquired by William Polson & Company, and has since been used in the manufacture of sash, doors, blinds and interior finish.

On the West Side several other of the new industries were likewise unsuccessful. The Crume & Sefton Company, which manufactured wooden butter dishes and berry boxes, was closed down, and the plant acquired by A. T. Ferrell. The Lockwood and one or two other factories in this district were burned at different times, but the sites were afterward built up by other and more permanent concerns. Among these was the Saginaw Table Company which developed a large business, and was absorbed by the Herzog Art Furniture Company. This prosperous concern, occupying an immense plant of most modern construction and equipment on South Michigan Avenue at the Belt Line crossing, is one of the wonders of Saginaw's recent industrial development. It manufactures the highest grade of art furniture which meets with ready sale throughout the civilized world, and also several fine lines of phonograph cabinets for large producers of phonographs.

### Reconstruction

Among the new developments in industrial affairs, which gave encouragement to enterprising men who had never lost faith in the ultimate future of Saginaw, were the Werner & Pfeleiderer Company, making bakery ovens and machinery, the Oakland Vinegar & Pickle Company, E. A. Robertson & Company, fashioning ladies' silk waists and gowns, the Saginaw Silk Garment Company, the Bernhard Company in the same line, the Germain Piano Company, making high grade pianos, the Mershon & Morley Company, manufacturing wood portable houses, the Berst Manufacturing Company, making tooth-picks and butter dishes, and several large concerns which began making flooring of various grades on a large scale. This latter business has since developed into immense proportions, much of the output being exported to foreign countries. The Asphalt Roofing Company, at Michigan Avenue and Wheeler Street, and the Saginaw Paving Brick Company, promoted by John H. Qualman and others, on South Jefferson Avenue, are also successful concerns developed in the period of reconstruction.



MAPLE FLOORING PLANT OF S. L. EASTMAN FLOORING COMPANY

The rebuilding of Saginaw's industries might have been hastened, it is believed, had our wealthy lumbermen been willing to invest heavily in enterprises to develop the natural resources of the valley. But, discouraged at the ill success that attended some of the earlier ventures, and believing that the greatest source of wealth lay in the pine forests, they invested their idle capital in timber lands in Minnesota and the State of Washington, and some moved their place of residence to the scene of their new activities. This policy of our moneyed men left the actual "boosting" of the city and the securing of new industries to the younger men of moderate means, and the position Saginaw holds today in the business affairs of Michigan, is due almost entirely to their efforts.

### How Some Gained Unexpected Riches

In this connection it is pertinent to note that the pine forests and the saline deposits of the earth were not the only sources of wealth which came to some Saginaw lumbermen. To a few greater riches came from beneath the soil than they had ever gained from the exploitation of the forests. In a few instances wealth was actually forced upon them, though, of course, not unwillingly. The iron ore which lay in heavy beds beneath thousands of acres of pine timber in Minnesota, brought untold riches to already opulent lumbermen, the narration of which rivals the fairy tales of old.

The story of the man who became a *millionaire and never knew it*, illustrates how sudden riches came to some men, entirely unlooked for.

In the busy days of lumbering in Minnesota, Ezra Rust and George L. Burrows were large holders of valuable timber land in that section, and they employed Gilbert B. Goff, father of E. A. Goff of this city, as land looker. Besides a salary for his services in selecting valuable timber land, he received as commission on certain deals a one-third interest in the lands acquired, some of which proved very profitable.

On a trip to the north woods he one day came across "ten forties" of timber, which ran largely to hardwoods with some choice pine, but had not enough of the latter to attract the Wrights and others who were lumbering in the neighborhood. Upon looking over the tract Goff concluded that it would be a good investment to buy the land and hold it until such time as the logging companies would want it to clean up operations in that section. The cost of the four hundred acres, at the government price of one dollar and twenty-five cents an acre, was only five hundred dollars, and he prevailed upon the Rusts to buy the ten forties for future development.

Several years after, the land looker, having settled on a farm near Edenville, on the upper waters of the Tittabawassee, was in need of some ready money and came to Saginaw to raise it. Mr. Rust was away at the time, but his secretary, T. H. Rusling, looked up the particular land deal of the ten forties which the parties still owned. Pine timber had greatly increased in value since the purchase of this land, and Goff hoped to realize some money on his share of the property. Rusling, who had saved a little money which he had deposited in the bank, was tempted to help the land looker on his own account, but hesitated to accept security of such uncertain value on a loan of twelve hundred dollars, the amount that Goff needed.

The land looker, however, was so insistent in his plea for cash that Rusling at length said: "If you will give me a deed to your share of these ten forties, I will give you the money."

"All right," said Goff, "I will do it. Draw up the papers right away."

So the sale was made and Rusling became the owner of a one-third interest in the ten forties, which he had never seen nor expected to see, while the land looker was well pleased with the deal.

Nothing further was thought of the matter until some years after when, on a trip to the north, Goff heard rumors of the existence of iron ore deposits on lands near or adjoining the ten forties, in which he had once been interested. He looked into the subject very thoroughly, and found such strong evidence of ore under the land that he believed there might be some truth in the stories. So he came right back to Saginaw, raised what money he could, and going to Rusling, said:

"I have now a little spare cash, and will repay the money you gave me some time ago on those ten forties, with interest to date. If you want the coin instead of the third share in the land, here it is."

So Rusling went to the safe, found the deed to the one-third interest in the land, which he had not even recorded, and handed it over. The money was counted out, paid over to him, and the deed was torn up thus ending the whole transaction. This part of the deal, however, was the greatest mistake of his life, as the sequel shows.

When Andrew Carnegie began acquiring rights to ore properties on the Mesaba Range, he had tests made of the ten forties still owned by Rust and others, and concluded a lease with them whereby he paid five thousand dollars a year to hold the ore rights. Goff's share of this payment was sixteen hundred and sixty-six dollars a year, a very acceptable little wad to the land looker-farmer.

This deal, however, was but an incident in the wonderful romance of iron ore, that which follows revealing the touch of the fairie's wand.

Several years later, when the Carnegie Steel Company was absorbed by the United States Steel Corporation, the new owners decided to terminate the lease of iron ore rights by purchase of the ore in the ground. So they agreed with Mr. Rust and the other owners to buy the ore at thirty cents a ton, the quantity to be estimated by careful tests conducted by both parties to the deal. Experienced ore men were sent to the ten forties, and after exhaustive tests had been made they reported that the tract contained not less than *twenty-four million tons of iron ore*. At the pre-arranged price this ore was worth *seven million two hundred thousand* dollars, which sum was paid to the Saginaw lumbermen. Goff's share of this unlooked for wealth was *two million four hundred thousand* dollars, which he gained without the investment of one cent.

Rusling, meanwhile, had died never knowing that at one time in his modest business life he had acquired great riches, and become a millionaire twice over and above.

### How Hill "Put One Over" on the Wrights

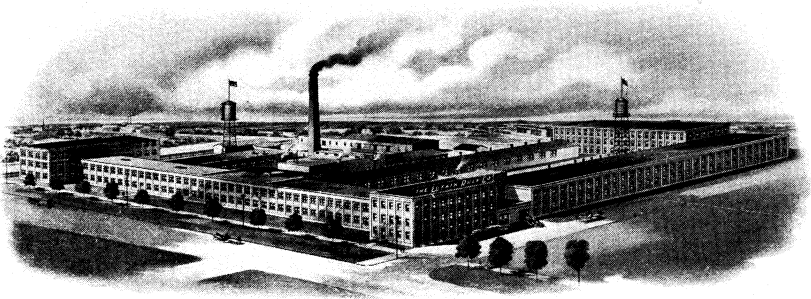
During the great rush to gain control of the iron ore deposits in Minnesota, some years ago, James J. Hill made a proposition to Ammi W. Wright and others to purchase the iron ore in certain lands they owned. The price finally agreed upon was four million five hundred thousand dollars, which the lumbermen considered as "velvet" since the only thing they had paid for in buying the land was the timber which stood upon it. The existence of iron ore at the time they acquired the land was not dreamed of, and it was a case of sudden wealth actually forced upon them.

A year and a half later, the true value of the ore having been determined by exhaustive tests and calculations as to the quantity in the ground, Mr. Hill sold the ore rights to the Great Northern Railroad for *forty-four million* dollars, which was a gain of almost ten times the cost to him.

The enormous return in royalties to some of Saginaw's lumbermen, is illustrated by an incident in the circuit court of this county a few years ago, in which Wellington R. Burt testified that his income from his iron ore

properties the preceding year had amounted to *seven hundred and fifty thousand* dollars. At about the same time Temple E. Dorr, who once moved a whole town in Minnesota several miles to clear its site which contained valuable ore deposits, was receiving, it was said, a draft for five thousand dollars every *week* in the year, to cover his royalties on the ore the removal and disposal of which he had not to lift a finger. To open the letter, take out the draft, endorse and deposit it to his account in bank, were the only moves called for by his part in the deal.

In pondering over these sudden acquisition of riches, which were entirely unsought by the principals, and of which many other instances of similar purport might be told, one must wonder how great a sum the government—the people of the United States—has lost by the policy of not retaining title to the mineral resources of the soil. Instead of this wealth being distributed among the mass of the people, it has been concentrated in the hands of a few men already wealthy and who could not be made happier by it. The excuse is that they having ready capital and the brains to carry on extensive operations, develop the natural resources of the earth, and are thus entitled to all the profits and emoluments to be obtained therefrom. This presentment, however, is not altogether acceptable to the American people, as a whole.



MAMMOTH PLANT OF THE LUFKIN RULE COMPANY

### A Revival of Industries

About 1906 it became apparent that if Saginaw was to progress industrially a revival of manufacturing must be inaugurated. With this object the Merchants and Manufacturers Association came into being, to secure the location of new and outside industries and business enterprises. By the donations of business and factory sites and buildings, and by other inducements, it was hoped that substantial concerns would locate here, and thus add appreciably to our industrial welfare. It was also the purpose of the association to co-operate with the Saginaw Board of Trade in accomplishing the material advancement of the city.

The association was duly organized and incorporated by Harry T. Wickes, Theodore Huss, John L. Jackson, A. C. Melze, Benton Hanchett, Max Heavenrich, Arthur D. Eddy, Delbert E. Prall, James S. Smart, M. W. Tanner and Ralph C. Morley; and the first seven comprised the board of trustees for the first year. By the Articles of Association the trustees were authorized to receive contributions and pledges of property and money for the purposes of the association, and to make assessments on contributors for money required to carry out its purposes. After a spirited campaign among business and professional men and manufacturers, the sum of two hundred and twelve thousand dollars was subscribed, and the plans of the association were at once set in motion.

During the following years in which the association was very active in its endeavors to secure new industries to this city, a number of large and important corporations were induced to locate here, and several local companies of promise were started and given substantial aid. Among these new industries were the Brooks Boat Manufacturing Company, Rainier Motor Company, Saginaw Sandstone Brick Company, Valley Sweets Company, Saginaw Concrete Stone Company, Valley Grey Iron Company, Brueck Sectional Book Case Company, Saginaw Heading & Veneer Company, Saginaw Pure Ice Company, Clare Knitting Mills, Erd Motor Company, Wilcox Engineering Company, Saginaw Silk Garment Company, Saginaw Show Case Company, Cooney & Smith, Valley Boat & Engine Company, Jackson-Church-Wilcox Company, Sommers Brothers Match Company, Yates-Upholt Brass Company, Argo Electric Vehicle Company, Wessborg Manufacturing Company, Michigan Creamery Company, Koenitzer Tanning Company, Saginaw Ladder Company, Opportunity Manufacturing Company, Saginaw Sheet Metal Works, Stork Motor Company, Modart Corset Company, and Kerry & Way. In more recent years the Strable Manufacturing Company, Nelson Brothers Company, Saginaw Wood Products Company, Schwinck Brothers (packers), Saginaw Enameling Company and the American Cash Register Company have been added to the long list of Saginaw's prosperous corporations.

From the organization of the association in 1906 to April 1, 1910, the total wages paid by the new industries secured by the association amounted to six hundred and ninety-seven thousand one hundred and thirty-seven dollars, which was three times more than the total subscriptions to the Merchants and Manufacturers Fund, and six times as much as the amount covered by the assessments on the subscribers to that fund.

### A Disruption Threatened

On January 1, 1911, Joseph P. Tracy assumed the duties of secretary of the association and of the board of trade, by a joint arrangement between the two organizations. He was an organizer of recognized ability, but lacked a judicial and well-balanced view of commercial affairs, and as a result plunged the associations into a surging sea of trouble, from which they have yet scarcely recovered. Without the wisdom of keen foresight or realization of consequences, or indeed without the knowledge or consent of the members of the transportation committee of the board, he started a vicious attack on the Pere Marquette Railroad at a most critical time in the financial affairs of that corporation. As almost everybody knows the Pere Marquette has done more in the last fifty years for the advancement of Saginaw's prosperity than any other corporation or individuals. The unwarranted attack in the name of the Board of Trade therefore created a furore among the members of that body, and was published broadcast over the State arousing great indignation in many quarters.

The consequence of this high-handed action of the secretary was to put the affiliated associations in disrepute, not only among our fair minded citizens generally, but throughout the State a feeling of resentment was aroused against Saginaw, which has been difficult to overcome. The influence of the new secretary in any movement for the advancement of the city's interests was thus rendered negligible, and he was forced to retire from office May 6, 1913. Other ill-advised and premature plans were put forward with great zeal by this official, and a disruption of the commercial bodies was narrowly averted. To the end of his tenure of office, however, Mr. Tracy had the support of some of the most influential men in the two organizations, although the greater proportion of the members were utterly

opposed to his policies and his conduct of the office. The natural result of internal trouble and dissension has been that the material interests of the city have not advanced during the last three or four years at anywhere near the ratio of progress that marked Saginaw as a growing manufacturing city, from 1905 to 1911. With old animosities put aside and forgotten, it is confidently expected that some of the great industrial activity of Michigan cities will soon be felt here in the promotion of new industries and commercial enterprises.

### Celebrating a Semi-Centenary Anniversary

The Saginaw Board of Trade is an old organization and has long been actively identified with every movement for the advancement of the city's welfare. It was organized on April 9, 1863, by some of the prominent men of the time, among whom were Colonel W. L. P. Little, Ezra Rust, A. W. Brockway, L. B. Curtis, Castle Sutherland, William S. Driggs, William F. Glasby, H. Hobbs, Charles F. Disbrow, James L. Ketcham, D. L. C. Eaton, George L. Burrows, H. C. Potter, Newell Barnard, William L. Webber, V. A. and A. B. Paine, William Binder, Charles and Egbert TenEyck, W. D. Leavonworth and John S. Estabrook.

The fiftieth anniversary of this event was celebrated on May 6, 1913, on the occasion of the annual meeting of the board which then numbered seven hundred and sixty members. At two o'clock in the afternoon a public meeting was held at the Auditorium, the golden anniversary exercises being opened by an organ recital by Professor A. W. Platte. This was followed by "America" sung by the audience led by Professor Arthur Amsden, director of the Thirty-third Regiment Band, M. N. G., and by two songs rendered by the Amphion Club of the Saginaw High School. An able address was then delivered by E. C. Warriner on "Saginaw in Prospect," and Harry A. Wheeler, president of the Chamber of Commerce of the United States, spoke on the "Call to Business." A reception for members and guests followed at six o'clock, a large and brilliant company of Saginaw's representative citizens being present.

The leading function of the celebration was the banquet in the evening, in which President J. A. Cimmerer was toastmaster. A happy circumstance was the presence of Ezra Rust, one of the three surviving charter members of the association, who delivered a stirring address on "Retrospection." In receiving Mr. Rust as the first speaker of the evening, the assemblage rose and gave the Chautauqua Salute in his honor and in respect to those who associated fifty years before in the first meeting of Saginaw Board of Trade, and who had "gone before."

Among other things Mr. Rust said: "When I first came to Saginaw in the Fall of 1859 there were about thirty-two hundred inhabitants of East Saginaw and seventeen hundred in Saginaw City. There was no railroad nearer than Holly, there were no bridges across the river, no paved streets except an occasional strip of plank road, sidewalks were few and poor, and in no respect save water supply was there any similarity to our present flourishing city. Three rope ferries—at Mackinaw, Bristol and Genesee Streets—gave transport for teams; foot passengers were taken across the river in row boats. \* \* \* The commerce of the two towns was entirely by water. A boat ran twice a day to Bay City and return, and a steamer made bi-weekly trips to Detroit. All large freight, including lumber, was carried in sailing vessels.

"Such, in brief, was Saginaw in 1859. During the next few years its growth was rapid; as the lumber trade increased new mills were built on both sides of the river, and the population in 1863 had become nearly seven

We, the undersigned, hereby Associate Ourselves together as a Board of Trade for the Saginaw valley - under & according to the Act Entitled "An Act for the Incorporation of Boards of Trade & Chamber of Commerce" approved March 19. 1863 -

Dated, Apr. 9. 1863 -

George Dunlap  
 Nehiel Barnard  
 W. L. Miller  
 V. A. Paine  
 A. B. Paine  
 J. F. Harborne  
 J. J. Davidson  
 J. H. Davidson  
 Chas. L. H. Chas.  
 E. J. Davidson  
 Jas. L. Stetson  
 G. C. G. G. G.  
 J. F. Stetson  
 W. J. G. G.  
 H. C. Potter  
 W. D. Dill

W. L. Little  
 H. H. Chapman  
 Ezra Rust  
 J. J. Davidson  
 W. M. Davis  
 W. M. Brockway  
 L. B. G. G.  
 G. S. Duggs  
 W. C. Duggs  
 W. J. G. G.  
 H. H. G. G.  
 G. M. G. G.  
 G. J. D. D.  
 W. M. G. G.  
 E. J. Throop

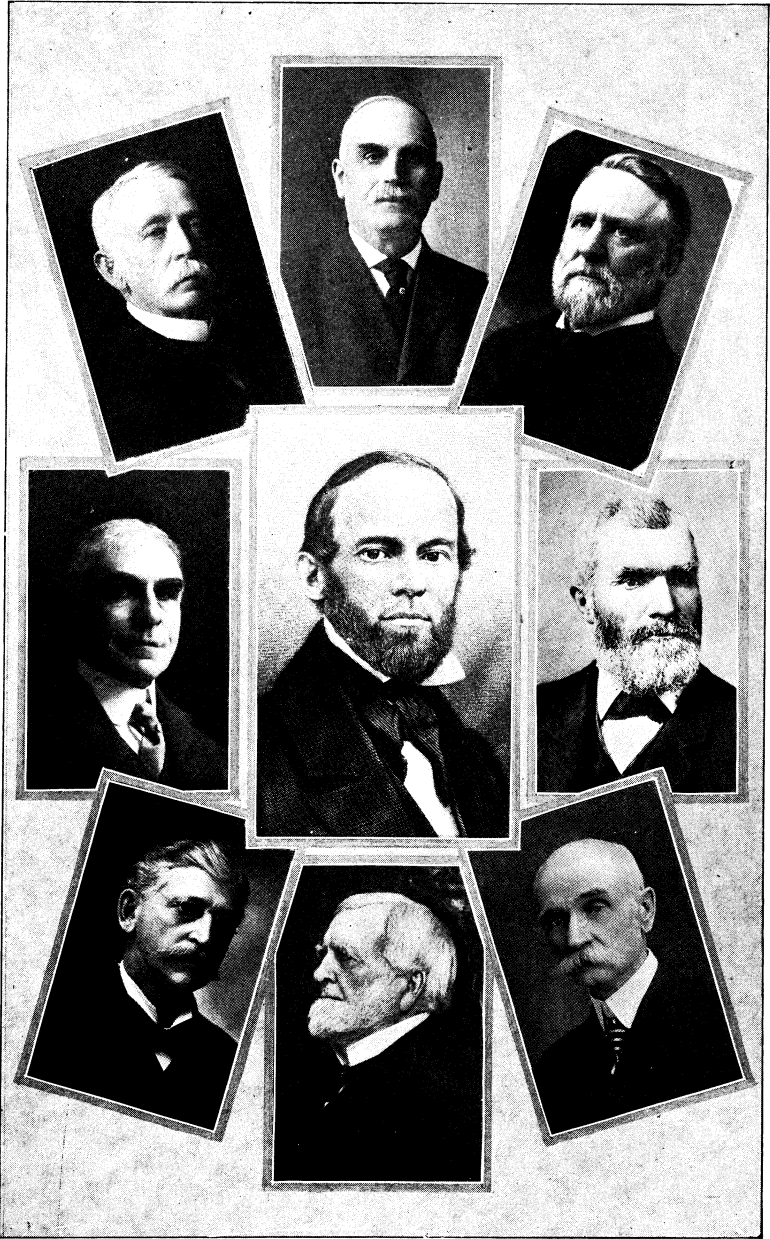
FAC SIMILE OF SIGNATURES TO ORIGINAL ARTICLES OF INCORPORATION OF THE BOARD OF TRADE

thousand. \* \* \* Only a few brick structures had yet been erected, the Bancroft being the largest. Stores were not numerous, and outside of provisions and clothing there was little call for any merchandise save lumbering tools and machinery.

"In the Spring of 1863 a meeting of the National Board of Trade was announced to be held at Detroit, and it was suggested by Colonel W. L. P. Little that the Saginaw Valley should be represented on that occasion. Accordingly, on April 9, 1863, the original articles of incorporation of a 'Board for the Saginaw Valley' were signed by Colonel Little and thirty-one others. Delegates to the Detroit meeting were duly chosen, but to my best recollection this ended the active operations of the board; at all evnts no record exists of any other proceedings.

"Two years later, in 1865, twelve of the original incorporators with fifty-two additional signers attached their names to the constitution of the 'Board of Trade of East Saginaw.' No record remains of the proceedings of this body, and it is my belief that little was ever done; in fact, there was no crying need for the organization.

"During the period from 1860 to 1870 the commercial conditions in Saginaw Valley began to change. While lumbering was still the great industry, salt-making greatly increased and the rapid growth in population



W. R. Burt  
Arthur Hill  
Aaron T. Bliss

Temple E. Dorr  
Jesse Hoyt  
Joseph A. Whittier

Ezra Rust  
Aaron Linton  
John Jeffers

PROMINENT PROMOTORS OF AND DONORS TO THE  
SAGINAW BOARD OF TRADE



caused the establishment of other important lines of manufacture, many of which remain to this city. The Flint and Pere Marquette Railroad had been built to Flint, and extended north to Bay City and west through Midland across the State. The Jackson, Lansing & Saginaw Railroad gave us an outlet to the southwest, and the Saginaw Valley and St. Louis Railroad had opened the territory to the west. The population of the twin cities had meanwhile increased from five thousand to twenty-seven thousand.

"These rapid changes brought conditions which seemed to call for an active and efficient Board of Trade, and in 1876 a reorganization was effected, a new constitution and by-laws adopted and signed by one hundred and ten prominent business men of both sides for the purpose of promoting 'just and equitable principles in trade, to correct any abuses which may exist, and generally to advise the interests of trade and commerce in the Saginaw Valley.' Among the signers of this constitution I find only three of the original incorporators of 1863.

"Colonel Little, the founder of this board, was a large man in every respect; of commanding figure, ruddy face, he was one who commanded attention wherever he went—but above and beyond his personal charm he possessed qualities of mind which made him eminent in the community. Strong, forceful, persuasive in manner and speech, he was a leader whom it was a pleasure to follow; and to his influence Saginaw owes much.

"It was my good fortune to be intimate in both business and social relations with most of the leading men of this community for more than thirty years of active business life, and I can truthfully say that I believe a greater number of intelligent, forceful men never were gathered together in any community of similar population, and in very few of much larger number. \* \* \* Energetic, enterprising, well informed in all directions, bold in action and wise in judgment, they were the fitting progenitors of the present generation."

In 1871, when a delegation of Saginaw and Bay City men, with a few representatives from Detroit, went to Washington to oppose a bill introduced in Congress to remit the duty on all lumber intended for use in rebuilding Chicago, Senator Zach Chandler said to Mr. Rust: "I have never seen so fine a delegation of men since I have been in Washington."

### Conclusion of the Golden Anniversary

Following Mr. Rust, President Harry A. Wheeler spoke on "American Commerce" without manuscript or notes, the principal topics being "Genius for Organization," "Right of Combination," "Currency Reform," and "Optimism."

During the banquet music was rendered by the Thirty-third Regiment Band, M. N. G., under the leadership of Arthur Amsden, director; and the ceremonies were concluded by singing of Auld Lang Syne.

The officers for the fifty-first year of the Board of Trade were: William S. Linton, president; John J. Rupp, first vice-president; Emil Staehle, second vice-president; and William Seyffardt, treasurer. The directors were A. A. Alderton, J. P. Beck, J. A. Cimmerer, J. A. Cleveland, E. C. Forrest, Louis Mautner, H. W. Merrill, Ralph C. Morley, Hiram A. Savage, John W. Smart, S. E. Symons, and Frank J. Wolfarth.

### The Oil Development

An industrial flurry of more than ordinary interest was the oil prospecting campaign conducted by local capitalists in 1912 and 1913. For years the possibility of oil being found here had been much discussed, State Geologist Lane being so firm in his belief of the presence of oil that he offered

to put up money with others for sinking test holes. To settle for all time the question as to whether there remained beneath the surface of the Saginaw Valley other natural resources than salt and coal, a company of capitalists and business men was formed, to whose enterprise and energy the community at large owes no small degree of gratitude.

The organizers of this company, which was known as the Saginaw Valley Development Company, were representative men of ability and integrity, who devoted months of incessant labor and much money to further the prospecting work. No effort or expense was spared in making the most thorough experiments, and at length, after expending more than one hundred thousand dollars with no success, the fact was clearly established that oil in commercial quantities does not exist in this locality. The officers of the company were: Wallis Craig Smith, president, Clark L. Ring, vice-president, Norman N. Rupp, secretary and treasurer; and the board of directors was composed of the officers and George B. Morley, John L. Jackson, Elmer J. Cornwell and Laurence L. Linton.

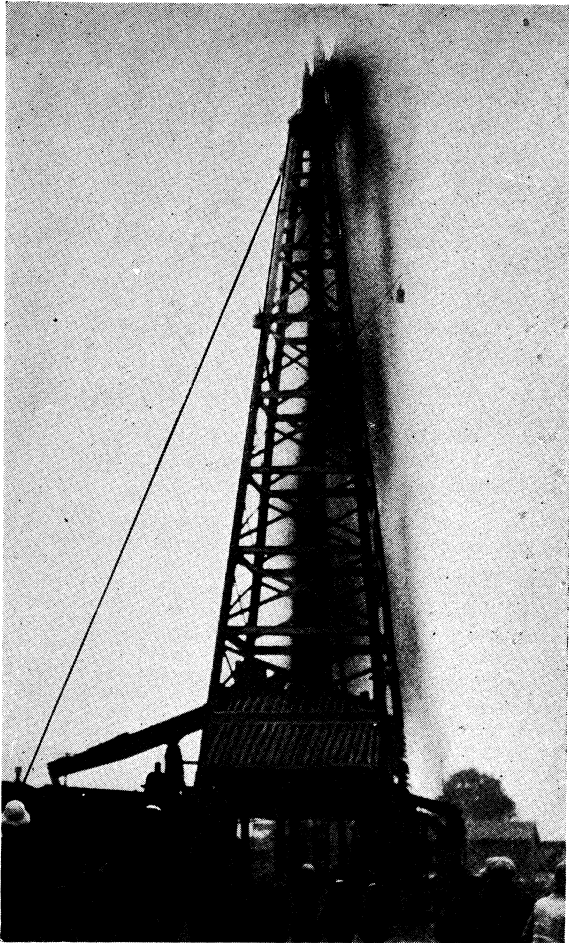
The first boring was made on the Mundy & Fifield Farm, a large tract of reclaimed marsh land a few miles north of the city. A well was sunk to a depth exceeding two thousand feet, but without any discovery of oil or gas. Specimens of the different strata through which the drills passed were taken out and sent to the laboratory of the University of Michigan, for analysis; and later preserved in glass tubes for public exhibit and for the use of students and others, in order that the experiments might aid them in their researches, thus performing a valuable educational function.

Not discouraged by the failure of the first test, and indeed not expecting success so early in the development work, the company set about to sink another well near the geographical center of the city, a short distance north of the Bristol Street bridge. The spot was on the west bank of Saginaw River, where years before Professor Lane had indicated that oil might be found. After innumerable difficulties had been overcome by the untiring efforts of Norman N. Rupp, who superintended the operations, the drills penetrated to a depth of twenty-three hundred feet into oil bearing sandstone, the evidence of gas, meanwhile, being very strong.

Greatly encouraged by the prospects of success at this place, preparations were at once made for "shooting" the well, or opening by high explosives a cavity at the bottom. One hundred quarts of nitro-glycerine in long cylindrical cans were carefully lowered to the bottom of the hole, and at 3:45 in the afternoon of Sunday, September 29, 1912, the charge was set off. A perceptible thud deep down in the earth was felt by the spectators, and great quantities of gas from the resulting explosion came from the mouth of the well to enhance the excitement. Nothing of spectacular nature occurred, however, and all but financially interested persons left the scene.

### The Well Spouted High

The real spectacle, which aroused great expectations for the future of the oil development, occurred fifty-five minutes after the actual "shooting," and was witnessed by few persons. It was an eruption or spout of oil forty feet high from the mouth of the well, and stood solid for four or five minutes gradually subsiding with strong indications of gas, rivulets of oil running down the slope to the river. This spout was followed a few minutes later by a second and higher column of oil, which reached nearly to the top of the derrick, eighty feet high, and lasted about two minutes with quantities of gas. About an hour later there were three discharges of gas, the first carrying twelve barrels of oil into a tank, but the others were free of oil.



**WHAT MIGHT HAVE BEEN A FAMILIAR SIGHT**

"Shooting" of First Oil Well at Saginaw,

September 29, 1912

The excitement in Saginaw attending this discovery was spontaneous, and predictions were freely expressed that a new era of prosperity was opening for the Valley cities. The oil discovered was of very fine quality, and great hopes were raised that it existed in commercial quantities to insure success of the new enterprise. News of the find spread quickly far beyond the boundaries of this State, and in an incredibly short time oil speculators and promoters arrived with the avowed purpose of organizing other oil companies to secure oil leases and to prospect for oil and gas. The local demand for stock in the parent oil company was overwhelming, but none was offered, and the bids rose by leaps and bounds until at around six hundred some stock changed hands. No new stock was issued, and the company announced its policy of not effecting its operating organization until the quantity of oil existing in this locality was definitely determined.

### Speculators Foiled

In the minds of promoters and speculators, who saw in the oil situation a great opportunity for gain, this policy was a grave mistake. While the public interest was so keen, with business men and others with ready cash clamoring for oil stocks, the "wild-cating" of development companies on a large scale would have been an easy matter, the insiders becoming rich by stock manipulations. But this sort of thing was very effectually prevented by the honorable policy of the parent company. By giving out daily reports to the press of actual conditions at the various wells which the company proceeded to bore, much of which was not of a favorable character, the public was kept fully informed of the actual situation, and the speculative fever gradually subsided. After many heated arguments with the officials of the company, the outside promoters quit in disgust and many of them left the city.

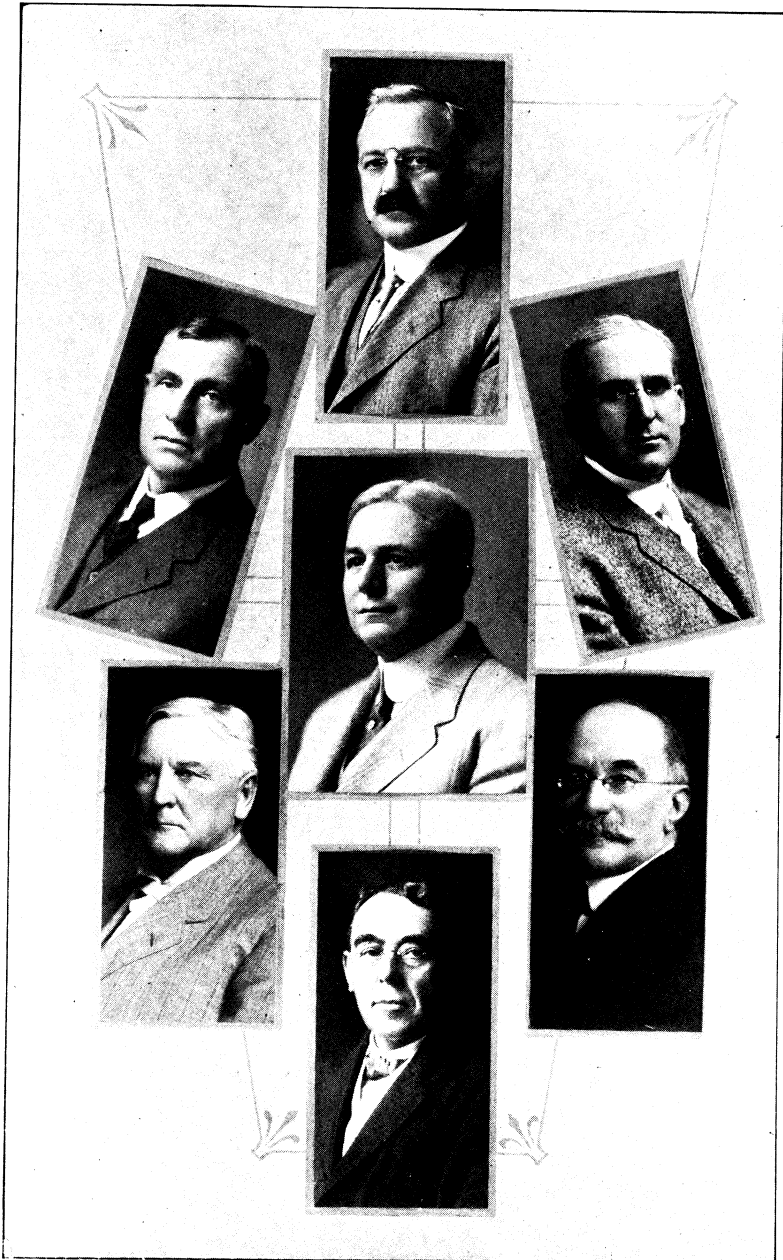
The directors of the Saginaw Valley Development Company fully realized the opportunity for great expansion of oil development, and while risking their own money in the "gambler's chance," they were unwilling to open up a field of speculation which would entice the widow's mite, the hard-earned savings of clerks, or the profits of small business, while there was the least chance of failure through the paucity of oil, and the consequent disaster to those who could ill afford to lose. On the other hand it was announced that if success crowned their efforts, and oil found in large quantities, the public would be let into the company to profit by the experience of the developers.

Meanwhile the Saginaw Company, with its strong backing of influential men, was securing valuable leases of oil rights in this vicinity, and it was stated that their holdings amounted to eighty thousand acres, out of the aggregate of one hundred and fifty thousand acres held by local and outside speculators. In this connection Mr. Smith, president of the company, said: "We do not regard with special favor the efforts of lease speculators, parties who secure leases upon lands in this vicinity, not with any view of doing development work thereon, but of sitting by and hanging on while legitimate developers are proving their value." As a result of the strong position of this company, promiscuous leasing of land for speculation purposes was largely curtailed and soon ceased entirely.

It is an indisputable fact that the firm stand of Wallis Craig Smith and his associates in the oil company, in preventing wild speculation in development companies, saved the citizens of Saginaw and the people of Michigan hundreds of thousands of dollars which otherwise would have been irretrievably lost. For, after more than a year of exhaustive tests throughout the townships adjoining Saginaw, without discovery of oil or gas in commercial quantities, it was determined beyond reasonable doubt that oil was a myth in this locality. In consequence of this the operations of the company ceased, the equipment and tools were sold, and the oil leases terminated. It was unfortunate that after every effort had been made in the enterprise, the results should have been so meagre, but the very thoroughness with which the prospecting was conducted will undoubtedly save others from further experiments in the future.

### Summary of Saginaw's Industries in 1914

According to the special census reports issued by the Department of Commerce, Washington, D. C., for the year 1914 (the last report), the population of Saginaw was estimated to be fifty-four thousand, and the number of employees in local industries was eight thousand four hundred and sixty-six. The capital invested increased from twenty-six million seven



John L. Jackson  
Benton Hanchett

Theodore Huss  
Harry T. Wickes  
A. C. Melze

Arthur Eddy  
Max Heavenrich

TRUSTEES OF MERCHANTS AND MANUFACTURERS ASSOCIATION  
1909 TO 1913

hundred thousand dollars in 1910 to thirty-three million one hundred and forty thousand dollars in 1914; and the value of products, representing value or price at the plants as actually turned out during the year but including amounts received for work done on materials furnished by others, increased from eighteen million eight hundred and thirty-three thousand dollars in 1910 to twenty-four million two hundred and seventy-nine thousand dollars in 1914. Meanwhile the wages and salaries paid in our industries increased from four million one hundred and ten thousand dollars in 1910 to five million five hundred and eighty thousand dollars in 1914. In the two years which have intervened since the period of the last report, the industrial situation in Saginaw has greatly improved, and it is confidently believed that at this writing (May, 1916) the figures in some of the above departments would show a substantial increase.

### **The Sommers Brothers Match Company**

This successful industry had its beginning in the old Saginaw Match Company, which was organized in 1903 by Charles F. Sommers, Sylvester A. Sommers and Frank F. Sommers. They bought a brick factory building on South Jefferson Avenue, made their own match machinery, and invented the now famous "Saginaw Tip" match. At first they placed on the market such limited quantities of this newly invented match as they could manufacture.

The double tip match revolutionized the match business and in a short time its popularity became so universal that imitators sprang up like mushrooms over night, and filled the market with imitation matches which they claimed to be just as good as the original "Saginaw Tip." The public, however readily detected the difference, and the Saginaw Match Company was unable to manufacture double tip matches fast enough to supply the demands.

In 1909 the directors of the Company, realizing that a much larger factory was necessary, organized a new company to be known as the Sommers Brothers Match Company, with a capital stock of two hundred and eighty thousand dollars. The new stock was quickly sold at par, and with the funds the Company erected a new, modern factory, a five-story white sandstone brick structure one hundred and twenty feet by one hundred and fifteen feet in dimensions. A complete power plant and laboratory and chemical buildings adjoin the factory on the east and west.

The new plant was equipped with the most modern facilities and match-making machinery of the most approved type, designed by Charles F. Sommers, the president of the Company, under whose personal direction the new factory was erected. Each match-making machine is ninety feet in length, sixteen feet in height, and weighs eight and a half tons. It carries four hundred feet of chain, consisting of twelve hundred match plates, each plate holding seven hundred and fifty matches. Small match blocks are placed in the "stamper" at one end of a machine, and converted into match sticks with the amazing rapidity of eighteen thousand sticks per minute. These sticks are automatically placed and held in the match plates, dipped in paraffine, double-tipped in match head composition, and then carried up and down over and under dozens of wheels and pulleys and through air blasts from electric fans so that they become perfectly dry. At last they reach the turning table where they are automatically packed in match boxes.

An idea of the quantity of matches made each working day may be obtained from the statement that each machine makes eighteen thousand matches per minute, or ten million eight hundred thousand matches in ten hours. The eight match machines produce a total of eighty-seven million matches a day, filling one hundred and seventy-five thousand boxes, or one thousand seven hundred cases, equivalent to three car loads. If laid end to end a day's production would make a continuous line twenty-five hundred and thirty-five miles in length.

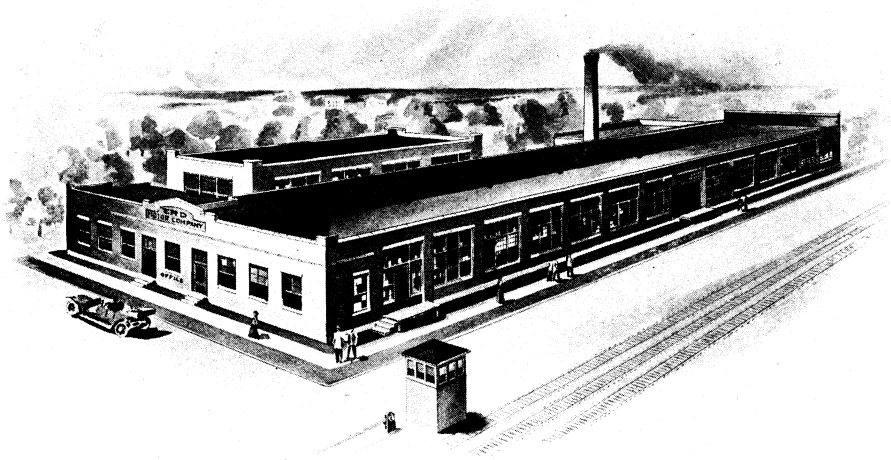
The match timber used by the Company is straight grained Idaho white pine, which is cut by a block plant owned by them at Sand Point, Idaho. This timber is first sawed into proper sized planks, and after thorough seasoning the best stock is shipped to Saginaw, all knotty and cross-grained blocks being left in Idaho to be sold for fuel. In every department of this important industry the enterprise of the Sommers Brothers is clearly manifested, and is one of Saginaw's largest manufactories.

### Erd Motor Company

A rapidly growing institution is the Erd Motor Company, manufacturers of marine, truck and tractor motors, whose efficient plant is located at Niagara and Mackinaw Streets. Like some other of Saginaw's flourishing industries, this concern started in a modest way. In 1902 John G. Erd and Harry S. Erd opened a small machine shop in the Barnard Block, at the corner of Niagara and Hancock Streets. They were practical machinists and mechanical engineers and made marine engines to order and did general motor repair work for local boat owners. The output was about one complete motor a month, but they were of such excellent design and workmanship that in a short time the capacity of the shop was overtaxed.

In 1906 the shop was removed to a larger frame factory building on North Niagara Street, and the equipment and working force largely increased. The production soon reached ten or twelve marine motors a month, which were shipped to the East and South. By judicious advertising the demand for Erd motors, of sizes ranging from one to six cylinders, increased very rapidly and the plant and manufacturing facilities were taxed to the utmost.

On December 11, 1909, the business was incorporated by John G. Erd, Harry S. Erd and William J. Passolt, with a capital stock of twenty-five thousand dollars. The stock was later increased to one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars, and the business expanded to a remarkable degree. In addition to turning out one complete six-cylinder motor a day, there was the same production of smaller motors, mostly for marine use. This expansion soon necessitated increased plant facilities for production, and in 1910 the present brick factory building was erected and equipped with modern machinery, tools and jigs.



PLANT OF THE ERD MOTOR COMPANY

Later the manufacture of heavy truck and tractor motors was added to the product, and this part of the business has grown to such a volume that the Company is now turning out about fifteen motors a day. The success of the Erd Motor is due to its great power and reliability at comparatively low speeds, and to the general excellence of workmanship. It is a valve-in-head type with long stroke, the cylinders being of four-inch bore and six-inch stroke. These features give from ten to twenty per cent more power with ten to fifteen per cent economy in fuel consumption. The bearings are of ample size and an oiling system which gives perfect lubrication to every part, is provided.

About eighty-five mechanics are steadily employed by the Company, and the force will eventually be increased by a number of molders in a foundry which it is proposed to add to the equipments for making of all castings used in the motors, many of which are now made in other cities.

The present officers of the Company are: John G. Erd, president; R. H. Knapp, vice-president; Harry S. Erd, secretary and treasurer; and the board of directors comprises the officers and William J. Passolt and E. M. Marshall.

### The Saginaw Manufacturing Company

One of the oldest and most successful of local industries is the Saginaw Manufacturing Company which, with its parent concern, the Saginaw Barrel Factory, has had an active existence of forty-five years. The Saginaw Barrel Factory was established in 1871 by a company of local capitalists, headed by Messrs. Ballentine, A. F. R. Braley, William Binder and C. A. Lee, who were the first officers of the Company. The capital stock was seventy-five thousand dollars, but was afterward increased to one hundred and twenty-five thousand.

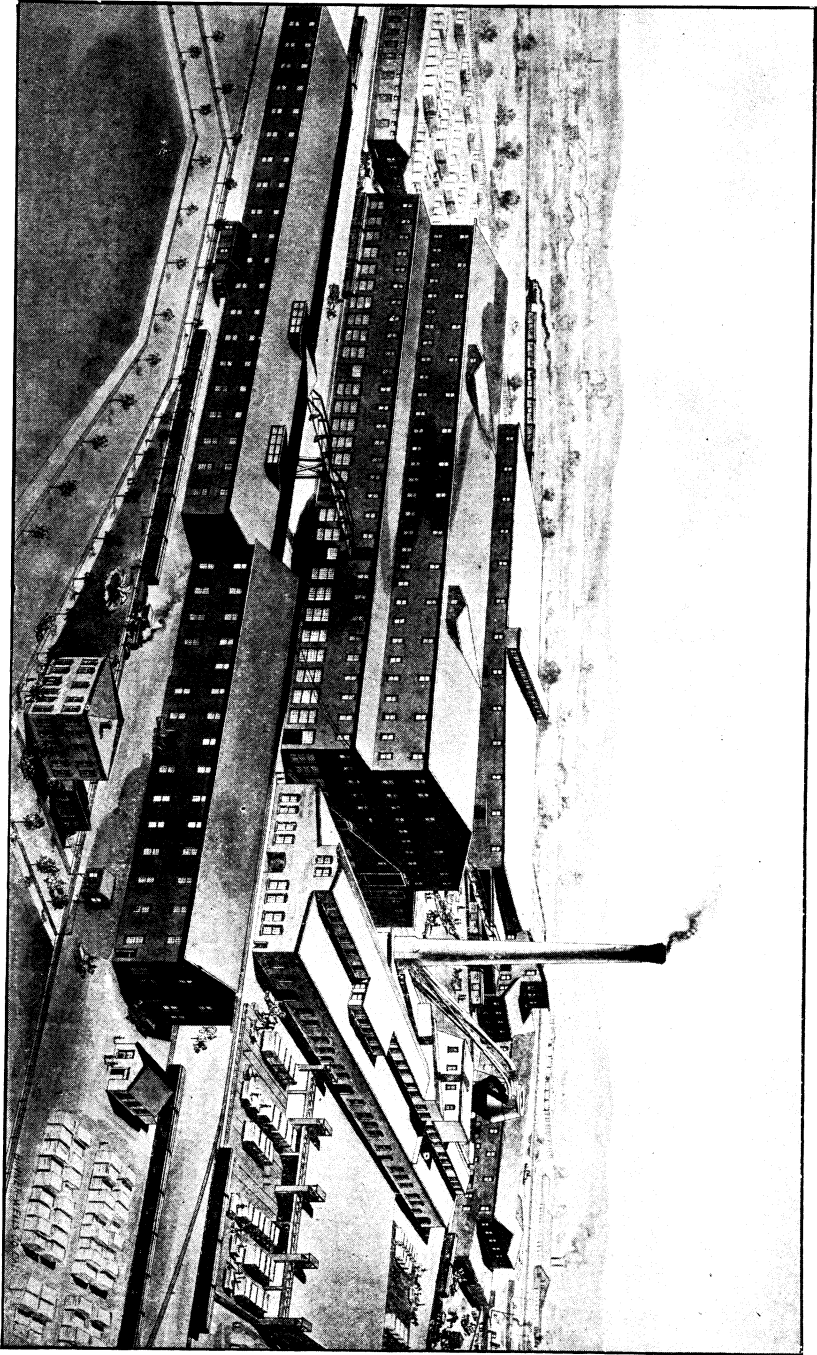
From the nature and variety of its products the old barrel factory was one of the most interesting concerns in Saginaw Valley. The factory was a three-story brick building, one hundred by one hundred and fifty feet in dimensions, and with the blacksmith shop, saw mill and salt block, extended three hundred and sixty feet along the bayou. About one hundred and fifty men were employed with labor saving machinery in the manufacture of axle grease boxes, Wilson's patent wash boards having crimped zinc facing, of which the output was three hundred and fifty dozen daily, step ladders, pails, wooden measures for grain, curtain poles and rollers, tobacco drums and cheese boxes. The barrel factory burned in 1882 and for several months the business was suspended.

In the following year the Company was reorganized under its present name by Ammi W. Wright, Charles H. Davis, Newell Barnard and Thomas Merrill, and the business continued on a larger scale than ever before. A new and complete factory of increased dimensions was erected on the site of the old and thoroughly equipped with modern machinery and power plant.

In 1892 Henry J. Gilbert and Arnold Boutell, both of whom had previously been connected with the Company for several years in subordinate capacities, were put in charge of its affairs, Mr. Gilbert as vice-president and general manager, and Mr. Boutell as secretary and treasurer. To their ability and business sagacity is largely due the marvelous strides made by the Company within the last twenty-five years, which have placed the Company at the head of the lines manufactured. Gradually the great variety of useful products made was cut down, and about fifteen years ago the production was reduced to wash boards and wood-split pulleys, to which it has since been confined.

For many years the average number of employees has been about four hundred, and the amount paid in wages has been about two hundred thou-



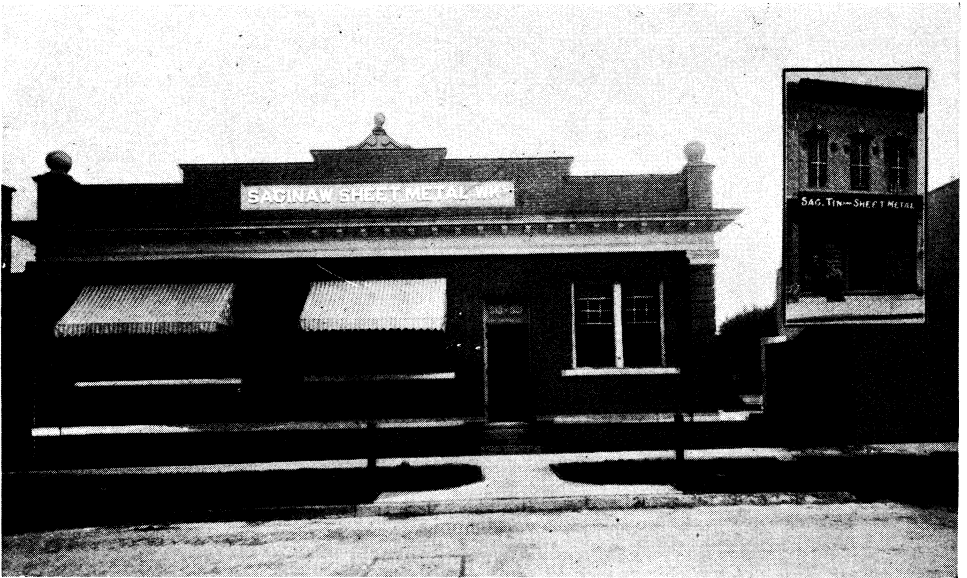


EXTENSIVE WORKS OF THE SAGINAW MANUFACTURING COMPANY

sand dollars yearly. The value of the annual production exceeds one million dollars, which places the Company among the leading industries of this city.

In the manufacture of wash boards this Company is the largest producer in the world, the average daily output of various sizes being one hundred and twenty-five thousand. The Gilbert Wood Split Pulleys are in almost universal use, the production being the second largest in this country. They are made in sizes from three inches diameter and two-inch face, in the solid wood type, to large drive pulleys twenty feet in diameter and four feet or more face and ranging in price from less than one dollar to nineteen hundred and twenty-eight dollars each. All pulleys are made from selected clear Michigan maple which, after air-seasoning for eighteen months or more is thoroughly kiln dried, dressed and cut into rim cants. In all there are more than eighty distinct operations in making a Gilbert Wood Split Pulley, and the output of six and eight-inch pulleys is three hundred per day.

The present officers of the Company are: Henry J. Gilbert, president and general manager; Harwood J. Gilbert, vice-president; Arnold Boutell, secretary and treasurer; Charles T. Gilbert, superintendent; Roger Boutell, assistant secretary.



FORMER SHOPS OF SAGINAW SHEET METAL WORKS  
ON TUCOLA STREET AND LAPEER AVENUE

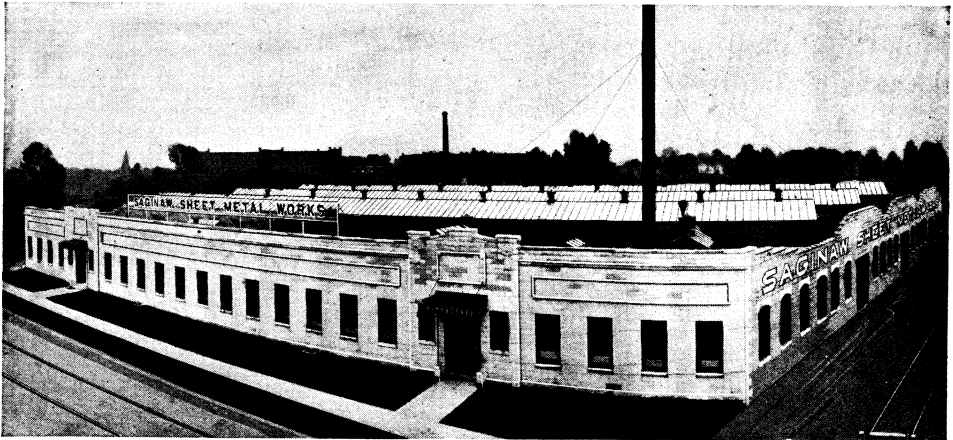
### Saginaw Sheet Metal Works

To what extent a small struggling business may be developed into a large and successful industry is clearly shown by the remarkable record of the Saginaw Sheet Metal Works. From a small beginning in a tin shop established in 1902 by A. C. Klopf and A. B. Lewless at the corner of South Washington Avenue and Atwater Street, this city, the business outgrew two other enlarged shops and increased in volume to such an extent that in 1917 it was occupying quarters in a specially built and well equipped plant on Genesee Avenue and the Belt Line crossing, which contained over forty thousand square feet of floor space.

The guiding spirits of this concern are Arthur J. Beese and Andrew B. Lewless. Arthur J. Beese first became interested in the infant industry in 1903 and during the Fall of that year the business was removed to 113

Lapeer Avenue. Later, during the same year, Mr. Beese and Mr. Lewless purchased Mr. Klopff's interest in the co-partnership. The business was operated as a co-partnership by the above persons until the year 1910, when it was incorporated. During its early existence as a co-partnership, it employed from three to five tinsmiths, doing a general tin shop business such as eaves-trough work, tin roofing, repair work and furnace work. Such strides were made in developing the business that in 1907 it was necessary to obtain larger quarters and they built a considerably enlarged brick factory building at 513 Tuscola Street.

In this new factory the scope of the business was broadened to include the manufacture of metal cornices, skylights, ventilators, windows, ornamentations, etc., and also to the engaging in tile, slate and metal roofing. In this building they employed from twenty to thirty skilled artisans, and their work at that time is notably exemplified by such buildings as the Cleveland Hippodrome, Cleveland, Ohio; the Auditorium and Manual Training School, Saginaw; the Masonic Temple, Bay City; the Buick factories, Flint, and many churches, libraries, etc. During this time they also did extensive work for

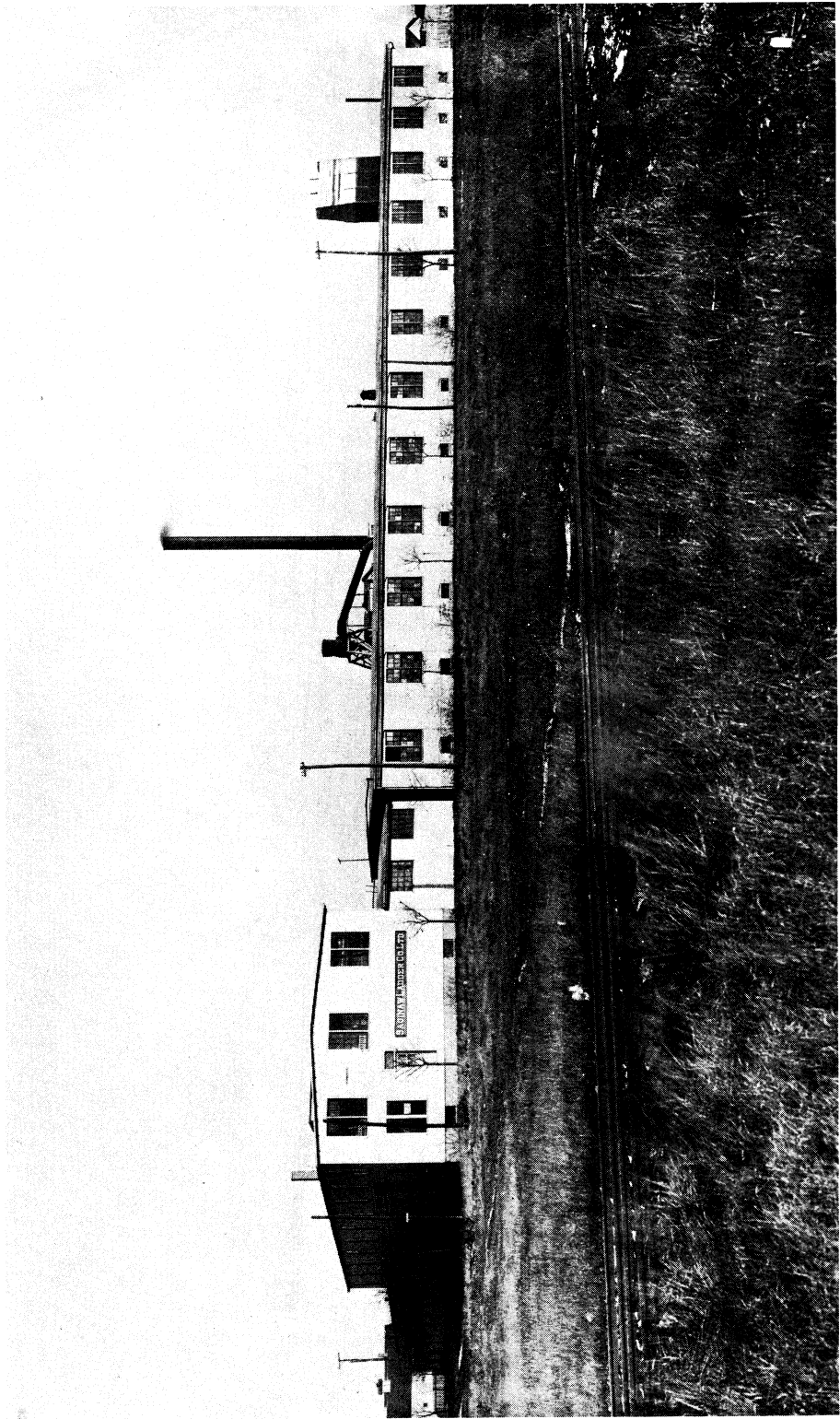


EFFICIENT PLANT OF THE SAGINAW SHEET METAL WORKS

the United States Government, mainly on post offices. In less than three years the business became so large that the factory on Tuscola Street was inadequate and larger quarters were necessary.

In 1910 it was decided to incorporate the business, to build a larger factory, and to engage in the making of hoods, fenders, and other sheet metal products for the automobile trade in addition to continuing in the already well established lines. The Company was incorporated for one hundred thousand dollars, and the following officers were chosen: A. J. Beese, president and general manager; A. B. Lewless, vice-president; F. W. Bremer, secretary and treasurer. There has been no change in the officers of the Company since that time. Their principal products now are automobile fenders and sheet metal stampings, although the construction work is still a very important part. This latter line is under the personal supervision of Mr. Lewless, who is also president (1917) of the Michigan Sheet Metal Contractors' Association.

Their present plant on Genesee Avenue is equipped with the latest approved and up-to-date machinery. In the sheet metal department are huge shears, stamping presses, electric welding machines and much special



PLANT OF THE SAGINAW LADDER COMPANY

machinery of their own design which has been developed at a great expense. In their enameling room are huge vats in which the fenders and other products are immersed, and large baking ovens which bake off the products at between four hundred and five hundred degrees Fahrenheit. They also have a modern forging shop equipped with power forging hammers, punches and other machinery, and a machine shop in which they make all their own tools and dies. The capacity of this efficient plant, worked at its maximum with about two hundred mechanics, is more than a half million dollars yearly. At the present time it is giving employment to a goodly number of well-paid mechanics whose average earnings are about one thousand dollars a year, and about one thousand five hundred tons of sheet steel are converted into products yearly.

The progress made by this Company is a monument to its founders, and a good example of what industry, integrity and perseverance, rightly directed in practical channels, will accomplish.

### Saginaw Ladder Company

The history of the Saginaw Ladder Company, which is one of Saginaw's prosperous institutions, is one of evolution or development of a practical idea. To make an article of household use and of large utility in trade, better than had ever before been attempted, with all the United States east of the Rocky Mountains as a market, was the sensible idea. A national demand exists for step and extension ladders of various kinds, and with the rough material close at hand and favorable labor conditions in this valley, it was good business to establish here an industry of this nature. As a result of this idea and the enterprise of several local business men, this Company was organized in 1903 by William Williamson, Carrie H. Fairman and W. F. Stevens.

The first factory for the manufacture of ladders was located on Mackinaw Street, in a building owned by Mr. Williamson, and here the foundation for a successful business was laid. The product consisted of ordinary forms of step and extension ladders which, because of the clear, straight lumber from which they were made and the care in assembling, found a ready sale. The line was gradually increased to include the now famous center-rail ladder, flat step extension ladder, windlass ladder, painters combination trestle and extension ladder, and swinging ladder scaffold. Later single and "Oregon" fruit step ladders, collapsible carpenters horses and other wooden specialties, were added to the already popular lines.

After several years of successful operation, in which the business gave great promise of permanency, the Company suffered a heavy loss by the burning of their manufacturing plant. In 1906 the Company was reorganized with Sidney L. Eastman and J. F. Boynton added to the list of incorporators and to the directorate. The factory was rebuilt and plans made for an extension of the business into every State east of the Rocky Mountains. The strength and comparative lightness of the ladders, together with the superior quality of materials and workmanship, gained for the Company many customers in remote sections of the country. But misfortune again attended the Company in the fire on the evening of March 16, 1914, which entirely destroyed the woodworking plant.

At this juncture the Company, instead of rebuilding on the site of the old, purchased the large and well equipped plant of the Saginaw Wheelbarrow Company, at the corner of Florence and Niagara Streets. By this arrangement they were able to resume business with little delay, and they added to their line the manufacture of wheelbarrows which previously had found a ready sale. The business was thus increased and now requires five traveling representatives to take care of the trade.

The present officers of the Company are: S. L. Eastman, president; J. F. Boynton, vice-president; C. H. Fairman, secretary; W. F. Stevens, treasurer and general manager.

William F. Stevens was born at Newboro, Ontario, in 1853, and came to Saginaw in 1876. For several years he engaged in the manufacture of salt and shingles at South Saginaw, with his brother the late George W. Stevens. Later he operated the Melbourne shingle mills, but in the eighteen-nineties became interested in getting out and shipping telephone poles, ties, etc., in which business he continued for many years. At length the camps, mills and timber were destroyed in a great fire, and the business was thereupon abandoned. Shortly after this unfortunate occurrence the Saginaw Ladder Company was organized with Mr. Stevens as general manager, in which position he has since remained.

### The Wolfarth Bakery

Baking is one of the oldest of earth's arts, its great antiquity being only equalled by the art of tanning skins and the burning of pottery. Like most arts of ancient origin its history is very obscure, and is based entirely on tradition. The earliest methods of which there is any knowledge consisted of soaking the grains until they had become swollen, then subjecting them to pressure, afterwards drying them into cakes by natural or artificial heat. This method was subsequently improved by crushing the grain before moistening. It was a long time before man learned how to make risen or leavened bread, the Egyptians probably being the first people to use leaven, which was of the simplest kind.

Progress in the art of baking has been so notable and so beneficial to the human race, that the mind fails to grasp its full significance. In no other industry has science and intelligent application made greater strides in the direction of human advantage during recent years than in the art of baking bread. Compared with the loaf of our grandfathers' modern baker's bread is a positive delight. The old-fashioned spongy loaf with its big holes, a tasteless indigestible mass, has been displaced by a food substance which in color, texture, flavor and nutritious qualities has never been equalled since man ceased to subsist on roots and herbs.

The philosophy of baking, it seems, is understood by but few housewives. Most women follow the same process as was employed by their mothers, with no scientific knowledge of the causes which produce effects. Of the reciprocal relations of the various ingredients that compose good bread they know little, and success or failure in baking is generally ascribed to good or bad luck.

It is entirely different, however, with the Wolfarth bakers. With the aid of chemistry and scientific skill, they have gone to the bottom of things; they have eliminated many useless practices and adopted improved methods so that the whole process is carried on with a degree of ability that practically admits of no error.

Almost everyone knows how bread is made in the home, but few know anything concerning the best practice of baking today as exemplified in modern bakeries, such as the Wolfarth establishment. The story of this baker's loaf of bread begins in the Spring of 1867, when John G. Wolfarth opened a small bake shop in East Saginaw, then a struggling, backwoods lumber town. The bakery was located in South Franklin Street, on the site of the present Gately building, a fact which will be recalled by pioneers still living. In the Spring floods of 1870 this section of the town was inundated, and that year Mr. Wolfarth moved his shop to the present location on Genesee Avenue, which was then on the outskirts of the town. He was a prac-



**JOHN G. WOLFARTH**  
Founder of the Wolfarth Bakery

tical baker and made such excellent bread and other bake goods that his modest establishment became the Mecca of tired housewives, who were thus able to eliminate baking from their household duties. So successful was this well conducted bakery that now, after fifty years of continuous operation, the name of WOLFARTH is synonymous of all that is pure, wholesome and appetizing in bread and bake goods.

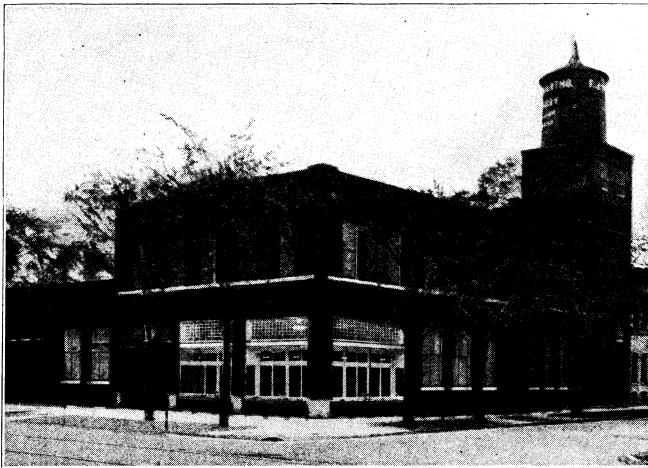
In 1893, Frank J. Wolfarth, only son of the pioneer baker, who had been "brought up" from boyhood in the bake shop, assumed charge of the business thus relieving his father of large responsibilities which the growing trade entailed. From that time the business made greater strides than ever before, necessitating modern machinery, steam ovens and improved facilities for making baker's products. In a few years the capacity of the bakery was increased to ten thousand loaves a day, giving employment to twenty-five skilled bakers and other workmen; and shipments of bread were made to about one hundred towns and villages in Saginaw Valley. The well known brands were "Butternut," "Home Made," and "Jersey Cream," which were distinctive of the best in the baker's art. By 1911 the demand for Wolfarth Bakery products so far exceeded the capacity of the bake shop that an entirely new plant was begun on the site of the old, at Genesee Avenue and Walnut Street.

The new plant is a two-story brick building eighty-six by two hundred feet in size, and extends from Genesee to Hoyt Avenue. It is a model structure for cleanliness and light, the sanitary measures for the making of absolutely pure bake products being perfect. The interior is finished throughout

in white tile and enamel, and every facility is provided for clean, pure air in every room in the building. The retail department on the ground floor front is largely of plate glass with large windows separating it from the bakery, making it possible for customers to see the modern sanitary method of mixing dough in the big mixers, in which no hand touches the dough or any of the ingredients. Electricity is used for both power and light throughout the building. The latest type machinery was made by the home institution, the Werner & Pfleiderer Company. Special brands of bread made are the famous "Tip-Top," "Jersey Cream," "Buster Brown," and "Mother's," all well known in thousands of Saginaw homes and in a wide territory round about.

### The Sanitary Making of "Tip-Top" Bread

The first operation in making "Tip-Top" and other Wolfarth bread and bake products is the mechanical sifting of the flour. A mammoth scientific flour sifter, holding several barrels of flour, sifts and resifts, bolts and rebolts



**THE WOLFARTH BAKERY**

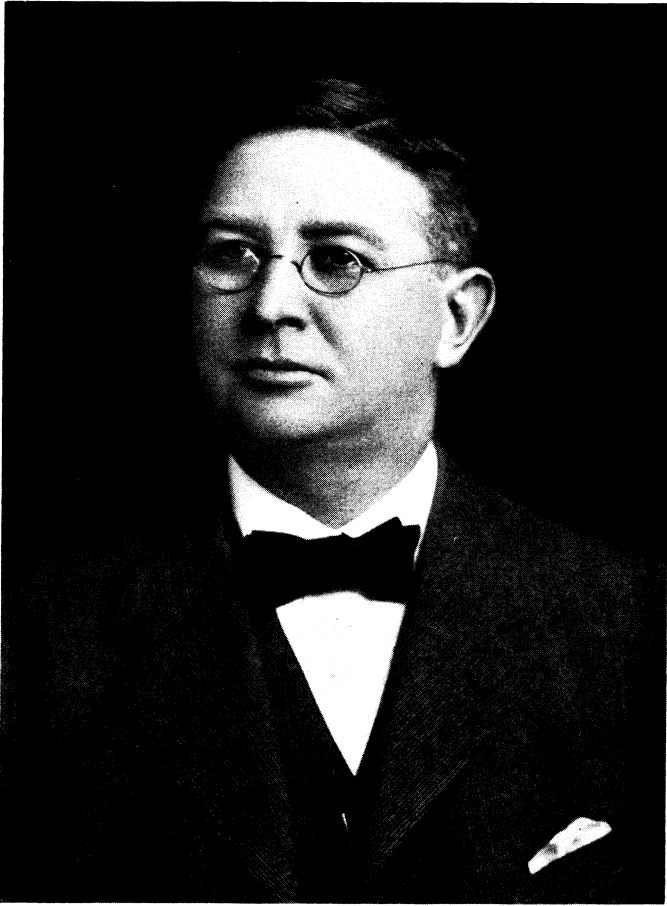
Home of "Tip Top," "Buster Brown," "Mothers" Bread, etc

the substance through the finest and closest screens made. The meshes of steel, as fine as silk and meshes of silk as strong as steel, sift the flour so that only pure "Tip-Top" bread flour remains.

In the mixing room great batches of flour, milk, sugar and yeast, of exact proportions automatically weighed by a delicate machine, are thoroughly mixed into dough in the big mixers, the giant arms of which know no weariness as did our mothers' arms of old, and whose backs ached by the exertion. Round and round go the giant arms steadily kneading the dough, mixing, combining and mingling the ingredients over and over again until the substance becomes thicker, smoother and yet still smoother.

All the time the watchful eye of the white uniformed baker is upon it, now adjusting, now slowing it down, until at length he pulls a lever, the giant arms stop revolving, and the mass of dough falls into a waiting steel trough, which is clean and polished like a mirror. The dough is then wheeled into another room where it is allowed to "rise." All the air is purified before entering. After rising the dough is shaped and rounded into loaves in moulding machines and proving boxes.



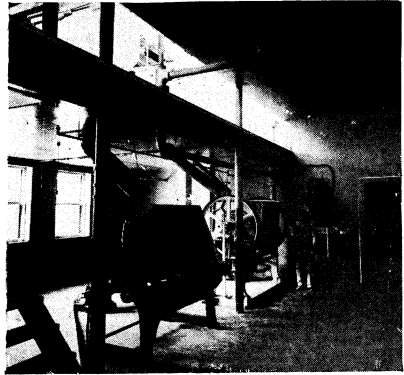


**FRANK J. WOLFARTH**

The Guiding Spirit of Saginaw's Sanitary Bakery



BATCHES OF DOUGH



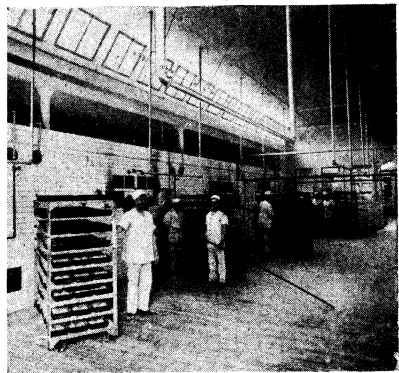
MIXING DOUGH

A complete record is kept of each batch so that the office can tell the time each one began any day in the year; and the amount of each ingredient which enters into it is set down with every mixing. In this way the bakers are checked in order to prevent slackness or carelessness.

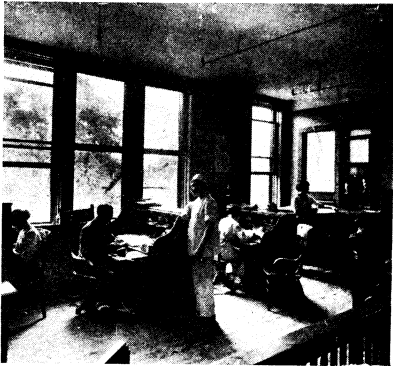
Most interesting, perhaps, are the great white ovens where the bread is baked, and by which, due to their construction, fumes and gases from the fire are prevented from getting to their baking contents. Just pure, clean, dry heat of 550 degrees Fahrenheit, which never varies, accomplishes this operation. When thoroughly baked the loaves are drawn piping hot, and giving out a rich buttery flavor. They are then placed upon clean, sanitary steel racks and run into the cooling room. The cooling operation is deemed necessary because hot bread is a cause of indigestion, and "Tip-Top" bread must be just right. The bread is then wrapped in a wonderful machine which performs the operation with surprising precision and rapidity. Throughout the various operations neither the ingredients, the dough, the moulded loaves or the bread itself has been touched by human hands in this beautiful, modern sanitary bakery. The equipment includes six steam ovens, each having a capacity of five thousand loaves of bread in ten hours, or thirty thousand loaves in all. About fifty persons are employed in the various departments of the Wolfarth Bakery. The annual output is valued at two hundred and fifty thousand dollars.



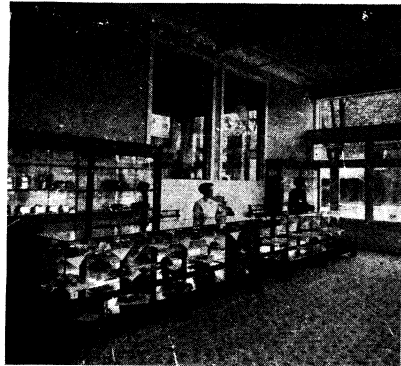
MIXING AND MOLDING



FRESH BREAD FROM OVENS



IN THE OFFICE



RETAIL SALES DEPARTMENT

### American Cash Register Company

Although the cash register as we see it today, with its wonderful recording mechanism and features of great utility, is comparatively a modern invention its origin antedates that of some other useful inventions now considered old. The development of this invention, from a position of doubtful utility to one of almost universal use in the world of business, has been slow and attended with many difficulties. From a narrow and restricted field of usefulness twenty years ago it has evolved into a necessary accessory to modern business systems, and is indispensable to the proper recording of all cash transactions, large or small.

In this evolution the American Cash Register was a most prominent factor, inasmuch as it was the original machine of its kind, the old Hallwood register; and today it is one of only two cash registers of importance manufactured in the whole world. Its history is a romantic story of human endeavor beset by the most unholy trade competition, intrigue, and unscrupulous practices on the part of the competing company. Only recently have the trade difficulties, which encompassed the Company for more than twenty years, been overcome and the future of the parent cash register company placed upon a solid and enduring basis.

The original cash register, the one now manufactured by the American Cash Register Company, of this city, was the invention of H. S. Hallwood, the patentee, who for several years made a small number of registers in a machine shop at Columbus, Ohio. Later he sold the manufacturing business and major patent rights to a company of Columbus capitalists, known as the American Cash Register Company, which made practically all the parts for the machine and assembled them in its own plant.

In 1912 this company sold all its rights, title and interest in the cash register to a new corporation—The American Cash Register Manufacturing Company, of Columbus, Ohio, and with increased capitalization and renewed energy in manufacturing the prospects were very bright for a time. But the following Spring the great floods which devastated a large part of Ohio, destroyed the cash register factory and much of its valuable equipment, entailing a heavy loss to the company already burdened with costly litigation to defend its patent rights from infringement. After this unfortunate event the company sought a new location for its plant, one which would be safe from any danger of flood.



SALESMEN OF AMERICAN CASH REGISTER COMPANY IN CONVENTION,  
SEPTEMBER, 1916

At this juncture F. M. Caldwell, industrial agent for the Michigan Railway Company, informed the officials of the Saginaw Board of Trade and the Merchants and Manufacturers Association of the contemplated change of location of the cash register plant. The matter was taken under advisement and inducements made to the register company to locate here. The local trade associations furnished a factory site on South Jefferson Avenue, and loaned the company thirty-five thousand dollars for the erection of a new modern factory building. Construction work on the one-story brick structure was begun in August, 1913, and in December the machinery and other equipment was placed in position and made ready for operation. At this time the company was managed by C. G. Heine, who brought with him from the Ohio city a considerable number of skilled mechanics and their families. Manufacturing of cash registers was begun under very favorable conditions, and the future of the American Cash Register seemed very bright.

Upon the declaration of war by the European nations, in August, 1914, a cloud passed over the bright prospects of the company. Sixty per cent. of the business in cash registers was foreign trade with the belligerent nations, and this was at once cut off or very heavily curtailed. As a result of this condition and the general unsettled state of commerce and trade in this country during the first months of the war, the register company was soon in dire straits and the factory was closed down.

At this critical point in the affairs of this promising industry, aid was sought from the local trade associations, and a committee composed of Ralph C. Morley, Arthur W. Seely and Hiram A. Savage was appointed by the Board of Trade, to investigate the situation and to work out a plan for refinancing the company, furnishing sufficient capital to carry on extended operations, and establish a large domestic trade. Under recommendation of this committee, stock to the amount of thirty-five thousand dollars was taken over by representative business men, and the company again put on its feet.

In the reorganization which followed this action of our enterprising citizens, the name was changed to The American Cash Register Company,

and Hiram A. Savage was chosen president and general manager, and William Seyffardt secretary and treasurer. The board of directors is composed of Messrs. Hiram A. Savage, Wm. Seyffardt, Joseph Seemann, M. W. Tanner, Christian F. Bach, John F. O'Keefe, Otto F. Dittmar, Ben. G. Appleby and John Cimmerer.

The American Cash Register is known in almost every civilized country on the globe, and is especially well received in Cuba, South America and Australia. Besides a constantly growing domestic trade a large business is in prospect for the company upon the termination of the European war, as all belligerent nations will be in need of new and improved facilities for regaining their share of the world's business. The world market has yet only been touched by cash registers and a great field in America is still undeveloped. When it is considered that only two or possibly three concerns are manufacturing cash registers in the whole world, the future of this corporation seems very bright.

The capacity of the present efficient plant, under conditions of maximum production, is about six hundred machines a month valued at about one hundred thousand dollars. To make this number of machines would require nearly three hundred skilled mechanics and other workmen, who would receive about twenty thousand dollars a month in wages. Under the manufacturing schedule of December, 1916, the production was about two hundred and seventy-five machines, worth forty thousand dollars, and giving employment to one hundred and thirty mechanics, who were paid about eight thousand dollars in wages monthly. In addition to this factory force there are sixty agents and salesmen, to whom is distributed a large sum in commissions.

In the rehabilitation of this important industry, the placing of its affairs on a substantial basis such as determining the exact cost of production and



ASSEMBLING "AMERICAN" CASH REGISTERS

regulating its finances, and opening up a large domestic market for its product, the managing directors of the company deserve great credit. To Hiram A. Savage and his sound business policy are due the very satisfactory results now obtained, and William Seyffardt has proved a most reliable and efficient executive, during a period in the affairs of the company when unusual ability and business capacity was demanded. It is the opinion of astute business men who fully understand the situation that within five years the American Cash Register Company will be the largest manufacturing establishment in Saginaw, giving employment to thousands of skilled mechanics, and adding greatly to the city's prosperity.

### Wickes Brothers

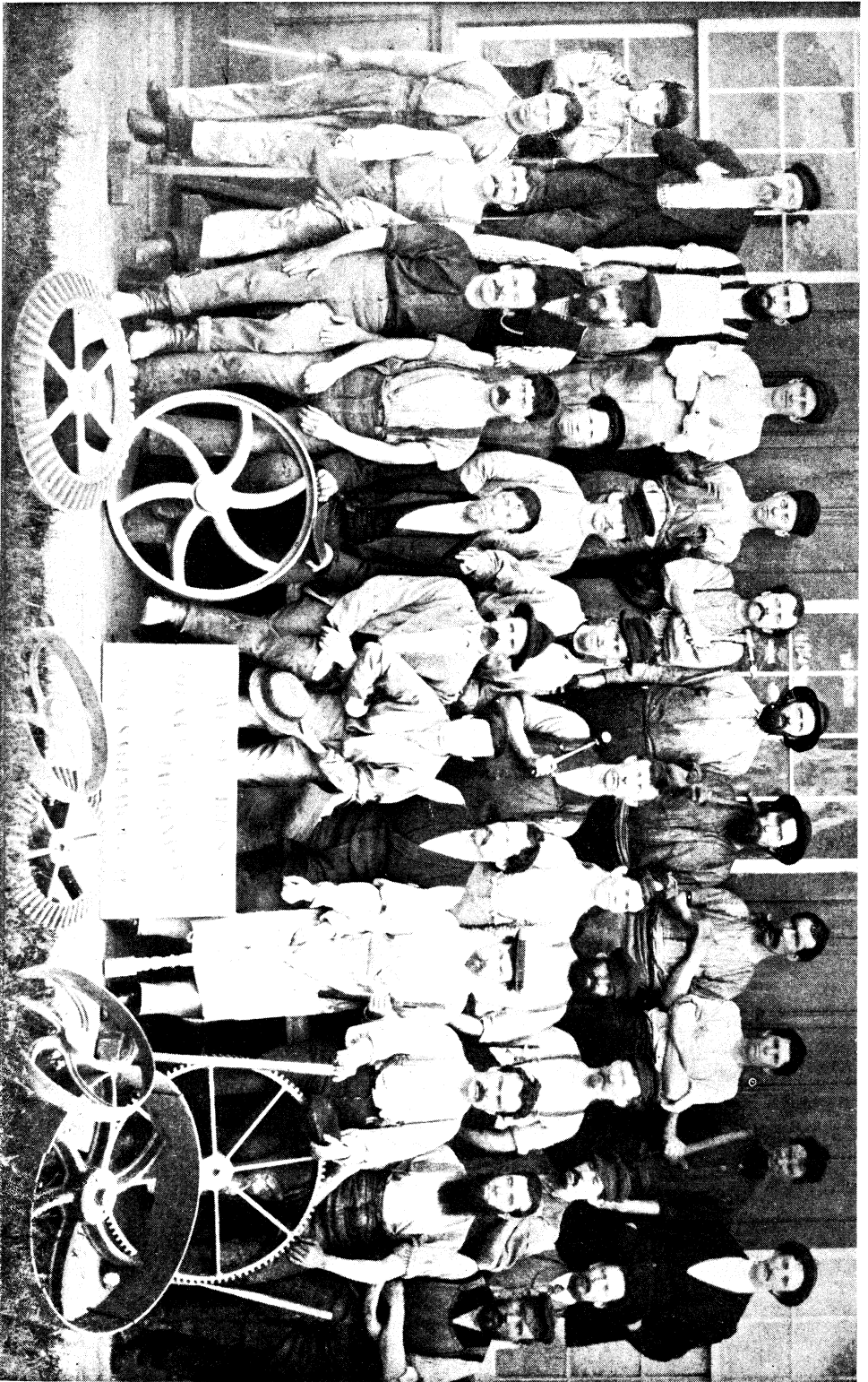
Comparatively few of Saginaw's leading industries, though tracing their origin to an early date in local history, have had so successful a career, or have contributed so much to the city's prosperity, as Wickes Brothers. This old and substantial concern was established at Flint in 1855 by H. W. Wood, in association with Henry D. and Edward N. Wickes, young men who had been born and reared in Yates County, New York. The Genesee Iron Works, as the business was then known, comprised a general foundry and machine shop, where plow shares and odd castings, rough and finished, were made, and repair work of all kinds required by a frontier settlement was done. From this small beginning, made more than sixty years ago, has developed an extensive and growing business, with iron and steel products which reach every section of this country, and are sold in foreign lands.

During the early years, before the era of railroads or modern transportation facilities, the pig iron used in the foundry was brought to Saginaw by vessel, and hauled over the plank road to Flint, to be made into castings. Much of this product was used in the building of saw mills and shingle mills in the Saginaws, which were then attracting attention for activity and enterprise in manufacture of lumber and forest products. To the practical minds of the Wickes brothers this haulage back and forth across the country was an unnecessary waste, and in 1860 they removed the iron works to East Saginaw.

Here they began to realize some of the great opportunities offered in their business. A plot of ground along the river, the site of a part of the present plant, was cleared of timber and a foundry and machine shop erected; and the concern began making saw mill and salt block machinery, including engines and general repair work. As river navigation increased rapidly much attention was given to repairing steamboat engines and machinery. In 1864 the brothers purchased the interest of H. W. Wood, and the firm became Wickes Brothers by which the business is known today.

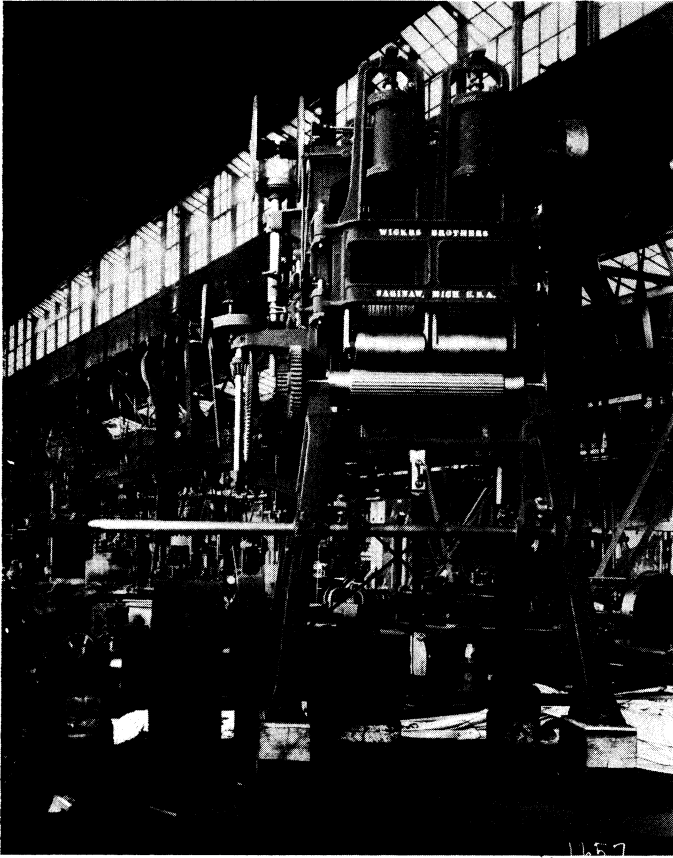
Both brothers were gifted with fine mechanical minds, coupled with inventive genius, and because of these qualities and business integrity of the highest order, their names are indissolubly linked with the lumber industry. Soon after coming here the defects and imperfections of the existing type of gang saws used in the saw mills along the river, were brought to their attention, and their mechanical ingenuity was at once turned to the improvement of such machinery. To their ability and efforts is undoubtedly due the great success of the Wickes gangs, which for fifty years have been a standard sawing machine wherever timber and logs are made into lumber.

The principal improvement to the gang saw was a device, invented by the Wickes brothers, which, by giving an oscillating motion to the saw frame, caused all the teeth of the saws to cut smoothly and evenly. This overcame the difficulty arising from only the lower teeth of the saws doing all the cutting, as the machines were heretofore operated. The first gang of the



OLD EMPLOYEES OF WICKES BROTHERS IN FRONT OF SHOP, ABOUT 1873

Left to right—Top row: J. Ayres, John Barlow, unidentified, Morris Bonham, Moses Banderick, S. A. Foster, John McChalen, unidentified (2)  
 Michael Rendahn, F. J. McCormick, Middle row: Harry T. Wickes, H. E. Good, Mife O'Donnell, unidentified, John Q. Anderson, Fred Handmacher,  
 F. D. Payroll, Hugh McCourt, John McQuibban, Tom Pine, unidentified, T. Over row: John Duggan, W. L. Richardson, unidentified, Sam Medler, A. B.  
 Leves, William Johnson, Michael W. Matigan, A. O. Woodruff, unidentified, George Goshing, Thomas Arnold, H. Reichenbacher.



ERECTING A WICKES GANG SAW

new type was erected in the mill of Hackley and Humes, of Muskegon, in 1868. Other improvements followed in quick succession, permitting increased speed of the saws, and the use of saws of thinner gauge, whereby the kerf was reduced and the cutting capacity increased four fold, besides making cleaner and better lumber with much less waste. Various types of gangs, all embracing the same principle, to meet every requirement of the lumber industry, were developed, and the business became the largest of its kind in the United States. Mammoth gangs of wonderful capacity are still made to order by Wickes Brothers for the demands of extensive lumbering operations in the Southern States and on the Pacific Coast.

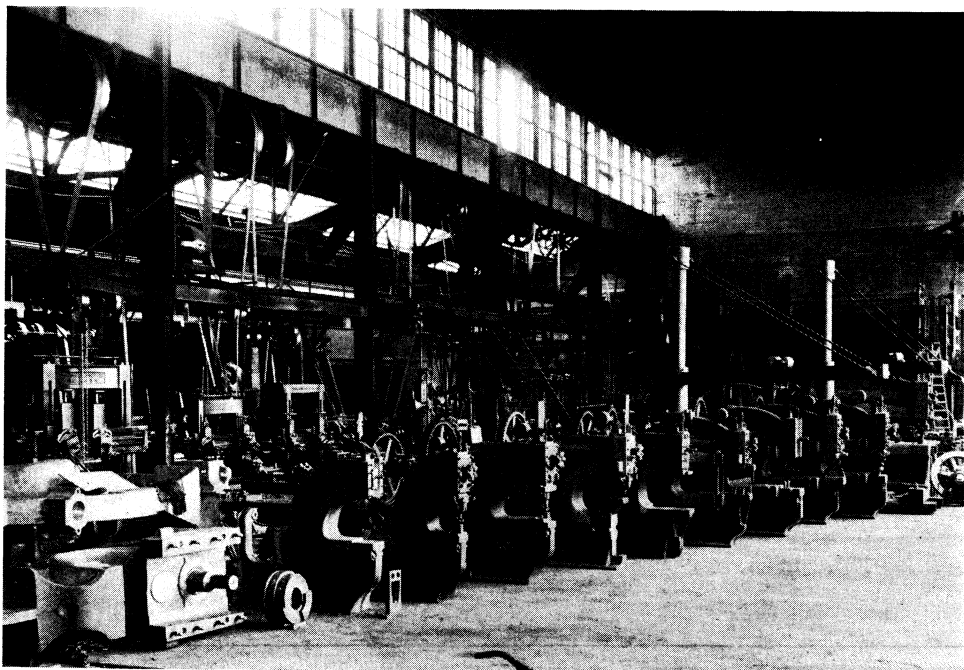
Until 1890 the business was conducted as a partnership, but in that year it was incorporated with a capital of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Henry D. Wickes was president, Edward N. Wickes was vice-president, Harry T. Wickes, secretary and treasurer, and William J. Wickes, general manager in charge of manufacturing and sales. The elder Wickes brothers, the founders of the business, died in 1901, and shortly after the following officers were elected: Harry T. Wickes, president and treasurer; William J. Wickes, vice-president and general manager; and E. C. Fisher, secretary. In November, 1905, the capital was increased to one million dollars. The present board of directors is composed of Harry T. Wickes, president; William J. Wickes, vice-president; Frank H. Payne, secretary and treasurer; and Robert M. Randall.



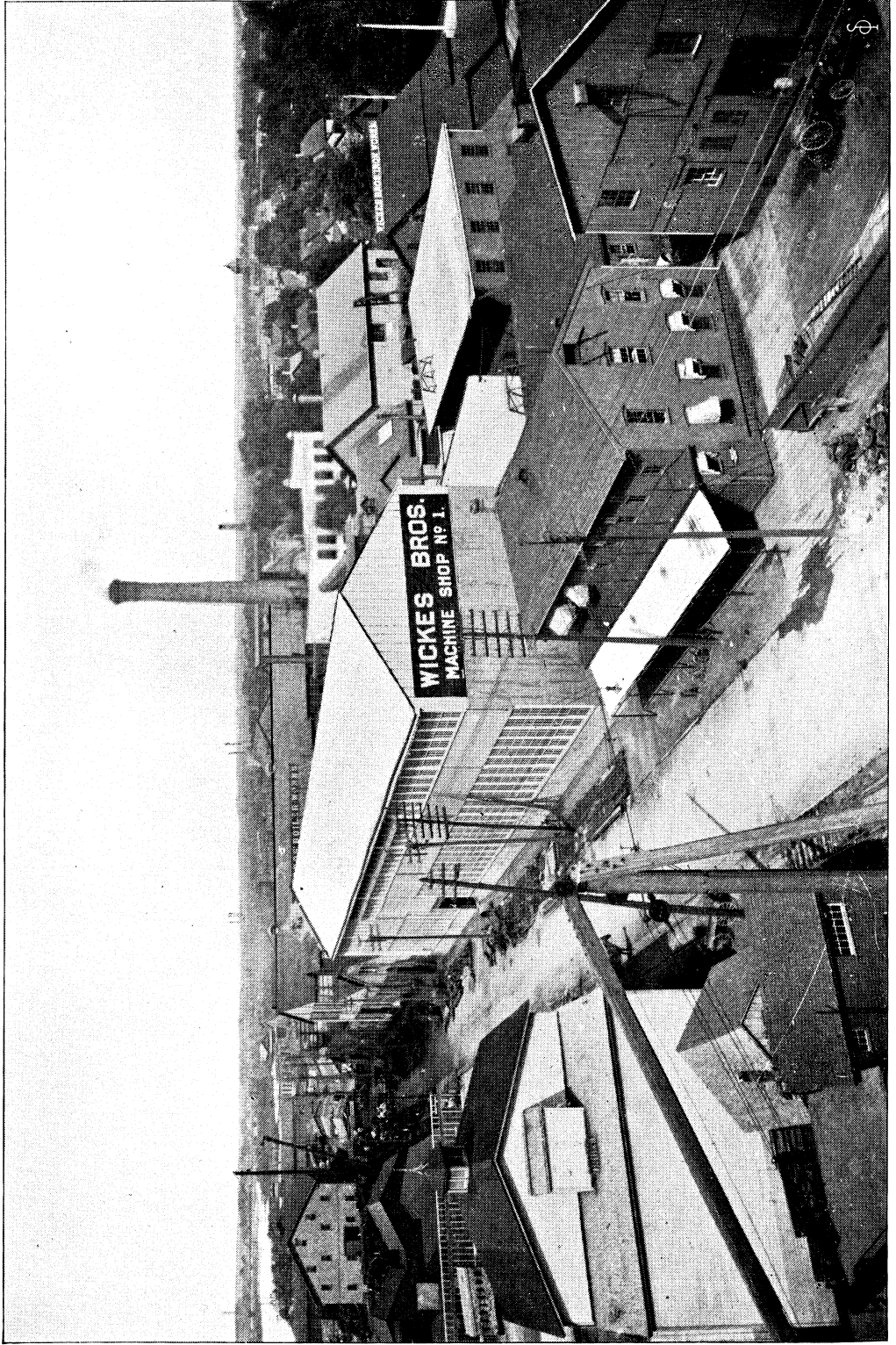
The third generation, grandsons of the founders of the business, namely, Harvey Randall Wickes, son of Harry T. Wickes, and Edward B. Wickes, son of William J. Wickes, have for several years been actively identified with the corporation. Starting in the shops in the daily tasks of the mechanics and workmen, these energetic young men have acquired a thorough understanding of the business, and won for themselves positions of responsibility and trust.

In the most active period of lumbering on the Saginaw River, the firm of Wickes Brothers filled contracts for complete mill installations, including boilers. They were having some trouble with the boilers riveted by hand, which local boiler shops made for them on sub-contract, and the difficulties led to their adding a first-class boiler shop to their large plant. They were then able to compete with any and all makers, and soon after began making Scotch marine boilers for F. W. Wheeler & Company, of Bay City, the Chicago Shipbuilding Company, and Alexander McDougall for some of his whaleback steamers. Afterward, when this part of their boiler business interfered with more profitable work, it was discontinued. The firm had meanwhile developed a high type of vertical water-tube boiler, and under the able management of E. C. Fisher built up a large business. In December, 1907, a new corporation, the Wickes Boiler Company, was formed for the purpose of taking over the boiler department, and since that date has carried on an extensive business.

Upon the decline of the lumber business in Michigan in the early nineties, the corporation added a department of used mill machinery. They purchased saw mills in process of liquidation, dismantled the mills, rebuilt the usable machinery and resold it to the trade throughout the country. This part of the business was extended in 1893 by the purchase of some of the fine machinery at the Columbian Exposition at Chicago, which was then being dismantled. The business stretched into Wisconsin and far into Minnesota,



PUNCH ERECTION FLOOR



THE MODERN PLANT OF WICKES BROTHERS

and for a number of years was a large and profitable department. Owing to the depletion of lumbering operations in the Northwest, this business was finally ended.

Meanwhile, the enterprise and ingenuity of the present Wickes brothers, who inherited the mechanical ability of their father, developed new lines of manufacture, and in fifteen years the corporation has acquired an even higher position in the machinery world. They began the manufacture of general machinery, shipbuilding and boiler shop tools, such as plate and angle bending rolls, plate straightening rolls, flanging clamps, punches and shears, and extended the lines to include coping machines, stake riveters, radial wall drills, boiler head facing machines, plate planers, hydraulic flanging presses, pit lathes, etc. Today they produce a full line of boiler shop and structural steel-working machinery, which has been in specially active demand since the beginning of the war.

The Wickes heavy and medium duty bending rolls, of the pyramid type, were designed and first built in their own boiler shop in 1888. They were made in capacity to bend five-eighths inch by twelve-foot plates; and the upper roll bearing was in knock-down housing for easy removal of full circles. They are equipped to be driven by either belt, steam engine or electric motor. In angle bending rolls all three rolls are gear-driven, and will bend T bars and flat and square bars, or Z bars, T rails, round bars, pipe, channels, I-beams and many other structural shapes by the addition of special collars, with capacities from three by three by one-half inch to six by three-quarter inch.

The Wickes Mangle, or plate straightener, is a tool built for the United States Government. It is very largely a special machine and the corporation is prepared to build this tool in a wide variety of combinations, with any number and arrangement of rolls desired for any required duty.



GROUP OF WORKMEN IN WICKES BROTHERS IRON WORKS, 1914

In the building of vertical punching and shearing machines, as universally used in shipbuilding plants, boiler shops and structural steel works, Wickes Brothers are especially strong, these tools being recognized all over the country as standard of their kind. It is believed that the corporation has a more thorough, practical knowledge of the requirements concerning bending rolls, punches and shears than any other builder in this country.

This contention is substantiated by the special types of shears developed, such as the Wickes Alligator Shear, with length of shear blades from twelve to eighteen inches, the Wickes Plate Splitting Shear, using long blades to preserve as nearly as possible the flat condition of the plate; and the Wickes Sprue Cutter, which is used to clip sprues from crucible steel castings, and from brass and other soft metal castings. The Wickes Radial Wall Drill, made for rigid attachment to column or wall, or with bracket for vertical adjustment, is also a useful tool found in all well-equipped shops and iron and steel works.

A more recent addition to their machinery output is a line of heavy duty engine lathes, the building of which was begun in July, 1915. This line consists of a thirty-two inch three-step cone, double back geared lathe, built from nine feet six inches up advancing to two feet lengths; a twenty-six inch three-step cone lathe, and a seventeen inch three-step cone heavy duty rapid production lathe, having a swing over the bed of eighteen and one-quarter inches. Present plans of the corporation contemplate the building of still larger sizes of lathes to meet increasing demands of the trade.

All the heavy iron castings and the brass and other metal castings for all the machinery lines, are made in the well equipped and efficient foundry, which since the beginning of the business has been an important part of the works.

With the growth of the plate glass business the corporation has become interested in the building of glass making machinery of improved types, and this is now a promising addition to the large lines manufactured.

A unique feature and side line of possibilities is the Wickes Continuous Electric Blue Printing Machine, which was developed and perfected to meet their own large and exacting needs. Its principal features are: economy of operation, noiselessness, perfect lighting, and automatic devices by which an unskilled office boy can operate it successfully.

With all these important lines of manufacture requiring skill and efficiency of the working force, which numbers some three hundred mechanics and workmen, Wickes Brothers corporation ranks among the most important industrial institutions of Saginaw Valley.

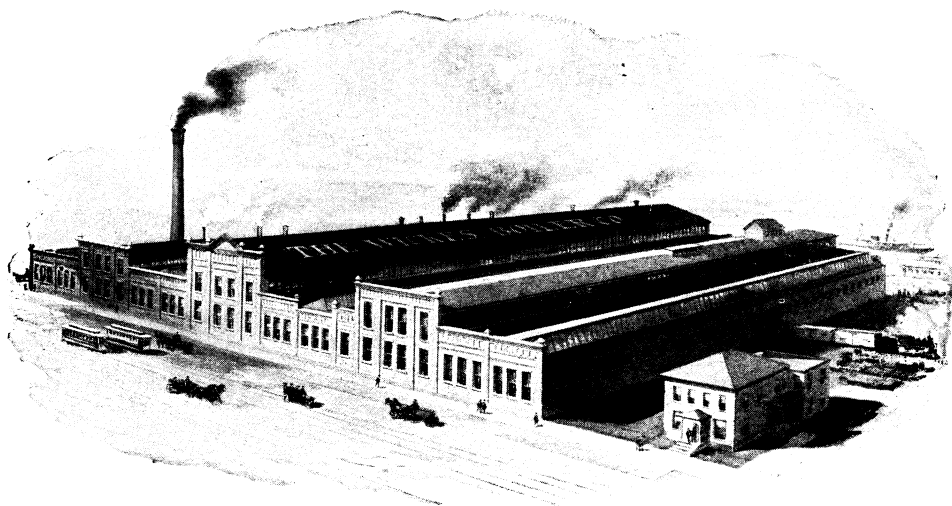
### **The Wickes Boiler Company**

Another of Saginaw's oldest and most successful industries is The Wickes Boiler Company, which, with its parent concern, Wickes Brothers, and still earlier, H. W. Wood & Company, was established in July, 1860, upon the east banks of the Saginaw river where today stands the busy manufacturing plant of Wickes Brothers and The Wickes Boiler Company.

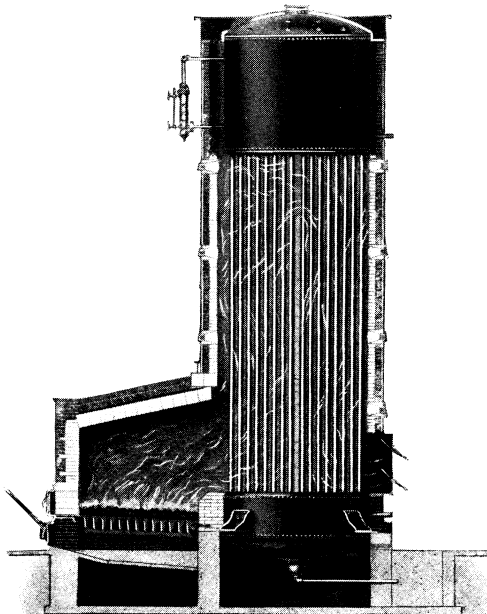
The Wickes Boiler Company was organized and incorporated in December, 1907, taking over the rapidly growing boiler business of Wickes Brothers. This company was incorporated under the laws of the State of Michigan and commenced its active business January 1, 1908.

The Wickes Boiler Company distributes its boilers to every State in the Union, as well as to foreign countries.

The present manufacturing plant covers under one roof more than a city square. It fronts on Washington Avenue and is bounded by Carlisle Street,



PRESENT PLANT OF WICKES BOILER COMPANY



THE WICKES WATER TUBE BOILER

Astor and Water Streets. The last three named streets have been closed and the building now occupies a portion of these original streets.

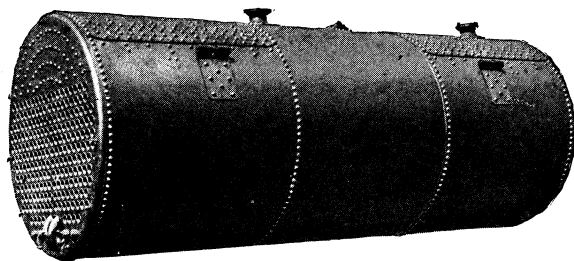
The shop, for convenience in handling work, is divided into two central main aisles two hundred and forty feet by fifty-two feet and forty-seven feet wide respectively. These bays are equipped with two trolley electric traveling cranes having a capacity of thirty-five tons.

The fitting up and assembling of the boilers is carried on in these main aisles, while the forging and machine work is done in five side bays approximately two hundred and forty feet by thirty-five feet wide each. The bays are equipped with every possible tool pertaining to excellence in boiler making, as well as being equipped with traveling and jib cranes for hastening the progress of the work.

The office is located on the corner of Carroll and Water Streets, and the yards extend to Potter Street, bounded by Washington Avenue and Water Streets.

This company manufactures the Wickes Vertical Water Tube Steam Boiler (illustrated on the preceding page) as its specialty.

They also manufacture a horizontal return tubular boiler of the very highest grade material and workmanship, specializing in the larger sizes, as illustrated below.



TYPE OF FIRE TUBE BOILER

### A. F. Bartlett & Company

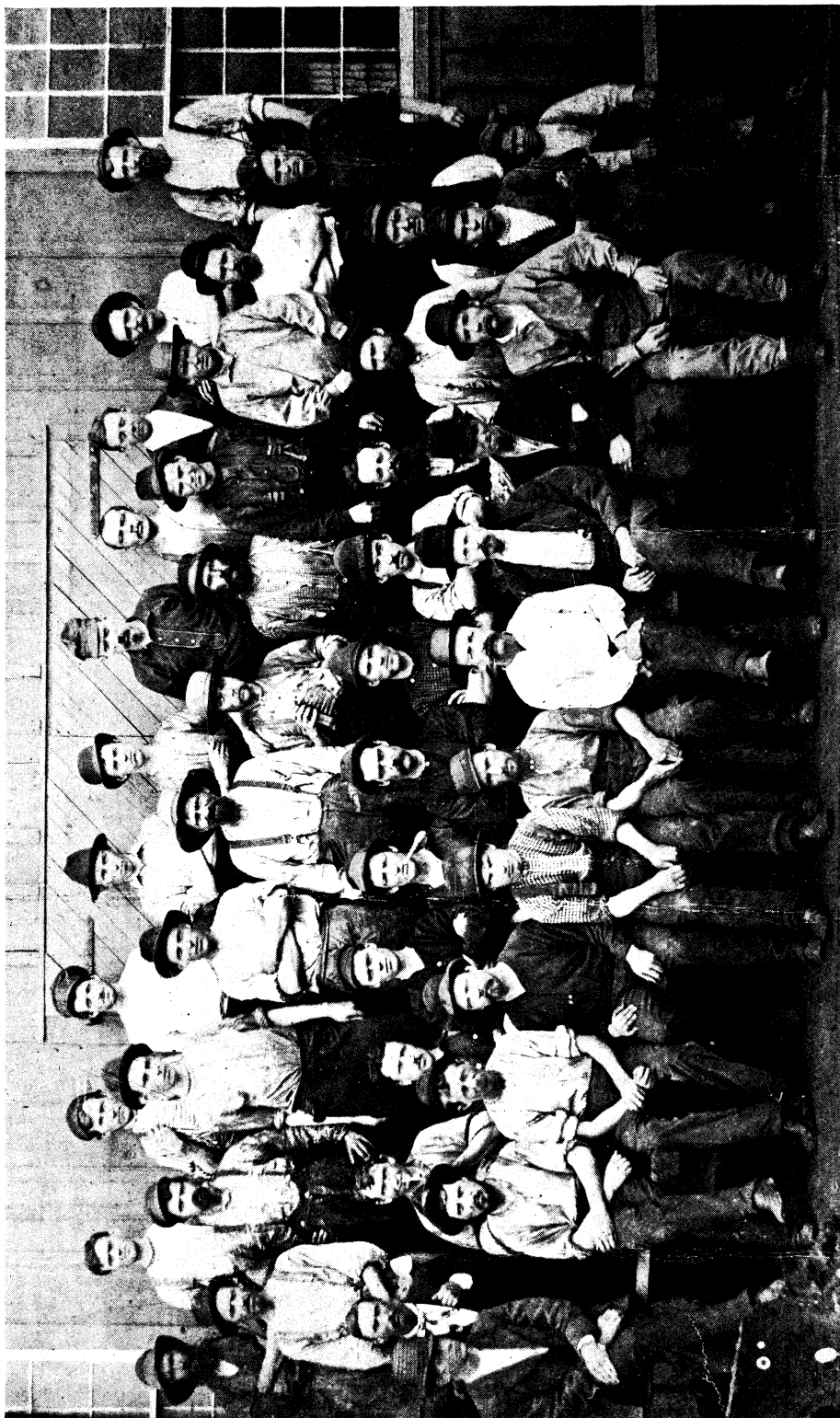
The oldest machinery house in Saginaw Valley is the A. F. Bartlett & Company, which traces its beginning to a small machine shop established in 1854 by Warner & Eastman. At that time East Saginaw was only a struggling lumber town of less than three thousand inhabitants, but the vast forests of Michigan were being penetrated by the saw-men and axman, and the river was becoming dotted with rafts of logs to supply the numerous saw and shingle mills along its banks.

A few years after the business was purchased by A. F. Bartlett, a practical machinist and mechanical engineer, who soon after became associated with Mr. Morris, the firm name being Bartlett & Morris. Later Henry Spindler was identified with the business under the name of Bartlett & Spindler, and it became known as the Pioneer Iron Works. In the sixties the firm manufactured steam engines, gang, circular and mulay saws and mill machinery of approved types, and tools and fixtures for salt blocks, steamboats and manufactories in general. All kinds of iron and brass castings were made to order, and wrought iron forging, jobbing and repairing was done in the best manner of the time. The firm was agent for Judson's celebrated patent governors and patent graduating governor valves. The works were then located at the corner of Water and Emerson Streets.

Upon the death of Mr. Bartlett, which occurred in 1879, Mrs. Bartlett purchased the interest of Mr. Spindler, and continued the business under the



THE PIONEER IRON WORKS OF A. F. BARTLETT & COMPANY



GROUP OF MECHANICS AND MOULDERS AT THE BARTLETT PLANT, 1879

Left to right—Top row, Henry Steel, Mike Nivenis, John Stillwell, James Perkins, John Murray, John Erd, Mike Riley, Paul Lang, Fred Beam, Charles Keyser, H. G. Wirtz. Second row, Hamilton Bogardus, Henry Mendell, John Nelson, John L. Jackson, John Warnamundy, Mike Spindler, Joe Loucia, Louie Doe, John Summers, August Arndt, William Twatts. Third row, Thomas Steel, unidentified, Joe Koehler, Mike Tobin, Harry Barquaste, William Kingsbury, Alex. G. Finlay, Andrew Murray, unidentified (2), Joseph Summers, George Perkins, Thomas McGowan, unidentified, Robert Morrison, unidentified, Richard Green, Owen Cunningham, John Findlater, John Hinkle, Abner Cresswell, unidentified, the "Kid."

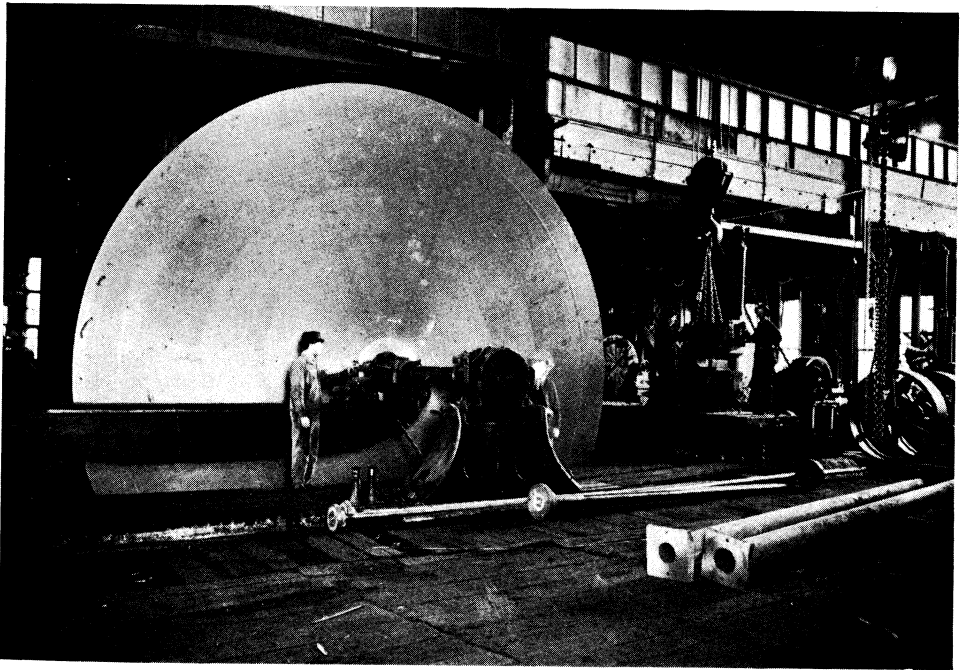


name of A. F. Bartlett & Company, as it is known today. For a number of years Mrs. Bartlett attended to the financial affairs of the company, while Alexander M. Lemke, a capable and experienced machinery man, had charge of the management of the works.

The plant at that time comprised a foundry, blacksmith shop, machine shop, warehouse, etc., covering more than half a square. The machine shop was a white brick building, two stories in height, and sixty by one hundred and fifty feet in dimensions. On the main floor was a large boring mill that swung and turned a ten-foot pulley, twenty lathes of all sizes, with a capacity for turning an eight-foot diameter down to the smallest sizes, five drill presses, four planers, one shaper, one slotting machine, two pipe machines, a bolt cutter and other machinery driven by a thirty-five horse power engine. On the second floor was a pattern shop well stocked, and having a full outfit of light machines, fine tools and other equipment.

In the blacksmith shop was a powerful steam hammer for heavy forgings, punches, shears, and all tools and equipment. Large as the facilities were, even in the formative period of the development of manufacturing in Saginaw, the expansion of the business was such that a new foundry and galvanizing shop were built in the eighties and the machine shop enlarged. A large business was carried on in the manufacture of galvanized iron pipe for salt wells and blocks, and about five hundred thousand feet of pipe were galvanized annually. There was also a steady demand for mammoth and medium sized steam feeds, salt well machinery, etc. Saw mill engines were sent as far west as Denver and the Northwest lumbering districts, their reputation for slide-valve engines being unsurpassed. The works also turned out castings, such as frogs, switches, frog plates, etc., for street railways.

Alexander M. Lemke, who assumed the general management of the company in 1887, is a mechanical engineer of ability and extensive experience,



PIT LATHE IN BARTLETT PLANT FINISHING OFF "DECK" FOR SAGINAW PLATE GLASS COMPANY

formerly having been connected with E. P. Allis & Company, of Milwaukee, builders of Corliss engines. One of his first productions after coming to Saginaw was a fine Corliss engine for the Feige-Silby Furniture Company, whose factory was located on Holland Avenue. Arrangements were soon made for the manufacture of Heme's patent tubing clamp for salt works.

Upon the decline of lumbering in Michigan the Bartlett Company entered a new field of practical operations in the machinery world, namely, the purchasing and dismantling of lumber mills and salt works, the machinery being rebuilt and sold to the trade throughout the United States and Canada. This was a large and important department of the business for a number of years, but it too, following the almost entire depletion of saw mills in this State, finally was supplanted by other profitable lines of business.

About fifteen years ago the large warehouse on the water front and north portion of the machine shop, were entirely destroyed by fire, which also swept away property along the river as far as Emerson Street. Although a heavy loss was suffered by the company, the structures were rebuilt with cement block and steel construction, rendering them fire-proof. A new power plant was soon after erected on Water Street and other needed buildings added, and equipped with modern machinery, making the plant one of the most complete of its kind in Saginaw Valley. The products of the company are distributed throughout the United States and Canada, and the operations of the plant are steadily expanding. The company is one of the strong supports of labor in this city, giving employment to more than one hundred and fifty skilled mechanics and workmen.

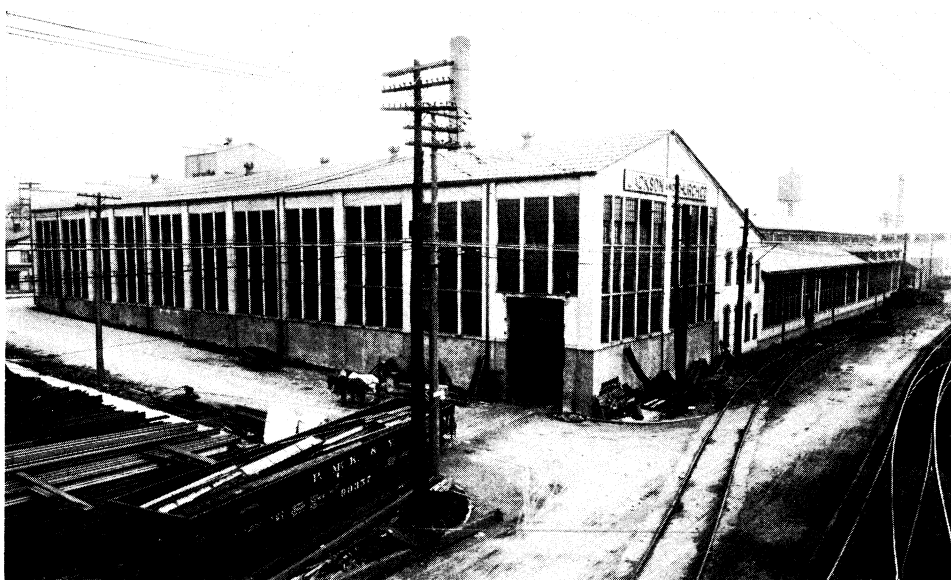
The present officers of the company are: Alexander M. Lemke, president; R. Perry Shorts, vice-president; Hanford F. Willis, secretary and treasurer.

### **Jackson & Church Company**

Among the older and substantial industries of the West Side is the Jackson & Church Company, which was founded in 1880, by John L. Jackson. The lumber and salt business of the Saginaw Valley was then approaching the height of production, and the steady demand for saw mill and drill house and salt-well machinery led him to start a machine shop and foundry business. At first the shop was located in a two-story brick building at Water and Jefferson Streets, now known as Niagara and Cleveland Streets; and turned out steam engines for driving circular and gang saws and other mill machinery, pumping equipment and general repair work. From the beginning the business was successful and has been developed into one of the largest machinery industries in Saginaw.

By 1894 the business had increased to such an extent that a division of responsibility seemed desirable, and Edgar D. Church was admitted to partnership, the name of Jackson & Church then being adopted. Mr. Church assumed charge of the financial and office affairs of the new firm, an arrangement which left Mr. Jackson free to devote all his attention to the management and superintendence of the machine and boiler shop operations. Meanwhile the lumber business at Saginaw had declined, due to the exhaustion of the pine timber in this section, and the old business of mill machinery fell off. To replace the old lines the firm began the manufacture of stave, hoop and heading machinery, which for a time was in demand in Michigan. Later the manufacture of dock and deck hoisting and dredging machinery was undertaken and proved so successful that at the present time this line is a large part of the production of the company.

The business thus established on a solid and enduring foundation was incorporated in 1898 as the Jackson & Church Company, with John L. Jackson, president, A. G. Roeser, vice-president, and Edgar D. Church, secretary



THE NEW MODERN PLANT OF JACKSON &amp; CHURCH COMPANY

and treasurer. In 1899 E. D. Church purchased of James McGregor, his interest in the boiler works of McGregor & Jackson, and the manufacture of boilers, heaters, tanks, burners, plate and structural iron added to their line. Since that time the business has experienced a remarkable expansion. The company has developed the "Saginaw" system of sand-lime brick machinery, which is manufactured for brick companies established from one end of the country to the other, setting up and making the machinery ready for successful operation. It also builds steam shovels and dredges, dredging, hoisting and car-pulling engines, automatic safety jointer feeders, and boilers, heaters, tanks, burners, plate and structural work.

About 1908, when the utilization of the great waste of beet pulp in beet-sugar factories of this country was still a problem of economic management of this great industry, the Jackson & Church Company began the manufacture of beet-pulp drying machinery of improved type. The company has since done a considerable business in this line, the machinery and equipment furnished for this purpose being recognized as standard; and the installation of such plants as adjuncts to sugar factories proving a source of direct revenue to the companies from the extensive sale of the dried pulp for stock feeding.

The machinery and boiler plant, meanwhile, has grown and expanded with the addition of various machinery products, and is now one of the important industrial establishments of the city. From a small shop on Water Street, employing a few mechanics in building engines and mill machinery, the plant has spread out to cover practically a square between Hamilton, Cleveland, Niagara and Madison Streets and nearly another city block lying adjacent thereto. Steady employment is now given to one hundred and seventy-five machinists, moulders and boiler makers, and the pay rolls are constantly growing.

The modern and well equipped machine shop fronting on Niagara Street, during working hours, is a scene of well directed activity, and the boiler works in the new steel and concrete building along Cleveland Street, from



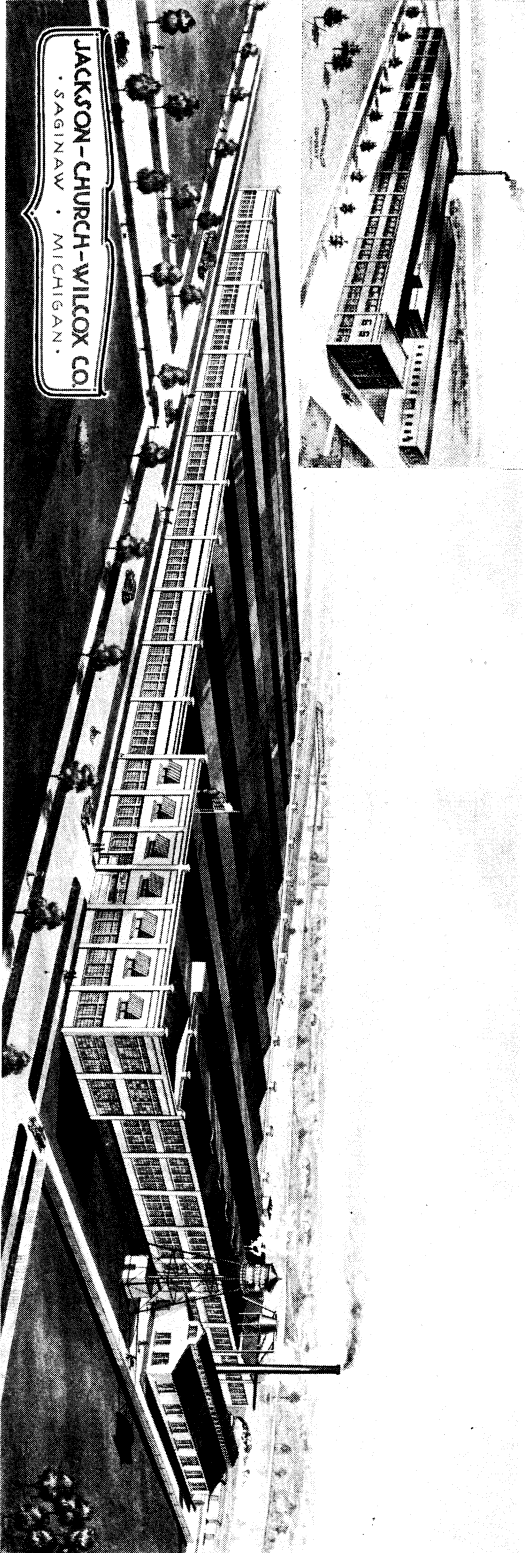
MACHINE SHOP OF JACKSON &amp; CHURCH COMPANY

Niagara to Hamilton Street, is likewise a busy place. North and west of these buildings are the foundry, power house, and material and stock rooms, all arranged for the most economical handling of supplies and finished product. The plant is served by the Michigan Central Railroad whose tracks enter the property, and by the Saginaw & Flint Railway (electric line) from its Hamilton Street tracks.

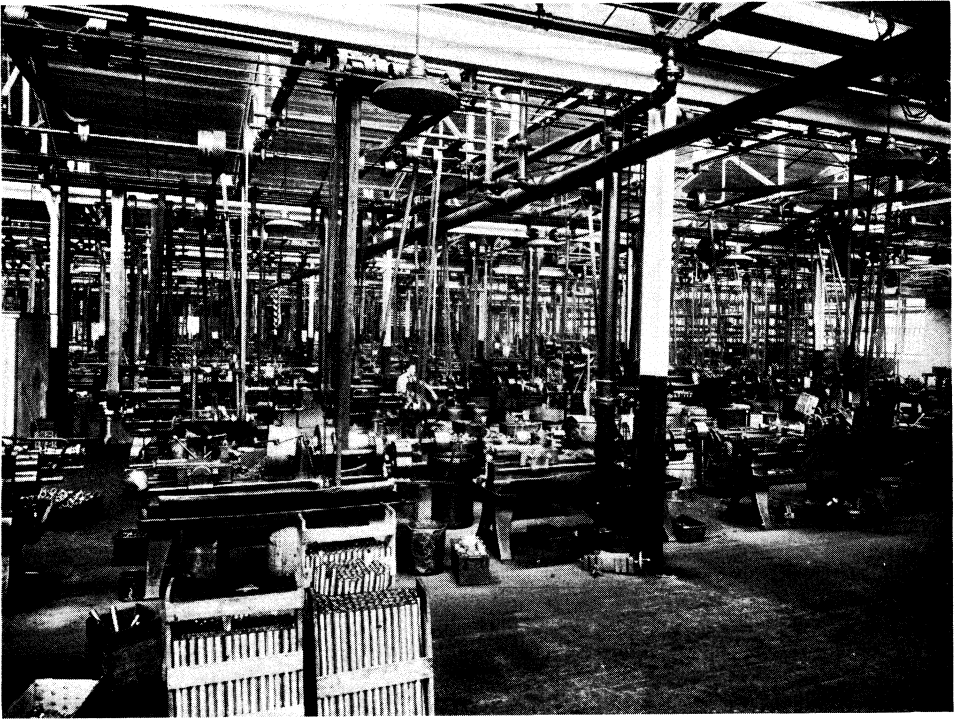
**Jackson-Church-Wilcox Company**  
Division of General Motors Company

In the new, modern plant of the Jackson-Church-Wilcox Company, division of the General Motors Company, Saginaw has a valuable acquisition to its manufactures, and it places the iron, steel and machinery interests in the front rank of the city's industries. The original company was incorporated on April 21, 1906, by John L. Jackson, Edgar D. Church and Melvin L. Wilcox, with a capital of twenty-five thousand dollars. Though starting in a small way for the manufacture of light automobile parts, the advancement of the company was rapid, the prestige of Messrs. Jackson and Church in the machinery trade and the genius of M. L. Wilcox, combining to promote success.

The machine shop was first located in a two-story brick building at Hamilton and Madison Streets, formerly occupied by the Saginaw Street



ORIGINAL SHOPS OF THE JACKSON-CHURCH-WILCOX COMPANY, AND THE NEW  
MODERN PLANT COMPLETED IN 1917



VIEW IN JACKSON-CHURCH-WILCOX PLANT

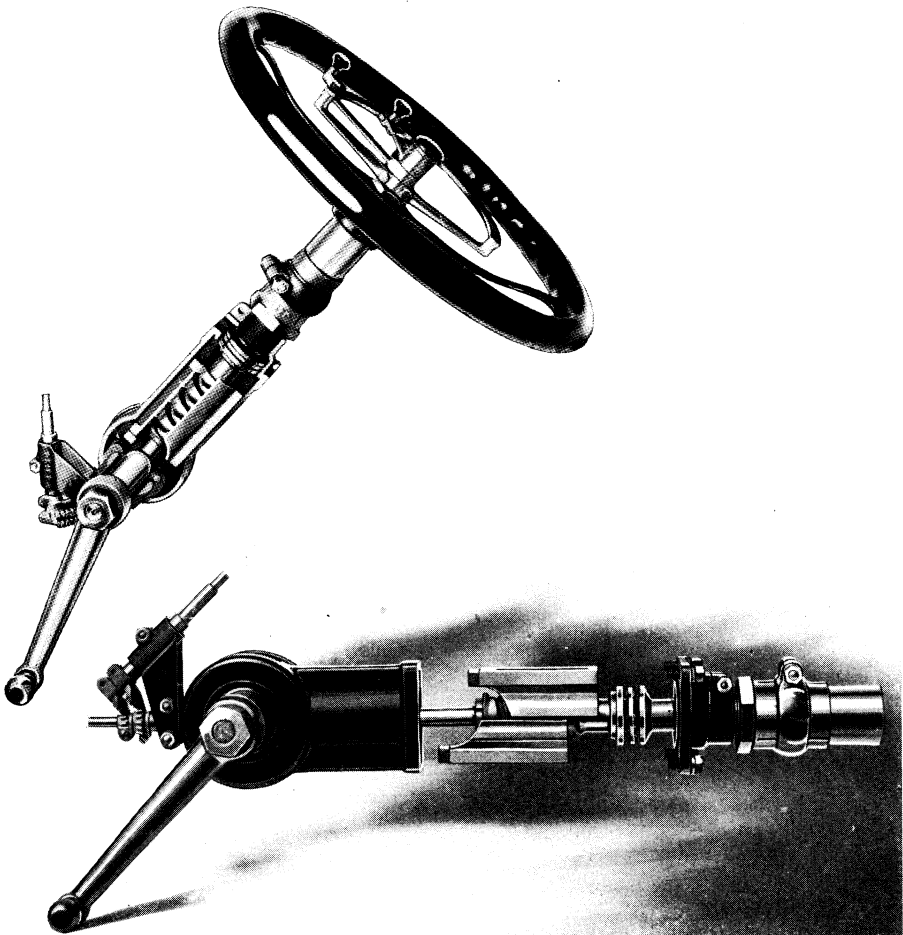
Railway, but which was then a part of the Jackson & Church plant. A part of the new machine shop of this company, which had recently been built on Niagara Street, was also utilized by the Jackson-Church-Wilcox Company, whose office was at 321 Hamilton Street. In these somewhat limited quarters the foundation of an extensive and growing business was well laid, though the possibilities of expansion were not then fully realized.

Not long after the shop was running smoothly, making essential parts for some of the leading automobiles, the attention of the company was directed to a radical improvement in steering gears, a patented device by which the ideal condition of driving was obtained. The company began making the new gears on a small scale, and soon proved the practical utility of the device. Afterward, when manufacture was largely increased, the company purchased the patent rights and gave to the improved gear the trade name of *Jacor*, derived from the names of the incorporators. This was a master move, and the progress of the company from that time was rapid.

In 1909 the capital stock was increased from twenty-five thousand dollars to sixty thousand dollars, and a site for new shops was purchased at Hamilton, Monroe and Niagara Streets. A new plant of the most modern construction was here erected and equipped with new automatic machinery, the most part for the manufacture of *Jacor* gears. Their largest customer was the Buick Motor Company, of Flint, whose requirements were constantly increasing and assuming mammoth proportions. In order to control the entire output of the new plant, and expand the business to meet its future needs, the Buick Company bought the entire property of the Jackson-Church-Wilcox Company, including its patents and good will. The transfer was duly made, and on January 20, 1910, was held the first meeting of directors of the controlling interests—the General Motors Company.

The plans of expansion at that time evolved were laid on a large scale. In perfect accord with the policy of this great corporation, this involved the purchase of the entire block bounded by Hamilton, Clinton, Niagara and Monroe Streets. It was realized that here was to arise a great manufacturing plant, and in order to make it a homogeneous unit the common council of Saginaw granted a petition for closing of Monroe Street, between Hamilton and Niagara Streets, for the purposes of the corporation. This having been done the new site was cleared of buildings of various kinds and the ground made ready for the erection of the big plant. The first large addition was built in 1915, quickly followed by other extensions; and about January 1, 1917, the expansion reached a stage which nearly approached completion.

The Jackson-Church-Wilcox shops for the exclusive manufacture of *Jacox* gears comprises the largest plant in the world devoted to the manufacture of steering gears, and are, indeed, the most extensive making any automobile unit. This is one of the most complete and mechanically efficient plants in the United States. It is of single floor, saw-tooth roof construction of steel, concrete and brick, affording perfect light and ventilation, and is nearly fire-proof. The entire plant covers an area of four hundred and forty by two hundred and forty feet, or, including the two-story sections, more than three acres.



THE "JACOX" STEERING GEAR

The plant is equipped with the most advanced automatic machinery, thereby greatly increasing production and reducing operating costs. "Chuck-ing" is done almost exclusively by compressed air, an improvement which reduces labor and tends to increase efficiency and production. The lay-out of machinery, stock rooms and shop operations is such that waste effort in moving the various parts, which number about one hundred, through the various operations, is entirely eliminated; and the burden, or overhead charges, are reduced to a minimum.

From the receiving room, in which all material is unloaded from railway cars and trucks, the raw material passes directly to stock bins arranged in order close to the machines through which it is to pass in the processes of manufacture. The machines are so arranged that the parts in course of manufacture pass from one to another in the regular course of factory operations, and at last reach the storage bins, without causing the least confusion or loss of effort. From there they go to the unit assembly room, or to the assembly shop, as required in the order of manufacture. The finished and inspected gears then pass to the stock room and are shipped to various automobile manufacturers.

George H. Hannum, the general manager, who was recently elected president of the Saginaw Board of Trade, came to the plant in 1912 in the capacity of factory manager. It was largely by his untiring efforts to increase efficiency that the scientific scheme of factory operations was evolved, and the lay-out of the new, modern plant, as it now stands, was adopted. The comfort and convenience of the mechanics have also had his earnest consideration; and for their comfort and health a modern water distilling and cooling plant was installed at a cost of ten thousand dollars. This feature, which is indicative of the progressive policy of the General Motors Company, provides cold running water of absolute purity to workmen and office workers.

The capacity of this model manufacturing plant has increased from twenty-seven thousand gears in 1910, and forty thousand in 1912, to six hundred thousand in the present year. This is the normal capacity of the existing plant, employing a single shift numbering six hundred workmen on a ten hour working schedule. The daily output on this basis is about two thousand finished gears, about half of which are used in Buick and other automobiles of the General Motors Company, and the remainder is distributed to various manufacturers of high-grade automobiles.

The high reputation of *Jacob* gears is due very largely to easy steering qualities, and to positive action which obviates the tendency of the car to slew when steering at an angle too short for its wheel base. The gears are designed so that when the proper linkage connection between the rocker arm and the road wheel is chosen, a car equipped with these gears will follow an ordinary crooked rut, and at the same time the gear locks itself against any sudden shock, so that a slight gripping of the driver's hand holds it at any time. The driver can follow or feel his way over rough roads, or even follow the gradual turn of a street car track, and striking a large object in the road does not deflect the wheels or transmit a shock to the handwheel.

### Mitts & Merrill

This old representative concern, which for sixty-three years has been well known in the machinery trade, is one of the substantial industries of Saginaw, and a steady supporter of labor and civic progress. It was founded in 1854 by the late George W. Merrill, a young machinist and moulder, who was born at Gaines, New York, March 4, 1826, and came to Oakland County, Michigan, with his father's family in 1828. The beginning was on a small scale, the foundry being one of the first established in Saginaw Valley; and





PLANT OF MITTS & MERRILL, A BUSINESS ESTABLISHED IN 1854

the original building, at 1009 South Water Street, still stands, occupied for many years by the office of the concern. Mr. Merrill was a very energetic and practical mechanic, a man of strong character, will and determination.

By 1859, when experiments were actively undertaken for the discovery of salt brine of commercial strength in this valley, Mr. Merrill interested himself in the first operations, and was one of a committee, consisting of Stephen R. Kirby and himself, appointed by the directors of the East Saginaw Salt Manufacturing Company, to go to Syracuse, New York, and investigate the methods there employed in drilling salt wells. Having given the matter thorough study and consideration, some tools and supplies were purchased there and shipped to Saginaw. Much of the machinery and equipment for drilling the first salt well, were made in the Merrill shop, and set up and operated by Sanford Keeler. A full account of these operations, and portraits of Mr. Merrill and others directly connected with the work, will be found on pages 430-32. Later, equipment for drilling salt wells for the Saginaw City Salt Company, the Bay City Salt Company and others, was furnished by Mr. Merrill from his shop.

In the eighteen sixties and until 1871, the business was conducted by George W. Merrill & Company, under the trade name of the "East Saginaw Foundry and Machine shop." Associated in the company were George W. Merrill, George C. Merrill, Robert B. McKnight, James S. Cornwell and Andrew W. Merrill. The lines of manufacture had been extended from steam engines, mill gearing and machinery, salt work machinery, salt kettles, stoves and general iron castings, to include brass and composition castings, machinery blacksmithing and forging; and particular attention was given to jobbing and repairing mill, salt block and steamboat machinery. In an announcement of 1867 they said: "Our prices will be uniformly low, and we will spare no pains to please our customers." This has become a motto of the company in its extensive dealings with customers throughout the world.

It was during the expansion of the business that William Merrill, eldest son of George W. Merrill, who was born at Birmingham, Michigan, January 13, 1851, was admitted to the firm; and through other changes in the organization it was conducted under the name of Merrill, Eastwood & Company. This company continued the business until 1876, when on September 16, the business was sold to Mitts & Merrill, a co-partnership under which title the extensive business has since been conducted.

William Merrill died February 16, 1907, while on a visit to his sister in Boston; and on January 11, 1908, George W. Merrill, the founder of the business, died in Saginaw. The present officers of the company are: Sylvanus S. Mitts, president, and Herbert W. Merrill, secretary and treasurer.

Herbert W. Merrill, eldest son of William Merrill, entered the employ of the firm in 1896, starting as an apprentice in the shops and working his way up through various stages to a leading position in the development of the business. He possesses a fine mechanical mind and enterprising spirit, to which the successful expansion of the company's business in the last decade is very largely due.

Within the last thirty years the lines of manufacture, like nearly all the machinery concerns in Saginaw, have undergone radical changes. From steam engines and mill machinery the business gradually developed the manufacture of a patented "hog," a machine for grinding of all kinds of wood into chips, and which has become a celebrated product sold in every civilized country on the globe.

This business began in a comparatively small way, in making grinders for cutting up slabs and other refuse of saw mills and wood-working factories.

The uses of such machines were gradually increased to include other lines of business, in which a careful study of the economic needs of each particular use was made by Herbert Merrill, and special "hogs" designed and produced to meet the special requirements of each. This progressive policy has greatly increased the reputation and prestige of the company in making special and dependable machines which effect a considerable saving in operation.

This feature is appreciated to the extent that manufacturers of dyes which before the world war were imported from Europe, have turned to Mitts & Merrill to produce grinders for their special uses, and today a considerable number of such machines, made only in Saginaw, are being used in the preparation of logwood, chestnut, quebaccio, sumack and other woods in the manufacture of dye stuffs. A grinder has also been perfected for grinding up old rubber, in the form of scrapped automobile tires and refuse in general, preparatory to its use in making various articles in the rubber trade.

An important development of this company, aside from the lines already mentioned, is the patented keyseater which is recognized as a tool of superior utility, and is everywhere known by the machinery trade. This also started in a small way, but with the introduction of many improvements over the original design, the keyseater has become known in foreign countries as well as in the United States and Canada, and the name of Saginaw is carried to remote places of the world.

At the present time Mitts & Merrill in their different departments give steady employment to an increasing number of mechanics, moulders and workmen; and the annual production of the company shows a substantial gain.

### Valley Grey Iron Foundry Company

One of Saginaw's busy institutions, which began operations about ten years ago, but of which little is known by the people of this city, is the Valley Grey Iron Foundry Company, whose model foundry is located at Bristol and Water Streets. This is historic ground, for away back in the eighteen-fifties the site was occupied by the Buena Vista House, kept by John Jeffers, and burned in the great fire of May 20, 1893.

The incorporators of the foundry company, which was organized April 12, 1907, were Alexander G. Finlay, John C. Luetjohan, Peter J. Redmond, William P. Powell and Edward C. Mershon, all residents of this city. The organization was effected without publicity, the blare of trumpets, or even public subscriptions or assistance from the local trade associations; and from the beginning the company has met with singular success.

The company is partly co-operative in its industrial structure, and from its inception ten or a dozen of its skilled moulders have been owners and holders of a good portion of its capital stock, which is twenty thousand dollars, paid in. This feature has had no small influence in shaping the success of the company, as labor troubles or disagreements are unknown; and when other foundries in this city have been shut down at times by strikes or other labor troubles the Valley Grey Iron Foundry never lost a day's operations from this cause. Three of the incorporators and nearly all of the original moulders in the employ of the company, were formerly employees of one of the leading foundry companies of this city, men who were familiar with the work and needs of iron and machinery manufacturers in this valley. Among these are George W. Hesse, James Cabot, James Hellmus, Carl Gabel, Robert Young, Robert Arndt, George Scott, R. W. Wruck and T. H. Ford.

The Valley Grey Iron Foundry is strictly a jobbing shop, having large contracts for grey iron castings of all sizes with such large manufacturers



FOUNDRY AND GROUP OF MOULDERS AT THE VALLEY GREY IRON FOUNDRY COMPANY

as William B. Mershon & Company, Saginaw Manufacturing Company, Lufkin Rule Company, National Engineering Company, Erd Motor Company, Bransfield-Billings Piano Action Company, the Columbia-Western Mills, the Stork Motor Company and many others. William B. Mershon & Company alone use more than six hundred tons of grey iron castings from this foundry, valued at twenty-five to thirty thousand dollars, annually. The total yearly production is nearly fifteen hundred tons of castings, having a market value (1917) of about seventy-five thousand dollars.

The main foundry building is a one-story brick structure with paving brick front, one hundred and twenty-six feet by eighty feet in dimensions; and the storage house for raw materials and the office is a two-story brick building at the corner of Bristol and Water Streets. There is also a fire-proof pattern storage room, for the safe keeping of customers' patterns. The whole plant is equipped with the most modern appliances, employing skilled moulders and mechanics, and turning out a high grade of castings. About forty men are employed in the foundry during busiest portions of the year.

Alexander G. Finlay, president of the company, is an old and experienced moulder by trade, and knows every detail and requirement of the large machinery manufacturing concerns of Saginaw Valley, and gives his undivided attention to the operations of the foundry. He came to East Saginaw in 1877 and entered the employ of Bartlett & Spindler, founders and mill machinery house, afterward A. F. Bartlett & Company. For thirty years he was closely connected with this large and prosperous business, the last twenty-one years as foreman of the foundry. With the intimate knowledge thus gained of the demands of the machinery trade, he was well qualified to open up and conduct a successful foundry.

John C. Luetjohan, the capable assistant to Mr. Finlay in foundry operations, is also an old Bartlett employee, and came to the new concern with experience and skill at his command, qualities which are constantly manifested in the successful operation of the model foundry.

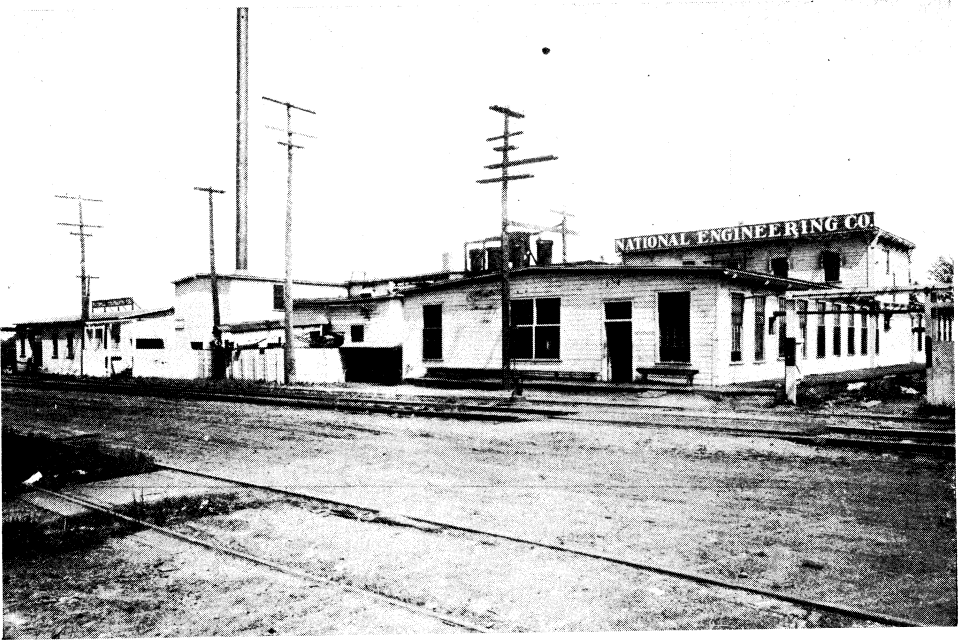
Peter J. Redmond, secretary of the company, is a well known business man of Saginaw, and has charge of all financial and office affairs of the foundry. In his active life he has been connected with some of the large successful institutions of this city, and was deputy postmaster under the postmastership of Abram G. Wall, from 1894 to 1898.

### **National Engineering Company**

Like many other of Saginaw's successful industries the National Engineering Company, which started in a small way more than twenty years ago, has gradually built up a large business giving employment to a considerable number of skilled mechanics and other workmen. In May, 1895, a few business men organized the Walcott Windmill Company, for the purpose of manufacturing windmills of an improved type. The factory was on South Niagara Street, and for eight years the company carried on a more or less successful business with a somewhat doubtful future.

At length the windmill business was discontinued, and in May, 1903, the company was reorganized under the present title with a paid-in capital of thirty thousand dollars. The officers of the new company were: Aaron P. Bliss, president; Willis G. Van Auken, vice-president and treasurer; and E. C. Loomis, secretary.

At this time the new company began the manufacture of wood tanks and gasoline engines of various sizes for general farm use. This business gave great promise of success, and an improved motor for pumping water, known as No. 2 Pumping Engine, was introduced. By reason of its being



MACHINE SHOPS OF NATIONAL ENGINEERING COMPANY

directly connected to the pump, without the use of a pump-jack, this engine at once met with great favor; and a large contract was entered into with the Kewanee Water and Supply Company, of Kewanee, Illinois, for such motors. This contract continued in force for four or five years with varying degrees of success, though without much profit to the engine builders.

About 1907, when the automobile business was beginning to expand to such proportions as to tax the production capacity of the leading manufacturers, the company decided to take up crank-shaft finishing. The plant was moved into the larger machine shops of the Moffett Vehicle Bearing Company, whose patents, good will and business had recently been sold by Messrs. Bliss & Van Auken, its principal stockholders, to New York City parties and the business removed there. In the better equipped shops the company undertook the machining and finishing of all crank shafts used in the two-cylinder Reo car and other automobiles. Later, when the larger vertical cylinder engine was introduced for automobiles, the company finished crank shafts for the four-throw Reo motors, a business which continued on a profitable basis for five years.

Since 1912 the National Engineering Company has operated very successfully in the same line, having large contracts with the Buick, Chevrolet, Olds Motor and other companies, and has attained a high reputation for the general excellence of its work.

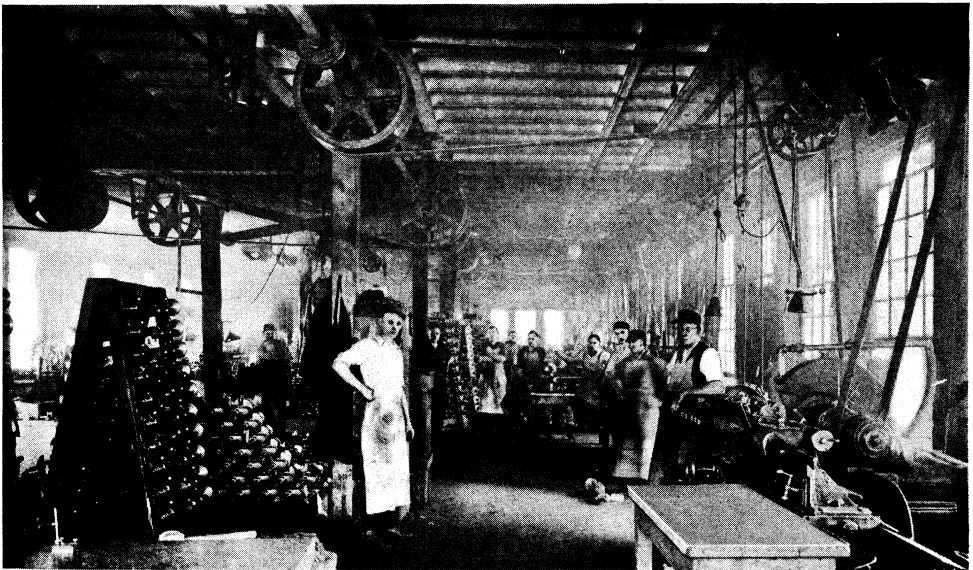
On February 19, 1916, the prosperous business, including plant, machine shops and good will, was sold to Lansing capitalists. The reorganized company, which retains the old name, has a capital of two hundred thousand dollars; and the manufacturing operations are carried on on a larger scale than before. The officers of the company are: C. P. Downey, president; J. W. Wilford, vice-president and treasurer; E. C. Shields, secretary, all of Lansing; T. M. Carpenter, general manager, and Alexander Liddle, Junior, superintendent.

At about this time the company entered into a contract with the Northway Motor & Manufacturing Company, of Detroit, for finishing fifty-six thousand crank shafts for automobile motors, of which they are large producers. Recently a contract for finishing ten thousand crank shafts for the Republic Motor Truck Company, of Alma, was taken. The shop equipment was increased in 1917 by the addition of six automatic grinders and other machinery, and the production capacity raised from two hundred and seventy-five to four hundred crankshafts a day, or about one hundred and twenty thousand a year, with a contract value approaching half a million dollars.

Under the increased schedule more than one hundred and fifty machinists and workmen are given steady employment at good wages. A premium system of computing earnings is employed, whereby a day's pay is determined by the number of single operations performed by the workman. Each mechanic is paid a certain amount per hour for a regular quota of operations per day, and a further allowance is paid for all operations performed in excess of his quota. Under this system the workmen have a constant incentive to speed up their work, and the more skilled often double their quota of operations. The production is thus greatly increased and labor troubles reduced to a minimum.

It is such progressive concerns as this which are building up the industrial structure of Saginaw, and are advancing the prosperity of the city more than is generally realized. Without local publicity or advertising they are extending their business, adding to plant and equipment, and employing more workmen. The distribution of larger pay rolls increases the amount of money in circulation, which finds its way into every mercantile trade, and is reflected in the constantly increasing bank deposits.

Labor conditions in Saginaw Valley, especially in the factories, have been very satisfactory for a number of years. The diversity of our industries tends to stabilize the labor market, and encourage steady employment and permanent residence. The wage scale is generally fair to the mechanics and workmen, considering the living conditions here, and strikes or serious labor difficulties are almost unknown.



GRINDING CRANK SHAFTS, NATIONAL ENGINEERING COMPANY

### Werner & Pfeleiderer Company

Institutions, like individuals, have prestige and prominence based upon their intrinsic value and the merit of their work and products. Among the leading industries of Saginaw, to which this maxim applies with peculiar force, is the Werner & Pfeleiderer Company, patentees and manufacturers of mixing and kneading machines of various sizes and types and for specific purposes, everywhere used in some of the leading trades.

The products of this highly successful concern, all made in this city, are a complete line of machinery and appliances used in the manufacture of bread, biscuits, cakes, macaroni, vermicelli, noodles and other flour products, and mixers for the chemical, pharmaceutical and rubber-working trades. So essential are these machines that they are regarded as universal, and a necessary economic equipment of all modern plants. The extensive line of machinery consists of sifters, elevators, blenders, conveyors, bins, mixers, dividers, rounders, proofers, moulders, troughs, racks, presses (hydraulic and screw), kneaders, dough brakes, etc. A special feature of the business, which has grown to be the largest of its kind in this country, is the equipping of entire bakeries and macaroni plants; and the company furnishes, through its efficient engineering department, blue-print suggestions for new plants or alterations of old ones.

The manufacturing plant in Saginaw is the outgrowth of an extensive business, which was founded in Germany more than half a century ago. Like many other industries its development was slow and attended with difficulties. Old bakers who clung to the primitive practices of their forefathers, had to be educated to the advantages of scientific, sanitary and expeditious methods now quite generally followed, and the public had to be convinced that the bakers' loaf was wholesome, appetizing and economical. Eventually the business became thoroughly established in Europe, and its founder, the late Herr Commerzienrat Hermann Werner, of Cannstatt, began to look about for markets in other countries and especially in America.

It was a fortunate circumstance for Saginaw and, indeed, the State of Michigan, that Herr Werner chose this city for the location of its American business. In 1897 the first steps were taken to establish a permanent trade in this country, and by an arrangement with the Saginaw Board of Trade about two acres of land was purchased at the west end of the Bristol Street Bridge, and the original factory building erected. From a small beginning the business has increased year by year to the mammoth proportions it has now attained, making it one of the largest institutions of its kind in the world. The factory structure has undergone constant additions and the working force steadily increased. At length the original site was deemed inadequate to accommodate the prospective buildings which the future business would demand, and a new site on Hess venue, near South Jefferson Avenue, was selected. In 1913 a new and completely equipped foundry and pattern shop was erected thereon, the first units of a huge modern plant which should be a distinctive model of its kind. The cost of these first units approximated one hundred thousand dollars, and several times this amount will be expended before the big plant is completed in its entirety.

The dimensions of the foundry, in which all the castings used by the company are made, are one hundred by one hundred and forty feet; and the foundry equipment is the best known to the trade. Close by is the pattern shop and experimental bakery, fifty by one hundred feet in size. The entire upper floor of the new building is used for the pattern shop and for the storage of patterns, while the lower floor is intended for the practical working display of the full equipment for a modern bakery. In this exhibit are shown all the machinery used in the making of bread, biscuits, cake, etc.,





**HERMANN WERNER**  
Founder of The Werner & Pfleiderer Company



MACHINE SHOPS OF WERNER & PFLEIDERER

including a traveling chain oven having a capacity of twenty-five thousand loaves in ten hours. An oven of this kind costs a bakery almost twenty thousand dollars.

The main building of the plant, which will be a perfectly equipped machine shop, will have dimensions of three hundred by one hundred and eighty feet, and, with the units already erected, cover a considerable portion of the seventeen acres comprising the factory site. Of the most approved construction lending abundant light and ventilation, the new machine shop will provide every facility for high efficiency of its skilled mechanics, and will be equipped with the best automatic machinery. When completed the capacity of the plant will be more than doubled, and the working force materially increased. In 1917, when the machine shop still occupied the original plant with enlargements, the total number of mechanics and workmen exceeded two hundred.

Besides the head office of the company at Saginaw, branch offices are maintained at New York City, Philadelphia and San Francisco; and there are European houses at Cannstatt, Berlin, Cologne, Hamburg, Moscow, Vienna, Milano, Paris, London, Buenos Aires, Argentine, under the direct management of the general offices at Cannstatt.

In the manufacture of the diversified machinery products of Werner & Pfleiderer, at its Saginaw plant, about five thousand tons of raw material are annually consumed, and the amount is constantly increasing. The popularity of "Universal" kneading and mixing machines is due to the fact that it is the only apparatus which combines in itself a perfect mixer and a thoroughly efficient kneader. It is entirely distinct from all others, and the great success it has attained in all parts of the globe proves that it possesses unsurpassed qualities and is of first class construction. As to speed, blades and other details of operation, the concern builds special machines to suit the numerous and peculiar requirements of various trades. There are now about fifty thousand "Universal" kneading and mixing machines at work in all parts of the world.

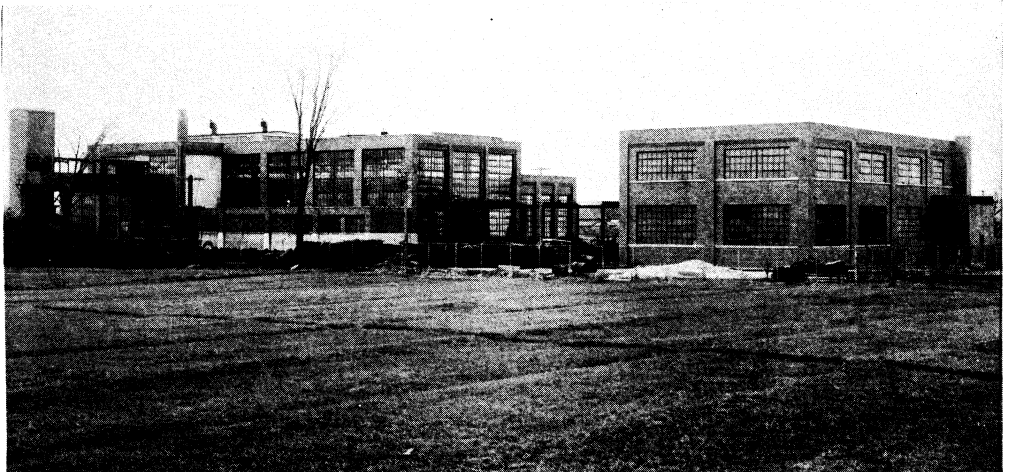
Another important product of the company is a steam pipe, draw plate oven, which built and set up in batteries of one to ten, provide modern bakeries with facilities, of the most sanitary and economic nature, for producing from ten to one hundred thousand loaves of bread in ten hours. A

large number of such batteries have been installed by leading baking companies in the largest cities, and the ovens have become a standard product in the baking trade.

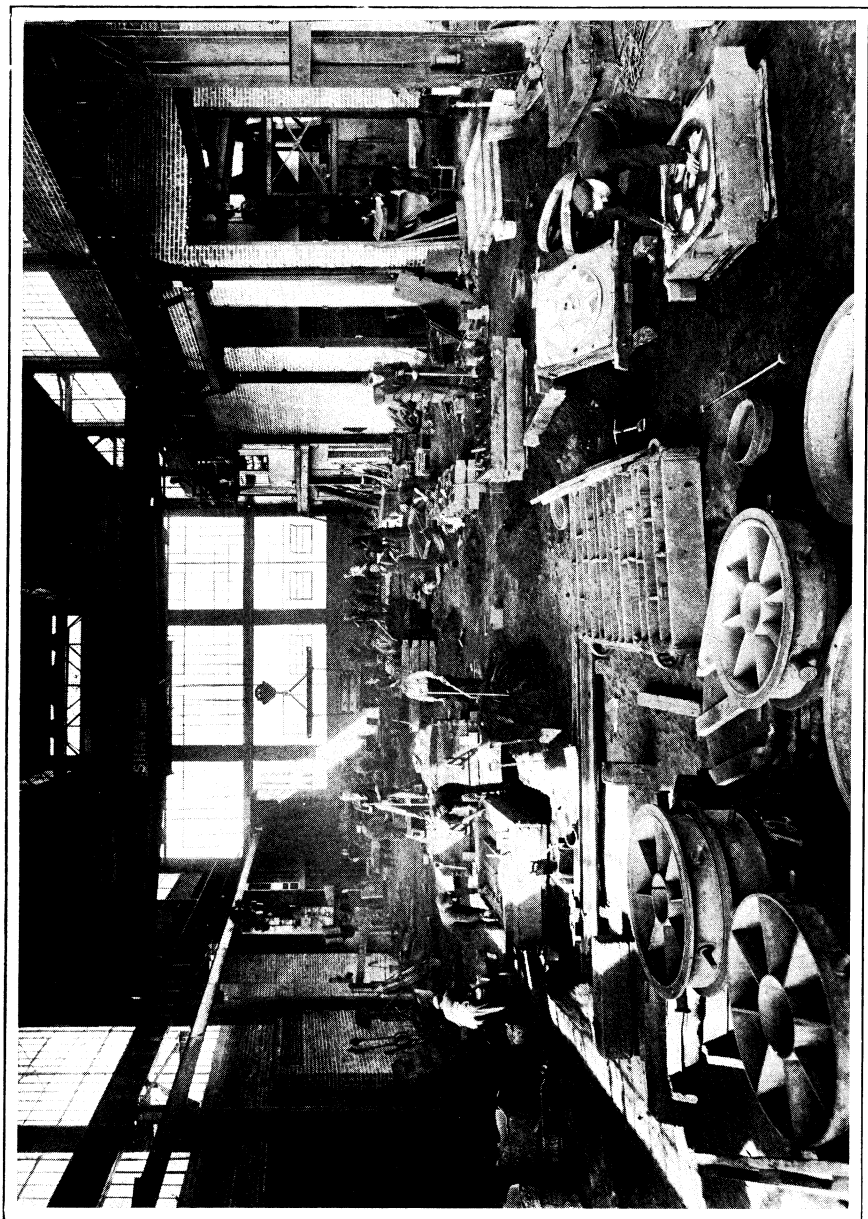
The "Improved" loaf dough divider, introduced to the trade in 1905, is a product of the mechanical and inventive genius of the concern, and is entirely automatic in its action. It divides with absolute accuracy all kinds of dough, especially straight doughs, without the least injury. By means of a newly devised conveyor arrangement the loaves can be delivered singly and without further handling direct to the moulding machine. This machine pays for itself in a short time through the economies it effects. Its output varies from one thousand to forty-two hundred loaves per hour, and it divides loaves from twelve to thirty-six ounces in weight.

There are also rounders, dough moulders, blenders, wrapping machines, sifters, flour and water scales and other equipment in the long list of products of this enterprising firm. The macaroni and vermicelli making machinery, and mixers for the exacting uses of the chemical and pharmaceutical trades, as well as in making gunpowder, celluloid, artificial silk, etc., are standard of their kind.

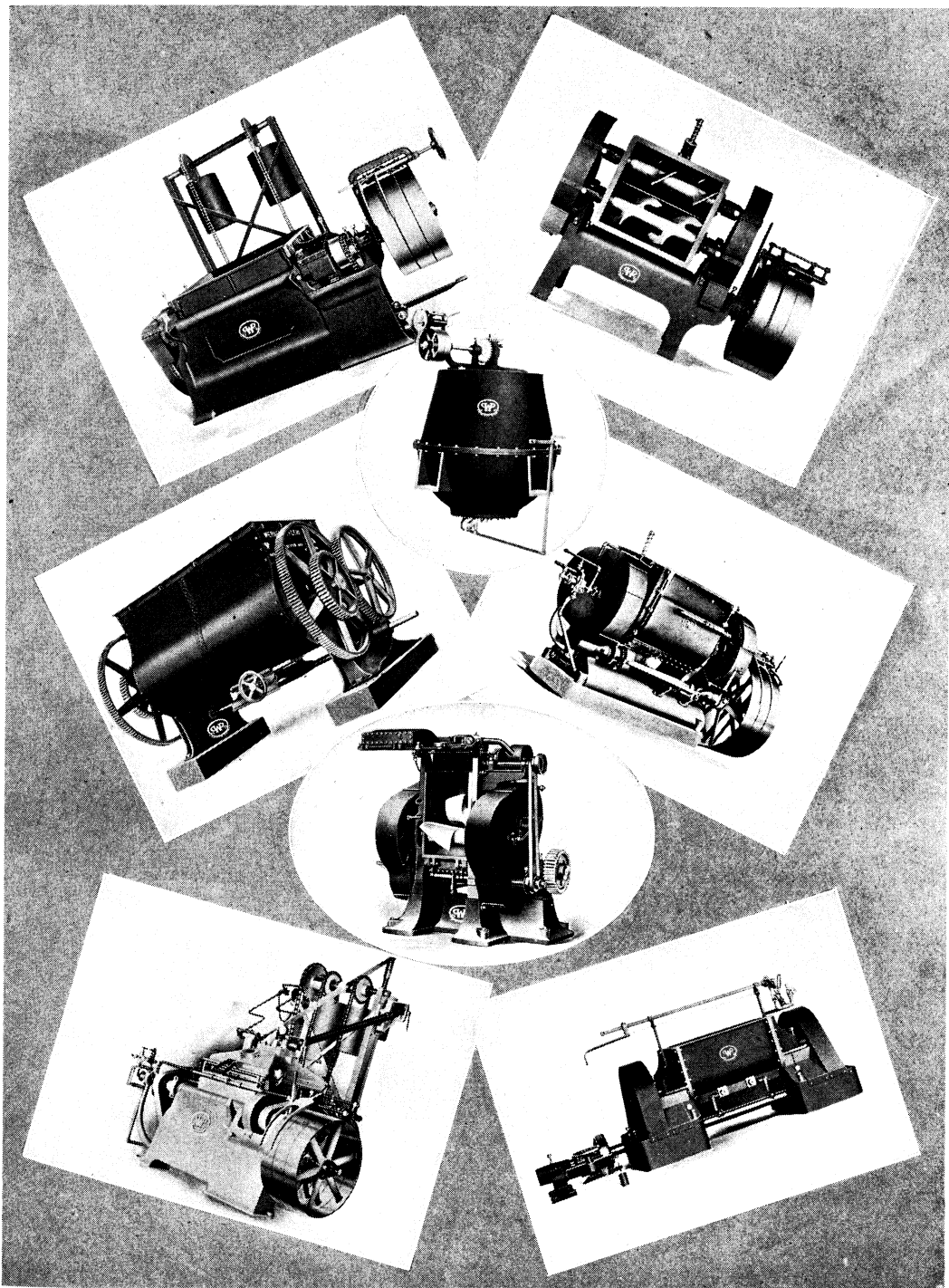
In the rubber-working trade the washers and mixers built by Werner & Pfleiderer have advantages over all others of the kind. The old way of washing crude rubber was to pass the rubber between adjustable rollers that forced it out into a thin sheet, and then, by means of a flow of water, wash away the impurities. The action of the rollers being rather severe, tended to impair or damage the life and nerve of the rubber, and the capacity of the rollers was limited. The "Universal" rubber washer was designed to bring every particle of rubber into contact with water, and by allowing the water to escape, carry away all impurities with it. By causing the two corrugated washing rolls to revolve towards one another at slightly different speeds, so as to lacerate and mix the material effectively, every particle is brought to the surface and exposed to the water sprayed from above. Eighty pounds of Para and similar grades can be thoroughly washed in from ten to twenty minutes, and other grades according to the condition of the gum and the degree of purity desired. The "Masticator" and mixers for making rubber solution, or cement, are also machines of standard type used in working rubber into useful products.



THE NEW FOUNDRY AND PATTERN SHOP



INTERIOR OF NEW FOUNDRY OF WERNER & PFLEIDERER COMPANY



Paper Pulper  
Vacuum Mixer

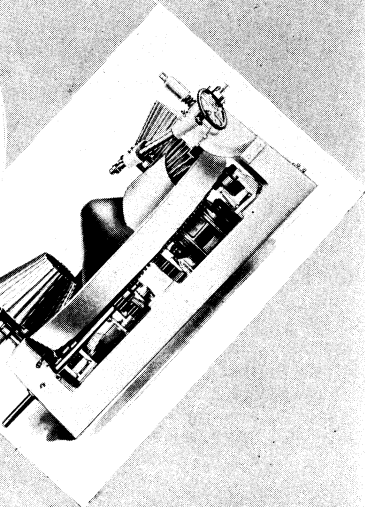
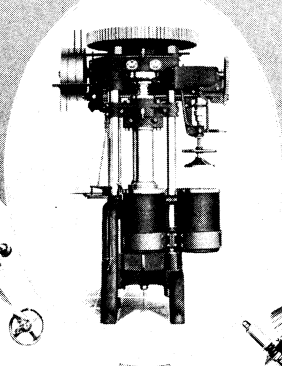
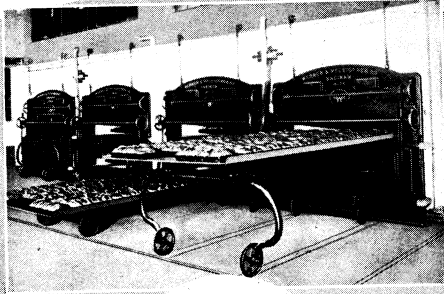
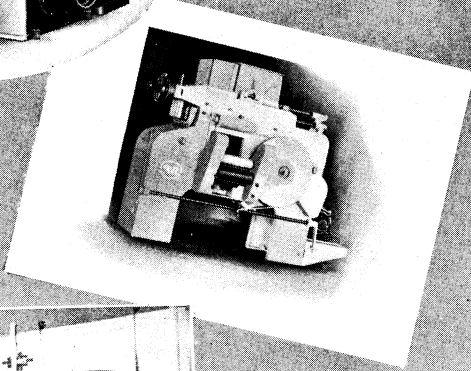
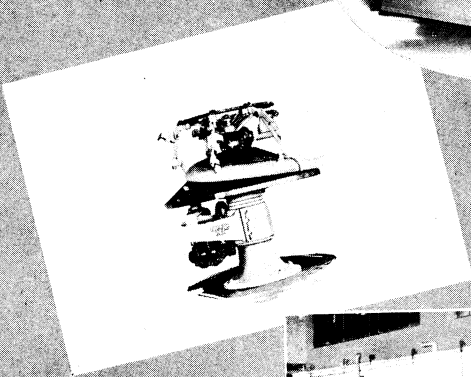
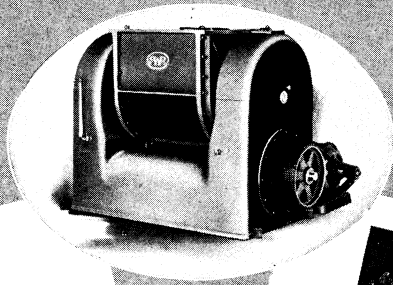
Type X Mixer

Rapid Dissolver  
Masticator

Type IX Mixer

Type V Mixer  
Rubber Washer

UNIVERSAL KNEADING AND MIXING MACHINES



Loaf Rounder  
Brake

Dough Mixer  
Draw Plate Ovens  
Macaroni Press

Dough Divider  
Kneader

MACHINERY AND OVENS USED IN BAKING AND MACARONI INDUSTRIES



EMIL STAEHLE

The "Universal" paper pulper is another practical machine which disintegrates all kinds and grades of paper, such as dry or wet broken, shavings, trimming, coated paper, ledger, bond, writing, old papers, news, box board cuttings, scrap, etc., in fact all classes of paper stock having no canvas or linen lining. While not taking the place of the "beater" in common use in paper mills, the pulping machine does dissolve the paper stock and facilitates the mill operations. In some cases paper disintegrated in the "Universal" can be passed directly to the stuff chests, and no "broken" will show up in the new sheet of paper. Working up the loose broken and storing it in bins in its wet state, eliminates the constant danger of fire, and enables the mill to use a larger percentage in the beaters. The capacity of the machine is four hundred pounds per hour.

In all the activities of this progressive firm, so far as the extensive American trade is concerned, Emil Staehle is the governing and managing head. He has been connected with this part of the business since it was established in this country, and is thoroughly familiar with every detail of manufacturing and distribution of the machinery products. To him is largely due the remarkable expansion of the trade in America, and the bright future of the firm in this department of its international business. Mr. Staehle is a man of extensive travel and broad education, and is an honored citizen of Saginaw, having filled position of trust and responsibility in commercial life, for several years being vice-president of the Saginaw Board of Trade, to which he devoted much earnest attention. He is of that all too small class of business men who accomplish much without the blare of trumpets or the acclaim of citizens, but whose influence is nevertheless felt in the community in which his interests are centered.

### S. Fair & Son, Inc.

To what extent a prosperous business may be built up from a small beginning is well exemplified by the successful career of S. Fair & Son, Inc. The business was started in 1898 by the late Samuel Fair, Sr., as a plow factory, and was located on North Hamilton Street, between Madison and Monroe, the site of the present modern foundry. By degrees a profitable trade was worked up, and the prospect of rapid expansion was very bright. In 1905 the demand for grey iron castings for sewer work and special uses led Mr. Fair to start a grey iron foundry. He was a thoroughly practical moulder and founder, and in this departure made a distinct success. After a life of activity in trade and business he died October 21, 1916, at the age of seventy-one years.

At the beginning of the grey iron foundry Louis Fair, now president of the company, entered his father's employ. He applied himself diligently to the various duties of the office, and at length acquired a full knowledge of the business. Meanwhile Samuel Fair, Junior, was foreman of the foundry, in the practical operation of which he showed efficiency, and the Fair foundry earned a high reputation for the general excellence of its castings.

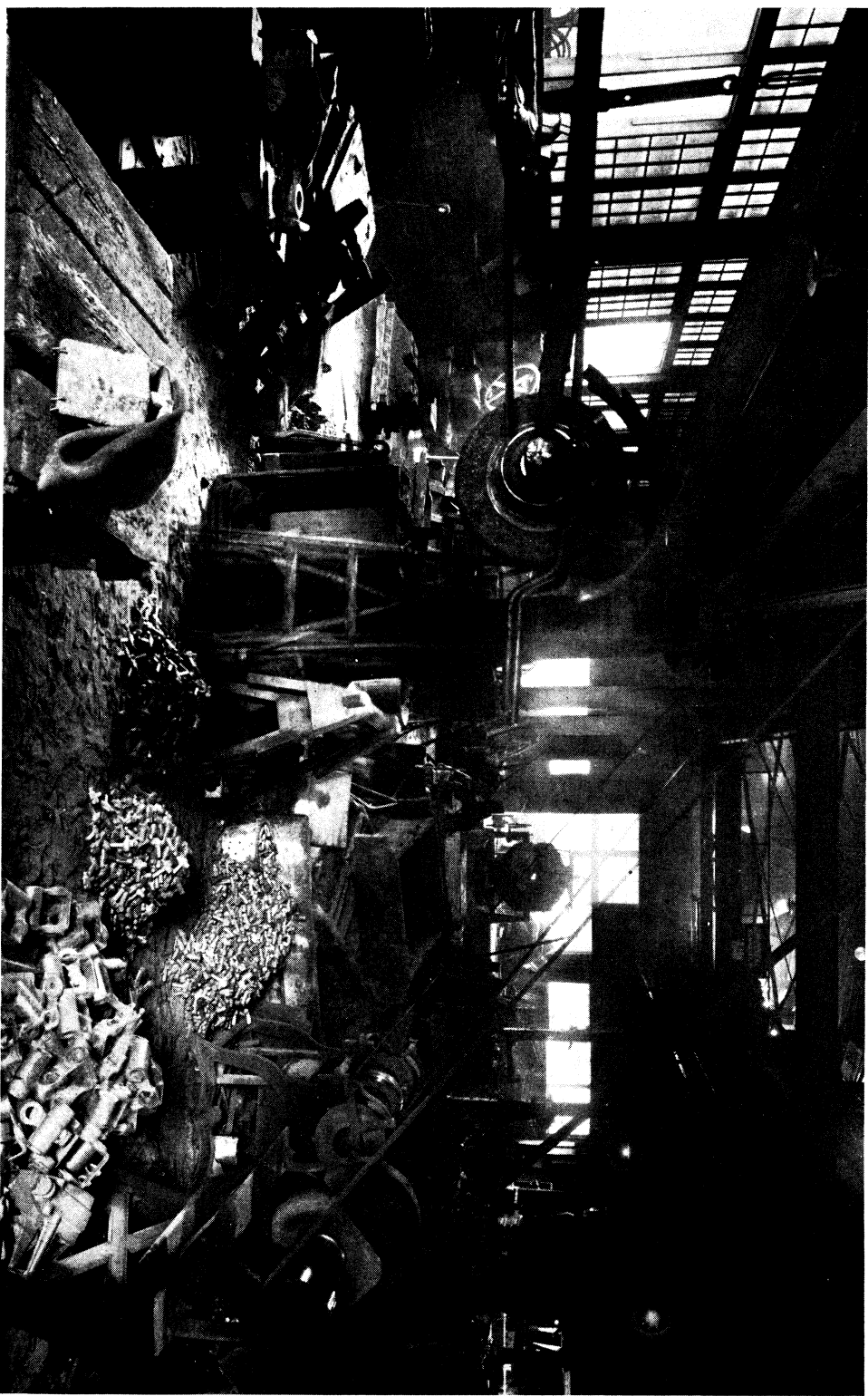
So rapid was the expansion of the foundry trade that in 1909 the concern was incorporated under the above title, with a capital stock of twenty thousand dollars, and new responsibilities were assumed by the younger men. The foundry was newly equipped for the making of crucible steel castings of high grade, mostly for outside trade, and, inasmuch as this was the second foundry of the kind to be established in Michigan, there was a steady demand for its products. These consisted principally of small steel castings for some of the largest automobile builders in Detroit, Flint, Lansing and Pontiac. This business proved very successful, and helped to bring to the attention of motor car makers the superior advantages of Saginaw as a manufacturing center for automobile parts and units.

In 1914 the steady growth of the business demanded further facilities in the way of foundry extensions, and the capital stock was increased to seventy-five thousand dollars. The officers elected at this partial reorganization were: Samuel Fair, Sr., president; Louis G. Fair, vice-president, and Mae M. Fair, secretary and treasurer. Miss Fair, who was a young woman of unusual business ability, had entire charge of the financial affairs of the company and attended to the general office work. She died May 11, 1916. Soon after the reorganization was effected, the construction of a new foundry was begun, and on the site of the old plow factory and adjoining land there soon arose a large modern foundry, equipped with all essential machinery, furnaces and tools.

Meanwhile the European War had demoralized the iron and steel trade of this country, and interfered with importations of many essential materials and supplies from Germany. Among the very necessary supplies were German crucibles, made from a particular clay obtained only in that country. These crucibles were required for the crucible steel furnaces, and when the supply was exhausted the old furnaces were displaced by an entirely new type.

Early in 1915 a Snyder electric steel melting furnace of large capacity was installed in the foundry at a cost of fourteen thousand dollars. This was a decided innovation in the foundry trade of Saginaw and, indeed, of Michigan. The new furnace not only increased the output one hundred per cent but effected surprising economies of operation. It was one of only seven furnaces of the kind in the United States, and its installation in the steel foundry here emphasizes the progressive policy of S. Fair & Son, Inc.





NEW FOUNDRY OF S. FAIR & SON, INC.



ELECTRIC FURNACE AT S. FAIR & SON, INC.

The making of vanadium steel castings of high grade was at once begun, and consisted mostly of automobile parts requiring tremendous strength and toughness. To the credit of the concern it may be said that, due to the uniform excellence of its castings and to economical and efficient management, the foundry has since worked to full capacity on contracts with some of the largest makers of high class automobiles.

A considerable amount of electrical energy is consumed in this furnace, which permits of six or seven heats, or meltings, a day, and is furnished by the local power company, at a low rate, but at an average cost of one thousand dollars monthly. About fifty moulders and founders, grinders and other laborers are employed in the foundry. The monthly output is about one hundred tons of small high grade vanadium steel castings; and the yearly production, at the prevailing prices of vanadium steel products, is nearly half a million dollars.

The immediate requirements of the foundry, in the way of extensions to meet the constantly increasing trade, has recently been filled by the installation of a second electric steel melting furnace of improved type. This furnace embodies all the essential economic features of the other, and in addition provides for quick renewing of the furnace lining, thus reducing the time the furnace is put out of use. Furthermore, the linings are renewed only half as frequently, the capacity of the furnace being doubled thereby. These improvements in the electric furnace were made by the Fair brothers, who are always alert to provide efficient and economical operation of the foundry. The building of this furnace here speaks well for the ingenuity and practical knowledge of Louis G. Fair, and of the progressiveness displayed by the concern.

The present officers of the company are: Louis G. Fair, president and treasurer; Ernest A. Snow, vice-president, and Elizabeth Houlihan, secretary.

### Saginaw Plate Glass Company

During 1899 a number of progressive business men of this city, desiring to utilize the natural resources and give impetus to the growing prosperity of Saginaw Valley, conceived the idea of locating a plate glass factory here. The idea took definite form and soon a plan was worked out for the incorporation of a stock company having a capital of three hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The stock was quickly subscribed and the organization of the company effected.

Among the incorporators were: William J. Wickes, John L. Jackson, Benton Hanchett, Frederick W. Carlisle, Frank G. Palmerton, James G. Macpherson, T. E. Dorr, E. F. Achard and Samuel G. Higgins. The officers were: Frederick W. Carlisle, president; William J. Wickes, vice-president; Samuel G. Higgins, secretary; E. F. Achard, treasurer, and Thomas L. Kerr, general manager. All the original promoters of this successful industry, which was entirely new to this section of Michigan, were Saginaw capitalists with the exception of Mr. Kerr. He was a practical plate glass maker who came from Pittsburg to superintend the erection of the plant, and afterwards to operate it.

In order to secure an ample tract of land contiguous to the river and having adequate railroad facilities, the present site was selected. The location is a very advantageous one, providing an abundance of water direct from the river, superior transportation facilities, and also affording a dumping ground on the low lands adjoining the factory for the natural wastes of manufacture. At that time there was a great demand for plate glass creating a ready market, a condition which has prevailed except at brief intervals. The original plant was erected and equipped for an annual capacity of one million square feet of plate glass, which was considered a fair output at that time.

During the ten years following the opening of the plant a marked increase in the consumption of plate glass developed in this country. A fact not generally known is, in consequence of the tremendous expansion of the automobile industry in Michigan, which uses a great quantity of plate glass for windshields and enclosed bodies, this State is now the largest consumer of plate glass in the United States. At least fifteen per cent. of the total production of the country is used in Michigan, a large proportion of which finds its way into the finishing of motor cars, while a moderate quantity is used for mirrors by the great furniture factories of Grand Rapids and elsewhere.

To avail themselves of the active market thus created, the present management of the company thought wise to increase the production of plate glass, and in 1913 and the following year made extensive additions to the plant and equipment. The original capacity of the plant was thus more than trebled and today, when all the improved equipment is in fine working condition, the output is fully four million square feet of glass. Running at full capacity the plant employs three hundred and fifty men, some operations being on a double or three-shift basis, which is necessary in some instances on account of the nature of the work.

In the original equipment of the factory much of the special glass making machinery was purchased in the Pittsburg district and adapted to the needs and requirements here. Later, when improved methods and economic management were adopted, all special machinery installed in the plant was designed by employees of the plate glass company and made in Saginaw.



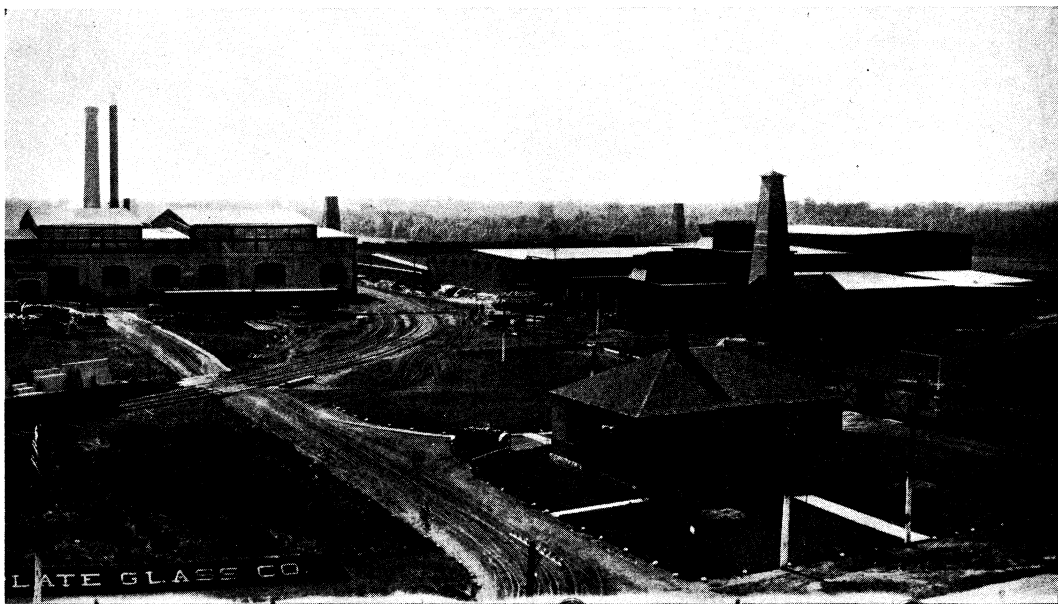
THE MAMMOTH PLANT OF THE

In this departure, the iron works of Wickes Brothers, Jackson & Church and others, which had furnished the numerous engines and batteries of boilers used, derived a considerable amount of business which gave steady employment to local mechanics and workmen.

Within the last ten or fifteen years many improved methods of making plate glass have been put in use, and at present everything is handled mechanically, in sharp contrast to manual labor formerly employed. This effects great economies of operation, huge conveyors and handling devices in casting and transporting glass through the various operations, being notable additions to the highly efficient plant. The equipment has also been augmented by furnaces of much larger capacity, and an annealing lehr two hundred and eighty feet long, designed to make plates as large as twelve by twenty feet, which are as large as any used in this country. Formerly plates eight by thirteen were the maximum of size produced. The furnaces are operated by producer gas made on the premises from Saginaw coal.

The making of plate glass requires a great quantity of heat and power, which is produced at the plant by a producer gas plant and by a large battery of boilers. Saginaw coal is used exclusively, two hundred and fifty tons being required daily to produce the required energy in various forms. The raw materials used in making plate glass on a large scale are a considerable item of tonnage; and the products, including salt in big quantities, comprise steady shipments. The freight movement to and from the plant is extensive, not less than twenty-five loaded cars entering and leaving the plant daily, and about equally divided between coal (inbound), salt (outbound), and other raw materials and finished products.

At the time the glass plant was established the promoters had in mind the utilization of the great quantity of waste exhaust steam from the various operations, but it was not until 1905 that the directors of the company decided upon building a modern salt block adjoining the plate glass plant. In



SAGINAW PLATE GLASS COMPANY

that year a very complete salt making plant was erected, having ten grainers constructed throughout of reinforced concrete, and with a capacity of about seven hundred barrels daily. The equipment was in advance of any salt block in Michigan, every process and handling of the product being automatic. Later two additional grainers were built and several salt wells drilled and equipped, increasing the output to one thousand barrels of salt daily, or eight car loads. Salt is shipped to a ready market in the Central and Southern States, the well known purity and non-hardening qualities of "Saginaw" salt giving it a high reputation wherever used. An interesting account of the making of salt in this modern plant is included in the chapter on "The Salt Industry," pages 440-44. About thirty men are employed in this department, principally in packing the salt in barrels for shipment.

To further utilize all the constituents of salt brine, or rather to make use of the hitherto waste "bittern" resulting from the manufacture of salt, a modern chemical plant was erected in 1911 adjacent to the salt block. The principal product is calcium chloride which is largely used in various trades, and for which there is a steady demand. Later other products were added such as bromine, magnesium chloride, etc., made from wastes which formerly went into the river. In 1912 a separate company, the Saginaw Chemical Company, was organized to take over and operate this department of the business. James C. Graves, who was instrumental in establishing this valuable part of the business, is vice-president of the company, and manager of its operations. The chemical company employs from eighteen to twenty-five men in its own plant.

The present officers of the Saginaw Plate Glass Company, which now has a capital investment exceeding one million dollars, are: William J. Wickes, president; Arthur D. Eddy, vice-president; George C. Eastwood, secretary and treasurer; and the board of directors is composed of these officers and Frederick W. Carlisle, Peter Corcoran, Walter S. Eddy, Benton Hanchett, James G. Macpherson, M. N. Brady and John J. Rupp.

### The United States Graphite Company.

In the early part of 1891 the graphite industry was controlled, and to a large extent monopolized, by one company so far as the preparation of high grade graphites and the manufacture of graphite products were concerned. The company in question for a matter of about sixty years had the field to themselves, but on April 29, 1891, The United States Graphite Company of Saginaw, Michigan, was incorporated and while starting in a small unpretentious way, the foundation of this great business was started.

It did not at that time give prospects of being a serious competitor of the larger company, but it progressed step by step, developing slowly until today it is a recognized power in its own field.

There was nothing elaborate about its early life. It procured its mines in Mexico and while the directors and incorporators were convinced of the superiority of the Mexican Graphite over any other then sold, it still remained for them to convince the users of graphite that this was so.



ORIGINAL PLANT OF U. S. GRAPHITE COMPANY

Its first plant was a small frame shed in the northern side of Saginaw. To this small frame shed it hauled and unloaded its graphite ore from Mexico, pulverized and refined it. Its equipment was more or less limited and rather crude. All of the packing of the goods was done by hand and the office was frequently used to pack and label the cans of graphite.

The company was started and developed by the Messrs. Wickes, who are still stockholders, directors and officials in the organization. Its struggle was long and arduous at the beginning, but it so surely developed and became so strongly entrenched that it finally became cramped for quarters and in the latter part of 1904, the present up-to-date plant with its equipment was built or rather started, for ever since the modern plant was erected additions have been constantly added. Today the factory is probably twice as large as when it was first erected in 1904. Products are now manufactured that were not even contemplated at that time. The factory grounds approximate eight acres, which is deemed sufficient to take care of the expansion that is anticipated.

The company moved into its new plant in December, 1904, and a little later the late president, Mr. Eugene McSweeney, was elected by the directors to the executive position. Under his management the progress of the company was substantial and marked, and today it is one of the largest organizations of its kind in the world.

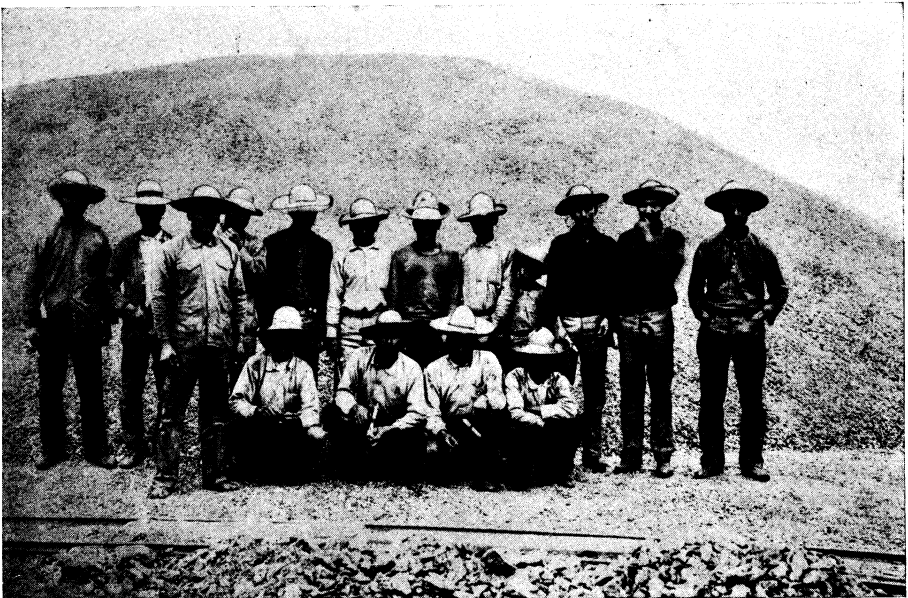
Mr. H. C. Woodruff, vice-president and general manager, entered the service of this company on December 7, 1891, and has been continuously associated with it. He entered the employ of the company shortly after its incorporation, as bookkeeper.

Mr. M. J. Houlihan, sales manager, came with the Company in 1902, as assistant to Mr. Woodruff after the business had started going sufficiently to demonstrate the need of more assistance. He has also been continuously associated with the company since that time, and both have been closely identified with the company's progress.

The company now manufactures practically everything into which graphite enters with the exception of crucibles and pencils, though it is a larger producer of pencil graphite than all the other graphite concerns in the world combined; producing approximately from eighty-five to ninety per cent. of all of the graphite used in pencil manufacture.

In 1916 the company erected a thoroughly modern and up-to-date plant designed for the manufacture of motor and generator brushes, and graphite and carbon specialties, opening up another broad field that will greatly increase the business of the company.

The company occupies a more or less unique position among miners and manufacturers of graphite and graphite products. It has a distinct advantage over its many competitors owing to the fact that it is the only graphite manufacturing firm that mines its entire supply. The supply of its Sonora mines is practically inexhaustible and due to the fact that it is the purest and best amorphous graphite ever discovered, it is not necessary for this company to depend on any other source for its output.



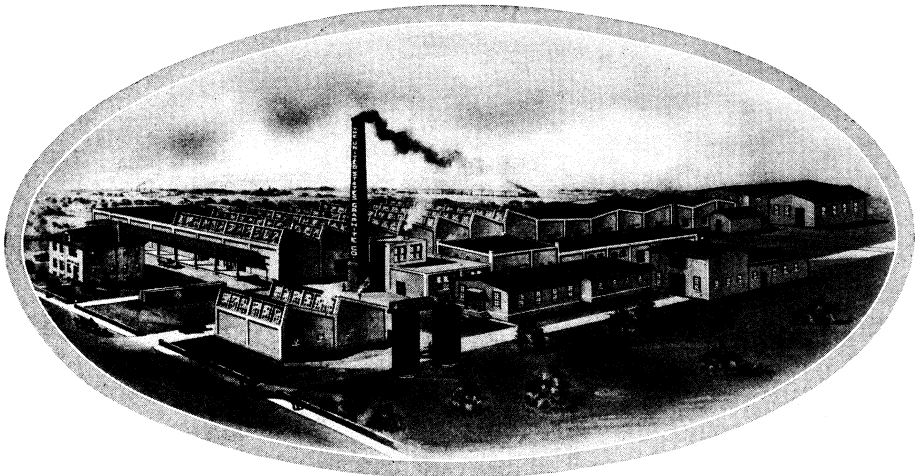
MEXICAN MINERS AND HUGE PILE OF GRAPHITE ORE

The mines are located about twenty miles south of the mining town of La Colorado in Central Sonora. The deposits were discovered in 1867 and work was begun on them in 1891, though it was about 1895 before commercial operations of any importance were attempted. The country adjacent to the mines is dry and little more than a desert except during the rainy season which is July, August and September. The temperature is very high during the Summer and frost never occurs. Water is so scarce that little agricultural utilization can be made of the climate and soil.

Some distance from the graphite mines are large formations of rock, but as one approaches the mine the rock changes to sedimentaries, sandstones around the mine itself, and a little to the southwest of it are heavy limestones. The elevation above sea level is about thirteen hundred feet. The company formerly worked from two shafts, but in recent months it has sunk a third shaft that reaches a greater depth than either of the other two shafts, and has opened up for use a bed of graphite considerably larger than any of the others opened up by the former shafts. There are at least seven beds of graphite in the mines. The graphite as removed from the mines is so soft and friable that a large lump may be taken in the hand and crushed to small particles. It is velvety and smooth to the touch.

Owing to the friability of the bed almost no explosives are necessary as most of the mining is done with pick and shovel. After being raised to the surface the graphite is spread out in the hot sun on a concrete platform to dry, which it does in a short time and then is thrown up in piles to await shipment. From here it is packed by wagon train over the desert and hills to the Southern Pacific Railroad over which rails it finally reaches its destination, Saginaw, Michigan.

The officers and directors of the corporation are William J. Wickes, president; Harry C. Woodruff, vice-president and general manager; Harry T. Wickes, treasurer; Arthur D. Eddy, secretary; and A. S. Harvey.

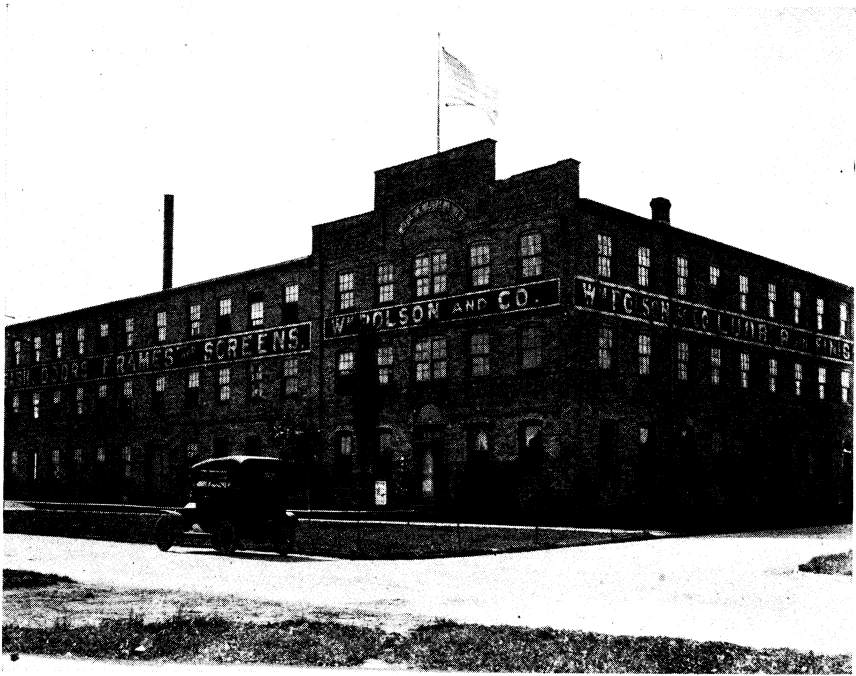


PRESENT PLANT OF UNITED STATES GRAPHITE COMPANY

### William Polson & Company

Among the well established wood-working interests of Saginaw is William Polson & Company, whose factory is located at Hess Street and Jefferson Avenue. The corporation was organized in 1904, succeeding to the business established several years before by White & Polson. The plant was then located on the A. C. White mill property, on South Jefferson Avenue and the Belt Line, but was totally destroyed by fire in May, 1904.





PLANT OF WILLIAM POLSON &amp; COMPANY

Nothing daunted by the loss of plant William Polson reorganized the business under the above title, with a capital stock of sixty thousand dollars, and purchased the present factory building. This three-story brick building, having a floor space of thirty thousand square feet and well adapted to the requirements of the business, was speedily equipped with modern wood-working machinery and put in active operation. The plant has ample railroad switching facilities with direct connection with a trunk line road, for the rapid handling of several million feet of yellow pine, mahogany, oak and other hard woods worked up, and for the shipping of finished product to all points in the Middle West.

The principal products are sash, doors, window and door frames, and all kinds of turned work and interior finish, for the local market and to supply a steady demand in a territory extending as far as the Ohio and Mississippi Rivers. A very satisfactory trade is conducted with Cleveland, Detroit, Flint and other growing cities, contractors and builders appreciating the uniform excellence of the wood products of this company.

Recently the company added a new department to its business, the making of fine mahogany wood finish for show windows, numerous examples of which may be seen in Saginaw. This includes mahogany finish for fine residences and public edifices, and promises to be a successful part of their large business. The company employs a force of fifty men running on a full time basis; and the annual output is valued at about one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars.

The present officers of the company are: William Polson, president; William C. Kenny, vice-president; and John Polson, secretary and treasurer, who, with H. H. Eymer, comprise the board of directors. They are men of high standing and integrity, and deserve the success that has come to their united efforts.

### Herzog Art Furniture Company.

Scarcely more than sixteen years ago a young man, born in 1867 on a farm near the little German village of Frankenmuth, started a new industry in Saginaw. This concern was the Herzog Art Furniture Company, and the founder was John Herzog, whose high ideals, integrity, courage and progressiveness developed a business of wonderful possibilities.

He was one of a family of thirteen children—descendants of sturdy Bavarian Lutherans who settled in this fertile section in the late forties. At an early age he manifested unusual skill in making small pieces of furniture. After a few years spent in working in a planing mill, and in attending the church school in Frankenmuth, he came to Saginaw and for two years was employed in the old Feige-Silsby furniture factory, where he acquired some knowledge of cabinet work and finishing. He then went to Grand Rapids and for twelve years worked in various departments of the largest furniture factories in that city.

Later he went to Europe where he remained for three years, working in factories and inspecting big expositions of furniture in England, Italy, Belgium, France, Spain, Germany, Switzerland and Austria-Hungary. He returned to his native land with well-formulated plans for a model furniture factory of his own.

In March, 1899, shortly after his return to Saginaw, with the assistance of Joseph Grohman, now general factory superintendent of the mammoth Herzog plant, and August Miessler, he established a cabinet business in a very small way. The capital of this infant industry was three thousand dollars, unbounded confidence, perseverance and a thorough knowledge of the business. The little factory was located in a frame building converted from a barn into a mill, at the corner of Cass and Niagara Streets. At first they employed two men and a boy in the manufacture of tables and church furniture in the "knock-down," and used a wheelbarrow to deliver furniture shipments to the railroad station. Soon all the means the three founders could command was expended, and the church furniture project had to be abandoned. This occurrence, however, in the light of subsequent events, was a kind act of fate.

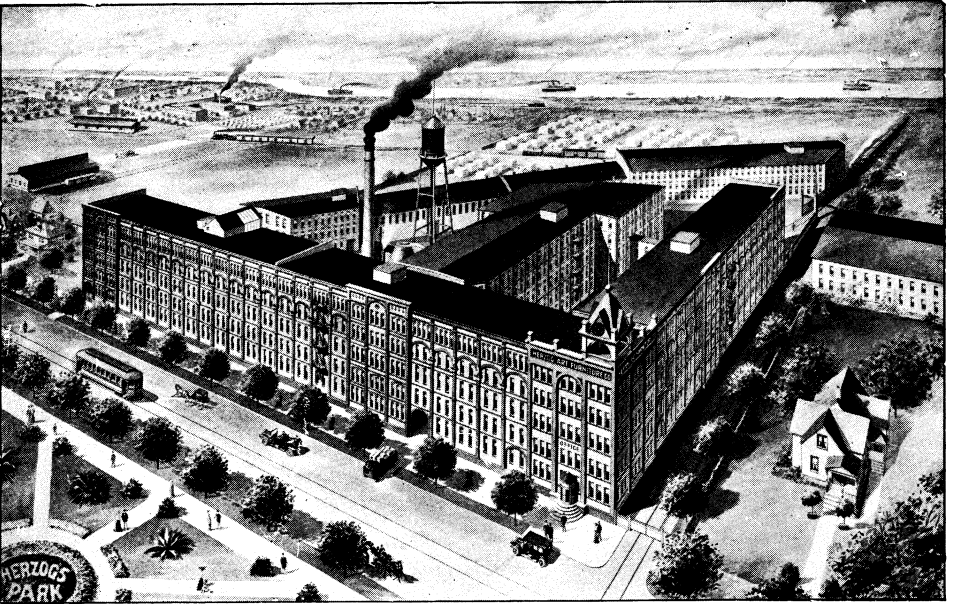
In order to continue the manufacturing business more capital had to be interested in the enterprise, and a plan was formulated for the organization of a stock company with a capital of seventy-five thousand dollars. This work progressed very slowly and would have failed but for the helpful interest of one of our most progressive citizens—John L. Jackson. The critical time came one Saturday night. The next morning John Herzog went to Mr. Jackson's home almost ready to give up his cherished plan. Mr. Jackson's co-operation and encouragement alone could save it.

After the former had told of his tireless and unsuccessful effort to secure the necessary capital, Mr. Jackson said: "You are a church member, aren't you, and usually go to church on Sunday? I am not a church member, yet I like to rest from business cares on Sunday. Don't worry about the matter today. Go to church and drop all thought of business. Tomorrow morning I will come down to your factory, and we will see about it." Mr. Herzog gratefully accepted the suggestion.

The next morning Mr. Jackson looked the factory over and satisfied himself that the value placed on it by its owners was not excessive. Before the end of the week capital was secured, and the Herzog Art Furniture Company was organized, the beginning of the magnificent business now located on South Michigan Avenue at the Belt Line crossing.



JOHN HERZOG



MAMMOTH PLANT OF HERZOG ART FURNITURE COMPANY

The story of the marvelous development of this industry fills an interesting page in our local history. From a small wooden building erected on the new site the plant has grown by almost constant additions under a comprehensive plan of expansion, until today the various units of the five-story brick factory have a total floor space of three hundred and thirty thousand square feet, or about eight acres. The superb plant lends an impression of bigness, of dignified stability and permanence, and of high character of its product. Within its solid walls are installed not only all the ordinary machinery usually found in furniture factories, such as routers, dove-tailers, locking machines, tilting tables, mitre saws, automatic turning lathes, and small tools, but also Saginaw-made machines not found in other factories of this kind. These machines were invented and patented by John L. Jackson, president, and John Herzog, general manager, of the company, and permit this factory to turn out styles of furniture that other manufacturers cannot make except at prohibitive cost. Among such machines, which are built in the Jackson & Church works, is a curious "finger jointer" that face planes the dimensioned stock to take all wind or warp from the boards.

Another notable improvement is the conveyor system of finishing furniture and cabinets. Each piece automatically passes through the operations of applying the finishing coats, drying, rubbing and polishing, all of which are accurately timed to produce the best results without the waste of a minute or second.

In the machine rooms the parts are shaped to the variety of patterns afforded by the five hundred different articles in their line. Many band and jig saws are employed on the extremely artistic designs here produced, and a very high degree of skillfulness is developed. Then the surfaces are sanded and polished. There are special machines for sanding mouldings, both curved and straight, disc sanders for sanding flat edges, belt sanders of several varieties for following the curves of legs, upright belt sanders, spindle sanders and drum sanders.

In the veneering process marvelous technical development and efficient performance are seen. Although a pound of glue is made to spread as far as possible, and yet produce an absolutely reliable quality of workmanship, the value of glue alone consumed in a year is fifteen thousand dollars. There are a number of heaters and drying kilns for carefully conditioning the glued-up stock. Out of these departments are turned oaks, mahoganies and walnuts with wonderfully beautiful grains and flakes, that lend a surpassing elegance to some of the product. For these reasons and the exquisite finish put on, Herzog furniture is in steady demand throughout the United States, and is attracting increasing foreign business.

Old designs in furniture, which at first were followed, gave way to new, and in 1910 the twentieth century bulge arch design was evolved. This beautiful and original design has given the name of Herzog a distinctive place in the furniture world; and it is a maxim of the trade that no piece of furniture made under this stamp of perfection fails of the artistic.

Furniture in the "white" is ready for the application of every known variety of finish, including Adam Browns, Burly Walnuts, Circassians, Enamels and Silvergreys. The finishing department alone is more than three city blocks long and wider than Michigan Avenue. Here are tables, desks, piano benches, dressers, bed-room suites, record cabinets, phonograph cabinets and cases. All cabinets of the famous Sonora phonograph, in all their beauty of design and perfect workmanship, are here finished in exquisite style.

The small beginning of the Sonora cabinet business at a quite recent date makes its phenomenal growth a magical demonstration of the judgment of John L. Jackson and John Herzog in measuring and in developing a widespread demand for a brand new idea. Mr. Herzog had designed samples of music cabinets with the bulge lines, and had patented the application of this design to phonograph cabinets. The idea received scant attention from phonograph manufacturers and distributors until brought to the notice of George E. Brightson, president of the Sonora Phonograph Corporation, of New York. The conception fitted perfectly in his plans to produce an ideal phonograph that would be the epitome of artistic design.

His first order with the Herzog Company was for ten cabinets, and material for fifteen cabinets was cut. These fifteen cabinets having been disposed of, Mr. Herzog went after a cutting order for twenty-five, but received an order for only ten, taking the chance of the phonograph people selling the remainder. He next solicited an order for one hundred cabinets, but the conservative Sonora Corporation would guarantee to take only fifty with the understanding that they were to be held subject to order. Before the order was half completed, so many more phonographs were sold that the Sonora Corporation ordered the entire lot of cabinets finished and shipped to New York.

Meanwhile a fairly complete line of samples had been manufactured, and twenty-five of each number were put through on the first regular cutting order. Before these had been manufactured and sold, new lots of five hundred each were ordered from almost every number. This was only about five years ago (1912), yet at the present time some of these numbers are ordered by the Sonora Corporation in lots of ten thousand cabinets; and in 1916 sixty-seven thousand cabinets were ordered, made and shipped to the phonograph people by the Herzog Company.

The remarkable success of the Sonora phonograph is due very largely to the collaboration of these industrial leaders in producing patented manufacturing processes, patented machinery, and patented designs which have made commercially practical the famous tone quality and tone control obtained by the construction of a patented wooden horn, used only in the

Sonora phonograph and made only in Saginaw. The marvelous beauty of the Sonora cabinets is due both to their superior finish and to their graceful flowing lines obtained by the patented bulge process of making furniture. The instrument itself also has numerous quality advantages over all others, the motor being made by Swiss expert mechanics with generations of experience, while the reproducer is the most perfect sound producer that is made. A matter of particular interest is that the Sonora won the gold medal for tone quality, in competition with every other type of talking machine, at the Panama-Pacific International Exposition at San Francisco, in 1915.

Early in 1917 the business of the Sonora Corporation reached such an enormous volume that a closer co-ordination of interests with the Herzog Company was necessary. A large part of the assembly department of the former company was moved to Saginaw, and installed in the plant of the local company. At the same time a working agreement was entered into by which the Herzog Company contracted to furnish twenty-five million dollars worth of cabinets for the Sonora Corporation, covering a period of fifteen years. This great production will very nearly require the entire facilities of the mammoth furniture factory, with the employment of eight hundred workmen, about two hundred working on night shifts. Another large addition to the Herzog plant is contemplated, and the Sonora Corporation has planned to erect a large assembly plant for the phonographs, on the property owned by the Herzog Company directly opposite the main units of the factory on Michigan Avenue. The phonograph business is believed to be still in its infancy, and what the outcome will be for the Sonora, and of its ally, the Herzog Company, can scarcely be imagined.

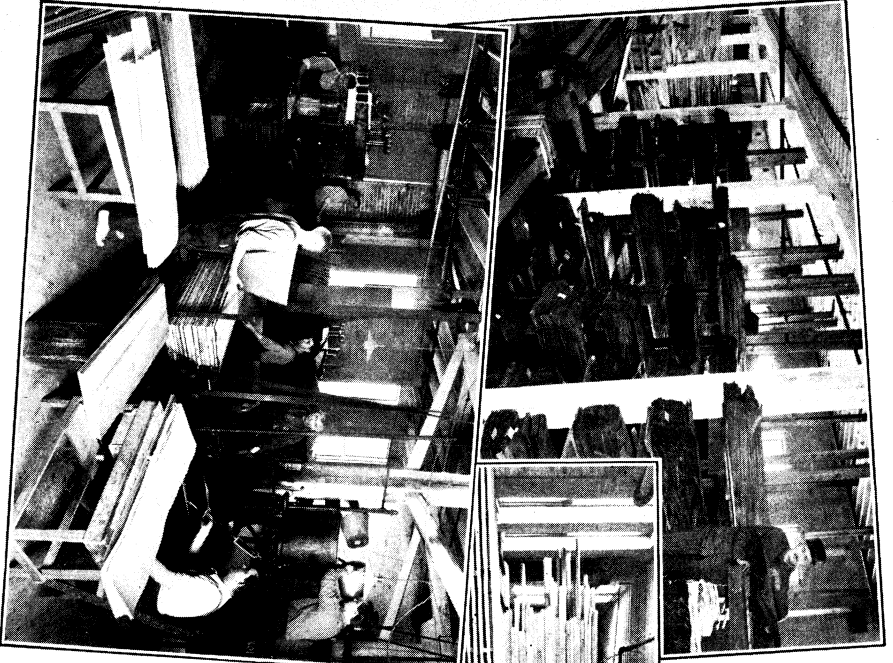
The very highest design produced by the Herzog Company is retailed by the Sonora Corporation at one thousand dollars, the features of which are unsurpassed by any cabinet or piece of furniture made today. It is a unique unit that most perfectly fulfills an artistic purpose. Plans are being developed for the design and manufacture of several new and elaborate models that will be placed on the market at retail prices ranging as high as five thousand dollars.

But what of the personality of the founder of this great industry—John Herzog? A dynamo of energy and enterprise, he radiates inspiration and zeal to all his associates. Through his genius, large inventive ability and humanitarian ideas he has brought the factory to a high degree of efficiency. Bulge Arch furniture is likely to become a monument to him, but whether this is realized or not he is building day by day a lasting monument in the hearts and lives of his workmen.

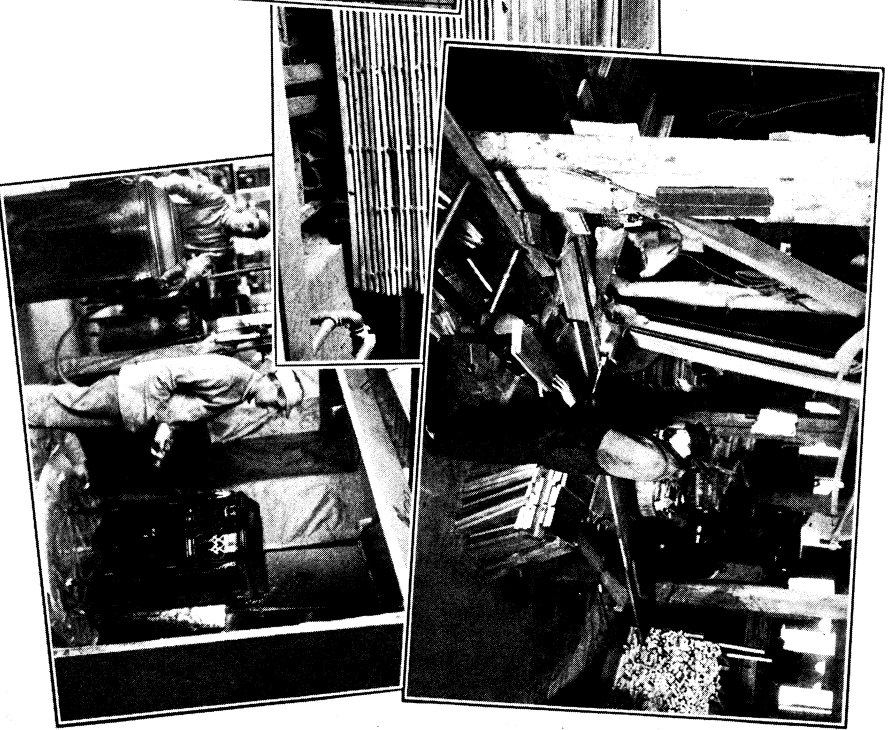
It is his constant aim to be helpful to all, and yet he almost persuades himself that those he helps are more benefit to him than he is to them. He takes a special interest in the apprentice boys, and has established night schools where young men and boys are afforded practical instruction in drawing, designing and woodworking—advantages equal to what a student gets in a technical school. By this means highly trained mechanics and cabinet makers have been developed. The policy of the company is to recruit its leaders from the ranks of its own employees, and with its continued growth practically all the foremen and sub-foremen have come from the best class of workmen in the factory.

In 1916 the company inaugurated large bonuses to its workmen and foremen. Every operation has gradually been put upon the bonus plan of wage payment, which will eventually enable the workmen to greatly increase their wages in proportion to the amount of good work they produce.

Every summer the Herzog employees give a huge excursion and picnic at some lake or city, which is financed by the company, though earned by the workers. This event is followed by an annual banquet in the fall.



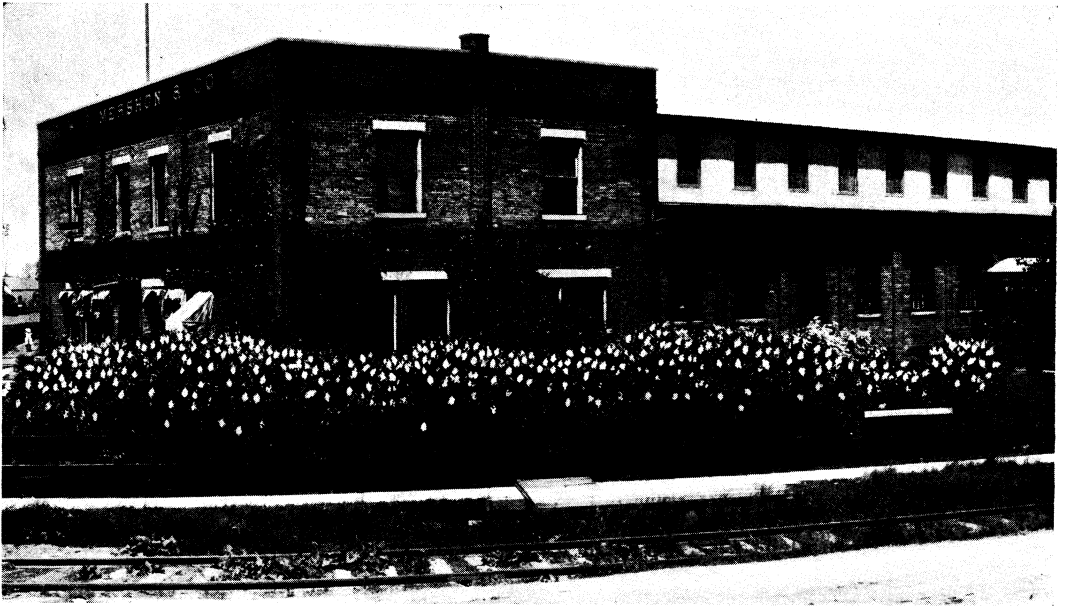
Mahogany Veneers  
Gluing Veneers and Body Boards



Lumber from Dry Kilns

Cutting Small Parts  
Finishing by Spray Process

MAKING SONORA PHONOGRAPH CABINETS IN THE HERZOG ART FURNITURE FACTORY



PLANT OF WM. B.

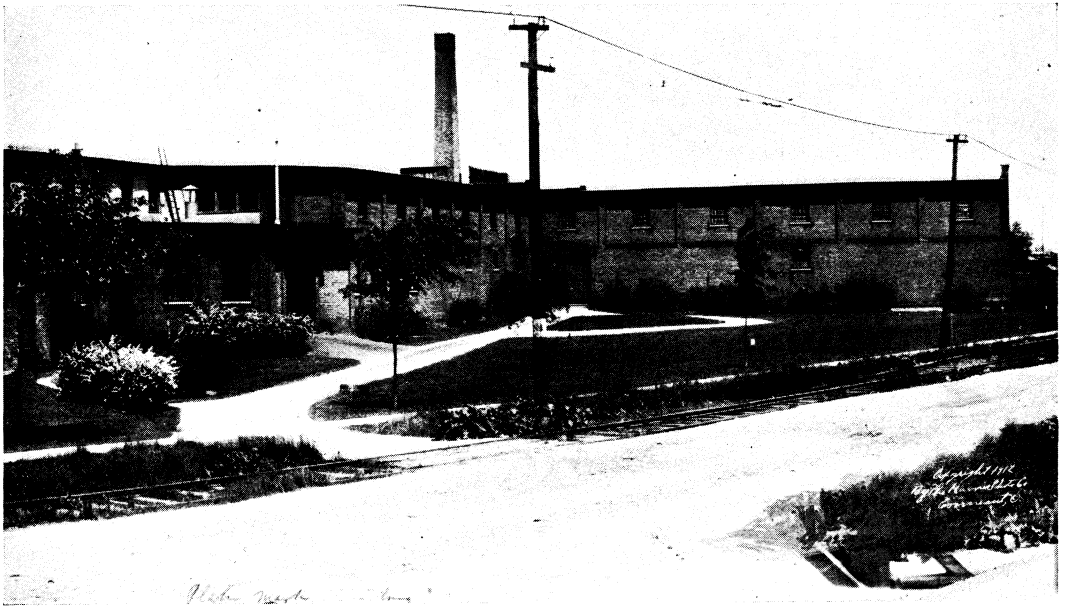
### Wm. B. Mershon & Company

The industrial history of Saginaw contains few names of as much prominence as that of *Mershon*, whose business activities through three generations have contributed very largely to the growth and prosperity of this city. As early as 1854, when Saginaw was little more than a frontier settlement, E. J. Mershon, grandfather of the present principal generation, came to Saginaw. He soon engaged in lumbering, and laid the foundation for the great business which afterward developed. His activities and personality are well remembered by pioneers still living.

Augustus H. Mershon, his son, followed in the lumber business and for years was actively identified with the firm of A. G. Bissell & Company, of which he was the executive head. At that time practically all lumber was shipped by vessel to lower lake ports, in the rough as it came from the saw, a practice which entailed a considerable loss to Saginaw River lumbermen. Mr. Mershon was one of the first lumbermen to perceive the advantage of planing and dressing lumber for shipment, and was the first to make box shooks in Michigan. He was Inspector General of Lumber in 1874, and his views on this subject were graphically expressed in his official reports, excerpts from which appear in the chapter on "The Lumber Industry" pp. 413-14. It was largely by his influence that a number of lumbermen built planing mills and dressed millions of feet of lumber for the Eastern trade. During the eighties and early nineties the Saginaw Valley was one of the largest lumber distributing markets in this country.

In 1876 Wm. B. Mershon took over the planing mill business, which had been well established by his father, and erected a salt works as an adjunct to the business. His brother, Edward C. Mershon, soon joined him in the enterprise and, being of a practical mechanical turn of mind, was given entire charge of plant and equipment. The business was incorporated under the title of Wm. B. Mershon & Co., with a capital of fifty thousand dollars. Under able management the business increased rapidly, and became one





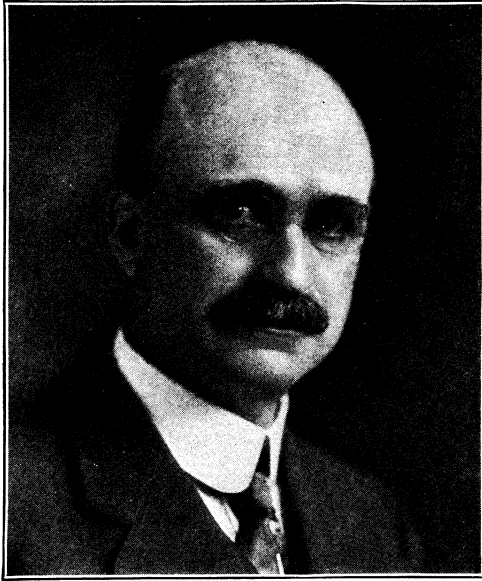
MERSTON &amp; COMPANY

of the largest wood-working institutions in Saginaw Valley. Its products consisted of doors, sash, window frames, interior trim and finish, and lumber for all building requirements.

An important part of the business was the making of box shooks—pieces of lumber cut and dressed to exact dimensions for packing cases and boxes of all descriptions. In those days rough boards were resawed to the required thickness by circular saws, a process which entailed great waste of material. No one had yet devised a practical sawing machine for doing this work with a thin saw kerf and reduced cost.

Early in the eighteen-nineties the Merston Company entered into a large contract with the Standard Oil Company of New York, for shooks used for shipping petroleum products in the export trade. This contract required a large quantity of lumber which was cut at the Shaw & Williams mill, adjoining the Merston planing mill. The lumber from this mill ran uniformly thick, and the waste in resawing it for this box shook order was appalling. At length the oil company, in consequence of changes in the methods of valuation by the custom officials, ordered the box shooks made thinner than before, but the price remained the same.

This circumstance led the manufacturers to attempt a radical departure in resawing, in an effort to secure three thin pieces from a thick one-inch board, where only two pieces were being obtained by the old methods. Experiments had elsewhere been made in resawing by the use of band resaws, but without much success. The needs were so urgent, however, that Edward C. Merston examined the machines then in use in the East, and ordered one for his plant. When received it was set up and operated according to directions with fairly encouraging results. The thin band saws reduced the kerf to a minimum, and three thin pieces of lumber, such as were needed for the box shook order, were obtained from one board, instead of only two. But there were inherent defects in the design and construction



EDWARD C. MERSHON

of this primitive machine, which caused the saws to break and other parts to get out of order, so that the factory operations were constantly delayed, entailing a heavy loss.

The inventive genius of Edward C. Mershon was at once applied to correct and overcome these defects. He studied every phase of the subject and examined every part which seemed to need attention, and at length discovered where the trouble lay. Plans and specifications for an improved band resaw were drawn according to his ideas, and an entirely new machine was built in Saginaw, at a cost of fifteen hundred dollars. This was the first perfected band resaw ever built anywhere, and from the first day of its operation it proved a complete success. Two other band resaws were soon after built on the same plans, one of which was sold to a box shooK manufacturer at St. Paul, and was burned in a mill fire a few years after. The other machine is still in successful operation in a planing mill in Saginaw.

From this beginning, brought about by the necessity of the lumber trade, there has been developed an extensive business. The first improved band resaw, bearing the name of "Mershon," was shipped in 1892, and from that time the demand for these machines has constantly increased. In 1901 the lumber business of Wm. B. Mershon & Company was taken over by a new corporation—the Mershon, Shuette, Parker Company, and in the Spring of 1902 the old company removed its machine shops into a new plant in the neighborhood of the old.

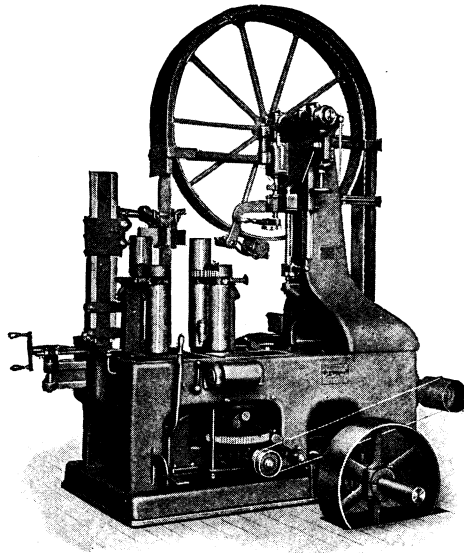
This plant is a modern two-story brick structure, planned to meet all the demands of the business, and is equipped with all essential machinery and tools for the most economic operation. When opened thirty-eight machinists and workmen were constantly employed. Extensive additions to plant and equipment were made from time to time, and in 1917 the concern is the largest in the world making band resaws. Machines are built and assembled complete in this city, about one hundred and fifty of various types and specially adapted to every need, being built annually. About

seventy-five skilled mechanics and workmen are now given steady employment in the shops, and they receive nearly one hundred thousand dollars yearly in wages. The annual production is valued at about three hundred thousand dollars.

The Mershon Band Resaw is known to almost every civilized country on the globe, and the name "Saginaw" has been carried by this home product to the most remote places. Machines have been shipped to Alaska, Australia, New Zealand, to almost every country of South America, to Africa, Sweden, Russia, and to the Island of Borneo. The smallest resaw sells around seven hundred dollars, others at twelve hundred to two thousand, while the big band resaws for saw mills are priced as high as thirty-six hundred dollars.

In addition to economy in operation, the Mershon Band Resaws are desirable from the standpoint of safety, simplicity, and adaptability to a wide range of service. They minimize the saw kerf by the use of the thinnest saw blade possible, resulting in an increased merchantable product from the log or board. The band resaws as made today incorporate all the features which the ingenuity and experience of Edward C. Mershon devised for the perfect operation of thin saw blades.

The present officers of the company are Edward C. Mershon, president; Wm. B. Mershon, vice-president; Hugh B. Brown, secretary and treasurer.



NEW STANDARD 60-INCH BAND RESAW

*A Specialty - Not a Side Line*  
BAND RESAWS

### Germain Manufacturing Company

An important addition to the wood-working industries of Saginaw is the Germain Manufacturing Company, whose large plant is located on South Jefferson Avenue between Rust Avenue and Webber Street. The company was incorporated April 1, 1913, by Louis Germain, president and general manager; Edward F. Germain, vice-president, and Walter M. Germain, secretary and treasurer, with a capital stock of seventy-five thousand dollars, paid in cash.

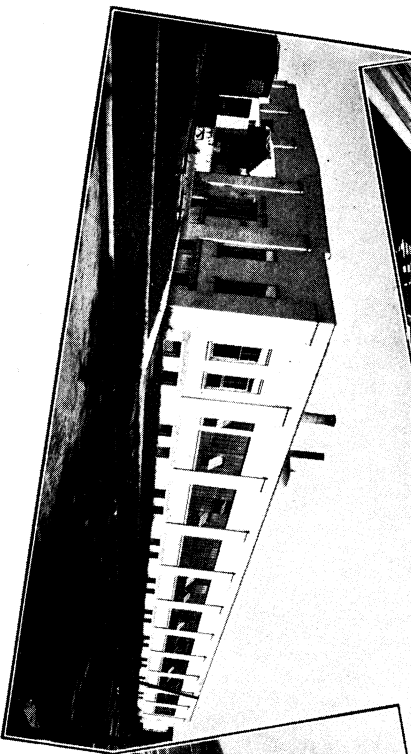
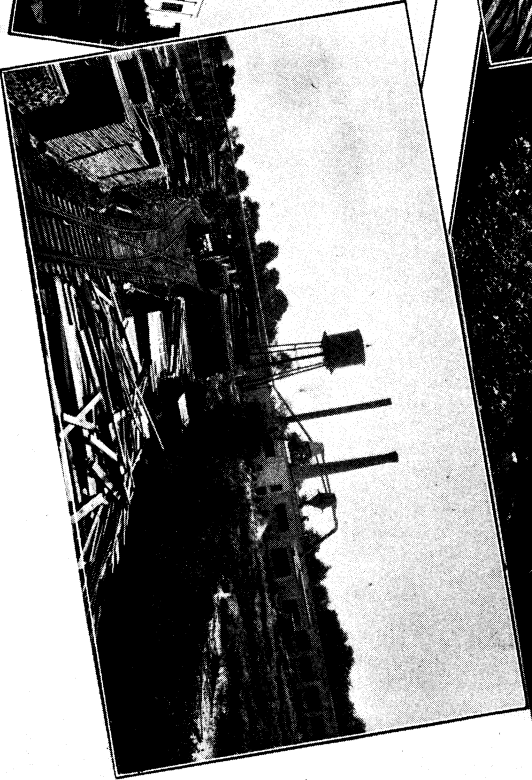
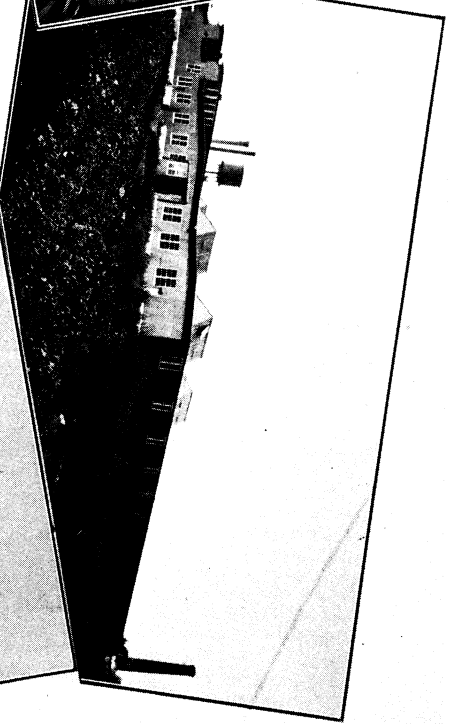
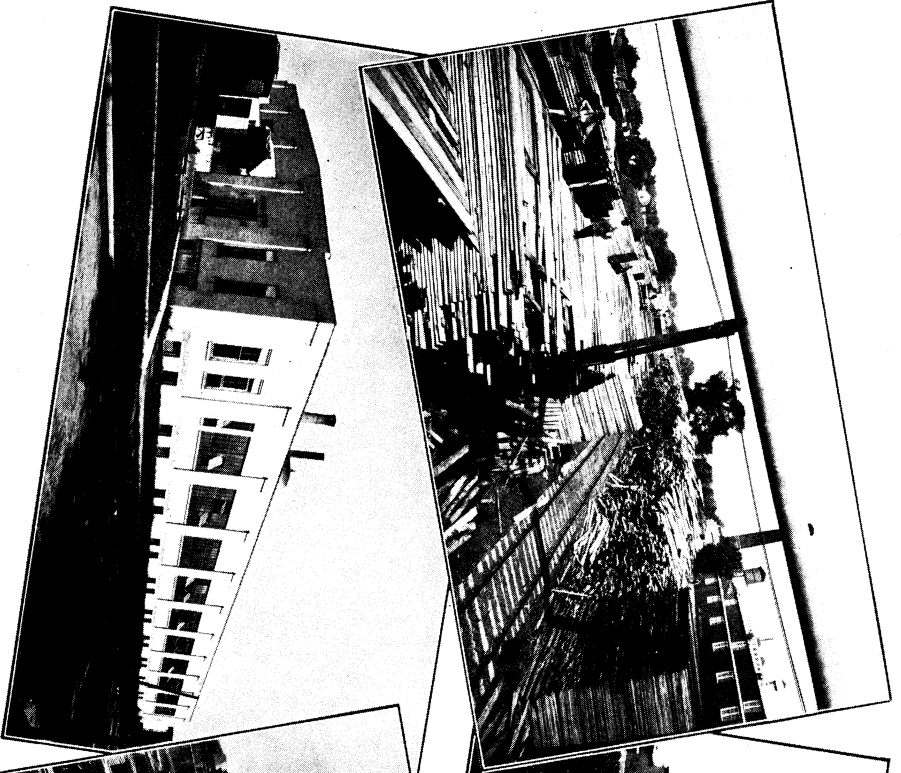
Louis Germain is a thoroughly practical mill man with extensive experience in the wood-working industry, having been for many years superintendent of the great plant of Edward Germain, his brother. Edward F. and Walter M. Germain, his sons, the other active officials of the company, are young men of ability and integrity. By diligence and strict application to business they have aided their father in building up a large and prosperous business, and now hold enviable positions of trust and responsibility.

The original plans of the company contemplated the erection of a modern wood-working plant, one hundred and four by two hundred and twenty feet in dimensions, with high and well lighted basement. This brick structure was designed specially for the making of piano backs and other piano parts on a large scale, and was built at Jefferson Avenue and Webber Street. With the large dry kilns and power plant adjoining, the plant covered almost an acre of ground, while the lumber yard covered two or three acres more.

In this modern factory building was installed the best type of wood-working machinery, some of which was designed especially for the making of piano backs. These special machines included the assembling, or hand screw presses, so devised that the piano back is put together in one operation and taken out as a completed unit. Before this stage is reached, however, there are numerous operations in preparing the wood, gluing the pieces together, sawing the units thus formed into various shapes and sizes, sandpapering and inspection. All this is done by batches of thousands upon thousands of units, as the daily maximum capacity of finished piano backs is two hundred.

All the machinery is laid out and the operations are carried on on a scientific plan, insuring the utmost economy of handling the countless pieces of wood, and also the expedition with which the finished product is turned out. The beech and maple lumber from which backs are manufactured is entirely a Michigan product, and is brought into Saginaw by railroad. It is here sorted and piled for several months air drying, and then placed in one of eight steam heated dry kilns, conveniently located at one end of the factory. After a thorough drying at uniform temperature for eight to ten days, until the moisture is reduced to below five per cent., the lumber is taken out directly into the mill, where it enters upon a regular chain of operations.

At this end of the factory are the numerous saws which rip and cut the boards into pieces of various sizes, and planers and shapers which smooth and form the pieces into the desired shapes. The machines are so placed that the lumber, pieces and parts pass from one to another in regular, consecutive order, so that the handling is reduced to a minimum. There is no retrogression in any of the operations. By a constant and well defined movement, from one end of the factory to the other, the various pieces, after passing through the gluing processes and the screw presses, come out the finished unit—a piano back in the "white." From twelve to fifteen days have elapsed since the dry lumber was taken from the kiln, or about one calendar month since the rough lumber was moved from the pile in the



PLANT AND LUMBER YARD OF GERMAIN MANUFACTURING COMPANY

yard to the dry kiln. At this rate of manufacture it is readily to be seen that from four to five thousand piano backs are constantly in process of making in this modern plant.

When finished and loaded in the car for shipment the piano back is ready for the "bellying" process, which is the placing of the sounding board. This, however, is done by the piano makers in their own factory.

A notable feature of this well planned factory, whose annual capacity is sixty thousand piano backs on an employment schedule of one hundred men, is the high and light basement. In this basement is installed all the shafting and pulleys for driving the various machines. The main drive shaft is set beneath the floor beams, and the pulleys transmit power by short belts through the floor to the machines above. The pillow blocks, or shaft bearings, are set in foundations of concrete, insuring stability and eliminating much of the vibration incident to suspended shafts and pulleys running at high speed.

A ready market for piano backs is found in New York City, Buffalo, East Rochester, Philadelphia, Columbus, Milwaukee and Chicago. The field for the Germain Piano Back is steadily broadening, and the capacity of the plant is so taxed that the manufacture of piano bridges, which at one time was carried on quite extensively, has been reduced to a minimum. It is interesting to note that this piano back is entirely a glued product, no nails, pegs, ties, or screws entering into the combining of the numerous pieces of wood which enter into it.

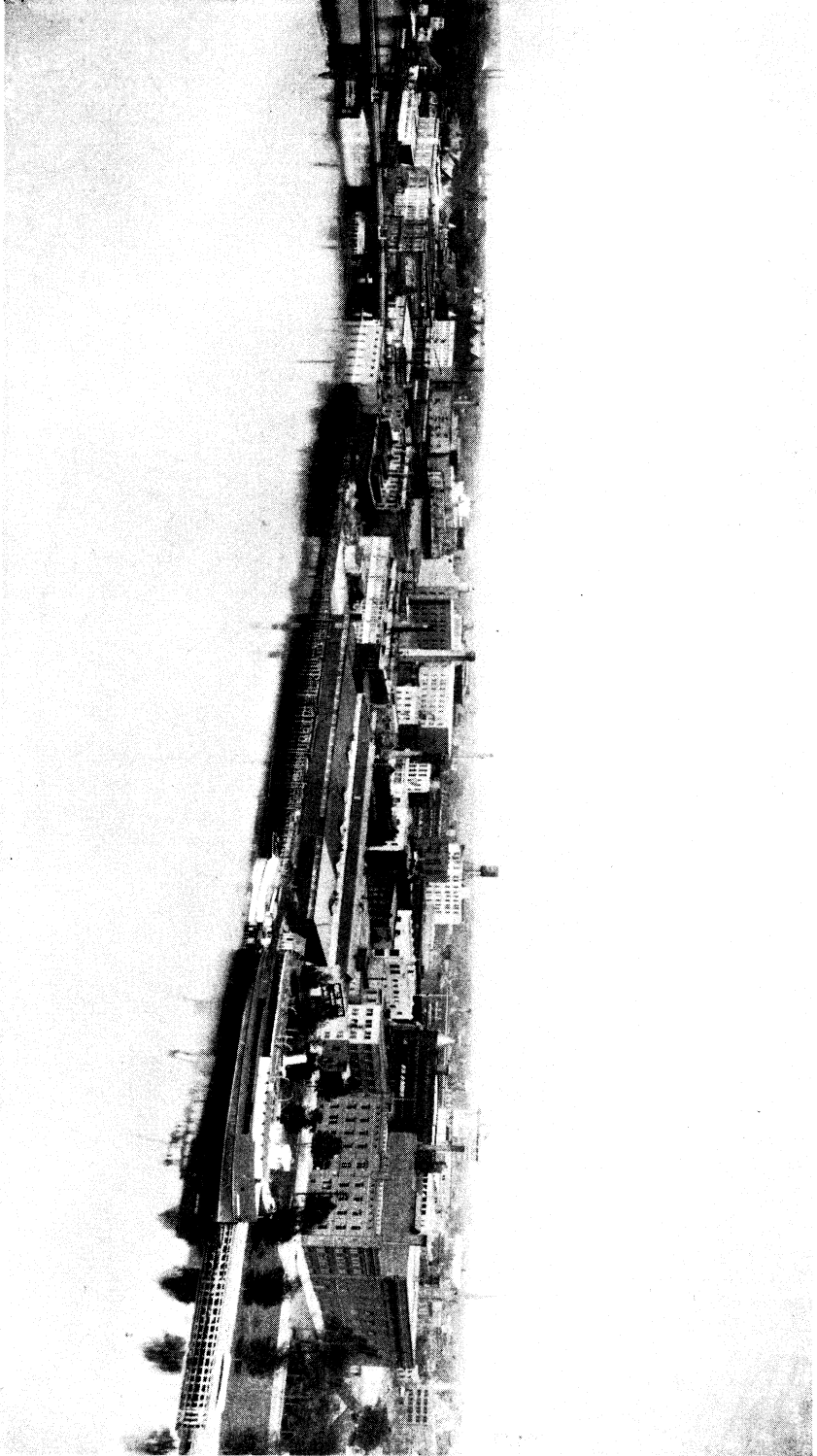
Early in 1916 this prosperous business was augmented by the addition of two new departments, for the manufacture of dimension stock for piano cases and box shooks. In June of that year the company acquired the valuable property to the north of the plant. On this ground was a one-story structure of steel truss construction, iron siding and gravel roof, two hundred by four hundred feet in dimensions. This large building was remodeled and improved, and equipped with new wood-working machinery of standard type. It is admirably adapted to the purpose for which it is now used, and gives steady employment in both departments to seventy-five workmen.

The north side and east end of the structure is used by the box shook department, which uses from six to seven million feet of box lumber, mostly pine, every year. This is an important industry and supplies piano box shooks to a large trade. The output is constantly increasing and an immense business is in prospect.

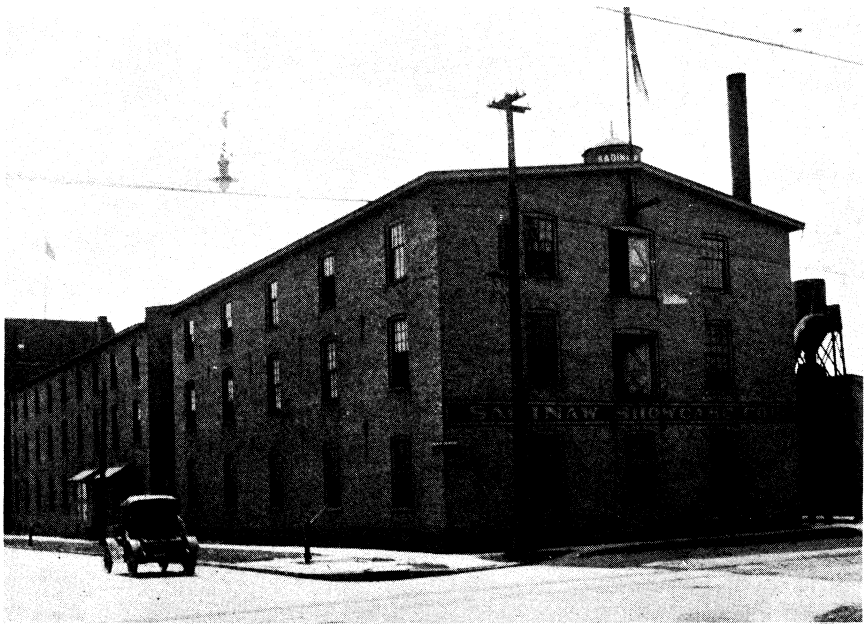
The other, and equally as essential a business to the piano makers, is the dimension stock department, which occupies a large part of the south side of the building. Between this and the original factory is a battery of dry kilns and a large storage shed for selected lumber. The operations of this department consist of taking the kiln dried lumber, which is quarter-sawn yellow poplar and chestnut from Virginia and Tennessee, planing, cutting and gluing it together in various shapes and sizes, and finishing it in the "white," ready for the piano makers to finish and fashion with veneers to meet their own designs for piano cases.

This addition to the plant has a floor space of nearly two acres, making the total factory space under roof about three acres, while the lumber yard and grounds adjoining the main building have an area of about five acres, or eight acres in all.

Although the factory structures are as nearly fire proof as any wood-working plant can be made, every part of the plant, every nook and corner, is protected by the Globe Automatic Sprinkler System; and there are fire pumps in the power plant and water mains and hydrants throughout the yard as a safeguard against fire in the lumber piles.



THE EAST SIDE BUSINESS CENTER FROM TOP OF BEAN ELEVATOR, SAGINAW MILLING COMPANY



PLANT OF SAGINAW SHOW CASE COMPANY

### Saginaw Show Case Company, Lt'd

An industry of special interest to this city is the Saginaw Show Case Company, successors to the Stenglein Manufacturing Company for more than twenty years makers of fine furniture. In 1903 the new corporation was organized and took over the plant and property of the latter concern on Mackinaw Street between Hamilton and Niagara. The principal incorporators and stockholders are: John Stenglein, August Stenglein, C. J. Rice, Henry Meier, F. W. Sawatsky, G. L. Burrows, Jr., S. E. Parrish, J. G. Schemm Estate, E. G. Rust Estate, James A. Nolan Estate and Fred J. Fox.

There was a broad market and steady demand for floor cases and other products of this kind, and the company started making high grade floor cases of attractive design and fine workmanship. Gradually the line was extended to include enclosed wall cases and store fixtures for the drug, jewelry, dry goods, candy and other trades, and a large business was worked up. The field of operations covered the entire United States, and in more recent years a considerable foreign trade has been developed, large shipments being made to leading jobbers of Porto Rico and of some countries of South America.

The woods used are largely native to this section of the country, although more recently mahogany in both solid and veneer finish has become most popular with the trades. The mahogany is imported from Africa and South America, and worked up from the rough boards to the finely finished cases, replete with all the latest fixtures, such as marble base, mirror doors, glass shelves and electric lights. Some special and highly artistic cases have been turned out from this well equipped factory, embodying the latest ideas of arrangement and finish, and costing as much as thirty dollars a running foot.

A considerable quantity of fine marbles is used in the construction of show cases; and bevelled, ground and polished edge plate glass, as well as some fine art glass, products of Saginaw manufactories, are the principal



materials that go into the cases. Thirty-five to forty mechanics and skilled workmen are employed by the company; and the annual production is valued at sixty to seventy thousand dollars.

### Saginaw Mirror Works

The Saginaw Mirror Works, a Michigan corporation, was organized in the Fall of 1904 with a capital stock of ten thousand dollars. A start was made with two men making mirrors for a limited trade, but a year later W. M. Guider became interested in the company, and a plan of operations was laid out which soon indicated a large expansion of the business. The capital stock was increased to twenty thousand dollars, and the plant was enlarged with the installation of needed machinery and appliances to take care of the rapidly increasing requirements. This included the building of an addition to the original plant, at Niagara and Lyon Streets, which is closely connected with that of the Saginaw Show Case Company, whose needs in the line of mirrors and show case tops it supplies, and affords a considerable portion of its business.

Besides the increasing use of mirrors in show cases, the Mirror Works finds a ready market in the furniture trade and with manufacturers of interior finish, which insures a steady volume of business. The market for mirrors of high grade is active and shipments are made to all points in the United States, to Mexico, and to Cuba and South America.

In 1915 a departure was made in the already successful business by the introduction of an art glass department. This includes the making of glass in beautiful and symmetrical designs for the building and allied trades. The art glass is largely used in vestibule doors, stairways windows and for similar purposes in fine residence, public buildings, etc. A feature of this department is the exquisite designs for church windows and other purposes of ecclesiastical nature. These include the use of rich cathedral glass for chancel and altar windows and rose windows, some with large figures of scriptural subjects done in exquisite colors, and readily appealing to the spiritual sense of church people. Although this is special work executed on order



THE SAGINAW MIRROR WORKS

only, it is becoming a considerable part of the total business of the company.

About forty men are given steady employment in the Mirror Works, the total output of which is fully seventy-five thousand dollars yearly. The present directors are: John Stenglein, president; A. U. Stenglein, vice-president; W. M. Guider, secretary-treasurer and manager, and J. H. Dittman and L. Decker.

### **Brand & Hardin Milling Company**

The oldest milling concern in Saginaw Valley, and probably in this section of Michigan, is the Brand & Hardin Milling Company, whose large plant is situated at Niagara and Mackinaw Streets. This prosperous business was founded in the eighteen-fifties by the late Daniel Hardin, who built a grist mill, thirty by sixty feet in size, on the site of the present mill, and conducted a general flour and feed trade for many years.

On April 1, 1878, J. F. Brand took charge of the business, and a few months later was joined in the enterprise by A. C. Hardin, the firm name being Brand & Hardin. This enterprising firm soon after sold the original mill to John H. Shackleton who removed it to Mackinaw, Gratiot and Lyon Streets. A general milling business was there carried on for about twenty-five years. At length the old mill, which had been improved from time to time, was moved to the Belt Line near Gratiot Street, and was entirely destroyed by fire about six years ago.

Meanwhile the firm of Brand & Hardin erected a new, modern roller mill, four stories in height, eighty by one hundred feet in dimensions, on the site of the old mill, and it was equipped with all the essential machinery for making flour of superior quality. The mill had a capacity of two hundred barrels of flour a day, and by its improved process of milling the firm established a high reputation for their various brands. An addition to the mill was fitted with roller process machinery for use as a feed mill, and a considerable business was transacted in that line. The name of Brand & Hardin was the foremost one in the milling trade of Saginaw Valley.

At the time the milling business was expanding the firm also engaged in the manufacture of shingles and salt, products for which there was a steady demand. The shingle mill was situated on the bank of the river adjoining the flour mill, and exhaust steam from the latter was used in some of the manufacturing processes, and was also used in working the pumps and in evaporating the salt brine in the salt block. This utilization of a hitherto waste product of the engines proved an economic measure, and added appreciably to the profits of the firm. The production of shingles amounted to six and one-half million annually, and was continued until 1900 when the available timber became exhausted. The manufacture of salt continued and reached thirteen thousand barrels a year, but later the production was greatly increased by their operation of the Kull block, which had a daily capacity of about one hundred barrels. The salt business finally became unprofitable and the blocks were closed down and dismantled about 1907.

The roller mill which was opened in 1882 and the feed mill in 1885 were augmented in 1906 by the erection of a grain elevator adjoining the mill on the south side. With ample railroad facilities the storage of wheat, oats, rye, barley and other grains for milling and trade purposes was good business practice, and increased the business of the firm. In 1912 a second elevator was built on the premises and used exclusively for the handling of beans. About forty-five women and girls are employed in "picking" beans, and the shipments of this popular article of food are about one hundred carloads a year. From twenty to twenty-five men are given steady employment in the mill and elevators.



BRAND & HARDIN  
MILLING CO.  
FLOUR FEED  
HAY STRAW  
BEANS.

BRAND & HARDIN  
MILLING CO.

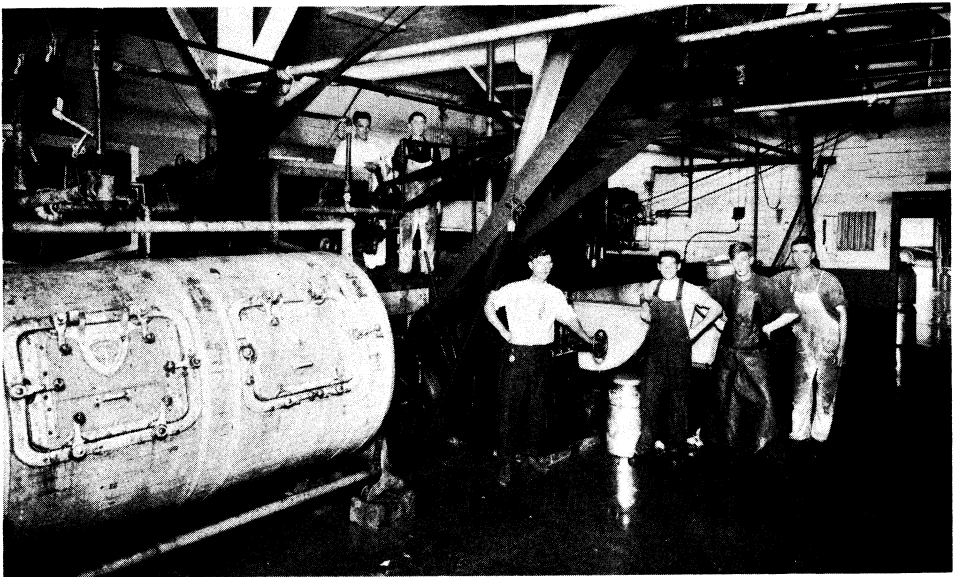
PLANT  
NO. 1001  
AND  
NO. 1002

1000

FLOURING MILL AND ELEVATORS OF BRAND & HARDIN MILLING CO.

The present capacity of the roller mill is two hundred and fifty barrels of flour a day, and so celebrated are their brands that the local demand, and that of the surrounding country, calls for the entire output. The "O. K. Roller Patent" brand is a fancy patent made from winter wheat; "Gold Medal" brand is made from a blend of winter and spring wheat; "Special Patent" brand is a straight winter wheat flour, while "Monarch" brand is an all spring wheat flour. There are also "O. K. Buckwheat" and a self-rising pancake flour of superior quality, which meet with great favor with housewives and the trade generally.

In 1908 the business of Brand & Hardin was incorporated as the Brand & Hardin Milling Company. J. F. Brand is president of the new company, C. H. Brand is vice-president, and W. E. DeWitt is secretary and treasurer. Other stockholders in the company are D. W. Stewart, R. J. Walker and E. L. Levi.



BUTTER MAKING AT SAGINAW CREAMERY COMPANY

### Saginaw Creamery Company

Five years ago the creamery business of this city was augmented by the organization of the Saginaw Creamery Company, whose model establishment is located at 209 North Water Street. Charles F. Burger, the founder of the company, is an enterprising business man whose progressive policy has built up a large trade. At the beginning of the successful business he adopted a system of buying cream direct from the producer, which has been maintained ever since.

The direct shipping system by which shipments of cream are received from all parts of the State, is a very popular one with producers, and the steady supply of rich cream has increased to such an extent that at the end of last summer the output of "Purity First" brand of creamery butter reached a total of seven hundred and fifty thousand pounds. Cream comes from points as far north as the Straits of Mackinaw, as far west as Lake Michigan, as far east as Lake Erie, and a considerable distance south. Cash is paid for each shipment of cream sent in, and the producer of good cream receives the highest price for butter fat, with the usual cream station operator's profit added.

The creamery plant is very favorably located to conduct a business of this kind covering a wide territory. Cream from the producer is received at the railroad stations, is hauled to the creamery by motor trucks, and an accurate record made of it. Each separate shipment is accurately weighed and carefully tested for butter fat content. Great care is exercised in this matter, as correct weights and cash payments have been prime factors in the growth of the business.

When emptied of their rich cream contents the cans are thoroughly sterilized and returned to the shippers ready for further use.

At the present time there are more than four thousand satisfied producers of cream who make regular shipments to the Saginaw Creamery Company. Each and every transaction with them is carefully recorded, so that any particular item or detail may be quickly referred to at any time. Cream producers of Saginaw and adjoining counties, as well as those at a considerable distance from this city, are fortunate in having such a reliable and progressive creamery to take their dairy products.



CLARE H. PARKER

### Parker Dairy Company

The Parker Dairy Company, which is one of the large distributors of Pasteurized milk and dairy products in this city, was established in 1905, and its model plant is located at 228 North Warren Avenue and at 608-12 Johnson Street. The company was founded by Clare H. Parker, whose energy, extensive experience and integrity have built up a very successful business.

Mr. Parker was born in 1876 at Grand Blanc, Genesee County, which was also the birthplace of his parents. After attending the district schools and the Flint High School in boyhood, he took a full course in the Michigan Agricultural College, from which he graduated in 1900. He was superintendent of Towar's Ann Arbor Dairy Farm from 1900 to 1902; and was

manager of the Sanitary Milk Company, Grand Rapids, in 1903 and 1904. The following year he came to Saginaw and founded the business of which he is the guiding spirit.

In 1911 the dairy business was incorporated with a capital stock of twenty thousand dollars. Many improvements have since been made to the plant, and at present the latest DeLaval clarifier and Jansen Pasteurizers are in daily operation. The most sanitary conditions are constantly maintained, insuring absolutely *clean* and *safe* milk.

The milk comes from the same dairies every morning, and is brought to the dairy plant mostly by motor trucks, thus providing at all times a fresh and pure supply. The handling of milk in this plant is entirely by automatic machinery, even to the capping of the bottles, so that it is protected from contamination by human hands.

In 1910 the company began making ice cream of high grade, though on a small scale, but so great has been the demand for "Superior" Brand ice cream that a modern freezing plant has been added. This product is now shipped from Saginaw in all directions to points from ten to one hundred miles distant, and forms a considerable part of the large business transacted by the company.

#### Koehler Brothers

The great and growing importance of the iron and steel interests of Saginaw is reflected in the general activity which attends the industry here, and is an augury of future prosperity of this city. Among the successful concerns in this line is that of Koehler Brothers which for thirty-eight years has been located at 208-12 South Water Street. This old and reliable firm, operating steam forge, bolt works and machine shops, succeeded in 1878 to the oldest business of its kind in Saginaw Valley. It was founded in December, 1852, by Frederick A. Koehler (see Vol. 1, page 359, for portrait), father of the present principal generation. East Saginaw was then merely a frontier settlement and the mechanical needs of the pioneers were few and easily supplied. Mr. Koehler had come with his father from New Jersey and settled in Saginaw City, but was soon induced by Alfred M. Hoyt and Norman Little to locate his shop at East Saginaw. A comfortable house was built at the corner of Water and Tuscola Streets, where the Koehler family lived for a number of years.

The original blacksmith and machine shops were situated on the south side of Tuscola Street, between Washington and Water Streets, where a steadily growing business was conducted for about twenty-five years. During that period Mr. Koehler did practically all the iron work on Jesse Hoyt's vessels, which were built in a little ship yard at the point where the Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad afterward crossed the river, and most of the mill work of Hoyt's extensive manufacturing enterprises.

With the aid of new machinery, steam power, steam trip hammer, blower, lathe and bolt cutter, and all essential tools for rapid and skillful work, the shops were enabled to do all kinds of heavy iron forging and blacksmithing and the making of stair railings, awning frames, etc. "The old reliable worker in iron," says an old advertisement of 1869, "with one of the best machine shops in the West, makes endless chain for carrying away sawdust, slabs, edgings and other refuse of saw mills."

On April 10, 1878, the business was taken over by James A. and Frederick H. Koehler, sons of the founder, and it has since been conducted under the firm name of Koehler Brothers. In 1880 the plant was removed to the present location on South Water Street, having a frontage of one hundred feet and a depth of one hundred and twenty feet, which afforded much needed space and increased facilities for carrying on the increasing business.



KOEHLER BROTHERS IRON WORKS

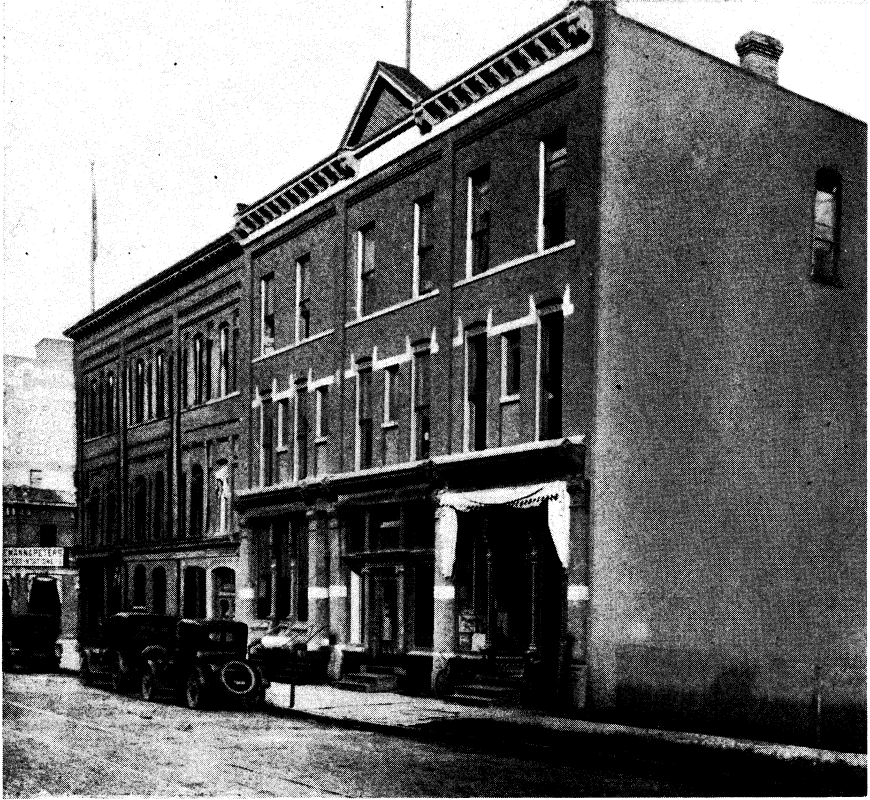
Frederick H. Koehler died in 1880, and the business has since been carried on by Clarkson A. and James A. Koehler, the former, like his brother, being a skilled mechanic and millwright.

The works then occupied a substantial brick building covering practically the entire site, and were equipped with all requisite machinery for doing the heaviest blacksmithing and forging. There were special facilities for making salt and artesian well tools of all kinds, bolts, pole joints, etc., and all the appliances for saw and shingle mills and salt blocks. Employment was given to twenty skilled workmen. The thoroughness with which all the details of the business were carried on, the high quality of materials used and superior workmanship secured for the owners of the plant a widespread reputation. The firm enjoyed the confidence of mill men everywhere, and a large business was transacted in Michigan, Wisconsin, Minnesota, and as far West as Colorado and South as far as Texas.

The present members of the firm are Clarkson A. and James A. Koehler, who have been associated with the business nearly all their lives, and James H. and Charles J. Koehler, sons of Clarkson Koehler. They are thoroughly practical and experienced men in the business, and all the details of numerous iron-working contracts taken by the firm have their personal supervision.

Their line of builders' iron work reaches out all over the country, and, considering the wide line of mill work formerly done, there is scarcely a State not touched by their product. In mill work they still make chains used for conveying sawdust and refuse out of saw mills, and spur chains for bringing up the logs into the mills. Their principal products, however, are steel stairs, gratings, area doors, fire escapes, porte cocheres and ornamental iron work. They also conduct a general forging and machine shop business, and in all their various operations give employment to many mechanics.

In some of their more recent contracts they have installed iron work in public and private buildings in Alma, Alpena, Ann Arbor, Ypsilanti, Caro, Muskegon, Petoskey, Grand Rapids, Kalamazoo, Lansing, Detroit, Flint, Jackson and other cities. While there is no competition locally they do meet with active competition in outside contracts, but their equipment enables them to secure much of the work offered in their line. The firm is very progressive and is one of Saginaw's substantial manufacturing institutions.



WHERE WOLVERINE GLOVES ARE MADE

### Wolverine Glove Company

The diversity of Saginaw's industries is without doubt one of the chief factors of the city's progress and prosperity. This is exemplified by the successful concern known as the Wolverine Glove Company, 308-12 Tuscola Street, one of the local manufactories which owes its expansion to the sheer merit of its product.

The business was started in 1910 by George W. McConnell, who perceived the broad field for cheap workmen's gloves made from canvas, duck or other cotton materials. He had the right idea, an indomitable will and an ample degree of perseverance, and although the beginning was in a very small way the business increased rapidly. A few machines had been set up in Mr. McConnell's home, at 427 Howard Street, and it was not long before his gloves attracted wide attention, and he had all the orders he could take care of. At no time then or since has the factory been of sufficient capacity to make gloves fast enough to supply the active demand.

Meanwhile C. E. Borland had observed the rapid expansion of this new industry. It was literally buried under an avalanche of orders for its pro-



duct, and he soon interested E. A. Robertson in a comprehensive plan for incorporation of the business and a great enlargement of its manufacturing facilities. In November, 1916, the incorporation of the Wolverine Glove Company was effected with the following officers: E. A. Robertson, president; George W. McConnell, vice-president; C. E. Borland, secretary and treasurer.

To provide suitable factory space the company leased the old "News" building on Tuscola Street, a three-story and basement brick structure, having a floor area of about ten thousand square feet. In this building was installed a complete equipment of the latest glove and knitting machines, and on January 1, 1917, the factory began operations. The output was increased more than ten fold at a single step forward, and for the first time in the history of the enterprise did the promoters hope to promptly meet all demands for their product.

This hope was soon dispelled, however, by a greater expansion of the business than had ever been dreamed of, and more machinery was ordered to supplement the factory equipment. In a little more than a year the business increased to a stage where employment is given to one hundred and thirty-five women and girls. The line of gloves, meanwhile, was enlarged, and the company now makes all kinds of workingmen's gloves to meet all requirements of the trade. Its principal outlet is through the large wholesale grocery and jobbing houses, orders being taken for manufacture and delivery months in advance. The popularity of Wolverine gloves is such that more than likely the demand will necessitate a doubling of the factory equipment, and in a few years at most more than two hundred and fifty women will be employed by this establishment.



BEAN ELEVATOR WITH ILLUMINATED WAVING FLAG



MODERN PRINTING PLANT OF VALLEY PRINTING COMPANY

### Valley Printing Company

Every red-blooded American, who is interested in the progress of his State and county, finds pleasure in reading of the achievements of self made men, and particularly of the career of those who have come within his observation. In the application of those qualities of energy, intellect, perseverance and integrity, Saginaw has many worthy examples, among whom is Willis H. Brooks, founder and manager of the Valley Printing Company. Beginning in a small way with limited capital, a print shop in cramped quarters, he has by the display of an indomitable will built up a large business in the better class of printing, employing skilled workmen in two well equipped plants.

Mr. Brooks began his career as a skilled printer in 1878 with the Bay City Tribune, and continued his connection with that paper for about six years. In 1884 he went to Flint as a partner in the publication of the Flint Journal, which soon after became a daily paper. After a precarious existence for several years this property was sold, and Mr. Brooks interested himself in job printing which ever since has been his occupation, and a very successful one.

It was in 1893, following a year of hard work in soliciting good printing for a local concern, that Mr. Brooks, in association with M. A. McConnelly, started a small print shop in the Exchange Block, at the corner of Genesee Avenue and Tilden (Water) Street. The room was only twenty by fifty feet in size, filled with good printing machinery and equipment, and for the first time in his experience in this city was Brooks able to furnish the high

grade printing his customers were demanding. "Quality First" was, and always has been, his watch-word, and the remarkable success which came of his efforts was due very largely to strict adherence to this policy.

Five years later, when the business had outgrown the space and the location where it was started, the whole establishment was removed to the Brewer Block on North Franklin Street. The floor space available was twenty by eighty feet, but this was enlarged the following year by the addition of an adjoining store, giving a total space of forty by one hundred feet. The location was a very favorable one for a business of this kind, and the mechanical equipment was largely increased and renewed, so that the firm was able to turn out the highest class work in general commercial printing, including catalogues, pamphlets, etc., in large editions.

The increase in their facilities necessitated the addition of a complete and up-to-date bindery with equipment for making all kinds of loose leaf books and devices. This was a long step forward, and was soon reflected in a considerable increase in the business. Besides attending to the binding work incident to a large job printing trade, a general binding business is carried on. At about this time their field of operations was enlarged to cover all the central portion of the State, and connections were made with some of the largest corporations, for a considerable part of their printing orders.

In 1910 the trade developed in Flint and vicinity became so promising that the firm purchased the business and plant of the Hammaker Printing Company in that city. The equipment of this plant was overhauled and improved, and additions made to it from time to time. It is operated as a distinct unit and proves a valuable feeder to the Saginaw printing plant. There is a large printing trade in Flint, especially with the motor manufacturers, and much of this business comes to Saginaw through the Flint branch of this company.

That the printing plants are well equipped to handle all kinds of catalogue and book work is well known to the trade, and the Saginaw plant is said by competent judges to be the best balanced print shop in Saginaw Valley. This is largely due to the fact that, following the disastrous fire of May, 1916, which destroyed much of the fine equipment, entirely new presses and mechanical appliances were installed. In June of that year the new plant, removed to the three-story brick building at the corner of North Franklin and Tuscola Streets, started printing operations. This well lighted and conveniently arranged shop has a floor area of about six thousand square feet, more than six times the space of the original shop. All the machinery is of the latest approved type, one machine alone costing more than twice the original investment of the firm.

A machine of particular importance in this model printing plant is the Monotype type setting machine, which is the only one of its kind north of Detroit in this section of the State. This wonderful machine, which is used in the largest printing establishments in this country, does everything that any type setting machine will do and much more besides. It is especially useful and economical in setting tables and in statement work, as it sets all rules, leads and slugs and makes type of any size and face. Much hand composition is eliminated, the work of the shop expedited, and the costs reduced. It has many other advantages over other type setting machines.

The press equipment consists of large cylinder and job presses, all of the latest types and improvements. All machines are electrically driven by separate motors.

In the stock room is to be found at all times a full line of linen, bond, ledger and book papers, which is drawn upon to fill orders for all kinds of catalogue, book and job printing work.

### Seemann & Peters

This well known and reliable printing house, the publisher of the new History of Saginaw County, enjoys the distinction of being the oldest in its line in Saginaw Valley. Thirty-eight years ago Joseph Seemann and Charles H. Peters, Senior, both veterans in the printing and publishing business, joined forces in a co-partnership under the above name, which continued until the death of Mr. Peters on November 12, 1910. In the following year the business was incorporated with Joseph Seemann as president, Charles H. Peters, Junior, vice-president, and Edwin C. Peters general manager. The business thus founded has developed rapidly, and the plant, operating all the departments comprised under the general art of printing and engraving and book making, is now one of the most complete in this section of the State.

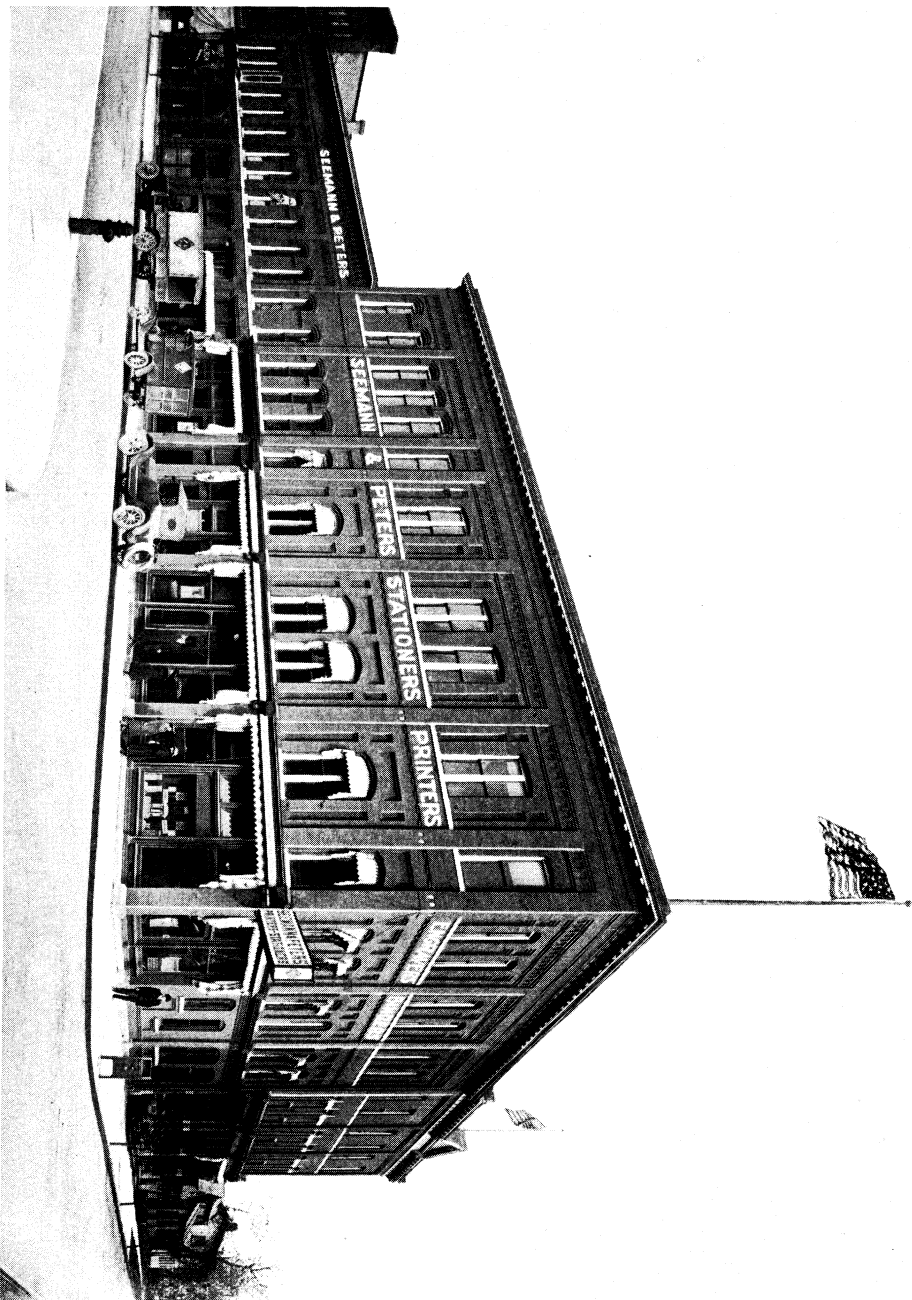
Opening a job printing shop in 1879 in a small room fifteen by twenty feet in size, on the second floor of the building at 319 Genesee Avenue, the firm of Seemann & Peters began a long and successful career. In those days everything was done by hand, it was all hand composition and very often hand power that operated the presses. Two or three job presses, with such an equipment of type as would serve a small print shop, comprised the outfit, but by indomitable will and energy the partners gained a very strong patronage.

As the business increased larger quarters were needed, and in 1885 the firm acquired sixty feet of frontage on Tuscola Street, at Nos. 307-309-311, and erected thereon the Saginaw News Building to which the business was removed and the facilities increased to handle the rapidly growing trade.

One of the important events in the formative period of the business was the founding of the Saginaw Evening News, now the Saginaw Daily News, the first issue of which appeared May 2, 1881. Although the paper was launched on troubled seas, both its promoters had great faith in the undertaking, and through their strong personalities and energies and the able management of Mr. Seemann, the enterprise became thoroughly established and the paper entered upon a prosperous career which has continued to the present time. Later, finding that the paper conflicted in certain ways with their increasing printing business, they sold the Evening News to E. N. Dingley, of Kalamazoo, who took charge on February 15, 1893.

About 1900 the firm enlarged its plant and increased its facilities for handling high-class work, by the acquisition of the property measuring one hundred and eighty by one hundred and twenty feet, at the corner of North Franklin and Tuscola Streets, adjoining the News Building. The cost of this property and the improvements then made in the building and the purchase of improved machinery, was forty thousand dollars; and by rearrangement of the plant the Evening News Company took additional space for its editorial department. A third story was added to the corner building for the exclusive use of the bindery, which is managed by Edward Heim. The bindery is in itself a large and complete plant, with machinery and expert workmen for producing all kinds of blank books and high class general book-binding.

An important feature of the business is the thoroughly equipped art engraving and electrotyping department, which for a number of years has been under the management of Charles H. Peters, Junior. The process engraving business was started in Saginaw by O. M. Pausch in 1882, and from that small beginning a large business has been developed. The electrotyping department was installed in 1900, and is now a large part of the growing business. Commercial photography is a branch which is commanding more attention, and thousands of fine photographs of public buildings, factories,



PRINTING, BINDING, ENGRAVING AND OFFICE OUTFITTING ESTABLISHMENT OF SEEMANN & PETERS

machinery, manufactured products and live stock are taken yearly for the embellishment by illustration of catalogues, circulars and other advertising matter.

Some ten years ago another important branch of the business was created in the stationery, office outfitting and plate printing and die stamping department. The large corner store with show rooms above for the furniture is a fitting adjunct to the progressive printing, engraving and binding establishment, where all classes of office furniture, safes, metal filing cabinets and business appliances, together with social stationery, fine leather and brass goods can be obtained. For the last six years this department has been under the management of Lynn B. Emery, who literally grew up in the stationery business.

In 1914 Seemann & Peters purchased of F. & C. Reitter the old established German newspaper, the *Saginaw Post-Zeitung*, and removed the entire printing plant to its own building on Tuscola Street. The *Zeitung* is the oldest weekly newspaper in the Saginaw Valley, having rounded out a half century of continuous publication. The *Post* was consolidated with it in 1887. The acquisition of this prominent German newspaper enables Seemann & Peters to produce all kinds of German job printing, which is considerable in this thickly populated German community.

The *Post-Zeitung* is a first-class publication, sets its reading matter from a linotype machine set with German letter characters, is ably edited by a veteran journalist, Mr. Hans Dabis, and is managed by George A. Klette, who has filled this responsible position on the paper for nearly ten years. The *Post-Zeitung* circulation exceeds four thousand copies, and reaches every locality where Germans have settled in Northeastern Michigan and in the Upper Peninsula.

The *Saginaw Daily News*, which is controlled by the Scripps-Booth interests, in August, 1916, removed to the new building at Washington and Germania Avenues. This left vacant a large part of the Franklin Street property, as well as space in the old News Building, and with characteristic enterprise Seemann & Peters proceeded to remodel the former structure to house under one roof all the departments of their extensive business. The ground floor was practically rebuilt, walls and partitions changed, and concrete foundations laid for the big cylinder presses and other heavy machinery. All openings between the two buildings were then closed, and the Tuscola Street building was leased to the Wolverine Glove Company. Merrill & Kren, an old and reliable plumbing concern, occupy a portion of this building.

With the beginning of 1917 the entire business of Seemann & Peters is consolidated in the remodeled building at Franklin and Tuscola Streets, with a floor space of more than forty thousand square feet. While not the largest, it is yet one of the most complete establishments of its kind in the State, embracing all the allied trades of the printing class, designing, plate printing, electrotyping, stationery and office outfitting, and publishing of the *Saginaw Post-Zeitung*. On the first floor are also the general offices of the Company, very conveniently arranged for the efficient conduct of the business, which comprises seven distinct branches.

The printing department has been developed through many years, until the composing room alone occupies twenty-five hundred square feet of space, with a complete equipment of labor-saving machinery and with facilities for putting in type the most intricate of general book and special composition. Two of the latest design linotype machines give facilities for the rapid handling of all kinds of composition work, including books and catalogues, of which the Company does a large volume of business. In the press room is a battery of five large cylinder presses and seven platens, all operated

by electric power through separate motors, as are also the paper cutters, ruling machines, staplers, binders and other small machinery in the various departments. This large part of the business is efficiently managed by Carl Schossow, who has been connected with the printing trade since boyhood and identified with Seemann & Peters for several years.

An average of sixty-five men and women are employed in the various departments of the business, and the monthly pay roll, not including the executives, exceeds four thousand five hundred dollars, while the annual business transacted by the Company is about one hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

### Industry Among Blind Folk

What the blind folk of Michigan are doing to earn a living, renew their hope, regain their usefulness and self-respect, and brighten their lives, is graphically told by the notable work of the Michigan Employment Institution for the Adult Blind, which was established in this city in 1903-5. It was during the governorship of Colonel Aaron T. Bliss that the Legislature passed a bill to create this institution, and it was located on Houghton Avenue opposite beautiful Bliss Park, which had been given to the City of Saginaw by Mr. Bliss.

The question, "What can the blind do for a living?" is answered in a logical way by an enumeration of their activities in those occupations in which they are least at disadvantage with seeing competitors. As a result of this rational system, fully one-half of the three thousand blind folk in Michigan are self-supporting.

On the theory that all real happiness is founded on productive effort, the keystone of this institution is Industry. It is a trade shop, pure and simple, for blind people and those partially blind, between the ages of eighteen and sixty; and many have learned a self-supporting trade in six months to a year, and returned to their homes to follow it. Some opportunities also exist in business, which appeal to energetic and ambitious blind people, and progress has been made in perfecting a special commercial course, in addition to literary, musical and manual training afforded.

The apprentices, who always form the major part of the enrollment, as it is intended they shall, are allowed their board, lodging, washing, and instruction; and, after a trade has been learned they become wage-earners, if they care to remain. They are then put on the payroll and paid by the piece at current wage rates, but begin at once paying for their living expenses at the nominal rate of two dollars and fifty cents a week. At this rate the slowest worker has earned above his living a dollar in a month, while the skilled and rapid operator has cleared from twenty-five to thirty dollars in the same time.

There are about one hundred inmates in the institution during the greater portion of the year, of whom seventy are men. This disparity in the sexes is due to the fact that the problem of how best to care for and give profitable employment to blind women, has not been solved. New industries are being introduced, but the difficulty seems to be in finding occupations adapted to women's strength and endurance, at which they can work rapidly enough to be self-supporting, and which they can follow when they return to their homes. A few of these inmates are employed in sorting broom corn, or selecting feathers for duster-making, besides those who are engaged in the direct work of housekeeping in the institution. The visitor's attendant is a blind girl, and she shows people around the buildings so fearlessly that many refuse to believe that she is entirely blind. The seamstress is a blind girl, and does all the mending and making of table-cloths, napkins, pillow-



MAKING FEATHER DUSTERS AT BLIND INSTITUTION

cases and sheets, using a sewing machine as well as any of her sighted sisters. Since a blind girl was put to work in the kitchen the dish washing has been done satisfactorily.

#### Chief Occupations for Men

From time immemorial broom-making has been the chief occupation for blind men, and in the Michigan Institution it forms the principal trade taught. This must always be so because a considerable number of blind men elect to remain as wageworkers in the institution, and some steady and profitable work must be given them at all times. There is always a ready market for brooms of different grades and sizes, including whisk brooms, and the making of them is simple and well adapted to handwork. Many blind men take to it instinctively and soon become proficient workers. As nearly all the work is done by hand, very little machinery is used, and it is of the simplest kind. Each apprentice learns every process in the making of a broom, so as to be able to make one completely; but when he becomes skilled in the whole operation he generally chooses some particular process in which he is the most adept. By this practice the workers become rapid operators, and the production of the shop is greatly increased.

In sewing brooms the accuracy and precision with which the blind workers use their fingers for eyes, is astonishing. One of the sewers is also deaf and dumb, but despite his double affliction he is one of the most cheerful men in the shop. His other faculties seem to be acutely attuned to every sensation, to every vibrant pulse of the shop, for when the superintendent enters, that fact is instinctively borne to him. With less fine perception the other sightless ones determine the same fact by the distinguishing foot-falls of his step. This blind and deaf and dumb man recognizes his friends by passing his hands quickly over the face, with a light and hardly percep-



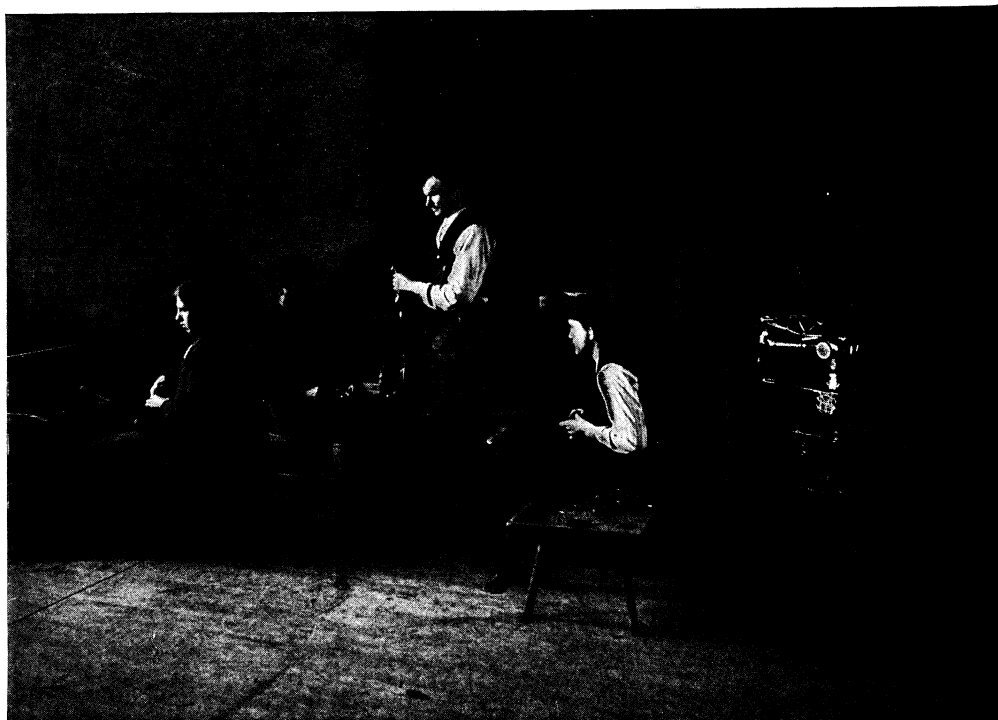
tible touch. He converses with the foreman and with other inmates thus afflicted, by use of the double-handed alphabet of the dumb. They simply take hands and the reader with his fingers follows the motions of the other's hands, conversation being thus carried on quite smoothly.

Feather-duster making is the second industry in importance; about fifteen kinds of dusters being manufactured, from the gilt-edged affair with yellow feathers handsomely striped and tinted with delicate colors, to the common cheap sort for ordinary, everyday use. The turkey feathers as received in the shop are wrinkled and matted together, and after cleaning are sorted to lengths, the different divisions on the measuring board being indicated by little brass knobs, which the blind operators feel.

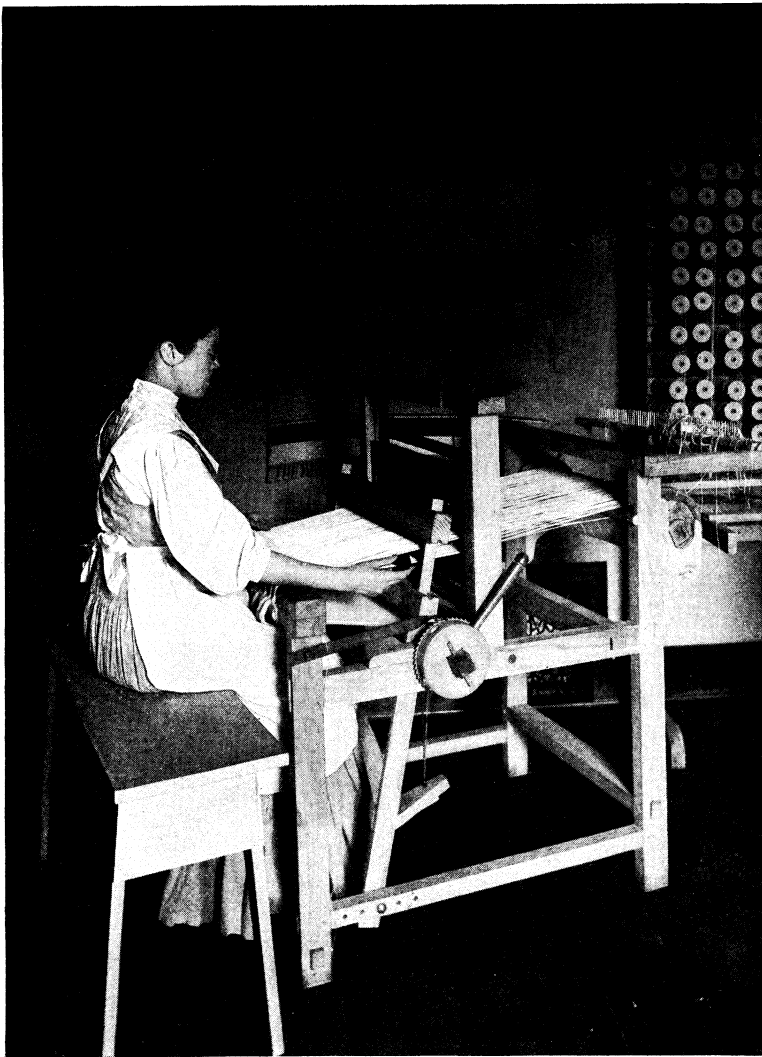
Of the industries which blind men may learn in the institution and follow outside in their home towns, cobbling and rug-making offer the greatest returns. Almost any corner of the main street in the village will support a little cobbler's shop, and all the work is brought in and called for which is an advantage to the blind workman. All the shoe-repairing for the inmates of the institution and some from outside is done by the blind cobblers, and they have even undertaken the making of shoes for themselves. The accuracy, style, and finish of their work is remarkable. Rug-making from old carpets offers many advantages to blind men. The work is simple, the looms suitable for their work are inexpensive; and, where the worker is well known plenty of weaving can be found. All those from the institution, who have set up looms in their home towns, have done well.

#### Employment Suited to Women.

The profitable occupations suited to the physical limitations of blind women are limited to chair-caning, raffia-work in basket-making and other forms, tapestry weaving, stenography and typewriting, hairdressing and



BLIND COBBLERS MAKING SHOES FOR INMATES OF THE INSTITUTION



BLIND GIRL AT TAPESTRY LOOM

massage, and domestic science. Of these tapestry weaving and stenography are, perhaps, the most promising. A large amount of chair recaning is done in the institution, mostly by the blind past middle age, and is to women what broom-making is to the men, in furnishing steady and at the same time profitable employment.

The tapestry looms, which are constructed to meet the special requirements of the blind, are said to have solved the industrial problem for blind women. They are operated entirely by hand; but by diligent application the difficulties have been overcome, and towels, table scarfs, sofa pillows, laundry bags, and similar articles are woven entirely from the raw material. Complicated designs in flowers, trees, animals, emblems, and geometrical lines and figures, are reproduced in the linen with absolute faithfulness and exquisite finish. The artistic touch, too, reveals a conception so subtle, and deftness so precise, as to seem incredible in persons without sight. The sense of feeling is, in this absorbing work, most highly specialized.

The paper pattern by which the design to be woven in the linen is communicated to the mind of the blind operator, is a marvel of simplicity, and is easily made by a sighted person. A small sheet of ordinary cross-section paper, such as is used by surveyors, and which is ruled in little squares one-eighth of an inch in size, is embossed by pin pricks, so that each one represents a thread of the warp which enters into the figure. Likewise, other pricks on the vertical lines reveal the outline and composition of the figure, and by them the woof is laid. The blind operator, by an exceedingly light but rapid touch reads a portion of the pattern, and lays down as many threads as called for by the pin pricks. The particular shuttle is then slipped through, and the operation is repeated until the figures and the fabric itself is finished. A table scarf, twenty by twenty-eight inches in size, with a pine tree design done in green, was made in fourteen and one-half hours, and the cost, including the linen and silk, was one dollar and seventy-four cents. The actual market value of the scarf was considerably more; the difference representing the returns for the operator's time and a reasonable margin of profit.

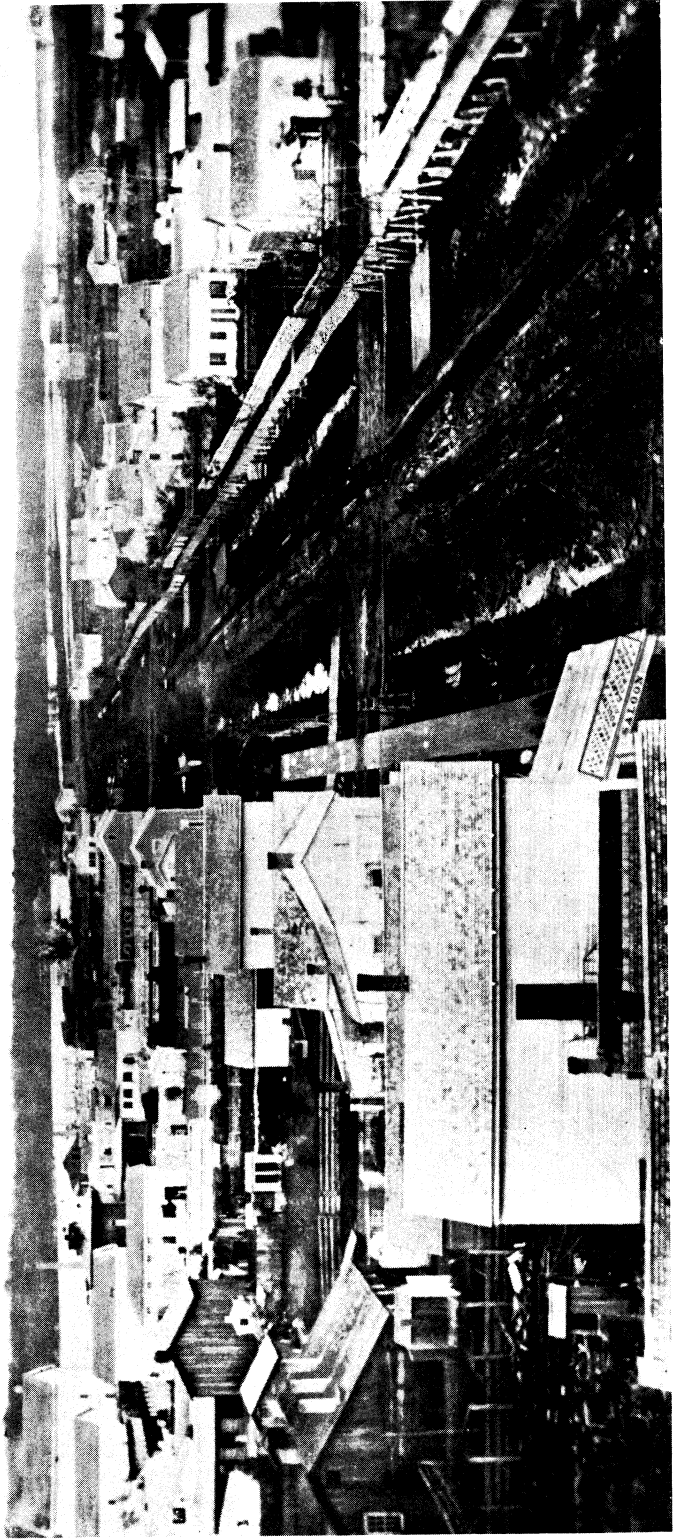
Shorthand for the blind is an assured fact, and is now regarded as a practical field for them. This seemingly impossible accomplishment is made entirely feasible by the use of a wonderful machine, so simple in its mechanism, yet arbitrary in its action, as to surprise those who have witnessed its operation under the deft manipulation of the sightless, skilled in the art. It weighs only nine pounds, and has only six keys with which to form all the combinations used in the system; yet the operator can take the most rapid dictation and afterwards read the notes correctly. The process is simply to press on the keys with a quick, elastic touch, by which the raised shorthand type cipher is printed on a slip of white paper, which unwinds from a large spool and travels across a tray on the top of the machine. After the dictation has been taken, the paper is rolled back again, and is then read with the fingers and transcribed on the typewriter.

#### **Learning to Read and Write.**

Instruction in the use of the ordinary typewriter, and in reading the various point systems for the blind, are important courses taught in the institution. It is given under the direction of A. M. Shotwell, the able librarian who, though blind, is an authority on all matters pertaining to those so afflicted. Many of the inmates, who became blind in later life, and have had no chance to learn to read or to use the typewriter, find these privileges of the greatest value. To be able to read once more, even though it be slow and a laborious task, and to communicate with others by putting his thoughts on paper, after years of not having written a single letter, is a source of boundless pleasure to every blind person.

One of the most important features of the institution is the Free Lending Library, which is maintained for the use of blind folk in Michigan and adjoining states. By the provisions of the Rucker Bill, reading matter for the blind may be sent free of postage anywhere in the United States, when sent from and returned to a free lending library. Scattered throughout Michigan and other states are many blind people to whom books of the various Braille point systems are sent when asked for, and after being read or studied are returned to the library. Thus to many not in the institution, hours of recreation and profitable study are given, as the list of books includes works of history, poetry, fiction, science, music, and current literature, including a magazine regularly published in the Braille.

The Michigan Employment Institution for the Adult Blind is ably managed by Frank G. Putnam, who was appointed superintendent on May 9, 1910. James M. McCaren is president, and Earl F. Wilson is secretary of the board of trustees.



[From a Daguerreotype preserved by J. S. Estabrook, now owned by W. B. Mershon]  
WASHINGTON STREET, LOOKING NORTH FROM GENESEE STREET, ABOUT 1860

## CHAPTER XXI

# VARIED COMMERCIAL INTERESTS

Primitive Trading Posts—Trade Development Slow—Little Items of History—The First Taverns—Hotels of Saginaw City—Hotel Fordney—Building of Bancroft House—The Opening Celebration—Toasts—Finis of the Old House—New Hotel Bancroft—Other Well Known Hotels—The Hardware Trade—Dry Goods and Notions—Clothing and Furnishing Trade—Little “Jake Seligman”—Other Successful Clothiers—Furniture and House Furnishings—Drugs and Medicines—Real Estate and Insurance—Coal, Lime and Cement—Grocery and Provision Trade—Retail Grocers of Olden Times—Packing and Meat Trade—Early Newspapers—A Reporter’s Reminiscences—Pioneer Newspapers at East Saginaw—Edwin Cowles—German Papers—Saginaw Post Offices—Growth of Postal Business—The Federal Building—Why Saginaw Has Two Post Offices—A Detriment to the City—Postal Business for 1915-16—Amusements—Academy of Music—A Unique Character—Franklin Theatre—Picture Theatres.

THE beginning of trade and barter in Saginaw Valley, long before there was a permanent settlement here, was in the log block-house set up in 1816 by Louis Campau. Although Jacob Smith, known to the Indians as “Wah-be-sins,” and other trappers preceded him by a number of years, they came at irregular intervals and took away to market such furs as they might gather. Campau’s log house was the first habitation built by white men on the then far western frontier. It was substantially made of heavy squared logs, two stories in height, and stood on the west bank of the river, near what is now the intersection of Niagara and Throop Streets. For about ten years it served a double purpose—a pleasant residence overlooking the placid river, and a storehouse for furs and goods for trade with the Indians. Long after it was abandoned by Campau, who left the valley about 1826, an old Frenchman, J. Baptiste Desnoyers, occupied the residence portion; and the old building was a somewhat cherished landmark. About 1862 the old house fell a victim to the flames.

These early efforts to open up trade with the Indians were followed by the building of a trading post by the American Fur Company, in a small clearing on the west side of the river. In 1828 a Frenchman, named Reaume, was the “factor” at the post, but owing to difficulties between him and the savages the Williams Brothers were sent here to take his place. After several years of successful trade they bought out the interests of the fur company, and about 1830 occupied the “red warehouse” at the foot of Mackinaw Street. Sherman Stevens, Archie Lyons and Me-je-au, an Indian of quarter-blood, who were masters of the Chippewa dialects, were successful traders employed by Williams Brothers.

Gradually the old-time trading posts gave way to the pioneer store, with its general stock of goods—necessities of human existence in the wilderness. They were operated on well defined principles of trade, necessary articles and a few luxuries being sold at regular prices in the English shilling and pence. The word “shilling” appears to have been in general use among the Indians in those early days. In the following list of goods, derived from old records, the prices of small articles is marked in shillings and pence:

	s	d		s	d
Whiskey, per gal.....	2	9	Indian Knife .....	2	0
Young Hyson Tea, lb.....	9	6	Small Bell .....	6	0
Coffee, lb. ....	1	6	Pocket Pistol .....	6	0
Sugar, lb. ....		6	Blue Cloth, per yd. ....	24	0
Meat of one Coon .....	2	0	Shawl .....	7	0
Venison Hams .....	2	0	Cotton Thread, skein .....	0	6
Meat of One Small Deer... 8		0	Blanket .....	36	0
Hog, 204 lbs. ....	51	0	Martin Skin .....	8	0
Potatoes, per barrel.....	4	8	Socks, per pair .....	2	0
Salt Pork, per lb. ....		5	Buckskin .....	14	0
Corn, per bushel .....	4	0	Calico, per yd. ....	1	6

Labor for splitting one thousand rails 20 to 30 shillings.

In 1831 one of the store-keepers introduced the words "dollars" and "cents," and henceforth the foreign terms of exchange fell into disuse.

### Trade Development Slow.

The development of trade and commerce in Saginaw Valley, following the early settlements, was very slow and suffered several setbacks. This was due almost entirely to the physical condition of the country, which tended to discourage permanent residence, and not until the natural resources of the valley were exploited did the country begin to attract men of energy and capital. The story of this development through the various stages and by subjects bearing on manufactures, commerce, education and social life, has been quite thoroughly covered in the preceding chapters, the reader being referred especially to Chapters VIII, IX, X, and XI, pages 117 to 206.

### Little Items of History.

Sanford M. Green was Circuit Judge of the Saginaw District in 1849. P. C. Andre was register of deeds in 1850. John Moore was prosecuting attorney in 1854, and Charles W. Grant was sheriff the same year.

The first marriage celebrated in Saginaw County was on August 25, 1831, between Grovener Vinton and Harriet Whitney.

Hiram L. Miller, who came to Saginaw City in 1835, was the editor of the first daily newspaper published in Saginaw Valley.

John McGregor was born in Tittabawassee Township, September 7, 1839.

In 1844 the old Indian chief Nau-qua-chic-a-ming killed seven wolves in Saginaw County; and a wild cat, measuring seven feet six inches, was killed on February 1, 1864, on one of the business streets of Saginaw City.

Robert Ure arrived in the valley in 1831 when the pioneer settlers were few in number.

Captain Charles D. Little came here in 1850, and lived here until his death in 1903.

The first swine were brought to this county by Eleazer Jewett in 1828.

On January 10, 1836, the first entry was made in the record book of the Probate Court of Saginaw County. Albert Miller was the first Judge of Probate.

Captain Edwin Saunders was city treasurer of Saginaw City in 1866, and city controller in 1868.

In 1849, where now stands the new Hotel Bancroft, there was a shake-roofed cabin built by the American Fur Company, and occupied by a French trapper by the name of Leon Snay. Two years later a school was held in the cabin by Miss Carrie Ingersoll.

THE OLD PIONEER MERCHANT ON DECK AGAIN!

**"STEAM BOAT BLISS"**

Just landed with a Large Invoice of Goods for his  
Clothing Store & Merchant Tailoring  
I invite my former  
as strange

Go to **VASOLD & BOERGERT,**  
FOR  
**DRY GOODS, YANKEE NOTIONS,**  
Woolens, Furs, Gents' Furnishing Goods,  
**TAILOR'S TRIMMINGS,**  
100 Genesee St.,

**WEBBER, THOMPSON & GAGE,**  
*Attorneys, Solicitors & Counselors,*  
**EAST SAGINAW, MICH.**  
THOMPSON.  
GAGE.

**C. & T. B. SPENCER,**

NOS. 104 & 106 SOUTH WATER ST.,  
EAST SAGINAW. MICH.

DEALERS IN

**HARDWARE**

LEATHER

**A. H. MERSHON,**  
MANUFACTURER OF  
Wooden Well, Cistern and Vessel Pump  
Pump Logs for Salt Works,  
OPEN TUBING, ALL SIZES  
PUMP TUBING,  
Wood

**FEIGE BROS.,**

Manufacturers of and Dealers in

Fine Parlor and Chamber

**FURNITURE**

SCHULER'S AIR TIGHT

Caskets, &c.



**ANTHONY SCHMITZ'S**  
HARDWARE, CROCKERY AND

*Agricultural Implement Emporium,*  
STOVES, FURNACE  
IRON AND STEEL NAILS

**THE OLDEST**

IN THE SAGINAW VALLEY.

BUT NOT BEHIND THE TIMES.

**WILLIAM BARIE,**

322 Genesee Avenue,  
EAST SAGINAW

**MILLER, BRALEY & Co.,**

**BANKING AND EXCHANGE**  
OFFICE,  
Corner Court and Hamilton

HENRY MILLER,  
W. B. BRALEY,  
W. M. MILLER.

**JAY SMITH,**  
DEALER IN

DRUGS, MEDICINES, PAINTS, OILS,

DYES & DYE STUFFS GENERALLY.

Pure Wines and Liquors for Medicinal

Court Street, Saginaw

**AUG. S. GAYLORD,**  
(BATE, MOORE & GAYLORD)

**ATTORNEY AND COUNSELOR**  
SAGINAW CITY, MICHIGAN.

Prompt attention

**WEBSTER HOUSE,**

SAGINAW CITY, MICHIGAN.

M. C. STEVENS,

PROPRIETOR.

Stages run to and from the Cars to this House.

**ADAM GRAEBNER,**  
DEALER IN

**GROCERIES & PROVISIONS,**  
FLOUR, Etc., Etc.,  
SAGINAW CITY, MICH.

Cor. Van Buren & Harrison Sts.,  
DEMAN BOOKS ON HAND

**D. H. JEROME & CO.,**

WHOLESALE AND RETAIL DEALERS IN

**Dry Goods, Clothing, Groceries, Hardware,**

(Crockery), Wines, Liquors, Boots and Shoes, Hats and Caps, etc.

A complete assortment of Shelf Hardware, Stoves, Iron, Steel, Nails, Glass,  
Crockery, etc. Tin and Sheet-iron manufactured to order.

**GEORGE L. BURROWS,**  
SAGINAW CITY, MICHIGAN.

**Banking and Exchange Office,**  
SAGINAW CITY, MICHIGAN.

Prompt attention given to Collections throughout Saginaw Valley, and all  
other business transactions usually pertaining to Banking.

AGENTS:  
NEW YORK CITY.  
Messrs. C. & A. TAYLOR, Detroit.

In the summer of 1850 Seth and Thomas Willey cleared the eighty-acre tract of land upon which the early business section of East Saginaw was built.

W. F. Glasby came here in 1850 and opened a tavern on Water Street. Other early comers were Curtis Emerson, Charles W. Grant, Norman Little, Moses B. Hess, George Hess, Alfred M. Hoyt, Colonel W. L. P. Little, S. W. Yawkey, Alex. English, John Ellsifer, Alexander Ferguson, F. H. Koehler, Menzo Stevens and C. P. Colvin.

Byron B. Buckhout located here on August 17, 1853, and James F. Brown came on August 20 of the same year. John J. Rupp came in 1855, Doctor A. Farnsworth in 1857 and J. J. Mumford in 1861.

Sanford Keeler, Captain D. D. Keeler and Frank D. Keeler, brothers, landed in Saginaw in 1855, and still reside here.

Warner & Eastman established the first iron foundry here in 1854.

One warm, dusty day in August, 1853, Charles H. Peters arrived in East Saginaw. He liked the place so well that he remained and spent the remainder of his life here.

Andrew Eymmer, eighty-five years old, came to East Saginaw in 1863. He had only twenty-one birthdays, having been born on February 29, 1832.

L. P. Mason came to East Saginaw in 1859 and engaged in inspecting and shipping lumber, in which he continued for many years.

Clark M. Curtis was one of the trustees of the village of East Saginaw in 1855; Colonel Michael Jeffers was an alderman in 1861 and justice of the peace from 1863 to 1866.

A. B. Wood came here in 1863. He was a member of the State Senate from 1869 to 1872. John Henning came here in 1848; and Castle Sutherland arrived in 1859.

In 1861 Charles Steinberg was a merchant tailor and dealer in ready-made clothing, at 109 Genesee Street opposite the Bancroft House.

Gladwin & Beebe were "proprietors of the East Saginaw Beer Works, located on Genesee Street near Chestnut."

D. Forrest was "manufacturer of and dealer in boots, shoes, leather, findings and everything pertaining to the trade." He was located in the Pendell Block, Washington Street.

A dealer in real estate was E. Thatcher, "proprietor of Thatcher's Addition, on the south boundary of the city of East Saginaw."

In dentistry there was Doctor L. C. Whiting, whose office was in "Room 11, 2d story Hess Block, first door north of Loveland's office."

Hoyt & Perkins were attorneys-at-law at East Saginaw in 1868; and W. Q. Atwood was a dealer in lumber and lands with an office at the southeast corner of Water and Tuscola Streets.

Englehardt Feige, "manufacturer and wholesale and retail dealer in furniture," conducted a warehouse at 108 South Water Street. He also dealt in "wooden and metallic coffins and cases" at his undertaking rooms at 95 North Water Street.

Hubinger Brothers located at Frankenmuth in 1846. They came from Detroit to Saginaw in a sail boat, the journey taking two weeks. At that time there were only six farms cleared in Frankenmuth Township.

Edward McSweeney, the well-known grocer on Hoyt Street, came to Saginaw City in 1840 and worked two years for Norman Little. He then went back to New York State, but returned to Saginaw in 1864 and remained until his death a few years ago.

Gus Strasburg first visited Saginaw while in the government service in 1858, and three years later located here permanently. He built the brick hotel property, now owned by Emil Francke, at the corner of Lapeer and Warren Avenues.



Thomas W. Babcock came to Saginaw in March, 1852. He states that the only buildings then on the east side were a hotel on the southeast corner of what is now Genesee and Water Streets, a warehouse across the street on the river, the residence of Charles W. Grant in the rear of the present Auditorium, and across the street from the Grant residence was what was known as the Garrison mill. There was a small frame house on what is now South Washington Avenue, across from the Germain Temple.

Mr. Babcock was employed at the Williams mill during the first summer he lived here, and afterward at the Chicago mill, directly across the river from the foot of Janes Avenue, and continued there with the late C. K. Eddy, when he purchased it some years after.

### The First Taverns.

In the pioneer days of Saginaw City, when the entire population was less than one hundred, strangers were entertained in the log houses of the settlers, and made as comfortable as the meager and bare furnishings permitted. There were few conveniences for cooking, stoves being yet unknown in the wilderness, and an open fireplace piled with logs, and utensils consisting of a few heavy pots, kettles and pans, afforded the entire facilities. But visitors sat down with zest before wooden bowls filled with soup made of smoked ham and rice boiled together, and feasted on wild game with cranberries, and trout, sturgeon and white fish.

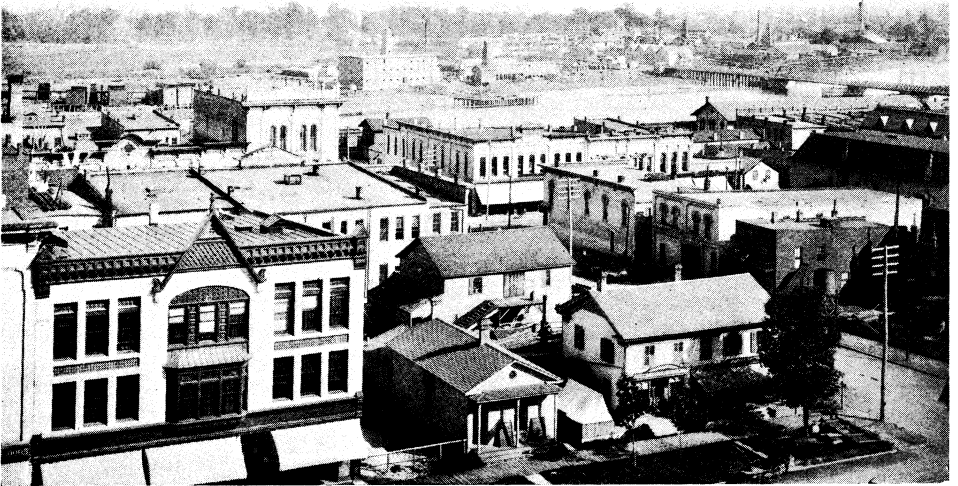
Eleazer Jewett and his estimable wife, the first permanent white settlers in this county, lived in a log cabin at Green Point, and many strangers came to their place for entertainment. They usually came in groups, as one or two seldom cared to brave the dangers of travel in the dense forest by themselves; and caring for a number of guests under disadvantages at length grew wearisome. They concluded that they could as well keep a tavern in town, and in 1837 Mr. Jewett built a two-story frame hotel on Water (Niagara) Street, between Clinton and Throop Streets. Jewett's Hotel soon became a popular rendezvous of the more hardy pioneers and a stopping place for visitors, who appreciated alike the whole-hearted hospitality of the host and the excellent accommodations. For more than twenty years the house was somewhat of a landmark.

Malden's log tavern, at what is now Court and Hamilton Streets, was also a well known place in the early days; and Major Mosely's, a log cabin within the old fort stockade, is still remembered by pioneers of Saginaw City. When the Webster House was opened in 1838, and quickly recognized as the leading hotel in Saginaw Valley, the old log houses lost their popularity and were thereafter little used. An account of the old Webster House is given in pages 134-5.

### Other Hotels of Saginaw City.

In 1866, William H. Taylor, an enterprising capitalist of Saginaw City, built a large pretentious hotel at Court and Hamilton Streets. This was the site of old Fort Saginaw erected in 1822, the log cabins of which and the stockade that enclosed them, having long before fallen into decay. The new hotel, a four-story and basement brick structure, seventy-five by one hundred and twenty feet in dimensions, of rather imposing appearance, was arranged for stores on the Court Street front and had a main entrance on Hamilton Street. Its ninety rooms were sumptuously furnished in the style and taste of the day immediately following the war. The hotel was named the Taylor House.

For awhile the hotel was conducted by Mr. Taylor, who stated in his advertisements that "street cars pass the house every twenty minutes."



WEST SIDE BUSINESS SECTION, LOOKING SOUTH FROM COURT HOUSE, ABOUT 1886

About 1870 I. H. Hopkins leased the hotel and conducted it for several years. The house was closed about 1879 but reopened the following January by L. Burrows, Junior & Company. Four years later it was again closed but some months later Burrows & Sweet took charge and it was reopened to the public. Afterward Fred B. Sweet managed the house alone. About 1895, after a checkered career of success and failure, the old Taylor House, which had become somewhat of a cherished landmark of the West side, was closed and remained dark and forbidding for fifteen years.

#### **The New Hotel Fordney.**

At length, realizing the need of a first-class hotel on the West Side, the enterprising business men of that section formed a company, purchased the old hotel property, remodeled the building, and refurnished it throughout. Given the name Hotel Fordney, after Congressman Joseph W. Fordney, who was one of the substantial promoters of the enterprise, it was opened in 1912 with festivities befitting the occasion. Since that time the hotel has been conducted as a first-class hotel, European plan, and has met with a fair degree of success. A cheerful, home-like atmosphere pervades the whole house, and the service, including the cafe on the ground floor, is excellent.

The Crowley House, at Hamilton and Ames Streets, the site of the old Brockway House, afterward known as the Benson House, was opened to the public by D. Crowley in 1879. Two additions were built by him, giving the hotel a frontage of sixty-five feet on Hamilton Street and ninety feet on Ames. The house then contained forty well furnished and comfortably heated rooms, and was very popular with a certain element of citizens and the travelling public. In recent years this hotel, now known as the Schuch Hotel, has been remodeled and refurnished, an attractive cafe provided on

Hamilton Street, and is now regarded as a very pleasant and home-like hostelry.

Other hotels of Saginaw City in the formative period were: the American House, on Hamilton between Court and Franklin (Hancock) Streets, next to the post office, and conducted in 1870 by John Freidlein; the Kerby House, at Hamilton and Jefferson (Cleveland) Streets; the Dunbar House, at Water (Niagara) and Van Buren Streets, kept by B. N. Montross; and Keyser's Hotel, at State and Cross Roads.

### **Building of the Bancroft House.**

For several years after the big fires of 1854, the leading hotels were the Kirby House, kept by John Godley, at the corner of Washington and Genesee Streets, and the Farmer's Exchange, W. Wisner, landlord, directly opposite. The need of a new first-class hotel was urgent, and in 1858, Jesse Hoyt began the construction of a large brick hotel on the southwest corner of the main streets. It was a very pretentious building for the time, being four stories in height, and covering a plat of ground one hundred by one hundred and forty feet in size. It was completed in the Summer of 1859, but owing to some delay in getting the gas plant which was to light the rooms in working order, the opening of the "New Hotel" did not take place until September 7th. The proprietor was Henry Hobbs, of New York, who brought from the metropolis the furniture and fittings valued at \$15,000. A picture of the original Bancroft House appears on page 196. The main entrance was on Genesee Street about thirty feet from the corner, and there was a ladies' entrance on Washington Street. At the left of the hall, in the northeast corner was the office, twenty-eight feet square, and back of this, where the lobby was afterward placed, was the dining room and storerooms. On the right of the hall, commencing on the front were the "shaving saloon," reading room, and in the rear of these the porter's room, etc. "The culinary apartments," according to the Saginaw Courier of September 1, 1859, "are still back, and in point of convenience and perfection of appointments and appurtenances, are equal to those of any hotel East or West."

On the second floor were the general reception room directly above the office, and suites of parlors sixteen by eighteen feet in size. The billiard room, thirty-two by sixty feet, equipped with four tables, was at the right of these, and the remaining space on this and the upper floors was given over to suites and single bed rooms, heated in Winter by huge box stoves.

From the old "Courier" we learn that "the committee appointed to christen the New Hotel have named it the Bancroft House, after George Bancroft, the great historian and statesman. The opening celebration comes off Wednesday, September 7. From the character of the gentlemen connected with it, and citizens generally, a 'good time' may be confidently anticipated."

The committee of management of the celebration at the opening of the Bancroft House, was composed of W. L. P. Little, Chairman, Morgan L. Gage, William L. Webber, D. A. Robinson, Jr., Curtis Emerson, Charles B. Mott, D. G. Holland, J. P. Hayden and S. C. Beach.

### **The Opening Celebration.**

"At 10 a. m. Osmend's Cornet Band turned out in full uniform, and from time to time during the day enlivened the scene with most excellent music. At half past ten the delegation from Goderich arrived, among whom were His Honor, Mayor McDougal, and several other prominent citizens of that place. Dr. A. W. Butler, correspondent of the Buffalo Courier, also accompanied the delegation. People continued to arrive from all quarters, no less than eight steamers landing at our wharves between 9 o'clock in the morning and 6 in the evening."

The grand opening of the Bancroft was at six o'clock, when a sumptuous banquet was served. Tables were spread for three hundred persons, yet this was not sufficient for all the guests. "Everything in the bill was there in rich profusion, and most excellent taste was displayed in the arrangement and ornamentation of the tables." The leading feature was "East Saginaw, 1850-1859," and was quite original in design. It was in the form of a temple with colonades in the portal, or background, under head of 1850 was an Indian scene composed of wigwams, squaws, papooses, canoes, bows and arrows and camp kettles, spread in the manner of an Indian camp. In front, as coming up to a "state of present civilization was a representation of the Bancroft House, with a background of steamers in the river, saw mills, churches, schools and residences, such as are now the pride of our city. On top and the sides were shields and banners upon which were inscribed the names of some of our oldest and most prominent citizens."

The banquet itself was such as to satisfy the epicurean taste. From mock turtle soup to fruits and nuts, every dish on the "Bill of Fare" was a delight to the assembled guests. The reputation of the house was quickly established, a reputation which has clung to it during the fifty-six years intervening. There were pike and white fish prepared in various styles, cold dishes of boiled tongue, ham, corned beef, and chicken salad, and boiled beef, leg of mutton, chicken and pork, and turkey, with egg sauce. Of roasts there were thirteen, including bear, turkey, with cranberry sauce, venison, pig, chicken and wild duck. The Entrees included fricaseed pigeon, chicken a la Marengo, pork cutlets and venison steak. There was a great variety of stewed and boiled vegetables to satisfy every taste. Of pastry there were farina pudding with claret sauce, peach, apple and cranberry pie, sponge cake, au chocolate, blanc mange, rum jelly, and lemon and vanilla ice cream. The whole repast was "topped off" with fruits and nuts in great profusion.

#### The Toasts.

Following the banquet there was jollity and speech-making, the toasts given being:

1. George Bancroft—a polished scholar, an able historian; a high-minded, patriotic citizen, and God-father of this house.  
Music, "Hail Columbia!"  
D. A. Robinson, Jr., responded to this toast.
2. The Bancroft House and Its Proprietor.  
Music, 'Good Cheer' Quickstep.  
Responded to by Moses B. Hess.
3. The Governor of the State of Michigan.  
Governor Wisner in response.
4. Jesse Hoyt—one to whom the citizens of East Saginaw are largely indebted for all public improvements, and whose example is worthy of our highest commendation.  
Music, 'Here's Health.'  
Response by William L. Webber.
5. The Saginaw Valley.  
Responded to by James Birney, of Bay City.
6. Norman Little.  
Music, 'Pioneer Quickstep.'  
Responded to by J. B. Dillingham.
7. The Flint and Pere Marquette Railway.  
Music, 'Wait for the Wagon.'  
Responded to by Dr. H. C. Potter, who in conclusion gave the volunteer toast,



WASHINGTON STREET, SOUTH FROM TUSCOLA, 1887



FRANKLIN STREET, SOUTH FROM TUSCOLA, 1887

8. The People of Saginaw Valley—may they soon get what their industry, enterprise, *eminent sobriety and unnumbered virtues* so justly entitle them to—a ride on a rail.

Other toasts were: The Mayor and Citizens of Goderich; The Mineral Wealth of the Peninsula; The City of Detroit and Its Mayor; The Goderich Line of Steamers; The Saginaw and Genesee Plank Road; and Our Mothers, Wives, Sisters and Sweethearts."

#### The Grand Ball.

The ball was next in order and in commenting on this the Courier said: "Terpsichorean festivities went on till 'the glorious ring of day' had deeply tinged the eastern horizon with 'streakings' of the morning light, when the gallant cavaliers escorted their layde loves to their respective homes. 'They danced all night till broad daylight, and went home with the gals in the morning.'

"During the whole of the festivities, from first to last, there was nothing to mar the harmony of the occasion, and everything passed off to the entire satisfaction of all."

#### The Bancroft House Proprietors.

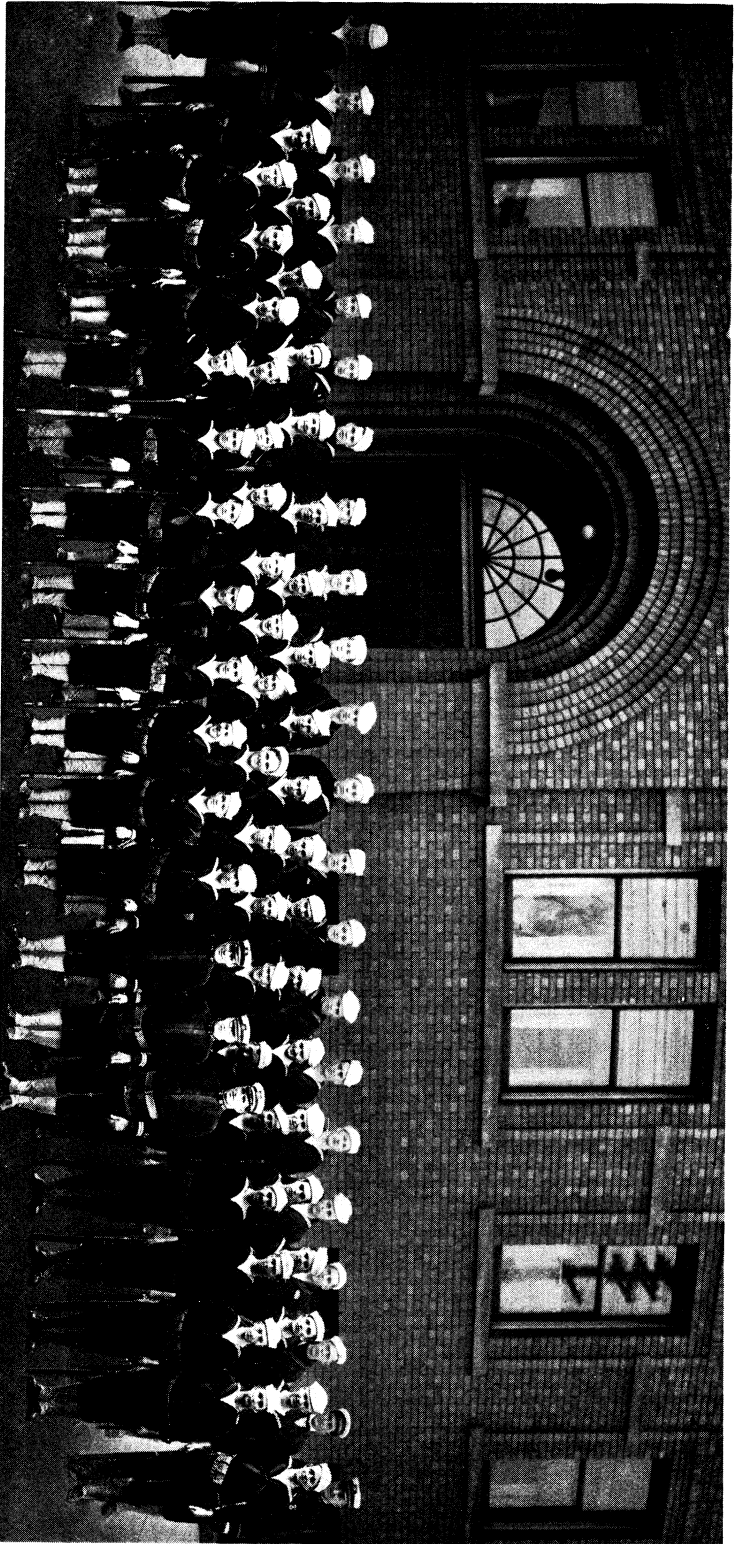
The first proprietor of the Bancroft, Henry Hobbs, of New York City, was succeeded several years after by Pantlind, Witt & Company, who announced in the History of Saginaw Valley, published in 1868, that "This house has lately been refitted and refurnished, and is now complete in all its appointments. Ample accommodations for three hundred guests." Later the hotel was operated by Pantlind & Dyckman, and in 1874 Israel B. Norcross was the proprietor.

The best known and most successful manager of this popular house was Farnham Lyon, who remained in charge for more than thirty years and made a reputation for the hotel which extended far and wide. He was succeeded by William F. Schultz, for many years steward of the house, who continued as manager until the old hostelry was closed.

#### Finis of the Old House.

After a continuous operation of fifty-six years, in which the hotel earned a high reputation for the excellence of its cuisine and care of its guests, the old Bancroft was closed on August 28, 1915. During these years many distinguished men, including statesmen, capitalists, politicians, actors and lumbermen stopped at this popular hostelry, and its fame extended far beyond the confines of the State. Its corned-beef hash was one of the numerous items on its daily menu, that became known far and wide and helped to give the house its celebrity. In fact Bancroft House hash may be obtained any day at several of the large hotels of New York City.

The Bancroft Realty Company was organized in 1915, to acquire and hold all the hotel property so long owned by the Hoyt Estate, and to erect on the site a new, modern, fire-proof structure, thus providing this city with a first-class hotel. The property, which had originally cost Jesse Hoyt about one hundred thousand dollars, was transferred to the new company for a consideration of two hundred and fifty thousand dollars, secured by second mortgage bonds. The old building, including Irving Hall which had been erected in 1864, was demolished in September, 1915, and the new hotel building soon arose upon the solid foundations of the old.



[From a photograph by Goodridge]  
THE SAGINAW NAVAL RESERVES, SECOND DIVISION M. S. N. B., ON EVE OF  
DEPARTURE FOR THE ATLANTIC COAST, APRIL 10, 1917



THE NEW HOTEL BANCROFT, OPENED IN JULY, 1916

### The New Hotel Bancroft

The new structure of Ionic style of architecture, without embellishment, is one hundred and sixty feet on Genesee Avenue and one hundred and forty feet on Washington Avenue. It is of reinforced concrete with rough brick facing, with tile flooring and marble trimmings, and cost approximately five hundred thousand dollars. The building was completed early in July, 1916, and was opened to the public on July 20th, the first meal being served in the cafe Sunday morning, July 23d.

The furnishings and fixtures are of the most tasty and pleasing style, in perfect harmony with the interior finish, and cost eighty thousand dollars. There are two hundred and thirty-seven rooms, of which fifty-five have shower baths, sixty shower and tub arrangements, twenty-five large sample rooms with shower baths, and sixty rooms with running water only; and there is ample closet space in all rooms. In addition to this there are fourteen suites with private bed room and bath, connected with the drawing room. Among other features are commodious reception and rest rooms, and a banquet hall finished in white and gold, which will seat three hundred persons, and is directly connected with the mezzanine balcony.

From the main entrance on Washington Avenue a short corridor leads to the spacious lobby, thirty-five by seventy feet in size, where the magnificence of the hotel is first revealed. The American walnut finish in huge panels, relieved by edgings of gold, gives a highly artistic tone to the interior. In its appointments for the convenience of guests the hotel is absolutely up to the minute, and it has that touch of home atmosphere which makes the weary traveller glad to get within its welcoming portals.

The floor of the lobby is a huge checkerboard of black and white marble, upon which are laid large heavy rugs in harmonious colors. Carried through the second floor, upon which is the balcony elegantly furnished, is the ceiling



of frosted glass admitting a soft, diffused light to the floors below. On the south side of the lobby are the desk, telephone booths, cigar and newspaper stand, and entrance to the barber shop, coffee shop, telegraph office, billiard parlors and roof garden.

There is also a ladies' entrance from Genesee Avenue connecting with the ladies' rest room, elevators and lobby, and on the right with the sumptuous cafe, which is decorated in gray and gold. The service is a la carte and table d'hote, with strictly European plan for the hotel.

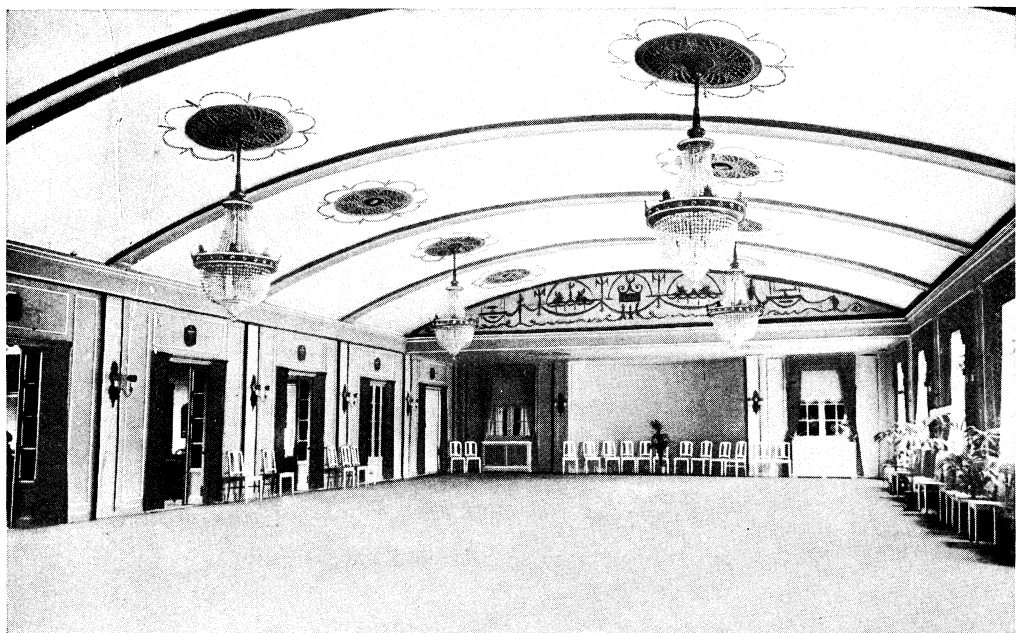
The banquet and ball room, which opens from the balcony, is a revelation of magnificence in finish and decoration in harmonious colors. To soft tones of white and gold there are added pale blue and deep pink tints, which lend a pleasing effect to the walls and arched ceiling, while red plush curtains complete the artistic interior. The floor is of Terazzo marble. The lighting arrangements are perfect; the four exquisite electric chandeliers of Austrian glass suspended by crystal fixtures, being among the beautiful features of the hotel.

On the Genesee Avenue front is the elegantly appointed cafe opening on the corridor which leads from the ladies' entrance to the rest room and lobby. It is richly decorated in white and gold, and the small-paned windows and large mirrors set in the opposite wall are exceedingly attractive features. At the west end of the cafe is a private dining room, fittingly decorated and furnished in the prevailing style.

The large and conveniently arranged kitchen is back of the lobby and grill, with double doors leading to the cafe near the west end. In the complete equipment is an ice-making plant for producing eight hundred pounds of ice daily, and its own filtration plant furnishes running water in all rooms. The large ice chests, cold storage rooms for meats, ovens, warming tables, etc., are of ample size and of the best type. Efficiency in this all important department is one of the watchwords of the hotel management.



ATTRACTIVE LOBBY OF HOTEL BANCROFT



MAGNIFICENT BALL ROOM OF HOTEL BANCROFT



CAFE OF HOTEL BANCROFT, ELEGANTLY APPOINTED

For more than half a century the old Bancroft House maintained a reputation for comfort and excellence of its cuisine excelled by no hotel in Michigan, and today the new Hotel Bancroft is holding that reputation and adding such prominence as comes to a new house elegantly furnished and ably managed.

Like the old Bancroft, the new hotel is a center of social activities. Its brilliant interior, warmth of color and comfort draws to it Saginaw's prominent people as well as the travelling public. The excellent service in every department and the attention given the wants of all within its walls, is in keeping with the perfect appointments and beautiful surroundings. The magnificent ball room, which is often the scene of brilliant gatherings, affords every facility for dances and banquets; and small conventions, patriotic and civic meetings are also held there. It is a popular place for holding musicales, recitals and lectures, and a course of recitals was held there in the Winter of 1917-18.

In Summer the attractive carbaret, or roof garden, which covers the one-story annex on Washington Avenue, is a popular resort for persons seeking pleasure and entertainment. The sides are veritable gardens constructed with trellis, clinging vines and flowering plants. In these surroundings the tables are set and tempt the visitor with offerings of popular beverages and dainty lunches. At the south end a rustic stage is an attractive setting for the entertainment afforded. The roof garden is easily reached by a short flight of stairs, opening from a short corridor to the hotel lobby; and has the same satisfactory service which has made a name for the Hotel Bancroft.

At the time of opening the new Hotel Bancroft the officers and directors of the Bancroft Realty Company were: Hiram A. Savage, president; Edwin C. Forrest, vice-president; Harry E. Oppenheimer, treasurer; William S. Linton, secretary, and John A. Cimmerer, Gilbert B. Goff, J. Will Grant, Ralph C. Morley, John C. Thomson; and the builders were Nelson & Lewin of Chicago.

John C. Thomson, the popular and efficient hotel manager, who is well known to the traveling public and the citizens of Saginaw, was the first manager of the Bancroft. Under his able direction the hotel was constructed, furnished and equipped and opened July 20, 1916. Much of the success attending its operation was due to his experience and ability, and it was with sincere regret that he resigned in January, 1918, to assume the management of the new Hotel Shelby, in Detroit. Mr. Thomson was succeeded at the Bancroft by F. H. Irish, an old and experienced hotel manager.

### **Benjamin Franklin Hotel**

A commanding feature of the business section along South Franklin Street is the high grey front of the Benjamin Franklin Hotel. Rising far above the adjoining buildings this hotel adds a dignity to the aspect of the busy street. It is a quiet, home-like hostelry, seven stories in height, and has one hundred and twenty-five rooms. The facing of grey stucco and ornamental porte-cochere, iron railing and lattice work with hanging baskets of flowers and ferns lends an impression of distinction which clings to one as he passes within.

Entering this attractive hotel the first impression of comfort and cheer continues as the traveller goes from floor to floor. The floor of the lobby is of tile, the wainscoting of white marble, while the upper walls and ceiling are artistically decorated in light bronze tone relieved with gold. The furniture is of mahogany and the big, comfortable chairs are upholstered in rich tapestry. Oriental rugs in perfect harmony with the surroundings give an air of elegance and home-like comfort.

The Benjamin Franklin was completed and opened to the public on July 5, 1915, the occasion being one long remembered by the citizens of Saginaw. At six o'clock in the evening the first dinner was served in the attractive grill, and was enjoyed by a number of prominent people and guests of the management.

#### **The Hotel Vincent**

This popular and comfortable hotel, which for a long period has met with the favor of the travelling public, enjoys a reputation of being one of the well appointed and attractive hostelrys in this part of Michigan. The five-story brick and stone building, at Washington and Germania Avenues, was erected in 1890 by the late Arthur Hill and James E. Vincent. All the furnishing and equipping of the hotel was under the personal supervision of Eugene Kirby, a well known and experienced hotel man, who conducted the house for a number of years. The opening of the hotel was an event in the history of Saginaw.

The Hotel Vincent is well provided with beautiful parlors, large sample rooms, an attractive dining room, and pleasant bed rooms provided with private baths. Its dining room and buffet service is excellent, and the management shows every feature of modern hotelkeeping and every appointment that pleases the guests. For several years W. H. Aubrey & Company have been the proprietors and operators of the hotel.

#### **Other Well Known Hotels.**

Another old-time hostelry which, because of its central location, has been well patronized, is the Everett House at the corner of Genesee and Franklin Streets. The three-story brick building was erected in 1864 with stores on Genesee Street and a main entrance for the hotel on Franklin Street. For several years the house was conducted by Marshall G. Smith, a popular and experienced hotel man, and later by Smith & Crouse. Mr. Smith withdrew from the firm and took the active management of the Marshall House, one block south on Franklin, with which he was very successful. In 1873 Walsh Salisbury became proprietor of the Everett, with Eugene W. Farmer as chief clerk, and continued in charge for more than twenty years, in which the hotel increased in popularity. During the hard times following the decline of the lumber business, the Everett House, as well as others, suffered from the prevailing depression, and was closed several times for more or less extended periods. About ten years ago the property was purchased by E. A. and B. Goff, of this city, who remodeled the building and put it in good condition. Since that time Walter C. McKinney has been the popular landlord and manager, and has established for the hotel a wide reputation for excellent service.

The Sherman House, built and conducted for many years by the late Martin Baum, and afterward by his sons, Martin and Sherman, has been a landmark of the East Side for upwards of forty years. This hotel was well patronized in the old lumber days, and since the return of Saginaw's prosperity, it has enjoyed a wide patronage of country folk and travelers in general. From time to time various improvements have been made in the building, at Baum and Tuscola Streets, so that it may be classed as a modern hotel.

The Naegely House, at Jefferson and Tuscola Streets, for many years conducted by Captain Naegely, is another of the old-time hotels. It was a rendezvous of lumber-jacks and river men, in the days when life in Saginaw was rendered indescribably gay and boisterous by the "red sash brigade." In more recent years the hotel has been known as the Wesley House, and at present is conducted by Emerson P. Whaley, a popular landlord.

### The Hardware Trade.

From the pioneer stores familiar to our early settlers, with their varied stocks of general merchandise, there gradually developed separate and distinct lines of business. The population of the county increased rapidly preceding the Civil War, and the needs and requirements of frontier life demanded still more diversified stocks of trade, the accumulation and distribution of which could be more readily made in separate stores.

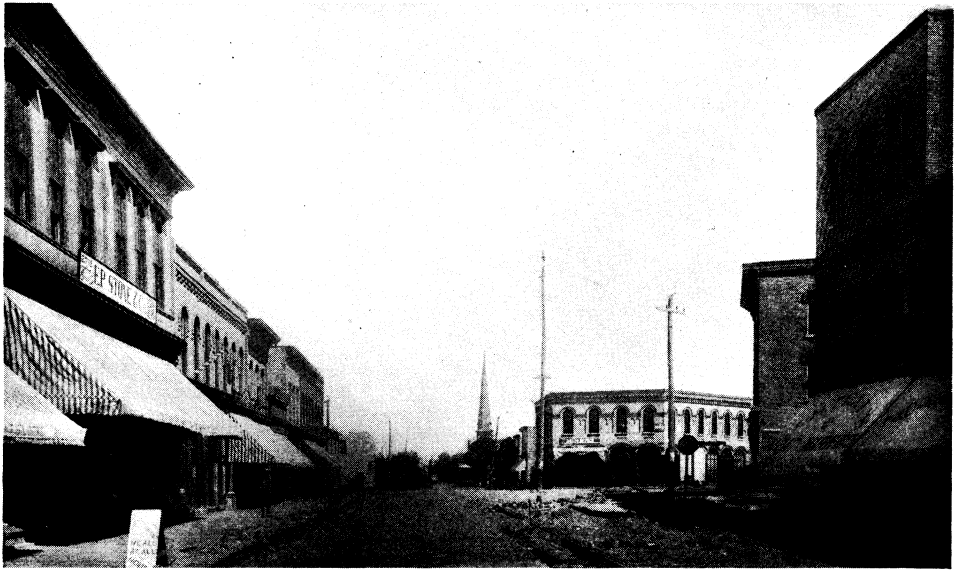
One of the first lines to draw away from the general stores was hardware and metal ware; and as early as 1854 a store of this kind was opened on North Water Street by Byron B. Buckhout. He had been employed in the hardware stock of Beach & Moores, one of the large general stores of the early pioneer period, and was familiar with the trade and needs of the public. His stock included lumbering tools, mill supplies, then in demand, and for many years he did a large and profitable business. The old stand on Water Street was occupied by this business for more than fifty years, in fact long after the retail trade had moved up Genesee Street beyond Jefferson. The same business is now conducted by Fred J. Buckhout at 613 Genesee Avenue.

George Schram, whose store was on Water Street, south of Genesee, and C. M. Curtis, "near the ferry," were early hardware dealers. C. & T. B. Spencer, in the Commercial Block at 106 South Water Street, carried in stock "hardware, stoves, and tin, copper and sheet iron ware." Another well known firm was Reynolds & Choate, in the Derby Block on North Water Street, who carried general and shelf hardware, rubber and leather belting, stoves and hollow ware. George R. Bridgeman, on South Water Street, was a gas and steam fitter and dealer in stoves, tin, copper and ironware, and "gas fixtures of every description," and James L. Ketcham was engaged in much the same business, including "iron fittings for steam, water and gas."

One of the oldest hardware concerns in Saginaw City was that of Blackmar & Eaton, which in 1853 was purchased by David H. and Tiff Jerome, and conducted under the firm name of D. H. Jerome & Company for more than forty years. The business occupied a three-story and basement brick building on Court Street between Hamilton and Water Streets, stocked from cellar to roof with "vast supplies of mill and lumbermens' supplies, builders' and house furnishing hardware, painters' and plumbers' supplies, wagon stock and bar and sheet iron, well tubing, steam pipe and fittings, leather belting, etc."

A. W. Achard & Son, wholesale and retail dealers in heavy and shelf hardware, mill supplies, stoves, etc., was established in 1864 by William Seyffardt and A. W. Achard. Later the firm became Achard and Schoenberg, and in 1884 was taken over by Mr. Achard alone and conducted under his name. The firm owned and occupied a spacious two-story and basement brick building, sixty by eighty feet in size, which was erected in 1884, at Hamilton and Adams Streets. A full assortment of builders' and shelf hardware, tools, cutlery and metalware was carried on the main floor, while bar and sheet iron was kept in a separate room at the rear. In the large warehouse on Water Street was a "large stock of agricultural implements, wagons, sewer pipe, drain tile, etc., and paints, oils, glass, brushes and painters' supplies." Later the firm was incorporated as the Saginaw Hardware Company, which occupies the same building and has an increasing business in their lines of trade.

At South Saginaw, formerly called Salina, the hardware business was long represented by Emil Jochen, one of the pioneer merchants of that section of the city. He started his hardware business in 1873, and built



THE SOUTH SIDE BUSINESS CENTER AT WASHINGTON, FORDNEY AND CENTER AVENUES, 1888.

up a large trade not only in the city but also among the farming community. In his store, which originally was twenty by one hundred and fifty feet in dimensions, he carried a general stock of hardware, stoves, tinware, paints, oils, glass, putty and agricultural implements.

The firm of Yawkey & Corbyn, at 508-10 Genesee Street, of which Cy. C. Yawkey and Ralph F. Corbyn were the partners, was established in 1883, and carried a "completely diversified stock of heavy and shelf hardware, builders' materials, stoves, tinware, paints, oils, glass, etc."

Another successful hardware concern was that of Seyffardt & Walz, at Genesee and Webster (Weadock) Streets, which was founded in 1869 by William Seyffardt and George Walz. They occupied a two-story brick building, eighty by one hundred feet in size, filled with "everything in the line of heavy and shelf hardware, building materials, stoves, house furnishing goods, agricultural implements, paints, oils, brushes, etc." They were agents for the celebrated Columbia bicycles and tricycles; and enjoyed a large trade to the north and west throughout the State. Afterward the firm became Walz & Keller, and at length was incorporated in the Saginaw Hardware Company and operated for them by Emil Bernhard with success. A few years ago the business was sold to Bernhard & Janke, who have continued the same general line at the old location.

Other well known hardware concerns of twenty or thirty years ago, which with some changes in person and management are still in business, are Bruske & Schwartz Hardware Company, now G. W. Bruske, on Genesee Avenue; Popp & Wolf, at Genesee and Park Streets, who have met with phenomenal success and very popular with the trade. At Saginaw City are: Paxson & Company, located on Hamilton Street, between Franklin (Hancock) and Ames Streets; and Solms Brothers, at 514 Gratiot Avenue. The same general lines were also carried by several smaller dealers in different sections of the city.

### Dry Goods and Notions.

The next important line of business to separate itself from the general pioneer store was that of dry goods and notions, closely followed by clothing and men's furnishing. In the former line of business was the firm of Schupp & Barie, dealers in dry goods and groceries, composed of the popular dry goods merchant, William Barie, and Augustus Schupp, for a long period treasurer of the Savings Bank of East Saginaw. They were located in the Crouse Block, which occupied the site of the present Eddy Building. When the partnership was dissolved Mr. Barie took the dry goods part of the business and removed to a store across Genesee Street. Afterward he purchased the stock of W. W. Fish, and combined the stocks at the location of the latter on Genesee Street near Cass (Baum) street.

From that time the business expanded rapidly and Mr. Barie soon became the leading dry goods merchant in Saginaw Valley. About twenty years ago he began wholesaling of dry goods and notions, this part of the business being carried on in a three-story brick building on South Baum Street, formerly the Aldine Hotel property, which was remodeled to suit the requirements of the business.

In 1899 the William Barie Dry Goods Company, which succeeded to the business, moved into the spacious and finely appointed building at Genesee Avenue and Baum Street, which had been erected especially for them by the Germania Society, on property bequeathed to it by Anton Schmitz more than thirty years before. Since that time the retail trade of the company has shown marvelous gains, and "Barie's" is regarded as the leading department store in this section of Michigan.

Other dry goods houses of the early formative period of East Saginaw were: E. P. Penfield, located at 104 Genesee Street "near the bridge," dealer in "dry goods, hosiery, ingrain and Brussels carpets, floor oil cloth, mats and matting." Benjamin Geer, at 207 Genesee Street and on South Water Street between Court and Adams, Saginaw City, transacted a profitable business; and J. R. Livingston & Company, at Genesee and Water Streets, enjoyed a large trade, the business afterward being conducted by Mr. Livingston in the Chase Block on North Washington Avenue. Another successful house was that of J. W. Howry, at 506 Genesee Avenue, later removed to 218 Genesee, one door west of Franklin Street with a back entrance on that street. This business was afterward purchased by Anderson Brothers, composed of Peter and Charles A. Anderson, who continued the trade at the old stand for a number of years.

Contemporary with these stores was the dry goods business established by D. B. Freeman, at 304-06 Genesee Street. After a successful career Mr. Freeman sold the business some ten years ago to Margaret C. Murray, who for a long period had been manager of the business. Soon after she removed to the rebuilt double store at 206-08 Genesee, where a large and increasing business is carried on. Seitner Brothers is another successful dry goods house, which was first located on Genesee between Washington and Franklin Streets; but since 1900 they have occupied the fine double store at 314-20 Genesee Avenue.

About fifteen years ago the Metropolitan Dry Goods Company was formed to carry on a wholesale and retail dry goods business in the four-story iron-front building of the Beringer Estate, on North Franklin Street. This building had been previously occupied by the Hoyt Dry Goods Company, and well arranged and equipped to carry on such a trade. After several years of competitive business, which was said to be not profitable, the

Metropolitan Company wound up its affairs and dissolved. The very favorable location for such a business is now occupied by the large dry goods house of M. W. Tanner Company, which is an outgrowth of the Saginaw Dry Goods Company, established many years ago on Court Street, West Side. The M. W. Tanner Company have the reputation of dealing in as fine a grade of dry goods as is sold by any dealers in the State, and enjoy a good trade in that line.

At Saginaw City the distinctive dry goods houses were those of George W. Bullock, at Hamilton and Ames Streets; Scheib & Company, located in Khuen's Block on Hamilton Street, north of the Post Office; and J. Bauman (uncle of the Seitner Brothers), wholesale and retail dealer, whose business was established in 1867 upon a comparatively modest scale. The trade of this store, which had a frontage of forty-five feet on Court and a depth of two hundred feet on Washington (Michigan) Street, expanded rapidly from year to year, and "the stock embraced everything in staple dry goods, dress goods, cloaks, notions, and Brussels, tapestry and ingrain carpets, rugs, etc." About twenty-five years ago the business was purchased by Porteous, Mitchell & Company, who carried on the same general lines for a number of years. Afterward it was sold to the J. W. Ippel Company, who still conduct the prosperous business at the old stand.

Other successful merchants in this line are: Philip Ittner, at 416-18 Hancock Street; A. D. Phillippe, at 121-25 North Hamilton Street; William H. Miller, at 405 West Genesee; Schwemer & Witt, at 719-23 Genesee Avenue; and Charles H. Becker, at 2723 South Washington Avenue, South Saginaw.

### Clothing and Furnishing Trade.

The flourishing clothing and furnishing trade of the pioneer days was represented by H. Bendit, the "Star Clothing House," at 115 Genesee Street, "opposite the Bancroft House," but afterward at 203 Genesee; M. & H. Koch & Company, in the Hess Block on Genesee Street, with a "special department for boys' and children's clothing, entrance on Washington Street," and Browning & Penny, dealers in hats, caps and furs, at 302 Genesee. "Highest market price paid for shipping furs." Wilkin & Mack succeeded to this business, and later was conducted by James Mack alone, under the title of "Mack the Hatter." Late in the eighteen-nineties, Mr. Mack retired from business and the store, which had known the men's furnishing trade since 1867, was taken by Peck & Tredo, the same business that is now conducted by William P. Tredo.

Probably the best known clothier of this period was S. Bond Bliss, facetiously termed "Steamboat Bliss." He was a genial, companionable man, a good advertiser, and had the faculty of keeping himself in the public eye. His store had a large trade at one time. He was a forceful character, of unquestioned integrity and pleasing personality, but his business enterprises were not always successful, and he suffered severe reverses of fortune.

Seeley & Spencer was another popular clothing house, which in after years was purchased by Griggs & Ryan, old employees of the store, and is now conducted by William H. Ryan, at 215 Genesee Avenue. Rich Brothers were successful clothiers and general furnishers for a number of years, but following a disastrous fire their building on Genesee Avenue, near Jefferson, was remodeled into a vaudeville theatre and moving picture house, to which uses it has since been put. Meyer & Brix, afterward H. H. Brix, at 323 Genesee Avenue, were engaged in the fur and furnishing business, and is still a successful business though in furs alone, and is conducted at 607 Genesee Avenue.





"LITTLE JAKE" SELIGMAN

**"Little Jake" Seligman.**

By far the best known and notable character in the clothing business of Saginaw, was "Little Jake" Seligman, one of the most public-spirited citizens of thirty or more years ago. Coming to East Saginaw in 1871, at the beginning of the city's remarkable growth, he acquired valuable property at Genesee and Franklin Streets, and under the title "Little Jake" established and built up a large and profitable clothing business. He also dealt in real estate and accumulated some of the most valuable realty on Genesee and adjacent streets; and he was regarded here and elsewhere as one of Saginaw's most substantial citizens.

It is related that he and the late Michael Jeffers used to dicker for business property with avidity, in the days when it was customary for each to buy or sell a valuable piece of property before dinner every day. Among the large deals in real estate put through was the sale of the Central and adjoining blocks on Genesee Street to the Heavenrichs; the Tower Block, containing the city clock (presented by him) and a bronze statue of himself surmounting the tower, to Michael Jeffers; a two-thirds interest in the Everett House property, also to Mr. Jeffers; and the brick block at the northwest corner of Genesee and Washington Streets, to the late T. F. Thompson. He was also the promoter and builder of the Saginaw Union Street Railway, which linked together the outlying sections of Potter Street, Court Street and South Saginaw. About 1880 he sold a two-thirds interest in his clothing business to Max and Carl Heavenrich, and in February, 1882, disposed of his remaining interest to Sam Heavenrich, of Detroit; and the business has since been conducted under the name of Heavenrich Brothers & Company.

Mr. Seligman was also interested in banking and large investments, for a long period being proprietor of Seligman's Bank of Commerce, on South Franklin Street, which had the full confidence of the public. George W. Emerick was cashier of the bank and private secretary to Mr. Seligman in his extensive business interests.

About 1892 Mr. Seligman closed out his Saginaw interests and moved to Detroit where, in association with Edward Doyle and others, he erected the Majestic Building, a large store and office building at Woodward and Michigan Avenues. In 1894 he removed to Salida, Colorado, largely on account of impaired health; and became interested in light and power investments, banking, mining, etc.; and for a time was vice-president of the Salida State Bank.

"Little Jake" stood high in Elkdom, and was everywhere hailed as the "smallest Elk in captivity." He had an exceedingly interesting personality, aside from his diminutive size, and was a good disciple of the doctrine that "to the hustler belongs the spoils."

#### **Other Successful Clothiers.**

The Excelsior Clothing House, a very successful business owned by Kerngood, Sloman & Rosenthal, was a popular store in the eighties and nineties, and the location in the Everett House Block was very favorable for securing transient and local trade. Late in the eighties the firm of John Otto Jr. & Company conducted a furnishing store at 207 Genesee Avenue, in Doughty's old stand, where they were "at all times prepared to supply the gentlemen of Saginaw with the most attractive and desirable goods in the lines in which they deal." Peter Bauer, at 802 Genesee Avenue, has a large and profitable business, and the location is improving each year. About 1902 Sam Carpenter opened a well stocked clothing store in the corner of the Everett House, now occupied by Moore's Cigar Store, Mautner & Krause, experienced clothing men who graduated from the larger stores, started a business at Genesee and Baum Streets, also enjoy a lucrative trade. More recent acquisitions to the clothing business are Jaeckel & Rau, at 212 Genesee Avenue; Griggs & Butenshoen, at 319 Genesee; and Albert J. Zael, at 323 Genesee Avenue.

On the West Side the leading merchants in the clothing business are: Bauer Brothers, at 316-20 Court, whose business was established two or three generations past; Brenner & Brenner, at Court and Hamilton Streets; Campbell & Brater, opened on Court Street in 1906; A. O. Richter, at 1217 Court Street; Nathan Sheyer, at 2704 South Washington Avenue, South Saginaw; and O. B. Moore & Company, at 400-02 Potter Street.

#### **Boot and Shoe Trade.**

In boots and shoes, and leather goods were W. H. Warner & Company with the "largest and best selected stock in the city," located at 214 Genesee Street; C. H. Smith & Company, at 119 Genesee Street, "opposite the Bancroft House, with E. C. Burt's fine shoes, Newport fine boots and shoes, and Joyce's dress and toilet boots and slippers;" William H. Downs & Company in the Eagle Block, 214 Genesee Avenue, opposite the Everett House; and L. S. Lenheim & Company, dealers in boots, shoes, rubber goods, boot pacs, etc., at 211 Genesee Avenue.

At Saginaw City were J. F. Brand, manufacturer and dealer in boots, shoes, advertising "lumbermen supplied with pacs and heavy boots." His store was located in Bauer's Block on Court Street. Clarke & Byrne, also on Court Street, were wholesale and retail dealers in boots, shoes and pacs; and Charles Wider was a manufacturer and dealer in leather, lasts and findings.

### Furniture and House Furnishings

In the early days of home building in Saginaw, Feige Brothers were manufacturers and dealers in fine parlor and chamber furniture, with ware-rooms at 318-20 Genesee Street, and factory at Hoyt and Genesee. E. Weinecke & Brother, dealers in "furniture, mattresses, looking-glasses and upholstering goods," were located at 405 Genesee Street. August Eggert, at 514-16 Genesee Street, succeeded to the business of Eggert & Heinemann which was established in 1869. G. Werschky, cabinet maker and furniture manufacturer, was located on Genesee between Clay (Park) and Rockwell (Second) Streets.

On the west side of the river L. Burrows, Junior, in the Taylor House Block, was a dealer in furniture and upholstered goods; as was also J. F. Wider, who added "pictures, cords, tassels and cornices, lounges, mattresses, pillows, etc., paper hanging, carpet laying, awning and lumbermen's tents." W. G. Smith, wholesale manufacturer of parlor furniture, lounges, etc., was located at 302 Court Street. Afterward, Foster, Charles & Company, conducted a large furniture business in the Barnard Block, at Hamilton and Franklin (Hancock) Streets. This establishment was later taken over by John Schmelzer, who conducts the business at the old stand.

The Queensware and house furnishing line was carried on in those days by E. Aiken & Company, at 209 Genesee Avenue, a business which was established in 1864. James Stinson was another pioneer dealer who started in 1867 and for many years was located in the Schmitz Block, at Genesee and Cass (Baum) Streets. He carried the "finest line of crockery, china, glassware, gas and oil chandeliers and English and American porcelain." Daudt, Watson & Company were jobbers of earthenware, china, glassware, etc., at 420-22 Genesee Street, having succeeded to the business founded by Daudt & Klausner several years before. The business is now conducted in greatly increased volume by H. Watson & Company, at the old stand.

Of special interest to the ladies was the establishment of Mrs. E. M. Hammond (S. L. Warford), well known as the "Emporium of Fashion," which was founded in 1853 and conducted for nearly fifty years at one location, on Washington Street opposite the Bancroft House. The stock in trade consisted of "everything for the ladies, such as millinery, straw and fancy goods, dress trimmings, cloaks and talmas, ready-made suits and fine dress goods."

The leading music house of this period was that of A. W. Wheat & Company, which was established in 1866, and were distributors for the popular Estey Cottage Organs. C. M. Norris & Company followed in this line of business, and their large and attractive store in the Tower Block, stocked with the finest merchandise of the kind, is still remembered by old residents.

### Jewelry, Books and Stationery

T. E. Doughty was a leading wholesale and retail dealer in watches, clocks and jewelry, at 301 Genesee Street; and D. R. Brown & Company, in the same line, were located at Genesee and Washington Streets, Charles F. Lacy handled the same general line at Saginaw City, his place of business being in the Fieger Block on Water (Niagara) Street. J. C. Ziegler in Bernhard's Block, Court and Water Streets, were "dealers in gold and silverware, clocks, opera glasses and spectacles." J. C. Watts & Company were at one time extensive dealers in the general jewelry line, being located at Genesee and Washington Streets, and afterward at 209 Genesee Avenue.



THE BEARINGER BUILDING, ERECTED IN 1892

Brown & Grant were very popular jewelers, their store being at 302 Genesee Avenue, and was succeeded by J. W. Grant, at Genesee and Washington Streets.

In the early days Alexander Ferguson was a dealer in books, stationery, blank books, etc., and was manager of the Snow Telegraph Line, to Detroit. His place of business was on Genesee Street between Washington and Water. S. M. McFarlan was a dealer in the same lines but added wall paper, window shades and fixtures, being located at 108 Genesee Street, Bancroft Block. Augustus Bode, at 304 Genesee Street, also dealt in stationery, school books, fancy goods, toys, notions, etc., while Albert H. Frey was a binder and blank book manufacturer at 213 Genesee Avenue, and was succeeded by Frey & Wicklein.

At Saginaw City the book and stationery lines were represented by Newell & Robinson, whose place of business was at 214 South Hamilton Street; and Penoyer & St. John, succeeded by E. St. John, on Court Street, who also carried wall paper, paints, oils, etc. The wholesale trade was carried on by the Saginaw Valley Paper Company, F. S. Sears, proprietor, at 221 South Hamilton Street; and by Swinton & Reynolds, who enjoyed a very large business at their store on Genesee Avenue.

#### Drugs and Medicines.

In drugs and medicines there was the well known house of "Dunk, the Druggist," founded by Doctor Curtis in 1851, whose store at the northeast corner of Genesee and Washington Streets, was a landmark of the business section. The business was succeeded by William B. Moore, who in later years was followed by D. E. Prall & Company. Charles S. Frizell & Company were dealers in the same line and in "toilet goods, cigars, patent medicines, etc., at Washington and German Streets. Henry Melchers, druggist and chemist, was located at Genesee and Jefferson Streets, and also dealt in wines and liquors. Eugene Ringler, druggist and chemist, was also a dealer in pure wines and liquors on Hamilton Street, Wesener's Block. William

Moll, dealer in drugs, medicines and perfumery, paints, oils, etc., was located on Water (Niagara) Street, between Court and Adams. This store was removed on January 1, 1870 to the Taylor House Block, at Hamilton and Court Streets.

### Real Estate and Insurance.

The real estate business in early days was conducted in a vigorous manner characteristic of the time. John Gallagher, whose office was in the Gallagher Block on Washington Street, and H. H. Hoyt, who also conducted an abstract office, were well known. Charles L. Ortman, once mayor of East Saginaw, was a dealer in pine and farming lands, with an office in the Wilkin's Block, Genesee Avenue opposite the Bancroft House. I. M. & H. P. Smith were dealers in choice farm lands and city property, at East Saginaw, and conducted an abstract office; and August Blanchard was a "pine land agent with an office in the Hess Block, opposite the Bancroft House." On the west side of the river were P. C. Andre, dealing in "farms, pine and grass lands, city lots, dwelling houses, and salt and mill properties." Stevens & Deveaux established a real estate office in the Barnard Block, in 1877; and J. K. Stevens conducted a real estate, abstract and loan office at the same location.

The East Saginaw Lumber Exchange, C. V. DeLand, secretary and manager, was located in the Bancroft House Block, and advertised: "Buyers visiting the Valley can obtain information of all kinds at our rooms, free of charge. All are invited."

Among the leading insurance agencies were: C. V. DeLand, handling fire, marine and life insurance, at 114 Genesee Avenue; George Lockley, with an office under the Merchants' National Bank, North Washington Street, Wheeler & Stringham were general insurance agents at 111 Genesee Street. At Saginaw City were A. S. & H. R. Gaylord, general insurance agents having the Home Insurance of New York, the Insurance Company of North America, of Philadelphia, which was chartered before George Washington took oath as President of the United States, and other leading companies of the time such as the Glens Falls, New York Equitable Life and New England Mutual. Their office was over Burrow's Bank, in the Taylor House Block. Freeman Lathrop was agent for the Equitable Life Assurance Society, and E. Schoeneberg had an office in the Taylor House, which he established in 1883.

Kirby Blakely was a well known insurance agent and real estate dealer who, in 1882, succeeded to the business established years before by D. A. Pettibone. His office was on German Street near the corner of Genesee. Later he added to his business the agency for the McCormick harvesting machines, and handled farm implements of every description.

Other dealers in agricultural implements were the Williams-Perrin Implement and Produce Company, located at Washington (Michigan) and Gratiot Streets, Saginaw City, whose business in 1887 and subsequent years exceeded one hundred thousand dollars annually; and William Roeser & Sons, at 416-18 Franklin (Hancock) Street, established in 1870, who handled the "world-renowned McCormick binders, reapers and mowers, also Advance engines and threshers."

Among the dealers in horses, wagons and carriages was Harry Bates, whose stables at 208-12 North Franklin Street were the Mecca of horsemen from this section of the State. The business was founded about 1867, and Mr. Bates, who was justly regarded as an authority on horses and a skilled veterinary surgeon, built up a large trade. He made a specialty of Clydes- and other first-class stock, and his private sales averaged nearly six hundred

norses a year. Connected with the business was a well equipped harness shop, in which harness of the best quality was made to order. To encourage horse racing Mr. Bates, late in the eighties, constructed a half mile track on his farm at the eastern limits of the city, where he and his friends spent many pleasant hours in speeding their horses.

Harvey & Coleman were other successful horse dealers, who conducted a livery on German Street at the corner of Franklin. Later Mr. Harvey withdrew and Mr. Coleman opened a large and well stocked livery stable at Washington and Tuscola Streets, a business which was continued for more than thirty years.

In a business appealing strictly to men were: Eccard, Brown & Company, wholesale dealers in tobacco and manufacturers agents, their place of business located at 205 Genesee Street. Jacob Knapp & Brother were manufacturers of domestic and Havana cigars, and dealers in tobacco, pipes, etc., on Hamilton Street between Court and Franklin (Hancock) Streets.

C. H. Cheeney & Son were makers and dealers in superior quality of log and board rules, "with square tempered heads and burned figures." Their shop was located on North Washington Street, near the F. & P. M. R. R. depot. H. Miller was also a maker of log and board rules, saw gauges, etc., with a complete shop for making small brass castings, at 1016 South Washington Street, between Brady and McCoskry Streets.

#### **Coal, Lime and Cement.**

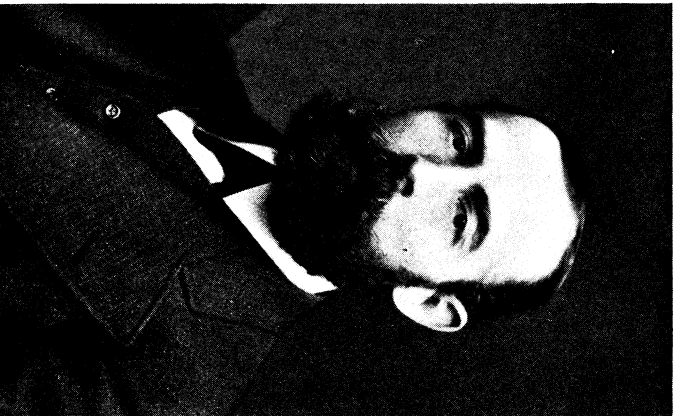
Ketcham & Tuthill were pioneers in the coal trade and allied lines, their business having been founded in 1857. They handled "Cumberland, Blossburg, Lackawana, Lehigh and steamboat coal at the Park Dock, North Water Street, between Johnson and Fitzhugh Streets." This business was later sold to C. W. White & Company, of which George W. Morley and George B. Morley were members. In 1880 Frank D. Ewen became a partner and, Mr. White retiring, the firm name became Morley, Ewen & Company, which continued the business for thirty years. It was then succeeded by the Saginaw Coal Company, which still conducts the business at the old stand.

John H. Beese & Company, at 235 South Water Street, was founded in 1883, and for a number of years enjoyed a large trade in this city and adjoining territory. In addition to all kinds of coal this company handled sewer pipe, drain tile, cement, hair, fire brick and fire clay. The firm employed four teams and seven men in caring for the trade and in making deliveries; and as a consequence of the accuracy of all its dealings enjoyed a thriving business. Later the firm became Beese-Little Coal Company, the late Charles H. Little being admitted to membership; and about 1895 the business was sold to Goodman & Winkler, who conducted it for about ten years.

At Saginaw City the firm of Remer Brothers were manufacturers of Kelly Island stone lime, and dealers in coal, calcined plaster, cement, brick, etc. The business was founded in 1870 by J. Remer, afterward changing to J. Remer & Son, and in 1882 assumed its present style. Their yard and lime kiln, covering an area of one hundred and twenty by two hundred and fifty feet, with railroad tracks in front and spacious docks in the rear, is located on Water (Niagara) Street, at the foot of Madison Street, a very favorable location for receiving stone for the kilns and coal and materials for trade, while offering every facility for prompt delivery to all parts of the West Side. In recent years the company purchased the property of E. Everett Johnson, successor to Johnson Brothers, coal, wood and lime dealers, located on Water Street at the foot of Hayden Street, and from this yard handle a considerable part of their trade on the East Side.



**CHARLES B. MOTT**  
Agent for Jesse Hoyt, and Mayor of  
East Saginaw in 1861-2



**CHARLES L. ORTMAN**  
Lumberman, and Mayor of East  
Saginaw in 1872

### Retail Grocers of Olden Times.

The oldest retail grocer in Saginaw is George Streeb, who started a small business on Water Street as early as 1853. An account of his business career and portrait will be found on pages 173-4 of this volume. Thomas L. Jackson was another pioneer in the business, whose store at the corner of Washington (Michigan) and Gratiot Streets, was started in 1862. (See Volume II, page 54.). W. C. Russell was a dealer in choice family groceries and farmers' produce, his store located in Andre's new block on Court Street; Ballentine Brothers were grocers on Court Street, "opposite Jay Smith's;" and Downing and Brother kept a family grocery at Washington and Miller Streets.

At East Saginaw, Curtis, Bliss & Company were prominent grocers, with a store in the Crouse Block, at Washington and Genesee Streets; and McBain & Ross, who dealt also in provisions, flour, feed, etc., were in the same building. J. H. Trakat was located at 105 Jefferson Street; Simpson, Barber & Company, established in 1870, at 317 Genesee; Draper & Cashin, at 406 Genesee; Hathaway & Ware, at the corner of Washington and Hoyt Streets. Burdick & Moore were located at 400-02 North Franklin Street, and later, following the fire in their place of business on June 29, 1887, at 130-2 Jefferson Street, where they carried on a large grocery and meat business. Gossell Brothers at 900 Lapeer Street, founded by Peter P. Heller, in 1879; R. Asbeck, at Lapeer and Seventh Streets, where he located in 1867; and Stewart Brothers, on Potter Street, and Charles Straw, on North Washington Street, were successful merchants many years ago.

### Grocery and Provision Trade.

A large and important division of local trade in the early days of Saginaw was that of wholesale groceries and provisions, which has increased to such a volume that the trade is now represented by four successful jobbing houses, one coffee and spice mill, four extensive meat packing and distributing concerns, and five large commission houses.

The first wholesale grocer and produce merchant was John P. Derby, whose business in Saginaw dated from 1857. Coming here at that time he purchased the stock of goods in the store then owned by John F. Driggs, and several business lots on North Water Street, and in 1866 erected an imposing three-story brick building, known as the Derby Block, with a dock in the rear, and opened a large wholesale house. He carried a "large stock of staple and fancy groceries and shelf goods, mill and camp supplies," and enjoyed a large wholesale trade covering not only Saginaw Valley but all of Northern Michigan. He also dealt largely in produce as a general commission merchant, and held the confidence of shippers by the careful and accurate manner in which commission services were performed by him. Later he opened a retail grocery in a two-story brick building, having a floor area of forty-eight hundred square feet, at 718-20 Genesee Avenue, where a very successful business, under the management of his son, J. Perley Derby, was conducted for many years.

Another early wholesale grocery house was that of Shaw, Bullard & Company, which was located at 121-23 North Water Street, with a broad dock at the rear for the convenient and expeditious unloading of their merchandise, practically all of which was brought here in those days by vessel from Buffalo, Dunkirk and Erie. The building was later occupied by F. W. Carlisle & Company, who moved from across the street about twenty-five years ago. The line of groceries and lumbermen's supplies handled by Shaw, Bullard & Company, included teas, syrups and tobaccos, and they advertised "the only exclusive wholesale grocery house in the valley."



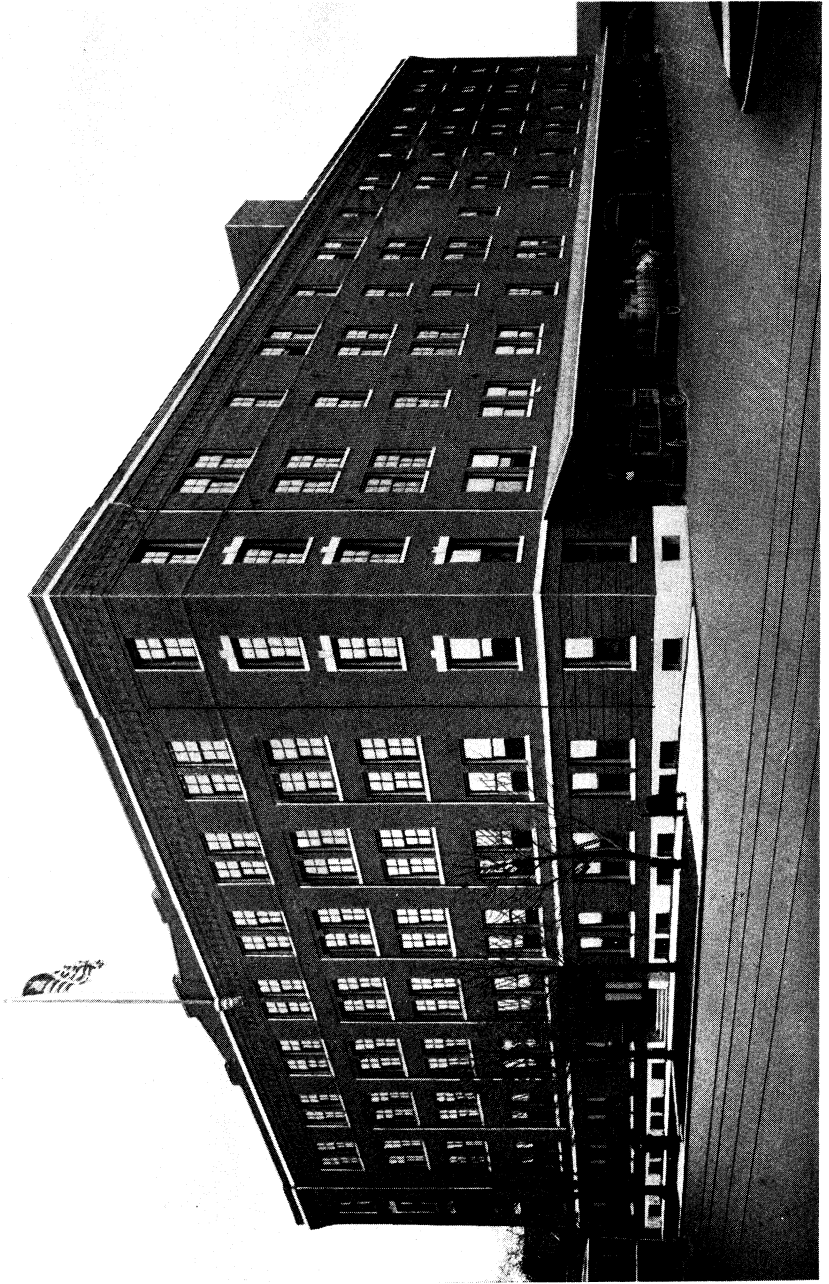
The next important wholesale business was founded in 1867 at Saginaw City by Ammi W. Wright and his associates, under the firm name of Northrup, Wells & Company. Their warehouse was a three-story brick building, with a large one-story addition, at Water (Niagara) and Clinton Streets, and with branch stores at Midland, Sanford, Loomis and Farwell, shipping points on the Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad. Two years after the business was founded Mr. Northrup withdrew, and Farnam C. Stone was admitted to the firm, when the name became Wells, Stone & Company. Their business was primarily that of wholesale groceries and dealers in lumbermen's supplies, but gradually trading in pine lands, logs and lumber became a large part of the business.

In 1885 the Wells-Stone Mercantile Company was incorporated with Charles W. Wells, president, and Farnam C. Stone, vice-president, and the wholesale grocery and lumbermen's supply departments were relinquished to them. The company occupied a two-story warehouse, two hundred by one hundred feet in dimensions, which was completely stocked with every description of staple and fancy groceries, tobaccos, dry goods, drugs, lumbermen's tools and wearing apparel such as was used in lumber camps. Near the warehouse was a spacious elevator equipped with all machinery for its operation, having a storage capacity of one hundred thousand bushels of grain, a mill for grinding feed and corn meal, and a large storage capacity for grain in bags and other heavy merchandise. In addition the company occupied a large warehouse at Duluth, from which shipments were made to an extensive trade in Minnesota and the Northwest. The company transacted an immense volume of business in the western and northern portions of Michigan, and was rated as one of the biggest jobbing houses in this part of the country.

In 1896, following the decline in the lumber business in Michigan, in which the trade in lumbermen's supplies fell off rapidly, the firm of Phipps, Penoyer & Company, was organized by William C. Phipps, Chauncey W. Penoyer and others, to take over the wholesale grocery business so long conducted by the old companies, and, although the outlook at the time was far from encouraging, a large business was developed in the growing towns and country districts to the western, northern portions of the State, and in the "Thumb" district. About 1910 the company was absorbed by the National Grocer Company, although the management remained with Mr. Phipps until his death in February, 1915. Since that time the business has been conducted under the name of the latter company and a large and increasing trade accrues to it.

James Stewart, one of the pioneers in the wholesale grocery trade of Saginaw Valley, started in business in 1872, occupying the two-story warehouse at Genesee and Water Streets, and having ample dockage and shipping facilities at the rear. In 1882 the business was incorporated as the James Stewart Company, with Doctor Lyman W. Bliss, president; Max Heavenrich, vice-president and manager; and O. F. Wisner, secretary. They carried a full line of staple and fancy groceries, tobaccos, pork, flour, feed and lumbermen's supplies, and imported direct all their own teas. The company also dealt extensively in salt and shingles. About 1889, when the large four-story brick building was erected at Washington and Tuscola Streets, the business was removed to it, where it was continued for more than ten years. The company was then dissolved but the business was still conducted by Mr. Stewart in the Cass Block, at Baum and Tuscola Streets.

Robert Boyd was one of the leading grocers, in both wholesale and retail trade fifty years ago, having founded a successful business in 1865. His stores were in the Exchange Block, at Genesee and Water Streets, where



WHOLESALE GROCERY HOUSE OF SYMONS BROTHERS & COMPANY

the business was continued (after 1874 under the firm name of R. Boyd & Company) until purchased by Cooper & Peck in November, 1886. This firm occupied the business block at 107-9 South Jefferson Street, which was well fitted out for the display of goods in an attractive manner and the sale of groceries, including a complete line of cigars and tobaccos. In connection with the store was a well kept meat market, where were also sold fresh and salt fish, poultry, and all kinds of game in season. Their trade extended from Jackson to the Straits of Mackinaw.

### Symons Brothers & Company

The wholesale grocery house of Symons Brothers & Company, which now conducts the largest jobbing business of its kind in Michigan, has an interesting history which illustrates to what extent an immense trade can be built up from a small beginning. The origin of the firm dates back to 1877 when John W. Symons was employed as a clerk in Flint, Michigan. While visiting in South Bay City he suggested to James S. Smart, Jr., that they start a commission business on a small scale, Symons to buy butter and eggs in Flint and Smart to dispose of them in South Bay City.

Though started in a small way the business prospered and soon Mr. Symons gave up his position to devote all his time and energy to the new enterprise. The firm of James S. Smart, Jr. & Company was then formed with a capital of two hundred and twenty-five dollars saved out of Mr. Symons' earnings. As the business continued to grow the firm put in a general stock of merchandise and changed the name to Symons & Smart. About 1879 a consolidation was effected with their biggest competitor, which resulted in putting the firm in the front rank of the trade in South Bay City.

In 1881 a small jobbing business was established and the firm began to look for a larger field. The old established wholesale house of Remington & Stevens, at 126 North Washington Avenue, East Saginaw, was purchased outright, and in 1883 the business of Symons & Smart was removed to the warehouses of the former at East Saginaw. At the end of the first year the capital stock was increased to twenty-five thousand dollars, and from that time the success of the firm was assured. Mr. Smart withdrew from the company in 1886, and the name was changed to Symons Brothers & Company by which title the business has since been known. J. W. Symons was president, S. E. Symons, vice-president, and George H. Glynn, secretary and treasurer of the company.

At the time the business was rapidly increasing, the sales of tea amounting to two thousand chests annually, and one hundred and twenty-five thousand pounds of coffee in the same period. By keeping their stock up to the highest standard of quality and giving the trade every advantage in prices, combined with uniformly fair and accurate dealings, they built up a large business covering a large portion of Michigan.

Since removing to this city in 1883 the business has increased from two hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars to three million dollars in 1917, a period of thirty-four years, and it is still increasing. Their warerooms on North Washington Avenue became much crowded with stock and about 1900 the firm removed to the four-story brick building at Washington Avenue and Tuscola Street. In 1910, having again outgrown their quarters in this large building, the company purchased a plot of ground on South Washington Avenue between Millard and Thompson Streets, and erected thereon a large five-story and basement brick warehouse, salesrooms and offices. This is a perfectly arranged and appointed building, having a floor space of about two hundred and twelve thousand square feet, and has direct railroad connection with the Michigan Central and Grand Trunk railways.

Among the men who are still connected with the house, who have been with it since its early days are: John W. Symons, president, the founder of the business; Samuel E. Symons, treasurer, who cast his lot with the new firm before removing to East Saginaw; J. Will Hall, secretary, who came to the firm as office boy in 1884; and Henry P. Goppelt, vice-president, who came to the house direct from school in 1887. Rudolph Otto, a director of the company, came as warehouseman in 1888, and J. W. Symons, Jr., and S. E. Symons, Jr., sons of the founders, are also directors. P. T. Green, who came to the company in 1912 from Harrisville, Michigan, and S. E. Symons, Jr., are the buyers.

From time to time new lines have been added to the regular wholesale grocery lines formerly carried in stock. About five years ago the company saw that there was a field in Saginaw for a jobbing dry goods business, and this department has now been developed until the company stands in the forefront of Michigan's wholesale dry goods houses, as well as being second to none as wholesale grocers. Walter J. Harris is manager of this growing department.

### George A. Alderton & Company

George A. Alderton, the veteran wholesale grocer of the West Side and head of the company which bears his name, enjoys the distinction of being one of the first men in this city to engage in the business. He is now the dean of an extensive jobbing business in Saginaw, and none holds a higher place in the estimation of the grocery trade. His entry into commercial life was in the early days of big lumbering operations, and he has never relinquished his active participation in supplying the needs of the people.

The origin of this company dates from the eighteen-sixties, when Mr. Alderton was actively engaged in the spice business. The firm was Taggart, Lindley & Company, and their place of business was on North Water Street at Tuscola Street. Mr. Alderton withdrew his interest and for a time operated the Kull Salt Block at Saginaw City. His preference, however, was for trade and barter and he entered the grocery business, keeping a retail store in what is now the Nineteenth Ward. These enterprises were but preliminary to the real and successful work of his life.

In 1875, when the great lumber industry was approaching its height and the woods were full of logging camps, he perceived the increasing demand for lumbermen's supplies, and established a wholesale grocery and supply house at 315-17 South Water Street, Saginaw City. The business proved successful and the two-story warehouse, fifty by one hundred feet in dimensions, was filled with everything in the line of staple and fancy groceries, shelf goods, and teas, coffees, spices and tobaccos. As the forests fell before the advancing lumberjacks and the country began to be settled, towns and villages sprang up in favored places; and the needs of farming communities over a wide territory were supplied by the wholesale houses of Saginaw. In this increasing trade George A. Alderton enjoyed a large share.

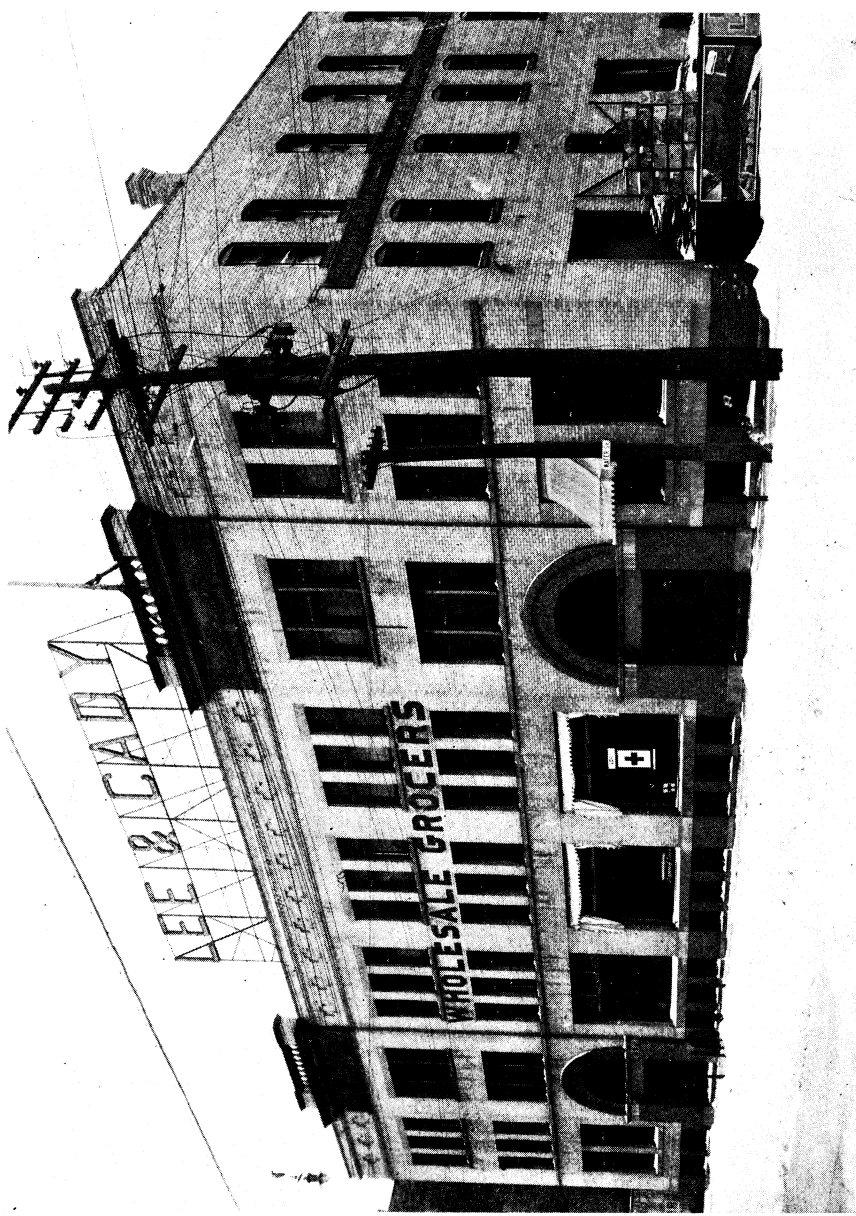
At length the business increased to such volume that incorporation was expedient, and in July, 1900, this forward step was effected. George A. Alderton is president of the company, Alfred A. Alderton is vice-president, and Clifford W. Alderton is secretary. These officers and Frederick W. Gensiver compose the board of directors. Mr. G. A. Alderton is also identified with some of Saginaw's leading commercial houses, being president of the Commercial National Bank, the Saginaw Valley Trust Company, and of the Melze, Alderton Shoe Company.

The business continued to grow and the old warehouse became overcrowded with goods. A larger and more conveniently arranged building was imperative, and in 1902 the company acquired the property adjoining at the

C. A. ALDERTON & CO.



THE WHOLESALE ESTABLISHMENT OF GEORGE A. ALDERTON & COMPANY



THE MODERN STRUCTURE OF LEE & CADY, SAGINAW

corner of South Niagara and Cass Streets. On this site there soon rose by the enterprise of the company, a large three-story and basement brick building, eighty by one hundred and twenty feet in dimensions, and which was opened for business on December 28, 1903. This structure is equipped and arranged for the efficient and economical handling of all orders, and is a decided advantage to their customers. A railroad siding of the Michigan Central along one side of the building affords quick handling of merchandise which is received in car load lots.

Within this fine business structure is carried a large and varied stock of general groceries, coffees, spices, tobaccos and notions. The last named line is quite extensive and comprises, not only the numberless small articles of that trade, but overhauls, jackets, blouses, gloves, etc. There is a large demand for workmen's gloves, the well-known "Wolverine" brand made in Saginaw, being the favorite. The company makes a specialty of "Fairy Bow" flour—a Minnesota flour of highest quality, and the "Flag" brand of canned goods, which is very popular with the trade. They are agents for the famous "Sparrow" candies and enjoy a splendid business in this line. In all kinds of tobaccos the company also has a satisfactory trade.

The growing business of the company extends over the greater portion of Western and Northern Michigan and the "Thumb" section reached by the Pere Marquette, the Michigan Central and Detroit & Mackinac railroads. Six energetic travelling salesmen cover this large territory, and there is a considerable mail order business due to the confidence of the trade in the fair and liberal policy of the house in all its dealings.

### Lee & Cady

(Saginaw Branch)

The origin of this old established grocery house was in the pioneer business established in the eighteen-sixties, known as the Valley Coffee & Spice Mills. The proprietors were Taggart, Lindley & Company, and their place of business was on North Water Street at the foot of Tuscola. Frank Plumb was the silent partner in this concern, and in 1872 he purchased the interest of Mr. Lindley, and soon after interested Ben McCausland in the enterprise, the firm name then becoming Plumb & McCausland. This firm extended its business by the addition of a general line of wholesale groceries and lumbermen's supplies, and a large trade was soon developed.

In 1876 the business had expanded to such a volume that more capital was needed, and Waldo A. Avery entered the firm and furnished unlimited financial backing to the new firm of Plumb, McCausland & Company. The business was then located at 121-23 North Water Street, in the three-story brick building formerly occupied by Shaw, Bullard & Company.

An extensive business was carried on for about eight years, the annual sales amounting to several hundred thousand dollars. As might be expected the profits at this period were large. The lumbermen were gaining riches from the forests and few were inclined to haggle over prices. For goods they needed in their logging operations they were willing to pay reasonable prices; and progressive wholesalers who supplied them were entitled to fair profits.

In 1892 this successful business was purchased by George A. Alderton, A. C. Melze and James S. Smart, Jr., who organized the firm of McCausland Grocery Company. James S. Smart, Jr., was the active manager of this enterprising firm, whose business was established in the Exchange Block, at Genesee Avenue and Water Street, formerly occupied by Robert Boyd in the same line. The firm transacted a large volume of business in lumbermen's supplies, their trade extending over a wide territory including towns on the bay and lake shores reached by the Shore Line Steamers.

In 1894 the name of the firm was changed to Melze, Smart & Company, the stockholders and officers being: George A. Alderton, president; Fred J. Fox, vice-president; A. C. Melze, treasurer, and James S. Smart, Jr., secretary and manager. Two years later Mr. Melze retired and Mr. Smart assumed the office of treasurer thus left vacant. Shortly after a wholesale drug department was started as a profitable adjunct to the business. In 1899 the name was changed to The Smart & Fox Company, with the same officers and directors.

About 1902 the three-story and basement brick building, which had been erected at the foot of Tuscola Street especially for the wholesale house, was occupied by The Smart & Fox Company, and the drug business was moved to quarters there. The company soon after purchased the wholesale grocery business of W. I. Brotherton & Company at Bay City, and conducted it for a number of years under the name of H. W. Jennison Grocery Company. Later it was known as the Bay City Grocery Company. The company rapidly extended its business, and in 1906 purchased the wholesale house of Phelps, Brace & Company, at Detroit, and a few months later purchased that of Ward L. Andrews & Company. At about this time they disposed of the drug business, which had assumed large proportions under the management of John W. Smart, with William B. Moore as assistant, to the Michigan Drug Company of Detroit.

On March 1, 1907, The Smart & Fox Company interests were consolidated with the large wholesale house of Lee & Cady, of Detroit, and the name was changed to Lee, Cady & Smart, with branch houses at Saginaw under the name of The Smart & Fox Company, the Bay City Grocer Company, Lee & Cady, Kalamazoo, and the Lee & Cady Eastern Market Branch, Detroit.

In 1911 the name of The Smart & Fox Company, Branch of Lee & Cady, was discontinued, and the local business has since been known as Lee & Cady, Saginaw Branch, with Fred J. Fox as manager. Mr. Fox came to Saginaw on August 29, 1887, and became associated with McCausland & Company, and has since been actively identified with this grocery business.

The present officers and directors of Lee & Cady are: Gilbert W. Lee, president; David D. Cady, vice-president; George R. Treble, secretary and treasurer; R. F. Galwey, assistant treasurer; and R. W. Collins, assistant secretary and auditor.

### **Melze, Alderton Shoe Company**

A commercial house of which the average citizen has little knowledge or realization of its importance to this part of Michigan, is the Melze, Alderton Shoe Company. This large institution, which is situated in the four-story and basement brick building at Washington and Tuscola Streets, is one of the largest wholesale shoe and rubber houses in the State. Starting in a very small way its history is interesting as showing what intelligence, diligence and thorough knowledge of the business, rightly directed, will accomplish in building up a large trade.

The origin of this successful house was in the retail business of Jennings, Lacy & Company which, some twenty-five years ago, occupied a small store at 215 Genesee Avenue. It was a successful business, and, in order to meet a need of other retailers of shoes and rubbers, developed a wholesale department. The outlook for this part of the business was such that the firm was incorporated September 10, 1895, with George A. Alderton, president; N. M. Lacy, vice-president; S. W. Jennings, treasurer and manager, and James S. Smart, secretary. The capital stock was fifty thousand dollars; and the place of business was at 111-13 Genesee Avenue, to which location it had meanwhile been removed.





THE EXTENSIVE WHOLESALE HOUSE OF MELZE, ALDERTON SHOE COMPANY

Changes in stockholders and in the personnel of the officers occurred in the following years. E. P. Waldron of St. Johns, Michigan, came to the company August 12, 1899, in the capacity of manager and treasurer, an office which he held until January 1, 1907. He then resigned and removed from the city. On February 24, 1900, N. M. Lacy retired and A. C. Melze was elected vice-president and director. This change in officers was followed on January 1, 1901, by the resignation of S. W. Jennings, whereupon the name of the company was changed to Waldron, Alderton & Melze.

Under able management the business grew and in May, 1903, was removed from the cramped quarters on Genesee Avenue to the three-story brick building at Franklin and Tuscola Streets. On March 24, 1904, the capital stock was increased to one hundred thousand dollars, a measure made necessary by the greatly increased business and stock carried. Mr. Waldron was succeeded by O. D. Gilbert as manager; and the following men were added to the board of directors: O. D. Gilbert, H. B. Washburn, C. A. List, G. H. Hillman and C. W. Taylor.

On March 19, 1907, the capital stock was again increased to one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars; and the name was changed to Melze, Alderton Shoe Company. From that time the business expanded more rapidly than before, and began to assume proportions of the greatest importance to a large portion of Michigan. On February 11, 1911, O. D. Gilbert resigned his position and George H. Hillman, who had been connected with the concern since its earliest days, was elected to succeed him as buyer. So great was the expansion of the business that on January 20, 1913, the capital stock was increased to two hundred thousand dollars, of which fifty thousand is preferred stock.

The present location of this prosperous business was purchased in January, 1916. The large building, sixty by one hundred and twenty feet in dimensions, was built expressly for a wholesale house, and has a floor space of thirty-six thousand square feet, which is more than double that of the building formerly occupied. The necessity for ample storage space and shipping facilities is best illustrated by the remarkable increase in sales in twenty years, from seventy-six thousand dollars in 1896 to four hundred and eighty-five thousand dollars in 1917.

This company is the largest dealer in rubbers in Michigan, being State agents for the celebrated Lycoming Rubbers. Five travelling salesmen cover practically all of Michigan as far North as the Straits of Mackinac. Recently a complete line of automobile tires was added to their stocks for distribution throughout Michigan.

In 1917 the officers of the company were: George A. Alderton, president; A. C. Melze, vice-president and treasurer; E. C. Cramer, secretary, and George H. Hillman, general manager.

### **Packing and Meat Trade**

Spencer Barclay was a leading beef and pork packer in the early days, his packing house being located at 204-6 North Water Street, and the retail store at 127 North Washington Street. Stingel Brothers were wholesale and retail butchers, "all kinds of meat constantly on hand," at 114-16 North Washington Street. Fred Hubert was a wholesale and retail butcher at the same stand; and John M. Tholl, with fresh and preserved meats, sausages, etc., was located at South Washington and Hoyt Streets. Jacob Meier was a manufacturer of "pork, ham, frankfort, liver and bologna sausages," at 408 Genesee Street, while John Stolz & Son conducted a meat business at 807 Genesee, which was founded in 1852. Ernest Wilke conducted a very successful meat market at 504 Potter Street; and Michael Kundinger was a prominent dealer at 216 Hamilton Street, Saginaw City.



LEWIS CORNWELL

### The Cornwell Company

It was in 1863 that the Cornwell Company, or the business to which it succeeded, was founded by the late Lewis Cornwell, who in that year began supplying Saginaw, Bay City, Lansing and Jackson with cattle on the hoof. Attaining a remarkable success as a pioneer in this field, Mr. Cornwell — twenty years later — opened up the first wholesale meat establishment in the Saginaw Valley. In a comparatively small building the Saginaw Beef Company had its inception, and in eight years the business had developed to such an extent that larger quarters were necessary. A new and enlarged storage and shipping establishment was erected in 1891, at Thompson and Franklin Sts.

By closely adhering at all times to Mr. Cornwell's firm policy of supplying only the highest grade meats to the trade, and through the deep personal interest of Mr. Cornwell in the success and welfare of each of those whom his company served, rapid strides were made in the development of the concern. At the death of Lewis Cornwell, in 1903, the large business was continued by the four sons — William C. Cornwell, Charles E. Cornwell, Elmer J. Cornwell and L. W. Cornwell — all of whom had grown up in the business. They followed the maxims of their father, "Never attempt to fool the trade



WM. C. CORNWELL    C. E. CORNWELL    E. J. CORNWELL    L. W. CORNWELL  
 President            Vice-President        Secretary-Treasurer    Manager Jackson Branch

or it will fool you. Offer nothing but the best and back it up with a square deal — it's the only way to win success in the meat business."

On July 1, 1915, the business was reincorporated under the name of The Cornwell Company, in perpetuation of the memory of the honored founder.

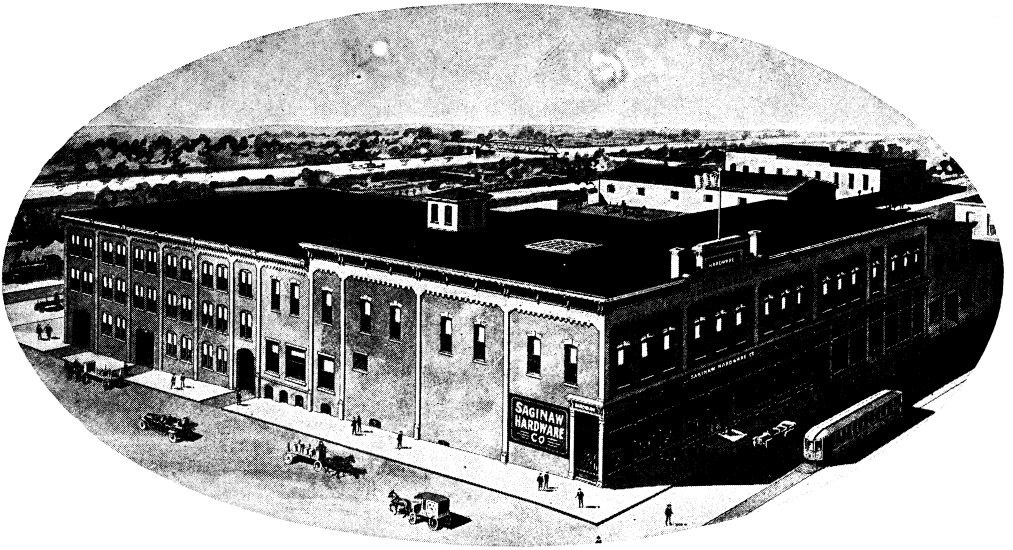
It was service and a progressive, business-like spirit, which dominates the entire organization, that won the large bulk of Michigan's meat trade, and made possible the erection of one of the finest cold storage plants in the country — the new home of The Cornwell Company. In all Michigan there is not another meat establishment to compare with this modern, six-story structure, with its complete facilities for the sanitary and careful handling of choicest meats, poultry, butter, eggs and provisions. Cleanliness and sanita-



THE NEW PLANT OF THE CORNWELL COMPANY

tion go hand in hand with the supplying of high grade meats, and in this respect the new Cornwell plant has no equal. Strictest attention was paid to provide a system of mechanical handling of meats in so far as possible to minimize the human contact and to increase the purity of the products passing through the establishment. Plenty of light and air are admitted to all parts (except, of course, the cold storage rooms) by huge windows which greatly improve working conditions.

The Cornwell Company is the Michigan distributor for Swift's Packing House products, with so perfect a system and service that the company is enabled to make deliveries to the trade in almost every community in the State within from two to five days from the time the meat is dressed in the Chicago packing house. Besides this large business the company handles an immense quantity of poultry, having facilities for keeping and feeding forty-five thousand birds. The butter, egg and provision departments of the business are also extensive and constantly growing.



SAGINAW HARDWARE COMPANY

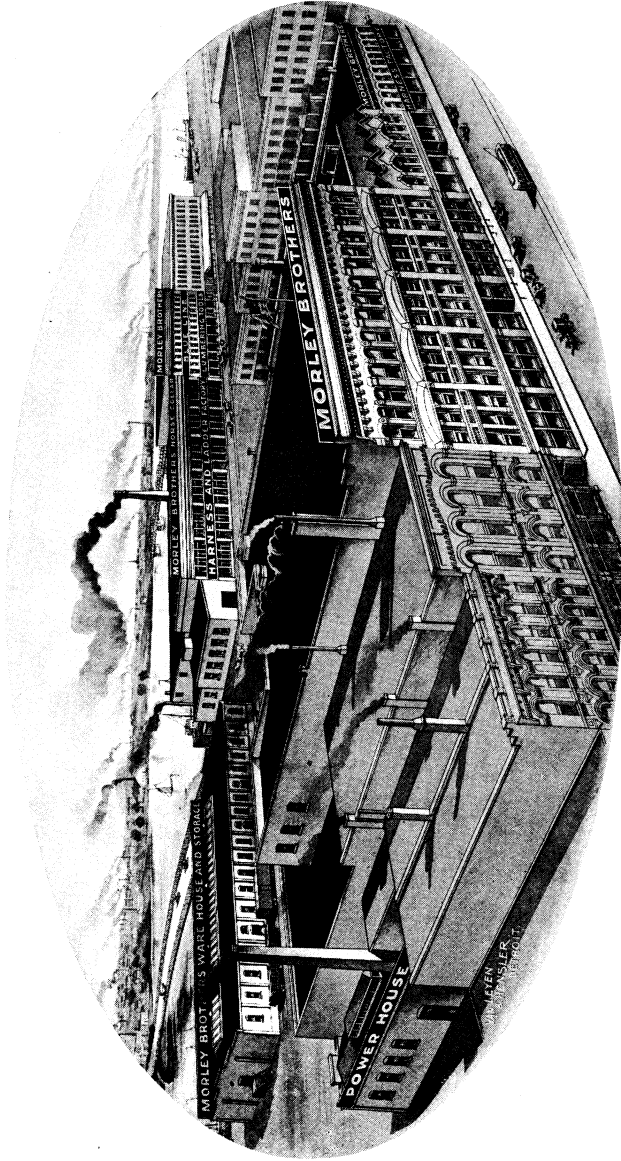
### Saginaw Hardware Company

This old and prosperous company, whose wholesale and retail stores are located at 200 to 204 South Hamilton Street, was founded in 1864 by William Seyffardt and A. W. Achard. For nine years the business was conducted by these enterprising men, and was then taken over by Mr. Achard. In 1873 the firm was known as Achard & Schoeneberg, and in 1878, when Mr. Achard was joined by his son, Emil F. Achard, the firm name was changed to A. W. Achard & Son.

In 1884 the firm owned and occupied a spacious two-story and basement brick building, sixty by eighty feet in dimensions, at the present location; and in 1887 a large addition was erected at the rear, giving a total floor space of twenty thousand square feet. The business increased very rapidly, the trade reaching west and north into the lumber districts and northeast into the "Thumb." The retail trade of the firm at this stage of its history was extensive, being by far the largest at Saginaw City.

On the main floor was carried a heavy stock and full assortment of tools, cutlery, builders' and general shelf hardware and mill supplies, while in a separate room at the rear, which was connected with the receiving and shipping room, was a large stock of bar and sheet iron. In a large warehouse on Water Street there was to be found a complete assortment of agricultural implements, wagons, sewer pipe, drain tile, and paints, oils, glass, brushes and painters' supplies. The high and water-proof basement and the upper floor were stocked with surplus goods.

Later the firm's business was incorporated under the name of The Saginaw Hardware Company, by which it is known today. As the trade has broadened and new territory opened by a staff of travelling salesmen, improvements have been made in the building to afford increased facilities for handling the business in an economical manner. In 1909 a large three-story addition was erected at the corner of Water and Adams Streets, adjoining the rear of the main building, which gave practically one hundred thousand square feet of floor space to the establishment. To the large lines already carried there have been added in recent years a full stock of automobile tires and rubber goods, in which the company enjoys a satisfactory trade.



THE MAMMOTH ESTABLISHMENT OF MORLEY BROTHERS

### Morley Brothers

Fifty-five years ago, in a one and a half-story frame building standing on stilts over a bayou, which in those days spread its slimy waters over the greater part of East Saginaw, a middle-aged German by the name of Anton Schmitz conducted a small hardware shop. Schmitz had two competitors. His little store was the smallest of the three; but the rapid growth of the town, which then boasted a population of five thousand, and the cry of its saw mills and logging camps for tools and hardware, had created a demand for all three stores.

Inspired during the day by the hum of saws and the crack of the woodman's axe and lulled through the long Summer evenings by the croak of big throated frogs in the mysterious bogs beneath and all about his shop, Schmitz tended his business. Besides his stock of hardware and lumbering tools he carried a layout of crockery for the housewives and toys for the children.

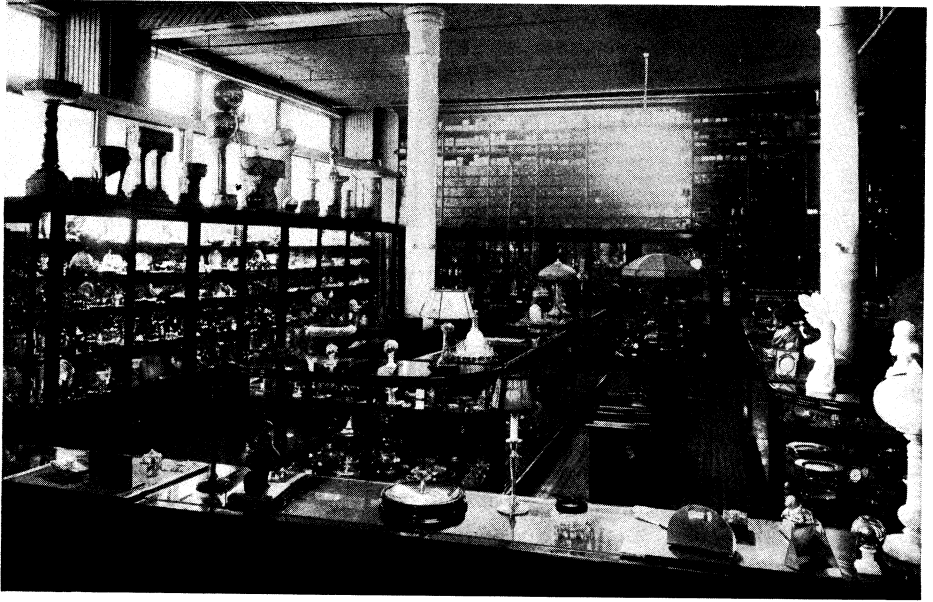
For some time Schmitz had been on the lookout for a desirable partner. Most of the store work he had done alone and, suffering from asthma, he often found the combined duties of buyer, salesman and bookkeeper too exacting. He realized that during the boom period of a wide-awake lumbering town, added capital in his business would mean a more than proportionate increase in profits. This was in 1863, four years after the incorporation of the city of East Saginaw.

In Painesville, Ohio, at the time were two brothers, George W. and Edward W. Morley, awaiting a business opening through which they might convert their combined energy and talents into dollars and cents. Their father was willing to back them so that it was simply a proposition of their discovering the best business opportunity. They heard tales of the prosperity of Saginaw, the town in the Michigan forests, and of the discovery of salt there, all of which made a deep impression upon their minds.

But it was not the wealth of timber nor the fortunes to be pumped out of salt wells that interested them most. Theirs was a purely mercantile spirit—a hankering for trade and barter; and they foresaw that Saginaw was destined to become a business center. So they came to East Saginaw, liked the place and met Schmitz. A deal was soon made and the people of Saginaw awoke one morning to see the old board sign of Anton Schmitz gone, and in its place hung another which displayed in fresh paint the words, "Schmitz & Morley."

From this modest beginning the present hardware firm of Morley Brothers developed. Schmitz has long since been dead; the original store deserted more than fifty years ago; but the Morley Brothers have remained active in the business. They have seen it graduate from a country store with barely six thousand square feet of floor space, from the back door of which boys used to spear bull frogs and shoot wild ducks, to a store and factories covering nearly half a million square feet. For many years the business has been the most thoroughly modernized hardware store in this section of the country, transacting the largest business of its kind in Michigan.

But this development was not of a moment, nor was it realized without much hard work on the part of the brothers. In less than two years after the new firm started, Schmitz & Morley moved into the Empire Block on Water Street, then the principal business street of the town. Here goods could be loaded from the rear door of the store into scows to be poled up the river to lumber camps, and supplies brought by lake boats could be unloaded practically upon the firm's shelves. Soon after becoming settled in the new quarters, the Morleys bought out Schmitz, and the firm name was changed to Morley Brothers. The firm then comprised Albert Morley, of Painesville,



SILVERWARE AND ART SECTION, MORLEY BROTHERS

Ohio, the father, and his three sons, George W., Edward W., and Charles H., the last named having joined his brothers a few months after they had bought into the Saginaw business. The father and Charles H. later retired from the firm.

The continued growth of the business necessitated the addition of adjoining stores, first on one side and then on the other, until at last, in 1881, Morley Brothers occupied seven stores, and decided to erect a suitable building of their own. On April 1, 1881, a large plot of ground, two hundred and forty feet long, with ninety feet frontage on Washington Street, and one hundred and fifty feet on Water Street, was purchased from Jesse Hoyt. The site was then occupied by a large Summer garden. Building operations were at once begun, and on April 1, 1882, Morley Brothers moved into their new building.

This event attracted much attention in the press, as the establishment, with one exception, was the largest hardware store in the United States. This was thirty-six years ago; but the firm has kept pace with the progress of the times, and improvements and additions made from time to time. The store has always been a pride of Saginaw and one of its show places to visitors and travellers.

The division of Morley Brothers' business into departments, which at that time was a novelty, resulted in the following departments: 1, general hardware; 2, iron and steel; 3, carriage hardware and wood stock; 4, saddlery hardware; 5, stoves; 6, housefurnishing goods and stamped ware; 7, mill and lumbermen's supplies; 8, cordage, oakum and ship chandlery; 9, paints, oils, varnishes and glass. Each department is most complete, that of hardware, in which the company transacts a business annually reaching into the millions, being one of the largest in the United States. Heavy hardware, including pipe, iron and steel, cordage, etc., occupies the rear portion of the lower floors, and a large warehouse on the dock on Water Street, erected in 1900.



The saddlery department, which was added in 1881, has grown to proportions far greater than the imagination of the founders could have predicted. In it may be found everything of interest to the trade; and the department is widely known with the rest of the institution for its standard stocks.

In the sporting goods department, which is complete in every detail, may be found at all times an unequalled line of guns and ammunition, cut glass, silverware, fishing tackle and athletic goods. To this large stock have been recently added a beautiful line of fine china, art glassware, and the Brooks phonograph which is manufactured in this city.

The manufacturing departments include harness and collars in the saddlery factory at Water and Tuscola Streets. Nothing is lacking to make the concern complete in every particular, and this fact, coupled with the honest, attentive business policy always followed, has brought it to a position of a leading hardware jobbing store of the Middle West.

George W. Morley, who served as president of the corporation since its organization on February 15, 1883, died April 10, 1914, and was succeeded by Edward W. Morley. Ralph C. Morley was chosen general manager in January, 1900, and later elected treasurer. The directors of the company are: Edward W. Morley, John E. Morley, George W. Morley, Jr., Ralph C. Morley, P. F. H. Morley, secretary; Charles A. Phillips, manager of the saddlery department; H. A. Werner, buyer; Thomas A. Saylor, manager of sporting goods department; E. L. Reichle, manager of mill supply department.

The senior members of the company were confident from the earliest days of the business stability of the city, and have lived to see Saginaw the third city in the State, and one of the leading cities of its class in the entire country.



HARDWARE AND CHINA SECTION, MORLEY BROTHERS

### The Early Newspapers

As early as 1836, when Saginaw City was only a frontier settlement in the forest wilderness, a printing press and small assortment of type were brought from New York by Norman Little. It was a time when this enterprising promoter was advertising extensively throughout the eastern states, the advantages of settlement here, and his plans of improvement included the starting of a weekly newspaper. Accordingly, on a certain day in 1836 there appeared the first issue of the Saginaw Journal, the pioneer newspaper of the Saginaw Valley. John P. Hosmer was its first editor, his duties including the work of type-setting, working the press, and everything else done by hand, which generally fell to the printer's "devil." How long this primitive sheet was kept alive is not known.

The Saginaw North Star, the second newspaper printed here, was established in 1842 by R. W. Jenny. After a few years of precarious existence it suspended publication, and for some time Saginaw City was without any newspaper of its own. At length L. L. G. Jones, having a liking and facility for collecting news, started the "Spirit of the Times," the first issue of which appeared on March 3, 1853. Under this somewhat catchy title he put out a presentable sheet, a copy of which, of date 1858, is preserved by Mrs. S. W. Kennedy, 703 North Michigan Avenue.

Another early newspaper was the Saginaw Valley Herald, which was started by a man named Blair, who soon after sold it to P. C. Andre. Before long Mr. Andre sold the paper, under certain conditions, to Bertram & Gardner, but as the conditions were not fulfilled, the sheet reverted to Mr. Andre in 1858. He continued the publication until 1868 when it was purchased by C. V. DeLand and run by F. A. Palmer for about six years. In the Fall of 1872 this paper started daily publication, and six months later the office was removed to East Saginaw and an afternoon daily published to take the place of the Enterprise, which had just suspended. The Daily Herald was continued until November 28, 1875, when it too suspended, the Weekly Herald, however, being continued.

In 1870 the Saginaw Republican, a weekly newspaper, was published by F. A. Palmer & Company. The office was above Jay Smith's drug store on Court Street, where "job printing of all kinds, at moderate prices, was executed promptly." Later the same company started the Daily Republican, in the Bliss Block, which was issued every afternoon (Sundays excepted). The price was "eight dollars a year, by mail in advance, or delivered by carrier at seventy-five cents per month; job printing neatly executed at reasonable prices." During this period the "Saginawian," a Democratic newspaper was published at Saginaw City by George F. Lewis, a pioneer journalist of this city. The office was in the Khuen Block, Hamilton Street, where "job printing in all styles is executed and blank books printed and bound to order." The Saginaw Valley News, a semi-weekly paper, was established July 7, 1874, by Charles H. Lee.

### A Reporter's Reminiscences

In speaking of the difficulties of collecting news and publishing newspapers forty or fifty years ago, F. Bruce Smith, a well known reporter, a short time before his death, said: "Today the news gatherer can sit at his desk and with the telephone reach several hundred sources of information about any local happening he thinks may interest the public. The introduction of the telephone in Saginaw was, I think, about 1880.

"Conditions were very different here a half century ago. Prior to 1887 the only street lights in Saginaw City were gas lamps. The posts were a block apart and were placed on only a few of the main streets. The only

pavements were of plank, and only in the business section—Court Street for two blocks and Hamilton for four blocks being paved full width. The rest of the streets were dirt—muddy in Spring and Fall and dusty in Summer. The only sidewalks were boards laid on the ground, or indeed, the bare earth tramped down hard. Under such conditions getting about town in quest of news was not easy or altogether enjoyable. A part of my equipment when I commenced gathering news for a morning paper, as necessary as my note book and pencil, was a lantern to light my way.

“One night when I was reporting the proceedings of the common council, one of the aldermen insisted that the time had come when the ordinance prohibiting cattle and horses from running at large in the streets, should be enforced. The late James Hay, who was present, said to me: ‘I am glad the council has taken this stand. I hope that the poundmaster will take my cow and not some widow washerwoman’s cow to the pound.’ He foresaw that many animals would be impounded before the owners would realize

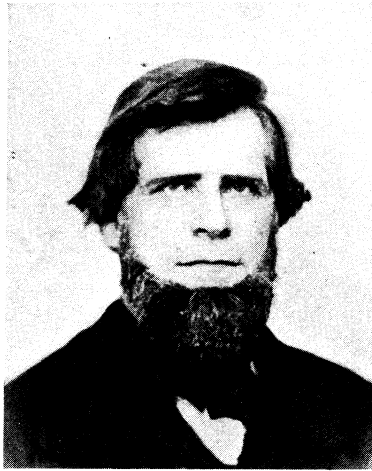


GEORGE F. LEWIS  
Pioneer Journalist

that the old days of violation of the ordinance had passed. In this connection I recall writing a paragraph to this effect: ‘Sheriff M—— is cleaning up the jail yard with a four-legged lawnmower.’ The jail yard was enclosed by a four-foot fence.

“The Daily News was published in Saginaw City for some six years beginning in 1877. For a year or two following I was ambitious for new features, and church paragraphs under the heading of ‘Religious Intelligence’ were presented in Saturday’s issue. Some of the pastors had conscientious scruples about announcing subjects of their sermons, but with most of them the scruples gave way when they were to preach on a topic of special interest.

“In 1880 the Saginaw Herald, which had succeeded the Saginawian, tried the experiment of a Monday morning issue. The Sunday field for local news was largely confined to church matters, and, as ministers were not inclined to furnish a synopsis of their sermons, I had to cover four or five churches. To get to all of them I frequently called on volunteer reporters, one of whom was Fred W. Bushell, who was a book agent, selling



PERRY JOSLIN

bibles. The first work he did for me was reporting sermons of Reverend A. F. Bruske, the pastor of the deer-shooting out of season notoriety, later president of Alma College. From this start Mr. Bushell became one of the ablest of Saginaw's newspaper men, and he was city editor of the Saginaw Courier-Herald for several years. He then went to Minneapolis and became city editor of the Minneapolis News, and died there about 1901." Charles B. Schaefer, news editor of the Courier, was also a well known newspaper man for many years connected with newspapers here.

During the late eighties the only daily newspaper in Saginaw City was the Saginaw Evening Journal, which was established in April, 1886. D. Z. Curtis was the manager and editor and F. Bruce Smith was city editor. The Journal was a healthy and vigorous paper, alive to the interests of Saginaw City, and had a substantial patronage. In 1887 a weekly edition was started and it sustained the reputation of the daily paper for furnishing interesting news.

#### Pioneer Newspapers in East Saginaw

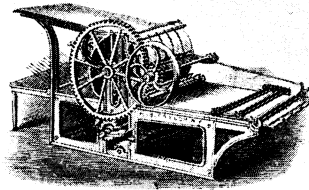
The first newspaper in East Saginaw was the Saginaw Enterprise, which was started in 1853 by Williamson & Mason. Without financial means to carry on a publication on the frontier, or indeed, experience in newspaper work, their efforts at journalism met with scanty support by the pioneers, and a year later the paper was sold to Perry Joslin. He at once made it a live sheet, injecting subjects and items of general interest, and soon had the Enterprise on a solid basis. In 1864 Francis Parth, who had been connected with the printing office since the paper was started, was admitted as partner with Mr. Joslin, and a year later C. V. Deland also became a partner. In September, 1865, the Daily Enterprise was started and continued until the Spring of 1873, when it suspended. About 1870 the newspaper was located in a building at 125-27 North Washington Street, on the site of Morley Brothers hardware store. It announced "the largest circulation and best advertising medium in this part of the State; plain and ornamental printing neatly and promptly executed."

On June 16, 1859, appeared the first issue of the Saginaw Weekly Courier, a paper founded by George F. Lewis, who was probably the ablest of the newspaper men of that period. He was a man of strong character, possessed an indomitable will, and became a powerful figure in city and

county affairs. In 1868, in association with Bradley M. Thompson, E. W. Lyon and Joseph Seemann, he started the Daily Courier which was "published every morning (except Mondays) and is the organ for the salt and lumber interests, and the best local paper in Northern Michigan. The Weekly Courier (published every Thursday) is replete with the latest current news and is a first-class family journal." Later the Courier was sold to S. S. Ppmroy, who printed the paper and conducted a job office on South Franklin Street, in the rear of the Penney Block.

#### Edwin D. Cowles Takes Charge of the Courier

The fortunes of the Daily Courier were materially improved in March, 1874, by the acquisition of Edwin D. Cowles, a journalist of great promise, who for about two years had been city editor of the Daily Enterprise. He assumed the editorial management of the Courier, in which position he remained for fifteen years, and was very successful in raising the standards of journalism in this section of the State. In September, 1889, in association



*Dear Sir:*

*You are requested to be present at a meeting of prominent Democrats of the Saginaw Valley, to be held at Room No. 13, Bancroft House, Wednesday Evening, Feb, 5th, '68 at 7 1-2 o'clock, P. M., to take action in regard to the encouragement and support of the Daily Courier, soon to be issued.*

W. L. WEBBER.  
M. JEFFERS.  
J. L. KETCHAM.  
J. J. WHEELER.  
H. W. JEWETT.  
B. B. BUCKHOUT,  
ROOT & MIDLER.

GEO. L. BURROWS.  
JNO. MOORE,  
A. F. R. BRALEY,  
WM. M. MILLER,  
T. E. DOUGHTY,  
C. EMERSON.

[Courtesy of W. J. Hunsaker]

FAC-SIMILE OF NOTICE OF MEETING TO SUPPORT THE DAILY COURIER

with Roswell G. Horr, he purchased the Saginaw Daily Herald, which had been published by Laing Brothers on North Cass (Baum) Street, and was made editor-in-chief of the Saginaw Courier-Herald, the paper which resulted from the consolidation with the Courier. In this capacity he remained until 1902, when he sold his interests in the paper and removed to Bay City.



E. D. COWLES, IN 1874

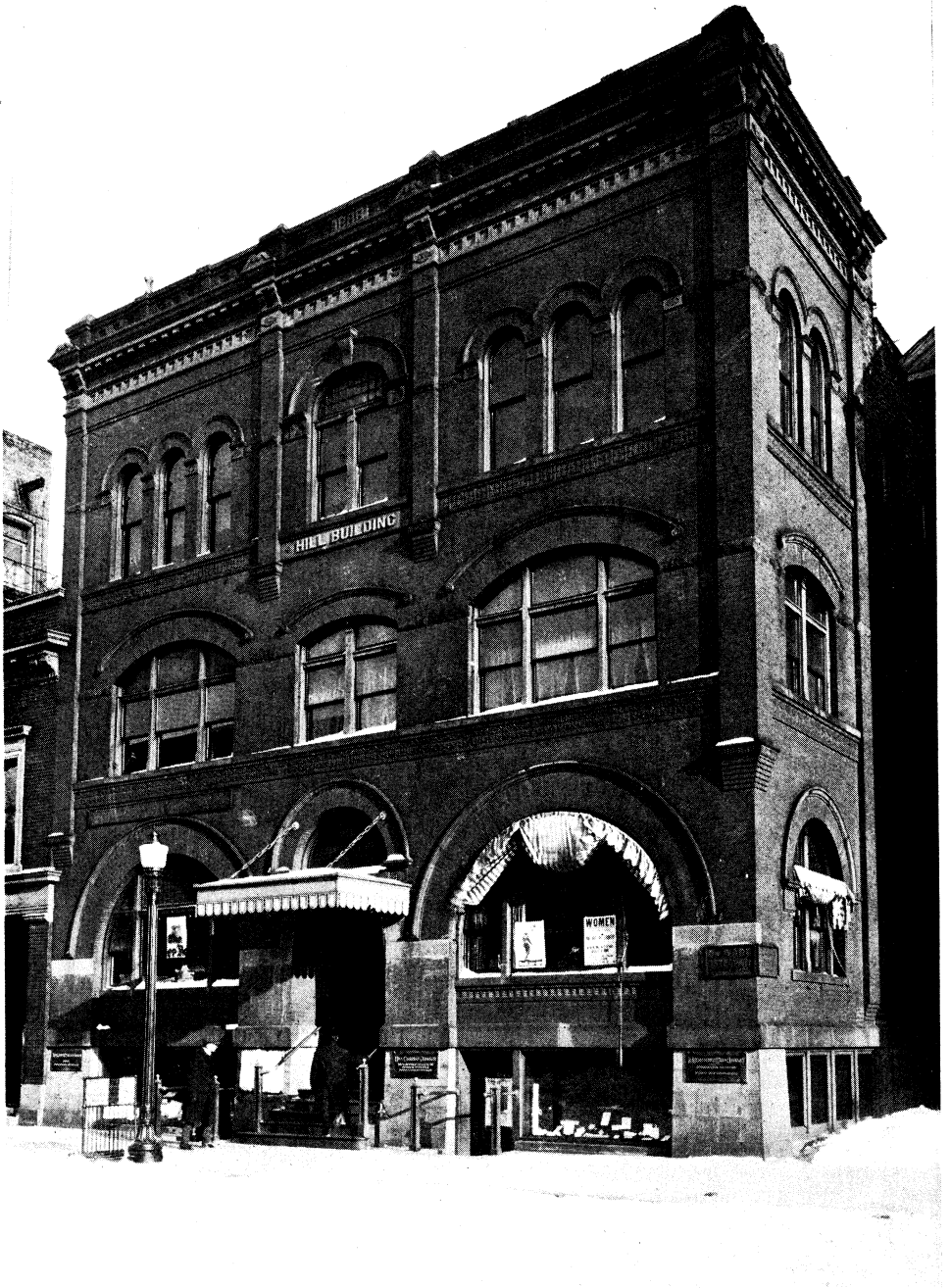
During his thirty years of editorial work in Saginaw, Mr. Cowles manifested his courage and fidelity to the principles of the Republican party, to whose political fortunes the paper was unequivocally committed; and during the campaign of Colonel Aaron T. Bliss for Governor of Michigan, the Courier-Herald was his most staunch supporter, exerting a large influence in his behalf. For thirty-five years Mr. Cowles was the Saginaw Valley correspondent of the American Lumberman, and in his compilation of statistics of lumber and salt production in this valley, he became known far and wide as an authority on these subjects. His statements were prepared with great care and attention to details, and no man was so well posted on the history and development

of these industries. For a period of twenty years Mr. Cowles was the Saginaw correspondent of the Detroit Free Press, to which he contributed much interesting and valuable matter.

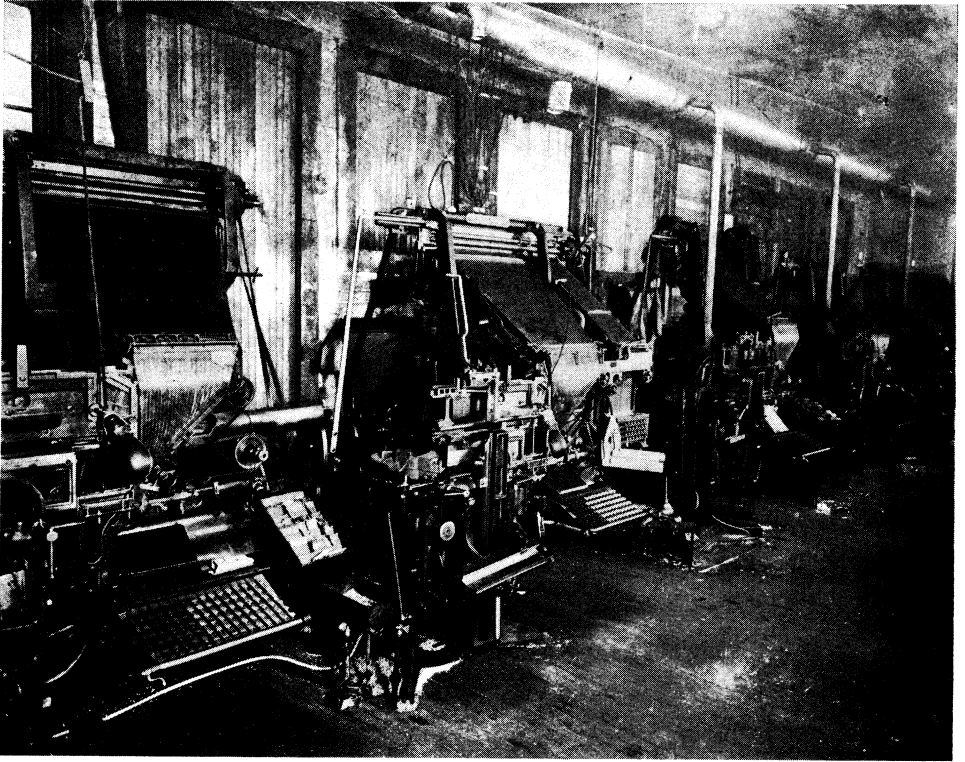
### The Saginaw Courier-Herald

On January 1, 1902, the Saginaw Daily Courier-Herald, then owned by Edwin D. Cowles, Fred G. Cowles and Governor Aaron T. Bliss, was sold to Walter J. Hunsaker, of Detroit, and Chase S. Osborn, of Sault Ste. Marie. Mr. Hunsaker, who had wide experience in journalism in the West and as editor of the Detroit Journal, at once assumed the entire editorial management and business control of the paper, while Mr. Osborn, who was State Railroad Commissioner, took no active part in the business. Its policy in general was not changed and it remained in politics an independent Republican paper, free from political direction and of influences, except such as were in accord with its own thought and purpose.

To place the paper in the front rank of daily newspapers in Saginaw Valley, it was necessary to overhaul the entire mechanical equipment; and the new owners proceeded on an extensive plan of improvement. A battery of five new linotype type setting machines replaced the old Rogers typographs and new display type of attractive face was added from time to time. Later a high-speed electrically driven Hoe press of the most approved type was installed, capable of running twenty-four pages at the rate of twelve thousand papers per hour and lesser pages at higher speed. In recent years the equipment has become completely modernized, including electrical drive for all machines, insuring typographical excellence efficiently and economically produced. The general improvement in the news and editorial features of the paper, as well as in mechanical facilities, is reflected in the steady increase in circulation, in advertising, and in the influence exerted on public opinion.



THE HOME OF THE SAGINAW COURIER-HERALD



BATTERY OF SIX LINOTYPE TYPESETTING MACHINES

During the Roosevelt-Taft primary campaign of 1912 Mr. Hunsaker purchased the interest in the paper of his associate, Chase S. Osborn, at that time governor of the State, and thereupon assumed entire ownership of the property. The paper has since been wholly directed by his policies, both politically and editorially, as publisher. The editorial management is in the hands of Arthur O. Cook. William A. Rorke, formerly of the Bay City Tribune, is the business manager of the paper. Robert C. Laing, one of the publishers of the old Saginaw Herald before its consolidation with The Courier, is telegraph editor.

The Saginaw Courier-Herald at present represents the oldest continuous newspaper published in Saginaw, and enjoys a prestige which permanency gives. Its progenitors are grey with age. Dating from the establishment of the Weekly Courier in 1859, the Daily Courier in 1868, and the purchase and consolidation of the Daily Herald in 1889, The Courier-Herald justly claims the distinction of being the pioneer paper of Saginaw to maintain continuous publication. Several years ago the Weekly Courier, which had been published for half a century, was discontinued.

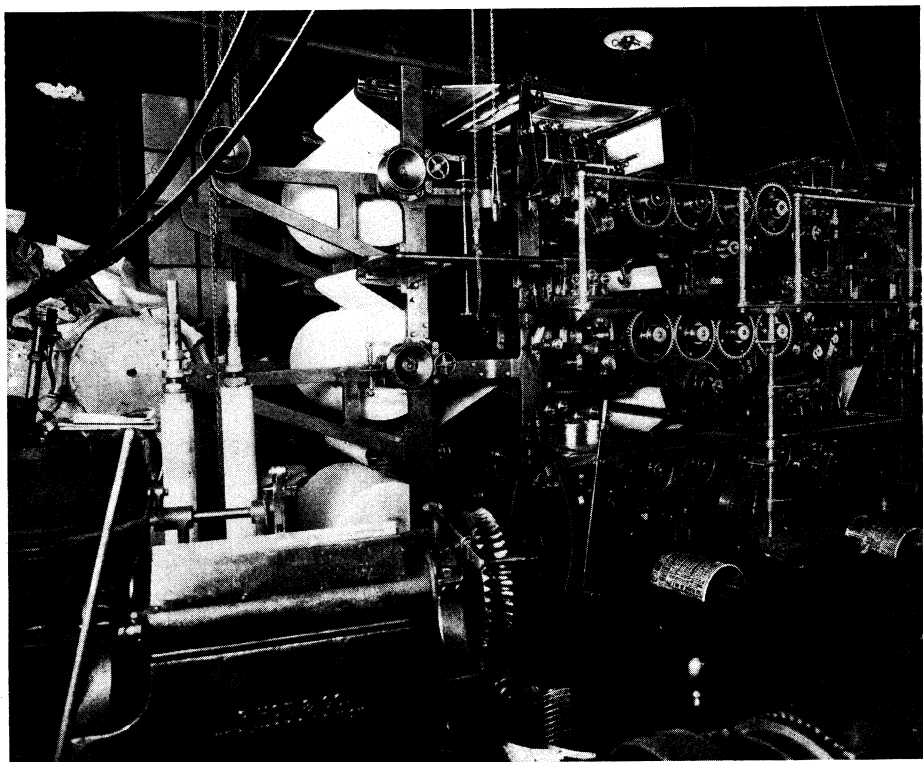
The demise of the weekly edition was due to the establishment in its present scope of the rural free delivery service, which has had great influence upon newspaper reading. By extending this service to cover practically every farm home in Saginaw and adjoining counties, the Government opened up a large field for the daily morning edition. It was soon discovered that farmers needed a daily morning paper, reaching them within a few hours after publication, as a valuable adjunct to rural life. They found that The Courier-Herald brought them the news of the world, the previous day's market reports, and such things of general interest almost as quickly as it



did to residents of the city. In fact a great many farmers living from twelve to sixteen miles distant from the city receive their daily morning papers between nine and ten o'clock in the morning, and others nearer the city somewhat earlier. Consequently the rural circulation of the daily Courier-Herald increased rapidly, so that the Weekly Courier as formerly constituted became obsolete. This was true of all weekly papers excepting certain local weeklies published in small towns and county seats. As a result of the creation of rural free delivery service The Courier-Herald quickly gained and still holds by far the largest circulation among the farming community of any publication in this section of the State.

Although the Weekly Courier was the oldest direct progenitor of The Courier-Herald, the latter fell heir to all morning papers published here prior to 1890, and from that year no efforts were made to start a competing morning paper in Saginaw. It is now the only morning newspaper published in the eastern half of Michigan, between Detroit and Lake Superior, and has had no competition in the morning field since it took over the Saginaw Herald in 1889. This has resulted in its becoming "the paper that goes home," and in its being read by the second and third generations of men who subscribed for it when Saginaw was merely a border lumbering town. Many citizens now past middle life recall the old Courier in the home when they were children, and it was as much a part of the home life as now.

The present policy of The Courier-Herald is broad and liberal, yet soundly conservative, and its attitude toward public questions is singularly open-minded. It believes in unity and harmony between the several sections of the city, and advocates a spirit of helpfulness and co-operation among business and professional men. To all projects intended to advance the mate-



THE HOE HIGH SPEED PRESS

rial prosperity, increase the employment of labor, and better living conditions of the community, it gives unqualified support, and may always be found on the side of progress and truth. It stands for enlightened public interest in good civic government, and, being free from political entanglements, exerts a strong influence to the culmination of its purpose.

A factor of great importance in the success of The Courier-Herald is the Associated Press full night telegraphic news service, over a leased wire direct into its office, which the paper has enjoyed since 1902. It was the first newspaper in this city to secure the full press reports, thus enabling it to give complete day and night news up to nine o'clock in the morning. Moreover, the reports, being gathered with more time for preparing the news than the hurried day press reports, are amplified and usually contain more interesting details. A fac simile of the Associated Press certificate of membership, granted to Walter J. Hunsaker in 1902, is reproduced below.

# THE ASSOCIATED PRESS

INCORPORATED UNDER THE LAWS OF THE STATE OF NEW YORK.

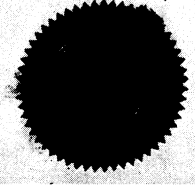
## CERTIFICATE OF MEMBERSHIP

*It is to Certify, That* **Walter J. Hunsaker**  
is a member of The Associated Press, and, as such, is entitled to a news report of The Associated Press  
society for publication in the Courier-Herald a Morning  
newspaper published in the English language at Lapeer, Michigan  
upon and subject to the payment of such dues and assessments as may be fixed and apportioned  
therefor by the Board of Directors, and also subject to the obligation on the part of said member, in  
accordance with the By-Laws to furnish for the use of the Corporation the news of the following  
described territory, viz: within a radius of sixty miles from the City of Lapeer, Michigan

The said member, in accordance with the provisions of Article III of the By-Laws and subject to  
the limitations contained in Section 2 of said Article, shall have the right to protest against the election by  
the Board of Directors of any member representing any Morning newspaper published  
within a radius of sixty miles of the City of Lapeer, Michigan

The said member has signed the Roll of Members and assented to the By-Laws and has become and  
is in all respects subject to and bound by the said By-Laws. This Certificate of Membership shall not be  
transferable except to some other owner or joint owner or to some other executive officer of the owner of  
the said Courier-Herald. Such transfer, however, shall entitle to  
membership only after the transferee shall have complied with all the prerequisite conditions to  
membership imposed by the By-Laws.

In Witness Whereof, the Corporation has caused this Certificate to be signed by its President and its  
Secretary at New York City, New York, this first day of February 1902.



Frank DeSoye President  
Melville E. Stone Secretary

THE CERTIFICATE OF MEMBERSHIP IN THE ASSOCIATED PRESS HELD BY  
WALTER J. HUNSAKER FOR THE SAGINAW COURIER-HERALD

### The Saginaw Daily News

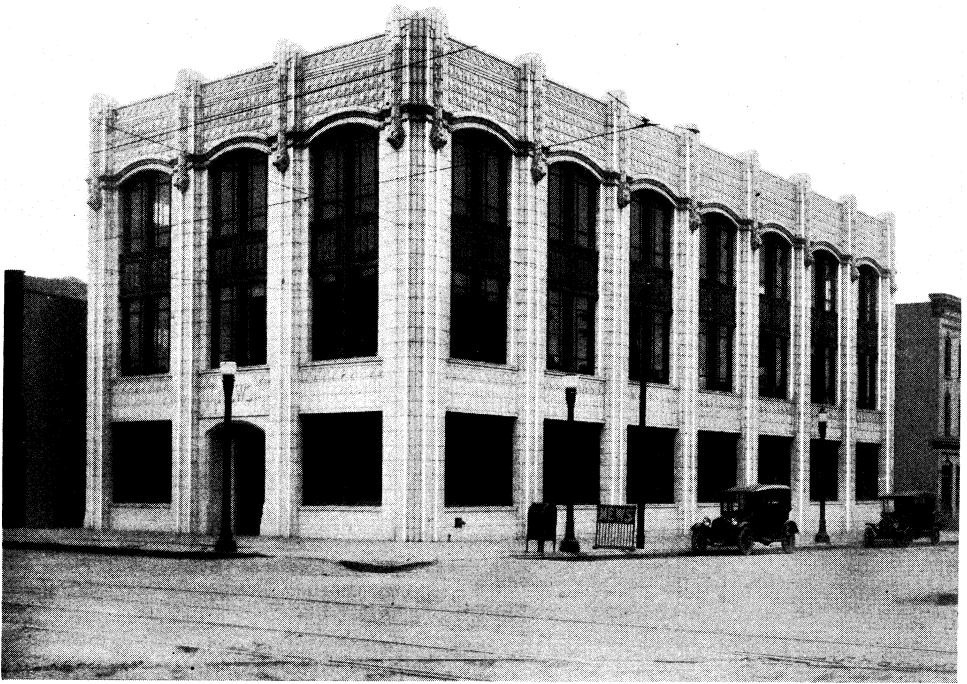
Following in the footsteps of the pioneer journalists was the Saginaw Evening News, founded in 1881 by Joseph Seemann and Charles H. Peters, Sr., with whom the idea originated that there was room in Saginaw for an evening paper. They were convinced that the public had more time to read daily papers after supper than before breakfast; that there was a chance for a larger circulation for an afternoon paper and that the readers of such papers were more susceptible to the influence of advertisements than the readers of morning papers generally. Accordingly the first issue of the paper, consisting of several thousand copies, appeared on May 2, 1881, and was in the main distributed gratuitously, the paid circulation being less than five hundred. The price was fifty cents a month, and the politics Democratic.

Although there was a good business prospect for an afternoon journal, the early days of the News were full of trouble. Mechanical difficulties were few compared with others which had to be met. There were two morning papers in the field and one of these sought to head off the News by printing an evening edition called the Evening Express. Possessing a fully equipped newspaper plant, a large press, an organized staff, a telegraphic news franchise and established delivery routes the odds were largely in favor of the Express. The News efforts to obtain the day service franchise were strongly opposed by the publishers of the Express, and the early issues of the former were minus press despatches excepting a few costly specials. So it was a fight for existence, and the fittest survived, but it cost the News publishers many months of hard work, long hours, and much worry as to where the funds for the regular pay rolls were to come from.

It was due to a sense of justice shown by the publishers of the other morning paper that the anomalous situation was ended. Charles V. Deland, the proprietor of the Herald, espoused the cause of the News and used his influence in its behalf; and after considerable delay the evening paper secured the Associated Press day news service, enabling them to publish a newspaper in fact as well as in name. Its early rival, the Express, suspended publication about a year after it was started leaving the News alone in the evening field for several years. Other evening papers appeared at different times, including the Journal, a West Side publication, which died of inanition, and the Mail which secured the United Press service and proved a strong competitor, making existence fairly precarious for both evening papers. Upon the suspension of the Mail, the United Press franchise was purchased by the News.

In 1885 the News, which had been published at 319 Genesee Street (upstairs), was removed to the new building of Seemann & Peters on Tuscola Street, and remained there until its final removal to its handsome new building at Washington and Germania Avenues. Meanwhile, the paper was sold to E. N. Dingley of Kalamazoo, who took charge on February 15, 1893. He soon after disposed of the property to Eugene McSweeney and John T. Winship, who conducted the paper successfully until 1910, when they sold the property to the present owners. The name was then changed to Saginaw Daily News by which it is known today.

During the management of Messrs. McSweeney and Winship, covering a period of about seventeen years, the News made a great advancement, not only in circulation and advertising matter, but in its general make-up, appearance of the sheet and the influence it exerted upon the public mind. In 1893 the paper was printed on a Cottrell press, all the type was set by hand, and the daily circulation was only twenty-six hundred. That year it purchased a Duplex perfecting press, and shortly after a battery of three Mergenthaler



THE NEW HOME OF THE SAGINAW DAILY NEWS

type-setting machines was installed. It was not long before the business outgrew this equipment, and a single-deck Hoe press replaced the Duplex, and two more type-setting machines were added. About that time the publishers purchased the second evening newspaper, the Saginaw Globe, giving it the entire afternoon field and placing it far in the lead among the Saginaw newspapers.

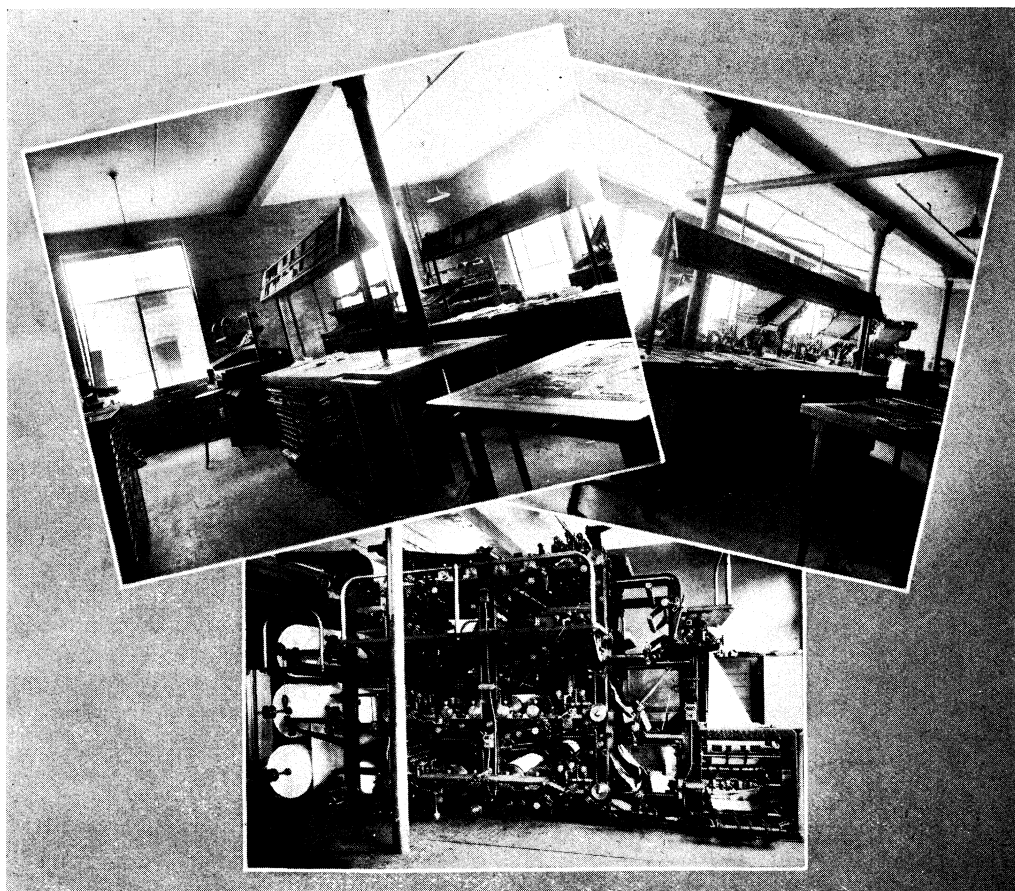
From a humble beginning and steady progress the News has grown to be one of the strongest and most influential newspapers in the State, and the leading daily of northeastern Michigan. Its circulation continued to increase rapidly and when it reached twenty-thousand daily and its quarters became very cramped, in 1908, a three-deck Goss press, with color attachment, was installed in additional space secured in the old Armory building on North Franklin Street. A large room was also provided at that time for a news boys' recreation hall, a feature which was greatly appreciated by the urchins, large and small, who delivered the paper to thousands of Saginaw homes and sold the paper on the streets.

It was the ambition of the owners and managers of the Daily News to own a modern newspaper printing plant, in which all its various activities and operations might be centered. This ambition, however, was subservient to the effort to first publish a paper that would meet every want of the community which it sought to satisfy, and it was not until 1915 that the way seemed clear to provide the much needed improvement. In that year the valuable property at the southwest corner of Washington and Germania Avenues was purchased and plans drawn for a three-story terra cotta, brick

and concrete building to occupy the site. The handsome building of white terra cotta facing was completed in September, 1916, and on Thursday the twenty-first it was opened to public inspection.

This magnificent building is a monument of faith which is held by the Daily News in the future prosperity of Saginaw. It is the first structure of the kind in this city, is as nearly fire-proof as modern construction with steel girders, concrete and brick with terra cotta can make it, and is equipped with an automatic two-source sprinkler system having four hundred sprinkler heads. From a short distance the building looks like a mass of marble having wonderful window effects, and lends an impression of dignity and character.

The main entrance on Washington Avenue opens into a spacious lobby, about which are arranged the business offices. The floor is of mosaic tiling, the counters are of quarter-sawed oak with marble base, while the ceiling is finished in tints of old gold. The offices are equipped with every convenience for persons transacting business with the News; and at the left of the entrance is the office of the editor and manager from which the entire business of the institution is directed. Immediately back of the business office is the mailing room, well lighted and well ventilated, with every modern convenience for assembling and sending out the large mail edition of the News.



COMPOSING ROOM

BATTERY OF LINOTYPES  
FOUR-DECK GOSS HIGH-SPEED PRESS

The press room is back of this department, and is specially designed for its work and provides for any additional press equipment that may be necessary in the future. Enormous windows afford abundant light and give a view of the press room from the street. At the west end of the building is the boys' delivery room so arranged that papers are passed out as they come from the press, eliminating confusion and delay. A twelve-foot alleyway on the west and south sides of the building affords every facility for rapid loading of motor trucks for speedy delivery of the paper to trains.

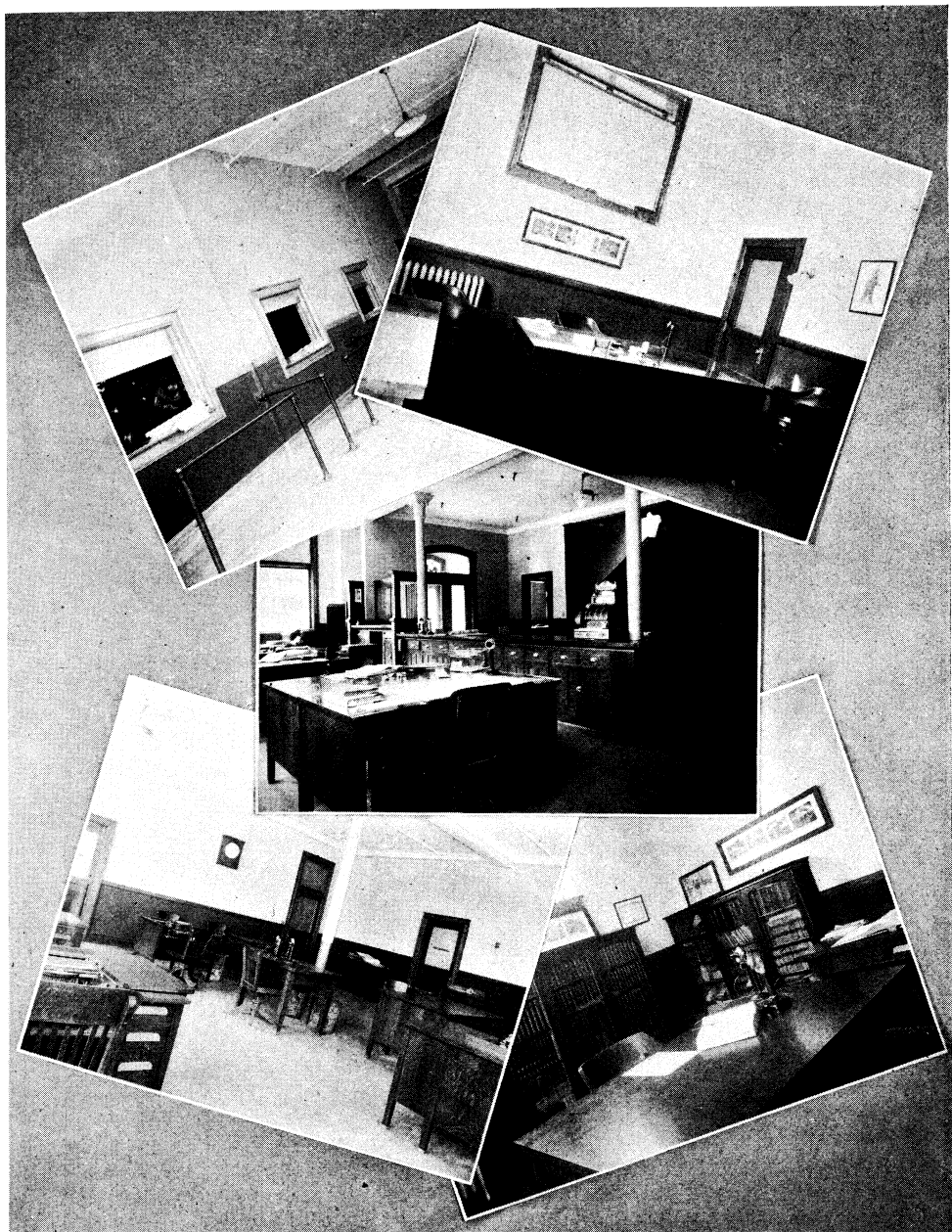
On the second floor are situated the editorial, composing and stereotyping rooms, which share the feature common to all in the building of being splendidly lighted and scientifically ventilated. In the front part is situated the editorial department housing the Associated Press special wire service carried by the Daily News, and the city, telegraph and society editors and the editorial writers and reporters. In such admirable quarters work becomes a pleasure. On the south side is the library and conference room, an apartment specially appointed for the purpose. The composing room is long and broad, decorated in orange and old ivory tints, and the provision for artificial lighting is the best known to the electrical world. The mechanical equipment consists of six linotype machines and all-steel composing room appliances. Adjoining this room is the stereotyping department where all matrix casting and finishing work is done. There is direct elevator connection with the press room below, for lowering the forms ready for the press cylinders. The mechanical departments are provided with shower baths and toilet arrangements in keeping with the sanitary equipments of the building.

The News Auditorium occupies the entire third floor, and is one lofty apartment beautifully finished as to general decorative scheme. It is a daylight hall, forty-five by one hundred and five feet in size, capable of seating a small audience with unobstructed view from one end to the other. Above and over the roof is a thirty-one foot steel flag pole bearing the Stars and Stripes.

It is within the last eight years that The News has made its greatest advances. In this time its development in all departments has been remarkable and its sphere of influence and standing among journals has been materially increased. Its mechanical facilities have been largely augmented by the installation of a battery of new linotypes, six in number, with a complete change in composing room material and the substitution of all-steel equipment for the old style wooden cases and imposing stones. This new equipment has made it possible to serve its family of readers with the news up to the minute of going to press in a more comprehensive manner than before.

In addition it has added to its press a fourth deck giving it the most complete printing press to be had. This machine gives double speed and carries a larger number of pages than before, thus making possible a more newsy paper and a quicker delivery. The News also adopted the standard metropolitan size of newspaper, eight column in width, thus giving to Saginaw and contiguous territory a newspaper fully complying with the most modern methods used in the largest cities of the country.

Just as it has advanced along mechanical lines, so has The News progressed in its editorial department. In addition to the complete service of the Associated Press taken over a special leased wire direct in its own home, it has the unequalled Newspaper Enterprise Association's features and illustrative service and in addition a number of specially selected valuable features entertaining for every member of the family.



NEWSBOYS' ROOM

EDITORIAL DEPARTMENT

BUSINESS OFFICE

MANAGING EDITOR'S OFFICE

LIBRARY AND CONFERENCE ROOM

At the time of the sale of *The News* in 1910, its management passed into the hands of two of the most experienced and successful newspaper men in the State. Ralph H. Booth, at that time president of a number of successful State dailies, was its president, and Charles M. Greenway, for many years business manager of *The Grand Rapids Press*, became its general manager. Under these officers *The News* immediately developed its field to a greater extent than ever before and became a greater newspaper. Mr. Greenway was succeeded upon his removal to Flint to become editor and manager of *The Flint Daily Journal*, by Arthur R. Treanor, as editor and manager of *The Daily News*. Mr. Treanor began his newspaper career in 1901 as a cub reporter on *The News* and in the intervening years had passed through the various offices in both the editorial and business departments. He was made business manager of the property in 1913, and in 1915 became editor and manager.

Under the progressive management of the *Daily News* it is the policy not only to keep pace with the advancement of the community but to keep well in the lead as becomes a newspaper as a co-operating factor in a city's growth and prosperity. *The News* has achieved a circulation which is the best evidence of its popularity and its service, and it goes into practically all the homes of Saginaw and into thousands of others in this part of Michigan. This paper takes an independent stand in politics, believing that it can thus best serve the public. It aims at impartiality and fairness in treatment of all public questions; and it gives the best possible news service, its resources in this direction being unusually large and comparing creditably with those of metropolitan newspapers.

#### **The Saginaw Press Saginaw Publishing Company**

A more recent acquisition to the news and publicity craft of this city is the *Saginaw Press*, a weekly newspaper which is published by the *Saginaw Publishing Company*. This corporation was organized in 1912 by Emmet L. Beach and George W. Baxter, with one hundred and ten stockholders and a capital of ten thousand dollars. Its first print shop was situated at 210 North Hamilton Street, and the paper was published daily (except Sunday) under the name of *Saginaw Evening Press*.

This was the only Democratic newspaper in Saginaw County and it filled very satisfactorily a want in both city and townships. So rapid was the increase in the business that the original quarters became very cramped, and about three years later Mr. Baxter erected at 410-412 Hancock Street, a modern brick building with high basement, arranged and adapted especially to the requirements of the printing and publishing business. In this building was installed a complete printing plant with the most modern equipment, including a Mergenthaler linotype machine, cylinder press, paper cutters, stitchers, etc., all operated by individual electric motors.

The daily newspaper field was very well covered and the difficulties of printing a daily journal were such that in December, 1912, it was deemed expedient to change the *Evening Press* to a weekly paper. This was done and since that time the paper has appeared regularly as the *Saginaw Press*. It has a wide circulation on the West Side and in the country districts, and is everywhere appreciated on account of its clean reading pages, its vigorous editorials and valuable farm and country news. It prints from eight to ten pages weekly, and for the last two years, and one year at a previous time, was the official paper for printing the county records.

In addition to publishing the newspaper the company does a general job and book printing business; and its complete equipment affords every facility for printing directories, pamphlets, catalogues, etc.





PRINTING PLANT OF THE SAGINAW PRESS

On January 1, 1917, the Saginaw Valley News was taken over by the Saginaw Publishing Company and consolidated with the Press, and on October 1, of the same year the Saginawian, an old weekly newspaper was united with the Press, leaving the latter paper the only newspaper published on the West Side.

George W. Baxter, the general manager, is an old Saginaw boy who has had a wide experience in the newspaper field. He was on the staff of the Detroit News, the Jackson Patriot, and daily papers in Kendallville, Indiana, and Dowagiac, Michigan. In 1912 he returned to Saginaw, for which he had always had a longing and, in association with Mr. Beach, started the Saginaw Press.

As a means of ready reference, files of old newspapers are invaluable to the historian and those seeking to confirm some fact or solve some question. To this end the bound files preserved in Hoyt Library of some of our earliest papers are valuable additions to the catalogue of reference books, and may be consulted by anyone. The list of such bound files is as follows: Spirit of the Times, published at Saginaw City, from February 17, 1853 to May 24, 1859 (incomplete); Weekly Enterprise, from September 8, 1853 to December 29, 1859, (very imperfect), and from June 12, 1860 to December 25, 1873, (a few numbers missing); Weekly Courier, from June 16, 1859 to December 6, 1866, and from January 1, 1876 to December 25, 1890 (incomplete); and the Saginaw Globe, from January to June, 1891 (incomplete); The Daily Courier and Courier-Herald, from January 1, 1868, and the Saginaw Evening News from July 1, 1890, both complete to date.

### The German Papers

In 1866, in order to reach the large German population in this county, Anton Schmitz started the first newspaper printed in German, styled the Saginaw Zeitung, with Count Solms as editor. The paper was fairly successful and filled a want among our German citizens. Later the paper was purchased by Constantine Beierle who conducted it until about 1890, when it was sold to Ernest Zoellner. About 1895 Seemann & Peters published the Zeitung but two years later sold it to the Saginaw Post, which had been established in January, 1887, by F. & C. Reitter. These publishers then operated a job printing office in German and English at 118 South Franklin Street, in connection with the Post, and upon consolidation with the other

German paper, the name became Post-Zeitung under which it is published at present. In February, 1913, the Post-Zeitung, its printing plant and other property, was sold to Seemann & Peters who have since published the paper with complete equipment at their plant on North Franklin Street. The paper is ably edited by Hans Dabis, a veteran journalist, and is managed by George A. Klette who has been connected with it for ten years.

### Saginaw Post Offices.

The mail facilities of early times, before there were any roads leading to civilization, were primitive in the extreme, and the settlers had to depend upon each other for such news as reached the frontier. A single mail carrier used to come on horseback over the old Indian trail from Flint, once a week, and cross the river at Green Point, the only crossing at that period. Joseph Busby, one of the early pioneers, records having met him once near the river and, as he had some business with the elder Busby, accompanied him to his home on the banks of the Tittabawassee (now the Paines farm). As the carrier did not want to be troubled carrying the mail bag there and back, he pitched it into the bushes at the side of the trail and left it there until he returned. At that time the mail was not a heavy one.

The first post office in this valley was opened at Saginaw City, on October 10, 1831, with David Stanard as postmaster; and he was succeeded by Thomas Simpson, on December 4, 1832. Ephraim S. Williams assumed the office on May 7, 1834, and he held it until 1840, when he removed with his family to Flint. At this period the post office was in the trading post of the Williams Brothers, which was in the old "red warehouse," at the foot of Mackinaw Street. Later it was located in a frame building on South Water (Niagara) Street near Van Buren Street. Gardner D. Williams, whose portrait appears with that of his brother on page 90, succeeded him as postmaster on March 10, 1840, and retained the office for nine years.

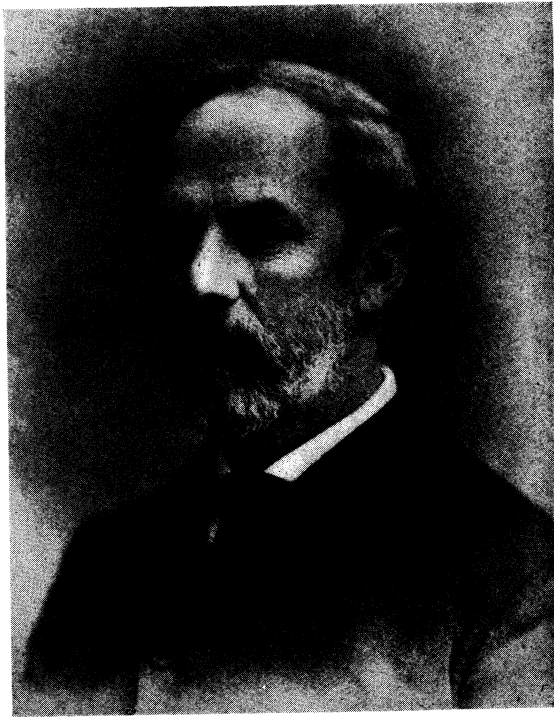
Thereafter the postmasters at Saginaw City and Saginaw, West Side, (the name changed March 17, 1892), with dates of their appointments, were:

George W. Davis.....	Mar. 21, 1849	Edwin Saunders.....	Aug. 20, 1866
Egbert J. Van Buren....	Feb. 10, 1853	William H. Taylor.....	April 5, 1867
Daniel L. C. Eaton....	Aug. 8, 1853	James A. Hudson.....	Oct. 4, 1870
James N. Gotee.....	July 8, 1854	Henry J. Northrup.....	July 6, 1880
Hiram T. Ferris.....	April 7, 1857	George F. Lewis.....	Feb. 9, 1888
James N. Gotee.....	Nov. 1, 1857	Levi B. Kinsey.....	June 10, 1890
Jay Smith .....	Aug. 1, 1861	Fred H. Potter.....	Mar. 26, 1895
William Moll .....	April 26, 1865		

Martin N. Brady succeeded to the postmastership on March 3, 1899, and held the office for sixteen years, when, under a Democratic administration, he was supplanted by William F. Hemmeter in 1915, the present incumbent. More than twenty years ago the post office was removed from the old location on Hamilton Street, between Court and Franklin (Hancock) Streets, to a large and well appointed room in the Merrill Block on Michigan Avenue, between Court and Adams Streets.

The post office at South Saginaw was established as "Spalding" on May 13, 1863, Aaron Linton being the first postmaster. The succeeding postmasters at this office, the name of which was changed on September 4, 1866, to South Saginaw, with dates of their appointments, were:

Henry H. Beebe.....	Jan. 23, 1865	Arnold P. Sikes.....	July 19, 1872
Lester P. Beebe.....	Jan. 22, 1866	Jonathan S. Rouse.....	Dec. 16, 1872
Charles P. Hess.....	Oct. 20, 1866	Theron T. Hubbard....	April 13, 1874
Theron T. Hubbard....	April 5, 1867	Adolphus R. Moeller...	June 20, 1878
William T. Cook.....	Oct 9, 1871		



**ALFRED M. HOYT**

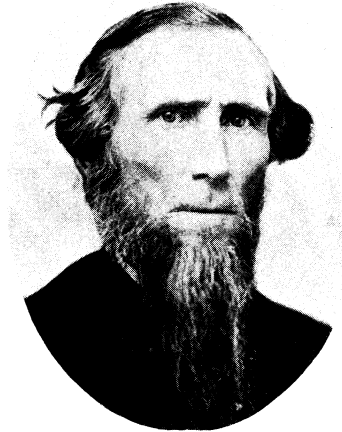
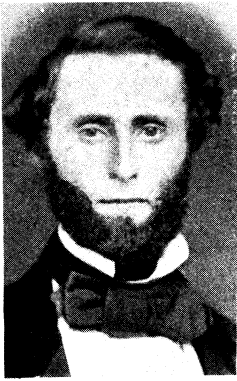
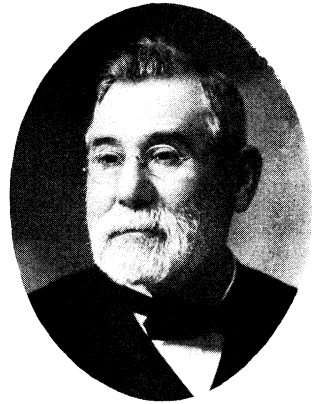
First Postmaster at East Saginaw

This office was discontinued August 7, 1884, the postal business of the "South End" thereafter being transacted through the East Saginaw office.

The first postmaster at East Saginaw was Alfred M. Hoyt, who opened the office on September 15, 1851. He was succeeded by Morgan L. Gage whose appointment bears date of November 11, 1852. The office was thereafter held by the following well-known citizens:

Moses B. Hess.....	April 27, 1853	George Lockley .....	April 20, 1871
George G. Hess.....	April 8, 1857	Thomas Saylor .....	Dec. 15, 1875
DeWitt C. Gage.....	Mar. 13, 1861	William G. Gage.....	Jan. 24, 1884
John Nugent .....	Aug. 15, 1861	M. V. Meredith.....	June 2, 1885
DeWitt C. Gage.....	Oct. 9, 1861	Edwin R. Phinney.....	Oct. 16, 1889
Solomon B. Bliss.....	Aug. 20, 1866	Abram G. Wall.....	Mar. 9, 1894
Perry Joslin .....	Mar. 19, 1867	William S. Linton.....	Mar. 22, 1898

Under continuous Republican rule Mr. Linton held the postmastership for sixteen consecutive years, rivalling Mr. Brady of the West Side post office in length of service, and was only relieved of the responsibilities of the office by the appointment of Charles E. Lown, a leader of the Democracy in this city, on March 20, 1914. Mr. Lown assumed the office on April 15, following, and has since held the government position with general satisfaction to the public. The name of the post office was changed on March 17, 1892, to Saginaw, East Side, and again on June 24, 1898, to Saginaw, Michigan.



SOME OLD-TIME POSTMASTERS OF THE SAGINAW

James A. Hudson, 1870-2  
George G. Hess, 1857-8  
George Lockley, 1871-5

William Moll, 1865  
James N. Gotee, 1854  
Dr. J. S. Rouse, 1872-4

Levi B. Kinsey, 1899  
Charles P. Hess, 1866  
M. V. Meredith, 1885

### Early Growth of Postal Business

The rapid growth of the postal business of East Saginaw in the formative period is well illustrated by a comparative statement of the transactions of the office, for the years ending June 30, 1866 and 1874:

	1866	1874
Number of clerks employed.....	2	5
Number of registered letters sent.....	280	1,070
Number of registered letters received.....	192	1,358
Amount of paper postage.....	\$ 333.16	\$ 941.71
Amount of box rent.....	466.00	2,150.00
Amount received for envelopes and stamps.....	7,616.00	14,217.11
Number of letters received, per week.....	3,175	15,000
Number of lock pouches sent out, daily.....	9	22
Number of domestic orders issued.....	636	4,479
Number of domestic money orders paid.....	155	2,826
Amount of domestic money orders issued.....	\$9,990.21	\$74,540.14
Amount of domestic money orders paid.....	3,072.37	55,843.85
Average per day of money orders issued.....	2	14
Average per day of money orders paid.....	1	9
Average amount of each order issued.....	\$ 15.70	\$ 16.64
Average amount of each order paid.....	19.17	19.76

As many letters were registered at this office, and the amount of postage on regular printed matter was as much, for the last quarter of 1874, as during the whole fiscal year of 1866; and often there were as many money orders issued in one day in 1874 as during a whole month in 1866. The box rent was nearly five times more in 1874; and despite a reduction in all foreign postages and on printed transient matter, the receipts for stamps, envelopes, etc., doubled during the eight years. Sixty thousand postal cards were sold in 1874 instead of three-cent stamps for first-class postage.

When Colonel Lockley took charge of the office on April 20, 1871, he found it necessary to double and quadruple the capacity for business, and introduced every improvement in the way of space, boxes, drawers and other appliances. At his own expense he placed several letter boxes on street corners for convenience of business men. William Glover Gage was the deputy postmaster at this time and gave "perfect satisfaction." The post office was then located at the corner of Washington and German Streets.

While Colonel Thomas Saylor was postmaster the office was in Lloyd's Block on Washington Street, and later was removed to North Franklin Street, between Genesee and Tuscola, in the Everett House Block. Some time later it was removed to the Cass House Block, at Baum and Tuscola Streets, where it remained for a number of years. Afterward the office occupied the ground floor of the Flint & Pere Marquette Building, at Washington and Tuscola Streets, from which it was removed in 1898 to the new Federal Building.

### The Federal Building

Under an Act of Congress of 1889, when Colonel Aaron T. Bliss was representative of this district, an appropriation of one hundred thousand dollars was made for a federal post office building at East Saginaw. The city then owned the north portion of the block bounded by Jefferson, German, Warren and William (Janes) Streets, a very convenient site for such a public building, and after much discussion the property was deeded to the government. There was much opposition to this plan, many citizens believing that the ground should be covered by a city hall building, and the whole matter dragged along for several years.

The original plans for a federal building to occupy this site, prepared by government architects, provided for a large, low, squatty structure, one-story in height, which to everyone appeared inappropriate to the location and surroundings. There was general disapproval of the plans and much unfavorable comment on the departmental methods was heard, when William S. Linton, who was foremost in opposition to the plans, by his large influence at Washington succeeded in having an entirely new set of plans drawn. The new plans corrected the main defects of the preceding ones, and after some modification were deemed satisfactory. The contracts for the construction of the building were then let and the work was begun, with William C. Mueller, as contractor. Building operations proceeded with dispatch and on July 4, 1898, the handsome new post office was opened for public service.

At that time the Saginaw post office was regarded as the best planned building for the needs of a city of fifty thousand inhabitants, in this section of the country; and its architecture and lay out of grounds meets with the highest commendation of residents and visitors. In the eighteen years since the federal building was opened, the business of the post office has increased so rapidly as to necessitate a large addition to it, and in 1916 Congress appropriated one hundred and thirty-five thousand dollars for such improvements. In the near future an addition will be built at the east end of the structure on Warren Avenue, affording largely increased facilities for handling the parcel post and outgoing mail business, as well as the distribution of mail, and the transaction of registered letters and money order business. When completed the new Federal Building will be one the citizens of Saginaw may well be proud.

#### **Why Saginaw Has Two Post Offices**

Saginaw has the peculiar distinction of being the only city in the United States, excepting Greater New York, to have two separate and distinct post offices and two postmasters and deputy postmasters. While there may have been some practical reasons for retaining both offices when the two cities were consolidated in 1890, they have long since lost force and today the separate post offices are a detriment to the city and to efficient service, so far as the West Side is concerned. It matters not to the residents of the East Side whether the West Side office is a part of the East Side post office or not, since all mail directed to Saginaw comes direct to the East Side office, and is quickly distributed to boxes or delivered to offices or homes.

On the West Side, however, whose post office is officially designated as Saginaw, West Side, the situation is entirely different. All mail for this office which is properly directed with the words "West Side" placed after the name of the city goes, of course, direct to this office and is promptly distributed in due course. All other postal matter for this section of the city, where the special designation is omitted, even when the street address is given, goes first to the Saginaw post office on the East Side, is there sorted, pouched as for any mail route, and dispatched by wagon to the West Side office. There it is resorted and in regular course delivered, but from six to eighteen hours after it should have reached its destination. All morning mail thus resorted and dispatched is not delivered by carrier until afternoon, while the afternoon mails go over until the following day. A large proportion of the West Side mail matter is thus unnecessarily delayed in transit and delivery, much to the disadvantage of business men and residents of that part of the city.

This peculiar situation is due entirely to the postal regulations governing separate post offices, and which can not be changed to meet the local



THE FEDERAL BUILDING AT SAGINAW

conditions. A main sub-post office on the West Side, for the dispatch of mail and affording general postal facilities, would serve the residents of this section of the city far better than any independent office could. With one post office all mail could be delivered by carrier direct from the Saginaw office with only one handling, and the time of delivery materially shortened. A sub-office on the West Side would not abridge or curtail any of the postal facilities now enjoyed by the citizens over there.

The main objection to making the office a sub-post office, raised by certain "West Siders" is that the West Side would thus lose its identity and independence. They do not like "giving in" to the East Side. The logic of this position is not clear, since both sections of the city comprise one municipality having supposedly single aims and single broad purposes. As a matter of fact, however, a union of aims and purposes does not exist, or, indeed, ever existed, a certain element on the West Side still adhering to the old animosities and jealousies of their fathers. This is a deplorable condition which has interfered with the possible advancement of the city.

The real and logical reason for maintaining two post offices in Saginaw is one of politics. Every consideration of economics and public service is opposed to separate post offices, yet, from the political point of view there is every reason for opposing any change. For sixteen years, embracing consecutive terms of our esteemed Congressman, Joseph W. Fordney, the office of postmaster on the West Side was held by his private secretary and faithful henchman, "Bud" Brady, and while the office was administered satisfactorily, considering the handicaps of delayed mail deliveries, the fact is apparent that his long tenure of office was due entirely to a strong political influence, rather than to any unusual ability or traits of probity. This condition is likely to continue, since few West Side residents perceive the disadvantages of the separate office, or else do not care to relinquish their fancied identity or independence. That a large section of the city should suffer from this twin-post office politics is inconceivable to outsiders.

### Two Post Offices Are a Detriment to the City

Another detriment to the city in having two post offices is the discrepancy which arises in the official statements of the postal business transacted in Saginaw. To Michigan and the outside world this city is known as Saginaw and, being one municipality, no one thinks of "Saginaw, West Side," as a separate and distinct post office. Consequently, in comparing the official statements of postal business in Saginaw and other cities of its class, the figures for the Saginaw office only are taken, with the result that the totals are about twenty per cent. less than the combined totals of both Saginaw post offices. This is an injustice to the city and makes it appear, insofar as its postal business is a criterion of its commercial activity, in a very poor light. To outsiders the city is of less consequence than it really is.

### Saginaw Postal Business for 1915-16

In order to show the actual postal business of Saginaw the following table, compiled from the official reports for the year ending June 30, 1916, is given:

	Sag.	Per Cent. Inc. 1915	Sag. W. S.	Total
Total receipts .....	\$190,622.88	6.6	\$47,040.59	\$237,663.47
Insured parcel post packages	21,090	55.	5,980	27,070.
Fees on same .....	709.46	21.	233.88	943.34
C. O. D. parcels.....	5,085	26.	630	5,715
Fees on same .....	210.24	17.	65.00	275.24

### Amusements

The means of recreation and enjoyment in olden times were not numerous, compared with those of today, but were suited to the tastes of different classes of the inhabitants. Among outdoor sports the chief recreation was boating on the river which, for want of roads, was the convenient and customary means of travel between the valley settlements. Canoes and batteaux were numerous and dotted the stream between the villages, giving a touch of activity to the quiet waters. In winter skating and snow parties were the favorite pastimes, and as the bayou was then open through the business section of East Saginaw, one could skate uninterrupted on it from above Hayden's Bayou down across Genesee Street, where Barie's store now stands, and beyond into the dense woods which covered what is now the second ward. Many of our oldest residents remember the low ground, most of which was covered with water, along Genesee, Tuscola, German, Franklin and North Warren, between Washington and Jefferson Streets, where they skated in Winter and fished in Summer.

Buena Vista Hall, on the third floor of the first brick block erected in East Saginaw, at Genesee and Water Streets, and Irving Hall, in the four-story building adjoining on Genesee Street, were the first public meeting places where lectures, concerts, dances and parties, as well as church services were held. Afterward Jackson Hall, in Washington Street on the site of Wright's Hotel, was a popular hall. Fred Douglas lectured there on the evening of January 31, 1868, John B. Goff, on February 3, following, and many noted men appeared on its boards. The building was burned in the big fire of May 26, 1873. A view of the ruins appears on page 209.

### The Academy of Music

For the lovers of the drama the old Academy of Music and Bordwell's Opera House gave the residents of all classes all the thrill and excitement desired, while the Germania Hall and the Old Armory were convenient



meeting places for the people. The need for a first-class opera house was long recognized, and in 1883 the Academy of Music Company was organized, and a new brick theatre building was erected, John H. Qualmann, contractor, at the northeast corner of Washington and William (Janes) Streets. William L. Webber was president, Wellington R. Burt, vice-president and William C. McClure, secretary, of the company.

The Academy of Music was a large and substantial structure, seventy by one hundred and forty feet in dimensions, and cost seventy thousand dollars. Its stage was thirty-five feet in depth and sixty-eight in width, and was adequately hung with all necessary drops and scenery, including a fine drop curtain painted by Robert Hopkin, a Michigan artist of some celebrity, and which was greatly admired by our citizens in general. The auditorium, which had a seating capacity of twelve hundred persons, was noted for its fine acoustic properties, and was admirably arranged for obtaining a good view of the stage from every part of the house. It was comfortably seated and had in addition to the orchestra circle, parquette, dress circle and gallery, four boxes and ten loges.

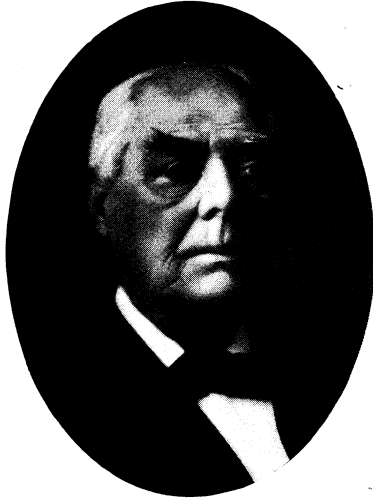
At the time of its opening, on the evening of December 16, 1884, the Academy was regarded as one of the finest theatres in Michigan, its furnishings and appointments being first-class in every respect. The initial performance was a gala event in this city, the presentation being "Lenore," an adaptation of "Lorlie," with Mme. Janisch in the leading role. The house was crowded with the elite of Saginaw society, and from that hour it sprang into favor with all theatre-goers. The second night the same company appeared in "Camille," the star role being filled by Mme. Janisch. The attractions offered by Clay & Buckley, the managers of the Academy, were of the highest grade, such celebrities as Booth, Barrett, Salvini, Fanny Davenport, Jefferson and others having filled engagements in this theatre.

Upon the retirement of Mr. Buckley from the theatrical firm operating the Academy, Sam G. Clay continued the management for several years, but was at length succeeded by John A. Davidson, who had been in active charge of the affairs for a long period. About ten years ago the house was sold to outside capitalists, and in 1911 was leased to the Butterfield interests. After the expiration of their lease in 1915, the Academy was operated by the owners, the National Amusement Company, with Fred E. Button as manager.

On the night of April 17, 1917, the Academy was totally destroyed by fire which started on the stage. As the house was "dark" the fire was not discovered until the flames burst through the roof, and in an incredibly short time the entire structure was a fiery furnace. Among the older residents strong feelings of sentiment were attached to this popular old playhouse, and much regret was expressed at the loss of it. The destruction of the Hopkin curtain, a real work of art, was greatly deplored, and was said to be the last of four or five curtains painted by the celebrated artist, a native of Michigan.

### A Unique Character

Sam G. Clay, the old-time theatrical manager, was a unique character who entered the profession as a musician and actor at an early age. He was born at Bath, England, February 14, 1817. When scarcely sixteen years of age he joined the elder Booth, travelling in the East and Middle West. In the absence of opera houses they played in hotel dining rooms or other large rooms that might be available, using sheets as curtains, and improvised stages made of boxes and old lumber to raise the performers slightly above the audience seats.



SAM G. CLAY

In the early seventies Mr. Clay and others organized the pioneer theatrical circuit in Michigan, if not in the United States, and included such cities as Detroit, Saginaw, Bay City, Port Huron, Flint, Ann Arbor, and at times St. Louis and other small places, in one night stands. Erlanger, later of Klaw & Erlanger, was booking agent, and John A. Davidson was ticket seller in the Detroit Opera House. Although most of the advertising was done in newspapers, Mr. Clay erected the first bill boards in Saginaw, one of which was on Genesee Street, where the Jeffers Fountain now stands. The first paper put on was of the Dupree and Benedict Minstrels, during Civil War times.

In the early days of Clay's theatrical life it was the custom of the managers to meet once a year in New York City, to arrange bookings, etc. These men had an informal organization but later they formed the Order of Elks. Among the charter members were Clay of Saginaw, Bidwell of New Orleans, and McVicker of Chicago. In recognition of Mr. Clay's high standing, and his services in obtaining the local charter in the order, the scope of which had been enlarged to include other than actors, he was made a life member of Saginaw Lodge No. 47, in 1892. In appreciation of this action he presented the order with a number of fine portraits of famous actors of the early days.

In striking contrast to the theatrical amusements of thirty or more years ago, are the offerings of newer theatres and moving picture houses, which for diversity and human interest far surpass anything in the past. This is apparent in the wide uses to which the Auditorium, the municipal theatre and convention hall are put. This large structure was erected in 1908 through the munificence of two wealthy citizens, and with its splendid equipment affords every facility for presenting plays, musical festivals, concerts and recitals, commercial exhibitions, fairs, dances and banquets. An account of the Auditorium is given in pages 264-66.

In 1902, when the Gas Building, at Washington and Germania Avenues, was erected by the late Michael Jeffers, the plans were enlarged to include the rebuilding of the brick buildings adjoining on the north. The reconstruction provided for a new theatre at the rear of these buildings, and when

completed was named Jeffers Theatre, after its owner. The new theatre was opened on August 2, 1902, by Bamford & Marks, as a vaudeville house, and instantly met with great favor by all classes of the people. This form of amusement was not new to Saginawians, as such shows had been given for several seasons in the Casino at Riverside Park, with success. The Jeffers Theatre extended this popular amusement from a few weeks run in Summer to nearly a whole year. Afterward stock plays of good grade were put on at intervals, and in 1915 moving pictures replaced the old policy. Early in 1917 the Jeffers returned to vaudeville with renewal of its former prosperity. The theatre property is now owned by E. A. and B. Goff, capitalists of this city.

### **The Franklin Theatre**

With a laudable purpose of giving this city another commodious theatre, some enterprising business men of South Franklin Street, and others, formed a company in May, 1914, and erected the Franklin Theatre at the corner of Germania Avenue. The officers of the company were: Julius B. Kirby, president; Herbert W. Merrill, Vice-president; David Swinton, secretary, and Peter Mitts, treasurer. The new theatre is a modern, fire-proof structure of splendid appointments, costing one hundred and twenty thousand dollars. It was opened under the most favorable auspices on the night of February 22, 1915, playing high-class vaudeville.

In this field of amusement, however, the Franklin was destined to misfortune. Owing to strong opposition and questionable methods employed by competitors, the lessees of the Jeffers, the former company was prevented from securing the class of bookings to which it aimed, and much disappointment resulted, not only to the stockholders and directors of the company but to patrons as well. Litigation followed in which existing hard feelings were intensified, and the difficulties were only settled by leasing the theatre to the Butterfield Syndicate, who took charge July 1, 1915. After extensive alterations to improve faulty acoustics and make the house more comfortable, it was opened to vaudeville enthusiasts. Later it was changed to high-grade moving pictures, in which field it meets with large patronage and probable success.

In recent years the moving picture houses have become a leading factor in public amusements, and in this respect the city is well provided. Besides the theatres already mentioned, all of which are equipped for animated pictures, there are no less than fifteen "movie" houses. Some of these are located at South Saginaw, on South Michigan Avenue and Potter Street. The leading picture theatres are the Franklin, Palace, Mecca, Bijou, Dreamland, Wolverine and Family, in which high-class films are shown, meriting the patronage of particular people.

### **The Advent of the Automobile**

The advent of the horseless carriage, as all motor vehicles were first known, was an important event in our local history. For several years before the first power wagon was seen on the streets of Saginaw, experiments were made in widely separated places to produce a carriage that would propel itself with some degree of dependency. Some experimenters adhered to the steam engine as a proper motive power, claiming that it was far more reliable in operation than any other type of engine, its steady, even power being applied to the driving wheels without vibration or jar. Others adopted the gas explosion engine as offering the ideal power for light vehicles; and their experiments were carried on with great zeal to perfect an engine which would be reliable and satisfactory.

For a while steam was the favorite power, as the simple slide valve engine was dependable, seldom getting out of order, its great flexibility and smooth running qualities recommending it to most pioneer motorists. The generator of steam for it, however, was a real problem, and on this deficiency the steam engine fell down. The generators then used, whether of the flash or fire-tube types, were seldom of sufficient capacity to supply the engine with steam at high effective pressure under adverse conditions. They required constant attention of the driver when running, and despite the utmost vigilance burning of boilers frequently occurred. In the early days, until the four-cylinder gas engine was brought to some degree of dependability, the twin cylinder steam carriage was the more satisfactory motor vehicle. With it one could drive into the country with a reasonable hope of getting home without mishap; and he generally passed one or two gas engine wagons helpless on the road.

### Coming of the First Automobile

The first horseless carriage seen in Saginaw was a Locomobile steamer owned and driven by Chauncey W. Penoyer, who brought it here in the Summer of 1900. He drove it about the city and on the main roads, entertaining his friends with the novel experience of riding in a "fire-spitting devil" carriage. It was, indeed, a thrilling and sometimes an exciting experience, as the difficulties of free propulsion were many, and when driven to its full power a speed of twenty-five or thirty miles an hour was often attained.

The chief drawback to enjoyable motoring at that time was scared horses, confused cattle, and bewildered people. The former invariably shied at the sight of the steam puffing carriage driven by an invisible power, and run-aways were of frequent occurrence. Cattle generally stood stolid across the road effectually blocking a passage, and had to be driven away by the motorist before he could proceed on his way. People stared at the strange spectacle of a carriage running smoothly without any visible power, and some scurried away to a safe distance to avoid the fearsome vehicle. It was even questioned that such wagons had any right to the use of the streets and roads, and many heated arguments arose on this point. As a result the steamers were driven at a very moderate speed, compared with the average rate of speed today, and serious accidents were relatively few.

This first Locomobile steamer, after a short but eventful service, met with a distressing accident which proved fatal to one of its passengers. On the evening of November 6, 1900, while driving north on North Jefferson Avenue, Mr. Penoyer momentarily lost control of the carriage, a front wheel struck the curb, and the three occupants were thrown violently to the pavement. C. Kirke Eddy, youngest son of Charles K. Eddy a prominent lumberman of this city, struck the stone curbing fracturing his skull. He died November 10. This sad accident dampened the motoring spirit of the others, and for a time the steamer was stored in a bicycle shop. At length it was overhauled and repaired and sold to Doctor L. W. Bliss, who used it regularly in making his calls. He was one of the first physicians in this city to use a motor vehicle in his profession.

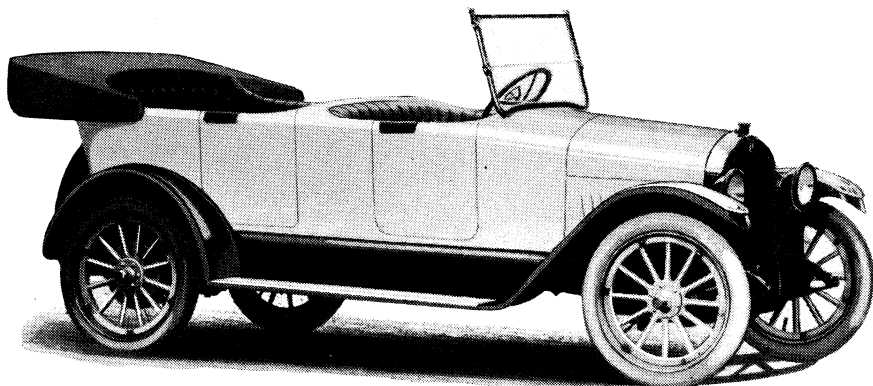
The second steam carriage, also of the Locomobile production but having a Victoria top, was brought here in December, 1900, by the historian. This carriage of rather limited steaming radius, as were all steamers of that early date, was driven very successfully not only in the city but on all passable roads in the county and some distance beyond. In the eight years it was in service here several enjoyable trips were made to various cities in the State, although some difficulty was encountered with sand and mud roads. There were few improved highways in those days, even between the largest cities

of the State, and motoring for pleasure was limited to driving on smooth pavements in the city, and on the plank road to Bridgeport, Frankenmuth, Vassar and other nearby places.

### The First Gas Propelled Carriage

To Albert T. Ferrell belongs the honor of having brought to Saginaw the first gas propelled carriage. This was late in the Fall of 1900. The motor was a "single lunger" (one cylinder) Haynes and the carriage itself was of wonderful proportions and construction, and it ran quite satisfactorily when the engine felt like running. Mr. Ferrell drove this pioneer motor buggy for a year or two, and then traded it in for a new and improved model. Ever since he has been one of Saginaw's most enthusiastic motorists, taking great pride in the mechanical excellence of his motor equipment.

During the Summer of 1901 eight or ten other horseless carriages, mostly of the steam type, were brought to this city. The owners were: Daniel W. Briggs, Frank G. Palmerton, Arthur D. Eddy, Harry T. Wickes, Charles W. Bradford, William G. Hay and W. G. Van Auken.



A SAGINAW MADE AUTOMOBILE, 1918

In the same Summer Rusco & Holland's minstrels visited this city, and created more than usual notice and comment. For among their principal attractions was a steam automobile which headed the parade. Horseless carriages were still a curiosity, especially in the country, and throngs came to see the steam puffing vehicle. When the steamer was unloaded from the express car which had brought it from another city, the tires were soft, and, in the absence of any garage or repair shop in the city, George E. Spring, a well known bicycle dealer, was called to fix them. The show men had had other trouble in operating the carriage, and becoming discouraged they decided to dispose of it. After some dickering they sold it the following day to Mr. Spring. He overhauled the machinery and put it in good running order, and drove it the balance of the season. Shortly after this pioneer steam carriage became the property of William Zeman, who used it successfully, though with the customary troubles, for several years.

The White Steam Carriage appeared in 1902 and, as it possessed many desirable features in generating steam, attracted several buyers here. Later, when the large touring body, with detachable tonneau, was introduced, three or four were sold to Saginaw pioneer motorists who derived much pleasure in driving them.

### The First Popular Gasoline Cars

When the curve-dash Oldsmobile and the two-cylinder Autocar came on the market, the public interest in the horseless carriage was greatly stimu-

lated, and it was not long before these more dependable cars became familiar to everybody. The first one-cylinder Cadillac car appeared at about that time and found eager buyers. By 1905 there were at least one hundred automobiles in Saginaw and, excepting about fifteen steam cars, all were of the gasoline motor type of single and double cylinders. After that the number of motor propelled carriages seen on the streets of Saginaw increased rapidly.

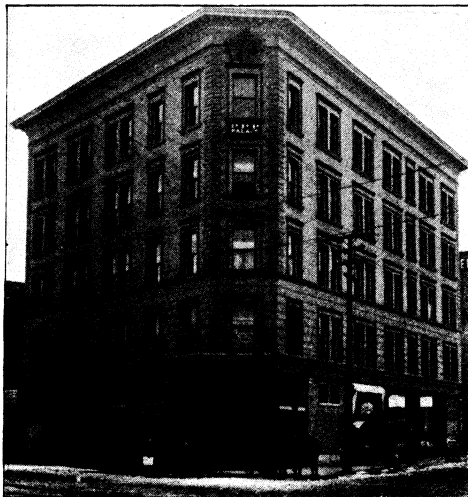
#### The City Exacts a License

Late in 1904 the common council passed an ordinance defining the rights of automobiles on the streets of the city, regulating the speed at which such carriages should be operated, and fixed a charge of two dollars as a license fee. Some provisions of this ordinance seem ridiculous today, namely, the automobile owner must provide metal numbers six inches in height, according to his license number, and placed on the rear of the body of his car; and the speed such vehicles could be operated was limited to five miles an hour in the business section, and eight miles in all other parts of the city. But nearly all owners drove their cars with far more care and caution than is now exercised, and accidents, either to themselves or the public, were few.

Since 1905 the use of motor vehicles in Saginaw County, as elsewhere, has increased at a remarkable rate. To enumerate all features of this development would be beyond our purpose. It is suffice to state that in 1917 the number of automobiles in the county was more than five thousand, about three thousand of which were owned in the city.

#### Alfred W. Norris Opens the First Garage

The first public garage for the care and repair of automobiles was started about 1902 by Alfred W. Norris, on South Washington Street. A few months later the Saginaw Automobile Company was organized by the Eddy and Wickes brothers, and the building at the southwest corner of Water and Genesee Streets was remodeled and converted into a large and conveniently arranged garage. The following year Mr. Norris purchased the business outright, and moved his own into the more commodious quarters. He developed a large patronage at this place, as he had at the time the only adequate facilities for recharging the batteries of electric carriages in Saginaw. A number of the best and most popular cars were sold there for several years, but at length this garage took over the exclusive agency for the Ford car. Shortly after Mr. Norris retired from the automobile business.



OFFICE BUILDING AT GENESSEE AND JEFFERSON AVENUES



INTERIOR OF OFFICE OUTFITTING STORE

### The H. B. Arnold Company

Among the successful retail houses of Saginaw is the H. B. Arnold Company, whose attractive store is at 129 North Franklin Street. The company was organized in 1912 by some well known business men, with a capital stock of twenty-five thousand dollars. The stockholders were: M. P. Gale, Thomas G. Gale, James E. Vincent, A. H. Fish, R. B. Thayer and H. B. Arnold; and shortly after F. Y. Wynkoop acquired an interest in the company.

The business was started on June 1, 1912, at 213-15 Germania Avenue, which at the time was the only suitable storerooms available. This location was not as accessible to the trade as was deemed necessary to the most successful conduct of the business, and on January 1, 1913, the stock was removed to the present location which affords every facility for handling a large business. Besides the broad, well lighted store there is a conveniently arranged stock room, forty by sixty feet in size, on an upper floor, in which a large reserve stock is carried.

In this convenient location the company does a satisfactory business as general office outfitters, including office furniture, filing cabinets and safes. All kinds of office stationery, loose leaf devices, printed forms and cards, as well as all supplies for the office are constantly in stock. The company is exclusive agent for Cutler desks, B. L. Marble chairs, Y & E filing devices, and the Herring-Hall-Marvin safes. There is also a department of fine stationery and engraving, which is popular with the social element of the city and vicinity.

At the beginning of the business it was foreseen that a considerable trade in the general line of office outfitting could be developed in the northern and western sections of the State, and in the "Thumb" district to the northeast. Acting on this well founded belief Mr. Arnold sent salesmen through these sections to develop the trade. The results of these efforts were very satisfactory, and today the company enjoys a large business from the cities and towns thus covered, including Owosso and intervening points. Wherever the name of The H. B. Arnold Company has been carried and a foothold secured in the trade, a growing business has resulted, and the outlook for future trade is very bright.



EMIL SCHWAHN



CHARLES A. KHUEN



CURT SCHWAHN

### The Schwahn-Khuen Agency

The three enterprising citizens whose portraits appear above, constitute the Schwahn-Khuen Agency, insurance writers. Born and reared in Saginaw they have spent their entire life here, and aided in the advancement of the material interests of the city. By industry, integrity and perseverance they have built up a large and profitable agency, and number among their many patrons some of the prominent men and large industrial and commercial institutions.

The Schwahn-Khuen Agency is a combination of the old Khuen Insurance Agency and the well known firm of V. E. Schwahn & Brother, insurance writers, which was effected in 1910. The former agency was established in 1852 by the late Richard Khuen, who for many years was an accurate and reliable underwriter, and held the confidence of the insuring public. In the eighteen-eighties such substantial companies as the Hanover, Citizens, Continental and German American, of New York; the Royal, of Liverpool, and other foreign and American companies were represented by him. Upon his death the business was continued by his son, Charles A. Khuen, who was the secretary of the Saginaw County Savings Bank. For many years the office was in the Miller Block, at the corner of Court and Hamilton Streets.

The younger firm of insurance writers was founded in 1900 by V. Emil Schwahn, who by great energy and native ability soon developed a successful agency. He then interested his brother, Curt Schwahn, in the growing agency. By transacting all business on an unquestioned basis they won the confidence of the public, and enjoyed an enviable position among the reliable insurance men of this city.

In 1910, with that spirit of enterprise and progress which had marked their career, the Schwahn Brothers and Charles A. Khuen consolidated their agencies, the union resulting in a business which is one of the largest of its kind in Saginaw. With an office in the Graebner Building, V. E. and Curt Schwahn conduct the affairs of the agency with singular ability and efficiency. "Service" is their watchword and their monitor.

Besides fire insurance they carry on a general insurance business, including tornado, plate glass, compensation, automobile, liability and indemnity insurance.



**SAGINAW IS**

The greatest **Railroad and Shipping Center** in Central Michigan;  
The natural **Trading Center** for Northeastern Michigan;  
The largest **Bean Shipping Point** in Michigan;  
The **Sugar Bowl** of Michigan;  
The greatest **Machinery Manufacturing City** in Northeastern Michigan;  
A **Deep-Water Port** on the Great Lakes;  
A most **Desirable Place of Residence** with Educational and Social Advantages of the Highest Order.

**SAGINAW HAS**

The largest and most modernized **Hardware Store** in Michigan;  
The largest individual **Wholesale Grocery House** in Michigan;  
The largest **Packing and Cold Storage House** in Northeastern Michigan;  
The largest **Wholesale Shoe and Rubber House** in Michigan;  
The largest **Wholesale Dry Goods House** in Northeastern Michigan;  
The largest **State Bank** outside of Detroit;  
The only daily **Morning Newspaper** north of Detroit;  
**Seven Large Department Stores**;  
The largest **Locomotive and Car Repair Shops** in Northeastern Michigan;  
The largest **Plate Glass Works** in Michigan;  
The most modernized **Salt Making Plant** in Michigan;  
The largest **Rule and Tape Factory** in the United States;  
The largest **Graphite Products Plant** in the United States;  
The largest **Phonograph Factory** in Michigan;  
The largest **Art Furniture Factory** in Northeastern Michigan;  
Large **Piano and Piano Parts Factories**;  
The largest **Shade Roller Factory** in Michigan;  
The largest **Match Factory** in Michigan;  
The second largest **Cash Register Factory** in the World;  
The largest and best equipped **Printing and Engraving Plant** in Northeastern Michigan;  
The largest **Shipbuilding Yard** in Northeastern Michigan;  
The largest **Kerosene Tractor Motor Works** in Michigan;  
The largest **Vinegar and Pickle Works** in Northeastern Michigan;  
The largest and finest **Hotel** in Northeastern Michigan;  
Three other **High Class Hotels**;  
A **Municipal Theater**—**The Auditorium**—seating Four Thousand;  
Three other **New and Perfectly Appointed Theaters**.



GENESEEE AVENUE, EAST FROM WASHINGTON, 1918

## CHAPTER XXII

# DEVELOPMENT OF AGRICULTURE

---

Pioneer Farming—Preparing the Ground—Primitive Corn Planting—Close Association Among Pioneers—Some Were Migratory—First Wheat Raised—Farming on Green Point—How the Farmers Fared—The “Michigan Appetite”—Value of Bottom Lands—Wild Fruits and Berries—Early Fruit Growing—Grains and Vegetables—Rapid Increase in Agriculture—Marshes Early Attract Buyers—Wintering Stock on Rushes—Reclaiming Marsh Lands—Development of the Prairie Farm—“Mosquito Road” Leads to Farm—A Bit of Holland in Michigan—Raising Blooded Stock—United States Land Office—Saginaw Valley Agricultural Society—Central Agricultural Society—Saginaw County Farmers’ Organizations.

**P**IONEER farming in Saginaw County is now so far away that only a few persons living at an advanced age have a more or less distinct remembrance of the difficulties attending it. The average soil was not of that fertility the pioneers who came from New York or New England were accustomed to, and there were many surprises for those who relied upon the experience which the ruling opinions of their day had prescribed. The egotism of some of these adventurous yoeman led them into many agricultural pitfalls and disappointments. There were instances where two bushels of wheat per acre were sown on raw, sandy soil, with a grim determination to teach the natives a practical lesson in farming. The fuzzy product making futile attempts to form a semblance of a head was a sharp reminder that Nature had some part to perform, and ought to have been consulted. Some settlers insisted upon applying the rule for planting corn, which the jingle,

“One for the blackbird, one for the crow,  
One for the cutworm, and three to grow.”

had impressed upon their minds. But the appetites of blackbirds and crows were insatiable, and the cutworms were still greedy, so that a hill of corn came up a tuft, turned pale as it advanced, and yielded its quota of nubbins and some excellent fodder.

### Preparing the Ground

Much labor was expended by our grandfathers before corn growing became possible. After the trees were felled there was cutting of brush, piling and burning logs, and then the breaking, for which all previous work was but preliminary. Holding a breaker drawn by seven yoke of oxen was no sinecure. It needed a quick judgment to decide on which side of a big oak grub the plow should go, to be most effective, and then a strong and supple action to accomplish the purpose. Sometimes the coulter point of the plow would strike the center of a big oak root, split it, and march on; but when the plow beame stuck fast, and the impetus of the moving force was stopped, the difficulties multiplied. Then came a tug at the handles to loosen the wedge-shaped coulter, and all hands and often the leading team were required to free the plow.

This plow was fearfully and wonderfully made. No Curtiss or Dodge fashioned its curves and pitch, and it was not made in great quantities at South Bend. From a thrifty growing white oak tree its beam was hewed

lending the quality of length and strength. Its mould-board was a rough casting, massive, thick and strong. The pitch of the plow was the blacksmith's art, and he made both coulter and share of steel. This share would cut through four or five inches of solid oak root, if the proper inclination and purchase were given the plow by the holder. There was a reason then for deep plowing, for the deeper the plow went in the ground the smaller were the roots of the grubs, and the easier they cut.

Harrowing after breaking was no holiday affair. The big harrow with inch square teeth, drawn by two yoke of oxen, pulled out the loose grubs and partially levelled the ground, but there were left roots sticking up which had to be cut to facilitate the cradling of grain. After the best job of breaking a live grub would be left upon every square rod of ground. Plowing about these fast grubs required some skill and the exercise of much patience to keep the plow from grappling fast. A week's work at grubbing required the expenditure of sufficient strength and energy to perform a whole season's labor with modern appliances and under present conditions of soil. The grub hoe had its brief day of usefulness and was relegated to the oblivion of stone axes and arrowheads.

### Primitive Corn Planting

The advent of the marker, standing on its three long legs, so that stumps were no obstruction to its progress, was a long step toward improvement in growing corn. It replaced the primitive method of drawing a chain back and forth, to indicate something near the relative distance apart which tradition had determined the rows should be. Opinions differed widely as to the proper time to plant, and generally conformed to the facility for forwarding the work, or were timed to the tardiness of the individual. The hustler insisted that the fifth of May was the proper time, while others, not so early awakened into activity, asserted that the best field of corn they ever saw was planted in June. Between these extremes ranged the majority of settlers in regular order, so that changing work in planting time could be distributed among them to meet the demands for help when the fields were ready for the seed. The meandering of these men in an oblique rank across the field was quite unique, the springing corn showing where the leader's story approached its climax by the narrowing of the rows, and the closing period by the long ellipses that followed.

The activities of farming were of a different nature in those pioneer days than farmers are accustomed to in the present. There was a short period between the advent of clover as a common crop of hay, and the mowing machine, when the scythe in the hands of youth of immature strength was an instrument of torture, in attempts at keeping stroke with the foremost man.

### Close Association Among Pioneers

The inherent desire for association among pioneer farmers was gratified by numerous bees, barn raisings and corn huskings. Here the almanac predictions for the weather, the effect which a short crop in the neighborhood would have upon the general markets; the durability of fence posts set with the top end down, and diverse other questions were discussed, the kernel of which was arrived at from the general average of opinion. The majority of settlers, however, were more interested in how to get the most out of the soil or to increase its yield. They did not regard the latter proposition as of importance until the land had begun a slow decadence of fertility, but when this became a tangible truth it sifted out the mere livers from the real farmers. The former class removed nearer the verge of civilization, and the latter began a serious survey of the situation. Those who remained and

those who came into possession as second proprietors of the farms were the true pioneer farmers. Their efforts were purely experimental, as the experience gained in other States was no sure guide to win success here. From their unsuccessful efforts the farmer of today has learned much to fortify himself against succeeding difficulties, and is reaping success where they harvested tribulation, while those who came after may gather richer harvests from the soil their grandfathers and great-grandfathers opened to the sun.

### Some Were Migratory

Nearly a century ago there was a small class of settlers who might be termed hereditary or habitual pioneers. They would penetrate the wilderness and select some beautiful location for a temporary home, but would seldom remain long enough to be surrounded with the comforts and conveniences of rural life. A traveller once came to a log house in the wilder-



CORN IS A PROFITABLE CROP

ness, where the country was particularly attractive, and was hospitably entertained for the night. In the morning he noticed that a large clearing had been made, in which corn and potatoes promised a good crop, and congratulated the settler upon the beauty of his surroundings.

"Yes," he said, "it's all very pleasant here, but I have got to leave."

"Why, what's the matter. Isn't this a healthy place?"

"Oh! yes, but it is getting too dense around here. There is Jones settled out in the woods only ten miles away, and I hear of another family coming to settle on the creek only five miles from here. I must move farther on. I will not live where my nearest neighbor can leave home in the morning, come to my house and return home the same night."

An old patriarch of this class was Job Olmstead, the father of twenty-two children, all of whom, with sons-in-law, daughters-in-law and grandchildren, numbering more than fifty persons, started from Northwestern Ohio in 1832 for the Saginaw Valley. He had heard of the abundant supply of fish in these waters, and was in search of a new wilderness in which to make a temporary home. In November, 1831, the trail between Flint and Saginaw had been cleared of logs and the creeks bridged, so that it was possible to travel by teams, but in June of the following year a cyclone passed across the trail just north of Pine Run, levelling the timber of a width

of nearly three quarters of a mile, and completely blocking it. Upon reaching this obstruction the Olmsteads, with their teams of oxen, stock of cows and other animals, were in a serious dilemma, but they determined to push forward, and the people of Flint generously contributed a supply of provisions while they cut through the windfall. In about two weeks they arrived on the banks of the Saginaw River, and found it teeming with fish which were easily caught. They found an abandoned clearing and a log house on the Tittabawassee, where they lived for a time, but the family soon became divided and the father went back to Pine Run. In 1835 he and Douglas Thompson built a saw mill on Pine River. It was not long, however, before the migratory habit asserted itself and all the Olmsteads left for Wisconsin, and not one of the numerous family, or any of their descendants, have since resided in Saginaw Valley.

### First Wheat Raised

Our Saginaw pioneers, at length becoming tired of corn dodgers, began to raise a little wheat, but in doing this they added to their difficulties. In order to get it ground into flour they were obliged to go to Flushing and sometimes to Waterford or Pontiac, in Oakland County, with ox teams, cutting their way through the woods for a portion of the distance. Upon one occasion Murdock Fraser (see Chapter VII, page 106) started to mill with thirty bushels of wheat. Arriving at the Thread Mill, one mile south of Flint River, he found the mill out of repair, and went on to Flushing. He was gone from home ten days, and being obliged to meet his expenses out of his wheat, he found upon arriving home that more than half of his grist had been used up.

As to who was the first to raise wheat in this county there may be some question, but upon the authority of Charles W. Grant, a pioneer whose memory was very keen, the honor falls to Charles A. Lull. Mr. Lull was born at Windsor, Vermont, May 17, 1809, and came to Saginaw in 1833, locating on eighty acres of land in section one, Township of Spaulding, and became the first farmer to cultivate the soil on the east side of the river. About twenty years later he located one hundred acres of land in Bridgeport Township, where he lived until his death July 11, 1885. The first wheat raised in this county he took to Waterford to be ground, carrying it on a sleigh drawn by two yoke of oxen. It was said Mrs. Lull made the first cheese and first woolen cloth in this county. Mr. Lull operated a saw mill at Bridgeport for a number of years, and in 1863 sunk a salt well. He built the Center House there, which he kept for a long period, and was known as an honest, upright townsman.



DAIRY FARMING INCREASING IN SAGINAW COUNTY

### Farming on Green Point

"On the twenty-seventh of March, 1833," wrote Albert Miller in his *Pioneer Sketches* (Michigan Pioneer Collections, Vol. 7, pp. 236-9), "we commenced plowing prairie land on Green Point with three yoke of heavy oxen. We had not been long plowing before we were solicited by Messrs. Williams to train a yoke of four-year-old cattle that were so wild that they could never do anything with them. We consented to try, and made preparations by making a yard that no domestic animal could escape from. We then planted a post firmly in the center of it, and enticed the oxen into the yard with other cattle. Procuring a strong rope with a noose in the end, we threw it over the head of the off ox, then snubbed him to the post and put a yoke on him. After serving the other ox in the same way, we hitched one strong yoke of oxen ahead of them and another behind them and commenced plowing. The wild steers, seeing they were conquered, soon gave up and long before the spring plowing was done they led the team, being the handiest yoke of cattle of them all.

"We continued our plowing until the twenty-third of May, when we had thirty acres broken, all of which we planted to corn. We commenced planting on the fifth of May and finished on the twenty-fourth. We kept down the grass and weeds during the season where it was necessary to do so, and a more promising field of corn I never saw. But alas, for the result of our summer's work! Before the corn was fairly in the milk, clouds of blackbirds from the marshes would light upon it, and, in spite of all our efforts to keep them away, they destroyed nearly the whole crop. The red-wings, or rice birds, fed upon it until the rice was ready for them; and then another variety, called crow blackbirds, preyed upon it until it was taken from the field. From all our thirty acres of corn which, if allowed to ripen, would have yielded fifty or sixty bushels per acre, we saved only sufficient to fatten forty-seven hundred weight of pork. What we saved was from the butts of the ears that the birds could not get at. We fortunately had a good stock of hogs, and the pork we made was in demand, some of it being sold to parties in Grand Blanc and packed on horse to that place.

"That summer my cows were pastured on the opposite bank of the river from where I lived, and mornings when I crossed the river to milk them I would tie a trolling line to my paddle, and I seldom failed of catching fish enough for breakfast. Fresh fish were a great luxury to new-comers to Saginaw, but so plentiful were they that, after a year or two, they made very little account of them for food.

"Rattlesnakes were plentiful in those days. I have heard they would not remain where hogs have a free run, and I am inclined to believe it from a circumstance that transpired during that summer. Our hogs ran on the prairie outside the field we had fenced in for cultivation, and inside the field I had some rails piled on the unplowed prairie. About mid-summer I wanted to use them and drove my team alongside to haul them away. The first rail I took up I found I had disturbed a rattlesnake; and before I had handled half a dozen I found there were two or three snakes for every rail. I actually backed out and left the rails for their especial use the balance of the season. The snakes had taken refuge inside the fence to escape from the hogs."

### How the Farmers Fared

The log house of the early Saginaw farmers, with its plain and oft-time rude furnishings, and its huge fireplace made of stones, sticks and clay, was a comfortable and cheerful abode. The old fireplace contributed much to the health and happiness of the settler's home, and he, after a hard day's work, seated with his family in front of his glowing fire, with an abundance of wood

in the corner, enjoyed all the comforts of frontier life. There was an art in building a good fire, and was kept in constant practice in laying down aright the backlog and forestick, and building thereon with small wood, in so skillful a manner that a little kindling wood would start the fire and give out the most heat and light to the household. If the fire was too dull to give light in the evening, some fat was put in a saucer, a rag was twisted for a wick and then coiled about in the grease, one end being left on the edge of the saucer and lighted. This was a primitive lighting taper. As pine trees were plentiful in some parts, pine knots were largely used and created a bright blaze that lasted for some time.

The old iron crane, with its pot-hooks and links of chain, swung at the will of the housewife, who hung on it the kettles containing the food to be cooked, and pushed it back over the fire. Pigs, chickens and spare ribs were roasted to a rich brown by suspending them by a wire before the fire. The baking was mostly done in the old brick oven built in one side of the chimney, although the "tin reflector" that was placed before the fire, was much used to bake bread and cakes, and the Pink-eye and Meshanic potatoes.

### The "Michigan Appetite"

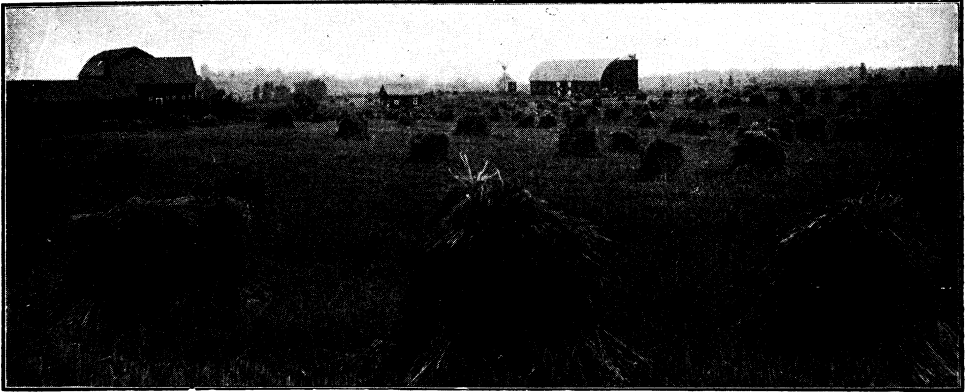
The settler's daily fare, from want of variety in his larder, was necessarily frugal. There was no fruit save the wild plums and the various berries that grew in the woods and low lands. The fare for the table was bread, pork and potatoes. Pork was often very scarce, some families going without meat, except the wild game they killed, for a whole season at a time. Salt was also hard to get, and once sold as high as twenty-one dollars a barrel. Tea, coffee, sugar and butter were rarely seen on a settler's table. An herb called the teaweed, a kind of wild Bohea that grew in the woods, was used by some, the leaves being steeped like our imported teas and the decoction drunk. Crust coffee, made from wheat or other grains browned, was in common use for drink at table.

Farmers were told that they would get the "Michigan Appetite" after they had lived here for a short time. When it came, which was in the first year, it was ravenous and pork and potatoes were delicious. The usual meal of the family consisted of a huge platter of boiled potatoes, piled up steaming hot and placed in the center of the table, bread or Johnny-cake, perhaps some meat boiled or fried, and a large bowl of flour gravy. This was eaten with a relish that swept the table of all edibles, and left a slim fare for the family dog. Various reasons were adduced as to the cause of this appetite, but the one good cause was hunger. The pioneer farmers, working long hours at hard manual labor, seldom had enough to eat, and hence were always hungry and ready to eat.

### Value of Bottom Lands

During the period of settlement and for many years after, the impression went forth that the Saginaw Valley was low and monotonous, traversed by swamps with miasmatic vapors, populated by wild animals and bull-frogs, and entirely unfit for human habitation. In the immediate vicinity of some of the rivers and the bay this was to a certain extent true, but in localities all over the valley were to be found beautiful rolling lands and ridges covered with luxurious growth of timber peculiar to this latitude. The bottom lands were often confounded with the wet prairie that skirted the main streams, and while the latter was covered with wild rice and reeds and under water a good portion of the year, the former along the water courses in their native state were lined with a rich growth of walnut, linden, soft maple and wild plums. These trees were usually festooned with grape vines which attained to a large size and bore abundant fruit. The lands





A TYPICAL FARM SCENE

were subject to inundation in the Spring, but the waters usually receded in time for the farmer to prepare the soil for seed. This soil was composed of rich alluvial formation of wonderful fertility, and the crops it produced, particularly cereals, were remunerative in the highest degree. The bottoms also afforded the best meadow lands, and had the advantage over the sandy ridges in that they seldom suffered from drouth.

Another erroneous impression in regard to these Saginaw Valley lands due, no doubt, to being wet and unforbidding at certain seasons, was that they could not be drained and thus warmed into life and usefulness. It was also believed that the county was too frosty and unreliable as to climate to warrant the broad extent of improvements that were deemed necessary to redeem the "pine barrens." Someone, however, discovered that a large portion of these lands lay several feet above the normal surface of the river and bay, and undertook to show that they could be made dry and rendered susceptible to high cultivation, at the same time driving away innumerable reptiles and noxious vapors and miasmas, which were a detriment to good health and comfort. Many parcels of land which were considered worthless on account of their spongy condition, were redeemed and made valuable by a proper system of drainage and ditching. This improvement work, despite the grave doubts of many pioneers that the valley would ever become even a moderately productive farming district, went on continually, and today greater attention than ever is given to improvements of this nature, and to proper fertilization of the soil.

As an illustration of the fertility of the alluvial bottom lands, an early pioneer contributes some interesting figures from actual experience. He relates that he once traded the forty acres, known as Mapes' Addition to East Saginaw, which now includes the site of the Pere Marquette Railroad depot and other railroad buildings, for the Fraser Farm on the Tittabawassee, situated two miles below the present railroad crossing at Paines'. The farm was considered a choice selection, there being sixty acres of river bottom, on which the crops raised might well satisfy any farmer, and the abundance of them amply compensate him for the inconvenience of an occasional overflow during the Spring freshets. Seventy bushels of shelled corn to the acre was no uncommon yield. He raised common field pumpkins that weighed sixty pounds each, and from one vine gathered twenty-two pumpkins the aggregate weight of which was three hundred and eighty-two pounds. In 1833 Duncan McLellan raised eight hundred bushels of potatoes, the yield being between three hundred and four hundred bushels to the acre.

In November, 1830, the elder McCarty and his son, Thomas, came from Boston and settled on the Tittabawassee, and although neither had ever chopped a stick of timber, they cut the logs and built a house with their own hands. In the rough log cabin they lived and cooked their own food. During the Winter and Spring they cut the timber into short lengths that they could roll into heaps by hand, and thus partially cleared the land, upon which they raised a crop of corn that they sold in the Fall of 1831 for sixty dollars. This first crop was raised without any team work. It was customary for settlers to fell the timber and pile the brush neatly and burn it in the Spring, and plant and raise their first crop of corn among the logs. Edward McCarty, a younger brother of Thomas, afterward occupied the same and surrounding lands and became one of the wealthy farmers of Saginaw County.

### Wild Fruits and Berries

Wild or native fruits, such as plums, cherries, grapes and berries grew in great abundance upon the bottom lands and along the margins of the streams. All manner of shrub fruits and berries were found in the greatest profusion in the woods, including currants and gooseberries of several varieties, and whortleberries, blackberries and red and black raspberries. The cranberry which grew in some of the marshes, was for a few years an important article of export here, and hundreds of bushels were shipped annually from the port of Saginaw to eastern cities. About 1868 this trade fell off, owing to the great home consumption, and the destruction of the marshes by fire and other causes. During the Fall of 1856 hundreds of acres of cranberry marshes were consumed by the fires which raged incessantly for weeks along the rivers.

Strawberries seemed to be peculiarly adapted to the soil here, and when properly cultivated and given the care which the delicate nature of the plant requires, yielded abundantly. About 1856 the late Joseph Halstead told of a wonderful yield of delicious strawberries in the garden of a friend. He was at tea at his friend's house on several occasions when the table was bountifully supplied with luscious berries, and he remarked to the lady that they must have a large number of plants to gather from. "Yes," she replied, "we have a dozen." He thought if such supplies of berries could be produced from a dozen plants, it might be profitable to raise them in larger quantities, so he became the agent for an eastern grower of the plants, and introduced them into many gardens in Saginaw.

### Early Fruit Growing

The cultivation of domestic fruits received very little attention in Saginaw Valley until the villages began to grow, and the people created some demand for them. Tradition tells us that the earliest fruit grown here in great abundance was produced without effort by anyone. When the first fur traders came here more than a hundred years ago, they found several clumps of apple trees growing near the banks of the river, which yearly produced large quantities of rich fruit. At that time some of the trees indicated an age of sixty years or more, and there was much conjecture as to their origin. But it was at length conceded that in all probability the trees originated from seeds brought by the Indians from Canada or some of the Eastern States. One clump of these trees, though few in number, was situated at Carrollton, near the bank of the river; another group was found on land which afterward became the A. B. Paine Farm, a short distance above the crossing of the Michigan Central Railroad at Paines' station; and others were at different places on the Tittabawassee above Paines'.

One of the apple trees on Paines' Farm had a peculiar formation, with four or five large trunks springing from one root, and was always a prolific

bearer. One year, during the early settlement of the place, this tree bore one hundred and eleven bushels of choice fruit, and each white family then residing in the valley was presented with a large bag of delicious apples by James Fraser, who at that time owned the farm. Afterward Mr. Fraser had an abundant harvest of plums, and after supplying his own wants and those of particular friends, he directed his man to gather the remainder in large tubs and distribute the fruit among the families of the village. Most of the old Indian apple trees died many years ago, the cause generally attributed being the overflow of the lands adjacent to the rivers, in the Spring floods which began about 1836-7, which it was supposed killed the roots.

The first orchards in the county were grown from seeds brought from New York State by Asa and Abram Whitney, and were on the banks of the Tittabawassee near where Parker's brick yard was afterward located. Messrs. Little and Ladd also brought apple seeds from Livingston County, New York, which were planted by Eleazer Jewett on his land at Green Point,



AN EXAMPLE OF SUCCESSFUL FRUIT GROWING

but owing to ravages of mice which girdled the trees, only a few survived to furnish trees for several gardeners. The want of roads in the early days made it very difficult to transport fruit trees, but a few were brought in from the farm of Oliver Williams, at Silver Lake, near Ponitac, and planted in the gardens of his sons, Gardner D. and Ephraim S. Williams. These probably were the first bearing trees propagated by the settlers of Saginaw County.

James Fraser, who was very active in introducing fruit here at an early date, brought seeds from New York State, which he planted and distributed the trees among the farmers. Some very choice varieties of peaches were procured in this way, and there was no difficulty in growing delicious fruit in great abundance until 1856. That winter was so severe that nearly all peach trees were killed. A few that were covered by snow drifts were preserved and bore fruit many years after, but as a general thing peaches have not been so sure a crop as some other fruits. Plums were grown in great abundance by grafting cultivated fruit on native wild stock. About 1840 Harvey Williams went to Detroit, and possibly to the Windsor nurseries in Canada, to gather select fruit trees, and returned with a large wagon load of choice varieties, which were planted and well cared for, the result of which was a bountiful harvest of fruit for at least forty years.

### Grains and Vegetables

All kinds of field and garden cereals and vegetables were easily grown on the bottom lands, and even further back on higher ground the soil was found to be adapted to the growing of grass and root crops. Potatoes, turnips, beets, carrots, parsnips and other vegetables proved by their large yield and size the fertility of the soil, while varieties of garden vines produced to a surprising degree. Peas, beans, tomatoes, cabbages and lettuce grew in private gardens and fields to perfection and flavor. It was nothing unusual for the pioneer farmer to dig three hundred bushels and upward of potatoes to the acre. Wheat, barley, oats, rye, corn and buckwheat yielded profitable crops, and while wheat, as a general rule, did better upon heavy soil back from the streams, all other grains flourished in almost any locality in the valley.

### Rapid Increase in Agriculture

As lands became more cleared and opened to the light and heat of the sun they improved every year, and in the broader clearings untimely frosts became an exception rather than the rule. The certainty of a ready market for all classes of farm products was an inducement to work all available ground, and for immigrants to locate where no difficulties in the way of transportation or slack demand were liable to prevent regular returns from their labors. From 1870 to 1874 there was more activity in clearing land and making farms than in all the twenty years preceding; and the value of farm products more than doubled within five years following eighteen seventy-four.

In 1860 the number of acres of improved land (a part only slashed) in Saginaw County was eighteen thousand and forty-eight, and the value of the crops was one hundred sixty-five thousand three hundred and eighty dollars, while in 1870 the acreage had increased to thirty-three thousand three hundred and eighty-five, and the valuation of crops to six hundred ninety thousand three hundred and eighty-two dollars. A fair estimate of the entire farm production, including dairy and stock returns not included in the figures for the years given above, in 1874, was two million dollars.

Dairy farming began to attract attention of the farmers early in the seventies, the cities on the Saginaw affording a good market for such products. The rich alluvial soil of the valley was found to afford the best quality of grazing lands; and thousands of tons of very good hay were annually cut upon the prairies and wild meadows. Whenever the foreign and domestic grasses were introduced on such lands the crops were uniformly satisfactory. The constant demands of the lumbering districts, the wants of an increasing population engaged in mechanical, manufacturing and mercantile business, and ultimately the demand for shipment to the Lake Superior region, all tended to keep the Saginaw market active and to increase the demand.

### The Marshes Early Attract Buyers

Persons who have only seen the Saginaw River in its present condition or when the lumber and salt industries were at their height, with its banks confined by docks and booms, can form no idea of the beautiful scenery along its course. The river banks on either side were well defined, except at the mouth of creeks and bayous, and the prairie was covered with blue-joint grass free from any other vegetation, except near the banks of the river where it was interspersed with morning glories, wild roses and other wild flowers, presenting the appearance of a beautiful flower garden. The ground was firm and solid so that a person could ride on horseback or drive over it in any direction; and parties who visited it in the Summer of 1835 were captivated by the beauties of the surroundings.

In June of that year Daniel H. Fitzhugh made his first visit to the valley and rode over the prairies where the bluejoint grass was as high as the pony's back, with nothing in view except the distant timber and the flower-decked banks of the river. He was so pleased with the prospect that he purchased a large tract of prairie land below Zilwaukee, where the New York Works were afterward located. Another traveller who came West that Summer with a view of investing in government lands was Albert H. Dorr, a wealthy broker of New York City.

### Wintering Stock on the Rushes

Mr. Dorr was delighted with the country, and the sight of so much nutritious grass suggested at once the idea of stock raising. Among the lands he selected for purchase was a tract of eight hundred acres of prairie located on the east side of the river at the south end of Crow Island, which he proposed to develop into a stock farm. He accordingly advanced one hundred and fifty dollars to parties at Saginaw City with which to pay for cutting and stacking one hundred tons of hay on his land, and employed a man named John Hall to go with him to Ohio and assist in gathering a stock of cattle and horses for his farm, which he purchased from the government upon his arrival at Detroit. But so little faith had the people of Saginaw City that Dorr would carry out his plans, that the parties who were to have cut the hay paid no attention to the matter, so that when he returned late in November with one hundred and fifty head of horned cattle and fifty horses, there was nothing provided for their wintering. There were but few people then in the village and no surplus fodder in store, and the owner of the stock knew not what to do.

After a few days' deliberation he went to Albert Miller, who then lived opposite Green Point, to see if he could help him out of his trouble. It was on Thanksgiving day. He offered to turn over the land and stock for a period of ten years, and to write a lease for the same that would satisfy Miller, which was done, one provision of it being that the latter should only be responsible for the stock that should be alive on the first day of the following May. He then gave Miller three hundred dollars with which to do the best he could towards wintering the animals, and started at once on his return to New York.

Mr. Miller then purchased all the hay and grain there was for sale in the valley, with which to feed the stock until he could make other provision for their sustenance. He had heard of great quantities of rushes growing in the vicinity of the bay, upon which stock could be wintered, so he hired an Indian to guide him, and, after several days' search, found on the east side of Quanicasse River, a quantity of rushes that he considered an ample supply for all the stock for the winter. Feeding the animals on the hay and grain until the ice was strong enough to bear them, he started with two loads of hay with which to feed them on the way, and drove the first day to a point just above where Portsmouth was afterwards located. There he found some hay that had been put up by Joseph and Medore Tromble, a part of which he fed to the cattle, and in the morning continued to the mouth of the river, where the hay brought from Saginaw was fed to them. The third day, just before night set in, the cattle were driven into the rushes and they had such a feast as they never had before. The growth of rushes, which were of the jointed variety, commenced in the timber near the prairie and extended over a large tract of land, and was about three feet high.

After getting the stock located on their feeding ground the men built a rough shanty of logs for shelter while attending the stock; and two men were left in charge with orders to be among the cattle and horses every day to prevent their straying away. Mr. Miller visited the camp once a week to



HARVESTING GRAIN ON LOW LANDS

carry camp supplies for the men and salt for the cattle. His route was along the whole length of Saginaw River, then across the head of the bay to the mouth of the Quanicasse, and up that river two or three miles to a point where the shanty stood.

The land he had leased down the river had no buildings on it, and after the ice became strong enough to bear the weight he placed a strong ox sled under each corner of his frame house at Green Point, and, hitching eight oxen to the sleds, hauled the house onto the ice and proceeded with it to the farm at Crow Island. The furniture remained undisturbed in the house, with fire burning in the stove and provisions being cooked upon it. The settlers at Saginaw City, having no intimation of his plans, were greatly surprised at seeing a house on runners passing down the river. Upon getting his house firmly set on land, he got out a large quantity of rail timber preparatory to farming on a large scale the next season. He then selected a nearer route by which he could pass to and from the cattle tenders' camp, which was ten miles by prairie and four miles through heavy timber. He was highly pleased with the condition of the stock; it was thriving nicely, and the coats of the animals were as smooth as those of stall-fed cattle.

After the frost was out of the ground he commenced plowing and caused the stock to be driven home for inventory. A hundred or more head had gathered when the river began to rise and overflow the prairie, so that there was scarcely an acre of dry land remaining for them to stand on. It was necessary to remove them to higher ground, which was done by swimming them across half a mile of deep water, and was safely accomplished by Miller mounted on a horse followed by his men in canoes driving the animals after him. The water rose so that on the first of May, when the lease should commence, there was not a foot of dry land on the eight hundred

acre farm. Mr. Miller then informed the owner of the situation, and asked to be permitted to give up the lease, which was granted and the stock was turned over to Gardner D. Williams to be disposed of. Some of the cattle were good beef and so used during the Summer of 1836, while others were driven to Detroit for beef or scattered over Saginaw and adjoining counties.

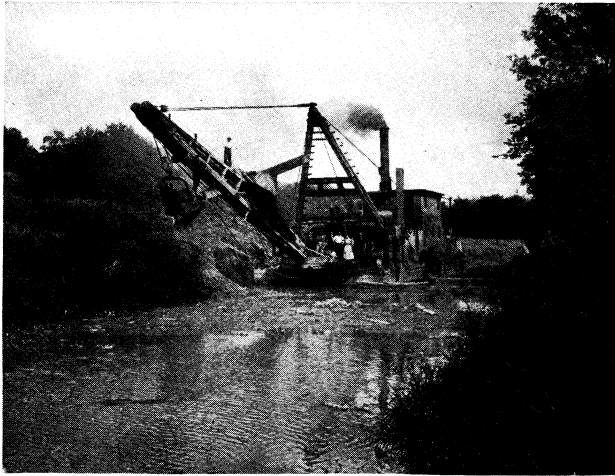
### Reclaiming Marsh Lands

Although it was well known to Saginaw settlers and farmers that the soil of the prairie marshes was of exceeding fertility, and would undoubtedly produce wonderful crops, nothing was done to reclaim them. The Spring freshets which overflowed the marshes to a depth of ten to fifteen feet, leaving quantities of mud and refuse on the land, were the great obstacle to improvements. There was still a great acreage of wild government lands on higher ground subject to drainage, offered at a low price, and there was no incentive to experiment with the muck lands which lay only two or three feet above the level of the lake. Northeasters from Georgian Bay often piled the sluggish river waters back upon it, a dingy scum on the trunks of trees revealing where the floods had risen head high. It was evidently not a proposition to be undertaken by the individual farmer, as only by extensive work on a large scale was there hope that reclamation of the marshes could be brought to a successful issue. Time and development of our farming lands were required to make a project of this nature seem feasible to capitalists, and until that point was reached little could be expected of any plans for reclamation.

It was late in the eighteen-eighties that the first efforts were made to reclaim muck lands of Saginaw County. Harlan P. Smith, a prominent dealer in choice farming lands, had delved into the subject very thoroughly and acquired title to considerable acreage about seventeen miles south of the city. He should be regarded as the pioneer in the improvement of our prairie marshes. Associated with him were Charles H. Camp and George B. Brooks, who composed a well known law firm in East Saginaw, and together, under the firm name Camp, Brooks & Smith, added to the holdings already acquired until they owned about ten thousand acres. This large acreage in one parcel was situated in Albee and St. Charles Townships, south and east of the Flint and Shiawassee Rivers.

These representative citizens of Saginaw then proceeded to cut a large ditch from the northern part of their prairie land to the Flint River, a distance of about two miles, enclosing three or four hundred acres, and plowed and prepared the ground for seeding. The results of their practical efforts at farming on this scale were fairly successful, but the difficulties were many and the expense great, and there was more or less trouble in keeping the workmen on the farm in such an out of the way place.

After improving and operating several hundred acres of the prairie land originally acquired, which had cost them from four to ten dollars an acre, for several years, and proved the practicability of the scheme, the owners sold all their holdings to the Saginaw Realty Company, composed of Harry T. and William J. Wickes, Albert M. Marshall, Samuel G. Higgins and others. This company, having ample financial means backed by the enterprise of its members, proceeded to extend and develop the extensive acreage, and to equip the farm with modern appliances and tools, thus placing the operations on a more economic basis. During the annual floods the land was largely overflowed, which often delayed or prevented the Spring work, entailing heavy loss, and it became apparent that much diking was necessary to prevent this handicap to the operations. The farming operations at this stage of the development of the Prairie Farm, and for some years after, were in charge of Emmet T. Bowen, a well known young business man of this city.



**DREDGE BUILDING DIKES AT PRAIRIE FARM**

### **Development of the Prairie Farm**

In 1903 certain Pittsburg capitalists, who owned a controlling interest in the Owosso Sugar Company, attracted by tales of the natural fertility of the muck lands in Saginaw County, investigated the soil and climate conditions, and purchased from the Saginaw Realty Company their entire holdings of marsh lands, amounting to more than ten thousand acres. They at once laid their plans on a large scale for the reclamation of the waste lands, and began to heap up banks of earth, in the form of dikes, to hold back the flood waters in the submersible basin near where Swan Creek and Bad River join the Shiawassee.

This is the bottom of the vast Saginaw drainage system, and is the worst and the best country hereabouts. It is the worst because several square miles of it lie only a little more than three feet above the level of Saginaw Bay, and the best is that from the beginning of time it has been the settling basin for rich alluvium brought down by rivers, from heights of four hundred to eight hundred feet, which flow nearly one hundred miles through fertile areas.

This pioneer effort in reclaiming the Saginaw marshes was a costly one. The land had to be won from the waters foot by foot, but each acre of land made dry proved so productive that the promoters were lured on, and eventually arrived at the conclusion that the value of the land far exceeded the cost of controlling the flood waters. The diking was done by big dredges starting at the rivers and nosing their way into the land, scooping up the muck to form "borrow ditches," and depositing it along the outside edge of the area to be drained. As the dredges advanced the water flowed in, carrying them along in the channels which afterward were useful in draining off the water from the land. At the lowest point of the area the dike was made twenty feet high, and at other places the average height was seventeen to eighteen feet, while the ditches were about twelve feet deep, with a gradient of three inches to the mile to carry off the waste waters.

When the entire tract was enclosed, and lateral and cross ditches dug and dikes thrown up, the total length of dike was thirty-six miles. Along the top of these dikes good roads were laid out and gradually improved to afford easy communication with all parts of the big farm. The main roads are surfaced with stone and oiled to render solid and enduring highways. At

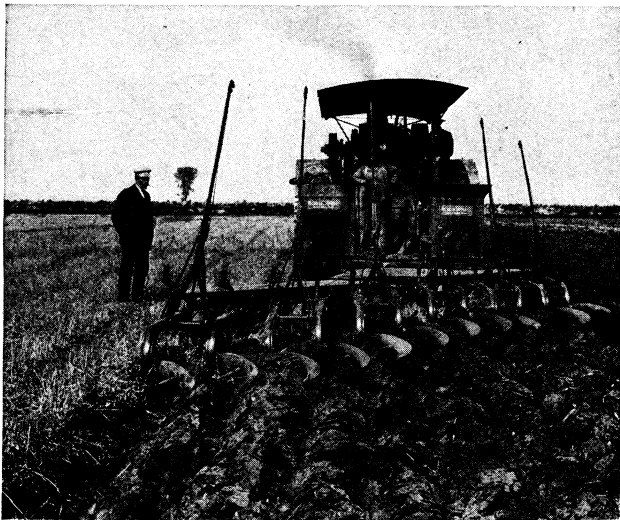


the lowest point of the farm, near its northwest corner, where the ditch assumes the size of a canal navigable to scows and motor boats, a pump house was erected. Installed in this building are four centrifugal pumps, which in times of high water lift the excess water from the canal and discharge it into the river beyond. In flood times these pumps work night and day, and relieve the farm ditches of one hundred and sixty thousand gallons of water an hour. The dikes hold back the flood waters, the canal and ditches drain off the surplus rainfall on the enclosed lands, and the pumps discharge the excess water into the swift current of the river, thus rendering the soil fit for cultivation.

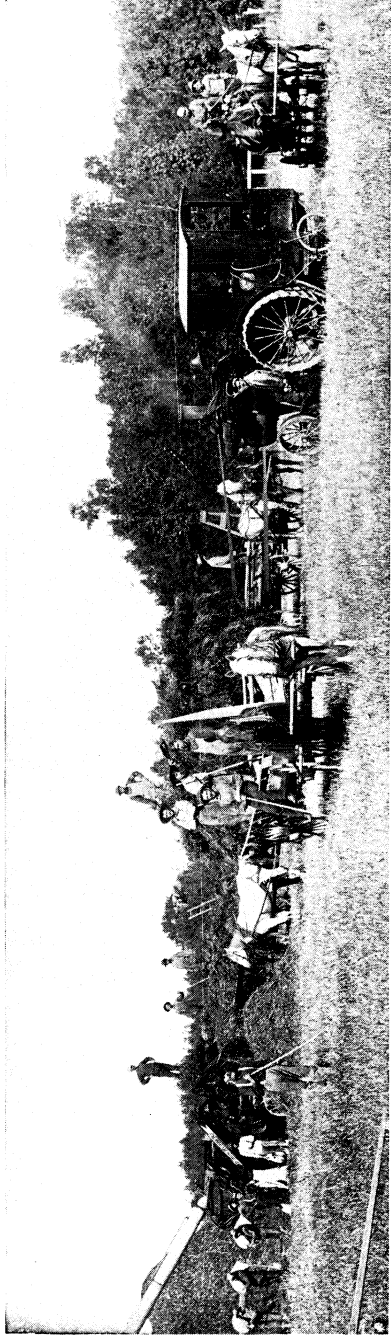
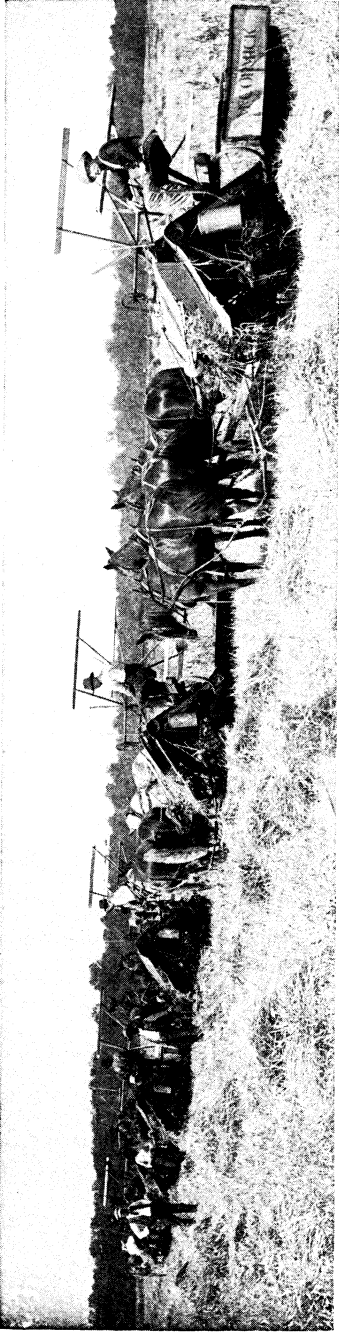
#### **“Mosquito Road” Leads to Farm**

There are two ways of getting to the Prairie Farm from Saginaw. In the dry season one can go direct from the city by way of East Street and turning to the right about nine miles from the city limits, drive straight into the farm settlement four miles beyond. The other route is by railroad to St. Charles, and a drive of nine and a half miles over the “Mosquito Road” through swamps to right and left. Once on this road there are few chances of getting off, as wide, deep ditches line it all the way. There are surprises en route, as the road goes gently downward into the heart of the swamp, grass and timber land. Every mile or so billows of land roll up out of the welter of mud, and along these ridges appear prosperous farms, with good houses, big barns, and here and there a silo indicating that dairy farming and cattle raising are rural industries being developed.

As the visitor emerges from a wood patch, near the farm entrance at the southwest corner of the farm, cultivated fields of vast extent burst into view. He turns north on the hard, oiled road which traverses the crest of a low dike bisecting the farm. A mile ahead is Alicia village, the largest settlement for miles around. Here are four score yellow framed cottages, housing workmen’s families, a large clubhouse, a general store and an assembly hall. Across the road are several large barns, cattle sheds, wagon, machinery and tool houses, and a large grain elevator. This structure and the mint distillery a little further on are situated on the spur track which connects the farm with the Grand Trunk Railroad, six miles eastward. During the rush of Summer work from three hundred to three hundred and fifty farmers and



**GANG PLOWING BY TRACTOR ON THE PRAIRIE FARM**



UPPER SCENE—HARVESTING GRAIN ON LARGE SCALE AT PRAIRIE FARM  
LOWER SCENE—THRASHING WHEAT ON FARM IN FRANKENTHUTH TOWNSHIP

laborers are employed on the farm, and in Winter about seventy-five men are kept busy attending to the stock, repairing wagons and harness, overhauling machinery, and getting all equipment in readiness for the Spring and Summer campaigns.

Driving by automobile along the central dike northward to the center of the farm, thence westerly about two miles brings the visitor to the lowest point of land, to which all the water in the ditches flows and where it is pumped out. Looking back from the top of the dike one has a clear view of the beet and mint fields. Beets and peppermint, with corn and rye, are the principal crops and are grown in great quantities on extended acreage. In all there are six thousand acres under cultivation, and in the Spring of 1917 another thousand acres went under the plow. All the plowing is done by gang plows drawn by steam and motor tractors, twelve plows to the gang; and much other heavy work previously done by horses now falls to mechanical power. The Prairie Farm is said to be the largest farm under cultivation east of the Mississippi.

### **A Bit of Holland in Michigan**

At times when all this section of the county is under water, when the Prairie Farm reposes within its earthen walls like a beleaguered country, it reminds one very strongly of a section of Holland set down here in Michigan. Then the flood waters often rise to a height of seventeen feet on the outside of the earth dikes, and there are watchful days and nights for the male population. The dikes have to be constantly patrolled and threatened leaks and breaks repaired immediately. There are native foes, too, to the dike, the muskrat and the woodchuck. The latter is the one dreaded as he burrows deep enough to cause much damage, and men are employed to hunt them out.

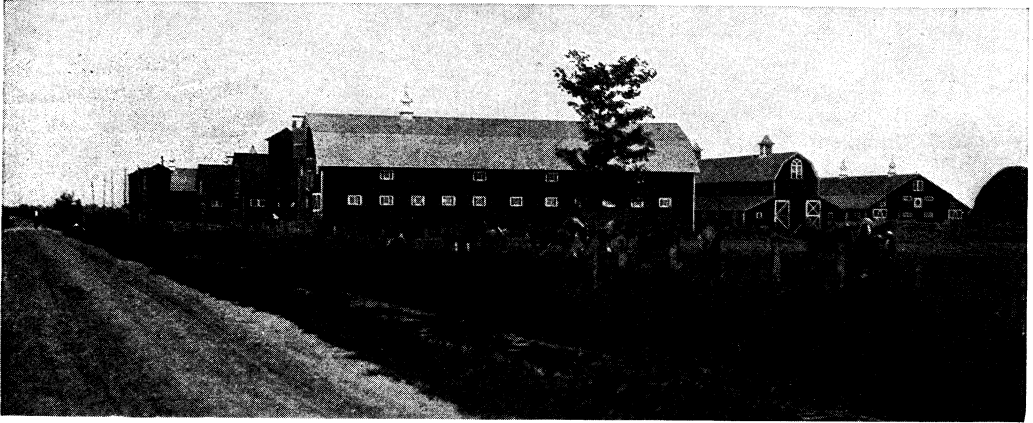
Here and there in the dark brown field, gray patches are noticed. These are the clay subsoil touched now and then by the motor driven plows and being worked up into the lighter surface soil—much to its betterment, it is claimed. Only a little under the muck soil is a clay bed as dry as bone dust. There are driven wells as also tiled wells, and here and there excellent drinking water is found at a depth of about thirty feet.

The inhabitants of the farm lead an isolated and monotonous life, especially in flood time when communication with the world is almost entirely cut off. Exit by boats in the swirling currents is difficult and dangerous. Still the living conditions are steadily improving, and the farm dwellers have the conveniences of electric light and running water in their homes, supplied free by the farm's own generating and water plant, and also the use of telephones. There is also regular postal service to Alicia.

### **Raising Blooded Stock**

A leading feature of the Prairie Farm is stock raising. In all the varied work of planting, growing and harvesting the extensive crops, about three hundred head of heavy draft horses are required; and in Summer about seventy-five teams, some of which are three-horse teams, are in constant use.

In 1913 the Owosso Sugar Company, owners of the Prairie Farm, imported twenty Belgian brood mares and one stallion for the purpose of establishing breeding stables. Their manager went to Belgium and selected mares of the best blood that country produced. He succeeded in purchasing direct offspring of the champion sires and mares of Belgium. They have mares out of Reve de Or, who was champion over all breeds of Draft Horses at the Paris Exposition in 1900. One is a granddaughter of Indigene du Fosteau, the champion stallion of Belgium from 1906 to and including 1909. This champion stallion was awarded with first prizes for his colt get in 1908 to 1913, inclusive, at the national Horse Show at Brussels. Among these mares are such as daughters of Brin D'Or, Ideal du Fosteau and Soleil Lavant.



HOME OF THE ROYAL BRED BELGIAN DRAFT HORSES WHERE THE BEST IN AMERICA ARE RAISED

Their two stallions, now at the head of their stables, are two of the best bred stallions in the United States. Sans Peur de Hamal, No. 3446, twelve years old, is a grandson of Manage who was once owned by the Belgian government, and later resold to his original owner for an enormous sum. He has shown himself to be an excellent colt getter, and has produced out of grade mares, colts that at two years old weighed fifteen hundred pounds.

Sans Peur de Hamal was champion at the Michigan State Fair, Detroit, in 1915 and 1916, and grand champion over all breeds in 1916, and champion in 1917 at the State Fair.

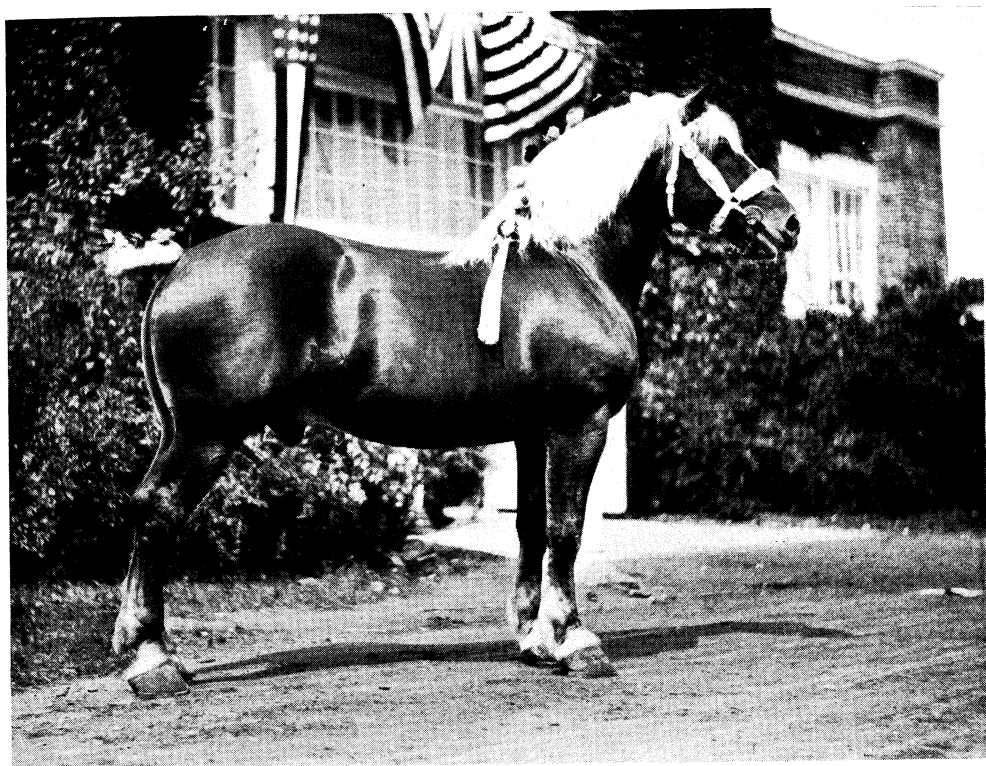
Rubis, No. 4008, a six-year-old stallion, imported by the Prairie Farm in 1913, is a grandson of Rubens. Many noted breeders in Belgium regretted that Rubens should go out of the country. He was purchased by General Botha for the South African Government. Rubis is a real type of Belgian Draft Horse. He was awarded a silver medal by the King of Belgium in 1913, when he showed with two hundred and thirty others in the two-year-old class at the National Horse Show at Brussels.

The mares raised on the Prairie Farm are selected for breeding purposes. They are workers and earn their living in the harness and by raising colts. There has been accomplished what many breeders thought could not be done. The farm has raised just as good young stock as Belgium ever produced, some two-year-olds weighing seventeen hundred pounds and three-year-olds over eighteen hundred. Michigan and Saginaw County have equalled Belgium in this regard.

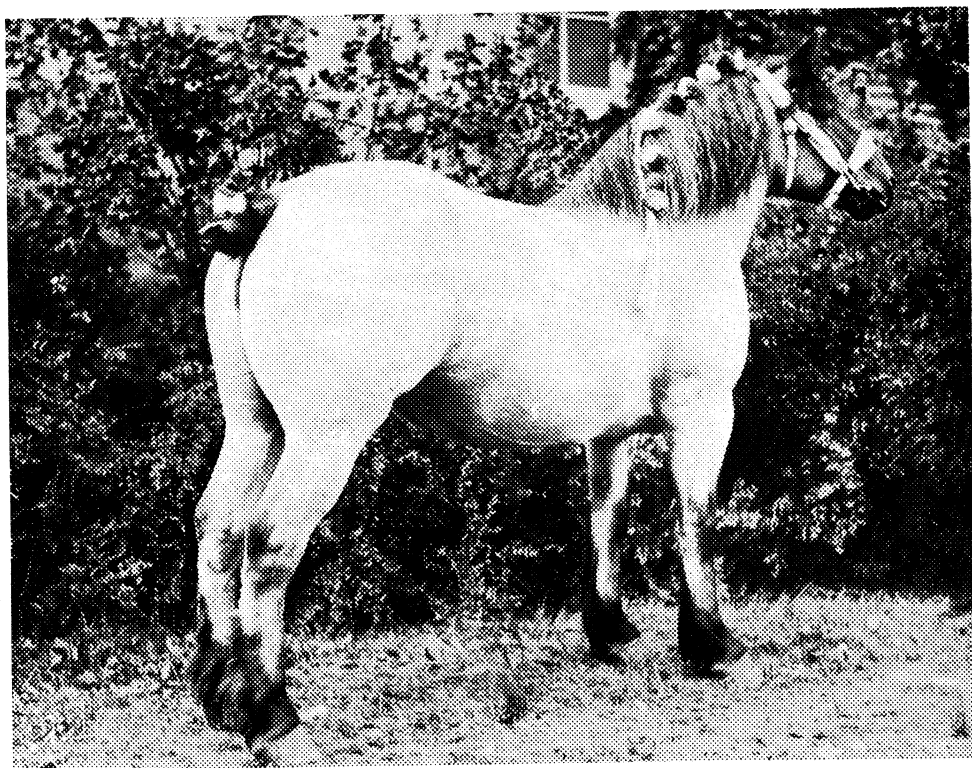
Besides this stock of heavy draft horses there are large numbers of pure bred Friesian, Holstein and Hereford cattle, improved Duroc Jersey swine, and registered Delaine Merino Black Top sheep. The Prairie Farm is also an extensive grower of pedigreed seeds.

Jacob DeGeus, an experienced stockman and farming expert, is manager of this great farm enterprise.

In a graphic way the Prairie Farm illustrates how capital and enterprise, coupled with genius and application of business principles, will redeem waste lands and make them richly productive. In this instance lands worth scarcely more than four or five dollars an acre twenty of thirty years ago, have been made to yield such extensive crops that their value has increased to eighty or ninety dollars an acre. And when it is considered that there are



**SANS PEUR de HAMAL, No. 3446, OWNED BY OWOSSO SUGAR CO., ALICIA, MICHIGAN**



**A GRANDDAUGHTER OF INDIGENE du FOSTEAU AND A TRUE PRODUCTION**

still one hundred thousand acres of wild prairie lands in Saginaw Valley still untouched, and only waiting action of the government for the control of flood waters, the imagination must be drawn upon to form an idea of what the future development of this rich land means to the people of Saginaw.

#### United States Land Office

The United States Land Office for the sale of public lands, known as the "Genesee Office," which was originally located at Flint, was removed to East Saginaw, April 1, 1857. The Office of register was held by Moses B. Hess, and that of receiver by Colonel W. L. P. Little, who remained in charge until the inauguration of President Lincoln. John F. Driggs then became register, and C. K. Robinson receiver, their commissions bearing date of April 1, 1861. Mr. Driggs was elected to Congress in the following year and retired from the land office early in 1863, his place being filled by H. C. Driggs. In 1866 Andrew Johnson appointed M. W. Quackenbush as receiver, and Isaac Worden as register, who held office until the end of the Johnson administration. Thomas Saylor was then made receiver and Henry C. Ripley register of the land office, and they held office for four years. On May 10, 1871, Robert L. Warren assumed the office of receiver and W. R. Bates that of register; and in October, 1872, Major Albert A. Day succeeded Mr. Warren as receiver. At that time government lands sold at one dollar and twenty-five cents to two dollars and fifty cents per acre, according to location relative to railway lines.

#### Saginaw Valley Agricultural Society

For the purpose of promoting the improvement of agriculture and of stimulating the growing of live stock, a number of leading residents of this county organized on March 20, 1866, the Saginaw County Agricultural Society. The first executive committee of the society was composed of Barney H. York, president; George F. Lewis, secretary, and Thomas L. Jackson, treasurer. The vice-presidents were George F. Veenfiet, William J. Bartow, William M. Smith and William McBratnie, and the other directors were John Wiltse, John G. Hubinger, Andrew Goetz, Wellington R. Burt, Andrew Crofoot, N. S. Beach and Robert Ure.

The first fair of the society was held in East Saginaw, October 3 to 5, the commissioners for arrangement of all animals and articles for exhibition being: William M. Smith, cattle; William J. Bartow, horses; George F. Veenfiet, butter, cheese, vegetables and seeds; William McBratnie, farm implements and miscellaneous; and Robert Ure, flowers, drawings, paintings and ornamental work. There was a generous premium list and competent judges to make awards. The attendance was large considering that the population of the county was only about one-fourth what it is at present. The fair grounds were situated on the east side of South Jefferson Avenue between Sidney (Rust) and Webber Streets, and boasted of a fine half mile track. In the following years many famous racing horses speeded on this track, Jay-Eye-See making a world's trotting record.

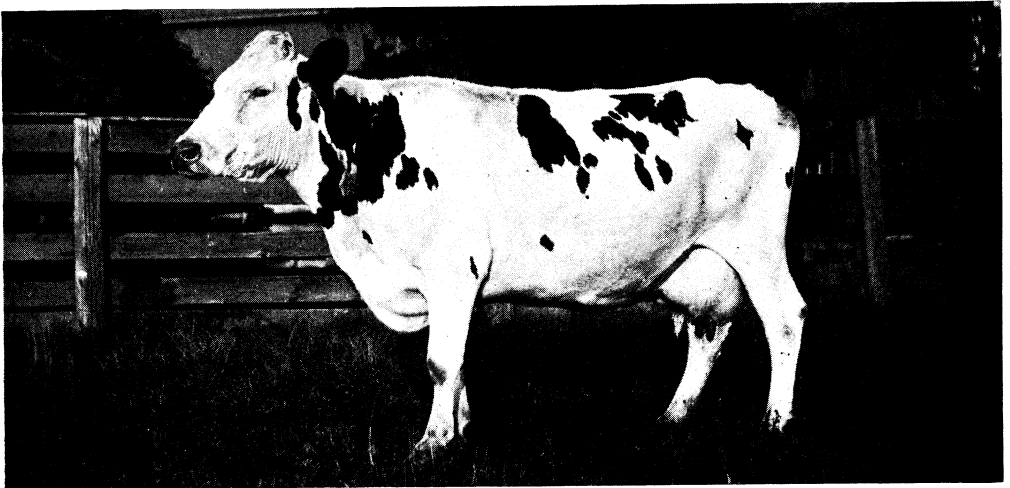
After a successful career of almost thirty years the society disbanded, its last fair being held at Union Park on the West Side, which had been laid out and maintained by Isaac Bearinger. The park itself with its fine track was abandoned in the Fall of 1905, and the following year was subdivided into city lots.

Nothing was done to revive the agricultural society until 1912, when the Saginaw County School and Farm Bureau Association was organized, and gave interesting educational exhibits at Riverside Park in the Fall of that year, and in 1913. The officers of the association were: Frank J. Newman,

Birch Run, president; Valentine Katzenberger, Bridgeport, vice-president; L. S. Foote, Saginaw, secretary; Henry Coats, Hemlock, treasurer; Burton S. Tefft, Saginaw, fair manager.

From this beginning the Saginaw County Agricultural Society was re-organized and placed on a sound working basis. The society held successful fairs and stocks exhibits with racing at the driving park laid out and improved by Harry Bates about thirty years ago, in 1914 and subsequent years; and in 1917 erected two permanent buildings for exhibition purposes. The plans of the society provide for the erection of other buildings especially adapted to the needs of the fair.

The present officers of the society are John Popp, president; William J. Morgan and Jacob B. Hoffman, vice-presidents; Frank F. Kleinfeld, secretary; Christian F. Gugel, treasurer. The directors are the officers and Jacob DeGeus, William F. Jahnke, John Leidlein, Langley S. Foote, Charles B. McClure, John C. Rauchholz, Thomas B. McDonagh, Val Katzenberger, Cameron C. Speer and Fred Wiltse.



MACONVALE CANARY, No. 153,622  
The Saginaw Valley Stock Farm, Owner

### Central Agricultural Society

Believing that the west tiers of townships should have an agricultural society of their own, some business men of Saginaw City and prominent farmers organized the Saginaw Central Agricultural Society in May, 1873. The officers of the society were: Dr. I. N. Smith, president; William McBratnie, secretary; George R. Stark, treasurer. The vice-presidents were: Willard Shattuck, John A. Leinberger, Martin Stocker, John McMillan, Thomas P. Hines, Frank Ackley, Samuel Harder, Theodore Bundage, N. S. Lockwood, S. B. Williams, James Graham, John Wright, William Roeser, Colin McBratnie, George Ward, S. C. Goodale, Eleazer J. Ring, Norman L. Miller, Peter C. Andre and Thomas Shimmons. These officers and Thomas L. Jackson, Moses Harris, Jacob H. Lewis, Jay Smith, Nelson Abel, David Geddes and William A. Crane, composed the board of directors. The first fair of the society was held September 15-17, 1873, at the well appointed fair grounds on Court Street. This society maintained a fairly successful existence for about fifteen years, but at length disbanded and its grounds reverted to the uses of agriculture.

### Saginaw County Farmers' Organizations

The officers of the Saginaw County Farm Bureau are: Jacob B. Hoffman, Oakley, president; E. G. Rust, Merrill, vice-president; Langley S. Foote, Saginaw, secretary and treasurer; Earl P. Robinson, Saginaw, county agricultural agent.

The officers of the Saginaw County School and Farm Bureau Fair Association are: F. J. Newman, Birch Run, president; Val Katzenberger, Saginaw, vice-president; Langley S. Foote, Saginaw, secretary; Henry Coats, Hemlock, treasurer. The Fair Managers are Burton S. Tefft, county commissioner of schools, and Earl P. Robinson, county agricultural agent.

The Saginaw County Bean Growers Association has for its officers Fred Wiltse, Saginaw, president; Charles W. Sutliff, Oakley, vice-president; Alex. Pullar, Saginaw, secretary; Richard Frahm, Frankenmuth, treasurer.

The Saginaw Valley Holstein-Fresian Breeders' Association is conducted by William J. Morgan, Saginaw, president; Thomas Phoenix, Saginaw, vice-president; Al. C. Schoenheit, Saginaw, secretary and treasurer.

Saginaw County Order of Michigan Experiment Association has for its officers George Emerick, Saginaw, president; Alex. Pullar, Saginaw, vice-president; Fred Cornair, Chesaning, secretary and treasurer. The directors are: William J. Kirchner, Freeland; Henry Coats, Hemlock; John J. Veitengruber, Frankenmuth; Hy. Deibel, Saginaw; and Charles Cook, Birch Run.

The officers of the Farmers' Mutual Insurance Company are: August C. Fitting, Hemlock, president; F. C. Moll, Saginaw; vice-president; Frank A. Short, Hemlock, secretary and treasurer.

The Saginaw County Cow-Testing Association is controlled by Frank Plumb, Saginaw, president; William B. Hackett, Saginaw, vice-president; Traugott Trinklein, Vassar, secretary and treasurer.

Saginaw County (Pomona) Grange, No. 57, is officered by George Emerick, Saginaw, master; Otto Bowser, Birch Run, secretary; Henry Coats, Hemlock, treasurer; Mrs. Alex. Pullar, Saginaw, lecturer; Henry Deibel, Saginaw, overseer; Mrs. Otto Bowser, Birch Run, chaplain.

The officers of the Saginaw Valley Holstein-Fresian Breeders' Sales Association are: Thomas Phoenix, Saginaw, president; Frank Robbins, Munger, vice-president; Al. C. Schoenheit, Saginaw, secretary and treasurer. The executive committee is composed of Jacob DeGeus, Alicia; George M. Maurer, Frankenmuth; W. A. Wilder, Bay City; William J. Morgan, Saginaw; John F. O'Keefe, Saginaw; William Roenicke, Saginaw; D. D. Aitken, Flint.

The officers of the Saginaw County Horse Show Association are: George H. Sutherland, Saginaw, president; Robert Russell, Saginaw, vice-president; N. N. Wright, Saginaw, secretary and treasurer.

The Saginaw County Farmers' Institute is officered by Fred Cornair, Chesaning, president; and J. D. Proper, Chesaning, secretary and treasurer.

The Saginaw Poultry Club has for its officers: J. C. Hohn, Saginaw, president; Robert Booth, Saginaw, vice-president; Ed. Ohland, Saginaw, secretary and treasurer; and Al. Huebner, Saginaw, assistant secretary.

The Saginaw County Milk Producers' Association is conducted by Charles Hodges, Saginaw, president; Thomas Phoenix, Saginaw, vice-president; Langley S. Foote, Saginaw, secretary; Fred Rohloff, Saginaw, treasurer.



## CHAPTER XXIII

# TRANSPORTATION

---

Rough Forest Trails—Experiences in Early Road Making—Difficulties of Travel—First Plank Road—Early River Navigation—First Vessels on Saginaw River—Coming of First Steamboat—Building First Steamboat—Shipbuiding—Rise and Decline of River Commerce—River and Shore Lines—Rapid Decline—Early Railroad Projects—Building the F. & P. M. Railroad—Why Saginaw City Was Cut Off—Opening Excursion—Land Grants and Earnings—Mutuality of Interests—Steamship Line—Jackson, Lansing & Saginaw—Saginaw Valley & St. Louis Railroad—Saginaw, Tuscola & Huron—Port Huron & North Western—Cincinnati, Saginaw & Mackinaw Railroad—Interurban Electric Traction—Street Railways—Beginning of Rapid Transit—Good Roads Movement—Cost of Road Improvement—Value of State Awards.

**W**HILE the Saginaw Valley is well provided with facilities for transportation, by railroad, highway and river, within the memory of old pioneers this situation did not exist. Less than a hundred years ago, when the whole region of Michigan was a vast wilderness, the only means of communication with the frontier settlements were by lake and river, or by Indian trails through the dense forests overrun with wild beasts. Navigation of the lake in the small and frail craft of the early days was fraught with peril and hardship, and was not a popular means of travel. The more customary route was by the old Indian trail by way of Pontiac, Grand Blanc and the traverse of the Flint, to the remote outpost on the Saginaw River. But improvement of the existing trails, like everything else, at length had a beginning, and was attended by much difficulty and danger.

The first labor in making a road to the Saginaw Valley was performed in 1822-3 by United States soldiers who were then stationed at Fort Saginaw. It became necessary to get supplies through from Detroit, and a road was cut through the woods following the old Indian trail and crossing the Flint River at the point where the city of Flint is situated; and John Hamilton, Harvey Williams and Ephraim S. Williams hauled supplies to Saginaw for the soldiers. So difficult was travel in those days that on one occasion, it is related, the garrison was reduced to half-rations and very little provision left when fresh supplies were finally brought in to the fort. The primitive road was used for travel on horseback and by sleighs in winter, to and including 1831. Many trees had fallen across the trail, the small streams were difficult to cross, and the winter travel to Saginaw Bay, to procure fish caught by the Indians, had increased to such an extent that it was necessary to improve the road. In the Fall of 1831 a fund of one hundred dollars was raised by subscription, to be expended upon the road between the Flint and Cass Rivers.

### Experiences in Early Road Making

About November 15, 1831, John Todd and Phineas Thompson started from Flint with a tent and two weeks' provisions on their backs, and passed over the trail a few miles where they were to begin work, when they pitched their tents for two days' labor, working one day on each side of the trail. Their experiences were graphically related by Todd many years after, and published in the Michigan Pioneer Collections, Vol. VII, pp. 252-3, as follows:

"After spending the day at labor on the road we had no lack of music to beguile the tedious hours of night. Soon after dark, wolves would gather around so near that we could hear every note of their fierce howls; and we had

to *cache* our provisions above their reach. At one place, when retiring for the night, I left my leather mittens outside the tent, and that night a larger pack of wolves than usual gathered around the tent and varied their savage growls with snapping their teeth together as if they meant to devour us. In the morning we found a large space trampled about the camp where the wolves had fought over the mittens, the strongest one probably securing the prize for his supper. It was not pleasant to spend nights so near a pack of hungry wolves with nothing but a frail tent between them and you.

"On arriving at Cass River our job was completed, but we had no means of crossing. So we felled an ash tree, cut it into as large pieces as we could handle, and made a raft which would bear the weight of two men by sinking in the water nearly to our knees. Two first passed over, when by placing the raft in the current it soon floated back so near the other bank that the third party caught it and got safely over.



SAGINAW THE SHIPPING CENTER OF THE GREAT LAKES REGION

"We all started for Green Point, where my sister had taken up her residence a month before. On our arrival at the river we called for some one to put us across. There was no one about the place but my sister, and she was not accustomed to handle a canoe; but hearing my voice she ventured out and, with the directions we gave her, landed safely. We all got aboard and crossed to Eleazer Jewett's house, where we were very glad to find shelter after two weeks' camping in the wilderness.

"That was my first visit to Saginaw. I was delighted with the broad, deep river, with the beautiful prairie beyond Green Point, and the fine timbered land on the opposite side; and I afterward purchased from the government the land upon which I stood when I first saw the Saginaw River.

"After spending a few days at Green Point and Saginaw City, the weather having become cold, we started on our return trip. We made a raft at Cass River, upon which we crossed, and pushed on hoping to reach Pine Run before dark. But night set in with a snow storm before we reached there, and we had great difficulty in kindling a fire, everything being wet with snow and

having nothing but a flint and steel to start a fire with. We finally succeeded in making a blaze, but were so tired with the days' travel that we did not pitch our tent, but spread it over us. It was covered with four inches of snow in the morning, when we completed our journey to Flint.

#### Difficulties of Travel

Of the condition of the main trail and the difficulties of travel in pioneer days, Albert Miller, the first white settler on the east side of the river, relates: Michigan Pioneer Collections, Vol. XVIII., pp. 27.

"On November 23, 1836, I started from Detroit on horseback to go to Portsmouth, to which place I had dispatched a vessel loaded with four thousand dollars' worth of goods and machinery for a saw mill. It had been very wet and the roads were intollerably muddy, but it turned cold and when they froze up they were so rough as to be almost impassable.

"I got along very slowly but arrived at last at Flint River on my pony. A friend said, 'You may as well leave your pony here as leave him in the woods, for it is not possible for a horse to go through to Saginaw.' On consideration I concluded that it was so. The whole country was covered with water, and the ice was not frozen hard enough to bear a horse, but was just thick enough for him to break through and cut his legs. I was worn out and did not feel that I could walk to Saginaw, but I was at home in a canoe, so I purchased one and started down the river. I got along about thirty miles when I found the ice had blocked up the river completely. I hauled the canoe ashore, put my paddles under it, and started on foot following the river. I could see no trail and had to be guided by the river. At length I came to a bayou, and as I could not see the end of it, I waded in and broke the skim of ice with my arms as I went along, and finally got across to the other side. I passed along and that night got to a shanty where an old settler lived, and I stayed with him over night and partially dried my clothes. The next day I went on, but there was no road on either side of the river and I took a course I never had followed before. But I knew there was some way of getting around, and I crossed some creeks as best I could and finally arrived at Portsmouth nearly frozen.

"I was completely used up, and I thought if I could only get home where mother was and lie down I could be content. When I got there the little log house was crowded with men working on the saw mill, there being sixteen boarders besides my brother's family, and it didn't seem like home to me at all. I was homesick, but said nothing about it."

In 1834 the United States government undertook the improvement of the territorial road, or Saginaw turnpike as it was generally known, and the route was surveyed by Orange Risdon, who afterward published a map of this region. The road had literally been chopped out of the forest, and was graded to within eighteen miles of Saginaw when the work was abandoned. Later the improvement work was resumed and completed in 1841. It was then far from being a good road, and at some seasons was almost impassable.

Travel in those days was limited to horseback and foot, but in May, 1834, Charles A. Lull, with his father and mother, two sisters and a brother, and Phineas Spaulding, drove from Flint with an ox cart, which was the first wheeled vehicle, so far as known, to come over the old trail to Saginaw. Years after the road was little better, for Thomas W. Babcock, an old pioneer who, though in his eighty-fifth year is in the enjoyment of excellent health, relates that when he came to Saginaw in March, 1852, he walked the entire distance from St. Clair County, the roads being in such condition that travel by horse and wagon was impossible.

The old Indian trail, which was followed by the earliest settlers, came out on the east bank of the river opposite Green Point, but afterward, during

the various improvements to it, a diversion was made to meet the river opposite the foot of Mackinaw Street, at which point there was a ferry to the other side. There was no road or path on the east side of the river, and it was necessary for the early pioneers of East Saginaw, in going to Detroit, to cross over the river and bayou at the foot of Plank Road (Genesee Street), wade through the mud of the Indian trail, which followed closely the present lines of Michigan Avenue, to Saginaw City and then recross the river to the east bank where they met the Flint trail. This was a roundabout way of travel, and the necessity of first passing through Saginaw City in getting to civilization was very distasteful to the enterprising promoters and progressive settlers of East Saginaw. It was evident that if the new settlement was to grow and prosper, a direct road to Flint and the outside world would be necessary.

### The First Plank Road

In order to provide better facilities for travel and put East Saginaw on the map, Norman Little and his associates undertook the construction of a plank road all the way to Flint, a distance of about thirty-two miles. This was a large project involving an enormous expenditure of money for those times, and was considered by many as a visionary one (see Chapter IX, page 150). Some opposition was aroused to the scheme, but a charter was at length granted by the Legislature, and the work of building the road was begun. After overcoming many difficulties the road was put through by the way of Cass River and Pine Run, and was completed in 1851. It came into the settlement by Genesee Street, then known as Plank Road, and the first toll-gate was at the corner of Millard Street beyond which was an almost unbroken forest. As a result of this enterprise a post office was soon established, and a stage line brought in and carried out mail daily. Immigration was greatly stimulated by extensive advertising in the East and the settlement of East Saginaw began to show signs of activity.

As the village grew and was at length incorporated as a city, other plank roads were projected including a road built in the early fifties from Zilwaukee to a point opposite East Saginaw, by Johnson Brothers, the projectors of the village of Zilwaukee. According to Fox's History of Saginaw Valley, 1868, there were, in addition to the Saginaw and Genesee plank road, the East Saginaw and Vassar plank road, nineteen and a half miles long; the East Saginaw and Watrousville plank road, about twenty miles long, and the Saginaw and Gratiot plank road, from Saginaw City to St. Louis, with a length of thirty-six miles.

### Early River Navigation

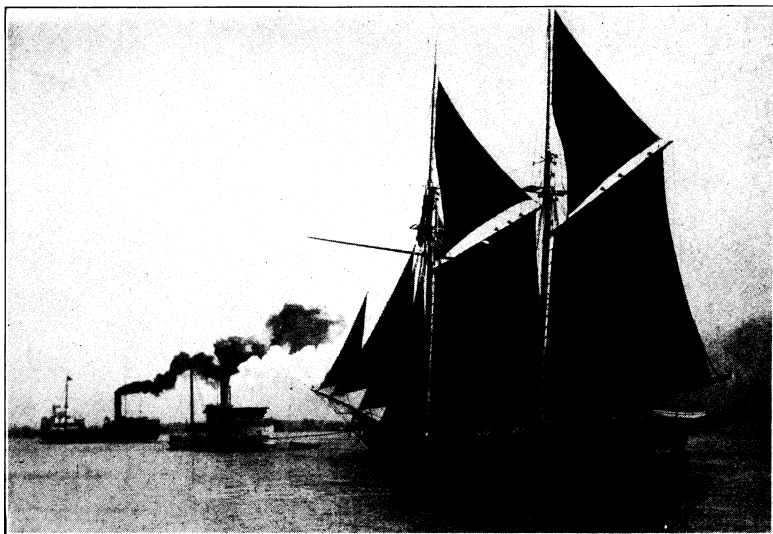
Nature has bestowed upon the Saginaw Valley an abundance of rivers, there being no less than ten dignified by that name, besides a number of small streams. The Saginaw River is one of the largest streams in Michigan. It is twenty miles long, and in its primitive state was from three hundred to eight hundred feet in width, with a depth of ten to fifteen feet. Formed by the Cass River on the East, the Flint and Shiawassee on the South, and the Tittabawassee on the Northwest, it serves as an outlet for a vast expanse of country, once covered by dense forests of pine and hard woods. The Saginaw River afforded practically the only means of transportation for heavy merchandise to and from Detroit and the East, and it was a highway of travel for the early settlers in passing to and from Saginaw Bay.

In the early days the Shiawassee and Bad Rivers were navigable for small vessels as far as St. Charles, a distance of nearly twenty miles; and the Tittabawassee River accommodated a navigation as far as Midland City, about thirty miles above Saginaw City. Public interest in up-river navigation is shown by the organization in 1837 of the Owosso and Saginaw Navigation

Company, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. Its purpose was to improve the Shiawassee River so as to make slack water navigation between Owosso and its junction with the Flint River, in order that steamboats and barges might operate on it to the former point. After expending a large sum for labor in clearing the driftwood from the river, and using it for transporting merchandise in small boats, it was found impracticable to continue this mode of transportation.

Albert Miller in his "Pioneer Sketches," published in the Michigan Pioneer Collections, Vol. VII, pages 234-5, relates an incident concerning the "first raft that ever floated on waters tributary to the Saginaw River:"

"While I was at Saginaw preparing timber for my house, Eleazer Jewett went to Detroit to settle some business in connection with the fur trade that he had been engaged in. About the time he was expected home, Thomas Simpson came through from Flint on horseback and said that Mr. Jewett was there and about to start for home by way of the river, in a canoe. After a



BARGE TOWING SCHOONER IN THE OLD LUMBERING DAYS

week had passed and no tidings of him came, we became very much alarmed at his delay, and I determined to go with some Indians and follow up the river to determine if possible Jewett's fate.

"At night we arrived at the Indian's wigwam, and I was provided with a place to spread my blanket for rest. It being late in November, the weather was cold, but there was no lack of warmth in the wigwam. It was small with a large fire in the center, and a dozen Indians, male and female, were lying around it. I slept until about two o'clock in the morning when I awoke and, seeing the moon shining brightly, and being anxious to pursue my journey, I prevailed upon a young Indian, by giving him a silver coin, to pilot me on the trail to a point on the river where the trail crossed it. We arrived about day-break and I ferried myself across the river in a canoe I found at the bank. I was following the trail, which would soon leave the bank of the river and pass inland across a bend, when I heard noises on the river near me. I raised my voice on an Indian whoop (which was a signal in all emergencies), and was answered. I soon saw Mr. Jewett and two other men floating on a raft of sawed lumber. Had I been three minutes earlier or later I would have missed seeing them. The raft was guided to the shore and I joyfully

leaped aboard, when Mr. Jewett, considering he had a full crew, dismissed the other men to return to Flint, and we two floated leisurely down the stream.

"After Mr. Simpson had left Flint, Jewett purchased a quantity of lumber from Rufus Stevens at his mill on the Thread River, and hauled it across to the Flint, where he built a raft to float as far towards Saginaw as it would run. There was no horseman or footman passing from Flint to Saginaw whereby he could send word to his family of the cause of his delay.

"Before night on the day I met Jewett, the further progress of the raft was stopped by driftwood in the river. We went to the wigwam where I spent the night before, and remained until morning, when we went home through the first snow of the season. Mr. Jewett's arrival caused great rejoicing, the alarm having increased at his long absence, and the settlers were preparing to turn out and search for him.

"I purchased a part of the lumber from Mr. Jewett, and decided to build a frame house instead of a log block-house. The lumber was taken out of the river and piled on the bank, from which point it was hauled in winter about eight miles to the place where I intended to build. This was in December, 1832, a month the weather was very mild and continued like Indian Summer until the first week in February, and on account of the mud I was unable to remove my effects from Grand Blanc to Saginaw. It was not until the thirteenth of February that we were able to start with our household goods on sleds drawn by two yokes of oxen, with our cows and hogs driven behind the loads."

#### First Vessels on Saginaw River

The first craft to sail the Saginaw River was a small sloop, named the *Savage*, of only forty tons burden, which was used by the American Fur Company, about 1831 and a few years after, for carrying furs from their posts on the river to Buffalo. In June, 1832, a vessel of fifty tons burden came into the river, and after discharging a cargo of supplies for the fur company, sailed up the Tittabawassee to Duncan McLellan's farm and took on a load of potatoes. This was the first cargo of farm produce shipped from the Saginaw Valley. Five years later Captain George Raby sailed into Saginaw River as master of the schooner *North America*. Captain J. D. Smith commanded the *Richmond*, formerly the *Conneaut Packet*, which was wrecked on the Canadian shore of Lake Huron. There was also a small schooner named the *Mary*, Captain Wilson, which sailed between Detroit and Saginaw, but in the Fall of 1836 was wrecked proving a total loss.

#### Building of the "Julia Smith"

Nelson Smith, a brother-in-law of Norman and Colonel W. L. P. Little, who owned the *Mary*, then decided to build a larger vessel to supply the demands of the increasing trade of the Saginaw River. He thereupon employed a Frenchman who devised a neat model of a vessel well adapted to river and lake navigation, and several shipwrights were brought here for the construction of the boat. Furnishing the timber for the shipbuilding operations kept neighboring farmers busy with their teams; and Jewett's Hotel was well filled with boarders from the little shipyard. The vessel was of about seventy tons burden, strongly built of the best oak timber, of which there was an abundant supply nearby, and when fully loaded had a draft of four and a half feet. The construction work was directed by Captain Lock, of St. Clair, and he was the first master of the vessel. When launched the new boat was named the *Julia Smith*, after the owner's daughter.

After fitting out and commencing regular trips to Detroit, the *Julia Smith* proved a great convenience and benefit to the settlers at Saginaw. Wants which could not be supplied by the small traders were looked after by Captain Lock, who made the purchases in Detroit without charge for commission,

only charging for freight on the goods; and large sums of money passed through his hands for that purpose. This was before the days of steamboats on the river, and the settlers, when they could, took passage on the sailing vessel in going to and from Portsmouth and Lower Saginaw (Bay City).

One evening late in November, 1837, a pioneer settler boarded the *Julia Smith* at Lower Saginaw, bound for Saginaw City. Scarcely had they cast off from the dock when a heavy storm of rain and wind came up, but they passed Portsmouth, the Lone Tree, Devil's Elbow and Willow Island without much difficulty, and at dark came to the critical point in the navigation of the river, the Carrollton bar. The willows from which an acute angle to the left was to be made, were visible, the helm was put down to guide the vessel through the narrow channel across the bar to deep water above. But the captain had not made sufficient allowance for the strength of the gale, and they soon ran hard aground on the south side of the channel. That night the passengers retired on board the little vessel. The weather became cold and in the morning the ground was covered with eight inches of snow, through which the settler waded three miles to his home.

The *Julia Smith* left the Saginaw River trade about 1850, but as late as 1871 was still a staunch and sound craft sailing on Lake Michigan. Captain Lock was swept from the deck of the schooner in a severe storm on Lake St. Clair, in 1857, and drowned.

### Coming of the First Steamboat

As early as 1836 the waters of the Saginaw River were churned by steamboats, the first of which to enter the river was the *Governor Marcy*, commanded by Captain Gorham. She was a logy old boat of only sixteen tons net burden, and was chartered by Norman Little for Mackie, Oakley and Jennison, who were then engaged in building up Saginaw City. A full account of the coming of this steamboat is given in Chapter VIII, pp. 125-6.

### First Steamboat Built on Saginaw River

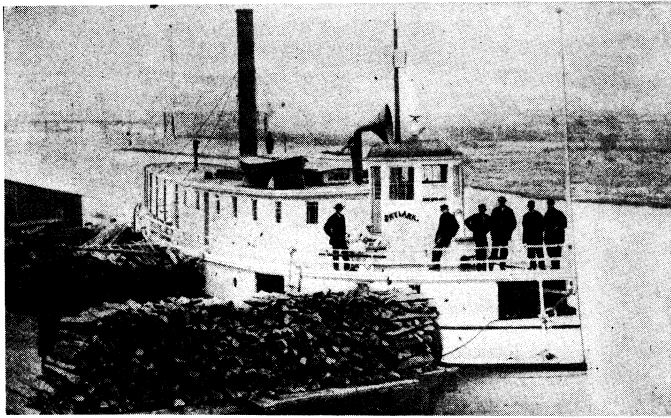
In 1847, at a suggestion of Captain Mowry, who had navigated the upper Ohio River and knew the requirements of navigation in shallow waters, James Fraser, Daniel H. Fitzhugh, Curtis Emerson and Captain Mowry formed a company to build a steamboat for use on the Saginaw River. The keel of the vessel was laid at the mill of Emerson & Eldridge, and that summer Messrs. Fraser and Fitzhugh went to Pittsburg and contracted for the engines. The steamboat was completed in 1848 with oak timber and other materials furnished by Mr. Fitzhugh, and was given the name *Buena Vista*. It was a queer looking craft, having a large stern wheel with two engines placed in the stern, and the boiler at the bow, the steam being conveyed to the engines by cast iron pipes placed under the upper deck. Although a slow and awkward vessel the *Buena Vista* filled very well the purposes for which she was built, and did a goodly amount of business, both as a tug and packet, in navigating the upper streams. The early residents looked upon her as a marvel of speed and convenience, despite the fact that her movements were somewhat asthmatic and noisy; and she was a favorite means of communication between the settlements on the river. (For an illustration of this strange craft see the picture on page 141.)

Before the Detroit & Milwaukee Railroad was built across the State, the settlers of Shiawassee County, who needed some means of getting their produce to market, proposed to build a plank road from Owosso to the forks of the Bad River (now St. Charles), and secure the steamboat *Buena Vista* to take their wheat and other products to Saginaw. In the Summer of 1849, Andrew Parsons, of Corunna, afterward a governor of this State, and Amos Gould, of Owosso, and other prominent men explored the route for the plank

road, and came to Saginaw to confer with the owners of the steamboat as to the feasibility of the plan. As they were to return on the *Buena Vista*, it was arranged to run an excursion up the river, and on the appointed day an early start was made in the morning with the expectation of getting back to Saginaw by noon or a little later.

Almost the whole of the adult male population went along, but without any lunch or drink (except whiskey). The boat passed up the Saginaw and Shiawassee Rivers without difficulty, though making slow progress, until it entered the Bad River which was narrow and so crooked that the boat sometimes became wedged between two points, thus filling with mud the pipes that conveyed water to the boiler. Long before the boat reached the head of navigation, the water ran low and she was propelled by heated gas, blue streams issuing from every joint in the boiler and molten lead from the joints of the steam pipes.

The progress of the steamboat was thus impeded, and the engineer waded beside the hull in an effort to open the pipes to the boiler, but in this he failed and very fortunately for all on board, for had a dash of water entered



THE "SKYLARK" LOADING AT SAGINAW  
The Third Man from the Bow was Walter Frazee

the boiler in its overheated condition, an explosion would have scattered all to the four winds. In this dilemma with fifty hungry men sixteen miles from their base of supplies, no dwelling house within several miles, and no road in any direction, a council was held; and Daniel L. C. Eaton and E. F. Bird volunteered to go to Saginaw in a canoe and bring a supply of provisions. A little after midnight these sturdy pioneers returned to their friends with a canoe well filled with cooked food, which the women of Saginaw City had hastily furnished from their larders. A real banquet was partaken of in the wilderness to the enjoyment of all, and which was never forgotten by those present. As the boat had no cabin and only rows of benches for seats, there was not much sleep that night for any one, and they whiled away the time as best they could until morning.

What canoes there were were then quickly manned for the return trip to Saginaw, and the balance of the crowd wended their way through the woods to the Indian settlement at Swan Creek. From there they tramped over the country to their homes, and being Sunday some of them were deeply humiliated at seeing their Indian friends engaged in their devotions. The *Buena Vista* remained at the forks two weeks for repairs, when she returned to deep water. That experience ended the project for a plank road and river navigation of the upper rivers to Saginaw.



### Shipbuilding on the Saginaw River

Some of the largest and most seaworthy vessels on the lakes in the old lumbering days were built on the Saginaw River, the general excellence of the oak timber in these parts being recognized by all vessel men. For flexibility, elasticity, toughness and durability it was pronounced equal to the old English oak, and superior to most of the ship timber found elsewhere on the lakes.

The second steamboat built here was the *General Walcott*, launched in 1850 by Captain Darius Cole, and used in the trade between Saginaw and Bay City, constituting the first river line. About that time Daniel Johnson built at Zilwaukee a small steamboat named the *Snow*; and Curtis Emerson launched a barge called the *Ethan Allen*, at his mill, the occasion being celebrated in his usual flamboyance with a banquet at the Webster House. Soon after, propelling machinery was placed in the *Whitney*, built by Thomas Whitney & Company, of Bay City, and commanded by Captain Burns. This was the first steamboat at the lower end of the river. In 1854 Captain Cole ran the *Columbia* between Saginaw and Detroit; and four years later he established a line between Bay City and Alpena, with the same steamer. The tug *Lathrop* came to the river for towing in 1853, and the next year the *Fox* appeared, commanded by Captain Wolverton, followed by the *Ariel*, *Ruby*, *Magnet* and *Evening Star*.

In the early fifties and for some years after, Jesse Hoyt had a ship yard on the east bank of the river at a point where the Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad afterward crossed the river. At this yard a number of barques, brigs and schooners were built for a fleet formed by Mr. Hoyt, the cost of which aggregated a considerable sum. In 1858 the Hoyt fleet comprised the following vessels:

Barque . . . . .	<i>Sunshine</i> . . . . .	516 tons	cost \$23,000
Barque . . . . .	<i>Jesse Hoyt</i> . . . . .	472 tons	cost 21,000
Brig . . . . .	<i>Starlight</i> . . . . .	400 tons	cost 20,000
Schooner . . . . .	<i>Quickstep</i> . . . . .	300 tons	cost 16,000
Steamer . . . . .	<i>Magnet</i> . . . . .	600 H. P.	cost 30,000
Steamer . . . . .	<i>Alida</i> . . . . .		cost 10,000
			Total . . . . . \$120,000

The steamer *Magnet* was a low pressure tow boat adapted to freight and passenger business, with an engine of six hundred horse power; and was commanded by Captain Martin Smith. She was built in 1855 after the model of Maine shipbuilders, who favored vessels rather blunt at the stern; and when Captain Marsac, the veteran mariner of Saginaw Bay, first saw her he said: "Be gad! been in this countree good many time, seen great many steamboat, never saw him built straight up and down behind, before." The *Alida* was a smaller boat of the same class.

Other craft in the lake and river trade were the steamers *Traffic* and *Comet*, the propellers *Coaster* and *Odd Fellow*, Emerson's steam ferry, one steam dredge and three scows. For many years these vessels plied the lakes in the increasing trade of the Saginaw Valley. Lumber, shingles and lath were the principal products shipped to lower lake ports, and to Chicago and Milwaukee, and general merchandise and household goods of emigrants constituted the return cargoes, together with as many passengers as could be accommodated.

For several years the schooner *Quickstep* was commanded by Captain William Blyben, a well-known lake captain and vessel owner, who came here in 1854 and lived at Water and Miller (Carlisle) Streets. It was this

vessel that brought in, on August 8, 1859, the furniture, carpets, china and glassware and kitchen equipment for the Bancroft House, which was opened a month later. This merchandise was insured in transit for ten thousand dollars, which sum was about two-thirds of the actual value of the furnishings. Captain Blyben, who had been known to Jesse Hoyt from his youth, looked after the rigging and fitting out of the latter's vessels, and sailed a number of them in the river and lake trade for more than twenty-five years. He owned a part interest in several boats he had sailed, and when the schooner *Henry C. Potter* was built, having taken particular pride in the way she was rigged and finished, he told Mr. Hoyt he would like an interest in the new boat and offered to give a mortgage on some Saginaw real estate as security. Mr. Hoyt willingly consented to such an arrangement, and Captain Blyben assumed command of the vessel. Another boat of which the Captain was part owner as well as master was the *A. B. Moore*, one of the Hoyt Fleet.

Years after, when Captain Blyben was very ill and not expected to live, Mr. Hoyt came to see him and at his bedside said: "I want to give you back your mortgage." And he did. Mr. Hoyt was greatly beloved by the children of the neighborhood, because he was interested in their pleasures and played games with them in the evening; and one of them, Jessie Blyben, was named after him. But he would not wear a collar to go to church, and was chided by the children who told him that "in the city men wear collars in church."

During the early period of shipbuilding on the Saginaw River, Stephen R. Kirby and Captain Martin Smith were employed by Mr. Hoyt in his ship yard. The former designed the vessels and prepared the plans, while the latter superintended the construction of them. Afterward Captain Smith took over the shipyard business, which included the repair of all kinds of boats. In this connection it was stated by Fox, the pioneer historian, that "the amount of business done at the shipyard in this place, which is conducted by Captain Martin Smith, will average about fifty thousand dollars yearly. The grand facilities which the surrounding country affords for shipbuilding, renders this one of the best points in the State for the shipyard." Captain Smith was a prominent figure in marine shipping circles of this section; and his residence was on Water Street north of Carroll, in the house for many years occupied by Wickes Brothers' office. Later he built a palatial residence in the Grove, the house now occupied by Sanford Keeler. He removed from the city about 1869.

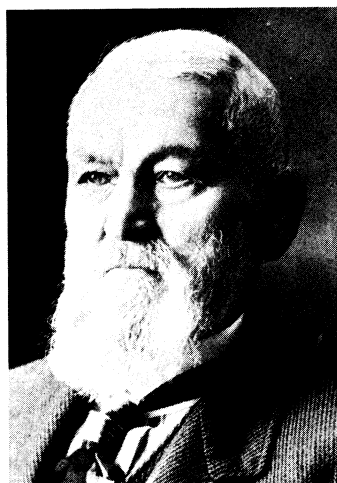
Late in the eighteen-sixties shipbuilding on this river began to increase, and the two shipyards (the other being at Emerson's old mill site, and conducted by the father of Frank W. Wheeler) were busy places. During 1867 the following vessels were built at the different ship yards:

	Tonnage		Tonnage
Bark.... <i>J. C. King</i> .....	512	Tug..... <i>Anna Moiles</i> .....	72
Bark.... <i>W. H. Vanderbilt</i> ....	615	Tug..... <i>Ballentine</i> . . . . .	73
Barge... <i>Wolverine</i> . . . . .	141	Steamer. <i>Johnny</i> . . . . .	52
Barge... <i>A. F. R. Braley</i> .....	391	Barge... <i>Samuel Bolton</i> .....	330
Barge... <i>G. W. Wesley</i> .....	244	Barge... <i>J. L. Ketcham</i> .....	425
Propeller <i>J. M. K. Hilton</i> .....	166	Barge... <i>Charlie</i> . . . . .	109
Propeller <i>J. Stewart</i> .....	51	Barge... <i>Joseph</i> . . . . .	293
Barge... <i>T. P. Sheldon</i> .....	186	Scow.... <i>Pioneer</i> . . . . .	17
Barge... <i>J. A. Holland</i> .....	157	Scow.... <i>Dolphin</i> . . . . .	43

Total Tonnage.....3,877



CAPTAIN WILLIAM BLYBEN



CAPTAIN MARTIN SMITH

The extent of shipbuilding on the river between 1868 and 1873, inclusive, is shown by the following table:

	Barks	Barges	Schooners	Sloops	Propellers	Tugs	Scows	Total	Tonnage
1868	1	4	2			3	3	13	1,608
1869		5	1	2	1		2	11	1,795
1870		8	3	1		2	4	18	2,171
1871		1	3			2	2	8	1,493
1872		3	6			1	1	11	2,882
1873		3	12		4	2	1	22	8,663
Total	1	24	27	3	5	10	13	83	18,612

In 1873 the following vessels were built, chiefly to accommodate the extensive lumber and salt trade of the Valley:

	Tonnage		Tonnage
Propeller <i>David Ballentine</i> ....	972	Barge... <i>W. L. Peck</i> .....	366
Schooner <i>A. B. Moore</i> .....	1,069	Schooner <i>Buckeye State</i> .....	526
Schooner <i>C. H. Burton</i> .....	535	Propeller <i>W. R. Quimby</i> .....	39
Schooner <i>Journeyman</i> . . . . .	235	Schooner <i>Queen City</i> .....	700
Schooner <i>R. T. Lambert</i> .....	54	Schooner <i>Chester B. Jones</i> .....	494
Propeller <i>J. C. Liken</i> .....	79	Schooner <i>W. S. Crosswaite</i> .....	672
Tug..... <i>Wesley Hawkins</i> .....	46	Schooner <i>L. C. Butts</i> .....	504
Propeller <i>Arenac</i> . . . . .	63	Schooner <i>Benjamin F. Bruce</i> ....	729
Scow.... <i>Iosco</i> . . . . .	231	Schooner <i>Grace A. Channen</i> ....	257
Barge... <i>Joseph Sparrow</i> .....	264	Schooner <i>B. B. Buckhout</i> .....	352
Barge... <i>F. A. McDougal</i> .....	416	Tug..... <i>Fannie Tuthill</i> .....	30

Total Tonnage.....8,663

During the seventies the activity in the Saginaw shipyards continued and with the improvement of the river channels larger vessels were built. The government engineering work on the river in the period from 1870 to 1885 was extensive. The bar at the mouth of the river had been removed in 1867, and the Carrollton bar dredged to an average depth of twelve feet and the channel protected by revetments. But before the decline in lumbering set in, shipbuilding fell off, and the old shipyard on Emerson's bayou was closed and dismantled. In 1889 operations at this place were resumed by

the building of a steam barge and one tow barge—the last wooden craft built at this end of the river. The keels were laid on the site of the steam power plant of the Saginaw Power Company, on South Washington Avenue, and, as the vessels neared completion they attracted much attention. The steam barge, of six hundred and eighty-three gross tons, was named the *S. S. Wilhelm*, and the barge, of eight hundred tons, was named the *Twin Sisters*. They were of such dimensions that in order to launch them safely into the bayou it was necessary to dredge a channel through the middle ground directly opposite to where they lay. Many of our citizens will recall the scene at their launching.

### The Rise and Decline of River Commerce

Before 1855 no record was kept of vessel arrivals at Saginaw, as the number of boats then coming to the river could not have exceeded twenty-five in a year, and did not justify the keeping of a single tug boat. Some idea of the traffic at that period may be formed by a glance at the accompanying table:

	Barks	Brigs	Schooners	Steamboats	Total
1855.....	31	176	277	109	593
1856.....	11	50	375	57	493
1857.....	24	69	340	107	540
	66	295	992	273	1,626

In 1867 the whole number of vessels passing the Genesee Avenue Bridge was reported as exceeding a thousand in one month, and this did not include all boats that came to the river, as many stopped at Bay City and other points below. Besides the general shipping there were several regular lines of steamboats to Detroit, Cleveland, Toledo, Goderich and all points on the bay and lake shores, which carried both freight and passengers. The following statement shows the volume of river and lake shipments in 1867:

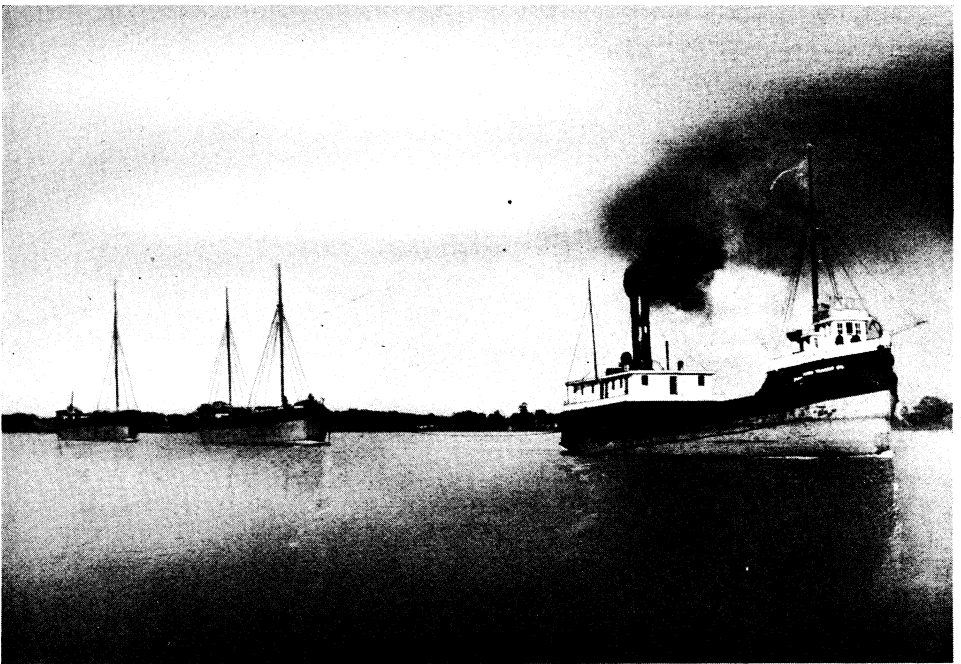
Lumber—feet, board measure . . . . .	358,001,930	Walnut lumber—feet . . . . .	12,000
Lath—pieces . . . . .	44,175,591	Staves . . . . .	5,206,472
Shingles . . . . .	44,350,000	Shooks—bundles . . . . .	10,468
Salt—barrels . . . . .	403,393	Hoops . . . . .	1,330,000
Oak Timber—feet . . . . .	708,720	Pickets . . . . .	595,205
Oak Timber—pieces . . . . .	7,340	Pail Bolts—cords . . . . .	50

With the natural increase in lumber production in the prosperous years of that industry, came a greater demand for vessel tonnage, and before and after the height of the lumber business in Saginaw Valley, the river was literally jammed with shipping. There were long rafts of logs being towed from the upper "sorting gaps" to the mill booms, and many vessels of all classes passing to and from the lumber docks for loads of lumber and other products. In 1882 the steam barge *Ontonagon* and barges *William Lewis* and *R. J. Carney* were the first regular lumber traders to leave the river for Buffalo, while the barge *B. B. Buckhout*, under tow of the steam barge *George L. Colwell*, was the last to leave for that port.

In 1883 the vessels in the river and lake commerce were: the *Dove*, *Dunlap*, *Metropolis*, *E. T. Carrington*, *Luther Westover*, *Emerald*, *Sea Gull*; the propellers *Arundell* and *C. A. Forbes*; the steam barges *George King*, *Baldwin*, *J. P. Donaldson*, *D. F. Rose*, *Nelson Mills*, *Fred McBricr*, *Sanilac* and *Benton*; the barges *Brightie*, *Bascobel*, *Marine City*, *Racine*, *Jupiter*, *Leader*, *Yantic*, *Bahama*, *Taylor*, *Gebhart*, *Florence M. Dickinson*, *Lilly May*, *Colorado*, *Fannie Neil*, *Levi Rawson*, *C. L. Young*, *Galatca*, *Ajax*, *Oconto*, *E. A. Mayes*, *Nelson*, *Favorite*, *Roscins*, *Iceman*, *Grace Whitney*, *Melbourne*, *G. W. Bissell*, *J. S. Austin*, *Amaranth*, *William Treat*, *T. G. Lester*, *J. L. Ketcham* and *L. B. Crocker*.

Among the numerous tug boats on the river were: the *Music*, *Ella Smith*, *Peter Smith*, *S. S. Ramage*, *A. F. Bartlett*, *William Park*, *Charles Lee*, *C. M. Farrar*, *Marian Teller*, *E. V. Mundy*, *Witch of the West*, *W. E. Quimby*, *W. A. Avery*, *Annie Moiles*, *Buffalo*, *Cora B.*, *E. M. Peck*, *C. C. McDonald*, *T. M. Moore*, *George B. Dickson*, *E. Haight*, *Maud S.*, *Harley*, *Challenge*, *Lakton*, *Toledo*, *Robert Boyd*, *R. H. Weidemann*. There were also the steam yachts *Handy Boy*, *J. Gordon*, *Camph*, *C. B. Hall*, *J. S. Hubbard* and *Cora K. D.*

In 1886, a year which fell below the average of lake traffic, four hundred and fourteen steamers and one thousand and eighty-eight other vessels, with an aggregate tonnage of four hundred sixty-three thousand eight hundred and ninety-five tons, arrived at the river; and four hundred and twenty-one steamers and thirteen hundred and seventy-one other vessels, with an aggregate tonnage of four hundred ninety-three thousand and ninety-one tons, cleared from the river ports in the same year.



STEAMBARGE "MAINE" AND TOW BARGES

### River and Shore Lines

A small vessel, named the *Reindeer*, came out in 1856 and was employed on the river for some time, and later sent to Detroit. At about this time a small propeller, named the *Odd Fellow*, appeared in the river and was purchased by Michael Jeffers. She was good for about three miles an hour, but was afterward seized for violation of an ordinance in not being provided with a spark catcher, and sold. The *Little Nell* came in 1857 and soon after her boiler exploded, killing Andy Fraser, her captain, and two or three of her crew.

About 1860 the steamer *Ariel* came to the river and was employed in the local trade. Later the *Ajax*, built by Captain Hubbell and commanded by Captain O. K. Downs, was a familiar vessel to most of our pioneer citizens. The *Belle Scymour* was another of the early river boats and ran up the Tittabawassee River. The *Little Eastern* appeared in 1860 and the following year collided with the *Fox* near Saginaw City, and was sunk.

From an early day of steamboat navigation there was a regular river line of steamers running between East Saginaw and Bay City. In the early sixties the sidewheel steamer *L. G. Mason* was brought to the river by Captain J. E. English, and placed in command of Captain Meany. Soon after the steamboat *Evening Star*, Captain T. M. Hubbell, appeared on the same run in opposition, and the competition between them was so keen that steamboat riding on the river was very cheap. For a time the regular fare between the two cities was ten cents, and in frequent races the excitement ran high. As an inducement to ride on the *Evening Star* the passengers were furnished with a copy of the *Daily Enterprise* or, if they preferred, a drink of whiskey. The steamers made three round trips each, daily, the *Mason* landing at the old steamboat dock at the foot of Tuscola Street, while the *Star* docked just above where the "free bridge" was afterward built. To the *Mason* Captain English added the *Eva English* and *Minnie Sutton*, small steam craft, both of which plied upon the river between the two cities.

The steamer *Daniel Ball* was brought to the river from Muskegon in 1871, and was considered the crack boat on the route between Saginaw and Bay City. She was commanded by Captain Robert Medler. In 1873 this boat was purchased by Root & Midler, of East Saginaw, who also secured control of the *L. G. Mason* and the *Cora Locke*. The latter vessel was a sidewheel steamer used as an extra boat on Sundays and holidays, when the river traffic was heavy. This firm then controlled the passenger business by water between the cities, which it succeeded in maintaining for about fifteen years. The steamer *Mason* was entirely rebuilt in the Winter of 1875-6, and came out in the Spring of the Centennial Year as fresh as a daisy. She measured one hundred and thirty-nine tons, and was one of the favorite river craft for many years, probably making more river trips than any other boat that ever plied in these waters. The steamer was commanded by Captain John Rogers, but in 1881 was succeeded by Captain William Monroe.

In October, 1876, the *Daniel Ball* took fire while on her way down the river, and just above Stone Island was run ashore. The passengers escaped to the shore, but the staunch old steamer burned to the water's edge and sunk, thus ending the career of a favorite steamboat.

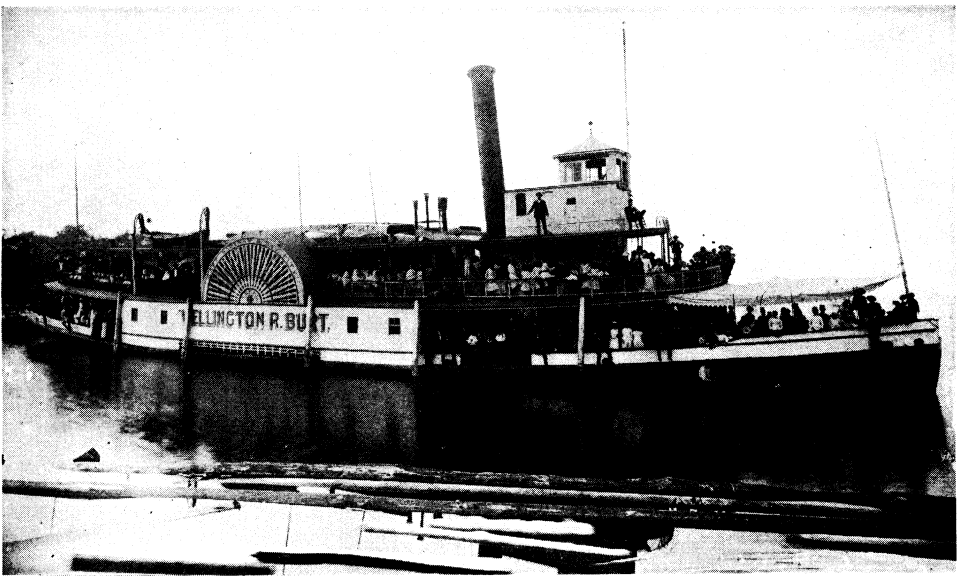
### A New Steamer Replaces the "Daniel Ball"

In the Winter of 1876-7 the keel of a new steamer was laid at Gould's shipyard in Carrollton, and in the following Spring the boat was completed and launched into the river. No expense was spared in the construction to make her a safe and serviceable craft, and resulted in the trim and handsome steamboat which was named *Wellington R. Burt*, in honor of a wealthy lumberman and prominent citizen of East Saginaw. The *Burt* was a sidewheel steamer of two hundred and fifty-two tons measurement, modern in build and equipment, was licensed to carry five hundred people, and was commanded by Captain "Bob" Medler, formerly of the *Daniel Ball*. She was a low-pressure steamer, and was a well patronized and popular boat on the run for almost fifteen years. At that time there was heavy travel on the river, not only by lumber and river men in going to and from the saw mills and salt works scattered along the river, but also by visitors and all classes of people, who were fascinated by the strange scenes of activity and river commerce.

The Saginaw River with its humming industries was one of the wonders of Michigan, and was a resort and show place for all strangers to the city. The round trip fare to Bay City (if one remained on board the boat at that place) was only twenty-five cents; and no more interesting or delightful trip in this section of Michigan could be indulged in than by an afternoon trip on the *Burt*. Excursions were run frequently to Point Lookout, a pop-

ular summer resort on the Bay shore, and were enjoyed by a large number of people. Later the screw steamer *Lucille* replaced the *Mason*, and ran on the river for several years.

About 1889, several years after the decline in lumber production had set in, these popular steamers were withdrawn, and left the river service to Armstrong's fleet of faster boats. These were the converted yacht *Handy Boy*, which had been built in 1874, the *Plow Boy*, which came out in 1887, the *Post Boy*, in 1888, and the *News Boy* a year after. These boats were equipped with powerful fire pumps and plenty of hose, and in their regular scheduled trips on the river afforded a valuable and efficient fire protection service to the many mill owners, who were only too willing to avail themselves of it. But these steamers also had their day of usefulness in this service, and in a few years were withdrawn and sold to Lake Michigan vessel men. One or two of the "Boy" boats are still in use in those waters.

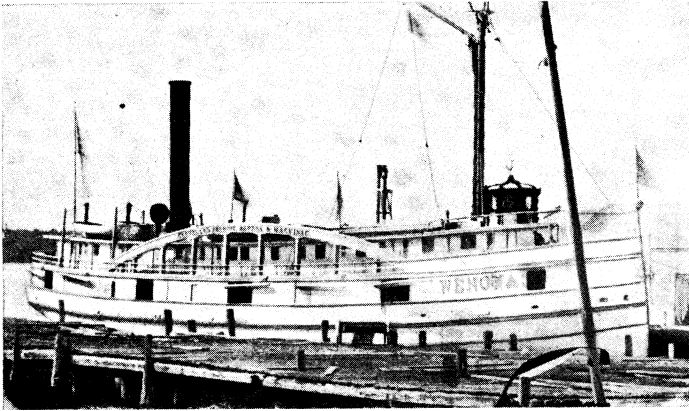


THE POPULAR STEAMER "WELLINGTON R. BURT" ENROUTE FROM SAGINAW TO BAY CITY ABOUT 1887

Captain "Bob" Medler in Front of Wheel House

The Lake Huron shore line of steamers operated between Saginaw, Bay City and Alpena, stopping at all intermediate points. Before the Detroit and Mackinaw Railroad was built, the shore line formed the only means of rapid communication between those points and the Saginaw Valley, and considerable traffic was accommodated by the side-wheel steamers *Dove* and *Metropolis*, and later by the *Arundell* and other propellers. About 1900 the coast shipments having fallen off, the line was abandoned.

There was also a popular line of steamers running to Cleveland, Detroit and shore points, consisting of the propellers *Sanilac* and *Don M. Dickinson*, and later by the steam barge *John H. Pauly*. Years after, several business men of Saginaw formed a company which purchased and operated the old side-wheel steamer *Flora*. After two seasons of unprofitable operation between Saginaw, Detroit and Cleveland, this boat was taken off and later resold to Chicago men, who soon after took her there where she burned a few months later. At about the same time the Detroit & Cleveland Navigation Company operated their iron steamer *State of New York* on this



THE "WENONA," WHICH PLIED BETWEEN SAGINAW AND ALPENA

route, but after three years of failure to enlist the consistent support of the valley cities in the lake line, the steamer was placed on its former run between Toledo and Put-in-Bay.

#### Rapid Decline in River Commerce

Aside from the loss of lumber and salt shipments following the natural exhaustion of the pine timber in Michigan, the decline in river commerce and the ill success of all efforts made in recent years to revive it, are due to economic causes and underlying conditions of water transportation. As lake navigation is now conducted, with a large proportion of the vessel tonnage comprising huge freighters of eight to fourteen thousand tons, the smaller vessels of the type that could come into the river with full loads, meet a destructive competition. These vessels can only operate on routes, either as line boats or "tramps," that afford them cargoes at both ends or, at least, at ports not distant from the point of discharge of their cargoes. To have cargoes only one way, thus returning in ballast, is utterly destructive of profits to these small craft.

The chief obstacle to Saginaw river commerce is our inability to supply return cargoes for the steamers which might come to the river with a great tonnage of general merchandise, and iron, coal and stone. The railroads serving the Saginaw Valley are naturally opposed to a revival of river and lake commerce, and have placed every obstacle in the path of vessel men. The chief disadvantage water transportation struggles against is the fact that fully ninety per cent of all commodities originate on railroad tracks, and must be delivered on team or factory sidings. Lake navigation for this great bulk of general merchandise is thus only a connecting link, and often the costs of handling and warehouse charges offset the lower rates of water transportation. This does not apply, of course, to iron ore, coal and grain shipments between the head of the lakes and Chicago and Buffalo, but it does apply with deadly effect to Saginaw River commerce. It is extremely doubtful if any considerable commerce on the Saginaw is created until conditions of water navigation change or are overcome.

#### Early Railroad Projects

Long before Saginaw City was more than a frontier settlement, the pioneers looked forward to the building of a railroad to connect them with the outside world. They seemed to realize that it was the one thing needful to develop the material resources of this region, and to bring in emigrants for the consummation of this object. In 1835 a company was organized to

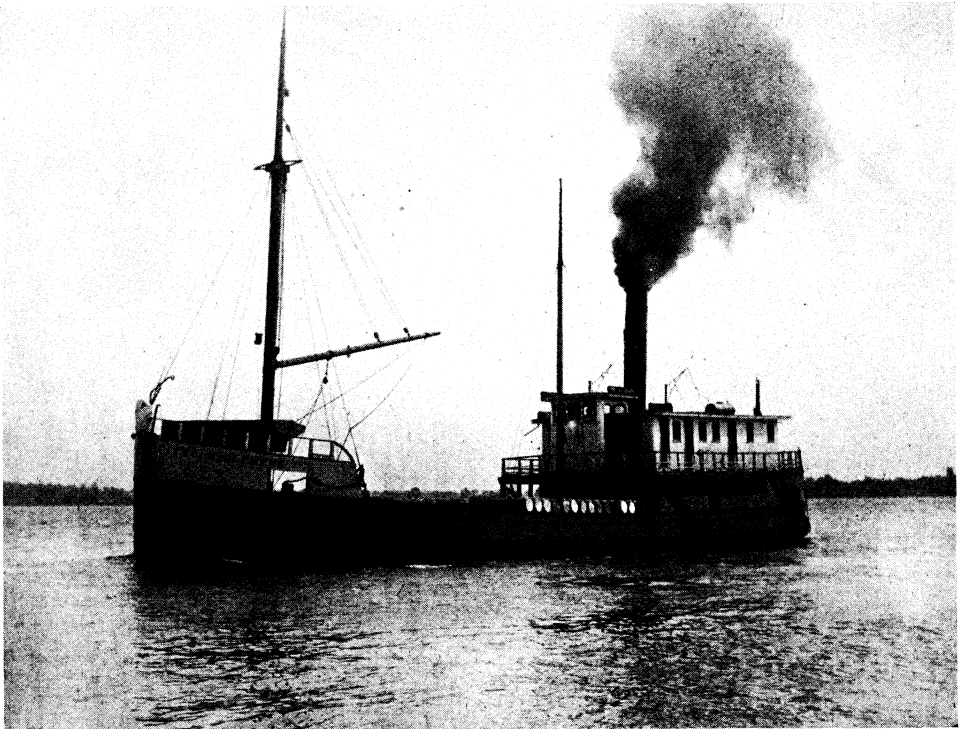


build a railroad from Saginaw City to Mt. Clemens, by the way of Lapeer, a distance of about ninety miles. All the stock in the company was taken, but the projectors were about twenty years in advance of their time. A period of business depression throughout the country set in soon after their plans were made, immigration fell off at that time, and nothing was done on the actual construction of the road. The Saginaw and Genesee Railroad was incorporated in 1837 "to commence at Saginaw City and intersect with the Northern Railroad at some point in Genesee County, length about forty miles, to be finished in six years from commencement." Like the other railroad project nothing resulted but visions and plans on paper.

#### **Building the Flint & Pere Marquette**

It was not until 1857 that any definite action was taken toward building a railroad from the Saginaw Valley to southern and western points in the State. On January 21 of that year the Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad Company was organized, and on February 24 following the company accepted the provisions of the law donating lands to it. Preliminary surveys were made, first from Midland west to the Muskegon River and to Pere Marquette (Ludington), which point was reached on June 20, 1857. This work was put through under the direction of William B. Sears, now dean of Michigan civil engineers. The map of location of the line was filed in the office of the Secretary of State on August 7, and in the General Land Office, Washington, on August 18, 1857.

Meanwhile a line had been surveyed from Flint crossing the plank road six and a half miles from that place, through Birch Run toward Saginaw. But in the Fall of 1857 the original promoters of the road met with financial reverses, due to many bank failures which occurred at that time. The surveying party was laid off and, as there was no money to pay the wages



A COMMON TYPE OF STEAMBARGE, CALLED "RABBITS"

due, Mr. Sears, who had four hundred dollars in a belt, loaned it to the president of the road to help stem the tide of discontent which threatened to break into a riot. Work was not resumed until the following May, the location line being completed to Saginaw by Mr. Sears in July, 1858.

Mr. Sears remained with the road until 1860, when he went to Missouri, but in the Spring of 1862 he returned to Saginaw and made miscellaneous surveys in the city for Addison P. Brewer and others. In the following winter he was called upon to lay out the line of the railroad between Mt. Morris and Flint, and later that section between Midland and Averill. In 1866 Henry C. Potter, who was then in charge of the operation of the Flint & Pere Marquette, recognizing the good work of Mr. Sears, appointed him chief engineer, a position which he retained until 1900, when he was made consulting engineer of the road. In 1867 he revised the location work as far as Midland, and in 1874 had charge of the track laying between Reed City and Ludington. Later he changed the location line of the Holly, Wayne and Monroe Railroad, which had become a part of the Flint & Pere Marquette.

"Just as the accuracy of the survey of the Mason & Dixon line by George Washington has challenged the attention of engineers of the present day for the decision of the landmarks, so did Mr. Sears' work of location of the Flint & Pere Marquette evoke the admiration of Dean M. E. Cooley, who made the appraisal of the Pere Marquette Railroad. Looking over the location of the line after a space of fifty years he pronounced it faultless, and in recognition of this the University of Michigan conferred the degree of Master of Engineering upon Mr. Sears. He also holds the distinction of having planned the first steel bridge across the Saginaw River.

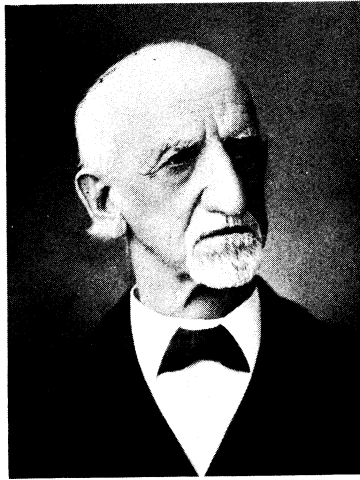
Mr. Sears, who was born on the Sundley Farm in Fairfax County, Virginia, on November 26, 1831, at present (1917) is in his eighty-sixth year. He was married to Miss Caroline Parish, of Flint, on January 5, 1865, and the fiftieth anniversary of that event was celebrated in 1915 with ceremonies befitting the occasion—a commemoration of a half century of happy home and social life.

### Why Saginaw City Was Cut Off

Tradition, as handed down by pioneer citizens whose memory is still keen, explains how it happened that Saginaw City was entirely cut off from the first railroad built from this valley. It was originally planned to enter East Saginaw from the southeast near Brady Hill, and cross the river in the vicinity of Bristol Street. On the east side of the river there was to be a depot and freight house about where the City Hall stands, and on the other side of the river another depot near the present residence of Clark L. Ring. At this central point was eventually to be built the main shipping yards to serve both cities, and shops and supply station for the entire road.

This plan, though a very feasible one, met with decided opposition of the citizens of Saginaw City who fought every improvement promoted by outsiders. Led by George W. Bullock, Peter C. Andre and other obstructionists, they exerted every influence to defeat the project, believing that since theirs was the older town it only was entitled to the road. In order, therefore, to cut off East Saginaw from any connection with the new road they insisted that it should come in further south and cross the river near Mackinaw Street. This plan provided for a depot, yards and shops near Gratiot and Mackinaw Streets.

But their folly defeated their own object. East Saginaw, promoted by more enterprising and progressive men, was forging rapidly ahead and it was apparent to all was destined to be the railroad center of Eastern Michigan. Thoroughly disgusted by the tactics of the narrow men of Saginaw



PETER C. ANDRE

A real estate owner who, it is said, opposed public improvements generally of Saginaw City

City, as Jesse Hoyt had been ten years before, the railroad projectors decided to shut them off entirely. They accordingly located the line to enter East Saginaw to the north instead of the south of the business section, and purchased a large tract of land near the river for a depot and terminals.

The work of grading the road was commenced in the Fall of 1858, at several points in Saginaw County, by F. W. Paul who had entered into a contract to build the road. This contract covered the line from Flint through Saginaw to Pere Marquette, on Lake Michigan, a distance of one hundred and seventy miles. By March, 1859, about ten thousand dollars had been expended in grading, when Samuel Farwell and Henry C. Potter, his son-in-law, of Utica, New York, and T. D. Estabrook, of Great Bend, Pennsylvania, became associated in the contract. During 1859 twenty miles of line were graded from the Saginaw River southeasterly, and eight miles of rail were laid. The first rail was laid at the edge of the river on August 19, 1859, and a large company of citizens participated in the driving of the first spike. Among them were Colonel W. L. P. Little, Curtis Emerson, Henry Hobbs, proprietor of the new Bancroft House, and Reverend W. C. Smith.

The arrival of the first engine for use on the road, named the "Pollywog," was another event in the history of the city and of the road. It was a small second-hand affair, bought at Schenectady, New York, for two thousand dollars, and arrived on the schooner *Quickstep*, Captain Muir, on August 31. The unloading of this antiquated machine, showing long service and an honorable age, on September 2, was eagerly watched by a crowd of people, when Colonel Little gave expression to the general disgust, by the remark: "That is no Pollywog, but a d—d old frog." The same engine, however, was thoroughly repaired by Sanford Keeler, a young engineer employed by Mr. Potter, and the name changed to "Pioneer."

During the Fall of 1859 Mr. Keeler ran this engine in hauling ties, rails and supplies from the dock to points on the line where they were needed in track laying, and in carrying workmen to and from their work. The following year operations were resumed and early in September track laying was extended to a point twenty miles from the river. During that Summer the East Saginaw Salt Manufacturing Company needed a large quantity

of wood in salt making at their plant in the north end of the city, and train loads were hauled from points along the line to the salt works, a track having been laid out there by Mr. Keeler and put in by the road gang. Two or three other engines (all second-hand) were purchased by the road, overhauled by Mr. Keeler and put in service as traffic demanded. One of these, named the "Pontiac," No. 4, formerly used by the Detroit & Milwaukee Railroad, had a single pair of driving wheels, with cylinders six and three-quarters by eighteen inches, and could haul only three loaded cars. It had inclined cylinders, outside connected, which was quite a curiosity as all others were inside connected. The "Buena Vista," No. 2, with cylinders only thirteen by twenty inches, could haul only a few cars, but since the entire equipment of the road in the early days consisted of only ten flat cars and two or three box cars, this limited capacity of the engines did not matter much. Afterward, as the repair work increased, difficulties arose and Mr. Keeler, who had done much of the mechanical work himself, aided by the mechanics and facilities of Wickes Brothers, induced Mr. Farwell, who was then in charge of the road, to erect a machine shop suitable for their needs. This was done and two lathes, a planer, drill press and wheel lathe were bought and set up in a wooden building, directly opposite Union Station, which for many years has been used as the paint shop.

At the annual election held July 6, 1860, Captain E. B. Ward was chosen president, M. L. Drake, of Pontiac, secretary, and A. T. Crossman, of Flint, treasurer; and the other directors were: Charles A. Trowbridge, of Detroit, B. Pierson, A. J. Boss, William Hamilton and G. M. Dewey, of Flint, and H. D. Faulker, of New York.

Although the track was completed in 1860 to a point twenty miles from East Saginaw, the road was not opened to regular traffic at that time, but all efforts were concentrated on extending the line. Much work had yet to be done, and as the sales of land which the road had received by grant, on September 5, 1860, for the first twenty miles of track laid, were slow, it was late in the Fall of 1861 when the iron was laid as far as the crossing of the Plank Road, now Mt. Morris, twenty-six and one-half miles from the Saginaw River.

### The Opening Excursion

The formal opening of the road took place on January 20, 1862, when an excursion was run from the end of the line near Washington Street to Mt. Morris. This was an auspicious event and about one hundred citizens accepted the invitation of the railroad officials to inspect the road and travel on the first passenger train to depart from Saginaw. The train consisted of one wheezy engine, a baggage car and one coach, the entire passenger equipment of the road, and the trip was slow and halting. A heavy fall of snow covered the tracks and, although scrapers had been put on the pilot of the engine, progress was impeded and it was not until one o'clock that the primitive railroad train reached the other end of the line. After a brief stop the return trip was commenced and the train arrived at East Saginaw without mishap, all passengers agreeing that they had had a "good time."

The road was at once opened for business, but the traffic was very light at first, only one hundred and two dollars being received from ticket sales during the first week of operation, and only five hundred and seventy-two dollars in the month of February, 1862. The gross earnings to December 31 of that year were, on passengers, nineteen thousand two hundred and fifty-four dollars, and on freight, twelve thousand five hundred and ten dollars, a total of thirty-one thousand seven hundred and sixty-four dollars.

In December, 1862, the track was extended to the first ward in Flint, and on January 5 following Governor Blair certified the road as completed thir-

teen and seven-tenths miles for further land grants. The Flint & Holly Railroad, seventeen miles in length, projected by Henry H. Crapo, William W. Crapo, his son, and others, was built in 1864 and opened for traffic in November of that year. This opened railroad communication with Detroit and the East, South and West, and was a great stimulus to immigration. The first schedule of trains between Saginaw and Detroit was:

Going South			
East Saginaw, leave.....	7:00	A. M.	12:15 P. M.
Flint . . . . .	8:45	A. M.	2:00 P. M.
Holly . . . . .	10:00	A. M.	3:00 P. M.
Detroit . . . . .	12:30	P. M.	5:25 P. M.
Going North			
Detroit, leave . . . . .	10:30	A. M.	5:30 P. M.
Holly . . . . .	1:00	P. M.	8:00 P. M.
Flint . . . . .	2:00	P. M.	9:15 P. M.
East Saginaw, arrive.....	4:00	P. M.	11:00 P. M.

In the following Spring, through a contract with this road and the Detroit & Milwaukee Railroad, the Flint & Pere Marquette secured an entrance into Detroit, an important event in its history. On December 3, 1868, through the efforts of President Eber Ward, the Flint & Holly Railroad was absorbed by the Flint & Pere Marquette, and while the former lost its identity as an integral railroad property, the new interests thus introduced into the directorate of the latter road became the dominant ones in its councils. The two new members were William W. Crapo, of New Bedford, Massachusetts, and Jesse Hoyt, of New York, both of whom were to play important and distinctive roles in the expansion of this transportation system.

In 1865 Jared Lapham, of Northville, and a group of business men undertook to build a railroad from Holly to Wayne, but they experienced inability to finance their project, and after the line had been extended in a state of partial construction it had to be abandoned. The Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad acquired this road in 1872, and the line was soon completed to Wayne, and two years later to Monroe. This extension gave the Flint & Pere Marquette direct connection, by the Lake Shore & Michigan Southern, with Toledo and the South. At this time a twenty-year contract was made with the Michigan Central Railroad giving the Flint & Pere Marquette an entrance of its trains into Detroit by the way of Wayne. This route was used until 1893 when the railroad entered Detroit over its own lines and the tracks of the Wabash Railroad.

Meanwhile the road had been extended westward through Midland, which was reached December 1, 1867, to Clare, in November, 1870, and Reed City, in December, 1871. The remaining link, from Reed City to Ludington, was completed in 1874, thus opening through railroad communication between Lake Michigan and the East. The East Saginaw & Bay City line was built in 1867, and the Flint River Railroad, from a point three miles north of Flint to Fostoria, a distance of fourteen and one-half miles, was completed September 1, 1872. Two years later the total mileage of the Flint & Pere Marquette was two hundred and fifty-five.

### Land Grants and Earnings

The extensive land grants conferred upon the Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad, under an act of Congress approved June 3, 1856, for the construction of its original line, amounted to five hundred and eleven thousand four hundred and ninety-two acres, but one hundred and thirty-one thousand acres of these grants were held jointly by it and other railroads which crossed its line. For many years the disposal of these lands to settlers in the counties through which the road passed, was in charge of William L. Webber; and



A PIONEER ENGINE, "WILLIAM L. WEBBER," F. & P. M. R. R.

the revenues thus derived were used in extending the line to Lake Michigan. The vast timber resources of this section of Michigan furnished a large proportion of the heavy tonnage of the road for nearly thirty years; and the clearing of the land and the consequent increase in agriculture added appreciably to the business of the road.

In 1873 the earnings of the road were one million one hundred twenty-six thousand one hundred and ninety-seven dollars; and the development of traffic may be seen by a comparison of the lumber and forest products moved in 1863 and in 1873:

	1863	1873
Lumber—feet, board measure.....	7,442,262	96,049,000
Staves . . . . .	1,017,200	2,859,200
Shingles . . . . .	6,312,750	171,600,000
Salt—Barrels . . . . .	6,100	261,679

But at length this traffic began to wane and it became necessary to acquire renewed strength by controlling more territory. This is the reason for the acquisition in 1889 of the Port Huron & North Western Railroad, a narrow-gauge line to Port Huron and into the "Thumb," the Saginaw, Tuscola & Huron Railroad, which had been built by Jessie Hoyt and William L. Webber, and the later consolidations which eventually brought eighteen hundred miles of Michigan railroads under one management—the Pere Marquette system.

In 1874 the Board of Directors was composed of Captain E. B. Ward, president; Samuel Farwell, vice-president; Henry C. Potter, general manager, secretary and treasurer; William L. Webber, land commissioner and solicitor; Gilbert W. Ledlie, auditor; and Jesse Hoyt of New York, John H. Prentiss, Chicago, James K. Hitchcock, Cornwall, New York, and William W. Crapo, of New Bedford, Massachusetts.

#### A Mutuality of Interests

There has always been a peculiar inter-dependence, a mutuality of interests, existing in the relations of the Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad with the Saginaw Valley. Neither could have done without the other. From the day that direct communication by railroad was opened with Detroit and the East, the Valley began to forge ahead with East Saginaw as its industrial

center. This railroad was essentially an East Saginaw road, having been promoted and built by the enterprising men of this hustling city; and it is an unquestioned fact that no institution in the last fifty years has done so much for the material advancement of the Saginaw Valley as the Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad.

For many years the most important local industry has been the Pere Marquette shops and railroad center thus created, giving employment the year round to from fifteen hundred to two thousand mechanics, train men and laborers. In 1874 the shops consisted of a car shop, under the charge of John Lundger, eighty by two hundred feet in dimensions; a blacksmith shop, under the charge of John West, eighty by two hundred and fifty feet; a machine shop in charge of Sanford Keeler, sixty by one hundred and twenty feet in size; two brick engine houses and a supply store. The capacity of the car shops, which had six tracks, was four box cars per day and six passenger coaches in a year employing two hundred men. The blacksmith shop had a capacity for forty forges, besides machinery for making and cutting bolts, tapping nuts and drilling iron work for the car shop; and had two steam hammers, bending rolls, shears and punches, and a complete brass foundry. The machine shop, in which locomotives were overhauled and rebuilt, was completely equipped with giant lathes, planers, drills and presses, some of which were said to be "human machines" in the excellence of their performance. Mr. Keeler, who had charge of this shop since April, 1860, was made assistant superintendent of the road January 1, 1874. Peter McNoah was foreman of the bolt works and brass foundry; Thomas M. Hays of the locomotive shop and engine houses; Fred Scheover of the pattern and cabinet shop, and D. Herbage of the paint shop.

#### The Steamship Line

The steamer line on Lake Michigan, operating between Ludington, Manistee and Milwaukee and Chicago, was started in 1876; and for many years was managed by Captain Duddelson, commodore of the fleet. During the navigation season one steamer left Milwaukee and Ludington every night (except Saturday), affording direct connection between the Northwest and the Eastern seaboard. In 1887 the line consisted of the steamers F. & P. M. Nos. 1, 2, 3 and 4, and did an extensive business principally in the salt trade. Later, when car ferries were introduced thus obviating breaking bulk, several large ferries were built and operated between Ludington, Milwaukee and Manitowoc. At length the smaller steamers were entirely displaced in the lake service, and were either leased or sold.

#### The Jackson, Lansing & Saginaw Railroad

The construction of the Jackson, Lansing & Saginaw Railroad, the first railroad to open Saginaw City to the outside world, was first projected in 1856 the year the State of Michigan was empowered by Congress to grant public lands in aid of construction of railroads. The act of Congress provided for a road from Amboy, in Hillsdale County, near the south line of the State, by the way of Lansing, to some point on Traverse Bay; and the Amboy, Lansing and Traverse Bay Railroad Company was organized January 23, 1857, with a capital of five million dollars. The grant of land was conferred by the Legislature and formally accepted by the company on March 5, 1857. Among the directors named in the articles of incorporation were Hiram L. Miller, of Saginaw City, and Morgan L. Gage, of East Saginaw; and at the first meeting of the stockholders George W. Bullock and Colonel W. L. P. Little were added to the directorate.

The financial crash of 1857 followed soon after and nothing was done on the construction of the road until 1859, when the line between Albion and Owosso was laid out to connect the Michigan Central and Detroit & Mil-

waukee Railroads at those points. The first iron was laid from Owosso south and twenty miles were completed and accepted by the governor on December 28, 1860. The work progressed very slowly and it was not until September 17, 1863, that the road was completed to Lansing, nine miles further. Grading had been done for thirty miles south of Lansing, but the company was unable to procure the iron and never performed any further work on this line.

Shortly after, the Lansing & Jackson Railroad Company was organized with a capital of three hundred thousand dollars, to build a railroad between those points, a distance of thirty-nine miles. In order to secure to the new corporation the lands which it was apparent would be lost to the State through the inability of the original road to construct more of its line, its articles of incorporation were amended by changing the name to Jackson, Lansing & Saginaw Railroad, by increasing its capital to one million five hundred thousand dollars, and by designating Saginaw as its northern terminus. An extension to seven years for completing the road was granted by an act of Congress, and the grant of land was disposed of by the Legislature at its session in 1867, upon the Jackson, Lansing & Saginaw Railroad Company. This company then proceeded with the work of completing the road with such energy that it was extended to Saginaw in November, 1867, and to Wenona on January 7, following. In 1871 the railroad was absorbed by the Michigan Central Railroad, and became known as the Saginaw Division.

From Wenona northward the route of the road lay through an unbroken forest far beyond the rudest settlement, and the work of construction was suspended for two years. In March, 1871, the route north of Wenona was relocated, construction work commenced and completed to Wells, forty miles north of Wenona, in December of the same year. At the end of another year the road was extended to Otsego Lake, a distance of one hundred and nineteen miles through a dense forest. But the rapid growth of towns and villages along the road, and the extensive lumbering operations soon begun fully justified the sagacity and foresight of the projectors of the road. Sixty-eight miles more completed the road to the Straits of Mackinaw, its northern terminus.

The number of acres patented to this company was three hundred forty-eight thousand four hundred and thirty-three, and the sales of land commenced in 1868. James Turner was the first land commissioner, but Augustine S. Gaylord, of Saginaw City, assumed the duties of this office on August 15, 1872.

Early in the seventies the Detroit & Bay City Railroad had been built from Detroit by the way of Rochester, Lapeer and Vassar to Bay City, a distance of one hundred and nine miles; and in 1879, after the road had been acquired by the Michigan Central Railroad, this road built a branch from Denmark to East Saginaw. This branch line was fifteen miles long and opened another route from the Saginaws to the East and South. A substantial bridge was built across the river at Emerson Street to connect with the Jackson, Lansing & Saginaw line; and passenger trains were run from a depot at Hayden and Franklin Streets to Vassar, where connections were made with the main line trains between Detroit and Bay City.

But the Michigan Central, with all its resources and connections, was not getting anywhere near its share of Saginaw business, the bulk of which went to the Flint & Pere Marquette. The latter road was first and last a Saginaw institution, and its policy was so shaped that this city reaped great benefits. It was the one popular road of the Saginaw Valley. The big shippers and merchants here were induced to ship and route all their goods



over this road by the granting of rebates and gratuities in the form of annual passes over the line, for themselves and families. Thousands of passes were distributed yearly to our business men, most of whom could well afford to pay their fares. This practice became so extensive as to seriously affect the passenger revenue of the road, and a curtailment of the privilege was absolutely necessary.

About 1884 the officials of the Michigan Central awoke to the situation, and at once adopted measures to combat these conditions and gain a larger share of the traffic. Their first move was to send Spencer Goseline to this city as freight agent. He was a man of vital force, experience and tact, and possessed a genial nature which quickly made for him many friends. By the exercise of rare sagacity and thoughtful attention to the needs of shippers, he soon had a firm grasp of the whole situation. He rearranged and improved the old freight schedules, speeded up freight deliveries, extended track connections, and thus gradually gained a rightful share of the freight business. During the twenty odd years of his life in this city he rendered valuable service to the city as well as to the railroad, and he was highly regarded by our substantial citizens. Upon his death, which occurred October 12, 1905, S. S. Armstrong succeeded to the position of freight agent, which he still holds. He has been connected with the local office of the Michigan Central since 1887, and has seen the traffic increase from a small volume to the heavy tonnage moved by the road in recent years.

The passenger train service of the Central, rendered by its branch line to Vassar, was never adequate to the needs of Saginaw whose citizens were accustomed to travel by through trains to and from Detroit, and by through sleeping cars to Chicago, daily. It was therefore deemed expedient to place Saginaw on the map of the Michigan Central, and to this end the branch line to Denmark Junction became a part of the main line between Detroit and Mackinaw. About 1890 through service was inaugurated with three trains daily to Detroit and the East, and two to Mackinaw and the Northwest, stopping at the new brick station on West Genesee Avenue, the old station at Hayden Street having been abandoned. In recent years a small station was built at Emerson and Washington Streets, for the better accommodation of the East Side business. The passenger service to the East was



A WAY STATION IN THE FOREST WILDERNESS

further improved about eight years ago by operating a daily Pullman sleeper through to New York, leaving here at noon and arriving in New York the following morning. Meanwhile the service to Lansing, Jackson and Chicago was increased by a sleeper train, running as a limited to Chicago. All main lines of this road are now operated with modern equipment and powerful and fast locomotives. In 1910 a new brick station at Court and Niagara Streets replaced the old depot which had been in use for more than thirty years.

### **The Saginaw Valley & St. Louis Railroad**

A railroad promoted, financed and built entirely by enterprising men of Saginaw City was the Saginaw Valley & St. Louis, which was organized April 28, 1871. The officers of the company were: David H. Jerome, president; George F. Williams, vice-president; Ezra Rust, secretary, and Ammi W. Wright, treasurer. These officers and Newell Barnard, Amasa Rust, George Jerome, L. H. Eastman, Timothy Jerome, John L. Evans, James Hay, Benton Hanchett and J. E. Shaw comprised the board of directors.

The line of this road was surveyed in June, 1871, by Frank Eastman; and in September of the same year the clearing and grading was commenced by Alexander McDonald. On September 15, 1872, the first spike was driven and only three months after the first train passed over the line to St. Louis, a distance of thirty-four miles. The formal opening of the road to business occurred on December 31, 1872, uniting the city with the already rich agricultural district of Gratiot and adjoining counties, and rendering available an extensive belt of pine, hemlock and other timber.

Although one of the shortest railroads in the State, its roadbed was first-class, and its rolling stock consisted of four engines, two passenger coaches, twelve box and forty flat cars. Its total earnings in 1873, the first year of its operation, amounted to one hundred and thirty-five thousand dollars, and the operating expenses were forty-two thousand dollars, which was considered a very good showing for a new road. In addition to paying its annual interest charges, a considerable number of bonds were retired. At that time the shipments consisted very largely of forest products, including staves, shingles and bark, while general merchandise, agricultural implements and household goods comprised its outbound freight.

This railroad was afterward extended to Ithaca, Alma, Edmore and Howard City, and late in the eighties passed to the control of the Detroit, Lansing & Northern Railroad. Thereafter its trains were run through to Grand Rapids over the Grand Rapids & Indiana Railroad from Howard City. In 1900 this railroad and the Chicago & West Michigan were consolidated with the Flint & Pere Marquette, becoming an integral part of the Pere Marquette System. The line is now known as the Grand Rapids Division, and is a very important route to Chicago and the West.

### **The Saginaw, Tuscola & Huron Railroad**

One of the many projects of a thoroughly practical and beneficial nature to this city and county, which were put through by Jesse Hoyt, was the building of the Saginaw, Tuscola & Huron Railroad. This road was completed as far as Sebewaing in 1882, and proved of great value by connecting the Saginaw Valley with a territory directly tributary to it. Before the road could be extended further into the "Thumb" country, Mr. Hoyt died, but the work was pushed forward by William L. Webber and tracks were laid as far as Bay Port, a village on Wild Fowl Bay. A delightful summer resort was here created by prominent citizens of Saginaw, and a hotel with one hundred rooms was built for pleasure seekers during the heated term. A club house and a number of cottages were subsequently built on Heistermann Island, at the outlet of the bay, which for several years was a popular place

of resort. This enterprise was afterward abandoned and many of the cottages removed on the ice to Point aux Barques.

From Bay Port the road was then extended to the valuable stone quarries owned by Saginaw interests, and later to Bad Axe, the county seat of Huron County, where it connected with the Port Huron & North Western Railroad. Although a narrow-gauge railroad it served the country, through which it passed, in a satisfactory manner, and its aggregate movement of stone, hay, grain, staves, tan bark and coal amounted to a considerable volume of business. The excursions to Bay Port on Sunday during the Summer were a feature of the amusements and recreations of the people, and were largely attended. About 1890 this railroad was absorbed by the Flint & Pere Marquette, and soon after was made a standard gauge road.

### **The Port Huron & North Western**

Coincident with the extension of railroads from Saginaw was the entry into this city of the Port Huron & North Western Railroad, a narrow-gauge line promoted and built by capitalists of Port Huron. For several years this road had been building toward Saginaw Valley, and on February 22, 1882, the first regular trains entered the Union Station over the Pere Marquette, from the eastern limits of the city. A great extent of territory was opened up to the trade of the valley by this road, but so discriminatory were the traffic arrangements in favor of the city on St. Clair River, that the results to Saginaw merchants and business men were rather disappointing.

This railroad, however, was a valuable link in the transportation systems of Saginaw Valley, and it opened a direct route for passenger travel from Lake Michigan and the Northwest to Canadian points, Buffalo and the East, through its connections with the Grand Trunk Railroad at Port Huron. It was a popular route for all classes of the people, and during the winter season carried thousands of lumber-jacks to and from Canada to this city, which was then the center of lumbering operations of a vast territory to the West and North. Its trains were equal to those run by competing lines, those between Saginaw and Port Huron hauling drawing room cars; and the time was fast for that period, being a little more than three hours for the run of ninety-one miles, including stops.

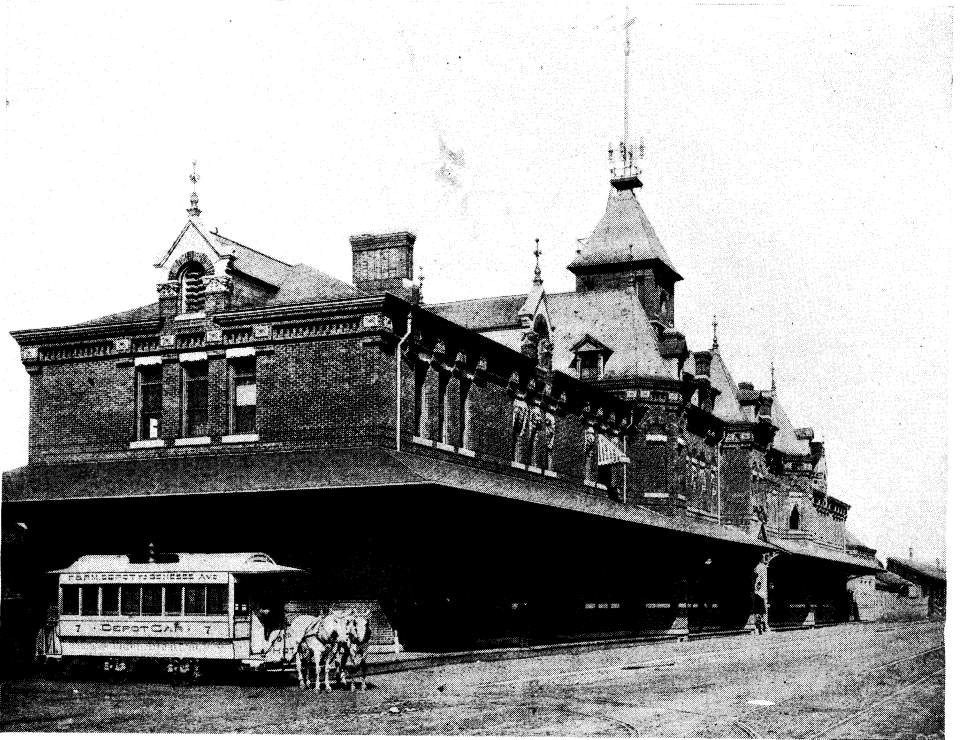
In 1888 the entire railroad, including the lines from Port Huron to Sand Beach, Bad Axe and Port Austin, and the branch to Almont, a total of two hundred and eighteen miles, with thirteen miles of sidings, passed into the control of the Flint & Pere Marquette. The importance of this acquisition was such that the latter road at once prepared to change the gauge to standard, and the line from Saginaw to Port Huron was thus modernized the following year. It gave to the Pere Marquette, in connection with its lake lines, a direct route across Michigan from the Northwest to Port Huron, where the connection with the Grand Trunk afforded the most direct route to the eastern seaboard, shortening the distance from Minneapolis to the East by sixty-five miles over any other route. The value of this connection was further enhanced by the completion of the tunnel under the St. Clair River at Port Huron. In recent years the acquisition of the Detroit River & Lake Erie Railroad, in the Province of Ontario, by the Pere Marquette, added considerably to the importance of this Michigan railroad system.

### **Cincinnati, Saginaw & Mackinaw Railroad**

The third railroad promoted and built entirely by Saginaw capitalists was the Toledo, Saginaw & Mackinaw, afterward known as the Cincinnati, Saginaw & Mackinaw. For several years the need of a new road to connect the Saginaw Valley with the East, West and South was apparent, and in 1886 a company was incorporated to carry out this project. The charter

authorized the company to build a railroad to Mackinaw, but Wenona, on Saginaw Bay, was the immediate objective point at the north, while Durand, the junction of the Detroit & Milwaukee, the Chicago & Grand Trunk, and the Toledo, Ann Arbor and North Michigan Railroads, became the southern terminus.

The officers of the Toledo, Saginaw & Mackinaw Railroad were: Ammi W. Wright, president; Philip H. Ketcham, vice-president; Wellington R. Burt, treasurer; William C. McClure, secretary, and these men with Charles W. Wells, Thomas Merrill and J. M. Ashley, Junior, comprised the board of directors. John A. Edget was solicitor for the road.



UNION STATION, AND DEPOT CAR USED IN THE EIGHTIES

This railroad was laid out and the first section was built in 1887. It was constructed with solid roadbed laid with steel rails of standard size, and was regarded as a model road. The line, which passed directly north through Flushing and Montrose, entered the city near Sheridan Avenue, crossed the Belt Line east of Jefferson, and swinging to the west came down South Franklin Street to Thompson, where the depot and freight house were situated. This section of the road was opened to traffic in 1888, and proved another important outlet for the products of Saginaw Valley.

The road then crossed the river at Thompson Street and followed the river through Carrollton, Zilwaukee and Melbourne to Salsburg and West Bay City, where at Midland Street a station handled the business of the Bay Cities. An extension of four miles to Wenona completed the road. This point soon became a popular resort for summer outings, and excursions were run almost daily during the heated term from Saginaw and West Bay City to the bay shore, at a minimum rate of fare which attracted thousands to the cool, refreshing breezes from off the lake.

About 1893 the road was leased to the Chicago & Grand Trunk, and has since been operated as the C. S. & M. Division. As a feeder for this great railroad system it is of greater value than ever, and serves the Saginaw Valley very acceptably. In recent years the freight traffic has increased very rapidly, necessitating the relaying of the track with heavier steel, and otherwise improving the road. In 1913 a project long contemplated, namely, to enter Bay City and secure a share of the business of that place, was brought to a focus. A substantial steel bridge was built across the river at Twelfth Street, and a modern terminal, for both freight and passenger business, was built within a few squares of the business center of Bay City.

### Interurban Electric Traction

The beginning of interurban travel by electric traction was in 1894, the year Isaac Bearinger became interested in improving the transportation facilities of the valley cities. Entirely through his efforts and largely with his capital, the first electric line was built from Saginaw to Bay City, with a length of fifteen miles, and at a cost of more than a half million dollars. This road entered the city by the way of North Michigan and Genesee Avenues, and its terminus was at Washington and Genesee. It follows a devious course through Carrollton and Zilwaukee, crosses the river at a point below the mouth of Cheboyganing Creek, and enters Bay City at Bullock Road. The line was well equipped with the best type of cars then in use, which were operated at half-hour and forty minute intervals. After creating a steady and growing patronage the road was sold in 1898 to the Saginaw Valley Traction Company.

Other interests a few years later built and equipped an electric road from Saginaw to Bridgeport and Frankenmuth, which, after a troublous career involved in litigation, passed into the hands of a receiver and was sold to A. J. Groesbeck, of Detroit. Soon after this road was purchased by the Saginaw Valley Traction Company, rebuilt and extended from Frankenmuth Junction through Birch Run, Clio and Mt. Morris to Flint, where it connected with the Detroit & Flint Railroad to Detroit. In 1912-13 a new rapid traction line was built from Saginaw to Bay City, on the east side of the river.

### Street Railways

Since 1863 the citizens of the Saginaws have had street car service, though it must be admitted that in those times there were lacking the conveniences of rapid transit in warm, comfortable cars, now enjoyed. The first action taken to connect Saginaw City with East Saginaw by street railway was taken in the former city, by the organization of the Saginaw City Street Railway Company, with a capital of thirty thousand dollars. David H. Jerome was president, George L. Burrows, secretary and treasurer, and S. S. Perkins, superintendent. The line was two and three-eighths miles in length, running from Hamilton and Mackinaw Streets down Hamilton to Madison, to Washington (Michigan), and thence to Genesee Street. At that time Genesee was merely a slab and saw dust road crossing the marsh, and during spring freshets was covered with water to a depth of four to six feet. The track of the street railway, which connected the business sections of the two cities, crossed the marsh and bayou on a trestle of piling, and thence by the bridge to the Bancroft House. A picture showing this terminal with one of the old horse cars then used will be found on page two hundred and forty-seven.

The street railway was opened to travel on December 8, 1863, with loud acclaim of the residents of Saginaw City who prided themselves on the enterprise which the railway displayed. It was, indeed, a step in advance in the slow march of progress made by the older city, and gave the residents a closer connection with the Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad,

which they had lost through their own folly. The railway gave employment to sixteen men and used thirty horses and five cars. The track was built with strap rails laid on wood stringers, the mode then followed, and the equipment was light enabling the trip from the Bancroft House to the Taylor House to be made in less than twenty minutes. The road proved a great accommodation to both cities and was well patronized.

The business men of "East Town," not to be outdone by their worthy neighbors, soon after organized the East Saginaw City Street Railway, and built a road from the Flint & Pere Marquette depot, at Potter and Washington Streets, up Washington to South Saginaw, a distance of three miles, with a short branch line on Brewster Street to Jefferson. The company was organized November 10, 1864, with a capital of sixty thousand dollars. William J. Bartow was president and superintendent, Moses B. Hess was treasurer, and T. E. Morris was secretary, and they and Jesse Hoyt and James F. Brown comprised the board of directors.

This railway was completed and made ready for travel on April 4, 1865, thus identifying South Saginaw with its prosperous neighbor, and bringing a considerable trade from the thriving village of twenty-five hundred people, to the city. The company owned seven cars, three of which ran regularly every twenty minutes the entire length of the line, using twenty-six horses and giving employment to eleven men.

Twenty years after, the twin cities having grown rapidly and together acquired a population of more than forty thousand, an expansion of the street railways seemed both desirable and expedient. "Little Jake" Seligman, who at that period was a most active spirit, secured control of the old East Saginaw City Street Railway, and gave the new corporation then formed the name of Union Street Railway. In order to reach the business and residence sections of Saginaw City, which hitherto had had only the limited service of the old horse car line, he organized the Central Bridge Company which purchased the Bristol Street Bridge, rebuilt the superstructure, and made it ready for use by the Union Street Railway.

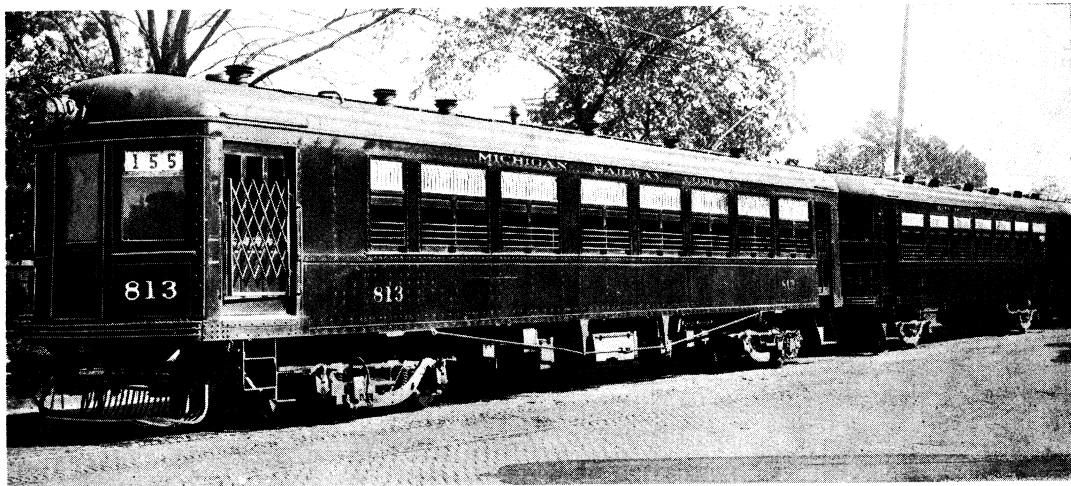
He then extended the line from Washington and Bristol Streets across the bridge, and by the way of Fayette and Washington (Michigan) Streets, to and up Court Street, and by Mackinaw Street to South Saginaw where the track joined the end of the old line. A loop was thus formed around which the dinky horse cars, with the words "Court House" painted in large script on their sides, and not much larger than the present enclosed motor "jitneys," with door and step at the rear end, ran on a regular schedule. The cars painted a bright blue ran west over the Bristol Bridge, through the business section of Saginaw City, across the Mackinaw Street Bridge to South Saginaw, and thence down Washington Street to the end of Potter Street, while the yellow cars reversed the route. The red cars ran from Potter Street over the same route as the blue cars, but at the Court House ran up and down Court Street for a distance of about one mile, and back to East Saginaw over the same route. This arrangement of schedules was quite an innovation in the transportation facilities of the Saginaws, and the citizens generally prided themselves in the excellent car service afforded.

The prospective opening of a competing street car line to Saginaw City had an instant effect on car fares. The old company, which had strenuously opposed the granting of another franchise, anticipated a complication of rates and, before the new road was completed, reduced its fare from seven to five cents and afforded six tickets for twenty-five cents. Of course no transfers were granted, but as the newer company reached a much larger territory at both sides of the business centers than the old road, it gained a good share of the travel between the two cities. Within a year after the

better service had been inaugurated the old street railway reduced its fares to three cents, or ten tickets for twenty-five cents, at which rates it was said to have made a profit. For the short run between the business centers it was decidedly the popular line, and enjoyed its full share of the city travel.

### Beginning of Rapid Transit

The use of electricity as a motive power for street cars was yet in the experimental stage, when it was decided by the Union Street Railway Company to abandon the old slow horse cars and adopt rapid transit. "Little Jake" Seligman, who had extended the line to Saginaw City and given the people an idea of what street car service should be, had disposed of his interests in the road; and in 1889 those in control of the property applied for a license to change the system to electric power, and to operate its cars by that medium. An ordinance was duly prepared and passed by the council, and the electrification of the street railway proceeded. The tracks were



AN ALL-STEEL ELECTRIC TRAIN ON THE MICHIGAN RAILWAY

not changed beyond bonding the rails, but the overhead work and the equipping of the cars with motors took some time, and it was not until the Fall of 1890 that electric power, which was furnished by the Bartlett Illuminating Company under contract, was turned on.

The operation of the first electric cars in the streets of Saginaw was one of the important events in the history of this city, and was proclaimed a distinct step forward in the march of progress. The equipment then used would look very crude today beside the cars now in use, as the first electric cars were merely the old bob-tail horse cars mounted on light motor-driven trucks. But when it is recalled that this street railway was the second or third street car line in the State to be electrified, and electric science as applied to traction purposes was still very much of an experiment, comparisons are hardly in order. It was all so new and wonderful that no one thought of criticizing the system in any way. Some persons, however, were quite timorous of the electric cars, and when they observed the sparks sometimes thrown off by the wheels or trolley, declared that nothing would ever induce them to ride on the "fire spitting devil" cars. A large portion of the inhabitants had no such fears or prejudices, as was evident by the patronage accorded the electric line.

The success attending the operation of the first electric cars on Washington Avenue to South Saginaw, led to the equipping of the West Side lines and that running out Genesee Avenue for electric traction, and in a short time all cars of this railway were being operated by that power. As the running time was materially shortened, fewer cars were required to maintain the old schedules, and in some instances the service was considerably improved. Meanwhile, the old Saginaw City Street Railway still operated its cars with horses, at the greatly reduced rate of fare, but in 1895, when it seemed imperative that the line should be changed to electricity, the entire property and franchises were sold at a good price to the other and more progressive company. As the old Saginaw City line afforded the shorter route between the business centers of the two cities, and the exigencies of the service demanded it, this line was electrified during the Summer, and early in December, 1895, the first electric cars were run across the Genesee Avenue Bridge and on Genesee and Michigan Avenues to the Court House. Afterward, the short stretch of railway out West Genesee to Union Park was also equipped for electric traction, and an extension built on Gratiot Street to near the city limits. New cars built especially for electric traction replaced the old converted cars, and the horse cars of a previous decade became only a memory.

### The Good Roads Movement

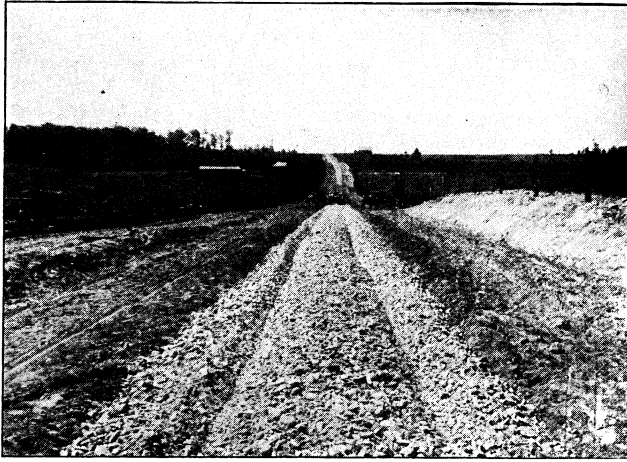
The prosperity of both city and rural districts is so dependent upon good roads, and the whole subject looms so large in the public eye, that it is highly important that an account of the progress made should be recorded here. The subject, however, like some others treated of in this work, is so big that not much more than a brief outline of the action that put the good roads movement into being, can be given. To treat it in an exhaustive manner would fill an entire volume, and would be beyond our purpose and intent.

The actual start for good roads, which for some time had been debated in this city, was made on July 12, 1898. At a meeting of the Retail Merchants' Association on that day Archibald Robertson, who had long espoused the cause of road improvement in this county, argued in favor of abolishing toll roads and bridges, within one year or eighteen months, and this object was finally accomplished. The association at the same meeting appointed a committee to present the matter in proper form to the Board of Supervisors, which was composed of A. Robertson, chairman, Charles H. Peters, Senior, and James H. Davitt.

At that time the old plank road out Genesee Avenue was still maintained in fair condition for about eight miles by an old plank road company, which claimed perpetual rights under an ancient charter; and there were several bridges still exacting toll from the people, including the Gratiot Road Bridge, and the Bristol Street Bridge in the City of Saginaw. All other roads, including the State Road to Bay City and those south and west beyond the Gratiot Street Bridge, and the Sheridan and Bridgeport Roads from the south limits of the city, were in wretched condition; and the roads through Buena Vista and Blumfield Townships were not much better. About the only good roads in the county were those built and maintained by Frankenmuth Township, which was the pioneer in road improvement in this county.

At the January session of 1899 of the Board of Supervisors, a committee was appointed by the chairman to act in conjunction with the committee of the Retail Merchants' Association; and the committee was composed of the following members: Reuben Beeman, of Swan Creek Town-





CONSTRUCTING STONE ROAD THROUGH SAND RIDGE

ship; John Gerber, of Kochville Township; Andred Stacey, of Bridgeport Township; and William Rebec, of the Second Ward, and Mr. Gage, of the Twelfth Ward, of the City of Saginaw. Upon the meeting of these committees in joint session the matter began to take definite form, and a proper course of action was taken.

From this preliminary action resulted the original County Road Bill, or Enabling Act, under which the subsequent road improvement was put through. The bill was drawn by James H. Davitt, with the aid and counsel of William L. Webber, John Moore, Henry M. Youmans and the members of the aforementioned committees. Upon completion of this work it was discovered that the bill was unconstitutional, and an amendment to the constitution was then in order. In April, 1899, the Legislature submitted a proper amendment to a vote of the people, which was carried by a majority of one hundred and forty-two thousand two hundred and forty-four. This enabled the counties as well as the townships of the entire State to build and improve their own highways.

The county road law, or Enabling Act, as passed by the Senate, was known as Act No. 419 of the Local Acts of 1899, and was approved by the governor on May 17, 1899. Saginaw County, however, operates under a specific act with reference to stone roads subject to State awards, the same as if it were operating under the State law. Senator H. S. Earle originated the bill in the Legislature creating a good roads commission.

After considerable delay in effecting organization, testing materials and arriving at the best methods of stone road construction, actual work was commenced in Buena Vista Township on June 14, 1902. This event was made the occasion for a celebration, which was planned and carried out in a highly satisfactory manner by Herman H. Eymer, then county road commissioner and the moving spirit of the celebration. At one o'clock in the afternoon of that day a long procession composed of county officials, speakers of the day, Companies C. and F., M. N. G., and representative citizens and farmers, moved from the Court House through the city to the Watrousville road where, just beyond the Pere Marquette tracks, the cere-



### The Cost of Road Improvement

During the last fifteen years nearly two million dollars have been expended (including the expenditures to be made in 1917) for building and maintaining good roads in Saginaw County, which now has two hundred and fifty miles of improved highways. The funds for these improvements was raised by the City of Saginaw and the several townships, and at February 1, 1915, were summarized as follows:

City of Saginaw, raised by tax.....	\$ 524,160.00
Townships, raised by tax.....	371,840.00
Townships, raised by bonds.....	361,000.00
State Awards .....	134,370.00

Total .....	\$1,391,370.00
-------------	----------------

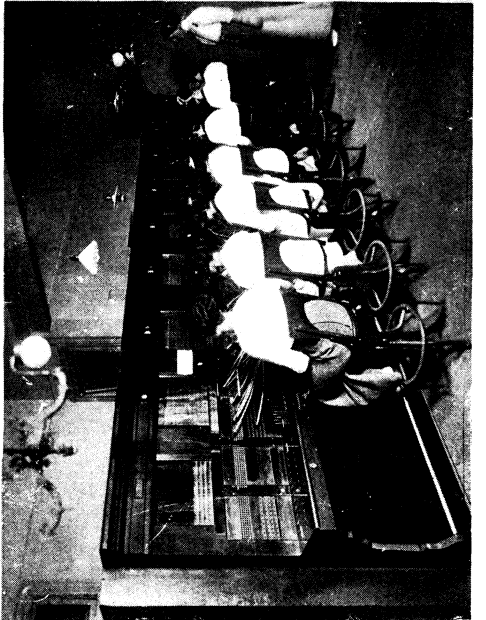
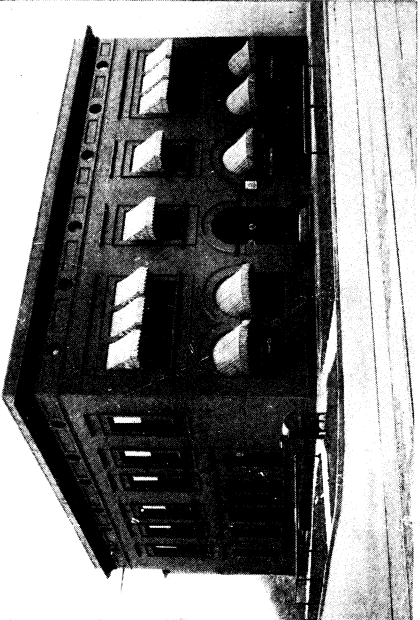
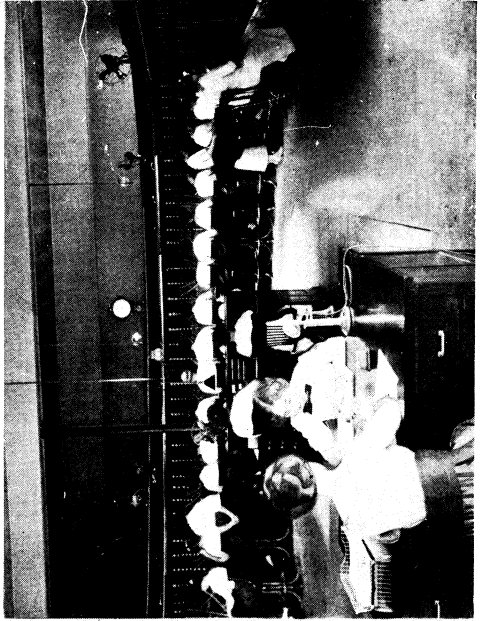
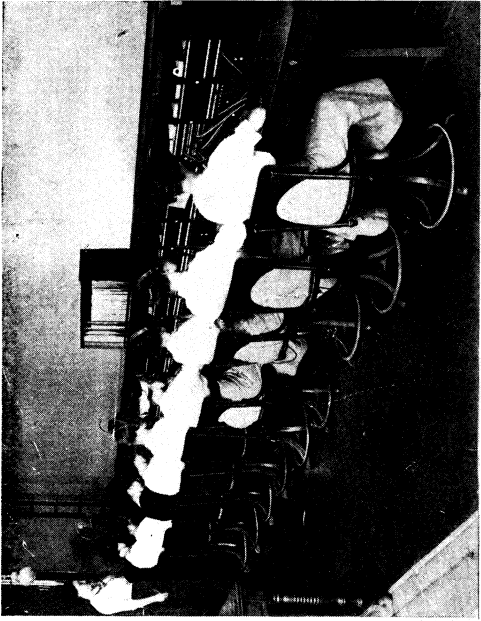
At the above date the improved roads built and maintained by this expenditure consisted of one hundred and fifty-eight miles of Macadam, twenty-one miles of gravel, twenty miles of shale, and fourteen and one-half miles of field stone, a total of two hundred and thirteen and one-half miles.

In 1916 the expenditures for improvement of highways amounted to one hundred and eighty-seven thousand six hundred and seventy-seven dollars, of which seventy-two thousand five hundred and sixteen dollars were for repairs of roads and bridges. Twenty-two and three-fourths miles of road were graded, fifteen miles were made into stone highways, or given stone bottoms and gravel dressing and otherwise improved. The Merrill Bridge span was reconstructed, a new forty-four foot steel and concrete bridge was built on East Street, and a sixty-foot steel and concrete bridge was put up on the Spaulding and Bridgeport Townline road. Twenty-six concrete culverts from four to sixteen feet in width were put in to replace plank bridges. In addition to this work more than forty miles of Macadam road were treated with oil automatically fed from tank wagons, the labor cost of applying it being thus reduced to an almost insignificant figure. The results of this treatment of stone roads is very satisfactory.

### The Value of State Awards

In aid of this work the money received from State awards for new construction amounted to twenty-eight thousand and sixty-three dollars, for repairs two thousand and eighty-five dollars, and from the automobile tax, for repairs, nineteen thousand three hundred and twenty-six dollars, a total of forty-nine thousand four hundred and seventy-four dollars. The total amount received from this source is nearly a quarter of a million dollars.

County Road Commissioner John W. Ederer, in his last annual report (1916), says: "All of the roads constructed by myself and my predecessors were good for what they were intended, namely, wagon roads. The traffic in the last five years has multiplied many times and the main travelled wagon roads today have become speedways and no material, no matter what kind it may be, will take care of the traffic unless some bituminous binder or concrete surface takes its place. The extensive repair of existing roads was made possible by the automobile tax of approximately twenty thousand dollars, which enabled us during the early part of the season to make the repairs which were made absolutely necessary by the unfavorable winter and spring of 1915-16. The City of Saginaw portion of this tax was used for repairs on roads commencing at the city limits and continuing away from the city. This tax has been the means of saving the roads of the county the past year, while it was not sufficient to do all that was necessary, it enabled us to come a little nearer it. I regard the repair and maintenance of roads as the most important of the many problems that will always confront the road commissioner."



THE SAGINAW TELEPHONE EXCHANGE OF THE MICHIGAN STATE TELEPHONE CO.

## CHAPTER XXIV

# BANKS AND BANKING

Lax Banking Laws — Advent of Territorial Banks — A Period of Speculation — Organization of "Wild Cat" Banks — Saginaw City Bank — Workings of the Law — How a Bank Created Specie — Financial Ruin — Currency of the Bank of Zilwaukee — Recovery Was Slow — Beginning of Sound Banking — Merchants National Bank — Home National — The First National Bank — Second National — Savings Bank of East Saginaw — East Saginaw National Bank — American Commercial and Savings Bank — George L. Burrows & Company — First National Bank of Saginaw — A Run on the Bank — Citizens National Bank — Saginaw County Savings Bank — The Strength of Saginaw Banks — A Comparative Statement — Banks and Financial Institutions in 1918.

FROM time immemorial the laws of all countries, concerning banks and paper currency, have been notorious in attempting to create value where none existed. Paper currency, which only promised to pay money, has often been confounded with money itself and been largely treated as possessing real value. But whenever the issue of this currency exceeded the money it promised to pay, its value depreciated to the amount of actual money in the country, or even lower, and often became worthless. Early legislation in the United States showed little wisdom in regard to banking, and until our National banking system was established, authorized excessive issues of paper currency and with no reliable security for bill-holders. Absolute security of the circulation and government inspection of banks are safeguards established scarcely more than fifty years ago.

The first bank in what is now the commonwealth of Michigan was the Bank of Detroit, organized under an act passed by the governor and judges of Michigan Territory September 19, 1806. This act was not approved by Congress and the bank was forced to suspend business and wind up its affairs. But it mattered little to the scant population which needed only a small amount of money to carry on its business. Detroit was a mere trading post on the outskirts of civilization, and the surrounding country, which was as Nature made it, was uninhabited by white men. The Indian brought in his furs and skins to be exchanged for beads, brass buttons, blankets, guns, and fire-water. No agricultural products sought a market there. Trade was done by "dicker," or barter of one kind of goods for another, and using only gold and silver as a circulating medium. There was little use for that commodity which is requisite to the successful conduct of a bank.

### Advent of Territorial Banks

While Michigan was still a territory there was no general banking law, and what banks there were were incorporated by special charters which were substantially the same. The capital of each bank was nominally one hundred thousand dollars; and the circulation of paper currency could be three times the amount of the capital paid in, no security such as bonds, stocks, mortgages or anything else, being required. The excessive issue apparently was based, not on the ability to redeem on presentation, but the ability to pay when the notes which had been taken for the bank bills issued were collected. The territorial banks, eight in number, were: Bank of Michigan, chartered in 1817; Bank of Monroe, in 1827; Bank of River Raisin, in 1832; and the

Bank of Pontiac, Bank of Washtenaw, Bank of Wisconsin, Bank of Erie and Kalamazoo, and the Bank of Merchants and Mechanics, chartered in 1835. All these banks failed mainly for want of a proper capital as compared with their circulation.

When the United States Bank of national fame was liquidated, its stock sold and paid into the public treasury, the banks in the several States were designated as banks of deposit, and were used for collecting, transferring and disbursing the public revenues. There was then a surplus in the United States Treasury, and after a long and exciting debate in Congress, in the session of 1835-6, it was determined to distribute this surplus among the several States in proportion to their representation in Congress, to be deposited in the several banks for safe-keeping.

### A Period of Speculation

This disposition of the public funds was followed by one of the wildest eras of speculation the country has ever seen. Money was abundant, the coffers of the government were overflowing, the country was prosperous and everybody seemed bent on making a fortune as quickly as possible. The banks of this State had abundant means on hand, and they, too, shared in the spirit of speculation. Why should not they make the most of the means at their command? They therefore loaned out the money which had been deposited with them to the red-hot speculators who were buying government land, were laying out and building cities in the wilderness, and were connecting them by roads and canals. These loans were given on what was supposed to be good security, such as real estate taken at its speculative value, or city lots in cities where scarcely a tree had been hewn down or a spade had turned the soil.

At the height of this period of speculation, in January, 1837, Michigan was admitted into the Union as a State. The exploitation of lands, wild and partly cultivated, continued unabated and lots in prospective villages and towns, which now are little or nothing but the recorded plats in the office of the register of deeds, to indicate their location, changed hands at excessive prices. This speculation was no doubt largely owing to the great amount of paper money afloat in the State. It took a great deal of the inflated currency to buy property, so real estate was called high, when it really was the money that had depreciated in value.

The reaction from this inflation came only too soon. Hard times oppressed the country. The government had use for the public money, and called upon the banks with which it had been deposited to return it in coin. But the banks, which had loaned it out to speculators, had it not; and the speculators were unable to realize even their investments at the fancy prices at which they had been made. The security for such loans proved of so little value that the banks were sore distressed to meet their obligations to the government. In this cramped position the banks, in order to save themselves, were compelled to proceed with the utmost caution and specie payments were suspended. They redeemed their paper currency as rapidly as they could, and refused to put it out again, resulting in a scarcity of money. From a superfluity of currency a little while before, there now was not enough to supply the necessary demands of business.

From this financial condition the people were clamorous for relief; and there was an outcry against the chartered banks. They were declared to be monopolies hostile to the spirit of our free institutions. Everything else in this country was free, therefore banking should be free, they argued. The situation was critical and something had to be done. On March 15, 1837, a general banking law was enacted, making the business free to all. By its

provisions ten or more persons could organize themselves into a corporation for the transaction of the banking business, and were subject only to the law. The general provisions of this law were fairly drawn, except that in the two important features which most concerned the public—security to its bill-holders, and a *bona fide* capital to secure the depositors—there were none adequate. The capital of each bank must be not less than fifty thousand dollars, and not more than three hundred thousand, divided into shares of fifty dollars each; and the issue of paper currency could be two and one-half times the capital paid in. The interest on discounts could not exceed seven per cent; and the security for payment of the bank's obligations were to be bonds and mortgages on real estate, to be held by the bank commissioner—a State officer, and the specie in the vaults of the bank. Few banks had this specie, though the law required thirty per cent. of the capital to be paid in in "legal money of the United States."

### Organization of the "Wild Cat" Banks

Under the banking law forty-nine banks were organized and went into operation up to April 3, 1838, when the Legislature suspended the provisions of the law as to the creation of new associations. The nominal aggregate capital was about four million dollars, which added to that of the fifteen chartered banks, namely seven millions, made the nominal aggregate capital in the State, in the Spring of 1838, about eleven million dollars. The circulation of paper currency must have reached at that time ten million dollars or more—a very large amount considering the small need of money for commercial and manufacturing enterprises.

The population of the entire State was only about one hundred thousand, and was of essentially an agricultural character, while the whole of the vast territory north of the old territorial road was almost an unbroken wilderness. Pioneers were hewing down its forests, breaking up its oak openings, and shaking their teeth loose with ague chills over its miasmatic marshes. They were doing well if by hard toil in Summer they raised enough produce and fodder on their lands to keep their families and their cattle comfortably through the Winter. They had little to sell and but little use for money. The amount of bank bills in circulation was at least one hundred dollars for every man, woman and child in the State, which illustrates the extremity to which the banking mania carried the people.

### The Saginaw City Bank

Among the banks organized in the Summer of 1837 was the Saginaw City Bank, which was promoted by some of the leading men of the place. Its president was Norman Little, the projector of the promising settlement, and the cashier was Nelson Smith, a prominent settler who in the same year built the first sailing vessel on the Saginaw River. Though this institution was classed with those banks termed "wild cats," it was undoubtedly organized in good faith, with the best intentions—to further the material interests and advancement of this valley, and in all probability was honestly conducted. It had a brief existence, however, going down in the financial crash of 1838, an echo of its affairs being heard in the legal proceedings to require from the county the payment of a bond, in the sum of ten thousand dollars, which had been negotiated by the bank, but not all of the proceeds paid over to the county treasury. (See Chapter VII, pages 109-10.)

It is unfortunate that so little record of this primitive bank, after a lapse of eighty years, is now to be found. A careful search of the county records reveals nothing of tangible evidence concerning its career. About all the direct evidence of its existence is some of its original paper currency, bearing date of December 26, 1837, which apparently was circulated at that time.

Whether it was ever redeemed by the bank, or was in the hands of unfortunate holders at the time of its collapse, is not known. At any rate a large package of the paper money, which shows more or less handling, was laid away by somebody, and only came to light about twenty years ago.

In clearing out the storage vaults of the old Home National Bank, on January 1, 1896, when the Second National Bank of Saginaw moved into the banking office which years before had been occupied by the Merchants' National Bank, the old currency was found and was justly regarded as a real curiosity. The old Saginaw City Bank was capitalized at fifty thousand dollars, but how large an amount of bank bills was circulated is not known. It may by the old law have been one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars, and whatever the amount outstanding, the collapse of the banking system brought a heavy loss and distress upon the people. The greatly inflated circulation, so inadequately secured by their genuine or pretended capital of specie in vaults, stores, grocery stocks, log houses or pretentious frame houses, was in the hands of people who had sold their wheat, corn and pork for it, or who had performed manual labor for it, and was all swept away by the great financial storm, never to appear again.

#### Working of the Law

While some of the banks organized in 1837-8 were *bona fide* institutions, the law was taken advantage of by dishonest men to practice the grossest frauds and swindles. The law practically permitted these frauds, and the State officials, though striving honestly to do their duty, were powerless to prevent them. The State was large, the swindlers were many, and the bank commissioners could not be everywhere and have their hands on all of them at the same time. As a consequence of the physical conditions of the country and the lax provisions of the banking law, banks were established in the smallest villages and hamlets, and even in the most inaccessible places, which it was not likely the holders of the bank bills could ever find, and hence the banks would not be asked to redeem the bills.

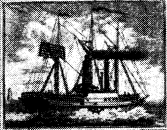

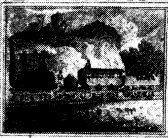
A traveller once coming through the forests of Shiawassee County, on his way to Saginaw, when the country was very new, with only here and there a log cabin in a little clearing, found a trail which had never been worked and was principally indicated by "blazed" trees. Toward night he came upon a fork in the path, and was uncertain which branch to take. He had not gone far upon the one which he finally chose, before he became satisfied that it was only a path used for hauling out wood or timber. But as the day was late he had no time to retrace his steps, and pushed on in hope of reaching a human habitation in which to spend the night. He had not proceeded far when in a small clearing before him there loomed a large frame structure, across the front of which was a conspicuous sign "Bank of Shiawassee." It was one of the "wild cats" quartered in the native haunts of that animal, the depths of the forest.

The Bank of Sandstone, in Jackson County, had an extended circulation which was put out by an ingenious plan. It loaned a large sum of money — its own paper currency — on lots of some imaginary city, to a man who went through the State buying everything he could convert. He bought horses, cattle, sheep, swine, produce of all kinds and everything which could be turned into real money, at the seller's price, paying for it with the bills of the Bank of Sandstone. Very few persons knew where Barry, the seat of the bank, was, or any good reason why the bills of its bank were not as good as any other, so he had little trouble in passing them. Thus the paper currency of the Bank of Sandstone had a wide circulation, but the holders might as well have had so much brown wrapping paper instead.



**THREE**

MICHIGAN *179* SAFETY FUND. *1776*

**The Saginaw City Bank**

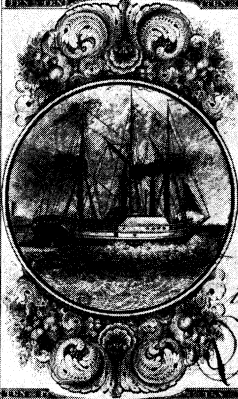



Will pay **THREE DOLLARS** on demand  
to the Bearer or Order.

*Wilson Samuels* Cash. *Norman Little* Pres.

SAGINAW 26<sup>th</sup> Dec 1837

**THREE**

Michigan *179* Safety Fund. *1776*

**The Saginaw City Bank**

Will pay **TEN DOLLARS** on demand  
to the Bearer or Order.

*Wilson Samuels* Cash. *Norman Little* Pres.

SAGINAW 26<sup>th</sup> Dec 1837

**TEN**

Michigan *179* Safety Fund. *1776*





**The Saginaw City Bank**

Will pay **FIVE DOLLARS** on demand  
to the Bearer or Order.

*Wilson Samuels* Cash. *Norman Little* Pres.

SAGINAW 26<sup>th</sup> Dec 1837




**FIVE**

OLD CURRENCY OF THE SAGINAW CITY BANK, CIRCULATED IN 1837

The banking law required a certain amount of specie to be kept in the vaults of the bank, but this provision was evaded by some banks in the most flagrant manner. The same specie served for exhibition for a dozen banks, at various intervals; and the bonds and mortgages which were deposited were upon "city" lots in the woods, or on real estate at fictitious values. The notes of one "wild cat" bank were often held as capital for another wild cat, and they fraudulently put out a much larger circulation than the law allowed. In many other ways they practiced outrageous swindles upon the public.

It was told of Alpheus Felch, afterward governor of this State, that while he was a State bank examiner, as he was going from one bank to another he noticed a familiar look in the boxes containing the silver held by various banks. Though finding all the banks properly supplied with coin, he suddenly turned back on his course, re-examined the banks and found them without coin. The banks had by preconcerted arrangement kept the specie in boxes ahead of the commissioner, a man named Isaac Alden driving the team which carried the coin from bank to bank for the commissioner to examine.

### How a Bank Created Specie

Among the nefarious practices of this unstable period was the "creating" of specie by a banker named Lewis Goddard. He had a unique theory in regard to new bank bills fresh and crisp from the printers, well adapted to the times when the banks were required to redeem their bills at their own counters in specie. As the banks had little, if any, coin, he believed there must be some way of obtaining it. He said it was not necessary for a bank to have specie of its own; a bank should create specie. The pioneer stockholders and directors were bewildered and unduly influenced by his reasoning on creating specie, and permitted him to carry out his theory.

"What," said he, "is a bank good for unless it is well enough conducted to create its own specie? In order to create specie of your own you must exchange your circulation for it, and take your bills away from home so they will be slow in returning for redemption—taking away the specie you have created. The way to obtain this specie by exchange is: first get the bills of other banks with your bills, take these bills of the other banks to their counters, get the gold on them, bring it home and put it in your own vaults. By this means you have created specie and provided your bank with the material money for redeeming your bills."

This was a remarkable plan, peculiar of the times and worthy of the projector. The bank suspended, and in court proceedings which followed an employee declared, "they broke the bank the first night."

A Legislative Report, dated January 18, 1839, stated that "no species of fraud and evasion of law, which the ingenuity of dishonest corporations has ever devised, have not been practiced under the banking act. The loan of specie from established corporations became an ordinary traffic, and the same money set in motion a number of institutions. Specie certificates, verified by oath, were everywhere exhibited, although these very certificates had been cancelled at the moment of their creation by a draft for a similar amount; and yet such subterfuges were pertinaciously insisted upon as fair business transactions, sanctioned by custom and precedent. Stock notes were given for subscriptions to stock and counted as specie, and thus not a cent of real capital existed, beyond the small sums paid in by the upright and unsuspecting farmer and mechanic, whose little savings and honest name were necessary to give confidence and credit. Quantities of paper were

checked out of the banks by individuals who had not a cent in bank, with no security beyond the verbal understanding that notes of other banks should be returned at some future time."

### Financial Ruin

As a natural result of the speculative mania, inflation of the currency and the fraud and trickery of the banks, a violent reaction set in in the Summer of 1838, and all the wild cat banks were at once in dire distress. It was either a case of redeeming their currency in specie, or suspend, and eventually all were forced to the latter alternative. When all the banks had been swept out of existence there were bills afloat representing millions of dollars. Many of these were in the hands of *bona fide* holders who lost heavily thereby, while some had never been in circulation, and were then given away promiscuously. Children used to play with them, and in the rural districts, where paper hangings were scarce, people papered their rooms with them making the walls of a log cabin look rather grotesque, and they were thrown into old garrets, closets and bookcases, to be at last forgotten by their once prosperous holders.

### Currency of the Bank of Zilwaukee

In this connection Ezra Rust related an amusing incident relating to the bank bills of a proposed banking institution, styled the Bank of Zilwaukee. In 1849 Johnson Brothers came to Saginaw Valley, and at a point on the river which marked the head of deep water navigation, laid out and started a village which they confidently expected would become the metropolis of the valley. Having not the slightest idea that the Carrollton bar would ever be dredged to admit a large class of lake vessels above to Saginaw City, they proceeded to build a dock, warehouse, saw mill, several houses, and opened a store stocked with general merchandise. From clear cork pine from the forests of the Cass River, they cut heavy planks and built a road to Saginaw, thereby connecting their embryo city with civilization. To further their aims they planned to open a bank of their own, to be named the Bank of Zilwaukee, and had a quantity of very fetching currency printed for its circulation. But their hopes of building up a prosperous community were not realized, for East Saginaw, although occupying a no more favorable location, was forging rapidly ahead, and about 1858 they failed.

At this juncture their saw mill property was purchased by James H. Hill, and Mr. Rust, who had recently come to Saginaw, was placed in charge of the lumbering operations. At intervals during the following years, one or other of the Johnsons would come into the mill office and look longingly at an old iron safe in the corner, of the ancient kind which opened with a large brass key. Several times they remarked that there might be some their personal papers in the safe that they were looking for, but as the key had been lost Mr. Rust refused to break open the safe, merely to satisfy the curiosity of its former owners.

About 1863, when the operations of Mr. Hill at Zilwaukee were concluded, the affairs there were wound up and the office records and furniture were moved to Saginaw. The last thing to meet the eye of Ezra was the old iron safe within which he had never looked. The mystery surrounding Johnsons' actions in relation to it, came back to him in a flash, and he resolved to open it. Securing sledges and chisels the door was soon forced open, revealing to their astonished gaze package upon package of clean and crisp bills of the Bank of Zilwaukee, which apparently had never been circulated. The Bank, indeed, had never opened owing to the failure of its projectors. Hastily filling his pockets with the bogus yet interesting currency, Mr. Rust replaced the safe door and returned to Saginaw.



SPECIMEN OF THE UNCIRCULATED CURRENCY OF THE BANK OF ZILWAUKIE

For some time he displayed the paper money of the bank that never existed, to the great amusement of his friends; and in writing to some others in the Union Army he slipped in a bill or two as a curiosity. The effect of this action was surprisingly manifested. In an incredibly short time letters by the score began to pour in on Mr. Rust thanking him for the "good" currency, and having one common appeal. "Send us more of that pretty money," they said, "the people down here like it better than their own shin-plasters."

#### The Recovery Was Slow

The financial highway travelled by our Michigan pioneers illustrates the weakness and dangers of a system which strives to create something from nothing, and brings out in strong contrast the strength and security of the National Banking and Federal Reserve Systems. To reach our present national financial soundness, with its stable yet elastic currency, the country passed along a road stewn with the ruins of corporations, business firms and individuals. Looking backward it is hard to understand how men of ordinary wisdom and prudence could have been led into such a wild and reckless system of banking as existed eighty to fifty years ago. Individual and State credit were ruined, and all suffered severely for it. Michigan, which was being rapidly settled by a sturdy New England population, received a check in her immigration and commercial prosperity, from which she did not recover for many years. Saginaw Valley severely felt the depression, and not until the coming of enterprising men with capital to develop the timber resources of the Michigan forests, did the county awaken to industrial and commercial activity.

#### Beginning of Sound Banking

The first banking institution in Saginaw Valley conducted on sound and enduring principles of finance was the bank of W. L. P. Little & Company. This private banking office was organized at East Saginaw in November, 1855, with a capital of ten thousand dollars, Jesse Hoyt being the silent partner. The bank occupied rooms up stairs in the Exchange Block, at Water and Genesee Streets, and for several years was the only financial institution in this section of the State, extending north as far as Alpena and Cheboygan. In August, 1859, the banking office was removed to a ground floor room in the new Bancroft House Block on Genesee Street.

In October, 1856, James F. Brown, who had come to East Saginaw in 1853 and found employment in the mercantile house of Mr. Little, became connected with the bank in the capacity of general utility man. He built fires, swept out the office, collected checks and drafts, attended to the correspondence, received and paid out money, and did about every thing else in connection with the financial relations of the people. About 1860 the capital of the bank was increased to twenty thousand dollars, which was ample for the business needs of the times. Through all financial storms of this formative period, this private bank survived with the full confidence of the community.

Meanwhile, the city had grown and prospered to a surprising degree and in August, 1865, the organization of a bank under the new national banking law, was first discussed. In October of that year a charter was granted, and on January 1, 1866, the banking office of W. L. P. Little & Company was merged with the new bank, having a capital of two hundred thousand dollars, which was named the Merchants' National Bank of East Saginaw. William L. P. Little was president, James F. Brown was cashier, and Douglas Hoyt was assistant cashier, of the new bank. Upon the death of Mr. Little, on December 9, 1867, James F. Brown was elected president of the bank, Douglas Hoyt, cashier, and L. C. Storrs, assistant cashier. Later, when Mr. Storrs became assistant treasurer of the Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad, the office of assistant cashier of the bank was abolished.

The old banking office on Genesee Street, though centrally and conveniently located, was far from being adequate to the business transacted, and in 1872, when the capital and surplus of the bank amounted to three hundred and seventy thousand dollars, an elegant stone-front bank building was erected on North Washington Street, at a cost of fifty thousand dollars. This modern fire-proof structure with large vaults extending through the third floor, and with massive walnut furniture and fixtures, was one of the show places of the city, and the office was well arranged for the transaction of a large business. For the last twenty-two years this building has been occupied by the Second National Bank.

The growth of the Merchants' National Bank is shown by its increase in deposits, from 1866 to 1874:

April, 1866 .....	\$192,000	March, 1871 .....	\$334,000
April, 1867 .....	241,000	April, 1872 .....	445,000
April, 1868 .....	221,000	Sept., 1873 (before panic) .	373,000
April, 1869 .....	256,000	May, 1874 (after panic) ..	236,000
March, 1870 .....	305,000		

An exhibit of the condition of this bank is shown in the statement of May 6, 1881:

Resources		Liabilities	
Loans and discounts....	\$557,464.88	Capital stock .....	\$200,000.00
U. S. Bonds.....	125,000.00	Surplus .....	100,000.00
Stocks, mortgages, etc...	31,500.00	Undivided profits .....	69,848.74
Due from banks.....	115,141.56	National bank notes...	112,500.00
Real estate .....	54,523.00	Individual deposits .....	522,790.10
Current expenses, taxes.	4,613.28	Other deposits .....	78,693.57
Specie and currency ....	186,964.69		
Redemption fund, etc....	8,625.00		
	<hr/>		<hr/>
	\$1,083,832.41		\$1,083,832.41

### The Home National Bank

Early in 1882 the Home National Bank was chartered under the National Banking Association, and took over the business of the Merchants' National. The new bank was organized by Wellington R. Burt, Temple E. Dorr, William C. McClure, James H. Booth and others, and began business in the banking office formerly occupied by its predecessor. W. R. Burt was president, James H. Booth was cashier, and A. H. Comstock held the office of assistant cashier. It was the largest banking institution in Saginaw Valley, having a capital of three hundred thousand dollars and a surplus of fifty-four thousand, and because of its strong financial backing and conservative management enjoyed the patronage of the largest lumber operators.

In April, 1882, Asa W. Field was engaged as teller of this bank, and from that time until its liquidation in 1896, with the exception of a few months, he continued in this position and that of assistant cashier. No banking official in this city was better and more favorably known. He was a close student of finance and was very well informed on the best banking systems and forms. He died in the Fall of 1914.

Every institution serving the public must run its course, and in the case of the Home National this was accomplished on December 31, 1895, the date the business and banking property was sold to the Second National Bank. Some time before, Mr. Burt, in the belief that Saginaw was on a downward course and would never recover from the depression following the decline of lumbering and salt manufacture, had determined to close out all his business interests here. Enlisting the co-operation of his friend, Temple E. Dorr (in whose combined interests the control of the stock was vested) he forced the liquidation of a very successful bank much against the wishes of the other stockholders. In some respects his hasty and arbitrary action touched violation of the national banking act, but as no formal protest was made nothing came of it. Much feeling as to the injustice of the action, in respect to the interests of other stockholders, was aroused, which called to mind his similar procedure in closing up the tool works, the saw and file works, and his efforts to that end in the case of the Saginaw & Bay Salt Company, several years before. Whatever credit is due Mr. Burt for his benefactions in behalf of education and civic progress for the benefit of the people, and of which full account has been given in the preceding pages, little may be said of him in a complimentary way concerning his disposition and policy toward industrial or commercial projects.

Other private banks in the early period of banking in East Saginaw were: the Saginaw Valley Bank, established by Bliss, Fay & Company in 1863, which did an extensive business for a time; Thurber & Hollon, opened in 1868, and John Gallagher & Company, in 1870. The business of these banks was well conducted for several years, but owing to the increase of national and savings banks here, the capital employed by the smaller institutions was withdrawn and otherwise invested.

### The First National Bank

Shortly after the National Banking Association became an actuality Erastus T. Judd, Samuel H. Webster, William H. Warner, DeWitt C. Gage and others organized the First National Bank of East Saginaw, which was the first institution to be established in this valley under federal supervision. Its capital was fifty thousand dollars, but was later increased to one hundred thousand; and its banking office was in the Bancroft House Block, on Washington Street. A number of years after the bank built a three-story structure at Genesee and Cass (Baum) Streets, in which it transacted con-

siderable business for an extended period. The first officers were E. T. Judd, president, C. K. Robinson, cashier, and L. A. Clark, teller. Afterward Mr. Clark was elected cashier, which position he held until Clarence L. Judd assumed the responsibilities of the office. In the Fall of 1896 this bank became deeply involved by reason of some very questionable lumbering investments, and was forced to suspend to the considerable loss of its stockholders. This was the only bank in Saginaw that ever closed its doors because of unlawful and reckless action of its executive officers.

### **Savings Bank of East Saginaw**

Until 1872 there was no savings bank or special facilities to encourage the saving of money by thrifty people, but in March of that year Henry C. Potter, Edwin Eddy, Augustus Schupp and others organized the Savings Bank of East Saginaw. The bank was incorporated April 1 under State charter, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. Its banking office was in the basement of the Merchants' National Bank building, on Washington Street. H. C. Potter was president, Edwin Eddy, vice-president, and A. Schupp was treasurer of the bank.

As shown by the statement made July 4, 1887, this bank had a surplus of thirty-eight thousand five hundred and seventy-eight dollars; and its deposits amounted to six hundred seventy thousand eight hundred and forty-six dollars. Its loans on real estate and other securities totaled five hundred and sixty-eight thousand two hundred and three dollars, and bonds of East Saginaw and school districts of the county amounted to thirty-one thousand nine hundred dollars. In 1887 the directors were: H. C. Potter, William L. Webber, Edwin Eddy, W. J. Bartow, George C. Warner, Emil Moores, H. C. Potter, Junior, James B. Peter, Charles Lee and Henry Melchers.

In 1890, having outgrown its office facilities in the bank building on Washington Street, the Savings Bank purchased the property at 310-12 Genesee Avenue, and erected thereon an imposing four-story brown stone office and store building with a frontage of forty feet. The west half of the ground floor was occupied by the banking office, and the remainder of the building was leased to Henry Feige for his large furniture business. From that time the business of the Savings Bank increased very rapidly and at length reached such a volume that it was necessary to make use of the entire building. The structure was entirely remodeled and the floor space arranged to meet the needs of the future as well as those of the present. The banking office was refitted with modern furniture in marble and mahogany, and the private offices and ante-rooms were sumptuously furnished. In May, 1907, the business and valuable property of the Savings Bank was absorbed by the Bank of Saginaw, which has since occupied the banking office for its East Side bank.

### **East Saginaw National Bank**

The national banks of Saginaw were augmented in 1884 by the organization of the East Saginaw National Bank, whose office was at 108 South Washington Avenue. John G. Owen, who was largely instrumental in organizing the bank, was president; Edwin Eddy was vice-president, and S. S. Wilhelm was cashier. Its capital stock was one hundred thousand dollars. As shown by a statement of its condition on August 1, 1887, its surplus and undivided profits amounted to twenty-two thousand two hundred and fifty-three dollars. At that time the directors were: Max Heavenrich, D. B. Freeman, Louis Quinnin, Edwin Eddy, William B. Baum, and S. S. Wilhelm, president. William T. Wickware was cashier. The bank outgrew

its cramped quarters and removed to the office in the Bliss Block, vacated by the Michigan Central Railroad ticket office, now the store of J. Will Grant. A few years later the bank liquidated its affairs.

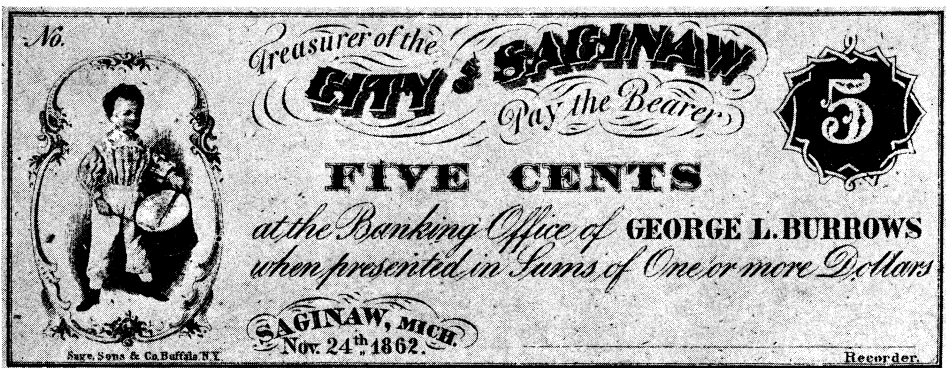
### The American Commercial & Savings Bank

In the Fall of 1891, believing that the business interests of the city would appreciate the services of a bank extending liberal facilities to the people, a number of enterprising men organized the American Commercial and Savings Bank, with a paid-in capital of one hundred thousand dollars. Isaac Bearer, who was one of the prime movers in this project, was elected president; William L. Webber, vice-president; and George W. Emerick, cashier. The bank was located in a two-story office building adjoining the Bearer Building on the south, where it remained until 1898, when the bank purchased the bank building of the old First National and moved into it. William Barie meanwhile became president of the bank, and Hugo G. Wesener, who had been assistant cashier, was advanced to the cashiership. On January 1, 1899, the business and property of the bank was turned over to the Bank of Saginaw, which at once moved its East Side office to the banking office of the former at Genesee Avenue and Baum Street. The affairs of the American Commercial and Savings Bank were then closed and its stock liquidated.

### George L. Burrows & Company

The first solid financial institution at Saginaw City was the private bank of George L. Burrows & Company, which was formed in 1862. It was at a time when banking facilities of the lumber town were greatly needed, and to provide a suitable counting room for his bank Mr. Burrows in the following year, built the first brick block on Court Street. In 1869 Fred H. Potter, for years well known as the veteran banker of the West Side, became associated with the Burrows Bank. With the rapid development of the lumber and salt business of the Saginaw Valley, the bank extended its scope of usefulness, and came to be regarded as one of the solid institutions of its kind in Michigan.

The enormous transactions and business of the Rust Brothers and other lumbermen interested in large timber land deals, were largely made through the Burrows Bank, and it acquired a reputation for conservative management. In the financial panics of 1873 and subsequent years this bank was justly



SCRIPT OF THE CITY OF SAGINAW, CIRCULATED IN THE EIGHTEEN-SIXTIES



held to be one of the strongest banks in the State, having, it was said, more specie in its vaults than many large city banks of two or three times the liability. After a successful career of fifty-three years, nearly all of which was spent in the one banking office, its business was taken over in 1915 by the Bank of Saginaw.

### The First National Bank of Saginaw

This bank of long and honorable career, like some others of this city, had its origin in a private banking institution. In 1866 the banking house of Miller, Braley & Company was formed by Harry Miller and Alfred F. R. Braley, which soon acquired a profitable business. So successful and solid was this bank that, as the city grew and greater banking facilities were needed, it was merged into the First National Bank of Saginaw. This bank was organized in 1870 with J. E. Shaw as president and Smith Palmer as cashier. Mr. Smith was succeeded by Alfred F. R. Braley who continued in the office of cashier until his death in August, 1880. In 1881 the officers were: Ammi W. Wright, president; Charles W. Wells, vice-president; William Powell, cashier, and Smith Palmer, assistant cashier. These officers and Reuben Kimball and Gordon Corning composed the board of directors.

The condition of this bank on May 9, 1881, is shown by the following statement:

Resources	Liabilities
Loans and discounts....\$753,860.14	Capital . . . . . \$200,000.00
U. S. bonds . . . . . 50,000.00	Surplus and profits . . . . 71,827.53
Due from banks . . . . . 7,787.70	Bank notes outstanding. 45,000.00
Furniture and fixtures.. 3,000.00	Deposits . . . . . 560,273.49
Current expenses . . . . . 5,226.14	Notes rediscounted . . . . 38,592.22
Specie and other cash... 93,569.26	
Redemption fund . . . . . 2,250.00	
<hr/>	<hr/>
\$915,693.24	\$915,693.24

Afterward Thomas W. Stalker assumed the office of cashier, which position he held until the bank was absorbed by the Bank of Saginaw, in 1898. For several years after, its office was used by the Saginaw County Savings Bank, which had been organized by Richard Khuen, A. P. Bliss, Isaac Parsons and others, but it in turn was consolidated with the Bank of Saginaw which, by previous acquirement of banks in this city, has become the largest bank in this section of Michigan.

### A Run on the Bank

Many years ago, when confidence in our banks was less firm and universal than now, there was a miniature run on the national bank at Saginaw City. It started from so ridiculous a cause as to be a matter of amusement to all who knew about it. Dark whispers passed from ear to ear that "something was rotten in Denmark," or, in other words, that a *heavy* depositor had called for his money to the great inconvenience of the bank, and the shaking of its financial base. It was a very nonsensical piece of business, and according to A. F. R. Braley, cashier of the bank, publicity was simply mixing the sublime with the ludicrous.

"On Wednesday last," said Mr. Braley, "a German by the name of Schick, who keeps a saloon in the city, came to me and asked me to sign a petition for him to obtain a renewal of his license. This I refused to do, stating that I had signed one already and that the law did not contemplate a man signing more than one petition for the same purpose. At this reply Mr. Schick became very much incensed and said:

“ ‘Mr. Burrows, he sign four petitions, why you no sign mine, eh?’

“ ‘Mr. Burrows may sign a hundred if he pleases, that is none of my business,’ I replied.

“ ‘Well, I got money in this bank and I take him out.’

“ ‘Do so, sir, you know the method to pursue in the matter.’

“ ‘Well, I draw my check and I demand my money.’

“ ‘All right,’ I said, turning away. ‘Mr. teller pay Mr. Schick the balance of his account.’

“This was done and Mr. Schick’s check for thirty-three dollars and fifty cents was immediately cashed, to his great astonishment, and he departed. Yesterday we were surprised and somewhat annoyed by a constant influx of depositors with their several checks calling for sums of from five to twenty dollars, to the number of some thirty or forty. This constituted the run on the bank in which the footings of money paid out did not anywhere near approximate other busy days within the month.

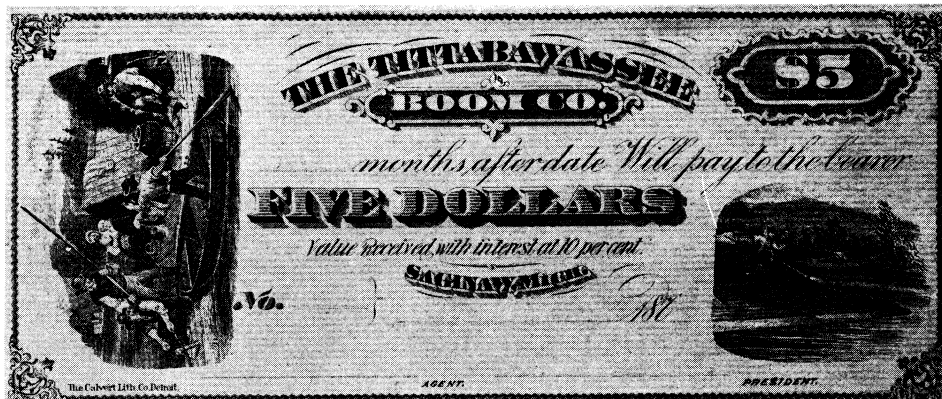
“After standing on the corner for several hours talking about the grievances of their friend Schick, and noting the usual heavy deposits being made in the bank by the merchants and regular customers, the money in their pockets began to grow heavy, and one by one they slipped back inside and redeposited it. No person with knowledge of the strength of this bank could for a moment have thought of its failure. It never yet had to sue for the payment of a note. It has not one dollar charged to profit and loss account, and can pay one dollar and fifteen cents on the dollar tomorrow, if demanded. This is stated to show the ludicrous character of the whole business.”

### **Citizens’ National Bank**

The second national bank to be organized at Saginaw City was the Citizens’ National, which was chartered in October, 1880. Daniel Hardin was president, Lewis Penoyer, vice-president, and D. W. Briggs was cashier. The officers and C. H. Green and Benton Hanchett composed the board of directors. Its capital was one hundred thousand dollars; and it did a general banking business including the “issuing of exchange upon the leading cities of this and other countries.” On October 5, 1887, its surplus and undivided profits amounted to fifty-nine thousand two hundred and ninety-two dollars; and its total resources were six hundred fifty-five thousand six hundred and seventy dollars. Not long after, because of differences among the directors, this bank was liquidated, the Bank of Saginaw and the Commercial National Bank resulting from the dissolution.

### **Saginaw County Savings Bank**

The organization of this bank, which was the first of its class at Saginaw City, was effected on December 1, 1886, but it was not until February 1, 1887, that it began business with a capital of fifty thousand dollars. The banking office was located in the Parsons Block, at Hamilton and Ames Streets. In 1905 it removed its office to the old First National Bank building, at Hamilton and Court Streets, the national bank having dissolved several years preceding. Until January 1, 1907, the Savings Bank was purely a savings institution, but on that date the articles of association were changed to permit the transaction of a general commercial business. Like other local banks, it was absorbed by the Bank of Saginaw, Charles A. Khuen, its president and former treasurer, becoming vice-president and assistant cashier of the larger institution.



**NOTE SCRIPT OF THE TITTAWASSEE BOOM COMPANY**

This script circulated as currency in the Eighteen-seventies and drew interest at the rate of ten per cent. per annum. At that time this was the prevailing rate of interest on loans, and savings deposits and certificates drew six per cent. interest.

**The Strength of Saginaw Banks**

It has been truly said that the banks of a city may be regarded as the guardian of the people's exchequer, and as a barometer of the growth and prosperity of any community. A wise, conservative banking system, tinctured with a progressive spirit, is one of the corner stones of financial prosperity, and in this respect Saginaw is in the front rank of cities of its class. In times of panic and business depression our banks have ever stood the stress and strain without serious disturbance, and there has been a notable growth in the business transacted, that could come only from wise and conservative management, aided by steady progress of the community.

In 1907 the capital, surplus and deposits of the five national and State banks were as follows:

	Capital	Surplus	Deposits
Second National . . . . .	\$200,000.00	\$563,478.00	\$3,955,502.49
People's Savings . . . . .	50,000.00	65,243.91	894,036.81
Commercial National . . . . .	100,000.00	128,198.82	1,005,889.83
Bank of Saginaw . . . . .	400,000.00	423,382.57	5,587,088.60
Saginaw County Savings . . . . .	50,000.00	94,976.51	873,015.02
	<u>\$800,000.00</u>	<u>\$1,275,279.81</u>	<u>\$12,315,532.75</u>
George L. Burrows & Company (private bank, no report.)			

**A Comparative Statement**

A condensed comparative statement of the Saginaw banks for 1897, 1907 and 1917, shows a remarkable growth of banking business in twenty years, and reflects the development of manufactures and mercantile trade of the city in that period:

	Resources		
	May 14, 1897	May 20, 1907	March 5, 1917
Loans and discounts . . . . .	\$4,230,141.53	\$7,352,428.19	\$12,336,739.64
Bonds and stocks . . . . .	1,407,380.42	4,549,062.99	6,712,863.50
Banking houses and other real estate . . . . .	198,800.25	159,572.94	349,035.00
Cash and due from other banks . . . . .	1,074,700.83	2,626,243.44	4,844,259.95
	<u>\$6,911,023.03</u>	<u>\$14,687,307.56</u>	<u>\$24,242,898.09</u>

Liabilities			
Capital stock .....	\$ 900,000.00	800,000.00	\$1,300,000.00
Surplus and undivided profits	724,328.46	1,275,274.81	1,973,778.52
Circulation .....	267,815.00	296,500.00	250,000.00
Premium and reserve for int.			95,736.07
Deposits .....	5,018,879.57	12,315,532.75	20,623,383.50
	\$6,911,023.03	\$14,687,307.56	\$24,242,898.09

The very satisfactory showing of the banks on March 5, 1917, the date of an official statement, is clearly evident from a casual study of the following figures presented in condensed form:

Resources				
	Loans and Discounts	Bonds and Stocks	Banking Houses	Reserve
Bank of Saginaw..	\$5,217,675.23	\$3,572,087.78	\$197,500	\$2,435,412.78
Second National ..	4,499,862.41	1,611,680.52	45,000	1,394,048.04
German-American..	1,080,371.56	746,041.54	31,800	454,762.33
People's Savings...	756,969.44	517,370.86	36,735	420,931.78
Commercial Nat'l .	781,861.00	265,682.80	38,000	139,105.02
	12,336,739.64	\$6,712,863.50	\$349,035	\$4,844,259.95

Liabilities				
	Capital	Surplus, etc.	Premium, Cir., etc.	Deposits
Bank of Saginaw..	\$500,000	\$896,136.30	\$85,736.07	\$9,940,803.42
Second National ..	500,000	696,745.09	260,000.00	6,093,845.88
German-American..	100,000	62,975.93	.....	2,149,999.50
People's Savings...	100,000	120,523.70	.....	1,511,483.38
Commercial Nat'l..	100,000	197,397.50	.....	927,251.32
	\$1,300,000	\$1,973,778.52	\$345,736.07	\$20,623,383.50

On January 1, 1918, the capital and surplus, cash and reserve, and deposits of the five Saginaw banks and one trust company were:

	Capital and Surplus	Cash and Reserve	Deposits
Bank of Saginaw.....	\$ 1,434,529.30	\$ 2,812,374.32	\$10,614,850.55
Second National .....	1,228,375.38	1,048,807.94	6,209,888.12
American State Bank.....	161,299.58	535,883.12	2,298,298.16
People's Savings Bank....	218,121.43	288,829.77	1,334,106.30
Commercial Nat'l Bank...	200,996.21	246,089.54	986,240.53
Saginaw Valley Trust Co...	250,000.00	46,791.38	100,109.05
	\$ 3,493,321.90	\$ 4,978,776.07	\$21,543,492.71

Probably few cities of the size of Saginaw can show a more substantial growth in the business of its banks. In twenty years the capital, surplus and undivided profits of our banks have doubled, and the deposits have quadrupled now exceeding twenty million dollars. In the same period the loans and discounts have trebled, investments in bonds and stocks more than quadrupled, and the cash resources increased from one million and seventy-four thousand to four million eight hundred and forty-four thousand dollars. These figures certainly reflect the thrift and prosperity of the people, and encourage the hope that a still brighter era is opening for this city.

### Bank of Saginaw

The standing of every community is to a certain degree based upon the soundness of its banking institutions, and the progress made upon the broad yet conservative management of its bankers. The Bank of Saginaw has been a tower of strength in the upbuilding of Saginaw, and is one of the pillars upon which the commercial rating of the city depends. It was organized in 1888, succeeding to the business of the Citizens National Bank which was one of the leading banks of Saginaw City.

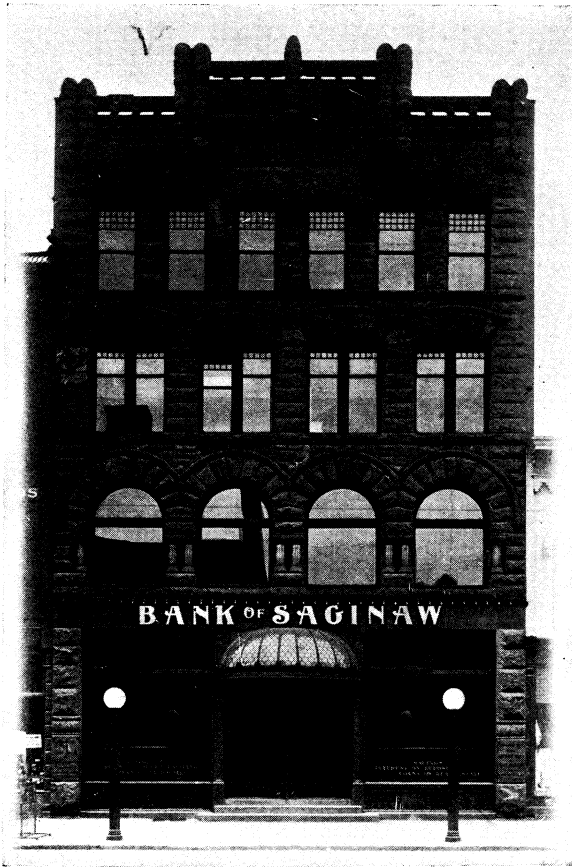
The Citizens National Bank was organized in 1880 by the later Daniel Hardin, Washington S. Green, L. Penoyer and others, and conducted an active and prosperous business, its safe and conservative methods commending it to the confidence and approval of the citizens of Saginaw and vicinity. Transacting a general banking business, loaning money on approved security, discounting acceptable commercial paper, issuing exchange upon the leading cities of this and foreign countries, and paying careful attention to collections, the bank built up a large business. The officers were: D. Hardin, president; L. Penoyer, vice-president; and D. W. Briggs, cashier; and the banking office was located at 406 Court Street.

The Board of Directors was composed of the officers and W. S. Green, of Green, Ring & Company, Green & Noble, Green, Hardin & Company and the Tobacco River Lumber Company; P. Bauer, the well known clothier; and G. K. Grout, an attorney of twenty years experience. The condition of the bank on October 5, 1887, as shown in a published report, had a paid-in capital of one hundred thousand dollars, a surplus fund of twenty-five thousand dollars, and undivided profits of thirty-four thousand three hundred dollars, while its resources amounted to six hundred fifty-five thousand, six hundred and seventy dollars.

Upon acquiring this valuable banking business the Bank of Saginaw, with a capital and surplus of two hundred thousand dollars, was in a position to extend its field of legitimate banking, and accommodate the large lumbering interests in extensive timber land deals and in huge lumbering operations. The directors were: Aaron T. Bliss, Myron Butman, Peter Bauer, Arthur Barnard, W. S. Green, Benton Hanchett, Thomas Merrill, Clark L. Ring and James E. Vincent. The increasing business of the bank was in charge of Myron Butman, president; Benton Hanchett, vice-president; D. W. Briggs, cashier; and A. D. F. Gardner, assistant cashier.

In its equipment and facilities for doing an extensive business the Bank of Saginaw is unexcelled; and its history shows a constant growth. Not only has it gained a high place in the confidence of the people and extended its business along progressive and safe and conservative lines, but it has added greatly to its prestige and the volume of its transactions by the acquisition of other and smaller banks in Saginaw, by absorption and consolidation. Its advancement in this regard is very marked, no less than five prosperous institutions having been brought under its management. This expansion has resulted in a general broadening of its operations, and it reaches out to every section of the city for increasing business, and at the same time affording banking facilities to business men and others never before directly served by any bank.

The first bank to be consolidated with the Bank of Saginaw was the First National Bank of Saginaw, whose president was Ammi W. Wright, of Alma. This amalgamation took place early in 1898, and added a considerable business to that of the former bank. At this time Thomas W. Stalker, cashier of the First National, joined the official force of the Bank of Saginaw. For about eight years he held the position of first assistant cashier, but ill health compelled him to resign.



EAST SIDE OFFICE OF THE  
BANK OF SAGINAW

On January 1, 1899, the American Commercial & Savings Bank, of which William Barie was president, sold its business, good will and banking property to the Bank of Saginaw. The East Side office of the latter bank, which had been established December 12, 1897, was thereupon removed into the banking office of the American Bank, and Hugo G. Wesener, former cashier, assumed the office of assistant cashier. The business of the older bank was thus greatly increased, and from this time began to be regarded as a large factor in financial affairs of the East Side.

The policy of encouraging consolidation of the banking interests was continued, and in May, 1907, the extensive business and valuable banking office of the Savings Bank of East Saginaw, on Genesee Avenue, was taken over by the progressive Bank of Saginaw. This was a master stroke, as the amalgamation added a large savings bank business to the latter bank, and at once made it the largest and most powerful banking institution in Saginaw Valley and, indeed, in the whole eastern and northern sections of the State, and it is now the largest bank in Michigan outside of Detroit. The deposits of the Bank of Saginaw at that time exceeded five and a half million dollars, and its total resources exceeded six and a half millions.

Still not content with the magnificent business thus attained by these consolidations and by the natural increase in business due to careful and

conservative conduct of its business, the bank absorbed the savings bank business and property of the Saginaw County Savings Bank, a solid and successful institution which had been founded by the late Richard Khuen, Aaron T. Bliss, Isaac Parsons and others, nearly thirty years before. This consolidation resulted in Charles A. Khuen, former treasurer of the savings bank, being elected vice-president and first assistant cashier of the Bank of Saginaw, a position he has since held. In 1915 the business of the private bank of George L. Burrows & Company, the oldest banking institution in the valley, was taken over by the big bank, further reducing the number of banks in this city.

To keep pace with the expanding business and offer superior facilities for the accommodation of the people, the bank purchased the property at the corner of Court and Hamilton Streets, and in 1911 and 1912 erected a fine modern banking office, splendidly equipped with every appliance and convenience for the rapid and successful conduct of its large business on the West Side. Meanwhile, the business of the East Side office, which had become extensive, had been moved into the fine banking office of the old Savings Bank of East Saginaw, which offered superior facilities for conducting an increasing business.

The expansion, so far as office equipment and conveniences, did not cease here, and in 1912 the bank purchased the private bank of Lockwood & Barnard, at South Saginaw, which had been established several years before. Soon after a new and complete banking office was erected at the corner of Fordney and Center Streets, the center of the business section. Not long



SPACIOUS AND CONVENIENTLY ARRANGED BANKING OFFICE  
AT 310-12 GENESEE AVENUE

after another branch office was established at North Saginaw, in a modern business block which had been built some time before by the late Aaron T. Bliss, once governor of Michigan. The total assets of the Bank of Saginaw are now (1918) in excess of thirteen million dollars.

The officers of the Bank of Saginaw, in 1918, were: Benton Hanchett, president; Otto Schupp, vice-president and cashier; C. A. Khuen, vice-president and assistant cashier; S. S. Roby, F. J. Schmidt, A. B. Williams, R. T. Wallace, assistant cashiers; and J. Hollandmoritz, auditor. The directors were: Benton Hanchett, H. B. Allen, William Barie, Arnold Boutell, Charles E. Brenner, Edgar D. Church, William C. Cornwell, Fred J. Fox, Theodore Huss, C. A. Khuen, J. G. Macpherson, E. A. Robertson, Otto Schupp, G. M. Stark, William J. Wickes and George W. Weadock.

**Statement of Condition**

At the Close of Business, December 31, 1917.

Resources	Liabilities
Loans and Discounts..\$ 5,991,813.01	Capital Stock .....\$ 500,000.00
Bonds and Mortgages.. 3,470,708.66	Surplus ..... 700,000.00
Banking Houses, etc... 202,242.93	Undivided Profits ..... 234,529.30
Cash and in Banks..... 2,812,374.32	Bills Payable & Prem. 427,759.07
	Deposits ..... 10,614,850.55
\$12,477,138.92	\$12,477,138.92



THE WEST SIDE OFFICE OF THE BANK OF SAGINAW



### The Saginaw Valley Trust Company, Saginaw, Michigan.

This strong and well managed trust company, the youngest of Saginaw's financial institutions, received its charter from the banking department of the State of Michigan, and opened its doors for business on January 3, 1917. The capital stock as originally subscribed was two hundred thousand dollars, and the surplus fund was fifty thousand, a financial backing of ample strength to enable the company to handle any and all business that may be entrusted to it.

If this of itself were not sufficient to create for it a permanent feeling of security and stability among the people, its list of more than one hundred stockholders, who comprise the most substantial and successful business men of Saginaw and Eastern Michigan, would certainly place the institution in the forerank of Michigan trust companies.

Its first board of directors consisted of George A. Alderton, William J. Orr, Samuel E. Symons, W. J. Rachow, Benjamin G. Appleby, William B. Baum, W. T. Cooper, Peter Drummond, Otto Dittmar, Joseph W. Fordney, Julius R. Liebermann, Charles E. Lown, August C. Melze, Harry E. Oppenheimer, John H. Qualman and William C. Wiechmann, of Saginaw; and William C. Fitzpatrick, Frank W. Blair and John P. Hemmeter, of Detroit; C. F. Bach, of Sebewaing; H. A. Chamberlain, of Standish, and George M. Nason, of Chesaning, Michigan.

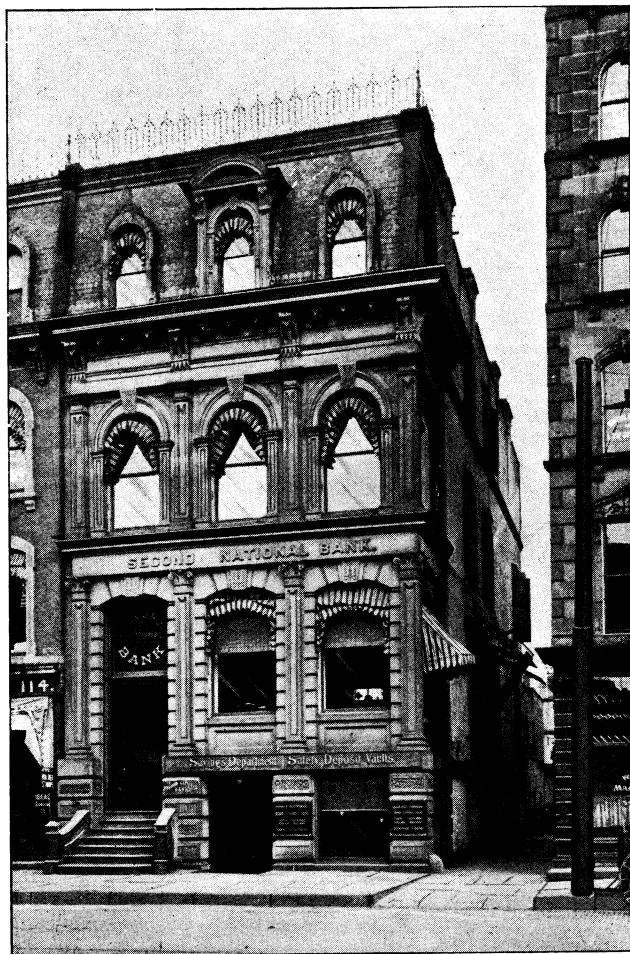
Its first officers were: George A. Alderton, president; W. J. Orr, S. E. Symons and W. J. Rachow, vice-presidents; W. J. Rachow, secretary; William Meissner, assistant secretary; William B. Baum, treasurer; and Charles F. Peckover, manager of the abstract department.

The banking house of the Saginaw Valley Trust Company, conveniently located at 109 South Jefferson Avenue, is well appointed and properly arranged for the transaction of business which comes to its several departments. At the front is the conference room and office of the secretary, adjoining which is the savings department with its burglar proof vaults. In the large space at the rear of the office is the Abstract Department, in which is filed the only complete set of abstract books of Saginaw County. The department is in charge of competent and experienced clerks, who make abstracts of title, check up and extend old abstracts, and attend to business of this nature.

The company does a general trust business and acts as executor under wills, administrator of estates, trustee for bond issues or for minor children; receiver or assignee, registrar and transfer agents for corporations, and in all other recognized trust capacities. There is a large field in this section of the State for the exercise of these functions, and this company is perfectly equipped to care for all the business offered.

A feature of the Savings Department is the liberal form of its Certificates of Deposit, which yield interest at the rate of four per cent. per annum. Certificates are issued in any amount from one hundred dollars and upward, and may be sent through the mails without risk of loss or theft. Interest is computed from date money is received; and if funds are not withdrawn the certificates automatically renew each year, the holder receiving the interest semi-annually by mail as long as the deposit continues. All the necessary records of certificates are kept by the company, thus relieving the holder of watching interest dates. The certificates are the direct obligation of this company, secured by the capital stock, surplus, and an additional stockholders liability of two hundred thousand dollars.

At the annual meeting of the stockholders, on December 11, 1917, the number of directors for the second year was reduced to seven; and the officers were re-elected, with the exception of treasurer whose office was combined with that of the secretary.



THE SECOND NATIONAL BANK BUILDING

### The Second National Bank.

The Second National Bank of Saginaw was organized and incorporated in December, 1871, and has successfully passed through the financial vicissitudes of the past forty-eight years, with an unbroken record of conservatism, fair-dealing and absolute safety to its depositors.

The history of this old and sound bank rightly begins with a reference to the banking house of C. K. Robinson & Company, which was established in January, 1866. Its office was originally in a building erected on the ground where the old Exchange Hotel stood "before the fire." The capital of this private bank was twenty thousand dollars, composed of equal shares paid in by C. K. Robinson, Doctor George W. Fish, W. W. Woodhull and N. C. Richardson. C. K. Robinson was manager, and W. E. McKnight was teller and bookkeeper. In the Fall of 1867 Mr. Woodhull withdrew his interest, which was followed by the same action of some other partners, so that in December, 1870, Mr. Robinson was the sole representative of the original concern. In the following January Alice L. Coats, a daughter of Colonel W. L. P. Little, having invested five thousand dollars in the capital of the bank, became an equal partner with him.

On March 12, 1872, the banking house of C. K. Robinson & Company was taken over by the Second National Bank of Saginaw. The capital stock was two hundred thousand dollars, and the first officers of the latter institution were: C. K. Robinson, president; Roswell G. Horr, cashier; and W. H. Coats, assistant cashier. The directors were C. K. Robinson, R. G. Horr, A. B. Wood, George W. Morley and F. P. Sears. The banking office was conveniently arranged in a central location, adjoining the Bliss Block (Mason Building) on Genesee Street, which it occupied for nearly twenty-four years. Its success in the banking world was based on a due regard for the safety of its patrons and strict adherence to a narrow road of caution and integrity.

On January 1, 1896, the Second National Bank took over and absorbed the Home National Bank of Saginaw, which went into liquidation. This was an important move for the former bank, as it gained a large and profitable business, and its prestige was correspondingly increased. The bank thus fell heir to the oldest banking institution in Saginaw Valley, which traced its origin, through the old Merchant's National Bank, to the private bank of W. L. P. Little & Company which was established in November, 1855. It is a historical fact of some interest that The Second National Bank of Saginaw, and the banks to which it succeeded, have been in continuous business in this city for a period of sixty-three years.

The Second National Bank at once removed its banking office to the Home Bank Building, which is advantageously situated on North Washington Avenue, near Genesee Avenue, close to the center of the city's business section. The banking office was remodeled, enlarged and refitted throughout much to the improvement and convenience of the bank; and alterations have since been made which have rendered the office well appointed and fully equipped for the transaction of a large business.

All branches of commercial banking, including foreign exchange, are conducted; and a savings department and safety deposit vaults are maintained. Each department is managed by a competent head, with capable and courteous employees. The commercial department is located on the main floor, where the largest part of the bank's business is transacted. Here are also the offices of the president and cashier; also a director's room. On the ground floor are the savings department and safety deposit vaults.

Interest on savings deposits is paid at the rate of four per cent. per annum, and savings accounts may be opened with a deposit of one dollar or more. A savings account will provide for emergencies which are likely to arise in the best regulated families. The husband and wife saving for less prosperous days, the child forming the habit of saving, the professional man laying away the fruits of an exceptional year, or the business man putting safely away his private income and surplus profits, should all open a savings account. For this purpose The Second National Bank offers every facility.

The bank gives particular attention to its Safety Deposit Vault Department, which offers absolute security against fire or burglary at a moderate rental. The boxes are of various sizes to meet every need; and the vaults are in charge of a special custodian and afford the utmost privacy and protection.

The continued growth and influence of this bank, as indicated by its statements and the good will of its patrons, are very tangible evidences of the high regard in which the institution is held by the business interests in this section of the State. With ample capital, a wide banking experience and conservative management, this bank offers every reasonable inducement and facility which a commercial and savings bank can offer. It offers to its patrons the service of trained minds for advice in business matters, and many a Saginawian has received counsel as to the business that has been invaluable and brought success to his efforts.

This branch of its activities has brought The Second National Bank of Saginaw into close touch with commercial affairs, and has bound many patrons by ties of gratitude and obligation that are as real an asset as actual cash in making for strength and solidity. This bank stands for the best principles in banking, and not in the slightest degree does it deviate from this standard, public confidence and trust being exemplified in every way by those who come into touch with the institution.

In 1918 the officers of The Second National Bank of Saginaw were: George B. Morley, president; Walter S. Eddy, vice-president; Albert H. Morley, vice-president; Edward W. Glynn, cashier; and Alfred H. Perrin, assistant cashier. The directors were George B. Morley, Walter S. Eddy, Stanford T. Crapo, Frank D. Ewen, Arthur D. Eddy, James B. Peter, William H. Wallace, Frederick Carlisle, Peter Corcoran, Charles A. Bigelow, and Elmer J. Cornwell.

George W. Morley was one of the organizers of this bank in 1871, became a director at that time and remained a director for forty-three years. For twenty-four years, from 1877 to 1901, he was president of the bank.

The years of his service covered an eventful period in the country's history. They were years of the opening and settlement of a vast new domain, of the building of railroads, of the re-establishment of specie payments following the paper money of Civil War days, of the rapid growth of cities and of great private fortunes; of change from individualistic to corporate methods. His mind comprehended the great movements of his times, and his good sense and sound judgment made his voice, in counsel, always weighty, and his unimpeachable integrity (the dominant characteristic of the man) made him a tower of strength to the bank and in the community.

The entry of George B. Morley into the institution was in the early days of its existence. He began as a teller in the bank in February, 1876, and rose through various positions to that of cashier in 1882, an office which he held for many years. This, however, was not the zenith of his banking career, for in 1901 he was elected president of the bank, which he still holds. Mr. Morley is justly regarded as one of the big bankers of the Middle West. He is a diligent student of finance, and has held the office of president of the Michigan Bankers' Association.

Walter S. Eddy, long connected with the bank on the board of directors, was elected vice-president in 1901. In this advisory relation to the inner affairs and policy of the bank, he has given willingly of his time and counsel, much to the aid of the other officials. Mr. Eddy's large commercial interests in Saginaw, as well as his active interest in the welfare of the city, entitle him to the high regard in which he is held by business men and citizens generally.

Albert H. Morley, vice-president, who formerly was treasurer of Morley Brothers large hardware establishment, came to the bank in January, 1901. He has since acted in a fiduciary capacity with ability and entire confidence and satisfaction of the bank's customers.

Edward W. Glynn, the cashier, joined the bank's forces on January 22, 1883, and has risen to the position of executive officer through practically all the various positions in bank work. He started as messenger in the old Merchant's National Bank in 1872, and by sheer force of character and native ability rose to the position of paying teller. In 1889 he was elected assistant cashier of the Second National Bank, and in 1901 was advanced to the cashiership, which has since held. He has a large capacity for handling details of large enterprises and responsibilities, and no one has a broader or firmer grasp of the bank's affairs than he.

Alfred W. Perrin, assistant cashier, began in the service of the bank on February 1, 1884, filling the position of individual bookkeeper. He was advanced to general bookkeeper, succeeding John S. Goldie, and later was teller, following the service of Albert J. Morley, now a resident of the State of Washington. After serving as teller for many years Mr. Perrin was promoted to the position of assistant cashier, which he still holds.

Eugene Dietz, auditor, is next to the oldest employee of the bank, and its predecessors. His service in the one banking office covers a period of more than forty-four years. He joined the force of the old Merchant's National Bank on December 18, 1873, was transferred to the service of the Home National Bank, when its business was taken over by the latter institution in 1882, and his services were once more sought by The Second National Bank, when it purchased the Home National Bank, on January 1, 1896. This is a record of long and faithful service, in practically similar capacities, seldom equalled.

### Statement of Condition

At the Close of Business, December 31, 1917

Resources	Liabilities
Loans and Discounts..\$5,090,277.06	Capital Stock .....\$ 500,000.00
United States Bonds... 667,615.00	Surplus Fund ..... 500,000.00
Other Bonds Owned... 1,553,957.31	Undivided Profits ..... 228,375.38
Federal Reserve Bank.. 30,000.00	Quarterly Dividend 3% 15,000.00
Banking House ..... 45,000.00	Special Bond Deposit.. 240,000.00
Due from U. S. Treas'r 15,500.00	National Bank Notes.. 250,000.00
Cash and Banks..... 1,048,807.94	Bills Rediscounted .... 507,893.81
	Deposits . . . . . 6,209,888.12
<u>\$8,451,157.31</u>	<u>\$8,451,157.31</u>



THE MAIN BANKING OFFICE OF THE SECOND NATIONAL BANK

### People's Savings Bank.

For more than a quarter of a century the People's Savings Bank of Saginaw has been one of the strong banking houses of this city, as well as of the State. It was organized under State charter on November 27, 1886, very largely through the efforts of former Judge John A. Edget; and opened for business in February, 1887, in a temporary banking office in the Bliss Block, at Genesee and Washington Streets. Shortly after the bank removed to a well appointed office in the Weaver Block at the southwest corner of Genesee and Franklin Streets.



THE PERFECTLY APPOINTED OFFICE OF THE PEOPLE'S SAVINGS BANK

The capital stock was fifty thousand dollars, and the original list of stockholders was composed of such substantial business men as John J. Rupp, Philip H. Ketcham, William C. McClure, John W. Howry, Gurdon Corning, George B. Wiggins, Henry A. Batchelor, Edwin N. Wickes, Jacob Schwartz, Lorenz Hubinger, William B. Baum, Charles H. Eames, Benjamin F. Webster, John A. Edget and John F. Boynton. The first officers of the bank were: John A. Edget, president; John J. Rupp, vice-president; and John F. Boynton, secretary and treasurer. Fred C. Zimmerman was the first teller, succeeded in 1888 by Herman A. Wolpert.

The People's Savings Bank is known, and has always been regarded, as a reliable and conservative institution, a bank that is pre-eminently what its name implies. Every branch of legitimate banking is conducted, and its departments offer every courtesy and facility consistent with sound banking. Its commercial department carries the accounts of some of Saginaw's large business institutions; and makes loans on securities and discounts approved

commercial paper. The savings department is especially strong, paying interest at the rate of four per cent. per annum on savings accounts and certificates of deposit. It makes mortgage loans on real estate, including good farm property, and affords every advantage for the prompt transaction of business accorded it by the People.

There are also safety deposit vaults for rent, which are ample and well equipped for the convenience of users, as well as the perfect safety of their valuables from theft and fire. They insure absolute protection for deeds, mortgages, stocks, notes, wills, insurance policies, abstracts, leases, and jewels and valuables of all kinds. A valued feature of this service is the security offered for the keeping of costly family plate and heirlooms, especially to persons closing and leaving their homes for a time.

The business of the People's Savings Bank, covering a period of thirty years, has shown a steady and permanent growth. This was very manifest shortly after 1905 or 1906, and in the latter year the bank acquired the valuable property formerly occupied by the Second National Bank, at 204 Genesee Avenue. The building was constructed for banking purposes, but it was entirely rebuilt providing a new front; and was wholly refurnished with marble and mahogany fixtures. On February 22, 1907, the bank removed its office to the new quarters, which were regarded as the most sumptuous and the best arranged of any bank in the city. In the new offices the business of the bank has shown increased growth, and the institution has become more popular than ever with the people. In 1915 the capital stock was increased to one hundred thousand dollars.

John F. Boynton, secretary and treasurer from the incorporation of the bank, came to the organization from the Second National Bank, in which institution he had held the position of cashier. For thirty-one years he has served the People's Savings Bank with rare fidelity and steadfastness of purpose, holding a firm grasp of the bank's affairs and administering them with ability and conservatism.

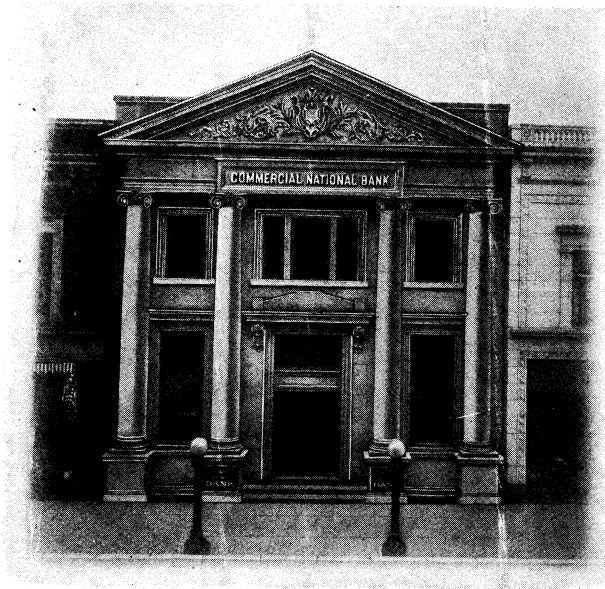
Bernard F. Griffin, the assistant treasurer, joined the bank's forces as a clerk in September, 1891. Through the intervening years to the present he has filled every position in the routine work of the bank, and a large share of the responsibility of management now devolves upon him. He has the complete trust of the bank directorate and the confidence of the public, which in no small degree enhances the success of the bank, designed and operated for the People.

In 1918 the officers of the People's Savings Bank were: John J. Rupp, president; William B. Baum, vice-president; John F. Boynton, secretary and treasurer; and Bernard F. Griffin, assistant treasurer. The directors were John J. Rupp, Harry T. Wickes, Samuel E. Symons, William B. Baum, L. P. Mason, Charles W. McClure, John F. Boynton, Peter Drummond and Harry E. Oppenheimer.

#### Statement of Condition

At the Close of Business, December 31, 1917

Resources	Liabilities
Loans, Discounts, etc. . . . .	Capital Stock . . . . .
Stocks and Bonds . . . . .	Surplus . . . . .
Bank and Fixtures . . . . .	Undivided Profits . . . . .
Premium and Overdraft . . . . .	Dividend Unpaid . . . . .
Real Estate . . . . .	Bills Payable . . . . .
Cash and Deposit sub- ject to Check . . . . .	Deposits . . . . .
\$1,623,227.73	\$1,623,227.73



MODERN BANKING HOUSE, ERECTED IN 1909

### The Commercial National Bank

Thirty years ago a group of prominent business men of Saginaw City, believing that the commercial interests of the city required another National bank, organized The Commercial National Bank of Saginaw, with a capital stock of one hundred thousand dollars. Its charter bore date of July 9, 1888; and the bank began business in the Andre Block, 115 North Hamilton Street.

The first board of directors was composed of Daniel Hardin, Henry Bernhard, Anton W. Achard, George W. Alderton, John F. Brand, Chester Brown, Edward R. McCarty, Lyman W. Bliss and Robert Ure. Daniel Hardin was elected president, and M. O. Robinson chosen cashier of the bank.

Mr. Hardin held the responsible position of president until his death, and in 1903 John F. Brand was elected to fill the vacancy thus caused. George A. Alderton was then elected vice-president, and M. O. Robinson was re-elected cashier.

On November 24, 1902, the bank extended its scope by opening a savings department, which in due course added considerably to its deposits and brought it in close touch with many small depositors. Accounts are opened by the deposit of one dollar or more, upon which interest at the rate of four per cent per annum is paid.

Mr. Robinson resigned the office of cashier on March 26, 1908, and was succeeded by Asa W. Field, an experienced banker, whose appointment to the cashiership was effective May 1, 1908. The original charter of the bank expired on July 9, 1908, and was extended by the Comptroller of the Currency on that date for a period of twenty years.

The Commercial National Bank stands as a financial institution based on conservatism and utmost care in the transaction of its business. It is hardly surpassed in safety and solidity, and is a bulwark of strength in the development of Saginaw's growing enterprises.

To further increase its prestige and afford better facilities for conducting business, the bank in 1909, through the instrumentality of John F. Brand, purchased property adjacent to its banking office, and erected thereon a modern stone structure of beautiful and ornate design. To the construction



and equipment of this bank building Mr. Field gave personal supervision, and to his long experience and good judgment are due in no small measure the convenient arrangement and perfect appointments of the banking office. It is sumptuously furnished with marble and mahogany counters, with bronze trimmings, a mosaic floor, and the decorations in light and pleasing tones are in harmony with the general scheme conceived and executed by Mr. Brand. The perfect lighting of the banking office, by means of large windows on the front and a high vaulted light in the ceiling, is one of its distinguishing features.

Besides the commercial and savings departments conducted, this bank has a complete safety deposit vault, with boxes of various sizes, which rent from two dollars to ten dollars a year, a feature which is growing in favor.

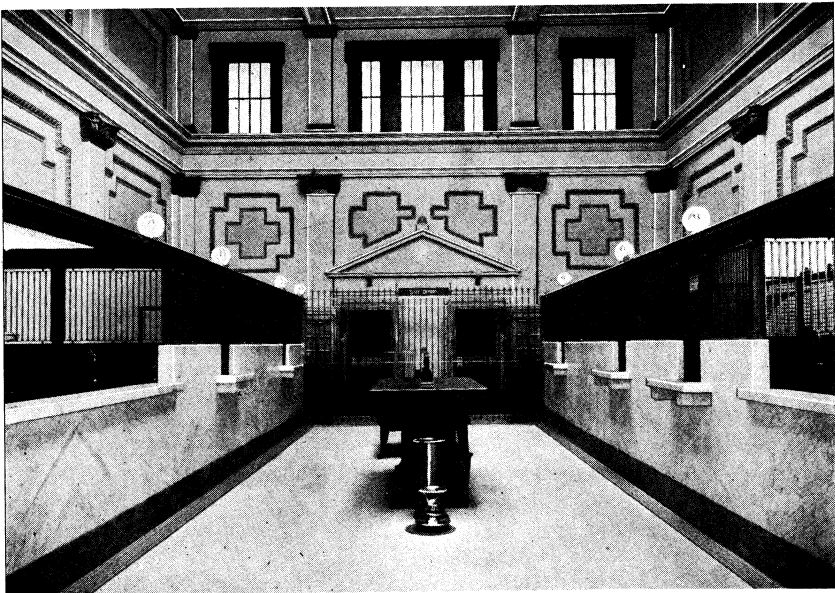
Upon the death of Mr. Field in the Fall of 1914, W. L. Paxson, who had been with the bank since its organization and had held the office of assistant cashier for several years, was elected cashier; and Edward N. Burke was elected assistant cashier. On January 30, 1916, George A. Alderton was elected president, Joseph W. Fordney and R. T. Maynard vice-presidents. Mr. Maynard, a banker of eighteen years experience, assumed an active official position.

Mr. Paxson retired from the cashiership on April 6, 1917, whereupon Mr. Maynard took over the duties of this official position. In 1918 the officers were: George A. Alderton, president; J. W. Fordney and J. F. Brand, vice-presidents; R. T. Maynard, cashier, and E. N. Burke, ass't cashier. The first four officers and A. A. Alderton, A. C. Melze comprised the board of directors.

#### Statement of Condition

At the Close of Business, December 31, 1917.

Resources		Liabilities	
Loans, Discounts, etc...	\$ 990,944.70	Capital Stock .....	\$ 100,000.00
Federal Reserve Bank..	6,000.00	Surplus .....	100,000.00
Banking House .....	38,000.00	Undivided Profits .....	996.21
Due from U.S. Treasurer	5,000.00	National Bank Notes...	98,797.50
Cash & Reserve in banks	246,089.54	Deposits .....	986,240.53
	\$1,286,034.24		\$1,286,034.24



THE CONVENIENTLY ARRANGED OFFICE OF THE  
COMMERCIAL NATIONAL BANK



INTERIOR EAST SIDE OFFICE OF AMERICAN STATE BANK

### The American State Bank

The American State Bank, formerly the German-American State Bank, of Saginaw, was organized by Emmet L. Beach in 1911, and opened its doors for business on Tuesday, January 2, 1912. This was an event of no little interest in the financial history of this city, as the bank commenced business in two offices, perfectly appointed, one at 418 Genesee Avenue, in the heart of the business section of the East Side, and the other at North Hamilton and Hancock Streets, equally well located on the West Side.

Starting with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars and a surplus, paid in, of fifty thousand dollars, the bank occupied an enviable position. Its stock was distributed in comparatively small amounts among a large number of stockholders, comprising prominent business and professional men; and their standing in the community and the influence exerted by the directors resulted in this bank making a phenomenal growth, and its business is of the most substantial character.

The first officers of the bank were: Emmet L. Beach, president; Edwin Kersten, Ernest V. Parsons and John C. Davies, vice-presidents; Henry T. Robinson, cashier, and Sidney G. Arnold, assistant cashier in charge of the West Side office. Upon opening for business the bank's resources were eighty-seven thousand dollars, and on its last report to the Commissioner of Banking on December 31, 1917, its resources had grown to over two million five hundred thousand dollars, a truly remarkable gain and one reflecting credit on the management of the bank. It featured certificates of deposits, which drew interest at the rate of four per cent per annum, and found this liberal policy regarding interest payments to its depositors made it many friends.

The bank has always endeavored to be helpful to all legitimate enterprises and has constantly worked for a better business and farming community.

From the beginning of business this bank has conducted a general commercial and savings business, savings accounts being opened with the deposit of one dollar or more. Every facility consistent with sound banking principles is extended to depositors, who meet with every courtesy by obliging employees. The bank loans money on approved commercial paper, city and farm property, and on bonds of unquestioned value. In this department, as in others, the greatest care and caution is exercised, conservatism marking all dealings.

The business that the directors created for it, as well as that which came through the influence and standing of the stockholders, was considerable, and the bank became recognized as one of the solid and substantial financial institutions of the city. Through the six years of its existence the bank has helped by its financial aid and counsel many concerns which today rank among the solid institutions of Saginaw. By a judicious and liberal policy this bank aids materially in promoting sound business enterprises, and is an active factor in the growing prosperity of the city and county.

In 1918 the board of directors was composed of B. G. Appleby, Charles Bauer, Emmet L. Beach, E. T. Danby, John C. Davies, O. L. Dittmar, W. H. Filbert, W. F. Hemmeter, Edwin Kersten, A. P. Krause, O. R. Krause, J. R. Liebermann, C. E. Lown, Henry Meier, Henry C. Remer, F. A. Richter, H. T. Robinson, G. L. Schulz, W. C. Wiechmann and Henry Witters. The officers were: Emmett L. Beach, president; Edwin Kersten, John C. Davies and W. F. Hemmeter, vice-presidents; H. T. Robinson, cashier; S. G. Arnold and G. A. Laesch, assistant cashiers.



WEST SIDE BANKING OFFICE OF AMERICAN STATE BANK



THE HILL BUILDING

### The Hill-Carman Companies

These corporations, which are actively engaged in the real estate, loans and insurance business, were organized December 1, 1915, and occupy spacious and well appointed offices in the Hill Building, at 116-18 South Jefferson Avenue. The incorporators, the same for all three companies, were Roger R. Hill, Burt A. Carman and Peter Drummond; and the capital stock was \$50,000 for the Hill-Carman Company, and \$25,000 for the Hill-Carman Mortgage Company. Roger R. Hill is president, and Burt A. Carman fills the dual positions of secretary-treasurer and general manager of the corporations.

The business thus established by these enterprising business men, with offices centrally located and conveniently arranged for the transaction of a large business, is a very successful one. Its operations cover not only Saginaw and adjoining counties, but reach out to more distant parts of the State, and wherever they go a solid foundation is laid for future business. These companies of wide scope and field, conservative, yet liberal and progressive, are semi-financial institutions deserving of the large business they enjoy.

The Hill-Carman Company, the principal corporation, transacts a general real estate business, comprising the purchase and sale of city and farm property and the handling of realty for others. This includes conveyancing, the collecting of rentals and revenues, the paying of taxes, insurance and other expenses, the making of necessary repairs to buildings, and keeping the property in good condition. The examining of titles and the discovery and correction of defects or clouds to clear and perfect titles, is given particular attention by Mr. Carman, who is one of the most experienced real estate men in this part of the State.

Another important feature of this business is the Home Building Department which aims to encourage and promote the owning of permanent homes by the people. It not only builds houses on vacant property for owners of the lots, who repay the loans by installments adjusted to their incomes, but also erects houses in desirable locations for sale on its own account. This part of the business promises to grow steadily with the rapid increase of the industrial and commercial prosperity of the city.

A recent development of the company was the purchase of thirty-two hundred acres of cut-over lands in Clare County, Michigan, situated nine miles north of Farwell. This land is especially adapted to sheep raising; and is being rapidly cleared and made ready for stocking with large flocks. Suitable buildings are in course of erection to house a number of stockmen and farmers; and every indication points to the establishment of a large industry.

The Hill-Carman Mortgage Company's principal business is loaning money for themselves and others on approved city and farm property. More than three hundred thousand dollars is now outstanding on loans for clients, all guaranteed by the company, the property upon which the loans have been made being valued at more than twice that amount. The company attends to the collection of principal and interest on loans, sees that taxes, insurance and other matters are paid and attended to, and protects the owners in every way. A feature of this service is the privilege granted all clients to withdraw their money on such investments on short notice. The facilities of the company for placing loans enables it to quickly find a purchaser, or to purchase the loan on its own account.

The Hill-Carman Insurance Agency does a general fire and liability insurance business, with fifteen large and reliable all-American companies. This includes fire, plate glass, automobile and all forms of liability insurance. A large business is being developed in this line, as the companies represented are the oldest and most substantial in the field, having large assets and paying



MAIN OFFICE OF THE HILL-CARMAN COMPANIES

all losses promptly. Bonding and compensation are branches of this business that receive particular attention by the officials of the company.

In all the activities of these allied companies, Burt A. Carman is the executive head. He is a real estate man of more than thirty years experience, his knowledge of realty values, both in the city and in the townships of Saginaw and adjoining counties, rendering his judgment of such value in making careful loans that the supply of gilt-edge security loans never equals the constant demand. Investors are fortunate in securing loans which he has approved and which in addition are guaranteed, both as to principal and interest by the Hill-Carman Mortgage Co., before offerings are made to clients for the investment of funds.



**WILLIAM W. WARNER**

President of the Association, a charter member, one of the first directors, who has served on the Board for more than thirty years.

### **The People's Building & Loan Association.**

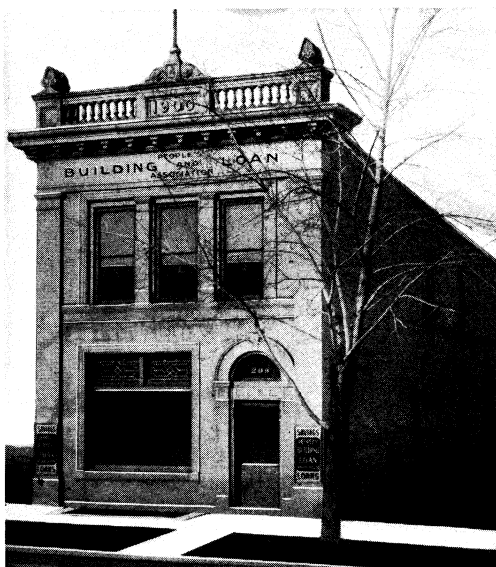
On a rather chilly evening in the late Fall of 1886, in an unheated, inhospitable room on North Washington Avenue, a group of young men, interested in the idea of mutual savings and investments, first met to discuss the steps necessary for the organization of a building and loan association in Saginaw. George J. Little was the moving spirit that brought the group together; and from that meeting of less than a dozen enthusiasts the germs of mutual savings and home building were inoculated in the community, and the People's Building & Loan Association came into being.

The building and loan idea had its origin in England. Although associations of this nature had existed for more than fifty years in this country, and had prospered, particularly in Philadelphia, at the time of the meeting in Saginaw there was no law on the statute books of Michigan authorizing the formation of such associations. The first step was to secure needed legislation. The Legislature was then in session, and William S. Linton, just starting on his useful public career, was enlisted to present the necessary measure; and the law desired was placed upon the statutes of the State.

Under this law the local association came into legal existence in March, 1887. The incorporators were: George J. Little, William W. Warner

William S. Linton, Theodore Huss, Delbert E. Prall, William Seyffardt, L. C. Holden, John C. Davies, David Swinton, John Gerhart and J. J. Winsor. These men, with the exception of Mr. Winsor, and J. W. Billing, A. L. Button, John J. Granville and V. E. Widenmann, comprised the first board of directors.

Upon its organization the board of directors elected William S. Linton, president, David Swinton, vice-president; George J. Little, secretary, and William Seyffardt, treasurer. The secretary was the only officer to receive any salary, and that was two hundred dollars a year for such time as he could spare from his regular work. On May 4, 1887, L. C. Holden was appointed attorney for the association. After fifteen months of precarious existence, in which business was done "on the most reasonable terms possible," the association had assets amounting to only seven thousand seven hundred and ninety-three dollars.

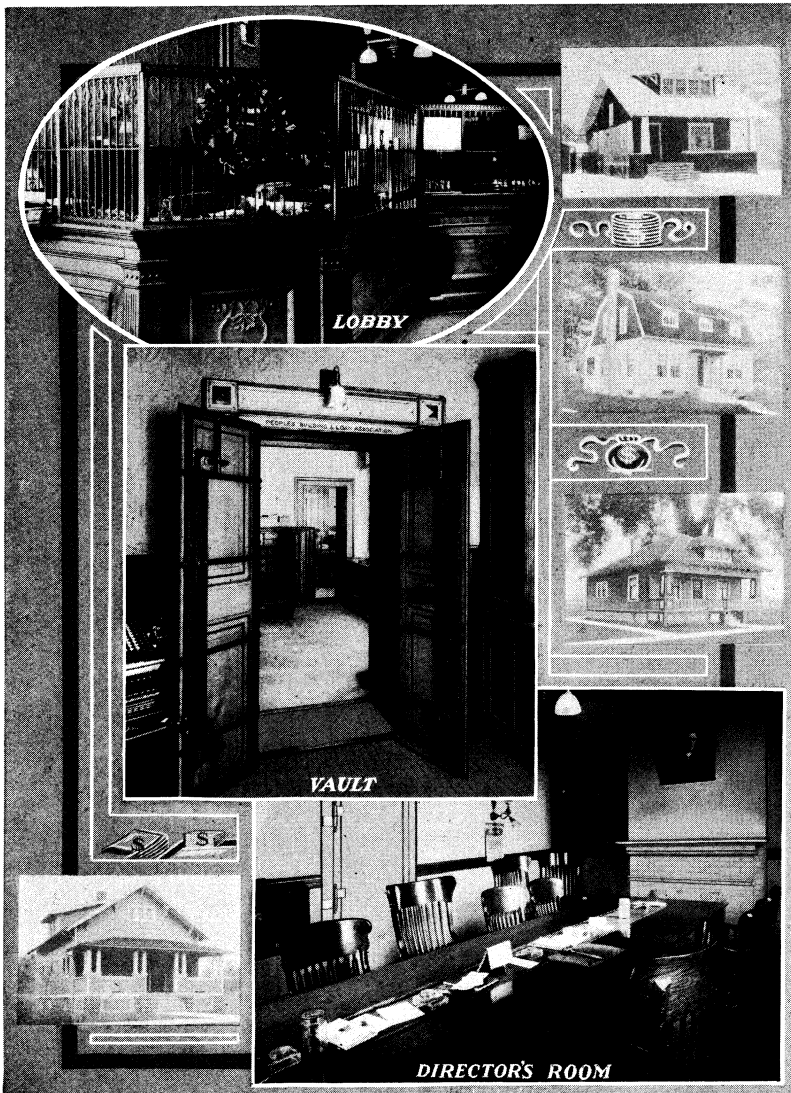


THE WELL APPOINTED OFFICE BUILDING

The first office of the association was on the second floor of the Heavenrich Block, but in February, 1888, it was moved to the Avery Block at Genesee and Jefferson Avenues, where it remained for seven years. Larger offices in the Courier-Herald Building were then secured and occupied until 1915, when the association purchased a building of its own, at 209 South Jefferson Avenue.

In 1889 the association had grown to such an extent that it was deemed expedient for its secretary, George J. Little, to devote his entire time to its affairs. For the first time an air of permanency and stability began to pervade the organization, and four prosperous years followed. After surviving the financial storm of 1893, which wrecked realty values in Saginaw to a greater extent than elsewhere, because its industrial life was changing, the conditions improved, and there was fresh confidence in the soundness of the building and loan idea.

It was in 1898 that the association changed from the "serial plan," upon which it was organized, to the "permanent plan," giving greater equality and justice to all members. The change in the By-laws, in January, 1909, permitted an interest rate to borrowing members of six and twenty-four hundredths per cent., instead of seven per cent., was much fairer all around and proved an important step forward.



OFFICES OF THE PEOPLE'S BUILDING &amp; LOAN ASSOCIATION

The People's Building & Loan Association of Saginaw is a mutual, co-operative, financial institution, whose object is to afford its members a safe and profitable investment for their savings, which are loaned to members only, and to facilitate their acquiring homes. It is one of the soundest institutions of its kind today; and its aim through co-operation by its members, is to help each other and thereby help themselves. The money saved by the investing member is accumulated and loaned to aid the borrowing member to secure a home.

In 1918 the board of directors consisted of the following well known citizens: William W. Warner, president; Ludwig Schwemer, vice-president; F. H. Jerome, secretary and treasurer; Walter J. Lamson, attorney; John Parth, Donald Henderson, Alfred H. Perrin, F. J. Zahner, John Popp, W. L. Miles, Mathias Reinert, Stephen Winkler, W. H. Miller, S. S. Armstrong and H. D. Richter.



## CHAPTER XXV

# THE BENCH AND BAR

---

The Act of 1859 — Judge Sutherland Was a Pioneer Lawyer — Amusing Mistake of Juryman — John Moore Comes Upon the Bench — DeWitt C. Gage Was a Diligent Student — Peculiar Experience With a Jury — Chauncey H. Gage Followed — Creation of Second Judgeship — Eugene Wilber Was a Capable Judge — Early Contemporary Lawyers — William M. Miller Was a Notable Figure — How a Lawyer's Joke Won a Case — Augustine S. Gaylord a School Teacher — John J. Wheeler Was Quiet and Absorbed — Prominent Lawyers Who Came Later — Wisner and Draper Won a High Place — A Lawyer of the "Old School" — Why the Saginaw Bar Was Strong — Other Prominent Lawyers — Prominent Lawyers of Today — A Humorous Incident — In Conclusion.

**A**LTHOUGH some of the ablest members of the Saginaw Bar were here long before 1859, the history of the Bench and Bar properly commences with the act of that year. Prior to that date Saginaw County, now alone comprising the Tenth Judicial Circuit, was attached for judicial purposes first to the Fourth and later to the Seventh District; and the Court was held by the grave and conscientious Judge Josiah Turner, of Owosso, and the scholarly pioneer Judge Sanford M. Green, whose legal, literary and judicial work commenced away back in the early forties.

Soon after the act of 1859 became a law James Birney became Judge of the Tenth Circuit, then composed of the counties of Saginaw, Gratiot, Isabella, Midland, Iosco, Bay and Alpena, and continued to discharge the duties of the office until January, 1864, when he was succeeded by Jabez G. Sutherland. Whoever speaks of Sutherland must speak favorably, or be contradicted by the record of his life. As a lawyer, scholar, judge, representative in Congress, and legal author of more than ordinary fame, he was one of the members of our Bar to whom every citizen of Saginaw should turn with pride.

### Judge Sutherland Was a Pioneer Lawyer.

Judge Sutherland was one of the first lawyers to establish a practice in the county, and was an active member of the convention that framed the State Constitution of 1850. His practical knowledge of the law was acquired in sharp competition with John Moore and William L. Webber, who came to Saginaw shortly after Sutherland located here, and whose legal abilities and reputations were a constant growth. These pioneers of our Bar, possessed of the respect and confidence of the people, lived to see the straggling village around the stockade, to which the settlers had once looked for protection from the prowling Indian, changed to the prosperous, growing and wealthy City of Saginaw, and the dark, damp, unbroken wilderness between Lake Michigan and Lake Huron, and extending to the Straits of Mackinaw, developed into an agricultural territory of vast extent and fertility. To these results they contributed their full share, not simply as lawyers, but as business men and leaders in the great march of improvement.

Before going on the bench Sutherland was universally recognized as a ready and able lawyer, extremely zealous in the service of his clients. He seemed to feel honored by the position of Judge, and took pride in dis-

charging its duties with judicial fairness. Patient, serene in disposition, honest in purpose, courteous in demeanor, and just and sound in judgment, he gained the respect of all and stored up the learning that found expression in his learned work, "Sutherland on Damages."

#### Amusing Mistake of Jurymen.

The "uncertainties" of the law, as administered in the early days by juries of curious cosmopolitan character was often commented upon by the public, and not always to their credit. An amusing incident illustrating this situation was once related by the late Dan P. Foote, one of the leading lawyers of the Saginaw Bar, to whom the historian is indebted for much of the material for this chapter.

"In 1860, a farmer named Stolze lost a two-year black bull, that was soon found in the field of another farmer across the line in Midland County. On the trial of a replevin suit before a Midland County farmer justice, the proof showed that the animal had a dark red stripe on his back and a few white hairs at the end of his tail. The justice, after consulting with his neighbors, decided that the bull had been misdescribed and rendered a verdict against Stolze. Too poor to appeal the case to the Circuit, Stolze appealed to a justice in Saginaw County and had the farmer arrested for stealing the bull. The case had become important to the defendant, and he employed Sutherland, then in full practice at the Bar. A jury was demanded and drawn, and the court was held in the village hall, closely packed with Stolze neighbors and the people about.

"A certain man whom we will call Mr. B. appeared on the panel. The defendant's lawyer, Sutherland, thought it proper to examine the jury as to their bias and commenced with Mr. B. by asking him if he had formed or expressed any opinion upon the case.

"'No,' said B. his face as innocent as a pumpkin.

"'But I mean, Mr. B.' continued Sutherland, 'have you formed or expressed to any one an opinion upon the merits of the case?'

"'No,' said B., his face blanker than ever.

"Sutherland knew him; leaning forward and speaking in his quick, pleasant, persuasive manner, said: 'Fred, whose bull is it?'

"The answer came quickly. 'He Stolze bull, by dam, Jabe; I know him dis tree year.'

"After all Fred's real mistake was in supposing that he was there as a witness, and not as a juror."

#### John Moore Comes Upon the Bench

John Moore followed Sutherland upon the Bench, and it is impossible to determine from public opinion of the time, which was the better judge. John Moore was of English birth, but is American in education and sentiment, this country being the land and home of his achievements. To the sturdy characteristics of his fatherland he added the genius and thrift and tact of the born Yankee, and he was a lawyer with a knowledge of the principles of law, and a skill and judgment in their application equalled by few. He always had a clear idea where the right lay, and the jury rarely differed from him in conclusion; yet it was not easy to point out any error in his charges, and whatever influence he exercised over the jury was wholesome. Sutherland and Moore placed the judicial standard in this county so high as to make it somewhat embarrassing for their immediate successors.

This situation, however, on the resignation of Judge Moore, did not deter William S. Tennant from taking his seat upon the Bench, in April, 1874. He was a young man of good general and more than ordinary legal



JUDGE JABEZ G. SUTHERLAND

education, of an honest purpose on the Bench, good understanding, and a ready faculty of making the most of any good idea that came to him. During the six years he was upon the Bench much important business came before the Court, and he held the scales of justice with an even hand, and enjoyed the full confidence and respect of the Bar. In March, 1880, he resigned, and was succeeded by Colonel DeWitt C. Gage, who for a long time before his appointment had enjoyed a large and profitable practice.

#### **Judge DeWitt C. Gage Was a Diligent Student**

Colonel Gage was a practical, painstaking lawyer, and a most diligent student who relied upon his books, and felt the greatest confidence when backed by adjudicated cases. When unable to find a precedent he was little inclined to make one, being in every respect a conservative. He was an upright, conscientious judge, and did not disregard the well-known and established landmarks of the law. His habits of thrift forcibly brought to his attention methods by which the business of the court could be more readily dispatched, thus materially reducing the expense of it, and, although innovations tending to accomplish such an object were not introduced during his short term, the effects of his ideas have lived beyond him and time has justified his course and seen his views put in practice. The marked traits of his character were a sterling honesty that brooked no compromise with wrong, strong convictions fearlessly expressed and defended with ardor, thorough attention to work undertaken, genial hospitality, and a kindly interest in the rise and advancement of struggling young practitioners. He died on Sunday, July 31, 1887.

### **Peculiar Experience With a Jury.**

Judges of those days were men of strong convictions of right, yet no important case is recalled by Mr. Foote where they unduly sought to influence the jury. Jurors did sometimes discover the bias of the Judge, however discreet he may have been. One of the well known judges of the Court, a man of unquestionable fairness and integrity, but of rather strong notions of right, charged the jury in an unimportant case in the manner he judged proper and sent them out at six o'clock in the evening to consider of their verdict, and directed them, when they agreed, to sign and seal their verdict and deliver it to the clerk, supposing, of course, that they would agree in a short time.

On coming into Court the next morning the Judge was surprised and displeased to find that the jury had not agreed, and directed the officer to bring them before the Court. The Judge had received some intimation as to how they stood, that did not tend to please him, and in the course of his remarks to them he said in effect:

"I am surprised that you have not agreed, gentlemen; the amount involved in the case is small, its trial has taken an unusual time, and the evidence is such there ought to be little difficulty in agreeing upon a verdict. It has been intimated to me that you stand eleven to one, if I knew the name of the man, I think I would excuse him from further attendance upon the Court."

Thereupon a little old man from the country, wedged in on the back seat between two city men of aldermanic proportions, hastily squeezed himself out, and stepped forward a bit, said:

"No, no, shudge, don't do that, I'm the only man on your side."

### **Chauncey H. Gage Followed.**

The next judge was Chauncey H. Gage, who assumed the office January 1, 1882. He had been prosecuting attorney, and recorder of East Saginaw, and had enjoyed a good practice. Although quite a young man he was regarded as a good lawyer, an opinion fully justified by his course upon the Bench. Always polite and agreeable to all having business before the Court, he became a very popular judge. Completely independent and honest upon the Bench, no one ever questioned the motives of his rulings. He possessed a strong sense of equity and lively sympathy for misfortune, so that if he sometimes erred in judgment, it was upon the side of charity. Judge Gage was one of the most companionable of men, open, honest, easy of approach, affable, free of speech, and possessing a sterling character above reproach, he commanded the respect and esteem of the community in which he had lived from early childhood.

### **The Creation of a Second Judgeship.**

Under the amendment to the State Constitution, approved by the people in November, 1888, the Legislature provided another Judge for Saginaw County, and John A. Edget was appointed to the newly created judgeship. He was of English, French and Dutch extraction, born in Saginaw Township August 8, 1849, and inherited integrity, manliness, ambition for better things and a will to acquire them. As a lad he was earnest, studious and persevering, and had ambition to excel in his studies and to make thorough preparation in the school room for the duties of life. He possessed a strong character and intense nature, which enabled him to pursue, without flagging, any end at which he aimed. In preparation for a career in the law he entered with zeal, and soon found in the study all that his taste

required and his ambition craved. He read law in the office and under the instruction of Chauncey H. Gage, and thus fortified he went to the law school of the University of Michigan, from which he graduated in April, 1872.

After a year of practice alone, he formed a partnership with D. W. Perkins, which continued for several years. In 1879 he became associated with John M. Brooks, and their practice embraced every class of civil business. For three successive terms he held the office of city attorney of East Saginaw, and served the city with ability and unswerving fidelity. He was deeply interested in the discussions leading to the consolidation of the Saginaws, and was one of the most influential citizens in consummating the union.

As Circuit Judge Mr. Edget rendered admirable service, and was distinguished for ability, industry, and thoroughness, and by the promptness and honesty of his decisions. He ranked high as an orator, and his charges to the jury were models of perspicuity, precision and accuracy. Later, failing health alone prevented his nomination for Judge of the Supreme Court. His mind was clear, his habits methodical, his capacity for work immense. Always courteous, always kind and polite to everyone, his life seemed to be beyond criticism.

The Winter Club, of which Judge Edget was an honored member, thus spoke of him, "Genial and true as a friend, he developed a purity of character, and integrity of purpose that no act of his life ever sullied. Modest and unassuming always, we yet instinctively looked to him as an instructor, adviser and friend."

From 1889 until December 31, 1893, Judge Gage and Judge Edget, holding separate Courts, continued as judges, and were succeeded by Eugene Wilber and the late Robert B. McKnight. The latter, after a brief service on the Bench, was compelled by ill health to resign, and he died in 1895, on the homeward voyage from Europe, whither he had gone in search of health. Judge McKnight was a jurist of pleasing address, affable and kindly in manner, tolerant of misconduct in every form, and patient and helpful with ignorance and inexperience; but any attempt at sharp practice brought upon the offender his prompt condemnation. Much important business came before him during the short term he was upon the Bench, which was promptly disposed of to the satisfaction of the Bar. Very few of his decisions were reversed by the Supreme Court.

In September, 1895, William R. Kendrick, a prominent member of the Bar, was appointed Circuit Judge by Governor Rich, to fill the vacancy occasioned by the resignation of Judge Robert B. McKnight. The appointment came without solicitation on his part, but was due to an unanimous request by petition of members of the Bar, without distinction of party. Although active in politics he was free from partisan bias on the Bench; and all his court decisions, without exception, were sustained by the Supreme Court.

### **Eugene Wilber Was a Capable Judge**

Judge Wilber, who entered upon the discharge of his judicial duties January 1, 1894, served for a term of six years, being chosen to the position on account of his recognized fitness and superior qualifications. As a lawyer he was especially strong before a jury, and as a judge was very methodical in conducting the business of his Court. He went straight to the core of a question or matter presented, and was not disturbed by the plausible argument of counsel in support of a fallacy. He had the happy faculty of deciding against a man without offending him, his manner being kindly but firm



DEWITT C. GAGE  
1880-82



JOHN A. EDGET  
1889-93

PROMINENT JUDGES OF THE TENTH JUDICIAL DISTRICT

when satisfied he was right. There never was a doubt of his integrity of purpose in reaching a decision or publishing it. He was strongly inclined to give a young person a chance to reform if such a desire and life of honesty was sincerely expressed, but on the utterly depraved and degenerate who preferred a life of crime, he wasted no sympathy. As a citizen, a soldier, a lawyer and a jurist, Judge Wilber acquitted himself well.

### Early Contemporary Lawyers.

Among the earlier lawyers who were in active practice here with Sutherland, Moore and Webber, and who finished their practice in the decade from 1890 to 1900, the names of William M. Miller, Augustine S. Gaylord, Irving P. Smith and John J. Wheeler, are recalled with satisfaction and pleasure. For men of sterling character who left their stamp of honor and probity upon their careers, they deserve and are accorded brief mention here.

### William M. Miller Was a Notable Figure.

William M. Miller was a law partner of Jabez G. Sutherland from the time he came to Saginaw until the latter went on the Bench. He was a lawyer by inheritance, his father and grandfather having been leading lawyers in the Green Mountain State. The firm of Sutherland & Miller was a strong one and their business large and profitable. Both were able lawyers and skilled advocates, each in his own peculiar way. No two men ever worked better together in the practice of the law—each possessed in a marked degree what the other lacked.

Mr. Miller, always urbane, courteous, and mildly earnest, was a master of statement and when he stated his client's case or position before the jury or the Court, in his frank, confidential manner, his case was half won. Cool, self-possessed, he won by candor where his opponent lost by zeal. He was well educated, cultivated, polite and refined in manner, and with all the advantages of learning and wealth there was nothing in his nature of arrogance or self-assumption. He once said: "After all it is astonishing how little the best of us know of the law." Honesty was no merit in Mr. Miller, it was a part of his nature; he could no more help it than the color of his hair.

He had a peculiar faculty of identifying himself with the jury so that they half mistook him for one of the panel, where his arguments took the form of a confidential discussion, having no objection but a correct determination of the question they were considering, which, somehow, was generally found to be on the side of his client. He and the jury generally "stuck together." An active sense of the ridiculous and a quite way of rebuking it, even on serious occasion, without seeming to intend it, was one of his marked characteristics. This was notably illustrated by an incident in the Court of an adjoining county.

### How a Lawyer's Joke Won.

"Mr. Miller and another lawyer from Saginaw were associated as counsel for the defense in an important criminal case tried at Midland, soon after Sutherland became Judge. The charge was an aggravated one, the testimony of the people direct, and the circumstances complicated, while the defendant was a man of considerable importance in the community. The testimony for the defendant—some relevant and some not so relevant—occupied four days in its presentation to the Court.

"A certain lawyer from Saginaw, whom we will designate as A., then in the height of his popularity at the Bar, had been employed by the county to assist the prosecuting attorney. On Saturday he closed the argument

for the people at the noon hour. The excitement was great, and the Court House literally packed from the time the door was opened in the morning. A. was a stump speaker as well as lawyer, and, intending to be fair to the people who, as he fancied, had come out expressly to hear him, divided his time impartially between the jury and the audience. Addressing the jury in a corner of the room for a few minutes, A. would suddenly swing around on his heels towards the audience, and with his arms spread out as if intending to scoop them all in, continue his argument until some stray idea impelled him to wheel back upon the jury and resume his speech for a few minutes, thus alternating for two weary hours, until noon.

"The Judge, the lawyers attending the Court, and most of the jury stopped at Ball's Hotel, and all were soon seated at the long table. A. sat across the board from Miller, and as soon as all were seated and before the dinner was brought on, Miller looked up and speaking so as to be heard by all at the table, said:

"'A., who is that good-looking man on the jury who wears a black coat?' (there were five men on the jury wearing black coats, and all at the table).

"'I don't know,' said A. 'Why?'"

"'Oh!' said Miller, 'I met him at the door of the Court House, and he asked me if Mr. A. was running for Congress.'"

"The point of the joke was recognized and appreciated by long continued laughter.

"After dinner the Judge charged the jury in his usual clear, concise and impartial manner, and they soon returned into Court with a verdict 'not guilty.' A. was afterwards heard to affirm that Miller's little joke knocked the bottom out of his argument."

#### **Augustine S. Gaylord Began as School Teacher.**

Another popular and successful lawyer of the early days was Augustine S. Gaylord, who was a partner of Judge Moore, and later of the well-known firm of Gaylord & Hanchett. He was essentially a Saginaw man who "grew up with the country." His first employment here was as teacher in the village school long before Saginaw aspired to the dignity of a city. In November, 1851, he was appointed deputy county clerk, and then, his ambition arising to become a lawyer, he became a student in the office of John Moore, and later his partner.

Mr. Gaylord was a large man in every respect, intellectually and physically, and of a social turn that secured him friends whose good will was manifested in ways more substantial than mere words. He was distinguished as a lawyer possessing in a considerable degree those qualities that gave William M. Miller his influence with the jury. It was said of him by a friend who knew him well, "While his off-hand opinions were sometimes subject to revision, I would have more confidence in his conclusions after he had examined a question than in the judgment of any other lawyer in the State." At the time of his death he was Solicitor for the Department of the Interior.

In personal appearance and deportment Irving P. Smith much resembled Mr. Miller, and his character and mental capacity were of a high order. He was a law partner of William L. Webber, and during all their association they enjoyed an extensive, important and profitable practice. As with most Saginaw lawyers, business thrift closely followed professional success, and the one has generally been the measure of the other.

#### **John J. Wheeler Was Quiet and Absorbed.**

John J. Wheeler, a lawyer of retiring nature and modest demeanor, was nevertheless a worthy opponent of his colleagues at the Bar. He was not conspicuous as an advocate, possessing in no great degree those qualities



that excite sympathy or captivate the unthoughtful. Relying alone, and with a fair degree of success, upon the cold logic of his argument, appreciated in proportion to the intelligence of those he sought to convince, he presented his case in the same tone and manner with which he would advise a client in his office. He was kind and generous, but not demonstrative, and usually quite absorbed in his own reflections.

It is said by a friend of Mr. Wheeler, of a jovial, bluff nature, met him one morning on the way to Court. Wheeler appeared to be lost in thought, and as they approached each other the friend said, "Why, John, what are you mad about?" Wheeler simply glanced at him in an inquiring way, and without further recognition passed on.

About a year afterward the two met again near the same place, and as it was one of Wheeler's off days of mental absorption he heartily extended his hand saying, "Don't you remember we met near here one morning awhile ago, and you asked me 'what I was mad about?' Well, I was not mad, I was just thinking about a little matter up in Court." Few members of the Saginaw Bar commanded more real respect and esteem than John J. Wheeler.

#### **Prominent Lawyers Who Came Later.**

Other prominent lawyers who later came to the Saginaw Bar were: William A. Clark, Colonel George A. Flanders, Oscar F. Wisner and C. Stuart Draper, all of whom have appeared before the tribunal from whose decrees there is no appeal.

William A. Clark, who soon took a prominent position at the Bar here, was a lawyer of considerable reputation before coming to Saginaw. He had a certain genius and facility of resources equalled by few, as appears from an examination of our State reports during his practice here. An expert upon questions of evidence and its tendency and effect, it was said he never made a mistake that tended to his client's injury.

He once defended a man charged with stealing wheat from a neighbor's barn, when a witness of creditable character testified to seeing the defendant leaving the barn with a bag filled with something upon his back. The witness also testified that the ground was covered with snow, the moon full, nearly overhead and shining brightly, and that he fully recognized the defendant. Mr. Clark, producing an almanac, completely confounded the witness and established the innocence of his client by showing from it that the moon was in its last stage and not visible on the night in question. It was subsequently found that the almanac was a last-year's almanac, picked up by mistake (?).

Colonel George A. Flanders was a graduate of an eastern college, and had a good record as a soldier. Although possessing a cultivated mind he was not a diligent law student, but he discharged the duties of prosecuting attorney in an able and efficient manner. To descend from the military rank of Colonel and the pomp and circumstance of war, to the petty legal business that came to newcomers at the Bar of the rough border town, was a rude shock to his proud and sensitive mind. He had little tact in securing clients, but as a jury advocate he ranked high, and as a political speaker was excelled by few. Of fine appearance, agreeable manner, and ready, unlabored eloquence, he was a popular man on the stump.

#### **Wisner and Draper Won a High Place.**

Oscar F. Wisner and C. Stuart Draper came to Saginaw together and were associated in the practice of law until death closed the partnership. To speak of Wisner is to think of Draper, though few partners resembled each other less, or were more attached to one another. Mr. Wisner was

an eminently fair and just man, who despised fraud and humbug in every form—in law, business, politics and religion. He was a natural lawyer as well as a diligent student of law, and was not wanting in the qualities that make the mere advocate. He was most confident in discussing legal questions before the Court.

Personally Mr. Wisner was a modest man never seeking office or public notice, and yet self-assertive and aggressive when the rights of his client called for action. He was not much inclined to idle civilities, but proved a generous and faithful friend, and an agreeable companion with those who knew and appreciated his real character. His pleasures were few and simple. A sail boat stocked with provisions, a single companion, and a trip around the shore of Lake Huron, camping at night in some sheltered cove where the water invited a long swim in the morning, was his ideal of a summer outing. As he navigated his frail craft around the rocky reefs of Point Aux Barques, he felt a pleasure unknown to the habitués of the crowded resorts of fashion.

No man was more thoroughly appreciated in Saginaw Valley than C. Stuart Draper, who came here a young man and a stranger. His affable manners, self-possessed demeanor, his talents neither paraded nor concealed, and his plain directness of speech promptly secured him friends and clients. His natural eloquence, great store of knowledge, retentive memory, and logical reasoning placed him as a jury lawyer among the best in the State. Nor was he a mere advocate, but was a most diligent student, and his active legal mind enabled him to quickly grasp and apply legal propositions. He never sought to mislead the Court by advancing an unsound principle or misapplying a sound one, and therefore always commanded the respect and confidence of both the Court and his opponents. When professional zeal sometimes led him to uphold a doubtful principle, no one thought of imputing it to a questionable motive.

#### **A Lawyer of the "Old School."**

William J. Loveland, a capable lawyer of the "old school," was a native of Vermont and received his education at Dartmouth College, from which he graduated in 1848. He was admitted to the bar three years later, and after some active practice in Michigan he settled at East Saginaw, in 1856. For a time he was deputy Assistant Assessor and Collector of United States Internal Revenue, of the Saginaw District. Easy going, slow of speech, plodding in his professional duties, Mr. Loveland nevertheless enjoyed a fair measure of success in practice, as his ability and studious application to fine points of law were generally recognized.

It is related of him that while acting as attorney for Curtis Emerson, in some real estate tangles in the East, he was called one night to the bed-side of his client in what proved to be his final illness. After going over some legal matters of importance, his mind as clear and lucid as ever, Emerson turned to him and in vehement and picturesque language, characteristic of the pioneer lumberman, said: "Now none of your d—— procrastination in these things, you old slow poke. Get right at them tomorrow." At dawn Emerson was dead; and it is not recalled with what alacrity the attorney attended to the legal business.

#### **Frederic Lloyd Eaton, Sr.**

Frederic L. Eaton, Sr., a well known attorney who resided in Saginaw from 1865 until his death on March 5, 1901, was a native of New Hampshire where his ancestors had lived for upwards of two centuries. He was born at West Swanzy, received his education at Mt. Caesar's Seminary and at Tuft's College, and was elected to the Legislature of New Hampshire at the age of twenty-one years.



CHAUNCEY H. GAGE  
1882-93



ROBERT B. MCKNIGHT  
1895



EUGENE WILBER  
1894-1900

WELL KNOWN JUDGES OF THE CIRCUIT COURT

In 1860 he came to Michigan and settled in Lenawee County where he taught school and was admitted to the bar. Coming to Saginaw County he located at Saginaw City, and for more than forty years was identified with the affairs and business of the community. He served as a member of the board of health, as justice of the peace, as city attorney and recorder of Saginaw City. Of a studious and reflective disposition, with a liberal education, he was recognized as a sound lawyer and advisor, one who was well qualified to conduct the most intricate cases in court.

Mr. Eaton was a member of the Masonic order, and in politics was a Democrat of the old school. He was survived by his widow, Helen Mead Stone Eaton, who is now (1918) in her ninety-first year, and by a daughter, Mrs. Fred Buck, and a son, Fred L. Eaton, an attorney, both of this city. Another son, Joel D. Eaton, was drowned in his sixteenth year, while skating near the Genesee Avenue bridge, in the Winter of 1880-1.

**Why the Saginaw Bar Was Strong.**

That Saginaw County had, and still has, an able Bar was due in a great measure to natural causes. Though this county, now one of the finest agricultural sections of the State, never had a great quantity of pine, its geographical position made it the lumber producing center of a vast territory. Four large rivers with numerous tributary streams, spreading out like a huge fan, penetrated the great pineries of Central Michigan to their source, and uniting only a few miles above this city form the Saginaw River, a broad and navigable stream. The upper streams, many of which, with the improvement of the county, have shrunk to a small farm ditch or wholly disappeared, floated logs at certain seasons of the year, while the

rivers into which they flowed afforded a natural and easy means of transporting the logs to Saginaw. The logs were banked upon the nearest stream that would float them, even in single file and by means of dams, and with the spring freshets were brought down in big "drives."

The great lumbering operations invited settlement and, as the land was cleared, the shores of the principal streams became farms of more or less value. Securing the timber, however, was the principal business and involved the making and breaking of many contracts, and a conflict of interests, as well among lumbermen as between them and the farmers located on the streams; and much litigation resulted raising new and important questions.

The old rules of law defining navigable streams had no application to the new situation, and many of the rules regulating riparian rights needed to be applied with qualifications, adopting them to conditions not existing elsewhere. The importance of the interests involved demanded the most careful consideration, and the most diligent study of the authorities to support a new application of conceded principles. Trials involving many thousands of dollars, and principles more important still to those interested, and occupying many days, were of frequent occurrence. The large logging and lumbering business, and the energetic way in which it was pushed, necessarily furnished much legal business, and that gave valuable legal experience.

The reports of the Supreme Court show the diligence and ability of the Saginaw Bar in the settlement of these questions, and many incidental ones growing out of them, and in the settlement of which the leading members took an important part. That the more active and ambitious members of the Saginaw Bar should have become successful and influential lawyers was inevitable.

#### Other Prominent Lawyers.

So far, with one or two exceptions, we have spoken truly of the departed members of the Saginaw Bar, who have left their stamp of success upon the profession; and may not properly conclude the narrative of human progress without referring to William H. Sweet, Charles H. Camp, George B. Brooks, Dan P. Foote, James L. T. Fox, Chauncey W. Wisner and Timothy E. Tarsney. They formed the connecting link between the earlier and present Bar, but eventually retired in favor of younger members, who, by a sort of professional descent, inherited in no small degree the qualities that distinguished the earlier members.

Mr. Sweet came to Saginaw about the same time that Sutherland, Moore and Webber became recognized leaders of the Bar; and was universally regarded as an able lawyer and very skillful in cross-examination. A short sketch of his life appears in Chapter XI, pp 201-3, and a portrait on page 202.

Charles H. Camp's qualifications and reputation as a lawyer may be inferred from the fact in 1887 he was nominated for Justice of the Supreme Court of Michigan, but went down to defeat with his party. For a long term of years he was a law partner of the late George B. Brooks; and was pre-eminently an office lawyer, devoting most of his time to the preparation of cases for trial, in which work he excelled. Careful and methodical in his work, possessed of superior capacity for details, a fine perception of the law and its applicability, he was well qualified for the preparation of pleadings of every form and variety. In later years the firm of Camp &

Brooks was much engaged in real estate matters, and was the first, in association with Harlan P. Smith, to experiment in reclamation of marsh land for agricultural purposes.

A brief mention of George H. Brooks is to add another leaf to the crown of laurel that distinguishes the Saginaw Bar. Coming here in 1866, he at once formed a law partnership with his early friend and classmate, Charles H. Camp, an association which continued for more than thirty years. He was full of vigorous energy, and worked for the rewards of his profession, in 1873 being elected Judge of the Recorder's Court, serving six years. Later he held the office of receiver of the United States Land Office at East Saginaw.

Mr. Brooks was a man of high character and purpose, and was universally regarded as a good citizen. His social qualities were estimated on the same high plane as his legal abilities, and his literary attainments were considerable. He was the oldest member of the Winter Club at the time of his death, in 1916, in his eighty-second year.

Dan P. Foote, father of Langley S. Foote, entered the practice and study of law at the age of thirty-one years, after graduating as a sailor, miner, traveller, school teacher and farmer. He read law with Judge Sutherland, and was admitted to the Bar September 19, 1863. Three years later he established himself as an attorney at Saginaw City, and by diligent study and close application gained a reputation for successful conduct of legal business. He served for a long time on the board of supervisors, especially when Saginaw City was involved in contests with its neighbors across the river. For many years he served as city attorney and one term as prosecuting attorney. His strongly marked individuality, shrewd judgment and thorough knowledge of men, accounted for the confidence reposed in him by his friends and clients.

James L. T. Fox was one of the oldest members of the Bar, coming here at the time when the village was exulting in its first weekly newspaper. In this publication his professional card announced that he would give "particular attention to the defence of innocent persons wrongfully accused of crime. None others need apply." For a time his practice proved that most of those brought into Court were "wrongfully accused," but ill health sadly interfered with his professional labors.

In Chauncey W. Wisner the Bar had a notable member, for a time being active and conspicuous in local practice. He possessed all the natural elements of a lawyer, being well read, with an active imagination, bright fancy, keen wit and a ready speech, but the dull routine of court and its small unimpressible audiences was less attractive to him than the surging, applauding crowd gathered at the street corner to hear political truths, as he expounded them from the top of a dry goods box.

This trait, however, did not prevent his becoming a successful business man, and he gradually drifted from the law to business speculations and politics, and the Bar, some years before his death, lost one who might have become a great lawyer. As State Senator he was long remembered by the people of Saginaw. Personally, he was a kind and agreeable man, and took pride in being called the "Bridgeport farmer," while living at his large and valuable farm about three miles southeast of the city.

Timothy E. Tarsney, a native of Michigan, was the architect of a unique and interesting personal career. Born in 1849 he was at the most impressive age when the Civil War broke out, and with four brothers joined the Union army. He was first employed in coupling cars at Nashville, then served as fireman on a locomotive in the government service. During the siege of Nashville he heard the rumbling of guns at Franklin, and imagined



Timothy E. Tarsney



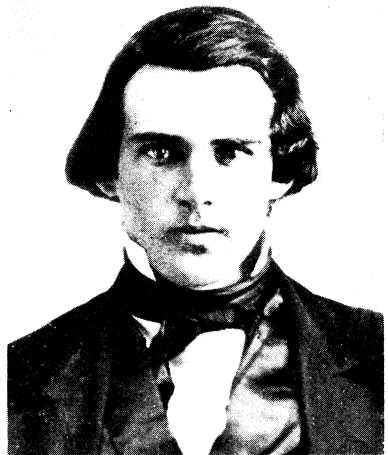
Chauncey Wisner



C. Stuart Draper



William M. Miller



Augustine S. Gaylord



Daniel P. Foote



John J. Wheeler



Frederic L. Eaton, Sr.

**SOME SUCCESSFUL LAWYERS OF THE FORMATIVE PERIOD**

he could see a million Confederate cavalymen engaged in battle, when a sober roll-call would have revealed scarcely a thousand engaged in a hand-to-hand conflict. He was fireman on an engine which carried relief ammunition to the beleagured troops, and the train "zipped" through the midst of the combatants, bound for Franklin. The engine was lost, but young Tarsney escaped, bought a mule for a dollar, rode back to Nashville, eighteen miles distant, and remained in the government service until the close of the war.

In 1866 he came to East Saginaw and took charge of a steam engine in a saw mill. Later, he secured a marine engineer's license and for seven years sailed the lakes on steam barges that made this port. During the winter months he pursued some academic studies, and attended the law school of the University of Michigan, from which he graduated with the class of 1872. He commenced the practice of law in East Saginaw; and in 1875 was appointed city attorney, an office which he held for three years. In 1879 he became the senior partner of the firm of Tarsney & Weadock (George W. Weadock), which continued twelve years with great success. Though defeated on the Democratic ticket in 1880 for Representative in Congress, he defeated his old rival for the office, Roswell G. Horr, in 1889, and was re-elected two years later. After this public service he resumed his legal practice, and in 1893 removed to Detroit.

As an advocate his intuitions were strong, his perspicacity remarkable, his sensibility impressionable, his sympathies easily touched and his imagination lively. The keenness of his perception enabled him to quickly reach a conclusion from a premise, and yet his judgment was not formed without deliberation. When a conclusion was reached, whether intuitively or logically, he moved with alacrity, and supported his position with forcible arguments impulsively expressed.

#### **Prominent Lawyers of Today.**

Other leading lawyers of the intermediate period, some of whom are still in active practice, were: Benton Hanchett, Gilbert M. Stark, Gardner K. Grout, Lorenzo T. Durand, Frank E. Emerick, William E. Crane, Riley L. Crane, William Glover Gage, Watts S. Humphrey, George Grant, Hugo P. Geisler, Emory Townsend, William R. Kendrick, George W. Weadock, John F. O'Keefe, Walter J. Lamson, Emmet L. Beach, George W. Davis, James H. Davitt, John E. Nolan, John A. Combs and Eugene A. Snow.

Among the more prominent attorneys of the younger generation are: Harvey A. Penney, Henry E. Naegely, Ernest A. Snow, Jenner E. Morse, Herbert A. Otto, Robert T. Holland, Robert H. Cook, Fred L. Travers, Frank A. Rockwith, Floyd A. Wilson, Frank A. Picard, A. Elwood Snow, Frederick L. Eaton, Earl J. Davis, Raymond R. Kendrick, Bird J. Vincent, Frank Q. Quinn, Miles J. Purcell, Julius B. Kirby, and Vincent and Jerome Weadock.

Biographical sketches of most of these progressive lawyers, with their portraits, will be found in Volume II, the pages being indicated by the index.

#### **A Humorous Incident.**

Humorous incidents in the early history of the Saginaw Bar were numerous, as has been shown in the preceding pages, and sometimes led to unpleasant situations for the lawyers involved. One in particular, showing the uncertain modes of travel in those days, as well as the dangers and difficulties thereof, is well worth telling.

About 1860, when Judge Birney was the Circuit Judge of the Tenth District, all the country north of Saginaw as far as Alpena was included within his jurisdiction. The only roads were mere trails through the dense

woods, and the only vessels plying along the shore of the lake and bay were small schooners or sloops. The usual means of reaching Tawas, the seat of justice of Iosco County, was by old Captain Marsack's fishboat, which was not a bad craft for those days.

The court was to be held at Tawas, and the Judge, with a proper company of lawyers from Saginaw, left Lower Saginaw (Bay City) for the upper shore point in Marsack's boat. When well down Saginaw Bay where it expands into the lake, and the northeast wind comes roaring and whistling around Point Aux Barques, the bay suddenly became stirred with the heavy cross-seas so characteristic of those unreliable waters. It was near night; the sea was running high—terrifying to landsmen, and Tawas a long distance to windward.

Judge Birney, who was a conscientious, dignified gentleman as well as a sedate judge, feeling that the situation called for a reconciliation of ill friends, said to a certain lawyer, whom we will call A, in his gravest manner, "Mr. A., there have been some passages between us I much regret; and now, seemingly upon the verge of eternity, I hope we may as Christian gentlemen shake hands and forget and forgive."

Here a huge wave nearly capsized the boat, and as soon as it was found that it had not gone over, A., bracing himself against the weather gunwale, extended his hand, and in his usual hearty tone, said:

"By the eternal, Judge, I'll do it—I'll do it, Judge, with this understanding, that if we ever do get ashore this shall all be held for naught."

The Judge's answer to the proposition thus modified was never given, for at that moment, Marsack suddenly determined to work under the lee of Gravelly Point, known in later years as Point Lookout. The captain usually navigated his craft in French, but, in times of peril like a true sailor, dropped into English, and he now sang out, "Ho dare, Pete, you black nigger, haul down the ank, and trow overboard dat man-sal."

The captain's order, though a little confused, was correctly understood by Pete, who comprised the crew, so he let go the main halliards and quickly cast the anchor over the weather bow. As the fore-sail had been left standing her bow fell off as the anchor caught, and Pete, skillfully paying out the line, the boat drifted along the edge of the reef and grounded on the sandy beach, just under the lee of the long, narrow, low point. At the time the point was submerged by the waves that broke on its weather side, and washed across the low ground a foot or more deep. The Judge and his friends jumped overboard and safely waded ashore where they found shelter further inland under one of the great sand drifts that the northeasters have piled up on that romantic point.

The supperless night on the beach was far better than a berth at the bottom of the bay, and the sea and weather in the morning, as calm and serene as A's conscience, enabled them to take an eight o'clock breakfast at Tawas, and put an end to all peace negotiations.

### In Conclusion

The long trials, civil and criminal, involving thousands and thousands of dollars, or rights and interests still more important, the sharp contentions, the diligent and able labors of counsel, the eloquent appeals of the advocates, have received no mention in this work, as the histories of many of them would fill a volume. The purely personal side, which, after all is said, is far more interesting to the public than dry, legal facts of weary trials, has had almost exclusive attention, although an account of the first criminal trial in Saginaw County is given in Volume 1, pages 111-13, and the first probate case in the same volume, page 114.



---

The failures of the Saginaw Bar have not been many, and few lawyers who came here have failed to remain. Strangers have always been warmly welcomed and received prompt and generous recognition. Few enmities and jealousies have existed, and the members of the Bar have almost universally been courteous and obliging to each other in and out of Court. This has been particularly true as to the treatment accorded the younger and less experienced members. All have not succeeded alike any more than men in other occupations attain equal success, but all may safely congratulate themselves that their fortunate situation in the great and prosperous Saginaw Valley has left little reason to envy those of other localities. If history shall fail to record each one's name, those who follow will not let the memory of the deserving grow dim and be forgotten.

END OF VOLUME I



**INDEX**  
of  
**PIONEER BIOGRAPHIES AND INDUSTRIAL  
AND COMMERCIAL HISTORY**

	Page		Page
<b>A</b>			
Academy of Music.....	670-1	Curtis, Bliss & Co.....	630
Achard, A. W. & Son.....	619	Cushway, Benjamin .....	122
Andre, Peter C.....	720	Caledonia Coal Co.....	452-4
American Commercial and Savings Bank .....	750	Commercial National Bank.....	766-67
Au-saw-wa-mic .....	81-3	Consolidated Coal Co.....	461-63
Alderton, George A. & Co.....	634-6	Cornwell Company .....	641-2
American Cash Register Co.....	521-3	<b>D</b>	
American State Bank .....	768-9	Davenport, Elijah N.....	100
Arnold, The H. B. Co.....	677	Davis, George Washington.....	169
<b>B</b>			
Barie, Wm. Dry Goods Co.....	621	De Tocqueville, narrative of.....	66-78
Barnard, Arthur, coal mine.....	451	Dorr, Albert H., stock raising expe- riment .....	691
Beach, Horace S.....	136	Doughty, T. E. ....	625
Beach & Moores.....	619	Draper, C. Stuart .....	783
Beese, J. H. & Co.....	628	<b>E</b>	
Binder, William .....	200	East Saginaw National Bank.....	749
Bliss, Aaron T., gifts of.....	252, 355	Eaton, Frederic L., Sr.....	784
Bliss, Solomon Bond.....	198	Edget, John A., Judge.....	778
Incident of .....	421-2	Edwards, William H.....	420-1
Blyben, Captain Wm.....	191, 712	Ellsworth, Stewart S.....	216
Boyd, Robert .....	631	Elsmore, O. E., narrative of.....	424-5
Braley, Phineas D.....	122	Emerson, Curtis.....	143-7, 396, 709-10
Brooks, George B.....	786-7	Estabrook, John S.....	416
Brown, James F.....	179-81	Erd Motor Co.....	509-10
Bunnell, Willard .....	111	<b>F</b>	
Burrows, George L. & Co.....	750	Fraser, James.....	103, 125, 689
Burt, W. R., gifts of.....	264-6, 293-4	Freeman, D. B.....	621
Mill of .....	410, 421-2	First National Bank of East Sagi- naw .....	748
Busby, Joseph .....	120	First National Bank of Saginaw...	751
Butman, Myron .....	200-1, 300-1	Flint & Pere Marquette R. R.....	719-25
Bancroft House .....	609-17	Foote, Dan P.....	787
Bank of Saginaw.....	755-58	Fair, S. & Son, Inc.....	558-60
Bartlett, A. F. & Co.....	532-5	Fordney Hotel .....	608
Blind Institution .....	597-600	Franklin, Benjamin, Hotel.....	617
Bliss Coal Co.....	464-5	Franklin Theater .....	673
<b>C</b>			
Callam, Wm. narrative of.....	404-6	<b>G</b>	
Camp, Charles H.....	786	Gage, Chauncey H.....	778
Campau, Louis .....	49	Gage, DeWitt C.....	777
Cater, Abram and Charles.....	114	Gaylord, Augustine S., teacher.....	275
Central Agricultural Society .....	701	Lawyer .....	782
Cincinnati, Saginaw & Mackinaw R. R. ....	729-30	Goff, Gilbert B., incident of.....	496-7
Citizens National Bank .....	752	Good Roads Movement.....	734-7
Clay, Sam G. ....	671-2	Grant, Charles W.....	147, 156-7
Cooper, Rev. David M.....	314-5	Green, Washington S.....	418-19
Crane, William A.....	165-7	Germain Manufacturing Co.....	578-80
Cronk, James W. (Uncle Jimmy)...	139		

	Page
<b>H</b>	
Harvey & Coleman.....	628
Hill, Arthur, gifts of.....	281
Narrative of.....	497-8
Home National Bank.....	748
Houghton, Dr. Douglas.....	426-28
Hoyt, Jesse, gifts of.....	251, 304
Herzog Art Furniture Co.....	568-73
Hill-Carman Companies.....	770-1
<b>I</b>	
Ide, Mary Hubbard.....	169
Ippel, J. W. Co.....	622
<b>J</b>	
Jackson, Lansing and Saginaw R. R.....	725-7
Jerome, D. H. & Co.....	619
Jewett, Eleazer.....	84, 125, 137, 164-5
Jochen, Emil.....	619
Jackson & Church Co.....	536-38
Jackson-Church-Wilcox Co.....	538-41
<b>K</b>	
Kain, Patrick.....	233-5
Keeler, Sanford.....	431-2, 721-5
Kendrick, Wm. R.....	779
Kerngood, Sloman & Rosenthal....	624
Ketcham & Tuthill.....	628
Kirby, Stephen R.....	430-31
Kis-kau-kou.....	62
Koehler Brothers.....	588-89
<b>L</b>	
Lamorandiere, Thadeas de.....	169
Lefevre, Father.....	326
Little, Dr. Charles.....	84
Little, Charles David.....	155
Little, Norman.....	132,148-53, 706
Little, Wm. L. P.....	153
Little & Co., Bank of.....	746-7
Loveland, Ralph A.....	419-20
Loveland, William J.....	784
Lull, Charles A.....	684
Lee & Cady, Saginaw branch.....	636-38
<b>Mc</b>	
McCarty, Thomas and Edward R....	688
McCormick, William R.....	117-19
McDonald, Wm., fur trader.....	82, 111
McKnight, Robert B. Judge.....	779
<b>M</b>	
Malden, Captain.....	140
Ma-say-nos.....	32
Matrau, Rev. B. F.....	319
Maus, Rev. H. P.....	326
Merchants National Bank.....	747
Merrill, Charles.....	415-6
Mershon, A. H., account of.....	413
Moores, Emil A. L., reminiscences of.....	181-2
Mosely, Major, incident of.....	139
Mower, T. Dailey.....	231
Melze, Alderton Shoe Co.....	638-40
Mershon, W. B. & Co.....	574-7
Miller, Albert.....	101, 125, 137
Narratives of.....	685, 691-3, 705-6-7
Miller, Hiram L.....	123, 313-5
Miller, Norman L., reminiscences of.....	161-4
Miz-co-be-na-sa.....	32
Montanus, Rev. Emil.....	320
Moore, John, reminiscences.....	174-8
Judge.....	776

	Page
<b>Michigan Employment</b>	
Institution.....	597-600
Michigan Salt Association.....	439
Michigan Sugar Co., trip through Carrollton plant.....	479-87
Mitts & Merrill.....	542-4
Morley Brothers.....	644-7
<b>N</b>	
Naegely, Captain, and lumber jacks	407-8
Naegely House.....	618
Nau-qua-chic-a-ming.....	31
Nay-o-kee-man.....	30
Neh-way-go.....	93-6
National Engineering Co.....	547-9
<b>O</b>	
O-ge-maw-ke-ke-to.....	32
Speech of at treaty negotiations..	53
O-ke-mos.....	31
O-saw-wah-bon.....	32
Owosso Sugar Co., proprietors Prairie Farm.....	694-9
<b>P</b>	
Parsons, Isaac.....	419
Pau-pem-is-kobe.....	30
Pere Marquette.....	39-40
Port Huron & Northwestern R. R....	729
Prairie Farm, development of....	694-97
Parker Dairy Co.....	587-8
People's Building & Loan Associa- tion.....	772-4
People's Savings Bank.....	764-5
Polson, Wm. and Co.....	566-7
Prairie Farm, stock raising.....	698-9
<b>R</b>	
Richardson, John W.....	171-2
Richman, Mrs. A. M., diary of.....	126
Richman, Charles H.....	127
Riggs, John.....	98
Reis, Rev. Joseph.....	343-4
Remer Brothers.....	628
Rudd, Anson.....	182-3
Rust, Ezra, park.....	256
Reminiscences.....	500-3
<b>S</b>	
Saginaw City Bank.....	741
Saginaw County Savings Bank.....	752
Saginaw Courier.....	650-2
Saginaw Enterprise.....	650
Saginaw Evening Journal.....	650
Saginaw Journal.....	648
Saginaw North Star.....	648
Saginaw Republican.....	648
Saginaw Valley Herald.....	648
Saginaw Street Railways.....	731-4
Saginaw Valley Agricultural Society.....	700-1
Saginaw Valley & St. Louis R. R....	728
Savings Bank of East Saginaw....	749
Schmitz, Anton.....	363
Schupp & Barie.....	621
Seely & Spencer.....	622
Seemann, Joseph, sugar develop- ment.....	471-3
Seemann & Peters.....	594-6
Seligman, Joseph (Little Jake)....	623-4
Seyffardt & Walz.....	620
Shaw-we-nos-se-ga.....	32

	Page
Shaw, Bullard & Co.....	630
Sherman House .....	618
Shop-en-a-gons .....	28
Simpson, Thomas (Elixir Boga)....	98
Smith, Jacob (Wa-be-sins).....	55
Smith, Captain Martin .....	711-2
Stewart, James .....	631
Stinson, James .....	625
Streeb, George .....	174-630
Sutherland, Jabez G., Judge.....	775
Swarthout, Anthony R.....	135-6
Sweeney, Father .....	342
Sweet, William H.....	201-3
Lawyer .....	786
Saginaw Courier-Herald .....	652-6
Saginaw Creamery Co. ....	586-7
Saginaw Daily News .....	657-62
Saginaw Hardware Co. ....	643
Saginaw Ladder Co. ....	514-5
Saginaw Manufacturing Co. ....	510-12
Saginaw Mirror Works .....	583
Saginaw Plate Glass Co....	561-3, 440-5
Saginaw Press-Publishing Co. ....	662-3
Saginaw Sheet Metal Works .....	512-3
Saginaw Show Case Co. ....	582
Saginaw Sugar Co. ....	476-87
Saginaw Valley Development Co. ....	503-6
Saginaw Valley Trust Co.....	759
Schwahn-Khuen Agency .....	678
Second National Bank.....	760-63
Seemann & Peters .....	594-7
Sommers Brothers Match Co.....	508
Symons Brothers Co.....	632-4

### T

Tarbell, Professor, action of.....	291
Tarsney, Timothy E.....	787-9
Tewell, Rev. Joseph Riley .....	341
Tracey, Joseph P., fiasco of.....	499

### U

United States Graphite Co.....	564-6
--------------------------------	-------

### V

	Page
Valley Sugar Co.....	479
Vanderbom, Father .....	341
Vanderhayden, Father .....	325
Vinton, Grosvenor .....	98
Valley Grey Iron Foundry Co.....	545-7
Valley Printing Co. ....	592-3
Vincent Hotel .....	618

### W

Wah-be-sins (Jacob Smith) .....	55
Wallis, George W.....	217-8
Webber, James S., diary of.....	189-93
Webber, William L., coal mining..	448
Webster, Samuel H.....	417
Webster, Benjamin F.....	418
Wells-Stone Mercantile Co.....	631
Wentz, E. L., narrative of.....	128-9
Wheeler, John J.....	782-3
Whittier, Joseph A., reminiscences.	178-9
Wilber, Eugene, Judge .....	779
Williams, Ephraim S.....	89-93
Narrative of .....	204-5
Williams, Gardner D.....	89-93, 394-5
Williams, Harvey (Uncle) ....	87-8, 394
Williams, William A., reminiscences	787
Wisner, Chauncey W.....	787
Wisner Oscar F.....	783
Wright, Ammi W., characteristics.	414-5
Werner & Pfeleiderer Co.....	550-57
Wickes Brothers .....	524-30
Wickes Boiler Co.....	530-32
Wolfarth Bakery .....	516-20
Wolverine Glove Co. ....	590-1

### Y

Youmans, Henry M., sugar bounty law .....	473-4
--	-------

### Z

Bank of Zilwaukee .....	745
-------------------------	-----



	Page		Page
Coming of First Steamboat.....	709	Early Mining at Sebewaing.....	448-9
Commercial Interests, East Saginaw, 1858 .....	195-7	Early Missionaries .....	313
Commercial Interests, Saginaw City, 1858 .....	203	Early Pioneers .....	49
Coming of Jesuits to Michigan.....	35	Early References to Saginaw.....	46
Conclusion, In .....	790	Early River Navigation .....	706-7
Congregationalists .....	336-8	Early Railroad Projects .....	718
Convivial Habits of Pioneers.....	137	Early Growth of Postal Business..	667
Consolidation of Water System.....	230	Earliest Saw Mills.....	394
Consolidation of Coal Companies... 461		Earliest Schools .....	274
Consolidation the Only Remedy... 241		Earthworks in Ohio Valley.....	2
Controlling "Red Sash" Brigade... 233		East Saginaw Club .....	378-9
Converting Syrup into Sugar..... 484		East Saginaw in 1854, A. Rudd... 182-3	
Copper Mining on Isle Royal..... 5-6		East Saginaw Starts Improvements 238	
Cork Pine of the Cass River..... 400-1		Economics of Modern Salt Manufacture .....	440-1
Costs of Coal Mining.....	456	Edelweiss Club .....	312
Cost of Road Improvements.....	737	Elks Club, Lodge No. 47.....	384-5
Council in 1915.....	270	Emerson Shipped First Cargo of Lumber from Saginaw River... 396-7	
Court Street Bridge.....	243	Employment Suited to Blind Women .....	599-601
Currency of Bank of Zilwaukee... 745		Enter a New Element, Police.....	233
Creation of Park and Cemetery Commission .....	255	Encounter with Indian.....	70
Curtis Emerson Comes.....	143	Enterprise of Norman Little.....	132-4
Eccentricities .....	144-6	Erection of First Salt Block.....	431-2
Lays Out Village of Buena Vista 147		Evolution of Sawing Machinery... 397	
Customs and Habits of Indians... 81		Expansion of Coal Industry.....	449-50
<b>D</b>			
Dark Days for Sugar Industry.....	476-7	Expansion of Schools .....	277
Decline of River Commerce.....	718	Experiences in North Woods.....	404-6
Decline of Salt Production.....	440	Experiences in Early Road Making .....	703-4
Deep Wells, City .....	249	Extension of School System.....	289-90
Derivation of "Saginaw".....	23	Extermination of the Sauks.....	27
Development of Salt Industry.....	435-6	Extracting Sweet Matter.....	481
Development of Beet-Sugar Industry .....	468	<b>F</b>	
Development of Coal Mines.....	455	Failure of State Salt Experiment..	429
Development of Prairie Farm.....	694	Federal Building .....	667-8
Devilry of Kis-kau-kou.....	62	Features of Olden Times.....	97
Diary of Mrs. A. M. Richman.....	127	Financial Ruin .....	745
Diary of James S. Webber.....	189-94	Finding Human Remains.....	3
Did Jesuits Visit Saginaw?.....	42-3	Finis of Bancroft House.....	612
Difficulties and Privations of Early Pioneer Life .....	121	Fire Department .....	208
Difficulties of Travel .....	705	Fire Fighters of Saginaw City... 220-2	
Difficulties of Salt Manufacturers.. 436		First Auto Garage .....	676
Discovery of Coal in Saginaw County .....	447-8	First Bank Cashier, J. F. Brown... 179	
Discovery of Great Lakes.....	35	First Baptists .....	322-4
Disruption of Board of Trade Threatened .....	499	First Baptist Church .....	338
Dry Goods and Notions.....	621-2	First Church in East Saginaw... 327-8	
Drugs and Medicines .....	626	First County Bond .....	109
<b>E</b>			
Early Conflagrations .....	188	First Christian Mission .....	36
Early Contemporary Lawyers.....	781	First Criminal Trial .....	111-3
Early Discoveries of Salt .....	426	First Plank Road .....	705
Early Experiments in Beet Culture 467		First Probate Case .....	114
Early French Explorations .....	34	First Presbyterian Church of Saginaw City .....	314-7
Early Fruit Growing .....	688-9	First Mill at East Saginaw.....	396
Early Newspapers .....	648	First Mine in Saginaw County... 449	
Early Judges of Saginaw County:		First Gas Propelled Carriage .....	675
John Moore .....	776	First Popular Gasoline Cars.....	675
DeWitt C. Gage .....	777	First Steamboat on Saginaw River 125	
Chauncey H. Gage.....	778	First Steamboat, Coming of.....	709
John A. Edget.....	778	First Schools at East Saginaw... 282-5	
Eugene Wilber .....	779	First Settler, Louis Campau .....	49
Early Methods of Salt Manufacture .....	433-4	First Taverns .....	607
		First Wheat Raised .....	684
		First Vessels on Saginaw River... 708	
		First Volunteer Fire Fighters... 208	
		Fish Trade .....	204
		Forest Lawn Cemetery.....	263

	Page
Franklin, Benjamin, Hotel.....	617
Franklin Theater .....	673
Fraternal Orders .....	389-91
Furniture and House Furnishing Business .....	625

### G

Gaylord, Augustine S., takes charge of schools .....	275
Germania Society .....	362-5
German Lutheran Church.....	321
German Papers .....	663
Ghost of the Sauks.....	28
Good Roads Movement.....	734-6
Grains and Vegetables.....	690
Grand Ball at Bancroft House.....	612
Granulation of Sugar.....	484-6
Grocery and Provision Trade.....	630-1
Growth of Factories.....	491-3
Growth of Postal Business.....	667

### H

Habits and Customs of Indians.....	22
Hardships of Pioneer Life.....	60
Hardships of Travel .....	74
Hardware Trade .....	619-20
Hardy Pioneer Life.....	165-6
High Place Won by Wisner & Draper .....	783-4
Hill "Puts One Over" on Wright.....	497-8
Hill Trade School .....	281-2
Holly Water Works.....	225-9
Home for Friendless.....	349
Hotel Bancroft .....	614-7
Hotel Fordney .....	608
Hotel Vincent .....	618
Hotels of Saginaw City.....	607-8
How a Bank Created Specie.....	744
How Beets are Scoured .....	480
How Farmers Fared .....	685-6
How a Lawyer's Joke Won a Law Suit .....	781
Hoyt Library .....	304-7
Humorous Incident .....	789

### I

Idea of Civic Beauty.....	251
Indian Payment Days.....	80
Incorporation of Salina.....	194
Incorporation of Saginaw City.....	198
Incorporation of First Salt Co.....	430-1
Index to Portrait Galery of Pioneers of Saginaw .....	332
Industry Among Blind Folk.....	597
Influence of Wah-be-sins.....	55
Intense Rivalry between Cities on the Saginaw .....	237
Interest in Sugar Beets.....	467
Interurban Electric Traction.....	731
Items of History .....	604-7
Items of Interest.....	186

### J

Jewelry, etc. ....	625-6
--------------------	-------

### L

Labor Difficulties in Coal Mining..	451
Land Grants and Earnings, F. & P. M.....	723-4
Lawyer of Old School, W. J. Love- land .....	784
Lax Banking Laws .....	739

	Page
Legend of Lone Tree.....	29
Liberal Christians .....	322
Literary Clubs .....	307-8
Little, Norman, Founds East Sagi- naw .....	148-50
Locating Seat of Justice.....	108
Lost at Night in Forest.....	71
Logs and Booms .....	399
Lumber Production, 1858.....	397
Lumber Production, 1851 to 1897...	403
Lumber Production, 1892.....	411
Lumbermen Gain Unexpected Riches .....	496-7

### M

Marshes Attract Buyers.....	690
Masonic Orders .....	387-8
Mayors of Saginaw.....	272
Mershon-Whittier Natatorium .....	259
Methods of Mining Coal.....	458
Methodists of Saginaw City.....	320
Michigan Appetite .....	686
Michigan Salt Association.....	439-40
Military Occupation .....	59
Military Companies of Early Days.....	372-5
Miners Become Operators.....	452
Mining Machines Introduced .....	458
Mode of Indian Life.....	22
Model Saw Mill.....	410
Modern School Buildings .....	278-80
Mounds and Ancient Relics.....	12
Mosquito Road to Prairie Farm...	695-6
Mutuality of Interests, Saginaw and old F. & P. M. R. R.....	724-5

### N

Naegely, Captain and Lumberjacks.....	407-8
New Steamer Replaces "Daniel Ball" .....	716-7
Northern Canal Project.....	130-3
Notable Figure, Wm. M. Miller.....	781

### O

Oakwood Cemetery .....	260
Occupation for Blind Men.....	598-9
Official Proceedings .....	115
Oil Development .....	503-4
Oil Well Spouted High .....	504
Oil Speculators Foiled .....	506
Old Business Houses .....	164
Old-Time Saw Mills .....	408-9
Opening of Treaty Council.....	52
Opening Celebration of Bancroft House .....	609-10
Opening Excursion of F. & P. M. R. R. ....	722-3
Operations of Centrifugals .....	484
Opposition of Eastern Sugar Magnates .....	477-8
Organization of Township.....	106
Organization of Saginaw County...	106
Organization of Board of Education	288
Organization of First Church.....	313-6
Organization of Saginaw and Bay Salt Company .....	437
Organization of "Wild Cat" Banks..	741
Organization of Home National Bank .....	748
Organization of First National Bank .....	748



	Page
Organization of Savings Bank of East Saginaw .....	749
Organization of East Saginaw National Bank .....	749
Organization of American Commercial and Savings Bank.....	750
Organization of G. L. Burrows & Co. ....	750
Organization of First National Bank, Saginaw .....	751
Organization of Citizens National Bank .....	752
Organization of Saginaw County Savings .....	752
Original Plat of East Saginaw.....	142
Ornaments and Charms .....	20
Other City Bridges.....	243-5
Output of the Tittabawassee.....	400

## P

Packing and Meat Trade.....	640
Packing Sugar for Market.....	486
Parks, Smaller .....	258
Parochial Schools .....	296-7
Penetrating Virgin Forest.....	73
Period of Depression .....	494
Period of Speculation .....	740
Pere Marquette Finds First Settlement in Michigan .....	39-40
Picture of Early Saginaw.....	76
Pioneer Lawyer, J. B. Sutherland..	775
Pioneer Life in Wilderness.....	67
Pioneer Farming .....	681
Pioneers Were Migratory, Some..	683
Pioneer Newspapers, East Saginaw.	650-2
Pioneer Teachers, "Academy" .....	286
Plague of Blackbirds.....	140
Platting the Town .....	107
Police Department .....	231
Pottery Exhumed .....	15
Practical Experience in Beet Culture .....	472-3
Predictions of Early Settler.....	393
Preparing the Ground.....	681
Primitive Coal Mining.....	447
Primitive Corn Planting.....	682
Primitive Trading Posts .....	603
Primitive Maps .....	45
Primitive Settlement of East Saginaw .....	140
Primitive Hand Fire Engines.....	211
Prominent Lawyers Who Came Later .....	783-86-7
Prominent Lawyers of Today (1918)	789
Provisions for New City Hall.....	241
Public Library .....	300-302-3
Purifying Diffusion Juice (Sugar)	482-3
Purity of Saginaw Salt.....	433

## Q

Quiet and Absorbed was John J. Wheeler .....	782
--	-----

## R

Raising Blooded Stock, at Prairie Farm .....	697-9
Rapid Increase in Agriculture.....	690
Rapid Decline of River Commerce	718
Reach Flint River.....	72
Reading Club .....	311

	Page
Real Estate and Insurance.....	627-8
Reclaiming Marsh Lands.....	693
Recollections of N. L. Miller.....	160
Shoots First Bear .....	163
Reconstruction of Industrial Saginaw .....	495-6
Recovery Was Slow in "Wild Cat" Times .....	746
Reporter's Reminiscences .....	648-50
Retail Grocers of Olden Times....	630
Reorganization of Fire Department	216
Retarded Settlement and Causes...	79
Retributive Justice of Savages....	30
Research Club .....	311
Rescue Missions .....	358
Revival of Industries .....	498
Rise and Decline of River Commerce .....	714-5
River and Shore Lines.....	715-6
Rough Forest Trails .....	703
Run on a Bank .....	751-2
Rivalry of Fire Companies.....	211
Rust Park Improvements.....	256

## S

Sacred Heart Church.....	343-4
Saginaw City Bank .....	741
Saginaw City in 1837 .....	128
Saginaw in 1851, John Moore.....	174-7
Saginaw an Orderly City .....	234-5
Saginaw General Hospital .....	348
Saginaw Club .....	378-9
Saginaw Country Club .....	380-3
Saginaw Canoe Club .....	383-4
Saginaw Lodge, No. 47 B. P. O. E.	384-5
Saginaw Post Offices .....	664-5
Saginaw Postal Business, 1915-6...	670
Saginaw Is—Saginaw Has .....	679
Saginaw County Farmers' Organ..	702
Saginaw Saw Mills in '80's .....	411
Saginaw Naval Reserves .....	375-8
Saginaw Reading Club .....	311
Saginaw Woman's Club .....	311
Saginaw Becomes a Distributing Lumber Market .....	413-4
Saginaw Sugar Company formed...	476
Salt and Lumber Industries United	432
Salt Production .....	445
Salvation Army .....	357
Sauks and Onottawas .....	23
School Teacher-Lawyer was Augustine S. Gaylord.....	782
Semi-Centennial Celebration of Board of Trade, 1913.....	500-3
Shipbuilding on Saginaw River....	711-4
Shooting Wild Ducks, 1831.....	77
Side Lights on Pioneer Lumbermen .....	421-5
Single Germ Beet Balls.....	487
Slicing Beets .....	481
Sources of Sugar .....	466
Speculators (Oil) Foiled .....	506
Spirit of Revenge.....	23
Shop-en-gons Account .....	28
Starting New Industries .....	489
State Bores for Salt.....	427-8
State Reaps Benefits (Salt).....	433
State Salt Inspection .....	437-8
Steamboat "Wellington R. Burt"...	717
Steamer Lines .....	725

	Page
Strength of Saginaw Banks.....	753-4
Street Railways .....	731
St. John's Episcopal Church.....	317-20
St. Andrews Catholic Church .....	325-6
St. Paul's Episcopal Church.....	334-5
SS. Peter and Paul Church.....	326
St. Mary's Catholic Church.....	341-2
St. Joseph's Catholic Church.....	342
St. John's G. E. Lutheran Church.....	344-5
St. Mary's Hospital.....	345-6
St. Vincent's Orphans Home.....	346
Summary of Factories and Labor.....	493-4
Summary of Saginaw Industries, 1914 .....	506-8
Sugar Making an Ancient Science....	466
Sugar Bowl of Michigan.....	468-9

### T

Test of Firemens' Mettle.....	213
Teutonia Society .....	370
Theology in Camp .....	407
Timber Supplies Fail .....	489
To Whom Honor Is Due.....	98
Transcript of Saginaw Treaty.....	56-8
Trade Development Slow.....	604
Trail to Pontiac .....	67
Trail to the North.....	70
Treaties, Other .....	64-5
Treaty of Detroit.....	51
Treaty Reservations to Rileys.....	80
Tribute to Jesse Hoyt.....	178
Trip Through Carrollton Sugar Factory .....	479-86
Trust Control of Beet Sugar.....	478
Two Postoffices are Detrimental...	670

### U

Um-zoo-ee Cub .....	380
Union School, New .....	275
Union School District.....	278
Unique Character—Sam G. Clay....	671-2
Unique Garden Beds Found.....	8
United States Land Office.....	700

	Page
Utilizing of Waste Exhaust Steam in Salt Manufacture .....	442
Utilization of Beet Pulp.....	477

### V

Value of Coal Lands.....	457
Value of Beet Sugar Industry to Saginaw County .....	478
Value of Bottom Lands.....	686-7
Value of State Awards.....	737
Veto of Electric Lighting Project at Saginaw City .....	240
Village Sites in Saginaw County....	10
Voyage Across Lake Erie.....	66

### W

Wah-wah-sums .....	371
Warren Avenue Presbyterian Church .....	339-41
Webster House (old).....	134
Well Known Hotels.....	618
West Side Churches.....	327
West Side Water System.....	229
When Changes Were Rapid.....	234
Why Saginaw Was Slow in Starting Beet Sugar Industry.....	474-5
Why Saginaw Has Two Postoffices.....	668-9
Why Saginaw Was Cut Off.....	720-2
Why Saginaw Bar Was Strong.....	785
Wild Fruits and Berries.....	688
Williams Saw Mill, First in Saginaw Valley .....	394-5
Willcox Automatic Rakes.....	442-3
Winter Club .....	308
Wintering Stock on Rushes.....	691-2
Woman's Hospital .....	349
Work of Mound Builders.....	1
Working Up By-Products.....	444
Working of the Banking Law.....	742
Workshops .....	18

### Y

Young Men's Christian Association	354-7
Young Women's Christian Association .....	350-2

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

---

- History of Saginaw County**, Truman B. Fox, Saginaw Enterprise Press.. 1858  
**History of Saginaw Valley**, Truman B. Fox, Daily Courier Press..... 1868  
**Indian and Pioneer History**, Thomas Galatin, in Saginaw Directory..... 1866  
**City of Saginaw Directory**, Robert F. Dudley..... 1870  
**State Gazeteer** ..... 1863-4  
**History of the Saginaws**, W. R. Bates; E. W. Lyon, printer..... 1874  
**History of the United States**, Vol. 111, pp. 118-162, George Bancroft  
**Michigan Pioneer Collections**, 44 vol., Michigan Historical Commission  
**Proceedings of the Saginaw Valley Pioneer Society**..... 1873  
**History of Saginaw County, Michigan**, Chapman Brothers..... 1881  
**Portrait and Biographical Album**, Chapman Brothers..... 1883  
**Industries of the Saginaw**, J. W. Elstner & Co..... 1887  
**Statistics of Lumber and Salt Business of Saginaw Valley**,  
     Truman B. Fox..... 1866  
**Annual Statement of the Business of Saginaw Valley and "The Shore"**  
     George F. Lewis and C. B. Headley..... 1867 to 1872  
**Saginaw and Bay Counties Biographical Pub. Co.**..... 1892  
**Lumber and Forest History of the Northwest**,  
     George W. Hotchkiss, Chicago..... 1898  
**Bench and Bar of Michigan**  
**Cyclopedia of Michigan**, John Bersey; Western Publ'y and Engraving  
     Company . . . . . 1890  
**Cyclopedia of Michigan**, John Bersey; Western Publ'y and Engraving  
     Company . . . . . 1900  
**Saginaw in 1893**, Annual Report of Board of Trade, S. G. Higgins..... 1892  
**Annual Reports of Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad**..... 1868 and 1870  
**Constitution of Saginaw County Agriculture Society, First Fair**..... 1866  
**List of Premiums, Eighth Annual Fair**..... 1874  
**Proceedings of Board of Supervisors**..... 1869 and 1870  
**Annual Report of Controller of East Saginaw**..... 1869 and 1870  
**Report of Saginaw and Bay Salt Company**..... 1870  
**Reports of Board of Public Works**..... 1906 to 1915  
**Reports of Board of Park and Cemetery Commissioners**..... 1908 to 1915  
**Reports of Board of Education**..... 1873 and 1906 to 1916  
**Rules and Regulations of Board of Water Commissioners**..... 1874  
**Saginaw, Michigan**, in 1905, Industrial and Commercial, Illustrated.....  
**Semi-Centennial Souvenir**, Saginaw, Michigan, Frank S. Spencer..... 1907  
**Greater Saginaw**, H. W. Gardner; Saginaw Daily News..... 1912













